THE HISTORY OF PENDENNIS

By William Makepeace Thackeray

TO DR. JOHN ELLIOTSON

My Dear Doctor,

Thirteen months ago, when it seemed likely that this story had come to

a close, a kind friend brought you to my bedside, whence, in

all probability, I never should have risen but for your constant

watchfulness and skill. I like to recall your great goodness and

kindness (as well as many acts of others, showing quite a surprising

friendship and sympathy) at that time, when kindness and friendship were

most needed and welcome.

And as you would take no other fee but thanks, let me record them here

in behalf of me and mine, and subscribe myself,

Yours most sincerely and gratefully,

W. M. THACKERAY.

PREFACE

If this kind of composition, of which the two years' product is now laid

before the public, fail in art, as it constantly does and must, it at

least has the advantage of a certain truth and honesty, which a work

more elaborate might lose. In his constant communication with the

reader, the writer is forced into frankness of expression, and to speak

out his own mind and feelings as they urge him. Many a slip of the pen

and the printer, many a word spoken in haste, he sees and would recall

as he looks over his volume. It is a sort of confidential talk between

writer and reader, which must often be dull, must often flag. In the

course of his volubility, the perpetual speaker must of necessity lay

bare his own weaknesses, vanities, peculiarities. And as we judge of a

man's character, after long frequenting his society, not by one speech,

or by one mood or opinion, or by one day's talk, but by the tenor of his

general bearing and conversation; so of a writer, who delivers himself

up to you perforce unreservedly, you say, Is he honest? Does he tell

the truth in the main? Does he seem actuated by a desire to find out and

speak it? Is he a quack, who shams sentiment, or mouths for effect? Does

he seek popularity by claptraps or other arts? I can no more ignore good

fortune than any other chance which has befallen me. I have found many

thousands more readers than I ever looked for. I have no right to say

to these, You shall not find fault with my art, or fall asleep over my

pages; but I ask you to believe that this person writing strives to tell

the truth. If there is not that, there is nothing.

Perhaps the lovers of 'excitement' may care to know, that this book

began with a very precise plan, which was entirely put aside. Ladies

and gentlemen, you were to have been treated, and the writer's and the

publisher's pocket benefited, by the recital of the most active horrors.

What more exciting than a ruffian (with many admirable virtues) in St.

Giles's, visited constantly by a young lady from Belgravia? What

more stirring than the contrasts of society? the mixture of slang and

fashionable language? the escapes, the battles, the murders? Nay, up to

nine o'clock this very morning, my poor friend, Colonel Altamont, was

doomed to execution, and the author only relented when his victim was

actually at the window.

The 'exciting' plan was laid aside (with a very honourable forbearance

on the part of the publishers), because, on attempting it, I found that

I failed from want of experience of my subject; and never having been

intimate with any convict in my life, and the manners of ruffians and

gaol-birds being quite unfamiliar to me, the idea of entering into

competition with M. Eugene Sue was abandoned. To describe a real rascal,

you must make him so horrible that he would be too hideous to show; and

unless the painter paints him fairly, I hold he has no right to show him

at all.

Even the gentlemen of our age--this is an attempt to describe one of

them, no better nor worse than most educated men--even these we cannot

show as they are, with the notorious foibles and selfishness of their

lives and their education. Since the author of Tom Jones was buried, no

writer of fiction among us has been permitted to depict to his utmost

power a MAN. We must drape him, and give him a certain conventional

simper. Society will not tolerate the Natural in our Art. Many ladies

have remonstrated and subscribers left me, because, in the course of the

story, I described a young man resisting and affected by temptation.

My object was to say, that he had the passions to feel, and the

manliness and generosity to overcome them. You will not hear--it is best

to know it--what moves in the real world, what passes in society, in the

clubs, colleges, mess-rooms,--what is the life and talk of your sons.

A little more frankness than is customary has been attempted in this

story; with no bad desire on the writer's part, it is hoped, and with no

ill consequence to any reader. If truth is not always pleasant, at

any rate truth is best, from whatever chair--from those whence graver

writers or thinkers argue, as from that at which the story-teller sits

as he concludes his labour, and bids his kind reader farewell.

Kensington, Nov. 26th, 1850.

CONTENTS

CHAPTER

I Shows how First Love may interrupt Breakfast

II A Pedigree and other Family Matters

III In which Pendennis appears as a very young Man indeed

IV Mrs. Haller

V Mrs. Haller at Home

VI Contains both Love and War

VII In which the Major makes his Appearance

VIII In which Pen is kept waiting at the Door, while the Reader

is informed who little Laura was

IX In which the Major opens the Campaign

X Facing the Enemy

XI Negotiation

XII In which a Shooting Match is proposed

XIII A Crisis

XIV In which Miss Fotheringay makes a new Engagement

XV The Happy Village

XVI More Storms in the Puddle

XVII Which concludes the First Part of this History

XVIII Alma Mater

XIX Pendennis of Boniface

XX Rake's Progress

XXI Flight after Defeat

XXII Prodigal's Return

XXIII New Faces

XXIV A Little Innocent

XXV Contains both Love and Jealousy

XXVI A House full of Visitors

XXVII Contains some Ball-practising

XXVIII Which is both Quarrelsome and Sentimental

XXIX Babylon

XXX The Knights of the Temple

XXXI Old and New Acquaintances

XXXII In which the Printer's Devil comes to the Door

XXXIII Which is passed in the Neighbourhood of Ludgate Hill

XXXIV In which the History still hovers about Fleet Street

XXXV Dinner in the Row

XXXVI The Pall Mall Gazette

XXXVII Where Pen appears in Town and Country

XXXVIII In which the Sylph reappears

XXXIX In which Colonel Altamont appears and disappears

XL Relates to Mr. Harry Foker's Affairs

XLI Carries the Reader both to Richmond and Greenwich

XLII Contains a Novel Incident

XLIII Alsatia

XLIV In which the Colonel narrates some of his Adventures

XLV A Chapter of Conversations

XLVI Miss Amory's Partners

XLVII Monseigneur s'amuse

XLVIII A Visit of Politeness

XLIX In Shepherd's Inn

L In or near the Temple Garden

LI The Happy Village again

LII Which had very nearly been the last of the Story

LIII A Critical Chapter

LIV Convalescence

LV Fanny's Occupation's gone

LVI In which Fanny engages a new Medical Man

LVII Foreign Ground

LVIII 'Fairoaks to let'

LIX Old Friends

LX Explanations

LXI Conversations

LXII The Way of the World

LXIII Which accounts perhaps for Chapter LXII

LXIV Phillis and Corydon

LXV Temptation

LXVI In which Pen begins his Canvass

LXVII In which Pen begins to doubt about his Election

LXVIII In which the Major is bidden to Stand and Deliver

LXIX In which the Major neither yields his Money nor his Life

LXX In which Pendennis counts his Eggs

LXXI Fiat Justitia

LXXII In which the Decks begin to clear

LXXIII Mr. and Mrs. Sam Huxter

LXXIV Shows how Arthur had better have taken a Return Ticket

LXXV A Chapter of Match-making

LXXVI Exeunt Omnes

PENDENNIS

CHAPTER I. Shows how First Love may interrupt Breakfast

One fine morning in the full London season, Major Arthur Pendennis

came over from his lodgings, according to his custom, to breakfast at a

certain Club in Pall Mall, of which he was a chief ornament. As he

was one of the finest judges of wine in England, and a man of active,

dominating, and inquiring spirit, he had been very properly chosen to

be a member of the Committee of this Club, and indeed was almost the

manager of the institution; and the stewards and waiters bowed before

him as reverentially as to a Duke or a Field-Marshal.

At a quarter past ten the Major invariably made his appearance in the

best blacked boots in all London, with a checked morning cravat that

never was rumpled until dinner time, a buff waistcoat which bore the

crown of his sovereign on the buttons, and linen so spotless that Mr.

Brummel himself asked the name of his laundress, and would probably have

employed her had not misfortunes compelled that great man to fly the

country. Pendennis's coat, his white gloves, his whiskers, his very

cane, were perfect of their kind as specimens of the costume of a

military man en retraite. At a distance, or seeing his back merely, you

would have taken him to be not more than thirty years old: it was only

by a nearer inspection that you saw the factitious nature of his rich

brown hair, and that there were a few crow's-feet round about the

somewhat faded eyes of his handsome mottled face. His nose was of the

Wellington pattern. His hands and wristbands were beautifully long and

white. On the latter he wore handsome gold buttons given to him by his

Royal Highness the Duke of York, and on the others more than one elegant

ring, the chief and largest of them being emblazoned with the famous

arms of Pendennis.

He always took possession of the same table in the same corner of the

room, from which nobody ever now thought of ousting him. One or two

mad wags and wild fellows had in former days, and in freak or bravado,

endeavoured twice or thrice to deprive him of this place; but there was

a quiet dignity in the Major's manner as he took his seat at the next

table, and surveyed the interlopers, which rendered it impossible for

any man to sit and breakfast under his eye; and that table--by the fire,

and yet near the window--became his own. His letters were laid out there

in expectation of his arrival, and many was the young fellow about town

who looked with wonder at the number of those notes, and at the seals

and franks which they bore. If there was any question about etiquette,

society, who was married to whom, of what age such and such a duke was,

Pendennis was the man to whom every one appealed. Marchionesses used to

drive up to the Club, and leave notes for him, or fetch him out. He was

perfectly affable. The young men liked to walk with him in the Park or

down Pall Mall; for he touched his hat to everybody, and every other man

he met was a lord.

The Major sate down at his accustomed table then, and while the waiters

went to bring him his toast and his hot newspaper, he surveyed his

letters through his gold double eye-glass. He carried it so gaily, you

would hardly have known it was spectacles in disguise, and examined one

pretty note after another, and laid them by in order. There were large

solemn dinner cards, suggestive of three courses and heavy conversation;

there were neat little confidential notes, conveying female entreaties;

there was a note on thick official paper from the Marquis of Steyne,

telling him to come to Richmond to a little party at the Star and

Garter, and speak French, which language the Major possessed very

perfectly; and another from the Bishop of Ealing and Mrs. Trail,

requesting the honour of Major Pendennis's company at Ealing House,

all of which letters Pendennis read gracefully, and with the more

satisfaction, because Glowry, the Scotch surgeon, breakfasting opposite

to him, was looking on, and hating him for having so many invitations,

which nobody ever sent to Glowry.

These perused, the Major took out his pocket-book to see on what days he

was disengaged, and which of these many hospitable calls he could afford

to accept or decline.

He threw over Cutler, the East India Director, in Baker Street, in order

to dine with Lord Steyne and the little French party at the Star and

Garter--the Bishop he accepted, because, though the dinner was slow, he

liked to dine with bishops--and so went through his list and disposed of

them according to his fancy or interest. Then he took his breakfast

and looked over the paper, the gazette, the births and deaths, and the

fashionable intelligence, to see that his name was down among the guests

at my Lord So-and-so's fete, and in the intervals of these occupations

carried on cheerful conversation with his acquaintances about the room.

Among the letters which formed Major Pendennis's budget for that morning

there was only one unread, and which lay solitary and apart from all the

fashionable London letters, with a country postmark and a homely seal.

The superscription was in a pretty delicate female hand, and though

marked 'Immediate' by the fair writer, with a strong dash of anxiety

under the word, yet the Major had, for reasons of his own, neglected up

to the present moment his humble rural petitioner, who to be sure could

hardly hope to get a hearing among so many grand folks who attended

his levee. The fact was, this was a letter from a female relative of

Pendennis, and while the grandees of her brother's acquaintance were

received and got their interview, and drove off, as it were, the patient

country letter remained for a long time waiting for an audience in the

ante-chamber under the slop-bason.

At last it came to be this letter's turn, and the Major broke a seal

with 'Fairoaks' engraved upon it, and 'Clavering St. Mary's' for a

postmark. It was a double letter, and the Major commenced perusing the

envelope before he attacked the inner epistle.

"Is it a letter from another Jook," growled Mr. Glowry, inwardly,

"Pendennis would not be leaving that to the last, I'm thinking."

"My dear Major Pendennis," the letter ran, "I beg and implore you to

come to me immediately "--very likely, thought Pendennis, and Steyne's

dinner to-day--"I am in the very greatest grief and perplexity. My

dearest boy, who has been hitherto everything the fondest mother could

wish, is grieving me dreadfully. He has formed--I can hardly write it--a

passion, an infatuation,"--the Major grinned--"for an actress who

has been performing here. She is at least twelve years older than

Arthur--who will not be eighteen till next February--and the wretched

boy insists upon marrying her."

"Hay! What's making Pendennis swear now?"--Mr. Glowry asked of himself,

for rage and wonder were concentrated in the Major's open mouth, as he

read this astounding announcement.

"Do, my dear friend," the grief-stricken lady went on, "come to me

instantly on the receipt of this; and, as Arthur's guardian, entreat,

command, the wretched child to give up this most deplorable resolution."

And, after more entreaties to the above effect, the writer concluded

by signing herself the Major's 'unhappy affectionate sister, Helen

Pendennis.'

"Fairoaks, Tuesday"--the Major concluded, reading the last words of the

letter--"A d---d pretty business at Fairoaks, Tuesday; now let us

see what the boy has to say;" and he took the other letter, which was

written in a great floundering boy's hand, and sealed with the large

signet of the Pendennises, even larger than the Major's own, and with

supplementary wax sputtered all round the seal, in token of the writer's

tremulousness and agitation.

The epistle ran thus:

"Fairoaks, Monday, Midnight.

"My Dear Uncle,--In informing you of my engagement with Miss Costigan,

daughter of J. Chesterfield Costigan, Esq., of Costiganstown, but,

perhaps, better known to you under her professional name of Miss

Fotheringay, of the Theatres Royal Drury Lane and Crow Street, and of

the Norwich and Welsh Circuit, I am aware that I make an announcement

which cannot, according to the present prejudices of society at least,

be welcome to my family. My dearest mother, on whom, God knows, I would

wish to inflict no needless pain, is deeply moved and grieved, I am

sorry to say, by the intelligence which I have this night conveyed to

her. I beseech you, my dear Sir, to come down and reason with her

and console her. Although obliged by poverty to earn an honourable

maintenance by the exercise of her splendid talents, Miss Costigan's

family is as ancient and noble as our own. When our ancestor, Ralph

Pendennis, landed with Richard II. in Ireland, my Emily's forefathers

were kings of that country. I have the information from Mr. Costigan,

who, like yourself, is a military man.

"It is in vain I have attempted to argue with my dear mother, and

prove to her that a young lady of irreproachable character and lineage,

endowed with the most splendid gifts of beauty and genius, who devotes

herself to the exercise of one of the noblest professions, for the

sacred purpose of maintaining her family, is a being whom we should all

love and reverence, rather than avoid;--my poor mother has prejudices

which it is impossible for my logic to overcome, and refuses to welcome

to her arms one who is disposed to be her most affectionate daughter

through life.

"Although Miss Costigan is some years older than myself, that

circumstance does not operate as a barrier to my affection, and I am

sure will not influence its duration. A love like mine, Sir, I feel, is

contracted once and for ever. As I never had dreamed of love until I saw

her--I feel now that I shall die without ever knowing another passion.

It is the fate of my life. It was Miss C.'s own delicacy which suggested

that the difference of age, which I never felt, might operate as a bar

to our union. But having loved once, I should despise myself, and

be unworthy of my name as a gentleman, if I hesitated to abide by my

passion: if I did not give all where I felt all, and endow the woman who

loves me fondly with my whole heart and my whole fortune.

"I press for a speedy marriage with my Emily--for why, in truth,

should it be delayed? A delay implies a doubt, which I cast from me

as unworthy. It is impossible that my sentiments can change towards

Emily--that at any age she can be anything but the sole object of my

love. Why, then, wait? I entreat you, my dear Uncle, to come down and

reconcile my dear mother to our union, and I address you as a man of the

world, qui mores hominum multorum vidit et urbes, who will not feel any

of the weak scruples and fears which agitate a lady who has scarcely

ever left her village.

"Pray, come down to us immediately. I am quite confident that--apart

from considerations of fortune--you will admire and approve of my

Emily.--Your affectionate Nephew, Arthur Pendennis, Jr."

When the Major had concluded the perusal of this letter, his countenance

assumed an expression of such rage and horror that Glowry, the

surgeon-official, felt in his pocket for his lancet, which he always

carried in his card-case, and thought his respected friend was going

into a fit. The intelligence was indeed sufficient to agitate Pendennis.

The head of the Pendennises going to marry an actress ten years his

senior,--a headstrong boy going to plunge into matrimony. "The mother

has spoiled the young rascal," groaned the Major inwardly, "with her

cursed sentimentality and romantic rubbish. My nephew marry a tragedy

queen! Gracious mercy, people will laugh at me so that I shall not dare

show my head!" And he thought with an inexpressible pang that he must

give up Lord Steyne's dinner at Richmond, and must lose his rest and

pass the night in an abominable tight mail-coach, instead of taking

pleasure, as he had promised himself, in some of the most agreeable and

select society in England.

And he must not only give up this but all other engagements for some

time to come. Who knows how long the business might detain him. He

quitted his breakfast table for the adjoining writing-room, and there

ruefully wrote off refusals to the Marquis, the Earl, the Bishop, and

all his entertainers; and he ordered his servant to take places in

the mail-coach for that evening, of course charging the sum which

he disbursed for the seats to the account of the widow and the young

scapegrace of whom he was guardian.

CHAPTER II. A Pedigree and other Family Matters

Early in the Regency of George the Magnificent, there lived in a small

town in the west of England, called Clavering, a gentleman whose name

was Pendennis. There were those alive who remembered having seen his

name painted on a board, which was surmounted by a gilt pestle and

mortar over the door of a very humble little shop in the city of Bath,

where Mr. Pendennis exercised the profession of apothecary and surgeon;

and where he not only attended gentlemen in their sick-rooms, and ladies

at the most interesting periods of their lives, but would condescend to

sell a brown-paper plaster to a farmer's wife across the counter,--or to

vend tooth-brushes, hair-powder, and London perfumery. For these facts

a few folks at Clavering could vouch, where people's memories were more

tenacious, perhaps, than they are in a great bustling metropolis.

And yet that little apothecary who sold a stray customer a pennyworth of

salts, or a more fragrant cake of Windsor soap, was a gentleman of

good education, and of as old a family as any in the whole county of

Somerset. He had a Cornish pedigree which carried the Pendennises up to

the time of the Druids, and who knows how much farther back? They had

intermarried with the Normans at a very late period of their family

existence, and they were related to all the great families of Wales and

Brittany. Pendennis had had a piece of University education too, and

might have pursued that career with great honour, but that in his second

year at Cambridge his father died insolvent, and poor Pen was obliged

to betake himself to the pestle and apron. He always detested the trade,

and it was only necessity, and the offer of his mother's brother, a

London apothecary of low family, into which Pendennis's father had

demeaned himself by marrying, that forced John Pendennis into so odious

a calling.

He quickly after his apprenticeship parted from the coarse-minded

practitioner his relative, and set up for himself at Bath with his

modest medical ensign. He had for some time a hard struggle with

poverty; and it was all he could do to keep the shop and its gilt

ornaments in decent repair, and his bed-ridden mother in comfort: but

Lady Ribstone happening to be passing to the Rooms with an intoxicated

Irish chairman who bumped her ladyship up against Pen's very door-post,

and drove his chair-pole through the handsomest pink bottle in

the surgeon's window, alighted screaming from her vehicle, and was

accommodated with a chair in Mr. Pendennis's shop, where she was brought

round with cinnamon and sal-volatile.

Mr. Pendennis's manners were so uncommonly gentlemanlike and soothing,

that her ladyship, the wife of Sir Pepin Ribstone, of Codlingbury, in

the county of Somerset, Bart., appointed her preserver, as she called

him, apothecary to her person and family, which was very large. Master

Ribstone coming home for the Christmas holidays from Eton, over-ate

himself and had a fever, in which Mr. Pendennis treated him with the

greatest skill and tenderness. In a word, he got the good graces of the

Codlingbury family, and from that day began to prosper. The good company

of Bath patronised him, and amongst the ladies especially he was beloved

and admired. First his humble little shop became a smart one: then he

discarded the selling of tooth-brushes and perfumery, as unworthy of a

gentleman of an ancient lineage: then he shut up the shop altogether,

and only had a little surgery attended by a genteel young man: then he

had a gig with a man to drive him; and, before her exit from this world,

his poor old mother had the happiness of seeing from her bedroom window

to which her chair was rolled, her beloved John step into a close

carriage of his own, a one-horse carriage it is true, but with the arms

of the family of Pendennis handsomely emblazoned on the panels.

"What would Arthur say now?" she asked, speaking of a younger son of

hers--"who never so much as once came to see my dearest Johnny through

all the time of his poverty and struggles!"

"Captain Pendennis is with his regiment in India, mother," Mr. Pendennis

remarked, "and, if you please, I wish you would not call me Johnny

before the young man--before Mr. Parkins."

Presently the day came when she ceased to call her son by the name of

Johnny, or by any other title of endearment or affection; and his house

was very lonely without that kind though querulous voice. He had his

night-bell altered and placed in the room in which the good old lady

had grumbled for many a long year, and he slept in the great large

bed there. He was upwards of forty years old when these events befell;

before the war was over; before George the Magnificent came to the

throne; before this history indeed: but what is a gentleman without his

pedigree? Pendennis, by this time, had his handsomely framed and glazed,

and hanging up in his drawing-room between the pictures of Codlingbury

House in Somersetshire, and St. Boniface's College, Cambridge, where

he had passed the brief and happy days of his early manhood. As for the

pedigree he had taken it out of a trunk, as Sterne's officer called for

his sword, now that he was a gentleman and could show it.

About the time of Mrs. Pendennis's demise, another of her son's patients

likewise died at Bath; that virtuous woman, old Lady Pontypool,

daughter of Reginald twelfth Earl of Bareacres, and by consequence

great-grand-aunt to the present Earl, and widow of John second Lord

Pontypool, and likewise of the Reverend Jonas Wales, of the Armageddon

Chapel, Clifton. For the last five years of her life her ladyship had

been attended by Miss Helen Thistlewood, a very distant relative of the

noble house of Bareacres, before mentioned, and daughter of Lieutenant

R. Thistlewood, R.N., killed at the battle of Copenhagen. Under Lady

Pontypool's roof Miss Thistlewood found a comfortable shelter, as far as

boarding and lodging went, but suffered under such an infernal tyranny

as only women can inflict on, or bear from, one another: the Doctor, who

paid his visits to my Lady Pontypool at least twice a day, could not but

remark the angelical sweetness and kindness with which the young lady

bore her elderly relative's insults; and it was, as they were going in

the fourth mourning coach to attend her ladyship's venerated remains to

Bath Abbey, where they now repose, that he looked at her sweet pale face

and resolved upon putting a certain question to her, the very nature of

which made his pulse beat ninety, at least.

He was older than she by more than twenty years, and at no time the most

ardent of men. Perhaps he had had a love affair in early life which he

had to strangle--perhaps all early love affairs ought to be strangled or

drowned, like so many blind kittens: well, at three-and-forty he was a

collected quiet little gentleman in black stockings with a bald head,

and a few days after the ceremony he called to see her, and, as he felt

her pulse, he kept hold of her hand in his, and asked her where she

was going to live now that the Pontypool family had come down upon the

property, which was being nailed into boxes, and packed into hampers,

and swaddled up with haybands, and buried in straw, and locked under

three keys in green baize plate-chests, and carted away under the eyes

of poor Miss Helen,--he asked her where she was going to live finally.

Her eyes filled with tears, and she said she did not know. She had a

little money. The old lady had left her a thousand pounds, indeed; and

she would go into a boarding-house or into a school: in fine, she did

not know where.

Then Pendennis, looking into her pale face, and keeping hold of her cold

little hand, asked her if she would come and live with him? He was old

compared to--to so blooming a young lady as Miss Thistlewood

(Pendennis was of the grave old complimentary school of gentlemen and

apothecaries), but he was of good birth, and, he flattered himself, of

good principles and temper. His prospects were good, and daily

mending. He was alone in the world, and had need of a kind and constant

companion, whom it would be the study of his life to make happy; in

a word, he recited to her a little speech, which he had composed that

morning in bed, and rehearsed and perfected in his carriage, as he was

coming to wait upon the young lady.

Perhaps if he had had an early love-passage, she too had one day hoped

for a different lot than to be wedded to a little gentleman who rapped

his teeth and smiled artificially, who was laboriously polite to the

butler as he slid upstairs into the drawing-room, and profusely civil

to the lady's-maid, who waited at the bed-room door; for whom her old

patroness used to ring as for a servant, and who came with even more

eagerness; who got up stories, as he sent in draughts, for his patient's

amusement and his own profit: perhaps she would have chosen a different

man--but she knew, on the other hand, how worthy Pendennis was, how

prudent, how honourable; how good he had been to his mother, and

constant in his care of her; and the upshot of this interview was, that

she, blushing very much, made Pendennis an extremely low curtsey, and

asked leave to--to consider his very kind proposal.

They were married in the dull Bath season, which was the height of

the season in London. And Pendennis having previously, through a

professional friend, M.R.C.S., secured lodgings in Holles Street,

Cavendish Square, took his wife thither in a chaise and pair; conducted

her to the theatres, the Parks, and the Chapel Royal; showed her

the folks going to a drawing-room, and, in a word, gave her all the

pleasures of the town. He likewise left cards upon Lord Pontypool, upon

the Right Honourable the Earl of Bareacres, and upon Sir Pepin and Lady

Ribstone, his earliest and kindest patrons. Bareacres took no notice

of the cards. Pontypool called, admired Mrs. Pendennis, and said Lady

Pontypool would come and see her, which her ladyship did, per proxy of

John her footman, who brought her card, and an invitation to a concert

five weeks off. Pendennis was back in his little one-horse carriage,

dispensing draughts and pills at that time: but the Ribstones asked him

and Mrs. Pendennis to an entertainment, of which Mr. Pendennis bragged

to the last day of his life.

The secret ambition of Mr. Pendennis had always been to be a gentleman.

It takes much time and careful saving for a provincial doctor, whose

gains are not very large, to lay by enough money wherewith to purchase

a house and land: but besides our friend's own frugality and prudence,

fortune aided him considerably in his endeavour, and brought him to

the point which he so panted to attain. He laid out some money very

advantageously in the purchase of a house and small estate close upon

the village of Clavering before mentioned. Words cannot describe, nor

did he himself ever care to confess to any one, his pride when he found

himself a real landed proprietor, and could walk over acres of which

he was the master. A lucky purchase which he had made of shares in a

copper-mine added very considerably to his wealth, and he realised with

great prudence while this mine was still at its full vogue. Finally, he

sold his business at Bath, to Mr. Parkins, for a handsome sum of ready

money, and for an annuity to be paid to him during a certain number of

years after he had for ever retired from the handling of the mortar and

pestle.

Arthur Pendennis, his son, was eight years old at the time of this

event, so that it is no wonder that the latter, who left Bath and the

surgery so young, should forget the existence of such a place almost

entirely, and that his father's hands had ever been dirtied by the

compounding of odious pills, or the preparation of filthy plasters. The

old man never spoke about the shop himself, never alluded to it; called

in the medical practitioner of Clavering to attend his family when

occasion arrived; sunk the black breeches and stockings altogether;

attended market and sessions, and wore a bottle-green coat and brass

buttons with drab gaiters, just as if he had been an English gentleman

all his life. He used to stand at his lodge-gate, and see the coaches

come in, and bow gravely to the guards and coachmen as they touched

their hats and drove by. It was he who founded the Clavering Book Club:

and set up the Samaritan Soup and Blanket Society. It was he who brought

the mail, which used to run through Cacklefield before, away from that

village and through Clavering. At church he was equally active as a

vestryman and a worshipper. At market every Thursday, he went from pen

to stall, looked at samples of oats, and munched corn, felt beasts,

punched geese in the breast, and weighed them with a knowing air, and

did business with the farmers at the Clavering Arms, as well as the

oldest frequenter of that house of call. It was now his shame, as it

formerly was his pride, to be called Doctor, and those who wished to

please him always gave him the title of Squire.

Heaven knows where they came from, but a whole range of Pendennis

portraits presently hung round the Doctor's oak dining-room; Lelys and

Vandykes he vowed all the portraits to be, and when questioned as to

the history of the originals, would vaguely say they were 'ancestors of

his.' You could see by his wife's looks that she disbelieved in

these genealogical legends, for she generally endeavoured to turn the

conversation when he commenced them. But his little boy believed them to

their fullest extent, and Roger Pendennis of Agincourt, Arthur Pendennis

of Crecy, General Pendennis of Blenheim and Oudenarde, were as real

and actual beings for this young gentleman as--whom shall we

say?--as Robinson Crusoe, or Peter Wilkins, or the Seven Champions of

Christendom, whose histories were in his library.

Pendennis's fortune, which, at the best, was not above eight hundred

pounds a year, did not, with the best economy and management, permit

of his living with the great folks of the county; but he had a decent

comfortable society of the second-best sort. If they were not the roses,

they lived near the roses, as it were, and had a good deal of the odour

of genteel life. They had out their plate, and dined each other round

in the moonlight nights twice a year, coming a dozen miles to these

festivals; and besides the county, the Pendennises had the society of

the town of Clavering, as much as, nay, more than they liked: for Mrs.

Pybus was always poking about Helen's conservatories, and intercepting

the operation of her soup-tickets and coal-clubs Captain Glanders (H.

P., 50th Dragoon Guards) was for ever swaggering about the Squire's

stables and gardens, and endeavouring to enlist him in his quarrels

with the Vicar, with the Postmaster, with the Reverend F. Wapshot

of Clavering Grammar School, for overflogging his son, Anglesea

Glanders,--with all the village in fine. And Pendennis and his wife

often blessed themselves, that their house of Fairoaks was nearly a mile

out of Clavering, or their premises would never have been free from

the prying eyes and prattle of one or other of the male and female

inhabitants there.

Fairoaks lawn comes down to the little river Brawl, and on the other

side were the plantations and woods (as much as were left of them) of

Clavering Park, Sir Francis Clavering, Bart. The park was let out in

pasture and fed down by sheep and cattle, when the Pendennises came

first to live at Fairoaks. Shutters were up in the house; a splendid

freestone palace, with great stairs, statues, and porticos, whereof you

may see a picture in the 'Beauties of England and Wales.' Sir Richard

Clavering, Sir Francis's-grandfather, had commenced the ruin of the

family by the building of this palace: his successor had achieved the

ruin by living in it. The present Sir Francis was abroad somewhere;

nor could anybody be found rich enough to rent that enormous mansion,

through the deserted rooms, mouldy clanking halls, and dismal galleries

of which, Arthur Pendennis many a time walked trembling when he was a

boy. At sunset, from the lawn of Fairoaks, there was a pretty sight:

it and the opposite park of Clavering were in the habit of putting on a

rich golden tinge, which became them both wonderfully. The upper windows

of the great house flamed so as to make your eyes wink; the little river

ran off noisily westward, and was lost in a sombre wood, behind which

the towers of the old abbey church of Clavering (whereby that town

is called Clavering St. Mary's to the present day) rose up in purple

splendour. Little Arthur's figure and his mother's, cast long blue

shadows over the grass; and he would repeat in a low voice (for a

scene of great natural beauty always moved the boy, who inherited this

sensibility from his mother) certain lines beginning, "These are thy

glorious works, Parent of Good; Almighty! thine this universal frame,"

greatly to Mrs. Pendennis's delight. Such walks and conversation

generally ended in a profusion of filial and maternal embraces; for to

love and to pray were the main occupations of this dear woman's life;

and I have often heard Pendennis say in his wild way, that he felt that

he was sure of going to heaven, for his mother never could be happy

there without him.

As for John Pendennis, as the father of the family, and that sort of

thing, everybody had the greatest respect for him: and his orders

were obeyed like those of the Medes and Persians. His hat was as well

brushed, perhaps, as that of any man in this empire. His meals were

served at the same minute every day, and woe to those who came late,

as little Pen, a disorderly little rascal, sometimes did. Prayers were

recited, his letters were read, his business dispatched, his stables

and garden inspected, his hen-houses and kennel, his barn and pigstye

visited, always at regular hours. After dinner he always had a nap with

the Globe newspaper on his knee, and his yellow bandanna handkerchief on

his face (Major Pendennis sent the yellow handkerchiefs from India, and

his brother had helped in the purchase of his majority, so that they

were good friends now). And so, as his dinner took place at six o'clock

to a minute, and the sunset business alluded to may be supposed to have

occurred at about half-past seven, it is probable that he did not much

care for the view in front of his lawn windows or take any share in the

poetry and caresses which were taking place there.

They seldom occurred in his presence. However frisky they were before,

mother and child were hushed and quiet when Mr. Pendennis walked into

the drawing-room, his newspaper under his arm. And here, while little

Pen, buried in a great chair, read all the books of which he could lay

hold, the Squire perused his own articles in the 'Gardener's Gazette,'

or took a solemn hand at picquet with Mrs. Pendennis, or an occasional

friend from the village.

Pendennis usually took care that at least one of his grand dinners

should take place when his brother, the Major, who, on the return of

his regiment from India and New South Wales, had sold out and gone upon

half-pay, came to pay his biennial visit to Fairoaks. "My brother, Major

Pendennis," was a constant theme of the retired Doctor's conversation.

All the family delighted in my brother the Major. He was the link which

bound them to the great world of London, and the fashion. He always

brought down the last news of the nobility, and was in the constant

habit of dining with lords and great folks. He spoke of such with

soldierlike respect and decorum. He would say, "My Lord Bareacres has

been good enough to invite me to Bareacres for the pheasant shooting,"

or, "My Lord Steyne is so kind as to wish for my presence at Stillbrook

for the Easter holidays;" and you may be sure the whereabouts of my

brother the Major was carefully made known by worthy Mr. Pendennis to

his friends at the Clavering Reading room, at Justice-meetings, or at

the County-town. Their carriages would come from ten miles round to call

upon Major Pendennis in his visits to Fairoaks; the fame of his fashion

as a man about town was established throughout the county. There was a

talk of his marrying Miss Hunkle, of Lilybank, old Hunkle the Attorney's

daughter, with at least fifteen hundred a-year to her fortune: but my

brother the Major refused this negotiation, advantageous as it might

seem to most persons. "As a bachelor," he said, "nobody cares how poor I

am. I have the happiness to live with people who are so highly placed in

the world, that a few hundreds or thousands a year more or less can make

no difference in the estimation in which they are pleased to hold me.

Miss Hunkle, though a most respectable lady, is not in possession of

either the birth or the manners, which would entitle her to be received

into the sphere in which I have the honour to move. I shall live and die

an old bachelor, John: and your worthy friend, Miss Hunkle, I have

no doubt, will find some more worthy object of her affection, than a

worn-out old soldier on half-pay." Time showed the correctness of the

surmise of the old man of the world; Miss Hunkle married a young French

nobleman, and is now at this moment living at Lilybank, under the title

of Baroness de Carambole, having been separated from her wild young

scapegrace of a Baron very shortly after their union.

The Major was a great favourite with almost all the little establishment

of Fairoaks. He was as good-natured as he was well bred, and had a

sincere liking and regard for his sister-in-law, whom he pronounced,

and with perfect truth, to be as fine a lady as any in England, and

an honour to the family. Indeed, Mrs. Pendennis's tranquil beauty, her

natural sweetness and kindness, and that simplicity and dignity which a

perfect purity and innocence are sure to bestow upon a handsome woman,

rendered her quite worthy of her brother's praises. I think it is not

national prejudice which makes me believe that a high-bred English lady

is the most complete of all Heaven's subjects in this world. In whom

else do you see so much grace, and so much virtue; so much faith, and

so much tenderness; with such a perfect refinement and chastity? And by

high-bred ladies I don't mean duchesses and countesses. Be they ever so

high in station, they can be but ladies, and no more. But almost every

man who lives in the world has the happiness, let us hope, of counting

a few such persons amongst his circle of acquaintance--women, in whose

angelical natures, there is something awful, as well as beautiful, to

contemplate; at whose feet the wildest and fiercest of us must fall down

and humble ourselves;--in admiration of that adorable purity which never

seems to do or to think wrong.

Arthur Pendennis had the good fortune to have a mother endowed with

these happy qualities. During his childhood and youth, the boy thought

of her as little less than an angel,--as a supernatural being, all

wisdom, love, and beauty. When her husband drove her into the county

town, or to the assize balls or concerts there, he would step into the

assembly with his wife on his arm, and look the great folks in the face,

as much as to say, "Look at that, my lord; can any of you show me a

woman like that?" She enraged some country ladies with three times her

money, by a sort of desperate perfection which they found in her. Miss

Pybus said she was cold and haughty; Miss Pierce, that she was too proud

for her station; Mrs. Wapshot, as a doctor of divinity's lady, would

have the pas of her, who was only the wife of a medical practitioner. In

the meanwhile, this lady moved through the world quite regardless of all

the comments that were made in her praise or disfavour. She did not seem

to know that she was admired or hated for being so perfect: but carried

on calmly through life, saying her prayers, loving her family, helping

her neighbours, and doing her duty.

That even a woman should be faultless, however, is an arrangement not

permitted by nature, which assigns to us mental defects, as it awards to

us headaches, illnesses, or death; without which the scheme of the world

could not be carried on,--nay, some of the best qualities of mankind

could not be brought into exercise. As pain produces or elicits

fortitude and endurance; difficulty, perseverance; poverty, industry

and ingenuity; danger, courage and what not; so the very virtues, on the

other hand, will generate some vices: and, in fine, Mrs. Pendennis had

that vice which Miss Pybus and Miss Pierce discovered in her, namely,

that of pride; which did not vest itself so much in her own person, as

in that of her family. She spoke about Mr. Pendennis (a worthy little

gentleman enough, but there are others as good as he) with an awful

reverence, as if he had been the Pope of Rome on his throne, and she

a cardinal kneeling at his feet, and giving him incense. The Major she

held to be a sort of Bayard among Majors: and as for her son Arthur she

worshipped that youth with an ardour which the young scapegrace accepted

almost as coolly as the statue of the Saint in Saint Peter's receives

the rapturous osculations which the faithful deliver on his toe.

This unfortunate superstition and idol-worship of this good woman was

the cause of a great deal of the misfortune which befell the young

gentleman who is the hero of this history, and deserves therefore to be

mentioned at the outset of his story.

Arthur Pendennis's schoolfellows at the Greyfriars School state that, as

a boy, he was in no ways remarkable either as a dunce or as a scholar.

He did, in fact, just as much as was required of him, and no more. If

he was distinguished for anything it was for verse-writing: but was his

enthusiasm ever so great, it stopped when he had composed the number

of lines demanded by the regulations (unlike young Swettenham, for

instance, who, with no more of poetry in his composition than Mr.

Wakley, yet would bring up a hundred dreary hexameters to the master

after a half-holiday; or young Fluxmore, who not only did his own

verses, but all the fifth form's besides). He never read to improve

himself out of school-hours, but, on the contrary, devoured all the

novels, plays, and poetry, on which he could lay his hands. He never was

flogged, but it was a wonder how he escaped the whipping-post. When he

had money he spent it royally in tarts for himself and his friends;

he has been known to disburse nine and sixpence out of ten shillings

awarded to him in a single day. When he had no funds he went on tick.

When he could get no credit he went without, and was almost as happy.

He has been known to take a thrashing for a crony without saying a

word; but a blow, ever so slight from a friend, would make him roar. To

fighting he was averse from his earliest youth, as indeed to physic, the

Greek Grammar, or any other exertion, and would engage in none of them,

except at the last extremity. He seldom if ever told lies, and never

bullied little boys. Those masters or seniors who were kind to him, he

loved with boyish ardour. And though the Doctor, when he did not know

his Horace, or could not construe his Greek play, said that that boy

Pendennis was a disgrace to the school, a candidate for ruin in this

world, and perdition in the next; a profligate who would most likely

bring his venerable father to ruin and his mother to a dishonoured

grave, and the like--yet as the Doctor made use of these compliments

to most of the boys in the place (which has not turned out an unusual

number of felons and pickpockets), little Pen, at first uneasy and

terrified by these charges, became gradually accustomed to hear them;

and he has not, in fact, either murdered his parents, or committed any

act worthy of transportation or hanging up to the present day.

There were many of the upper boys, among the Cistercians with whom

Pendennis was educated, who assumed all the privileges of men long

before they quitted that seminary. Many of them, for example, smoked

cigars--and some had already begun the practice of inebriation. One had

fought a duel with an Ensign in a marching, in consequence of a row at

the theatre--another actually kept a buggy and horse at a livery stable

in Covent Garden, and might be seen driving any Sunday in Hyde Park with

a groom with squared arms and armorial buttons by his side. Many of

the seniors were in love, and showed each other in confidence poems

addressed to, or letters and locks of hair received from, young

ladies--but Pen, a modest and timid youth, rather envied these than

imitated them as yet. He had not got beyond the theory as yet--the

practice of life was all to come. And by the way, ye tender mothers and

sober fathers of Christian families, a prodigious thing that theory of

life is as orally learned at a great public school. Why, if you could

hear those boys of fourteen who blush before mothers and sneak off in

silence in the presence of their daughters, talking among each other--it

would be the women's turn to blush then. Before he was twelve years old

and if while his mother fancied him an angel of candour, little Pen

had heard talk enough to make him quite awfully wise upon certain

points--and so, Madam, has your pretty little rosy-cheeked son, who is

coming home from school for the ensuing Christmas holidays. I don't say

that the boy is lost, or that the innocence has left him which he

had from 'Heaven, which is our home,' but that the shades of the

prison-house are closing very fast over him, and that we are helping as

much as possible to corrupt him.

Well--Pen had just made his public appearance in a coat with a tail, or

cauda virilis, and was looking most anxiously in his little study-glass

to see if his whiskers were growing, like those of more fortunate youths

his companions; and, instead of the treble voice with which he used to

speak and sing (for his singing voice was a very sweet one, and he used

when little to be made to perform 'Home, sweet Home,' 'My pretty Page,'

and a French song or two which his mother had taught him, and other

ballads for the delectation of the senior boys), had suddenly plunged

into a deep bass diversified by a squeak, which when he was called upon

to construe in school set the master and scholars laughing he was about

sixteen years old, in a word, when he was suddenly called away from his

academic studies.

It was at the close of the forenoon school, and Pen had been unnoticed

all the previous part of the morning till now, when the Doctor put him

on to construe in a Greek play. He did not know a word of it, though

little Timmins, his form-fellow, was prompting him with all his might.

Pen had made a sad blunder or two when the awful Chief broke out upon

him.

"Pendennis, sir," he said, "your idleness is incorrigible and your

stupidity beyond example. You are a disgrace to your school, and to your

family, and I have no doubt will prove so in after-life to your country.

If that vice, sir, which is described to us as the root of all evil,

be really what moralists have represented (and I have no doubt of the

correctness of their opinion), for what a prodigious quantity of future

crime and wickedness are you, unhappy boy, laying the seed! Miserable

trifler! A boy who construes de and, instead of de but, at sixteen

years of age is guilty not merely of folly, and ignorance, and dulness

inconceivable, but of crime, of deadly crime, of filial ingratitude,

which I tremble to contemplate. A boy, sir, who does not learn his Greek

play cheats the parent who spends money for his education. A boy who

cheats his parent is not very far from robbing or forging upon his

neighbour. A man who forges on his neighbour pays the penalty of his

crime at the gallows. And it is not such a one that I pity (for he will

be deservedly cut off), but his maddened and heart-broken parents, who

are driven to a premature grave by his crimes, or, if they live, drag on

a wretched and dishonoured old age. Go on, sir, and I warn you that the

very next mistake that you make shall subject you to the punishment of

the rod. Who's that laughing? What ill-conditioned boy is there that

dares to laugh?" shouted the Doctor.

Indeed, while the master was making this oration, there was a general

titter behind him in the schoolroom. The orator had his back to the door

of this ancient apartment, which was open, and a gentleman who was quite

familiar with the place, for both Major Arthur and Mr. John Pendennis

had been at the school, was asking the fifth-form boy who sate by the

door for Pendennis. The lad grinning pointed to the culprit against

whom the Doctor was pouring out the thunders of his just wrath--Major

Pendennis could not help laughing. He remembered having stood under that

very pillar where Pen the younger now stood, and having been assaulted

by the Doctor's predecessor years and years ago. The intelligence

was 'passed round' that it was Pendennis's uncle in an instant, and a

hundred young faces wondering and giggling, between terror and laughter,

turned now to the new-comer and then to the awful Doctor.

The Major asked the fifth-form boy to carry his card up to the Doctor,

which the lad did with an arch look. Major Pendennis had written on the

card, "I must take A. P. home; his father is very ill."

As the Doctor received the card, and stopped his harangue with rather

a seared look, the laughter of the boys, half constrained until then,

burst out in a general shout. "Silence!" roared out the Doctor stamping

with his foot. Pen looked up and saw who was his deliverer; the Major

beckoned to him gravely with one of his white gloves, and tumbling down

his books, Pen went across.

The Doctor took out his watch. It was two minutes to one. "We will take

the Juvenal at afternoon school," he said, nodding to the Captain, and

all the boys understanding the signal gathered up their books and poured

out of the hall.

Young Pen saw by his uncle's face that something had happened at home.

"Is there anything the matter with my mother?" he said. He could hardly

speak, though, for emotion, and the tears which were ready to start.

"No," said the Major, "but your father's very ill. Go and pack your

trunk directly; I have got a postchaise at the gate."

Pen went off quickly to his boarding-house to do as his uncle bade him;

and the Doctor, now left alone in the schoolroom, came out to shake

hands with his old schoolfellow. You would not have thought it was the

same man. As Cinderella at a particular hour became, from a blazing and

magnificent Princess, quite an ordinary little maid in a grey petticoat,

so, as the clock struck one, all the thundering majesty and awful wrath

of the schoolmaster disappeared.

"There is nothing serious, I hope," said the Doctor. "It is a pity to

take the boy away unless there is. He is a very good boy, rather idle

and unenergetic, but he is a very honest gentlemanlike little fellow,

though I can't get him to construe as I wish. Won't you come in and have

some luncheon? My wife will be very happy to see you."

But Major Pendennis declined the luncheon. He said his brother was very

ill, had had a fit the day before, and it was a great question if they

should see him alive.

"There's no other son, is there?" said the Doctor. The Major answered

"No."

"And there's a good eh--a good eh--property I believe?" asked the other

in an off-hand way.

"H'm--so so," said the Major. Whereupon this colloquy came to an end.

And Arthur Pendennis got into the postchaise with his uncle never to

come back to school any more.

As the chaise drove through Clavering, the hostler standing whistling

under the archway of the Clavering Arms, winked the postilion ominously,

as much as to say all was over. The gardener's wife came and opened the

lodge-gates, and let the travellers through with a silent shake of the

head. All the blinds were down at Fairoaks--the face of the old footman

was as blank when he let them in. Arthur's face was white too, with

terror more than with grief. Whatever of warmth and love the deceased

man might have had, and he adored his wife and loved and admired his son

with all his heart, he had shut them up within himself; nor had the boy

been ever able to penetrate that frigid outward barrier. But Arthur had

been his father's pride and glory through life, and his name the last

which John Pendennis had tried to articulate whilst he lay with his

wife's hand clasping his own cold and clammy palm, as the flickering

spirit went out into the darkness of death, and life and the world

passed away from him.

The little girl, whose face had peered for a moment under the blinds as

the chaise came up, opened the door from the stairs into the hall, and

taking Arthur's hand silently as he stooped down to kiss her, led him

upstairs to his mother. Old John opened the dining-room door for the

Major. The room was darkened with the blinds down, and surrounded by all

the gloomy pictures of the Pendennises. He drank a glass of wine. The

bottle had been opened for the Squire four days before. His hat was

brushed, and laid on the hall table: his newspapers, and his letter-bag,

with John Pendennis, Esquire, Fairoaks, engraved upon the brass plate,

were there in waiting. The doctor and the lawyer from Clavering, who had

seen the chaise pass through, came up in a gig half an hour after

the Major's arrival, and entered by the back door. The former gave a

detailed account of the seizure and demise of Mr. Pendennis, enlarged on

his virtues and the estimation in which the neighbourhood held him; on

what a loss he would be to the magistrates' bench, the County Hospital,

etc. Mrs. Pendennis bore up wonderfully, he said, especially since

Master Arthur's arrival. The lawyer stayed and dined with Major

Pendennis, and they talked business all the evening. The Major was his

brother's executor, and joint guardian to the boy with Mrs. Pendennis.

Everything was left unreservedly to her, except in case of a second

marriage,--an occasion which might offer itself in the case of so

young and handsome a woman, Mr. Tatham gallantly said, when different

provisions were enacted by the deceased. The Major would of course take

entire superintendence of everything under this most impressive and

melancholy occasion. Aware of this authority, old John the footman, when

he brought Major Pendennis the candle to go to bed, followed afterwards

with the plate-basket; and the next morning brought him the key of the

hall clock--the Squire always used to wind it up of a Thursday, John

said. Mrs. Pendennis's maid brought him messages from her mistress.

She confirmed the doctor's report, of the comfort which Master Arthur's

arrival had caused to his mother.

What passed between that lady and the boy is not of import. A veil

should be thrown over those sacred emotions of love and grief. The

maternal passion is a sacred mystery to me. What one sees symbolised

in the Roman churches in the image of the Virgin Mother with a bosom

bleeding with love, I think one may witness (and admire the Almighty

bounty for) every day. I saw a Jewish lady, only yesterday, with a

child at her knee, and from whose face towards the child there shone

a sweetness so angelical, that it seemed to form a sort of glory round

both. I protest I could have knelt before her too, and adored in her the

Divine beneficence in endowing us with the maternal storge, which began

with our race and sanctifies the history of mankind.

So it was with this, in a word, that Mrs. Pendennis comforted herself

on the death of her husband, whom, however, she always reverenced as the

best, the most upright, wise, high-minded, accomplished, and awful of

men. If the women did not make idols of us, and if they saw us as we see

each other, would life be bearable, or could society go on? Let a man

pray that none of his womankind should form a just estimation of him.

If your wife knew you as you are, neighbour, she would not grieve much

about being your widow, and would let your grave-lamp go out very

soon, or perhaps not even take the trouble to light it. Whereas Helen

Pendennis put up the handsomest of memorials to her husband, and

constantly renewed it with the most precious oil.

As for Arthur Pendennis, after that awful shock which the sight of his

dead father must have produced on him, and the pity and feeling which

such an event no doubt occasioned, I am not sure that in the very moment

of the grief, and as he embraced his mother and tenderly consoled her,

and promised to love her for ever, there was not springing up in his

breast a feeling of secret triumph and exultation. He was the chief now

and lord. He was Pendennis; and all round about him were his servants

and handmaids. "You'll never send me away," little Laura said, tripping

by him, and holding his hand. "You won't send me to school, will you,

Arthur?"

Arthur kissed her and patted her head. No, she shouldn't go to school.

As for going himself, that was quite out of the question. He had

determined that that part of his life should not be renewed. In the

midst of the general grief, and the corpse still lying above, he had

leisure to conclude that he would have it all holidays for the future,

that he wouldn't get up till he liked, or stand the bullying of the

Doctor any more, and had made a hundred of such day-dreams and resolves

for the future. How one's thoughts will travel! and how quickly our

wishes beget them! When he with Laura in his hand went into the kitchen

on his way to the dog-kennel, the fowl-houses, and other his favourite

haunts, all the servants there assembled in great silence with their

friends, and the labouring men and their wives, and Sally Potter

who went with the post-bag to Clavering, and the baker's man from

Clavering--all there assembled and drinking beer on the melancholy

occasion--rose up on his entrance and bowed or curtseyed to him.

They never used to do so last holidays, he felt at once and with

indescribable pleasure. The cook cried out, "O Lord," and whispered,

"How Master Arthur do grow!" Thomas, the groom, in the act of drinking,

put down the jug alarmed before his master. Thomas's master felt the

honour keenly. He went through and looked at the pointers. As Flora put

her nose up to his waistcoat, and Ponto, yelling with pleasure, hurtled

at his chain, Pen patronised the dogs, and said, "Poo Ponto, poo Flora,"

in his most condescending manner. And then he went and looked at Laura's

hens, and at the pigs, and at the orchard, and at the dairy; perhaps

he blushed to think that it was only last holidays he had in a manner

robbed the great apple-tree, and been scolded by the dairymaid for

taking cream.

They buried John Pendennis, Esquire, "formerly an eminent medical

practitioner at Bath, and subsequently an able magistrate, a benevolent

landlord, and a benefactor to many charities and public institutions in

this neighbourhood and county," with one of the most handsome funerals

that had been seen since Sir Roger Clavering was buried here, the clerk

said, in the abbey church of Clavering St. Mary's. A fair marble

slab, from which the above inscription is copied, was erected over the

Fairoaks' pew in the church. On it you may see the Pendennis coat of

arms, and crest, an eagle looking towards the sun, with the motto 'nec

tenui penna,' to the present day. Doctor Portman alluded to the deceased

most handsomely and affectingly, as "our dear departed friend," in his

sermon next Sunday; and Arthur Pendennis reigned in his stead.

CHAPTER III. In which Pendennis appears as a very young Man indeed

Arthur was about sixteen years old, we have said, when he began to

reign; in person (for I see that the artist who is to illustrate this

book, and who makes sad work of the likeness, will never be able to take

my friend off) he had what his friends would call a dumpy, but his mamma

styled a neat little figure. His hair was of a healthy brown colour,

which looks like gold in the sunshine, his face was round, rosy,

freckled, and good-humoured, his whiskers (when those facial ornaments

for which he sighed so ardently were awarded to him by nature) were

decidedly of a reddish hue; in fact, without being a beauty, he had such

a frank, good-natured kind face, and laughed so merrily at you out of

his honest blue eyes, that no wonder Mrs. Pendennis thought him the

pride of the whole county. Between the ages of sixteen and eighteen he

rose from five feet six to five feet eight inches in height, at which

altitude he paused. But his mother wondered at it. He was three inches

taller than his father. Was it possible that any man could grow to be

three inches taller than Mr. Pendennis?

You may be certain he never went back to school; the discipline of the

establishment did not suit him, and he liked being at home much better.

The question of his return was debated, and his uncle was for his

going back. The Doctor wrote his opinion that it was most important

for Arthur's success in after-life that he should know a Greek play

thoroughly, but Pen adroitly managed to hint to his mother what a

dangerous place Greyfriars was, and what sad wild fellows some of the

chaps there were, and the timid soul, taking alarm at once, acceded to

his desire to stay at home.

Then Pen's uncle offered to use his influence with His Royal Highness

the Commander-in-Chief, who was pleased to be very kind to him, and

proposed to get Pen a commission in the Foot Guards. Pen's heart leaped

at this: he had been to hear the band at St. James's play on a Sunday,

when he went out to his uncle. He had seen Tom Ricketts, of the fourth

form, who used to wear a jacket and trousers so ludicrously tight, that

the elder boys could not forbear using him in the quality of a butt or

'cockshy'--he had seen this very Ricketts arrayed in crimson and gold,

with an immense bear-skin cap on his head, staggering under the colours

of the regiment. Tom had recognised him and gave him a patronising nod.

Tom, a little wretch whom he had cut over the back with a hockey-stick

last quarter--and there he was in the centre of the square, rallying

round the flag of his country, surrounded by bayonets, crossbelts,

and scarlet, the band blowing trumpets and banging cymbals--talking

familiarly to immense warriors with tufts to their chins and Waterloo

medals. What would not Pen have given to wear such epaulettes and enter

such a service?

But Helen Pendennis, when this point was proposed to her by her son, put

on a face full of terror and alarm. She said she "did not quarrel with

others who thought differently, but that in her opinion a Christian had

no right to make the army a profession. Mr. Pendennis never, never would

have permitted his son to be a soldier. Finally, she should be very

unhappy if he thought of it." Now Pen would have as soon cut off his

nose and ears as deliberately, and of aforethought malice, made his

mother unhappy; and, as he was of such a generous disposition that he

would give away anything to any one, he instantly made a present of his

visionary red coat and epaulettes and his ardour for military glory to

his mother.

She thought him the noblest creature in the world. But Major Pendennis,

when the offer of the commission was acknowledged and refused, wrote

back a curt and somewhat angry letter to the widow, and thought his

nephew was rather a spooney.

He was contented, however, when he saw the boy's performances out

hunting at Christmas, when the Major came down as usual to Fairoaks.

Pen had a very good mare, and rode her with uncommon pluck and grace. He

took his fences with great coolness, and yet with judgment, and without

bravado. He wrote to the chaps at school about his top-boots, and his

feats across country. He began to think seriously of a scarlet coat:

and his mother must own that she thought it would become him remarkably

well; though, of course, she passed hours of anguish during his absence,

and daily expected to see him brought home on a shutter.

With these amusements, in rather too great plenty, it must not be

assumed that Pen neglected his studies altogether. He had a natural

taste for reading every possible kind of book which did not fall into

his school-course. It was only when they forced his head into the waters

of knowledge, that he refused to drink. He devoured all the books at

home from Inchbald's Theatre to White's Farriery; he ransacked the

neighbouring book-cases. He found at Clavering an old cargo of French

novels, which he read with all his might; and he would sit for hours

perched upon the topmost bar of Doctor Portman's library steps with

a folio on his knees, whether it were Hakluyt's Travels, Hobbes's

Leviathan, Augustini Opera, or Chaucer's Poems. He and the Vicar were

very good friends, and from his Reverence, Pen learned that honest taste

for port wine which distinguished him through life. And as for that dear

good woman, Mrs. Portman, who was not in the least jealous, though her

Doctor avowed himself in love with Mrs. Pendennis, whom he pronounced

to be by far the finest lady in the county--all her grief was, as she

looked up fondly at Pen perched on the book-ladder, that her daughter,

Minny, was too old for him--as indeed she was--Miss Myra Portman being

at that period only two years younger than Pen's mother, and weighing as

much as Pen and Mrs. Pendennis together.

Are these details insipid? Look back, good friend, at your own youth,

and ask how was that? I like to think of a well-nurtured boy, brave and

gentle, warm-hearted and loving, and looking the world in the face with

kind honest eyes. What bright colours it wore then, and how you enjoyed

it! A man has not many years of such time. He does not know them whilst

they are with him. It is only when they are passed long away that he

remembers how dear and happy they were.

In order to keep Mr. Pen from indulging in that idleness of which

his friend the Doctor of the Cistercians had prophesied such awful

consequences, Mr. Smirke, Dr. Portman's curate, was engaged at a liberal

salary, to walk or ride over from Clavering and pass several hours daily

with the young gentleman. Smirke was a man perfectly faultless at a

tea-table, wore a curl on his fair forehead, and tied his neck-cloth

with a melancholy grace. He was a decent scholar and mathematician, and

taught Pen as much as the lad was ever disposed to learn, which was not

much. For Pen had soon taken the measure of his tutor, who, when he came

riding into the court-yard at Fairoaks on his pony, turned out his toes

so absurdly, and left such a gap between his knees and the saddle, that

it was impossible for any lad endowed with a sense of humour to respect

such an equestrian. He nearly killed Smirke with terror by putting

him on his mare, and taking him a ride over a common, where the county

fox-hounds (then bunted by that staunch old sportsman, Mr. Hardhead, of

Dumplingbeare) happened to meet. Mr. Smirke, on Pen's mare, Rebecca (she

was named after Pen's favourite heroine, the daughter of Isaac of York),

astounded the hounds as much as he disgusted the huntsman, laming one

of the former by persisting in riding amongst the pack, and receiving a

speech from the latter, more remarkable for energy of language, than

any oration he had ever heard since he left the bargemen on the banks of

Isis.

Smirke confided to his pupil his poems both Latin and English; and

presented to Mrs. Pendennis a volume of the latter, printed at Clapham,

his native place. The two read the ancient poets together, and rattled

through them at a pleasant rate, very different from that steady

grubbing pace with which the Cistercians used to go over the classic

ground, scenting out each word as they went, and digging up every root

in the way. Pen never liked to halt, but made his tutor construe when he

was at fault, and thus galloped through the Iliad and the Odyssey, the

tragic playwriters, writers, and the charming wicked Aristophanes (whom

he vowed to be the greatest poet of all). But he went at such a pace

that, though he certainly galloped through a considerable extent of the

ancient country, he clean forgot it in after-life, and had only such a

vague remembrance of his early classic course as a man has in the House

of Commons, let us say, who still keeps up two or three quotations; or

a reviewer who, just for decency's sake, hints at a little Greek. Our

people are the most prosaic in the world, but the most faithful; and

with curious reverence we keep up and transmit, from generation

to generation, the superstition of what we call the education of a

gentleman.

Besides the ancient poets, you may be sure Pen read the English with

great gusto. Smirke sighed and shook his head sadly both about Byron and

Moore. But Pen was a sworn fire-worshipper and a Corsair; he had them by

heart, and used to take little Laura into the window and say, "Zuleika,

I am not thy brother," in tones so tragic that they caused the solemn

little maid to open her great eyes still wider. She sat, until the

proper hour for retirement, sewing at Mrs. Pendennis's knee, and

listening to Pen reading out to her of nights without comprehending one

word of what he read.

He read Shakspeare to his mother (which she said she liked, but didn't),

and Byron, and Pope, and his favourite Lalla Rookh, which pleased her

indifferently. But as for Bishop Heber, and Mrs. Hemans above all,

this lady used to melt right away, and be absorbed into her

pocket-handkerchief, when Pen read those authors to her in his kind

boyish voice. The 'Christian Year' was a book which appeared about that

time. The son and the mother whispered it to each other with awe--faint,

very faint, and seldom in after-life Pendennis heard that solemn

church-music: but he always loved the remembrance of it, and of the

times when it struck on his heart, and he walked over the fields full of

hope and void of doubt, as the church-bells rang on Sunday morning.

It was at this period of his existence, that Pen broke out in the Poets'

Corner of the County Chronicle, with some verses with which he was

perfectly well satisfied. His are the verses signed 'NEP.,' addressed

'To a Tear;' 'On the Anniversary of the Battle of Waterloo;' 'To Madame

Caradori singing at the Assize Meetings;' 'On Saint Bartholomew's Day'

(a tremendous denunciation of Popery, and a solemn warning to the people

of England to rally against emancipating the Roman Catholics), etc.,

etc.--all which masterpieces, Mrs. Pendennis no doubt keeps to this day,

along with his first socks, the first cutting of his hair, his bottle,

and other interesting relics of his infancy. He used to gallop Rebecca

over the neighbouring Dumpling Downs, or into the county town, which, if

you please, we shall call Chatteris, spouting his own poems, and filled

with quite a Byronic afflatus as he thought.

His genius at this time was of a decidedly gloomy cast. He brought his

mother a tragedy, in which, though he killed sixteen people before the

second act, it made her laugh so, that he thrust the masterpiece into

the fire in a pet. He projected an epic poem in blank verse, 'Cortez,

or the Conqueror of Mexico, and the Inca's Daughter.' He wrote part of

'Seneca, or the Fatal Bath,' and 'Ariadne in Naxos;' classical pieces,

with choruses and strophes and antistrophes, which sadly puzzled poor

Mrs. Pendennis; and began a 'History of the Jesuits,' in which he

lashed that Order with tremendous severity, and warned his Protestant

fellow-countrymen of their machinations. His loyalty did his mother's

heart good to witness. He was a staunch, unflinching Church-and-King man

in those days; and at the election, when Sir Giles Beanfield stood on

the Blue interest, against Lord Trehawk, Lord Eyrie's son, a Whig and

a friend of Popery, Arthur Pendennis, with an immense bow for himself,

which his mother made, and with a blue ribbon for Rebecca, rode

alongside of the Reverend Doctor Portman, on his grey mare Dowdy, and

at the head of the Clavering voters, whom the Doctor brought up to plump

for the Protestant Champion.

On that day Pen made his first speech at the Blue Hotel: and also, it

appears, for the first time in his life--took a little more wine than

was good for him. Mercy! what a scene it was at Fairoaks, when he rode

back at ever so much o'clock at night. What moving about of lanterns

in the court-yard and stables, though the moon was shining out; what a

gathering of servants, as Pen came home, clattering over the bridge and

up the stableyard, with half a score of the Clavering voters yelling

after him the Blue song of the election.

He wanted them all to come in and have some wine--some very good

Madeira--some capital Madeira--John, go and get some Madeira,--and there

is no knowing what the farmers would have done, had not Madam Pendennis

made her appearance in a white wrapper, with a candle--and scared those

zealous Blues so by the sight of her pale handsome face, that they

touched their hats and rode off.

Besides these amusements and occupations in which Mr. Pen indulged,

there was one which forms the main business and pleasure of youth, if

the poets tell us aright, whom Pen was always studying; and this young

fellow's heart was so ardent, and his imagination so eager, that it is

not to be expected he should long escape the passion to which we allude,

and which, ladies, you have rightly guessed to be that of Love. Pen

sighed for it first in secret, and, like the love-sick swain in Ovid,

opened his breast and said, "Aura, veni." What generous youth is there

that has not courted some such windy mistress in his time?

Yes, Pen began to feel the necessity of a first love--of a consuming

passion--of an object on which he could concentrate all those vague

floating fancies under which he sweetly suffered--of a young lady to

whom he could really make verses, and whom he could set up and adore, in

place of those unsubstantial Ianthes and Zuleikas to whom he addressed

the outpourings of his gushing muse. He read his favourite poems over

and over again, he called upon Alma Venus the delight of gods and men,

he translated Anacreon's odes, and picked out passages suitable to his

complaint from Waller, Dryden, Prior, and the like. Smirke and he

were never weary, in their interviews, of discoursing about love. The

faithless tutor entertained him with sentimental conversations in place

of lectures on algebra and Greek; for Smirke was in love too. Who could

help it, being in daily intercourse with such a woman? Smirke was madly

in love (as far as such a mild flame as Mr. Smirke's may be called

madness) with Mrs. Pendennis. That honest lady, sitting down below

stairs teaching little Laura to play the piano, or devising flannel

petticoats for the poor round about her, or otherwise busied with the

calm routine of her modest and spotless Christian life, was little aware

what storms were brewing in two bosoms upstairs in the study--in

Pen's, as he sate in his shooting jacket, with his elbows on the green

study-table, and his hands clutching his curly brown hair, Homer under

his nose,--and in worthy Mr. Smirke's, with whom he was reading. Here

they would talk about Helen and Andromache. "Andromache's like my

mother," Pen used to avouch; "but I say, Smirke, by Jove I'd cut off my

nose to see Helen;" and he would spout certain favourite lines which

the reader will find in their proper place in the third book. He

drew portraits of her--they are extant still--with straight noses and

enormous eyes, and 'Arthur Pendennis delineavit et pinxit' gallantly

written underneath.

As for Mr. Smirke he naturally preferred Andromache. And in consequence

he was uncommonly kind to Pen. He gave him his Elzevir Horace, of which

the boy was fond, and his little Greek Testament which his own mamma

at Clapham had purchased and presented to him. He bought him a silver

pencil-case; and in the matter of learning let him do just as much or

as little as ever he pleased. He always seemed to be on the point of

unbosoming himself to Pen: nay, he confessed to the latter that he

had a--an attachment, an ardently cherished attachment, about which

Pendennis longed to hear, and said, "Tell us, old chap, is she handsome?

has she got blue eyes or black?" But Doctor Portman's curate, heaving a

gentle sigh, cast up his eyes to the ceiling, and begged Pen faintly

to change the conversation. Poor Smirke! He invited Pen to dine at his

lodgings over Madame Fribsby's, the milliner's, in Clavering; and

once when it was raining, and Mrs. Pendennis, who had driven in her

pony-chaise into Clavering with respect to some arrangements, about

leaving off mourning probably, was prevailed upon to enter the curate's

apartments, he sent out for pound-cakes instantly. The sofa on which

she sate became sacred to him from that day: and he kept flowers in the

glass which she drank from ever after.

As Mrs. Pendennis was never tired of hearing the praises of her son, we

may be certain that this rogue of a tutor neglected no opportunity of

conversing with her upon that subject. It might be a little tedious to

him to hear the stories about Pen's generosity, about his bravery

in fighting the big naughty boy, about his fun and jokes, about his

prodigious skill in Latin, music, riding, etc., but what price would he

not pay to be in her company? and the widow, after these conversations,

thought Mr. Smirke a very pleasing and well-informed man. As for

her son, she had not settled in her mind whether he was to be Senior

Wrangler and Archbishop of Canterbury, or Double First Class at Oxford,

and Lord Chancellor. That all England did not possess his peer, was a

fact about which there was, in her mind, no manner of question.

A simple person, of inexpensive habits, she began forthwith to save,

and, perhaps, to be a little parsimonious, in favour of her boy. There

were no entertainments, of course, at Fairoaks, during the year of her

weeds. Nor, indeed, did the Doctor's silver dish-covers, of which he

was so proud, and which were flourished all over with the arms of

the Pendennises, and surmounted with their crest, come out of the

plate-chests again for long, long years. The household was diminished,

and its expenses curtailed. There was a very blank anchorite repast when

Pen dined from home: and he himself headed the remonstrance from the

kitchen regarding the deteriorated quality of the Fairoaks beer. She was

becoming miserly for Pen. Indeed, who ever accused women of being just?

They are always sacrificing themselves or somebody for somebody else's

sake.

There happened to be no young woman in the small circle of friends who

were in the widow's intimacy whom Pendennis could by any possibility

gratify by endowing her with the inestimable treasure of a heart which

he was longing to give away. Some young fellows in this predicament

bestow their young affections upon Dolly, the dairymaid, or cast the

eyes of tenderness upon Molly, the blacksmith's daughter. Pen thought

a Pendennis much too grand a personage to stoop so low. He was too

high-minded for a vulgar intrigue, and, at the idea of an intrigue or a

seduction, had he ever entertained it, his heart would have revolted as

from the notion of any act of baseness or dishonour. Miss Minny Portman

was too old, too large, and too fond of reading 'Rollin's Ancient

History.' The Miss Boardbacks, Admiral Boardback's daughters (of St.

Vincent's, or Fourth of June House, as it was called), disgusted

Pen with the London airs which they brought into the country, from

Gloucester Place, where they passed the season, and looked down upon Pen

as a chit. Captain Glanders's (H.P., 50th Dragoon Guards) three

girls were in brown-holland pinafores as yet, with the ends of their

hair-plaits tied up in dirty pink ribbon. Not having acquired the art of

dancing, the youth avoided such chances as he might have had of meeting

with the fair sex at the Chatteris' Assemblies; in fine, he was not in

love, because there was nobody at hand to fall in love with. And the

young monkey used to ride out, day after day in quest, of Dulcinea; and

peep into the pony-chaises and gentlefolks' carriages, as they drove

along the broad turnpike roads, with a heart beating within him, and

a secret tremor and hope that she might be in that yellow postchaise

coming swinging up the hill, or one of those three girls in beaver

bonnets in the back seat of the double gig, which the fat old gentleman

in black was driving, at four miles an hour. The postchaise contained a

snuffy old dowager of seventy, with a maid, her contemporary. The three

girls in the beaver bonnets were no handsomer than the turnips that

skirted the roadside. Do as he might, and ride where he would, the fairy

princess that he was to rescue and win, had not yet appeared to honest

Pen.

Upon these points he did not discourse to his mother. He had a world

of his own. What generous, ardent, imaginative soul has not a secret

pleasure-place in which it disports? Let no clumsy prying or dull

meddling of ours try to disturb it in our children. Actaeon was a brute

for wanting to push in where Diana was bathing. Leave him occasionally

alone, my good madam, if you have a poet for a child. Even your

admirable advice may be a bore sometimes. You are faultless; but it

does not follow that everybody in your family is to think exactly like

yourself. Yonder little child may have thoughts too deep even for

your great mind, and fancies so coy and timid that they will not bare

themselves when your ladyship sits by.

Helen Pendennis by the force of sheer love divined a great number of

her son's secrets. But she kept these things in her heart (if we may

so speak), and did not speak of them. Besides, she had made up her mind

that he was to marry little Laura, who would be eighteen when Pen was

six-and-twenty: and had finished his college career, and had made

his grand tour, and was settled either in London, astonishing all the

metropolis by his learning and eloquence at the bar, or better still in

a sweet country parsonage surrounded with hollyhocks and roses, close to

a delightful romantic ivy-covered church, from the pulpit of which Pen

would utter the most beautiful sermons ever preached.

While these natural sentiments were waging war and trouble in honest

Pen's bosom, it chanced one day that he rode into Chatteris, for the

purpose of carrying to the County Chronicle a tremendous and thrilling

poem for the next week's paper; and putting up his horse according to

custom, at the stables of the George Hotel there, he fell in with an old

acquaintance. A grand black tandem, with scarlet wheels, came rattling

into the inn yard, as Pen stood there in converse with the hostler about

Rebecca; and the voice of the driver called out, "Hallo, Pendennis,

is that you?" in a loud patronising manner. Pen had some difficulty in

recognising under the broad-brimmed hat and the vast great-coats and

neckcloths, with which the new-comer was habited, the person and figure

of his quondam schoolfellow, Mr. Foker.

A year's absence had made no small difference in that gentleman. A youth

who had been deservedly whipped a few months previously, and who spent

his pocket-money on tarts and hardbake, now appeared before Pen in one

of those costumes to which the public consent, that I take to be quite

as influential in this respect as 'Johnson's Dictionary,' has awarded

the title of "Swell.' He had a bull-dog between his legs, and in his

scarlet shawl neckcloth was a pin representing another bull-dog in gold:

he wore a fur waistcoat laced over with gold chains; a green cutaway

coat with basket-buttons, and a white upper-coat ornamented with

cheese-plate buttons, on each of which was engraved some stirring

incident of the road or the chase; all which ornaments set off this

young fellow's figure to such advantage, that you would hesitate to say

which character in life he most resembled, and whether he was a boxer en

goguette, or a coachman in his gala suit.

"Left that place for good, Pendennis?" Mr. Foker said, descending from

his landau and giving Pendennis a finger.

"Yes, this year--or more," Pen said.

"Beastly old hole," Mr. Foker remarked. "Hate it. Hate the Doctor: hate

Towzer, the second master; hate everybody there. Not a fit place for a

gentleman."

"Not at all," said Pen, with an air of the utmost consequence.

"By gad, sir, I sometimes dream, now, that the Doctor's walking into

me," Foker continued (and Pen smiled as he thought that he himself

had likewise fearful dreams of this nature). "When I think of the diet

there, by gad, sir, I wonder how I stood it. Mangy mutton, brutal beef;

pudding on Thursdays and Sundays, and that fit to poison you. Just

look at my leader--did you ever see a prettier animal? Drove over from

Baymouth. Came the nine mile in two-and-forty minutes. Not bad going,

sir."

"Are you stopping at Baymouth, Foker?" Pendennis asked.

"I'm coaching there," said the other, with a nod.

"What?" asked Pen, and in a tone of such wonder, that Foker burst out

laughing, and said, "He was blowed if he didn't think Pen was such a

flat as not to know what coaching meant."

"I'm come down with a coach from Oxford. A tutor, don't you see, old

boy? He's coaching me, and some other men, for the little go. Me and

Spavin have the drag between us. And I thought I'd just tool over and

go to the play. Did you ever see Rowkins do the hornpipe?" and Mr.

Foker began to perform some steps of that popular dance in the inn yard,

looking round for the sympathy of his groom and the stable-men.

Pen thought he would like to go to the play too: and could ride home

afterwards, as there was a moonlight. So he accepted Foker's invitation

to dinner, and the young men entered the inn together, where Mr. Foker

stopped at the bar, and called upon Miss Rincer, the landlady's fair

daughter, who presided there, to give him a glass of 'his mixture.'

Pen and his family had been known at the George ever since they came

into the country; and Mr. Pendennis's carriages and horses always put up

there when he paid a visit to the county town. The landlady dropped the

heir of Fairoaks a very respectful curtsey, and complimented him

upon his growth and manly appearance, and asked news of the family at

Fairoaks, and of Doctor Portman and the Clavering people, to all of

which questions the young gentleman answered with much affability. But

he spoke to Mr. and Mrs. Rincer with that sort of good nature with which

a young Prince addresses his father's subjects; never dreaming that

those bonnes gens were his equals in life.

Mr. Foker's behaviour was quite different. He inquired for Rincer and

the cold in his nose, told Mrs. Rincer a riddle, asked Miss Rincer when

she would be ready to marry him, and paid his compliments to Miss Brett,

the other young lady in the bar, all in a minute of time, and with a

liveliness and facetiousness which set all these ladies in a giggle; and

he gave a cluck, expressive of great satisfaction, as he tossed off his

mixture which Miss Rincer prepared and handed to him.

"Have a drop," said he to Pen, "it's recommended to me by the faculty as

a what-do-you-call-'em--a stomatic, old boy. Give the young one a glass,

R., and score it up to yours truly."

Poor Pen took a glass, and everybody laughed at the face which he made

as he put it down--gin, bitters, and some other cordial was the compound

with which Mr. Foker was so delighted as to call it by the name of

Foker's own. As Pen choked, sputtered, and made faces, the other took

occasion to remark to Mr. Rincer that the young fellow was green, very

green, but that he would soon form him; and then they proceeded to order

dinner--which Mr. Foker determined should consist of turtle and venison;

cautioning the landlady to be very particular about icing the wine.

Then Messrs. Foker and Pen strolled down the High Street together--the

former having a cigar in his mouth, which he had drawn out of a case

almost as big as a portmanteau. He went in to replenish it at Mr.

Lewis's, and talked to that gentleman for a while, sitting down on the

counter: he then looked in at the fruiterer's, to see the pretty girl

there, to whom he paid compliments similar to those before addressed to

the bar at the George; then they passed the County Chronicle office, for

which Pen had his packet ready, in the shape of 'Lines to Thyrza,' but

poor Pen did not like to put the letter into the editor's box while

walking in company with such a fine gentleman as Mr. Foker. They met

heavy dragoons of the regiment always quartered at Chatteris; and

stopped and talked about the Baymouth balls, and what a pretty girl was

Miss Brown, and what a dem fine woman Mrs. Jones was. It was in vain

that Pen recalled to his own mind what a stupid ass Foker used to be

at school--how he could scarcely read, how he was not cleanly in his

person, and notorious for his blunders and dulness. Mr. Foker was no

more like a gentleman now than in his school days: and yet Pen felt a

secret pride in strutting down High Street with a young fellow who

owned tandems, talked to officers, and ordered turtle and champagne for

dinner. He listened, and with respect too, to Mr. Foker's accounts of

what the men did at the University of which Mr. F. was an ornament, and

encountered a long series of stories about boat-racing, bumping, College

grass-plats, and milk-punch--and began to wish to go up himself to

College to a place where there were such manly pleasures and enjoyments.

Farmer Gurnett, who lives close by Fairoaks, riding by at this minute

and touching his hat to Pen, the latter stopped him, and sent a message

to his mother to say that he had met with an old schoolfellow, and

should dine in Chatteris.

The two young gentlemen continued their walk, and were passing round the

Cathedral Yard, where they could hear the music of the afternoon service

(a music which always exceedingly impressed and affected Pen), but

whither Mr. Foker came for the purpose of inspecting the nursery-maids

who frequent the Elms Walk there, and who are uncommonly pretty at

Chatteris, and here they strolled until with a final burst of music the

small congregation was played out.

Old Doctor Portman was one of the few who came from the venerable gate.

Spying Pen, he came and shook him by the hand, and eyed with wonder

Pen's friend, from whose mouth and cigar clouds of fragrance issued,

which curled round the Doctor's honest face and shovel hat.

"An old schoolfellow of mine, Mr. Foker," said Pen. The Doctor said

"H'm": and scowled at the cigar. He did not mind a pipe in his study,

but the cigar was an abomination to the worthy gentleman.

"I came up on Bishop's business," the Doctor said. "We'll ride home,

Arthur, if you like?"

"I--I'm engaged to my friend here," Pen answered.

"You had better come home with me," said the Doctor.

"His mother knows he's out, sir," Mr. Foker remarked; "don't she,

Pendennis?"

"But that does not prove that he had not better come home with me," the

Doctor growled, and he walked off with great dignity.

"Old boy don't like the weed, I suppose," Foker said. "Ha! who's

here?--here's the General, and Bingley, the manager. How do, Cos? How

do, Bingley?"

"How does my worthy and gallant young Foker?" said the gentleman

addressed as the General; and who wore a shabby military cape with a

mangy collar, and a hat cocked very much over one eye.

"Trust you are very well, my very dear sir," said the other gentleman,

"and that the Theatre Royal will have the honour of your patronage

to-night. We perform 'The Stranger,' in which your humble servant

will---"

"Can't stand you in tights and Hessians, Bingley," young Mr. Foker said.

On which the General, with the Irish accent, said, "But I think ye'll

like Miss Fotheringay, in Mrs. Haller, or me name's not Jack Costigan."

Pen looked at these individuals with the greatest interest. He had never

seen an actor before; and he saw Dr. Portman's red face looking over the

Doctor's shoulder, as he retreated from the Cathedral Yard, evidently

quite dissatisfied with the acquaintances into whose hands Pen had

fallen.

Perhaps it would have been much better for him had he taken the parson's

advice and company home. But which of us knows his fate?

CHAPTER IV. Mrs. Haller

Having returned to the George, Mr. Foker and his guest sate down to

a handsome repast in the coffee-room; where Mr. Rincer brought in

the first dish, and bowed as gravely as if he was waiting upon the

Lord-Lieutenant of the county. Mr. Foker attacked the turtle and venison

with as much gusto as he had shown the year before, when he used to make

feasts off ginger-beer and smuggled polonies. Pen could not but respect

his connoisseurship as he pronounced the champagne to be condemned

gooseberry, and winked at the port with one eye. The latter he declared

to be of the right sort; and told the waiters there was no way of

humbugging him. All these attendants he knew by their Christian names,

and showed a great interest in their families; and as the London coaches

drove up, which in those early days used to set off from the George,

Mr. Foker flung the coffee-room window open, and called the guards and

coachmen by their Christian names, too, asking about their respective

families, and imitating with great liveliness and accuracy the tooting

of the horns as Jem the ostler whipped the horses' cloths off, and the

carriages drove gaily away.

"A bottle of sherry, a bottle of sham, a bottle of port and a shass

caffy, it ain't so bad, hay, Pen?" Foker said, and pronounced, after all

these delicacies and a quantity of nuts and fruit had been dispatched,

that it was time to "toddle." Pen sprang up with very bright eyes, and

a flushed face; and they moved off towards the theatre, where they paid

their money to the wheezy old lady slumbering in the money-taker's box.

"Mrs. Dropsicum, Bingley's mother-in-law, great in Lady Macbeth," Foker

said to his companion. Foker knew her, too.

They had almost their choice of places in the boxes of the theatre,

which was no better filled than country theatres usually are in spite

of the "universal burst of attraction and galvanic thrills of delight"

advertised by Bingley in the play-bills. A score or so of people

dotted the pit-benches, a few more kept a kicking and whistling in the

galleries, and a dozen others, who came in with free admissions, were

in the boxes where our young gentlemen sate. Lieutenants Rodgers and

Podgers, and young Cornet Tidmus, of the Dragoons, occupied a private

box. The performers acted to them, and these gentlemen seemed to hold

conversations with the players when not engaged in the dialogue, and

applauded them by name loudly.

Bingley the manager, who assumed all the chief tragic and comic parts

except when he modestly retreated to make way for the London stars, who

came down occasionally to Chatteris, was great in the character of the

'Stranger.' He was attired in the tight pantaloons and Hessian boots

which the stage legend has given to that injured man, with a large cloak

and beaver and a hearse feather in it drooping over his raddled old

face, and only partially concealing his great buckled brown wig. He had

the stage jewellery on too, of which he selected the largest and most

shiny rings for himself, and allowed his little finger to quiver out

of his cloak with a sham diamond ring covering the first joint of the

finger and twiddling in the faces of the pit. Bingley made it a favour

to the young men of his company to go on in light comedy parts with

that ring. They flattered him by asking its history. The stage has its

traditional jewels as the Crown and all great families have. This had

belonged to George Frederick Cooke, who had had it from Mr. Quin,

who may have bought it for a shilling. Bingley fancied the world was

fascinated with its glitter.

He was reading out of the stage-book--that wonderful stage-book which

is not bound like any other book in the world, but is rouged and tawdry

like the hero or heroine who holds it; and who holds it as people never

do hold books: and points with his finger to a passage, and wags his

head ominously at the audience, and then lifts up eyes and finger to

the ceiling professing to derive some intense consolation from the work

between which and heaven there is a strong affinity. Anybody who

has ever seen one of our great light comedians, X., in a chintz

dressing-gown, such as nobody ever wore, and representing himself to the

public as a young nobleman in his apartments, and whiling away the time

with light literature until his friend Sir Harry shall arrive, or his

father shall come down to breakfast--anybody, I say, who has seen the

great X. over a sham book has indeed had a great pleasure and an abiding

matter for thought.

Directly the Stranger saw the young men, he acted at them; eyeing them

solemnly over his gilt volume as he lay on the stage-bank showing his

hand, his ring, and his Hessians. He calculated the effect that every

one of these ornaments would produce upon his victims: he was determined

to fascinate them, for he knew they had paid their money; and he saw

their families coming in from the country and filling the cane chairs in

his boxes.

As he lay on the bank reading, his servant, Francis, made remarks upon

his master.

"Again reading," said Francis, "thus it is, from morn to night. To him

nature has no beauty--life no charm. For three years I have never seen

him smile" (the gloom of Bingley's face was fearful to witness during

these comments of the faithful domestic). "Nothing diverts him. O, if

he would but attach himself to any living thing, were it an animal--for

something man must love."

[Enter Tobias (Goll) from the hut.] He cries, "O, how refreshing,

after seven long weeks, to feel these warm sunbeams once again. Thanks,

bounteous heaven, for the joy I taste!" He presses his cap between his

hands, looks up and prays. The Stranger eyes him attentively.

Francis to the Stranger. "This old man's share of earthly happiness can

be but little. Yet mark how grateful he is for his portion of it."

Bingley. "Because though old, he is but a child in the leading-string of

hope." (He looks steadily at Foker, who, however, continues to suck the

top of his stick in an unconcerned manner.)

Francis. "Hope is the nurse of life."

Bingley. "And her cradle--is the grave."

The Stranger uttered this with the moan of a bassoon in agony, and fixed

his eyes on Pendennis so steadily, that the poor lad was quite put out

of countenance. He thought the whole house must be looking at him; and

cast his eyes down. As soon as ever he raised them Bingley's were at

him again. All through the scene the manager played at him. When he was

about to do a good action, and sent off Francis with his book, so

that that domestic should not witness the deed of benevolence which he

meditated, Bingley marked the page carefully, so that he might continue

the perusal of the volume off the stage if he liked. But all was done

in the direct face of Pendennis, whom the manager was bent upon

subjugating. How relieved the lad was when the scene ended, and Foker,

tapping with his cane, cried out "Bravo, Bingley!"

"Give him a hand, Pendennis; you know every chap likes a hand,"

Mr. Foker said; and the good-natured young gentleman, and Pendennis

laughing, and the dragoons in the opposite box, began clapping hands to

the best of their power.

A chamber in Wintersen Castle closed over Tobias's hut and the Stranger

and his boots; and servants appeared bustling about with chairs and

tables--"That's Hicks and Miss Thackthwaite," whispered Foker. "Pretty

girl, ain't she, Pendennis? But stop--hurray--bravo! here's the

Fotheringay."

The pit thrilled and thumped its umbrellas; a volley of applause was

fired from the gallery: the Dragoon officers and Foker clapped their

hands furiously: you would have thought the house was full, so loud were

their plaudits. The red face and ragged whiskers of Mr. Costigan were

seen peering from the side-scene. Pen's eyes opened wide and bright as

Mrs. Haller entered with a downcast look, then rallying at the sound of

the applause, swept the house with a grateful glance, and, folding

her hands across her breast, sank down in a magnificent curtsey.

More applause, more umbrellas; Pen this time, flaming with wine and

enthusiasm, clapped hands and sang "bravo" louder than all. Mrs. Haller

saw him, and everybody else, and old Mr. Bows, the little first fiddler

of the orchestra (which was this night increased by a detachment of the

band of the Dragoons, by the kind permission of Colonel Swallowtail),

looked up from the desk where he was perched, with his crutch beside

him, and smiled at the enthusiasm of the lad.

Those who have only seen Miss Fotheringay in later days, since her

marriage and introduction into London life, have little idea how

beautiful a creature she was at the time when our friend Pen first set

eyes on her: and I warn my reader, as beforehand, that the pencil which

illustrates this work (and can draw an ugly face tolerably well, but is

sadly put out when it tries to delineate a beauty) can give no sort of

notion of her. She was of the tallest of women, and at her then age of

six-and-twenty-for six-and-twenty she was, though she vows she was only

nineteen--in the prime and fulness of her beauty. Her forehead was vast,

and her black hair waved over it with a natural ripple (that beauties

of late days have tried to imitate with the help of the crimping-irons),

and was confined in shining and voluminous braids at the back of a neck

such as you see on the shoulders of the Louvre Venus--that delight of

gods and men. Her eyes, when she lifted them up to gaze on you, and ere

she dropped their purple deep-fringed lids, shone with tenderness and

mystery unfathomable. Love and Genius seemed to look out from them and

then retire coyly, as if ashamed to have been seen at the lattice. Who

could have had such a commanding brow but a woman of high intellect? She

never laughed (indeed her teeth were not good), but a smile of endless

tenderness and sweetness played round her beautiful lips, and in the

dimples of her cheeks and her lovely chin. Her nose defied description

in those days. Her ears were like two little pearl shells, which the

earrings she wore (though the handsomest properties in the theatre)

only insulted. She was dressed in long flowing robes of black, which she

managed and swept to and fro with wonderful grace, and out of the folds

of which you only saw her sandals occasionally; they were of rather

a large size; but Pen thought them as ravishing as the slippers of

Cinderella. But it was her hand and arm that this magnificent creature

most excelled in, and somehow you could never see her but through them.

They surrounded her. When she folded them over her bosom in resignation;

when she dropped them in mute agony, or raised them in superb command;

when in sportive gaiety her hands fluttered and waved before her, like

what shall we say?--like the snowy doves before the chariot of Venus--it

was with these arms and hands that she beckoned, repelled, entreated,

embraced, her admirers--no single one, for she was armed with her own

virtue, and with her father's valour, whose sword would have leapt from

its scabbard at any insult offered to his child--but the whole house;

which rose to her, as the phrase was, as she curtseyed and bowed, and

charmed it.

Thus she stood for a minute--complete and beautiful--as Pen stared at

her. "I say, Pen, isn't she a stunner?" asked Mr. Foker.

"Hush!" Pen said, "she's speaking."

She began her business in a deep sweet voice. Those who know the play

of the 'Stranger,' are aware that the remarks made by the various

characters are not valuable in themselves, either for their sound sense,

their novelty of observation, or their poetic fancy. In fact, if a man

were to say it was a stupid play, he would not be far wrong. Nobody

ever talked so. If we meet idiots in life, as will happen, it is a great

mercy that they do not use such absurdly fine words. The Stranger's talk

is sham, like the book he reads and the hair he wears, and the bank he

sits on, and the diamond ring he makes play with--but, in the midst

of the balderdash, there runs that reality of love, children, and

forgiveness of wrong, which will be listened to wherever it is preached,

and sets all the world sympathising.

With what smothered sorrow, with what gushing pathos, Mrs. Haller

delivered her part! At first, when as Count Wintersen's housekeeper, and

preparing for his Excellency's arrival, she has to give orders about the

beds and furniture, and the dinner, etc., to be got ready, she did so

with the calm agony of despair. But when she could get rid of the stupid

servants and give vent to her feelings to the pit and the house, she

overflowed to each individual as if he were her particular confidant,

and she was crying out her griefs on his shoulder: the little fiddler

in the orchestra (whom she did not seem to watch, though he followed her

ceaselessly) twitched, twisted, nodded, pointed about, and when she

came to the favourite passage, "I have a William too, if he be still

alive--Ah, yes, if he be still alive. His little sisters, too! Why,

Fancy, dost thou rack me so? Why dost thou image my poor children

fainting in sickness, and crying to--to--their mum--um--other," when

she came to this passage little Bows buried his face in his blue cotton

handkerchief, after crying out "Bravo."

All the house was affected. Foker, for his part, taking out a large

yellow bandanna, wept piteously. As for Pen, he was gone too far for

that. He followed the woman about and about--when she was off the stage,

it and the house were blank; the lights and the red officers, reeled

wildly before his sight. He watched her at the side-scene--where she

stood waiting to come on the stage, and where her father took off her

shawl: when the reconciliation arrived, and she flung herself down on

Mr. Bingley's shoulders, whilst the children clung to their knees, and

the Countess (Mrs. Bingley) and Baron Steinforth (performed with great

liveliness and spirit by Garbetts)--while the rest of the characters

formed a group round them, Pen's hot eyes only saw Fotheringay,

Fotheringay. The curtain fell upon him like a pall. He did not hear a

word of what Bingley said, who came forward to announce the play for

the next evening, and who took the tumultuous applause, as usual, for

himself. Pen was not even distinctly aware that the house was calling

for Miss Fotheringay, nor did the manager seem to comprehend that

anybody else but himself had caused the success of the play. At last

he understood it--stepped back with a grin, and presently appeared with

Mrs. Haller on his arm. How beautiful she looked! Her hair had fallen

down, the officers threw her flowers. She clutched them to her heart.

She put back her hair, and smiled all round. Her eyes met Pen's. Down

went the curtain again: and she was gone. Not one note could he hear

of the overture which the brass band of the dragoons blew by kind

permission of Colonel Swallowtail.

"She is a crusher, ain't she now!" Mr. Foker asked of his companion.

Pen did not know exactly what Foker said, and answered vaguely. He could

not tell the other what he felt; he could not have spoken, just then, to

any mortal. Besides, Pendennis did not quite know what he felt yet; it

was something overwhelming, maddening, delicious; a fever of wild joy

and undefined longing.

And now Rowkins and Miss Thackthwaite came on to dance the favourite

double hornpipe, and Foker abandoned himself to the delights of this

ballet, just as he had to the tears of the tragedy, a few minutes

before. Pen did not care for it, or indeed think about the dance, except

to remember that that woman was acting with her in the scene where she

first came in. It was a mist before his eyes. At the end of the dance he

looked at his watch and said it was time for him to go.

"Hang it, stay to see The Bravo of the Battle-Axe," Foker said,

"Bingley's splendid in it; he wears red tights, and has to carry Mrs. B.

over the Pine-bridge of the Cataract, only she's too heavy. It's great

fun, do stop."

Pen looked at the bill with one lingering fond hope that Miss

Fotheringay's name might be hidden, somewhere, in the list of the actors

of the after-piece, but there was no such name. Go he must. He had a

long ride home. He squeezed Foker's hand. He was choking to speak, but

he couldn't. He quitted the theatre and walked frantically about the

town, he knew not how long; then he mounted at the George and rode

homewards, and Clavering clock sang out one as he came into the yard

at Fairoaks. The lady of the house might have been awake, but she only

heard him from the passage outside his room as he dashed into bed and

pulled the clothes over his head.

Pen had not been in the habit of passing wakeful nights, so he at once

fell off into a sound sleep. Even in later days and with a great deal

of care and other thoughtful matter to keep him awake, a man from long

practice or fatigue or resolution begins by going to sleep as usual:

and gets a nap in advance of Anxiety. But she soon comes up with him and

jogs his shoulder, and says, "Come, my man, no more of this laziness,

you must wake up and have a talk with me." Then they fall to together in

the midnight. Well, whatever might afterwards happen to him, poor little

Pen was not come to this state yet; he tumbled into a sound sleep--did

not wake until an early hour in the morning, when the rooks began to

caw from the little wood beyond his bedroom windows; and--at that very

instant and as his eyes started open, the beloved image was in his mind.

"My dear boy," he heard her say, "you were in a sound sleep and I would

not disturb you: but I have been close by your pillow all this while:

and I don't intend that you shall leave me. I am Love! I bring with me

fever and passion: wild longing, maddening desire; restless craving and

seeking. Many a long day ere this I heard you calling out for me; and

behold now I am come."

Was Pen frightened at the summons? Not he. He did not know what was

coming: it was all wild pleasure and delight as yet. And as, when three

years previously, and on entering the fifth form at the Cistercians, his

father had made him a present of a gold watch which the boy took from

under his pillow and examined on the instant of waking: for ever rubbing

and polishing it up in private and retiring into corners to listen to

its ticking: so the young man exulted over his new delight; felt in his

waistcoat pocket to see that it was safe; wound it up at nights, and at

the very first moment of waking hugged it and looked at it.--By the way,

that first watch of Pen's was a showy ill-manufactured piece: it never

went well from the beginning, and was always getting out of order. And

after putting it aside into a drawer and forgetting it for some time, he

swapped it finally away for a more useful time-keeper.

Pen felt himself to be ever so many years older since yesterday. There

was no mistake about it now. He was as much in love as the best hero in

the best romance he ever read. He told John to bring his shaving water

with the utmost confidence. He dressed himself in some of his finest

clothes that morning: and came splendidly down to breakfast, patronising

his mother and little Laura, who had been strumming her music lesson for

hours before; and who after he had read the prayers (of which he did not

heed one single syllable) wondered at his grand appearance, and asked

him to tell her what the play was about?

Pen laughed and declined to tell Laura what the play was about. In fact

it was quite as well that she should not know. Then she asked him why he

had got on his fine pin and beautiful new waistcoat?

Pen blushed and told his mother that the old schoolfellow with whom

he had dined at Chatteris was reading with a tutor at Baymouth, a very

learned man; and as he was himself to go to College, and as there were

several young men pursuing their studies at Baymouth--he was anxious to

ride over-and-and just see what the course of their reading was.

Laura made a long face. Helen Pendennis looked hard at her son, troubled

more than ever with the vague doubt and terror which had been haunting

her ever since the last night, when Farmer Gurnett brought back the news

that Pen would not return home to dinner. Arthur's eyes defied her. She

tried to console herself, and drive off her fears. The boy had never

told her an untruth. Pen conducted himself during breakfast in a very

haughty and supercilious manner; and, taking leave of the elder and

younger lady, was presently heard riding out of the stablecourt. He went

gently at first, but galloped like a madman as soon as he thought that

he was out of hearing.

Smirke, thinking of his own affairs, and softly riding with his toes

out, to give Pen his three hours' reading at Fairoaks, met his pupil,

who shot by him like the wind. Smirke's pony shied, as the other

thundered past him; the gentle curate went over his head among the

stinging-nettles in the hedge. Pen laughed as they met, pointed towards

the Baymouth road, and was gone half a mile in that direction before

poor Smirke had picked himself up.

Pen had resolved in his mind that he must see Foker that morning; he

must hear about her; know about her; be with somebody who knew her; and

honest Smirke, for his part, sitting up among the stinging-nettles,

as his pony cropped quietly in the hedge, thought dismally to himself,

ought he to go to Fairoaks now that his pupil was evidently gone away

for the day. Yes, he thought he might go, too. He might go and ask Mrs.

Pendennis when Arthur would be back; and hear Miss Laura her Watts's

Catechism. He got up on the little pony--both were used to his slipping

off--and advanced upon the house from which his scholar had just rushed

away in a whirlwind.

Thus love makes fools of all of us, big and little; and the curate had

tumbled over head and heels in pursuit of it, and Pen had started in the

first heat of the mad race.

CHAPTER V. Mrs. Haller at Home

Without slackening her pace, Rebecca the mare galloped on to Baymouth,

where Pen put her up at the inn stables, and ran straightway to Mr.

Foker's lodgings, which he knew from the direction given to him by that

gentleman on the previous day. On reaching these apartments, which

were over a chemist's shop whose stock of cigars and sodawater went off

rapidly by the kind patronage of his young inmates, Pen only found Mr.

Spavin, Foker's friend, and part owner of the tandem which the latter

had driven into Chatteris, who was smoking, and teaching a little dog, a

friend of his, tricks with a bit of biscuit.

Pen's healthy red face, fresh from the gallop, compared oddly with the

waxy debauched little features of Foker's chum; the latter remarked it.

"Who's that man?" he thought, "he looks as fresh as a bean. His hand

don't shake of a morning, I'd bet five to one."

Foker had not come home at all. Here was a disappointment!--Mr. Spavin

could not say when his friend would return. Sometimes he stopped a day,

sometimes a week. Of what college was Pen? Would he have anything? There

was a very fair tap of ale. Mr. Spavin was enabled to know Pendennis's

name, on the card which the latter took out and laid down (perhaps Pen

in these days was rather proud of having a card)--and so the young men

took leave.

Then Pen went down the rock, and walked about on the sand, biting his

nails by the shore of the much-sounding sea. It stretched before him

bright and immeasurable. The blue waters came rolling into the bay,

foaming and roaring hoarsely: Pen looked them in the face with blank

eyes, hardly regarding them. What a tide there was pouring into the

lad's own mind at the time, and what a little power had he to check it!

Pen flung stones into the sea, but it still kept coming on. He was in

a rage at not seeing Foker. He wanted to see Foker. He must see Foker.

"Suppose I go on--on the Chatteris road, just to see if I can meet him,"

Pen thought. Rebecca was saddled in another half hour, and galloping

on the grass by the Chatteris road. About four miles from Baymouth, the

Clavering road branches off, as everybody knows, and the mare naturally

was for taking that turn, but, cutting her over the shoulder, Pen passed

the turning, and rode on to the turnpike without seeing any sign of the

black tandem and red wheels.

As he was at the turnpike he might as well go on: that was quite clear.

So Pen rode to the George, and the hostler told him that Mr. Foker was

there sure enough, and that "he'd been a makin a tremendous row the

night afore, a drinkin and a singin, and wanting to fight Tom the

postboy: which I'm thinking he'd have had the worst of it," the man

added, with a grin. "Have you carried up your master's 'ot water to

shave with?" he added, in a very satirical manner, to Mr. Foker's

domestic, who here came down the yard bearing his master's clothes, most

beautifully brushed and arranged. "Show Mr. Pendennis up to 'un," and

Pen followed the man at last to the apartment, where, in the midst of an

immense bed, Mr. Harry Foker lay reposing.

The feather bed and bolsters swelled up all round Mr. Foker, so that you

could hardly see his little sallow face and red silk nightcap.

"Hullo!" said Pen.

"Who goes there? brother, quickly tell!" sang out the voice from the

bed. "What! Pendennis again? Is your Mamma acquainted with your absence?

Did you sup with us last night? No stop--who supped with us last night,

Stoopid?"

"There was the three officers, sir, and Mr. Bingley, sir, and Mr.

Costigan, sir," the man answered, who received all Mr. Foker's remarks

with perfect gravity.

"Ah yes: the cup and merry jest went round. We chanted and I remember I

wanted to fight a postboy. Did I thrash him, Stoopid?"

"No, sir. Fight didn't come off, sir," said Stoopid, still with perfect

gravity. He was arranging Mr. Foker's dressing-case--a trunk, the gift

of a fond mother, without which the young fellow never travelled. It

contained a prodigious apparatus in plate; a silver dish, a silver mug,

silver boxes and bottles for all sorts of essences, and a choice of

razors ready against the time when Mr. Foker's beard should come.

"Do it some other day," said the young fellow, yawning and throwing up

his little lean arms over his head. "No, there was no fight; but there

was chanting. Bingley chanted, I chanted, the General chanted--Costigan

I mean.--Did you ever hear him sing 'The Little Pig under the Bed,'

Pen?"

"The man we met yesterday," said Pen, all in a tremor, "the father

of---"

"Of the Fotheringay,--the very man. Ain't she a Venus, Pen?"

"Please sir, Mr. Costigan's in the sittin-room, sir, and says, sir, you

asked him to breakfast, sir. Called five times, sir; but wouldn't wake

you on no account; and has been here since eleven o'clock, sir---"

"How much is it now?"

"One, sir."

"What would the best of mothers say," cried the little sluggard, "if she

saw me in bed at this hour? She sent me down here with a grinder. She

wants me to cultivate my neglected genus--He, be! I say, Pen, this isn't

quite like seven o'clock school,--is it, old boy?"--and the young fellow

burst out into a boyish laugh of enjoyment. Then he added--"Go in and

talk to the General whilst I dress. And I say, Pendennis, ask him to

sing you 'The Little Pig under the Bed;' it's capital." Pen went off in

great perturbation, to meet Mr. Costigan, and Mr. Foker commenced his

toilet.

Of Mr. Foker's two grandfathers, the one from whom he inherited a

fortune was a brewer; the other was an earl, who endowed him with the

most doting mother in the world. The Fokers had been at the Cistercian

school from father to son; at which place, our friend, whose name could

be seen over the playground wall, on a public-house sign, under which

'Foker's Entire' was painted, had been dreadfully bullied on account

of his trade, his uncomely countenance, his inaptitude for learning and

cleanliness, his gluttony and other weak points. But those who know how

a susceptible youth, under the tyranny of his schoolfellows, becomes

silent and a sneak, may understand how in a very few months after his

liberation from bondage, he developed himself as he had done; and became

the humorous, the sarcastic, the brilliant Foker, with whom we have made

acquaintance. A dunce he always was, it is true; for learning cannot be

acquired by leaving school and entering at college as a fellow-commoner;

but he was now (in his own peculiar manner) as great a dandy as he

before had been a slattern, and when he entered his sitting-room to join

his two guests, arrived scented and arrayed in fine linen, and perfectly

splendid in appearance.

General or Captain Costigan--for the latter was the rank which he

preferred to assume--was seated in the window with the newspaper held

before him at arm's length. The Captain's eyes were somewhat dim; and he

was spelling the paper, with the help of his lips, as well as of those

bloodshot eyes of his, as you see gentlemen do to whom reading is a rare

and difficult occupation. His hat was cocked very much on one ear;

and as one of his feet lay up in the window-seat, the observer of such

matters might remark, by the size and shabbiness of the boots which the

Captain wore, that times did not go very well with him. Poverty seems

as if it were disposed, before it takes possession of a man entirely, to

attack his extremities first: the coverings of his head, feet, and

hands are its first prey. All these parts of the Captain's person were

particularly rakish and shabby. As soon as he saw Pen he descended from

the window-seat and saluted the new-comer, first in a military manner,

by conveying a couple of his fingers (covered with a broken black glove)

to his hat, and then removing that ornament altogether. The Captain was

inclined to be bald, but he brought a quantity of lank iron-grey hair

over his pate, and had a couple of whisps of the same falling down

on each side of his face. Much whisky had spoiled what complexion Mr.

Costigan may have possessed in his youth. His once handsome face had now

a copper tinge. He wore a very high stock, scarred and stained in many

places; and a dress-coat tightly buttoned up in those parts where the

buttons had not parted company from the garment.

"The young gentleman to whom I had the honour to be introjuiced

yesterday in the Cathadral Yard," said the Captain, with a splendid bow

and wave of his hat. "I hope I see you well, sir. I marked ye in the

thayatre last night during me daughter's perfawrumance; and missed ye

on my return. I did but conduct her home, sir, for Jack Costigan, though

poor, is a gentleman; and when I reintered the house to pay me respects

to me joyous young friend, Mr. Foker--ye were gone. We had a jolly night

of ut, sir--Mr. Foker, the three gallant young dragoons, and your 'umble

servant. Gad, sir, it put me in mind of one of our old nights when I

bore His Majesty's commission in the Foighting Hundtherd and Third." And

he pulled out an old snuff box, which he presented with a stately air to

his new acquaintance.

Arthur was a great deal too much flurried to speak. This shabby-looking

buck was--was her father. The Captain was perfumed with the

recollections of the last night's cigars, and pulled and twisted the

tuft on his chin as jauntily as any young dandy.

"I hope, Miss F--, Miss Costigan is well, sir," Pen said, flushing up.

"She--she gave me greater pleasure, than--than I--I--I ever enjoyed at

a play. I think, sir--I think she's the finest actress in the world," he

gasped out.

"Your hand, young man! for ye speak from your heart," cried the Captain.

"Thank ye, sir, an old soldier and a fond father thanks ye. She is

the finest actress in the world. I've seen the Siddons, sir, and

the O'Nale--they were great, but what were they compared to Miss

Fotheringay? I do not wish she should ashume her own name while on

the stage. Me family, sir, are proud people; and the Costigans of

Costiganstown think that an honest man, who has borne Her Majesty's

colours in the Hundred and Third, would demean himself, by permitting

his daughter to earn her old father's bread."

"There cannot be a more honourable duty, surely," Pen said.

"Honourable! Bedad, sir, I'd like to see the man who said Jack Costigan

would consent to anything dishonourable. I have a heart, sir, though

I am poor; I like a man who has a heart. You have: I read it in your

honest face and steady eye. And would you believe it"? he added, after a

pause, and with a pathetic whisper, "that that Bingley who has made his

fortune by me child, gives her but two guineas a week: out of which she

finds herself in dresses, and which, added to me own small means, makes

our all?"

Now the Captain's means were so small as to be, it may be said, quite

invisible. But nobody knows how the wind is tempered to shorn Irish

lambs, and in what marvellous places they find pasture. If Captain

Costigan, whom I had the honour to know, would but have told his

history, it would have been a great moral story. But he neither would

have told it if he could, nor could if he would; for the Captain was

not only unaccustomed to tell the truth,--he was unable even to think

it--and fact and fiction reeled together in his muzzy, whiskified brain.

He began life rather brilliantly with a pair of colours, a fine person

and legs, and one of the most beautiful voices in the world. To his

latest day he sang with admirable pathos and humour those wonderful

Irish ballads which are so mirthful and so melancholy: and was always

the first himself to cry at their pathos. Poor Cos! he was at once brave

and maudlin, humorous and an idiot; always good-natured, and sometimes

almost trustworthy. Up to the last day of his life he would drink with

any man, and back any man's bill: and his end was in a spunging-house,

where the sheriff's officer, who took him, was fond of him.

In his brief morning of life, Cos formed the delight of regimental

messes, and had the honour of singing his songs, bacchanalian and

sentimental, at the tables of the most illustrious generals and

commanders-in-chief, in the course of which period he drank three times

as much claret as was good for him, and spent his doubtful patrimony.

What became of him subsequently to his retirement from the army, is no

affair of ours. I take it, no foreigner understands the life of an Irish

gentleman without money, the way in which he manages to keep afloat--the

wind-raising conspiracies, in which he engages with heroes as

unfortunate as himself--the means by which he contrives, during most

days of the week, to get his portion of whisky-and-water: all these are

mysteries to us inconceivable: but suffice it to say, that through all

the storms of life Jack had floated somehow, and the lamp of his nose

had never gone out.

Before he and Pen had had a half-hour's conversation, the Captain

managed to extract a couple of sovereigns from the young gentleman for

tickets for his daughter's benefit, which was to take place speedily;

and was not a bona fide transaction such as that of the last year, when

poor Miss Fotheringay had lost fifteen shillings by her venture; but was

an arrangement with the manager, by which the lady was to have the sale

of a certain number of tickets, keeping for herself a large portion of

the sum for which they were sold.

Pen had but two pounds in his purse, and he handed them over to the

Captain for the tickets; he would have been afraid to offer more lest he

should offend the latter's delicacy. Costigan scrawled him an order for

a box, lightly slipped the sovereigns into his waistcoat, and slapped

his hand over the place where they lay. They seemed to warm his old

sides.

"Faith, sir," said he, "the bullion's scarcer with me than it used to

be, as is the case with many a good fellow. I won six hundthred of 'em

in a single night, sir, when me kind friend, His Royal Highness the

Duke of Kent, was in Gibralther." And he straightway poured out to Pen

a series of stories regarding the claret drunk, the bets made, the races

ridden by the garrison there, with which he kept the young gentleman

amused until the arrival of their host and his breakfast.

Then it was good to see the Captain's behaviour before the devilled

turkey and the mutton chops! His stories poured forth unceasingly, and

his spirits rose as he chatted to the young men. When he got a bit

of sunshine, the old lazzarone basked in it; he prated about his

own affairs and past splendour, and all the lords, generals, and

Lord-Lieutenants he had ever known. He described the death of his

darling Bessie, the late Mrs. Costigan, and the challenge he had sent

to Captain Shanty Clancy, of the Slashers, for looking rude at Miss

Fotheringay as she was on her kyar in the Phaynix; and then he described

how the Captain apologised, gave a dinner at the Kildare Street, where

six of them drank twinty-one bottles of claret, etc. He announced that

to sit with two such noble and generous young fellows was the happiness

and pride of an old soldier's existence; and having had a second glass

of Curacoa, was so happy that he began to cry. Altogether we should

say that the Captain was not a man of much strength of mind, or a very

eligible companion for youth; but there are worse men, holding much

better places in life, and more dishonest, who have never committed half

so many rogueries as he. They walked out, the Captain holding an arm of

each of his dear young friends, and in a maudlin state of contentment.

He winked at one or two tradesmen's shops where, possibly, he owed a

bill, as much as to say, "See the company I'm in--sure I'll pay you, my

boy,"--and they parted finally with Mr. Foker at a billiard-room, where

the latter had a particular engagement with some gentlemen of Colonel

Swallowtail's regiment.

Pen and the shabby Captain still walked the street together; the

Captain, in his sly way, making inquiries about Mr. Foker's fortune

and station in life. Pen told him how Foker's father was a celebrated

brewer, and his mother was Lady Agnes Milton, Lord Rosherville's

daughter. The Captain broke out into a strain of exaggerated compliment

and panegyric about Mr. Foker, whose "native aristocracie," he said,

"could be seen with the twinkling of an oi--and only served to adawrun

other qualities which he possessed, a foin intellect and a generous

heart,"--in not one word of which speech did the Captain accurately

believe.

Pen walked on, listening to his companion's prate, wondering, amused,

and puzzled. It had not as yet entered into the boy's head to disbelieve

any statement that was made to him; and being of a candid nature

himself, he took naturally for truth what other people told him.

Costigan had never had a better listener, and was highly flattered by

the attentiveness and modest bearing of the young man.

So much pleased was he with the young gentleman, so artless, honest,

and cheerful did Pen seem to be, that the Captain finally made him an

invitation, which he very seldom accorded to young men, and asked Pen if

he would do him the fever to enter his humble abode, which was near at

hand, where the Captain would have the honour of inthrojuicing his young

friend to his daughther, Miss Fotheringay?

Pen was so delightfully shocked at this invitation, and was so stricken

down by the happiness thus suddenly offered to him, that he thought he

should have dropped from the Captain's arm at first, and trembled lest

the other should discover his emotion. He gasped out a few incoherent

words, indicative of the high gratification he should have in being

presented to the lady for whose--for whose talents he had conceived such

an admiration--such an extreme admiration; and followed the Captain,

scarcely knowing whither that gentleman led him. He was going to see

her! He was going to see her! In her was the centre of the universe.

She was the kernel of the world for Pen. Yesterday, before he knew her,

seemed a period ever so long ago--a revolution was between him and that

time, and a new world about to begin.

The Captain conducted his young friend to that quiet little street

in Chatteris, which is called Prior's Lane, which lies in the

ecclesiastical quarter of the town, close by Dean's Green and the

canons' houses, and is overlooked by the enormous towers of the

cathedral; there the Captain dwelt modestly in the first floor of a low

gabled house, on the door of which was the brass plate of 'Creed, Tailor

and Robe-maker.' Creed was dead, however. His widow was a pew-opener in

the cathedral hard by; his eldest son was a little scamp of a choir-boy,

who played toss-halfpenny, led his little brothers into mischief, and

had a voice as sweet as an angel. A couple of the latter were sitting

on the door-step, down which you went into the passage of the house;

and they jumped up with great alacrity to meet their lodger, and plunged

wildly, and rather to Pen's surprise, at the swallow-tails of the

Captain's dress-coat; for the truth is, that the good-natured gentleman,

when he was in cash, generally brought home an apple or a piece of

gingerbread for these children. "Whereby the widdy never pressed me for

rint when not convanient," as he remarked afterwards to Pen, winking

knowingly, and laying a finger on his nose.

Pen tumbled down the step, and as he followed his companion up the

creaking old stair, his knees trembled under him. He could hardly see

when he entered, following the Captain, and stood in the room--in her

room. He saw something black before him, and waving as if making a

curtsey, and heard, but quite indistinctly, Costigan making a speech

over him, in which the Captain, with his usual magniloquence, expressed

to "me child" his wish to make her known to "his dear and admirable

young friend, Mr. Awther Pindinnis, a young gentleman of property in

the neighbourhood, a person of refoined moind, and enviable manners,

a sincare lover of poethry, and a man possest of a feeling and

affectionate heart."

"It is very fine weather," Miss Fotheringay said, in an Irish accent,

and with a deep rich melancholy voice.

"Very," said Mr. Pendennis. In this romantic way their conversation

began; and he found himself seated on a chair, and having leisure to

look at the young lady.

She looked still handsomer off the stage, than before the lamps. All her

attitudes were naturally grand and majestical. If she went and stood up

against the mantelpiece her robe draped itself classically round her;

her chin supported itself on her hand, the other lines of her form

arranged themselves in full harmonious undulations--she looked like a

Muse in contemplation. If she sate down on a cane-bottomed chair, her

arm rounded itself over the back of the seat, her hand seemed as if

it ought to have a sceptre put into it, the folds of her dress fell

naturally round her in order, like ladies of honour round a throne,

and she looked like an empress. All her movements were graceful and

imperial. In the morning you could see her hair was blue-black, her

complexion of dazzling fairness, with the faintest possible blush

flickering, as it were, in her cheek. Her eyes were grey, with

prodigious long lashes; and as for her mouth, Mr. Pendennis has given

me subsequently to understand, that it was of a staring red colour, with

which the most brilliant geranium, sealing-wax, or Guardsman's coat,

could not vie.

"And very warm," continued this empress and Queen of Sheba.

Mr. Pen again assented, and the conversation rolled on in this manner.

She asked Costigan whether he had had a pleasant evening at the George,

and he recounted the supper and the tumblers of punch. Then the father

asked her how she had been employing the morning.

"Bows came," said she, "at ten, and we studied Ophalia. It's for the

twenty-fourth, when I hope, sir, we shall have the honour of seeing ye."

"Indeed, indeed, you will," Mr. Pendennis cried; wondering that she

should say 'Ophalia,' and speak with an Irish inflection of voice

naturally, who had not the least Hibernian accent on the stage.

"I've secured 'um for your benefit, dear," said the Captain, tapping his

waistcoat pocket, wherein lay Pen's sovereigns, and winking at Pen, with

one eye, at which the boy blushed.

"Mr---the gentleman's very obleging," said Mrs. Haller.

"My name is Pendennis," said Pen, blushing. "I--I--hope you'll--you'll

remember it." His heart thumped so as he made this audacious

declaration, that he almost choked in uttering it.

"Pendennis"--she answered slowly, and looking him full in the eyes, with

a glance, so straight, so clear, so bright, so killing, with a voice so

sweet, so round, so low, that the word and the glance shot Pen through

and through, and perfectly transfixed him with pleasure.

"I never knew the name was so pretty before," Pen said.

"'Tis a very pretty name," Ophelia said. "Pentweazle's not a pretty

name. Remember, papa, when we were on the Norwich Circuit, Young

Pentweazle, who used to play second old men, and married Miss Rancy, the

Columbine; they're both engaged in London now, at the Queen's, and get

five pounds a week. Pentweazle wasn't his real name. 'Twas Judkin gave

it him, I don't know why. His name was Harrington; that is, his real

name was Potts; fawther a clergyman, very respectable. Harrington was in

London, and got in debt. Ye remember; he came out in Falkland, to Mrs.

Bunce's Julia."

"And a pretty Julia she was," the Captain interposed; "a woman of fifty,

and a mother of ten children. 'Tis you ought to have been Julia, or my

name's not Jack Costigan."

"I didn't take the leading business then," Miss Fotheringay said

modestly; "I wasn't fit for't till Bows taught me."

"True for you, my dear," said the Captain: and bending to Pendennis,

he added, "Rejuiced in circumstances, sir, I was for some time a

fencing-master in Dublin (there's only three men in the empire could

touch me with the foil once, but Jack Costigan's getting old and stiff

now, sir), and my daughter had an engagement at the thayater there; and

'twas there that my friend, Mr. Bows, who saw her capabilities, and is

an uncommon 'cute man, gave her lessons in the dramatic art, and made

her what ye see. What have ye done since Bows went, Emily?"

"Sure, I've made a pie," Emily said, with perfect simplicity. She

pronounced it "Poy."

"If ye'll try it at four o'clock, sir, say the word," said Costigan

gallantly. "That girl, sir, makes the best veal and ham pie in England,

and I think I can promise ye a glass of punch of the right flavour."

Pen had promised to be at home to dinner at six o'clock, but the rascal

thought he could accommodate pleasure and duty in this point, and was

only too eager to accept this invitation. He looked on with delight and

wonder whilst Ophelia busied herself about the room, and prepared for

the dinner. She arranged the glasses, and laid and smoothed the little

cloth, all which duties she performed with a quiet grace and good

humour, which enchanted her guest more and more. The "poy" arrived from

the baker's in the hands of one of the little choir-boy's brothers

at the proper hour: and at four o'clock Pen found himself at

dinner--actually at dinner with the greatest tragic actress in the

world, and her father--with the handsomest woman in all creation--with

his first and only love, whom he had adored ever since when?--ever since

yesterday, ever since for ever. He ate a crust of her making, he poured

her out a glass of beer, he saw her drink a glass of punch--just one

wine-glass full--out of the tumbler which she mixed for her papa. She

was perfectly good-natured, and offered to mix one for Pendennis too. It

was prodigiously strong; Pen had never in his life drunk so much spirits

and water. Was it the punch, or the punch-maker who intoxicated him?

During dinner, when the Captain, whom his daughter treated most

respectfully, ceased prattling about himself and his adventures, Pen

tried to engage the Fotheringay in conversation about poetry and about

her profession. He asked her what she thought of Ophelia's madness, and

whether she was in love with Hamlet or not? "In love with such a little

ojous wretch as that stunted manager of a Bingley?" She bristled with

indignation at the thought. Pen explained it was not of her he spoke,

but of Ophelia of the play. "Oh, indeed; if no offence was meant, none

was taken: but as for Bingley, indeed, she did not value him--not that

glass of punch." Pen next tried her on Kotzebue. "Kotzebue? who was

he?"--"The author of the play in which she had been performing so

admirably." "She did not know that--the man's name at the beginning

of the book was Thompson," she said. Pen laughed at her adorable

simplicity. He told her of the melancholy fate of the author of the

play, and how Sand had killed him. It was for the first time in her life

that Miss Costigan had ever heard of Mr. Kotzebue's existence, but she

looked as if she was very much interested, and her sympathy sufficed for

honest Pen.

And in the midst of this simple conversation, the hour and a quarter

which poor Pen could afford to allow himself, passed away only too

quickly; and he had taken leave, he was gone, and away on his rapid road

homewards on the back of Rebecca. She was called upon to show her mettle

in the three journeys which she made that day.

"What was that he was talking about, the madness of Hamlet, and the

theory of the great German critic on the subject?" Emily asked of her

father.

"'Deed then I don't know, Milly dear," answered the Captain. "We'll ask

Bows when he comes."

"Anyhow, he's a nice, fair-spoken pretty young man," the lady said: "how

many tickets did he take of you?"

"Faith, then, he took six, and gev me two guineas, Milly," the Captain

said. "I suppose them young chaps is not too flush of coin."

"He's full of book-learning," Miss Fotheringay continued. "Kotzebue! He,

he, what a droll name indeed, now; and the poor fellow killed by Sand,

too! Did ye ever hear such a thing? I'll ask Bows about it, papa, dear."

"A queer death, sure enough," ejaculated the Captain, and changed

the painful theme. "'Tis an elegant mare the young gentleman rides,"

Costigan went on to say; "and a grand breakfast, intirely, that young

Mister Foker gave us."

"He's good for two private boxes, and at leest twenty tickets, I should

say," cried the daughter, a prudent lass, who always kept her fine eyes

on the main chance.

"I'll go bail of that," answered the papa, and so their conversation

continued awhile, until the tumbler of punch was finished; and their

hour of departure soon came, too; for at half-past six Miss Fotheringay

was to appear at the theatre again, whither her father always

accompanied her; and stood, as we have seen, in the side-scene watching

her, and drank spirits-and-water in the green-room with the company

there.

"How beautiful she is," thought Pen, cantering homewards. "How simple

and how tender! How charming it is to see a woman of her commanding

genius busying herself with the delightful, though humble, offices of

domestic life, cooking dishes to make her old father comfortable, and

brewing drink for him with her delicate fingers! How rude it was of me

to begin to talk about professional matters, and how well she turned the

conversation! By the way, she talked about professional matters herself;

but then with what fun and humour she told the story of her comrade,

Pentweazle, as he was called! There is no humour like Irish humour. Her

father is rather tedious, but thoroughly amiable; and how fine of him,

giving lessons in fencing after he quitted the army, where he was the

pet of the Duke of Kent! Fencing! I should like to continue my fencing,

or I shall forget what Angelo taught me. Uncle Arthur always liked me

to fence--he says it is the exercise of a gentleman. Hang it. I'll take

some lessons of Captain Costigan. Go along, Rebecca--up the hill, old

lady. Pendennis, Pendennis--how she spoke the word! Emily, Emily! how

good, how noble, how beautiful, how perfect, she is!"

Now the reader, who has had the benefit of overhearing the entire

conversation which Pen had with Miss Fotheringay, can judge for himself

about the powers of her mind, and may perhaps be disposed to think that

she has not said anything astonishingly humorous or intellectual in the

course of the above interview. She has married, and taken her position

in the world as the most spotless and irreproachable lady since, and

I have had the pleasure of making her acquaintance: and must certainly

own, against my friend Pen's opinion, that his adored Emily is not a

clever woman. The truth is, she had not only never heard of Kotzebue,

but she had never heard of Farquhar, or Congreve, or any dramatist in

whose plays she had not a part: and of these dramas she only knew the

part which concerned herself. A wag once told her that Dante was born

at Algiers: and asked her,--which Dr. Johnson wrote first, 'Irene,' or

'Every Man in his Humour.' But she had the best of the joke, for she had

never heard of Irene or Every Man in his Humour, or Dante, or perhaps

Algiers. It was all one to her. She acted what little Bows told

her--where he told her to sob, she sobbed--where he told her to laugh,

she laughed. She gave the tirade or the repartee without the slightest

notion of its meaning. She went to church and goes every Sunday, with a

reputation perfectly intact, and was (and is) as guiltless of sense as

of any other crime.

But what did our Pen know of these things? He saw a pair of bright

eyes, and he believed in them--a beautiful image, and he fell down

and worshipped it. He supplied the meaning which her words wanted; and

created the divinity which he loved. Was Titania the first who fell in

love with an ass, or Pygmalion the only artist who has gone crazy about

a stone? He had found her; he had found what his soul thirsted after.

He flung himself into the stream and drank with all his might. Let those

say who have been thirsty once how delicious that first draught is. As

he rode down the avenue towards home--Pen shrieked with laughter as he

saw the Reverend Mr. Smirke once more coming demurely away from Fairoaks

on his pony. Smirke had dawdled and stayed at the cottages on the way,

and then dawdled with Laura over her lessons--and then looked at Mrs.

Pendennis's gardens and improvements until he had perfectly bored out

that lady: and he had taken his leave at the very last minute without

that invitation to dinner which he fondly expected.

Pen was full of kindness and triumph. "What, picked up and sound?" he

cried out laughing. "Come along back, old fellow, and eat my dinner--I

have had mine: but we will have a bottle of the old wine and drink her

health, Smirke."

Poor Smirke turned the pony's head round, and jogged along with Arthur.

His mother was charmed to see him in such high spirits, and welcomed Mr.

Smirke for his sake, when Arthur said he had forced the curate back to

dine. He gave a most ludicrous account of the play of the night before,

and of the acting of Bingley the Manager, in his rickety Hessians, and

the enormous Mrs. Bingley as the Countess, in rumpled green satin and a

Polish cap; he mimicked them, and delighted his mother and little Laura,

who clapped her hands with pleasure.

"And Mrs. Haller?" said Mrs. Pendennis.

"She's a stunner, ma'am," Pen said, laughing, and using the words of his

revered friend, Mr. Foker.

"A what, Arthur?" asked the lady.

"What is a stunner, Arthur?" cried Laura, in the same voice.

So he gave them a queer account of Mr. Foker, and how he used to be

called Vats and Grains, and by other contumelious names at school: and

how he was now exceedingly rich, and a Fellow Commoner at St. Boniface.

But gay and communicative as he was, Mr. Pen did not say one syllable

about his ride to Chatteris that day, or about the new friends whom he

had made there.

When the two ladies retired, Pen, with flashing eyes, filled up two

great bumpers of Madeira, and looking Smirke full in the face said,

"Here's to her!"

"Here's to her," said the curate with a sigh, lifting the glass and

emptying it, so that his face was a little pink when he put it down.

Pen had even less sleep that night than on the night before. In

the morning, and almost before dawn, he went out and saddled that

unfortunate Rebecca himself, and rode her on the Downs like mad. Again

Love had roused him--and said, "Awake, Pendennis, I am here." That

charming fever--that delicious longing--and fire, and uncertainty; he

hugged them to him--he would not have lost them for all the world.

CHAPTER VI. Contains both Love and War

Cicero and Euripides did not occupy Mr. Pen much for some time after

this, and honest Mr. Smirke had a very easy time with his pupil. Rebecca

was the animal who suffered most in the present state of Pen's mind,

for, besides those days when he could publicly announce his intention of

going to Chatteris to take a fencing-lesson, and went thither with the

knowledge of his mother, whenever he saw three hours clear before him,

the young rascal made a rush for the city, and found his way to Prior's

Lane. He was as frantic with vexation when Rebecca went lame, as Richard

at Bosworth, when his horse was killed under him: and got deeply into

the books of the man who kept the hunting-stables at Chatteris for the

doctoring of his own, and the hire of another animal.

Then, and perhaps once in a week, under pretence of going to read a

Greek play with Smirke, this young reprobate set off so as to be in time

for the Competitor down coach, stayed a couple of hours in Chatteris,

and returned on the Rival which left for London at ten at night.

Once his secret was nearly lost by Smirke's simplicity, of whom Mrs.

Pendennis asked whether they had read a great deal the night before, or

a question to that effect. Smirke was about to tell the truth, that he

had never seen Mr. Pen at all, when the latter's boot-heel came grinding

down on Mr. Smirke's toe under the table, and warned the curate not to

betray him.

They had had conversations on the tender subject, of course. It is good

sport (if you are not yourself engaged in the conversation) to hear two

men in love talk. There must be a confidant and depositary somewhere.

When informed, under the most solemn vows of secrecy, of Pen's condition

of mind, the curate said, with no small tremor, "that he hoped it was no

unworthy object--no unlawful attachment, which Pen had formed"--for

if so, the poor fellow felt it would be his duty to break his vow and

inform Pen's mother, and then there would be a quarrel, he felt, with

sickening apprehension, and he would never again have a chance of seeing

what he most liked in the world.

"Unlawful, unworthy!" Pen bounced out at the curate's question. "She is

as pure as she is beautiful; I would give my heart to no other woman.

I keep the matter a secret in my family, because--because--there are

reasons of a weighty nature which I am not at liberty to disclose. But

any man who breathes a word against her purity insults both her honour

and mine, and--and dammy, I won't stand it."

Smirke, with a faint laugh, only said, "Well, well, don't call me out,

Arthur, for you know I can't fight;" but by this compromise the wretched

curate was put more than ever into the power of his pupil, and the Greek

and mathematics suffered correspondingly.

If the reverend gentleman had had much discernment, and looked into the

Poet's Corner of the County Chronicle, as it arrived in the Wednesday's

bag, he might have seen 'Mrs. Haller,' 'Passion and Genius,' 'Lines to

Miss Fotheringay, of the Theatre Royal,' appearing every week; and other

verses of the most gloomy, thrilling, and passionate cast. But as these

poems were no longer signed NEP by their artful composer, but subscribed

EROS, neither the tutor nor Helen, the good soul, who cut all her son's

verses out of the paper, knew that Nep was no other than that flaming

Eros, who sang so vehemently the character of the new actress.

"Who is the lady," at last asked Mrs. Pendennis, "whom your rival is

always singing in the County Chronicle? He writes something like you,

dear Pen, but yours is much the best. Have you seen Miss Fotheringay?"

Pen said yes, he had; that night he went to see the "Stranger," she

acted Mrs. Haller. By the way, she was going to have a benefit, and

was to appear in Ophelia--suppose we were to go--Shakspeare, you know,

mother--we can get horses from the Clavering Arms. Little Laura sprang

up with delight, she longed for a play.

Pen introduced "Shakspeare, you know," because the deceased Pendennis,

as became a man of his character, professed an uncommon respect for the

bard of Avon, in whose works he safely said there was more poetry than

in all 'Johnson's Poets' put together. And though Mr. Pendennis did not

much read the works in question, yet he enjoined Pen to peruse them, and

often said what pleasure he should have, when the boy was of a proper

age, in taking him and mother to see some good plays of the immortal

poet.

The ready tears welled up in the kind mother's eyes as she remembered

these speeches of the man who was gone. She kissed her son fondly, and

said she would go. Laura jumped for joy. Was Pen happy?--was he ashamed?

As he held his mother to him, he longed to tell her all, but he kept his

counsel. He would see how his mother liked her; the play should be the

thing, and he would try his mother like Hamlet's.

Helen, in her good humour, asked Mr. Smirke to be of the party. That

ecclesiastic had been bred up by a fond parent at Clapham, who had an

objection to dramatic entertainments, and he had never yet seen a play.

But, Shakspeare!--but to go with Mrs. Pendennis in her carriage, and

sit a whole night by her side!--he could not resist the idea of so much

pleasure, and made a feeble speech, in which he spoke of temptation and

gratitude, and finally accepted Mrs. Pendennis's most kind offer. As he

spoke he gave her a look, which made her exceedingly uncomfortable. She

had seen that look more than once, of late, pursuing her. He became more

positively odious every day in the widow's eyes.

We are not going to say a great deal about Pen's courtship of

Miss Fotheringay, for the reader has already had a specimen of her

conversation, much of which need surely not be reported. Pen sate with

her hour after hour, and poured forth all his honest boyish soul to her.

Everything he knew, or hoped, or felt, or had read, or fancied, he told

to her. He never tired of talking and longing. One after another, as his

thoughts rose in his hot eager brain, he clothed them in words, and told

them to her. Her part of the tete-a-tete was not to talk, but to appear

as if she understood what Pen talked (a difficult matter, for the

young fellow blurted out no small quantity of nonsense), and to look

exceedingly handsome and sympathising. The fact is, whilst he was making

one of his tirades--and delighted, perhaps, and wondering at his own

eloquence, the lad would go on for twenty minutes at a time--the lovely

Emily, who could not comprehend a tenth part of his talk, had leisure to

think about her own affairs, and would arrange in her own mind how they

should dress the cold mutton, or how she would turn the black satin, or

make herself out of her scarf a bonnet like Miss Thackthwaite's new

one, and so forth. Pen spouted Byron and Moore; passion and poetry: her

business was to throw up her eyes, or fixing them for a moment on his

face, to cry, "Oh, 'tis beautiful! Ah, how exquisite! Repeat those

lines again." And off the boy went, and she returned to her own simple

thoughts about the turned gown, or the hashed mutton.

In fact Pen's passion was not long a secret from the lovely Emily or her

father. Upon his second visit, his admiration was quite evident to both

of them, and on his departure the old gentleman said to his daughter, as

he winked at her over his glass of grog, "Faith, Milly darling, I think

ye've hooked that chap."

"Pooh, 'tis only a boy, papa dear," Milly remarked. "Sure he's but

a child." Pen would have been very much pleased if he had heard that

phrase--he was galloping home wild with pleasure, and shouting out her

name as he rode.

"Ye've hooked 'um any how," said the Captain, "and let me tell ye he's

not a bad fish. I asked Tom at the George, and Flint, the grocer, where

his mother dales--fine fortune--drives in her chariot--splendid park and

grounds--Fairoaks Park--only son--property all his own at twenty-one--ye

might go further and not fare so well, Miss Fotheringay."

"Them boys are mostly talk," said Milly, seriously. "Ye know at Dublin

how ye went on about young Poldoody, and I've a whole desk full of

verses he wrote me when he was in Trinity College; but he went abroad,

and his mother married him to an Englishwoman."

"Lord Poldoody was a young nobleman; and in them it's natural: and ye

weren't in the position in which ye are now, Milly dear. But ye mustn't

encourage this young chap too much, for, bedad, Jack Costigan won't have

any thrilling with his daughter."

"No more will his daughter, papa, you may be sure of that," Milly said.

"A little sip more of the punch,--sure, 'tis beautiful. Ye needn't be

afraid about the young chap--I think I'm old enough to take care of

myself, Captain Costigan."

So Pen used to come day after day, rushing in and galloping away, and

growing more wild about the girl with every visit. Sometimes the Captain

was present at their meetings; but having a perfect confidence in

his daughter, he was more often inclined to leave the young couple to

themselves, and cocked his hat over his eye, and strutted off on some

errand when Pen entered. How delightful those interviews were! The

Captain's drawing-room was a low wainscoted room, with a large

window looking into the Dean's garden. There Pen sate and talked--and

talked--Emily, looking beautiful as she sate at her work--looking

beautiful and calm, and the sunshine came streaming in at the great

windows, and lighted up her superb face and form. In the midst of the

conversation, the great bell would begin to boom, and he would pause

smiling, and be silent until the sound of the vast music died away--or

the rooks in the cathedral elms would make a great noise towards

sunset--or the sound of the organ and the choristers would come over the

quiet air, and gently hush Pen's talking.

By the way, it must be said that Miss Fotheringay, in a plain shawl

and a close bonnet and veil, went to church every Sunday of her life,

accompanied by her indefatigable father, who gave the responses in

a very rich and fine brogue, joined in the psalms and chanting, and

behaved in the most exemplary manner.

Little Bows, the house-friend of the family, was exceedingly wroth at

the notion of Miss Fotheringay's marriage with a stripling seven or

eight years her junior. Bows, who was a cripple, and owned that he was a

little more deformed even than Bingley the manager, so that he could

not appear on the stage, was a singular wild man of no small talents and

humour. Attracted first by Miss Fotheringay's beauty, he began to teach

her how to act. He shrieked out in his cracked voice the parts, and his

pupil learned them from his lips by rote, and repeated them in her

full rich tones. He indicated the attitudes, and set and moved those

beautiful arms of hers. Those who remember this grand actress on the

stage can recall how she used always precisely the same gestures, looks,

and tones; how she stood on the same plank of the stage in the same

position, rolled her eyes at the same instant and to the same degree,

and wept with precisely the same heart-rending pathos and over the same

pathetic syllable. And after she had come out trembling with emotion

before the audience, and looking so exhausted and tearful that you

fancied she would faint with sensibility, she would gather up her hair

the instant she was behind the curtain, and go home to a mutton-chop and

a glass of brown stout; and the harrowing labours of the day over, she

went to bed and snored as resolutely and as regularly as a porter.

Bows then was indignant at the notion that his pupil should throw her

chances away in life by bestowing her hand upon a little country squire.

As soon as a London manager saw her he prophesied that she would get

a London engagement, and a great success. The misfortune was that the

London managers had seen her. She had played in London three years

before, and failed from utter stupidity. Since then it was that Bows

had taken her in hand and taught her part after part. How he worked and

screamed, and twisted, and repeated lines over and over again, and with

what indomitable patience and dulness she followed him! She knew that he

made her: and let herself be made. She was not grateful, or ungrateful,

or unkind, or ill-humoured. She was only stupid; and Pen was madly in

love with her.

The post-horses from the Clavering Arms arrived in due time, and carried

the party to the theatre at Chatteris, where Pen was gratified in

perceiving that a tolerably large audience was assembled. The young

gentlemen from Baymouth had a box, in the front of which sate Mr. Foker

and his friend Mr. Spavin, splendidly attired in the most full-blown

evening costume. They saluted Pen in a cordial manner, and examined

his party, of which they approved, for little Laura was a pretty little

red-cheeked girl with a quantity of shining brown ringlets, and Mrs.

Pendennis, dressed in black velvet with the diamond cross which she

sported on great occasions, looked uncommonly handsome and majestic.

Behind these sate Mr. Arthur, and the gentle Smirke with the curl

reposing on his fair forehead, and his white tie in perfect order. He

blushed to find himself in such a place--but how happy was he to be

there! He and Mrs. Pendennis brought books of 'Hamlet' with them to

follow the tragedy, as is the custom of honest countryfolks who go to a

play in state. Samuel, coachman, groom, and gardener to Mr. Pendennis,

took his place in the pit, where Mr. Foker's man was also visible. It

was dotted with non-commissioned officers of the Dragoons, whose band,

by kind permission of Colonel Swallowtail, were, as usual, in the

orchestra; and that corpulent and distinguished warrior himself, with

his Waterloo medal and a number of his young men, made a handsome show

in the boxes.

"Who is that odd-looking person bowing to you, Arthur?" Mrs. Pendennis

asked of her son.

Pen blushed a great deal. "His name is Captain Costigan, ma'am," he

said--"a Peninsular officer." In fact it was the Captain in a new

shoot of clothes, as he called them, and with a large pair of white kid

gloves, one of which he waved to Pendennis, whilst he laid the other

sprawling over his heart and coat-buttons. Pen did not say any more. And

how was Mrs. Pendennis to know that Mr. Costigan was the father of Miss

Fotheringay?

Mr. Hornbull, from London, was the Hamlet of the night, Mr. Bingley

modestly contenting himself with the part of Horatio, and reserving his

chief strength for William in 'Black-Eyed Susan,' which was the second

piece.

We have nothing to do with the play: except to say that Ophelia looked

lovely, and performed with admirable wild pathos laughing, weeping,

gazing wildly, waving her beautiful white arms, and flinging about her

snatches of flowers and songs with the most charming madness. What an

opportunity her splendid black hair had of tossing over her shoulders!

She made the most charming corpse ever seen; and while Hamlet and

Laertes were battling in her grave, she was looking out from the back

scenes with some curiosity towards Pen's box, and the family party

assembled in it.

There was but one voice in her praise there. Mrs. Pendennis was in

ecstasies with her beauty. Little Laura was bewildered by the piece, and

the Ghost, and the play within the play (during which, as Hamlet lay

at Ophelia's knee, Pen felt that he would have liked to strangle Mr.

Hornbull), but cried out great praises of that beautiful young creature.

Pen was charmed with the effect which she produced on his mother--and

the clergyman, for his part, was exceedingly enthusiastic.

When the curtain fell upon that group of slaughtered personages, who

are despatched so suddenly at the end of 'Hamlet,' and whose demise

astonished poor little Laura not a little, there was an immense shouting

and applause from all quarters of the house; the intrepid Smirke,

violently excited, clapped his hands, and cried out "Bravo, Bravo," as

loud as the Dragoon officers themselves. These were greatly moved,--ils

s'agitaient sur leurs bancs,--to borrow a phrase from our neighbours.

They were led cheering into action by the portly Swallowtail, who waved

his cap--the non-commissioned officers in the pit, of course, gallantly

following their chiefs. There was a roar of bravos rang through the

house; Pen bellowing with the loudest, "Fotheringay! Fotheringay!" and

Messrs. Spavin and Foker giving the view-halloo from their box. Even

Mrs. Pendennis began to wave about her pocket-handkerchief, and little

Laura danced, laughed, clapped, and looked up at Pen with wonder.

Hornbull led the beneficiaire forward, amidst bursts of enthusiasm--and

she looked so handsome and radiant, with her hair still over her

shoulders, that Pen hardly could contain himself for rapture: and he

leaned over his mother's chair, and shouted, and hurrayed, and waved his

hat. It was all he could do to keep his secret from Helen, and not say,

"Look! That's the woman! Isn't she peerless? I tell you I love her." But

he disguised these feelings under an enormous bellowing and hurraying.

As for Miss Fotheringay and her behaviour, the reader is referred to a

former page for an account of that. She went through precisely the same

business. She surveyed the house all round with glances of gratitude;

and trembled, and almost sank with emotion, over her favourite

trap-door. She seized the flowers (Foker discharged a prodigious bouquet

at her, and even Smirke made a feeble shy with a rose, and blushed

dreadfully when it fell into the pit). She seized the flowers and

pressed them to her swelling heart--etc., etc.--in a word--we refer

the reader to earlier pages. Twinkling in her breast poor old Pen saw a

locket which he had bought of Mr. Nathan in High Street, with the last

shilling he was worth, and a sovereign borrowed from Smirke.

'Black-Eyed Susan' followed, at which sweet story our gentle-hearted

friends were exceedingly charmed and affected: and in which Susan, with

a russet gown and a pink ribbon in her cap, looked to the full as lovely

as Ophelia. Bingley was great in William. Goll, as the Admiral, looked

like the figure-head of a seventy-four; and Garbetts, as Captain

Boldweather, a miscreant who forms a plan for carrying off Black-eyed

Susan, and waving an immense cocked hat says, "Come what may, he will be

the ruin of her"--all these performed their parts with their accustomed

talent; and it was with a sincere regret that all our friends saw the

curtain drop down and end that pretty and tender story.

If Pen had been alone with his mother in the carriage as they went home,

he would have told her all, that night; but he sate on the box in the

moonshine smoking a cigar by the side of Smirke, who warmed himself

with a comforter. Mr. Foker's tandem and lamps whirled by the sober old

Clavering posters as they were a couple of miles on their road home,

and Mr. Spavin saluted Mrs. Pendennis's carriage with some considerable

variations of Rule Britannia on the key-bugle.

It happened two days after the above gaieties that Mr. Dean of Chatteris

entertained a few select clerical friends at dinner at his Deanery Home.

That they drank uncommonly good port wine, and abused the Bishop over

their dessert, are very likely matters: but with such we have nothing at

present to do. Our friend Doctor Portman, of Clavering, was one of the

Dean's guests, and being a gallant man, and seeing from his place at

the mahogany the Dean's lady walking up and down the grass, with her

children sporting around her, and her pink parasol over her lovely

head--the Doctor stept out of the French windows of the dining-room

into the lawn, which skirts that apartment, and left the other white

neckcloths to gird at my lord Bishop. Then the Doctor went up and

offered Mrs. Dean his arm, and they sauntered over the ancient velvet

lawn, which had been mowed and rolled for immemorial Deans, in that

easy, quiet, comfortable manner, in which people of middle age and good

temper walk after a good dinner, in a calm golden summer evening, when

the sun has but just sunk behind the enormous cathedral-towers, and the

sickle-shaped moon is growing every instant brighter in the heavens.

Now at the end of the Dean's garden there is, as we have stated, Mrs.

Creed's house, and the windows of the first-floor room were open to

admit the pleasant summer air. A young lady of six-and-twenty, whose

eyes were perfectly wide open, and a luckless boy of eighteen, blind

with love and infatuation, were in that chamber together; in which

persons, as we have before seen them in the same place, the reader

will have no difficulty in recognising Mr. Arthur Pendennis and Miss

Costigan.

The poor boy had taken the plunge. Trembling with passionate emotion,

his heart beating and throbbing fiercely, tears rushing forth in spite

of him, his voice almost choking with feeling, poor Pen had said those

words which he could withhold no more, and flung himself and his whole

store of love, and admiration, and ardour at the feet of this mature

beauty. Is he the first who has done so? Have none before or after

him staked all their treasure of life, as a savage does his land and

possessions against a draught of the fair-skins' fire-water, or a couple

of bauble eyes?

"Does your mother know of this, Arthur?" said Miss Fotheringay, slowly.

He seized her hand madly and kissed it a thousand times. She did not

withdraw it. "Does the old lady know it?" Miss Costigan thought to

herself, "well, perhaps she may," and then she remembered what a

handsome diamond cross Mrs. Pendennis had on the night of the play, and

thought, "Sure 'twill go in the family."

"Calm yourself, dear Arthur," she said, in her low rich voice, and

sniffled sweetly and gravely upon him. Then, with her disengaged hand,

she put the hair lightly off his throbbing forehead. He was in such a

rapture and whirl of happiness that he could hardly speak. At last he

gasped out, "My mother has seen you, and admires you beyond measure.

She will learn to love you soon: who can do otherwise? She will love you

because I do."

"'Deed then, I think you do," said Miss Costigan, perhaps with a sort of

pity for Pen.

Think she did! Of course here Mr. Pen went off into a rhapsody through

which, as we have perfect command over our own feelings, we have no

reason to follow the lad. Of course, love, truth, and eternity were

produced: and words were tried but found impossible to plumb the

tremendous depth of his affection. This speech, we say, is no business

of ours. It was most likely not very wise, but what right have we to

overhear? Let the poor boy fling out his simple heart at the woman's

feet, and deal gently with him. It is best to love wisely, no doubt: but

to love foolishly is better than not to be able to love at all. Some of

us can't: and are proud of our impotence too.

At the end of his speech Pen again kissed the imperial hand with

rapture--and I believe it was at this very moment, and while Mrs. Dean

and Doctor Portman were engaged in conversation, that young Master

Ridley Roset, her son, pulled his mother by the back of her capacious

dress and said--

"I say, ma! look up there"--and he waggled his innocent head.

That was, indeed, a view from the Dean's garden such as seldom is seen

by Deans--or is written in Chapters. There was poor Pen performing a

salute upon the rosy fingers of his charmer, who received the embrace

with perfect calmness and good humour. Master Ridley looked up and

grinned, little Miss Rosa looked at her brother, and opened the mouth of

astonishment. Mrs. Dean's countenance defied expression, and as for Dr.

Portman, when he beheld the scene, and saw his prime favourite and dear

pupil Pen, he stood mute with rage and wonder.

Mrs. Haller spied the party below at the same moment, and gave a start

and a laugh. "Sure there's somebody in the Dean's garden," she cried

out; and withdrew with perfect calmness, whilst Pen darted away with his

face glowing like coals. The garden party had re-entered the house when

he ventured to look out again. The sickle moon was blazing bright in

the heavens then, the stars were glittering, the bell of the cathedral

tolling nine, the Dean's guests (all save one, who had called for his

horse Dumpling, and ridden off early) were partaking of tea and buttered

cakes in Mrs. Dean's drawing-room--when Pen took leave of Miss Costigan.

Pen arrived at home in due time afterwards, and was going to slip off to

bed, for the poor lad was greatly worn and agitated, and his high-strung

nerves had been at almost a maddening pitch when a summons came to him

by John the old footman, whose countenance bore a very ominous look,

that his mother must see him below.

On this he tied on his neckcloth again, and went downstairs to the

drawing-room. There sate not only his mother, but her friend, the

Reverend Doctor Portman. Helen's face looked very pale by the light of

the lamp--the Doctor's was flushed, on the contrary, and quivering with

anger and emotion.

Pen saw at once that there was a crisis, and that there had been a

discovery. "Now for it," he thought.

"Where have you been, Arthur?" Helen said in a trembling voice.

"How can you look that--that dear lady, and a Christian clergyman in the

face, sir?" bounced out the Doctor, in spite of Helen's pale, appealing

looks. "Where has he been? Where his mother's son should have been

ashamed to go. For your mother's an angel, sir, an angel. How dare you

bring pollution into her house, and make that spotless creature wretched

with the thoughts of your crime?"

"Sir!" said Pen.

"Don't deny it, sir," roared the Doctor. "Don't add lies, sir, to your

other infamy. I saw you myself, sir. I saw you from the Dean's garden. I

saw you kissing the hand of that infernal painted---"

"Stop," Pen said, clapping his fist on the table, till the lamp

flickered up and shook, "I am a very young man, but you will please to

remember that I am a gentleman--I will hear no abuse of that lady."

"Lady, sir," cried the Doctor, "that a lady--you--you--you stand in your

mother's presence and call that--that woman a lady!---"

"In anybody's presence," shouted out Pen. "She is worthy of any place.

She is as pure as any woman. She is as good as she is beautiful. If any

man but you insulted her, I would tell him what I thought; but as you

are my oldest friend, I suppose you have the privilege to doubt of my

honour."

"No, no, Pen, dearest Pen," cried out Helen in an excess of joy. "I

told, I told you, Doctor, he was not--not what you thought:" and

the tender creature coming trembling forward flung herself on Pen's

shoulder.

Pen felt himself a man, and a match for all the Doctors in Doctordom. He

was glad this explanation had come. "You saw how beautiful she was," he

said to his mother, with a soothing, protecting air, like Hamlet with

Gertrude in the play. "I tell you, dear mother, she is as good. When you

know her you will say so. She is of all, except you, the simplest, the

kindest, the most affectionate of women. Why should she not be on the

stage?--She maintains her father by her labour."

"Drunken old reprobate," growled the Doctor, but Pen did not hear or

heed.

"If you could see, as I have, how orderly her life is, how pure and

pious her whole conduct, you would--as I do--yes, as I do"--(with a

savage look at the Doctor)--"spurn the slanderer who dared to do her

wrong. Her father was an officer, and distinguished himself in Spain. He

was a friend of His Royal Highness the Duke of Kent, and is intimately

known to the Duke of Wellington, and some of the first officers of our

army. He has met my uncle Arthur at Lord Hill's, he thinks. His own

family is one of the most ancient and respectable in Ireland, and indeed

is as good as our own. The Costigans were kings of Ireland."

"Why, God bless my soul," shrieked out the Doctor, hardly knowing

whether to burst with rage or laughter, "you don't mean to say you want

to marry her?"

Pen put on his most princely air. "What else, Dr. Portman," he said, "do

you suppose would be my desire?"

Utterly foiled in his attack, and knocked down by this sudden lunge of

Pen's, the Doctor could only gasp out, "Mrs. Pendennis, ma'am, send for

the Major."

"Send for the Major? with all my heart," said Arthur Prince of Pendennis

and Grand Duke of Fairoaks, with a most superb wave of the hand. And the

colloquy terminated by the writing of those two letters which were laid

on Major Pendennis's breakfast-table, in London, at the commencement of

Prince Arthur's most veracious history.

CHAPTER VII. In which the Major makes his Appearance

Our acquaintance, Major Arthur Pendennis, arrived in due time at

Fairoaks, after a dreary night passed in the mail-coach, where a stout

fellow-passenger, swelling preternaturally with great-coats, had crowded

him into a corner, and kept him awake by snoring indecently; where a

widow lady, opposite, had not only shut out the fresh air by closing all

the windows of the vehicle, but had filled the interior with fumes of

Jamaica rum and water, which she sucked perpetually from a bottle in

her reticule; where, whenever he caught a brief moment of sleep, the

twanging of the horn at the turnpike-gates, or the scuffling of his huge

neighbour wedging him closer and closer, or the play of the widow's

feet on his own tender toes, speedily woke up the poor gentleman to

the horrors and realities of life--a life which has passed away now and

become impossible, and only lives in fond memories. Eight miles an hour,

for twenty or five-and-twenty hours, a tight mail-coach, a hard seat, a

gouty tendency, a perpetual change of coachmen grumbling because

you did not fee them enough, a fellow-passenger partial to

spirits-and-water,--who has not borne with these evils in the jolly old

times? and how could people travel under such difficulties? And yet they

did, and were merry too. Next the widow, and by the side of the Major's

servant on the roof, were a couple of school-boys going home for the

midsummer holidays, and Major Pendennis wondered to see them sup at the

inn at Bagshot, where they took in a cargo of ham, eggs, pie, pickles,

tea, coffee, and boiled beef, which surprised the poor Major, sipping a

cup of very feeble tea, and thinking with a tender dejection that Lord

Steyne's dinner was coming off at that very moment. The ingenuous ardour

of the boys, however, amused the Major, who was very good-natured, and

he became the more interested when he found that the one who travelled

inside with him was a lord's son, whose noble father Pendennis, of

course, had met in the world of fashion which he frequented. The

little lord slept all night through, in spite of the squeezing, and

the horn-blowing, and the widow; and he looked as fresh as paint (and,

indeed; pronounced himself to be so) when the Major, with a yellow face,

a bristly beard, a wig out of curl, and strong rheumatic griefs shooting

through various limbs of his uneasy body, descended at the little

lodge-gate at Fairoaks, where the porteress and gardener's wife

reverentially greeted him, and, still more respectfully, Mr. Morgan, his

man.

Helen was on the look-out for this expected guest, and saw him from her

window. But she did not come forward immediately to greet him. She knew

the Major did not like to be seen at a surprise, and required a little

preparation before he cared to be visible. Pen, when a boy, had incurred

sad disgrace by carrying off from the Major's dressing-table a little

morocco box, which it must be confessed contained the Major's back

teeth, which he naturally would leave out of his jaws in a jolting

mail-coach, and without which he would not choose to appear. Morgan,

his man, made a mystery of mystery of his wigs: curling them in private

places: introducing them mysteriously to his master's room;--nor without

his head of hair would the Major care to show himself to any member

of his family, or any acquaintance. He went to his apartment then and

supplied these deficiencies; he groaned, and moaned, and wheezed, and

cursed Morgan through his toilet, as an old buck will, who has been up

all night with a rheumatism, and has a long duty to perform. And

finally being belted, curled, and set straight, he descended upon the

drawing-room, with a grave majestic air, such as befitted one who was at

once a man of business and a man of fashion.

Pen was not there, however; only Helen, and little Laura sewing at her

knees; and to whom he never presented more than a forefinger, as he did

on this occasion after saluting his sister-in-law. Laura took the finger

trembling and dropped it--and then fled out of the room. Major Pendennis

did not want to keep her, or indeed to have her in the house at all, and

had his private reason for disapproving of her: which we may mention on

some future occasion. Meanwhile Laura disappeared and wandered about

the premises seeking for Pen: whom she presently found in the orchard,

pacing up and down a walk there in earnest conversation with Mr. Smirke.

He was so occupied that he did not hear Laura's clear voice singing out,

until Smirke pulled him by the coat and pointed towards her as she came

running.

She ran up and put her hand into his. "Come in, Pen," she said, "there's

somebody come; uncle Arthur's come."

"He is, is he?" said Pen, and she felt him grasp her little hand. He

looked round at Smirke with uncommon fierceness, as much as to say, I

am ready for him or any man.--Mr. Smirke cast up his eyes as usual and

heaved a gentle sigh.

"Lead on, Laura," Pen said, with a half fierce, half comic air--"Lead

on, and say I wait upon my uncle." But he was laughing in order to

hide a great anxiety: and was screwing his courage inwardly to face the

ordeal which he knew was now before him.

Pen had taken Smirke into his confidence in the last two days, and after

the outbreak attendant on the discovery of Doctor Portman, and during

every one of those forty-eight hours which he had passed in Mr.

Smirke's society, had done nothing but talk to his tutor about Miss

Fotheringay--Miss Emily Fotheringay--Emily, etc., to all which talk

Smirke listened without difficulty, for he was in love himself, most

anxious in all things to propitiate Pen, and indeed very much himself

enraptured by the personal charms of this goddess, whose like, never

having been before at a theatrical representation, he had not beheld

until now. Pen's fire and volubility, his hot eloquence and rich

poetical tropes and figures, his manly heart, kind, ardent, and hopeful,

refusing to see any defects in the person he loved, any difficulties in

their position that he might not overcome, had half convinced Mr. Smirke

that the arrangement proposed by Mr. Pen was a very feasible and prudent

one, and that it would be a great comfort to have Emily settled at

Fairoaks, Captain Costigan in the yellow room, established for life

there, and Pen married at eighteen.

And it is a fact that in these two days the boy had almost talked over

his mother, too; had parried all her objections one after another with

that indignant good sense which is often the perfection of absurdity;

and had brought her almost to acquiesce in the belief that if the

marriage was doomed in heaven, why doomed it was--that if the young

woman was a good person, it was all that she for her part had to ask;

and rather to dread the arrival of the guardian uncle who she foresaw

would regard Mr. Pen's marriage in a manner very different to that

simple, romantic, honest, and utterly absurd way in which the widow was

already disposed to look at questions of this sort.

For as in the old allegory of the gold and silver shield, about which

the two knights quarrelled, each is right according to the point from

which he looks: so about marriage; the question whether it is foolish or

good, wise or otherwise, depends upon the point of view from which you

regard it. If it means a snug house in Belgravia, and pretty little

dinner-parties, and a pretty little brougham to drive in the Park, and

a decent provision not only for the young people, but for the little

Belgravians to come; and if these are the necessaries of life (and they

are with many honest people), to talk of any other arrangement is an

absurdity: of love in lodgings--a babyish folly of affection: that can't

pay coach-hire or afford a decent milliner--as mere wicked balderdash

and childish romance. If on the other hand your opinion is that people,

not with an assured subsistence, but with a fair chance to obtain it,

and with the stimulus of hope, health, and strong affection, may take

the chance of Fortune for better or worse, and share its good or its

evil together, the polite theory then becomes an absurdity in its turn:

worse than an absurdity, a blasphemy almost, and doubt of Providence;

and a man who waits to make his chosen woman happy, until he can drive

her to church in a neat little carriage with a pair of horses, is no

better than a coward or a trifler, who is neither worthy of love nor of

fortune.

I don't say that the town folks are not right, but Helen Pendennis was

a country-bred woman, and the book of life, as she interpreted it, told

her a different story to that page which is read in cities. Like most

soft and sentimental women, matchmaking, in general, formed a great

part of her thoughts, and I daresay she had begun to speculate about

her son's falling in love and marrying long before the subject had ever

entered into the brains of the young gentleman. It pleased her (with

that dismal pleasure which the idea of sacrificing themselves gives to

certain women) to think of the day when she would give up all to Pen,

and he should bring his wife home, and she would surrender the keys and

the best bedroom, and go and sit at the side of the table, and see him

happy. What did she want in life, but to see the lad prosper? As an

empress certainly was not too good for him, and would be honoured by

becoming Mrs. Pen; so if he selected humble Esther instead of Queen

Vashti, she would be content with his lordship's choice. Never mind

how lowly or poor the person might be who was to enjoy that prodigious

honour, Mrs. Pendennis was willing to bow before her and welcome her,

and yield her up the first place. But an actress--a mature woman, who

had long ceased blushing except with rouge, as she stood under the eager

glances of thousands of eyes--an illiterate and ill-bred person, very

likely, who must have lived with light associates, and have heard

doubtful conversation--Oh! it was hard that such a one should be chosen,

and that the matron should be deposed to give place to such a Sultana.

All these doubts the widow laid before Pen during the two days which

had of necessity to elapse ere the uncle came down; but he met them with

that happy frankness and ease which a young gentleman exhibits at

his time of life, and routed his mother's objections with infinite

satisfaction to himself. Miss Costigan was a paragon of virtue and

delicacy; she was as sensitive as the most timid maiden; she was as pure

as the unsullied snow; she had the finest manners, the most graceful wit

and genius, the most charming refinement and justness of appreciation in

all matters of taste; she had the most admirable temper and devotion to

her father, a good old gentleman of high family and fallen fortunes, who

had lived, however, with the best society in Europe: he was in no hurry,

and could afford to wait any time,--till he was one-and-twenty. But he

felt (and here his face assumed an awful and harrowing solemnity) that

he was engaged in the one only passion of his life, and that DEATH alone

could close it.

Helen told him, with a sad smile and shake of the head, that people

survived these passions, and as for long engagements contracted

between very young men and old women--she knew an instance in her own

family--Laura's poor father was an instance--how fatal they were.

Mr. Pen, however, was resolved that death must be his doom in case

of disappointment, and rather than this--rather than baulk him, in

fact--this lady would have submitted to any sacrifice or personal pain,

and would have gone down on her knees and have kissed the feet of a

Hottentot daughter-in-law.

Arthur knew his power over the widow, and the young tyrant was touched

whilst he exercised it. In those two days he brought her almost into

submission, and patronised her very kindly; and he passed one evening

with the lovely pie-maker at Chatteris, in which he bragged of his

influence over his mother; and he spent the other night in composing a

most flaming and conceited copy of verses to his divinity, in which he

vowed, like Montrose, that he would make her famous with his sword and

glorious by his pen, and that he would love her as no mortal woman had

been adored since the creation of womankind.

It was on that night, long after midnight, that wakeful Helen, passing

stealthily by her son's door, saw a light streaming through the chink of

the door into the dark passage, and heard Pen tossing and tumbling, and

mumbling verses in his bed. She waited outside for a while, anxiously

listening to him. In infantile fevers and early boyish illnesses, many a

night before, the kind soul had so kept watch. She turned the lock very

softly now, and went in so gently, that Pen for a moment did not see

her. His face was turned from her. His papers on his desk were scattered

about, and more were lying on the bed round him. He was biting a pencil

and thinking of rhymes and all sorts of follies and passions. He was

Hamlet jumping into Ophelia's grave: he was the Stranger taking Mrs.

Haller to his arms, beautiful Mrs. Haller, with the raven ringlets

falling over her shoulders. Despair and Byron, Thomas Moore and all the

Loves of the Angels, Waller and Herrick, Beranger and all the love-songs

he had ever read, were working and seething in this young gentleman's

mind, and he was at the very height and paroxysm of the imaginative

frenzy when his mother found him.

"Arthur," said the mother's soft silver voice: and he started up and

turned round. He clutched some of the papers and pushed them under the

pillow.

"Why don't you go to sleep, my dear?" she said, with a sweet tender

smile, and sate down on the bed and took one of his hot hands.

Pen looked at her wildly for an instant--"I couldn't sleep," he

said--"I--I was--I was writing."--And hereupon he flung his arms round

her neck and said, "O mother! I love her, I love her!"--How could such a

kind soul as that help soothing and pitying him? The gentle creature did

her best: and thought with a strange wonderment and tenderness that it

was only yesterday that he was a child in that bed; and how she used to

come and say her prayers over it before he woke upon holiday mornings.

They were very grand verses, no doubt, although Miss Fotheringay did not

understand them; but old Cos, with a wink and a knowing finger on

his nose, said, "Put them up with th' other letthers, Milly darling.

Poldoody's pomes was nothing to this." So Milly locked up the

manuscripts.

When then, the Major being dressed and presentable, presented himself to

Mrs. Pendennis, he found in the course of ten minutes' colloquy that

the poor widow was not merely distressed at the idea of the marriage

contemplated by Pen, but actually more distressed at thinking that the

boy himself was unhappy about it, and that his uncle and he should have

any violent altercation on the subject. She besought Major Pendennis

to be very gentle with Arthur: "He has a very high spirit, and will

not brook unkind words," she hinted. "Dr. Portman spoke to him rather

roughly--and I must own unjustly, the other night--for my dearest boy's

honour is as high as any mother can desire--but Pen's answer quite

frightened me, it was so indignant. Recollect he is a man now; and be

very--very cautious," said the widow, laying a fair long hand on the

Major's sleeve.

He took it up, kissed it gallantly and looked in her alarmed face with

wonder, and a scorn which he was too polite to show. "Bon Dieu!" thought

the old negotiator, "the boy has actually talked the woman round, and

she'd get him a wife as she would a toy if Master cried for it. Why

are there no such things as lettres-de-cachet--and a Bastille for young

fellows of family?" The Major lived in such good company that he might

be excused for feeling like an Earl.--He kissed the widow's timid hand,

pressed it in both his, and laid it down on the table with one of his

own over it, as he smiled and looked her in the face.

"Confess," said he, "now, that you are thinking how you possibly can

make it up to your conscience to let the boy have his own way."

She blushed and was moved in the usual manner of females. "I am thinking

that he is very unhappy--and I am too----"

"To contradict him or to let him have his own wish?" asked the other;

and added, with great comfort to his inward self, "I'm d----d if he

shall."

"To think that he should have formed so foolish and cruel and fatal an

attachment," the widow said, "which can but end in pain whatever be the

issue."

"The issue shan't be marriage, my dear sister," the Major said

resolutely. "We're not going to have a Pendennis, the head of the house,

marry a strolling mountebank from a booth. No, no, we won't marry into

Greenwich Fair, ma'am."

"If the match is broken suddenly off," the widow interposed, "I don't

know what may be the consequence. I know Arthur's ardent temper,

the intensity of his affections, the agony of his pleasures and

disappointments, and I tremble at this one if it must be. Indeed,

indeed, it must not come on him too suddenly."

"My dear madam," the Major said, with an air of the deepest

commiseration "I've no doubt Arthur will have to suffer confoundedly

before he gets over the little disappointment. But is he, think you, the

only person who has been so rendered miserable?"

"No, indeed," said Helen, holding down her eyes. She was thinking of her

own case, and was at that moment seventeen again--and most miserable.

"I, myself," whispered her brother-in-law, "have undergone a

disappointment in early life. A young woman with fifteen thousand

pounds, niece to an Earl--most accomplished creature--a third of her

money would have run up my promotion in no time, and I should have

been a lieutenant--colonel at thirty: but it might not be. I was but a

penniless lieutenant: her parents interfered: and I embarked for

India, where I had the honour of being secretary to Lord Buckley, when

commander-in-Chief without her. What happened? We returned our letters,

sent back our locks of hair (the Major here passed his fingers through

his wig), we suffered--but we recovered. She is now a baronet's wife

with thirteen grown-up children; altered, it is true, in person; but her

daughters remind me of what she was, and the third is to be presented

early next week."

Helen did not answer. She was still thinking of old times. I suppose

if one lives to be a hundred: there are certain passages of one's early

life whereof the recollection will always carry us back to youth again,

and that Helen was thinking of one of these.

"Look at my own brother, my dear creature," the Major continued

gallantly: "he himself, you know, had a little disappointment when

he started in the--the medical profession--an eligible opportunity

presented itself. Miss Balls, I remember the name, was daughter of an

apoth--a practitioner in very large practice; my brother had very

nearly succeeded in his suit.--But difficulties arose: disappointments

supervened, and--and I am sure he had no reason to regret the

disappointment, which gave him this hand," said the Major, and he once

more politely pressed Helen's fingers.

"Those marriages between people of such different rank and age," said

Helen, "are sad things. I have known them produce a great deal of

unhappiness.--Laura's father, my cousin, who--who was brought up with

me"--she added, in a low voice, "was an instance of that."

"Most injudicious," cut in the Major. "I don't know anything more

painful than for a man to marry his superior in age or his inferior in

station. Fancy marrying a woman of low rank of life, and having your

house filled with her confounded tag-rag-and-bobtail of relations! Fancy

your wife attached to a mother who dropped her h's, or called Maria

Marire! How are you to introduce her into society? My dear Mrs.

Pendennis, I will name no names, but in the very best circles of London

society I have seen men suffering the most excruciating agony, I have

known them to be cut, to be lost utterly, from the vulgarity of their

wives' connections. What did Lady Snapperton do last year at her dejeune

dansant after the Bohemian Ball? She told Lord Brouncker that he might

bring his daughters or send them with a proper chaperon, but that she

would not receive Lady Brouncker who was a druggist's daughter, or

some such thing, and as Tom Wagg remarked of her, never wanted medicine

certainly, for she never had an h in her life. Good Ged, what would

have been the trifling pang of a separation in the first instance to the

enduring infliction of a constant misalliance and intercourse with low

people?"

"What, indeed!" said Helen, dimly disposed towards laughter, but yet

checking the inclination, because she remembered in what prodigious

respect her deceased husband held Major Pendennis and his stories of the

great world.

"Then this fatal woman is ten years older than that silly young

scapegrace of an Arthur. What happens in such cases, my dear creature?

I don't mind telling you, now we are alone that in the highest state

of society, misery, undeviating misery, is the result. Look at Lord

Clodworthy come into a room with his wife--why, good Ged, she looks like

Clodworthy's mother. What's the case between Lord and Lady Willowbank,

whose love match was notorious? He has already cut her down twice

when she has hanged herself out of jealousy for Mademoiselle de Sainte

Cunegonde, the dancer; and mark my words, good Ged, one day he'll not

cut the old woman down. No, my dear madam, you are not in the world, but

I am: you are a little romantic and sentimental (you know you are--women

with those large beautiful eyes always are); you must leave this matter

to my experience. Marry this woman! Marry at eighteen an actress of

thirty--bah bah!--I would as soon he sent into the kitchen and married

the cook."

"I know the evils of premature engagements," sighed out Helen: and as

she has made this allusion no less than thrice in the course of the

above conversation, and seems to be so oppressed with the notion of long

engagements and unequal marriages, and as the circumstance we have

to relate will explain what perhaps some persons are anxious to know,

namely who little Laura is, who has appeared more than once before us,

it will be as well to clear up these points in another chapter.

CHAPTER VIII. In which Pen is kept waiting at the Door, while the Reader

is informed who little Laura was.

Once upon a time, then, there was a young gentleman of Cambridge

University who came to pass the long vacation at the village where

young Helen Thistlewood was living with her mother, the widow of the

lieutenant slain at Copenhagen. This gentleman, whose name was

the Reverend Francis Bell, was nephew to Mrs. Thistlewood, and by

consequence, own cousin to Miss Helen, so that it was very right that he

should take lodgings in his aunt's house, who lived in a very small way;

and there he passed the long vacation, reading with three or four pupils

who accompanied him to the village. Mr. Bell was fellow of a college,

and famous in the University for his learning and skill as a tutor.

His two kinswomen understood pretty early that the reverend gentleman

was engaged to be married, and was only waiting for a college living to

enable him to fulfil his engagement. His intended bride was the daughter

of another parson, who had acted as Mr. Bell's own private tutor in

Bell's early life, and it was whilst under Mr. Coacher's roof, indeed,

and when only a boy of seventeen or eighteen years of age, that the

impetuous young Bell had flung himself at the feet of Miss Martha

Coacher, whom he was helping to pick peas in the garden. On his knees,

before those peas and her, he pledged himself to an endless affection.

Miss Coacher was by many years the young fellow's senior and her

own heart had been lacerated by many previous disappointments in the

matrimonial line. No less than three pupils of her father had trifled

with those young affections. The apothecary of the village had

despicably jilted her. The dragoon officer, with whom she had danced so

many many times during that happy season which she passed at Bath with

her gouty grandmamma, one day gaily shook his bridle-rein and galloped

away never to return. Wounded by the shafts of repeated ingratitude, can

it be wondered at that the heart of Martha Coacher should pant to find

rest somewhere? She listened to the proposals of the gawky gallant

honest boy, with great kindness and good-humour; at the end of his

speech she said, "Law, Bell, I'm sure you are too young to think of such

things;" but intimated that she too would revolve them in her own virgin

bosom. She could not refer Mr. Bell to her mamma, for Mr. Coacher was a

widower, and being immersed in his books, was of course unable to take

the direction of so frail and wondrous an article as a lady's heart,

which Miss Martha had to manage for herself.

A lock of her hair, tied up in a piece of blue ribbon, conveyed to the

happy Bell the result of the Vestal's conference with herself. Thrice

before had she snipt off one of her auburn ringlets, and given them

away. The possessors were faithless, but the hair had grown again:

and Martha had indeed occasion to say that men were deceivers when she

handed over this token of love to the simple boy.

Number 6, however, was an exception to former passions--Francis Bell was

the most faithful of lovers. When his time arrived to go to college, and

it became necessary to acquaint Mr. Coacher of the arrangements that had

been made, the latter cried, "God bless my soul, I hadn't the least idea

what was going on;" as was indeed very likely, for he had been taken in

three times before in precisely a similar manner; and Francis went to

the University resolved to conquer honours, so as to be able to lay them

at the feet of his beloved Martha.

This prize in view made him labour prodigiously. News came, term after

term, of the honours he won. He sent the prize-books for his college

essays to old Coacher, and his silver declamation cup to Miss Martha. In

due season he was high among the Wranglers, and a fellow of his

college; and during all the time of these transactions a constant tender

correspondence was kept up with Miss Coacher, to whose influence, and

perhaps with justice, he attributed the successes which he had won.

By the time, however, when the Rev. Francis Bell, M.A., and Fellow and

Tutor of his College, was twenty-six years of age, it happened that Miss

Coacher was thirty-four, nor had her charms, her manners, or her temper

improved since that sunny day in the springtime of life when he found

her picking peas in the garden. Having achieved his honours he relaxed

in the ardour of his studies, and his judgment and tastes also perhaps

became cooler. The sunshine of the pea-garden faded away from Miss

Martha, and poor Bell found himself engaged--and his hand pledged

to that bond in a thousand letters--to a coarse, ill-tempered,

ill-favoured, ill-mannered, middle-aged woman.

It was in consequence of one of many altercations (in which Martha's

eloquence shone, and in which therefore she was frequently pleased to

indulge) that Francis refused to take his pupils to Bearleader's Green,

where Mr. Coacher's living was, and where Bell was in the habit of

spending the summer: and he bethought him that he would pass the

vacation at his aunt's village, which he had not seen for many

years--not since little Helen was a girl and used to sit on his knee.

Down then he came and lived with them. Helen was grown a beautiful young

woman now. The cousins were nearly four months together, from June to

October. They walked in the summer evenings: they met in the early morn.

They read out of the same book when the old lady dozed at night over the

candles. What little Helen knew, Frank taught her. She sang to him: she

gave her artless heart to him. She was aware of all his story. Had he

made any secret?--had he not shown the picture of the woman to whom

he was engaged, and with a blush,--her letters, hard, eager, and

cruel?--The days went on and on, happier and closer, with more kindness,

more confidence, and more pity. At last one morning in October came,

when Francis went back to college, and the poor girl felt that her

tender heart was gone with him.

Frank too wakened up from the delightful midsummer dream to the horrible

reality of his own pain. He gnashed and tore at the chain which bound

him. He was frantic to break it and be free. Should he confess?--give

his savings to the woman to whom he was bound, and beg his

release?--there was time yet--he temporised. No living might fall in for

years to come. The cousins went on corresponding sadly and fondly: the

betrothed woman, hard, jealous, and dissatisfied, complaining bitterly,

and with reason, of her Francis's altered tone.

At last things came to a crisis, and the new attachment was discovered.

Francis owned it, cared not to disguise it, rebuked Martha with her

violent temper and angry imperiousness, and, worst of all, with her

inferiority and her age.

Her reply was, that if he did not keep his promise she would carry his

letters into every court in the kingdom--letters in which his love was

pledged to her ten thousand times; and, after exposing him to the world

as the perjurer and traitor he was, she would kill herself.

Frank had one more interview with Helen, whose mother was dead then, and

who was living companion with old Lady Pontypool,--one more interview,

where it was resolved that he was to do his duty; that is, to redeem his

vow; that is, to pay a debt cozened from him by a sharper; that is, to

make two honest people miserable. So the two judged their duty to be,

and they parted.

The living fell in only too soon; but yet Frank Bell was quite a grey

and worn-out man when he was inducted into it. Helen wrote him a letter

on his marriage, beginning "My dear Cousin," and ending "always truly

yours." She sent him back the other letters, and the lock of his

hair--all but a small piece. She had it in her desk when she was talking

to the Major.

Bell lived for three or four years in his living, at the end of which

time, the Chaplainship of Coventry Island falling vacant, Frank applied

for it privately, and having procured it, announced the appointment to

his wife. She objected, as she did to everything. He told her bitterly

that he did not want her to come: so she went. Bell went out in Governor

Crawley's time, and was very intimate with that gentleman in his later

years. And it was in Coventry Island, years after his own marriage, and

five years after he had heard of the birth of Helen's boy, that his own

daughter was born.

She was not the daughter of the first Mrs. Bell, who died of island

fever very soon after Helen Pendennis and her husband, to whom Helen had

told everything, wrote to inform Bell of the birth of their child. "I

was old, was I?" said Mrs. Bell the first; "I was old, and her inferior,

was I? but I married you, Mr. Bell, and kept you from marrying her?" and

hereupon she died. Bell married a colonial lady, whom he loved fondly.

But he was not doomed to prosper in love; and, this lady dying in

childbirth, Bell gave up too: sending his little girl home to Helen

Pendennis and her husband, with a parting prayer that they would

befriend her.

The little thing came to Fairoaks from Bristol, which is not very far

off, dressed in black, and in company of a soldier's wife, her nurse,

at parting from whom she wept bitterly. But she soon dried up her grief

under Helen's motherly care.

Round her neck she had a locket with hair, which Helen had given, ah

how many years ago! to poor Francis, dead and buried. This child was all

that was left of him, and she cherished, as so tender a creature would,

the legacy which he had bequeathed to her. The girl's name, as his dying

letter stated, was Helen Laura. But John Pendennis, though he accepted

the trust, was always rather jealous of the orphan; and gloomily ordered

that she should be called by her own mother's name; and not by that

first one which her father had given her. She was afraid of Mr.

Pendennis, to the last moment of his life. And it was only when her

husband was gone that Helen dared openly to indulge in the tenderness

which she felt for the little girl.

Thus it was that Laura Bell became Mrs. Pendennis's daughter. Neither

her husband nor that gentleman's brother, the Major, viewed her with

very favourable eyes. She reminded the first of circumstances in his

wife's life which he was forced to accept, but would have forgotten much

more willingly and as for the second, how could he regard her? She was

neither related to his own family of Pendennis, nor to any nobleman

in this empire, and she had but a couple of thousand pounds for her

fortune.

And now let Mr. Pen come in, who has been waiting all this while.

Having strung up his nerves, and prepared himself, without at the door,

for the meeting, he came to it, determined to face the awful uncle. He

had settled in his mind that the encounter was to be a fierce one, and

was resolved on bearing it through with all the courage and dignity of

the famous family which he represented. And he flung open the door and

entered with the most severe and warlike expression, armed cap-a-pie as

it were, with lance couched and plumes displayed, and glancing at his

adversary, as if to say, "Come on, I'm ready."

The old man of the world, as he surveyed the boy's demeanour, could

hardly help a grin at his admirable pompous simplicity. Major Pendennis

too had examined his ground; and finding that the widow was already

half won over to the enemy, and having a shrewd notion that threats and

tragic exhortations would have no effect upon the boy, who was inclined

to be perfectly stubborn and awfully serious, the Major laid aside the

authoritative manner at once, and with the most good-humoured natural

smile in the world, held out his hands to Pen, shook the lad's passive

fingers gaily, and said, "Well, Pen, my boy, tell us all about it."

Helen was delighted with the generosity of the Major's good-humour.

On the contrary, it quite took aback and disappointed poor Pen, whose

nerves were strung up for a tragedy, and who felt that his grand

entree was altogether baulked and ludicrous. He blushed and winced with

mortified vanity and bewilderment. He felt immensely inclined to begin

to cry--"I--I--I didn't know that you were come till just now," he said:

"is--is--town very full, I suppose?"

If Pen could hardly gulp his tears down, it was all the Major could do

to keep from laughter. He turned round and shot a comical glance at

Mrs. Pendennis, who too felt that the scene was at once ridiculous and

sentimental. And so, having nothing to say, she went up and kissed Mr.

Pen: as he thought of her tenderness and soft obedience to his wishes,

it is very possible too the boy was melted.

"What a couple of fools they are," thought the old guardian. "If I

hadn't come down, she would have driven over in state to pay a visit and

give her blessing to the young lady's family."

"Come, come," said he, still grinning at the couple, "let us have as

little sentiment as possible, and, Pen, my good fellow, tell us the

whole story."

Pen got back at once to his tragic and heroical air. "The story is,

sir," said he, "as I have written it to you before. I have made the

acquaintance of a most beautiful and most virtuous lady; of a high

family, although in reduced circumstances: I have found the woman in

whom I know that the happiness of my life is centred; I feel that

I never, never can think about any woman but her. I am aware of

the difference of our ages and other difficulties in my way. But my

affection was so great that I felt I could surmount all these; that we

both could: and she has consented to unite her lot with mine, and to

accept my heart and my fortune."

"How much is that, my boy?" said the Major. "Has anybody left you some

money? I don't know that you are worth a shilling in the world."

"You know what I have is his," cried out Mrs. Pendennis.

"Good heavens, madam, hold your tongue!" was what the guardian was

disposed to say; but he kept his temper, not without a struggle. "No

doubt, no doubt," he said. "You would sacrifice anything for him.

Everybody knows that. But it is, after all then, your fortune which Pen

is offering to the young lady; and of which he wishes to take possession

at eighteen."

"I know my mother will give me anything," Pen said, looking rather

disturbed.

"Yes, my good fellow, but there is reason in all things. If your mother

keeps the house, it is but fair that she should select her company. When

you give her house over her head, and transfer her banker's account

to yourself for the benefit of Miss What-d'-you-call-'em--Miss

Costigan--don't you think you should at least have consulted my sister

as one of the principal parties in the transaction? I am speaking to

you, you see, without the least anger or assumption of authority, such

as the law and your father's will give me over you for three years to

come--but as one man of the world to another,--and I ask you, if you

think that, because you can do what you like with your mother, therefore

you have a right to do so? As you are her dependent, would it not have

been more generous to wait before you took this step, and at least to

have paid her the courtesy to ask her leave?"

Pen held down his head, and began dimly to perceive that the action on

which he had prided himself as a most romantic, generous instance of

disinterested affection, was perhaps a very selfish and headstrong piece

of folly.

"I did it in a moment of passion," said Pen, floundering; "I was not

aware what I was going to say or to do" (and in this he spoke with

perfect sincerity) "But now it is said, and I stand to it. No; I neither

can nor will recall it. I'll die rather than do so. And I--I don't want

to burthen my mother," he continued. "I'll work for myself. I'll go on

the stage, and act with her. She--she says I should do well there."

"But will she take you on those terms?" the Major interposed. "Mind, I

do not say that Miss Costigan is not the most disinterested of women:

but, don't you suppose now, fairly, that your position as a young

gentleman of ancient birth and decent expectations forms a part of the

cause why she finds your addresses welcome?"

"I'll die, I say, rather than forfeit my pledge to her," said Pen,

doubling his fists and turning red.

"Who asks you, my dear friend?" answered the imperturbable guardian. "No

gentleman breaks his word, of course, when it has been given freely. But

after all, you can wait. You owe something to your mother, something to

your family--something to me as your father's representative."

"Oh, of course," Pen said, feeling rather relieved.

"Well, as you have pledged your word to her, give us another, will you

Arthur?"

"What is it?" Arthur asked.

"That you will make no private marriage--that you won't be taking a trip

to Scotland, you understand."

"That would be a falsehood. Pen never told his mother a falsehood,"

Helen said.

Pen hung down his head again, and his eyes filled with tears of

shame. Had not this whole intrigue been a falsehood to that tender and

confiding creature who was ready to give up all for his sake? He gave

his uncle his hand.

"No, sir--on my word of honour, as a gentleman," he said, "I will never

marry without my mother's consent!" and giving Helen a bright parting

look of confidence and affection unchangeable, the boy went out of the

drawing-room into his own study.

"He's an angel--he's an angel," the mother cried out in one of her usual

raptures.

"He comes of a good stock, ma'am," said her brother-in-law--"of a good

stock on both sides." The Major was greatly pleased with the result of

his diplomacy--so much so, that he once more saluted the tips of Mrs.

Pendennis's glove, and dropping the curt, manly, and straightforward

tone in which he had conducted the conversation with the lad, assumed

a certain drawl which he always adopted when he was most conceited and

fine.

"My dear creature," said he, in that his politest tone, "I think it

certainly as well that I came down, and I flatter myself that last botte

was a successful one. I tell you how I came to think of it. Three years

ago my kind friend Lady Ferrybridge sent for me in the greatest state of

alarm about her son Gretna, whose affair you remember, and implored

me to use my influence with the young gentleman, who was engaged in an

affaire de coeur with a Scotch clergyman's daughter, Miss MacToddy. I

implored, I entreated gentle measures. But Lord Ferrybridge was furious,

and tried the high hand. Gretna was sulky and silent, and his parents

thought they had conquered. But what was the fact, my dear creature? The

young people had been married for three months before Lord Ferrybridge

knew anything about it. And that was why I extracted the promise from

Master Pen."

"Arthur would never have done so," Mrs. Pendennis said.

"He hasn't,--that is one comfort," answered the brother-in-law.

Like a wary and patient man of the world, Major Pendennis did not press

poor Pen any farther for the moment, but hoped the best from time, and

that the young fellow's eyes would be opened before long to see the

absurdity of which he was guilty. And having found out how keen the

boy's point of honour was, he worked kindly upon that kindly feeling

with great skill, discoursing him over their wine after dinner, and

pointing out to Pen the necessity of a perfect uprightness and openness

in all his dealings, and entreating that his communications with his

interesting young friend (as the Major politely called Miss Fotheringay)

should be carried on with the knowledge, if not approbation, of Mrs.

Pendennis. "After all, Pen," the Major said, with a convenient frankness

that did not displease the boy, whilst it advanced the interests of the

negotiator, "you must bear in mind that you are throwing yourself away.

Your mother may submit to your marriage as she would to anything else

you desired, if you did but cry long enough for it: but be sure of this,

that it can never please her. You take a young woman off the boards of

a country theatre and prefer her, for such is the case, to one of the

finest ladies in England. And your mother will submit to your choice,

but you can't suppose that she will be happy under it. I have often

fancied, entre nous, that my sister had it in her eye to make a marriage

between you and that little ward of hers--Flora, Laura--what's her name?

And I always determined to do my small endeavour to prevent any such

match. The child has but two thousand pounds, I am given to understand.

It is only with the utmost economy and care that my sister can provide

for the decent maintenance of her house, and for your appearance and

education as a gentleman; and I don't care to own to you that I had

other and much higher views for you. With your name and birth, sir--with

your talents, which I suppose are respectable, with the friends whom

I have the honour to possess, I could have placed you in an excellent

position--a remarkable position for a young man of such exceeding small

means, and had hoped to see you, at least, try to restore the honours of

our name. Your mother's softness stopped one prospect, or you might have

been a general, like our gallant ancestor who fought at Ramillies and

Malplaquet. I had another plan in view: my excellent and kind friend,

Lord Bagwig, who is very well disposed towards me, would, I have little

doubt, have attached you to his mission at Pumpernickel, and you might

have advanced in the diplomatic service. But, pardon me for recurring

to the subject; how is a man to serve a young gentleman of eighteen, who

proposes to marry a lady of thirty, whom he has selected from a booth in

a fair?--well, not a fair,--a barn. That profession at once is closed to

you. The public service is closed to you. Society is closed to you. You

see, my good friend, to what you bring yourself. You may get on at the

bar to be sure, where I am given to understand that gentlemen of merit

occasionally marry out of their kitchens; but in no other profession.

Or you may come and live down here--down here, mon Dieu! for ever"

(said the Major, with a dreary shrug, as he thought with inexpressible

fondness of Pall Mall), "where your mother will receive the Mrs. Arthur

that is to be, with perfect kindness; where the good people of the

county won't visit you; and where, by Gad, sir, I shall be shy of

visiting you myself, for I'm a plain-spoken man, and I own to you that

I like to live with gentlemen for my companions; where you will have to

live, with rum-and-water--drinking gentlemen--farmers, and drag through

your life the young husband of an old woman, who, if she doesn't quarrel

with your mother, will at least cost that lady her position in society,

and drag her down into that dubious caste into which you must inevitably

fall. It is no affair of mine, my good sir. I am not angry. Your

downfall will not hurt me farther than that it will extinguish the hopes

I had of seeing my family once more taking its place in the world. It is

only your mother and yourself that will be ruined. And I pity you both

from my soul. Pass the claret: it is some I sent to your poor father; I

remember I bought it at poor Lord Levant's sale. But of course," added

the Major, smacking the wine, "having engaged yourself, you will do

what becomes you as a man of honour, however fatal your promise may be.

However, promise us on our side, my boy, what I set out by entreating

you to grant,--that there shall be nothing clandestine, that you will

pursue your studies, that you will only visit your interesting friend at

proper intervals. Do you write to her much?"

Pen blushed and said, "Why, yes, he had written."

"I suppose verses, eh! as well as prose? I was a dab at verses myself. I

recollect when I first joined, I used to write verses for the fellows in

the regiment; and did some pretty things in that way. I was talking to

my old friend General Hobbler about some lines I dashed off for him in

the year 1806, when we were at the Cape, and, Gad, he remembered every

line of them still; for he'd used 'em so often, the old rogue, and had

actually tried 'em on Mrs. Hobbler, sir--who brought him sixty thousand

pounds. I suppose you've tried verses, eh, Pen?"

Pen blushed again, and said, "Why, yes, he had written verses."

"And does the fair one respond in poetry or prose?" asked the Major,

eyeing his nephew with the queerest expression, as much as to say, "O

Moses and Green Spectacles! what a fool the boy is."

Pen blushed again. She had written, but not in verse, the young lover

owned, and he gave his breast-pocket the benefit of a squeeze with his

left arm, which the Major remarked, according to his wont.

"You have got the letters there, I see," said the old campaigner,

nodding at Pen and pointing to his own chest (which was manfully wadded

with cotton by Mr. Stultz). "You know you have. I would give twopence to

see 'em."

"Why," said Pen, twiddling the stalks of the strawberries, "I--I,"

but this sentence never finished; for Pen's face was so comical and

embarrassed, as the Major watched it, that the elder could contain his

gravity no longer, and burst into a fit of laughter, in which chorus

Pen himself was obliged to join after a minute: when he broke out fairly

into a guffaw.

It sent them with great good-humour into Mrs. Pendennis's drawing-room.

She was pleased to hear them laughing in the hall as they crossed it.

"You sly rascal!" said the Major, putting his arm gaily on Pen's

shoulder, and giving a playful push at the boy's breast-pocket. He

felt the papers crackling there sure enough. The young fellow was

delighted--conceited--triumphant--and in one word, a spoony.

The pair came to the tea-table in the highest spirits. The Major's

politeness was beyond expression. He had never tasted such good tea, and

such bread was only to be had in the country. He asked Mrs. Pendennis

for one of her charming songs. He then made Pen sing, and was delighted

and astonished at the beauty of the boy's voice: he made his nephew

fetch his maps and drawings, and praised them as really remarkable

works of talent in a young fellow: he complimented him on his French

pronunciation: he flattered the simple boy as adroitly as ever lover

flattered a mistress: and when bedtime came, mother and son went to

their several rooms perfectly enchanted with the kind Major.

When they had reached those apartments, I suppose Helen took to her

knees as usual: and Pen read over his letters before going to bed: just

as if he didn't know every word of them by heart already. In truth there

were but three of those documents and to learn their contents required

no great effort of memory.

In No. 1, Miss Fotheringay presents grateful compliments to Mr.

Pendennis, and in her papa's name and her own begs to thank him for his

most beautiful presents. They will always be kept carefully; and Miss

F. and Captain C. will never forget the delightful evening which they

passed on Tuesday last.

No. 2 said--Dear Sir, we shall have a small quiet party of social

friends at our humble board, next Tuesday evening, at an early tea, when

I shall wear the beautiful scarf which, with its accompanying delightful

verses, I shall ever, ever cherish: and papa bids me say how happy he

will be if you will join 'the feast of reason and the flow of soul' in

our festive little party, as I am sure will be your truly grateful Emily

Fotheringay.

No. 3 was somewhat more confidential, and showed that matters had

proceeded rather far. You were odious yesterday night, the letter said.

Why did you not come to the stage-door? Papa could not escort me on

account of his eye; he had an accident, and fell down over a loose

carpet on the stair on Sunday night. I saw you looking at Miss Diggle

all night; and you were so enchanted with Lydia Languish you scarcely

once looked at Julia. I could have crushed Bingley, I was so angry.

I play Ella Rosenberg on Friday: will you come then? Miss Diggle

performs--ever your E. F.

These three letters Mr. Pen used to read at intervals, during the

day and night, and embrace with that delight and fervour which such

beautiful compositions surely warranted. A thousand times at least he

had kissed fondly the musky satin paper, made sacred to him by the hand

of Emily Fotheringay. This was all he had in return for his passion

and flames, his vows and protests, his rhymes and similes, his wakeful

nights and endless thoughts, his fondness, fears and folly. The young

wiseacre had pledged away his all for this: signed his name to endless

promissory notes, conferring his heart upon the bearer: bound himself

for life, and got back twopence as an equivalent. For Miss Costigan was

a young lady of such perfect good-conduct and self-command, that she

never would have thought of giving more, and reserved the treasures of

her affection until she could transfer them lawfully at church.

Howbeit, Mr. Pen was content with what tokens of regard he had got, and

mumbled over his three letters in a rapture of high spirits, and went to

sleep delighted with his kind old uncle from London, who must evidently

yield to his wishes in time; and, in a word, in a preposterous state of

contentment with himself and all the world.

CHAPTER IX. In which the Major opens the Campaign

Let those who have a real and heartfelt relish for London society and

the privilege of an entree into its most select circles, admit that

Major Pendennis was a man of no ordinary generosity and affection,

in the sacrifice which he now made. He gave up London in May,--his

newspapers and his mornings--his afternoons from club to club, his

little confidential visits to my Ladies, his rides in Rotten Row, his

dinners, and his stall at the Opera, his rapid escapades to Fulham or

Richmond on Saturdays and Sundays, his bow from my Lord Duke or my Lord

Marquis at the great London entertainments, and his name in the Morning

Post of the succeeding day,--his quieter little festivals, more select,

secret, and delightful--all these he resigned to lock himself into a

lone little country house, with a simple widow and a greenhorn of a son,

a mawkish curate, and a little girl of ten years of age.

He made the sacrifice, and it was the greater that few knew the extent

of it. His letters came down franked from town, and he showed the

invitations to Helen with a sigh. It was beautiful and tragical to

see him refuse one party after another--at least to those who could

understand, as Helen didn't, the melancholy grandeur of his self-denial.

Helen did not, or only smiled at the awful pathos with which the Major

spoke of the Court Guide in general: but young Pen looked with great

respect at the great names upon the superscriptions of his uncle's

letters, and listened to the Major's stories about the fashionable world

with constant interest and sympathy.

The elder Pendennis's rich memory was stored with thousands of these

delightful tales, and he poured them into Pen's willing ear with

unfailing eloquence. He knew the name and pedigree of everybody in the

Peerage, and everybody's relations. "My dear boy," he would say, with a

mournful earnestness and veracity, "you cannot begin your genealogical

studies too early; I wish to Heavens you would read in Debrett every

day. Not so much the historical part (for the pedigrees, between

ourselves, are many of them very fabulous, and there are few families

that can show such a clear descent as our own) as the account of family

alliances, and who is related to whom. I have known a man's career in

life blasted by ignorance on this important, this all-important subject.

Why, only last month, at dinner at my Lord Hobanob's, a young man, who

has lately been received among us, young Mr. Suckling (author of a

work, I believe), began to speak lightly of Admiral Bowser's conduct for

ratting to Ministers, in what I must own is the most audacious manner.

But who do you think sate next and opposite to this Mr. Suckling?

Why--why, next to him was Lady Grampound Bowser's daughter, and opposite

to him was Lord Grampound Bowser's son-in-law. The infatuated young man

went on cutting his jokes at the Admiral's expense, fancying that

all the world was laughing with him, and I leave you to imagine Lady

Hobanob's feelings--Hobanob's!--those of every well-bred man, as the

wretched intru was so exposing himself. He will never dine again in

South Street. I promise you that."

With such discourses the Major entertained his nephew, as he paced the

terrace in front of the house for his two hours' constitutional walk, or

as they sate together after dinner over their wine. He grieved that Sir

Francis Clavering had not come down to the park, to live in it since his

marriage, and to make a society for the neighbourhood. He mourned that

Lord Eyrie was not in the country, that he might take Pen and present

him to his lordship. "He has daughters," the Major said. "Who knows?

you might have married Lady Emily or Lady Barbara Trehawk; but all those

dreams are over; my poor fellow, you must lie on the bed which you have

made for yourself."

These things to hear did young Pendennis seriously incline. They are

not so interesting in print as when delivered orally; but the Major's

anecdotes of the great George, of the Royal Dukes, of the statesmen,

beauties, and fashionable ladies of the day, filled young Pen's soul

with longing and wonder; and he found the conversations with his

guardian, which sadly bored and perplexed poor Mrs. Pendennis, for his

own part never tedious.

It can't be said that Mr. Pen's new guide, philosopher, and friend

discoursed him on the most elevated subjects, or treated the subjects

which he chose in the most elevated manner. But his morality, such as it

was, was consistent. It might not, perhaps, tend to a man's progress

in another world, but it was pretty well calculated to advance his

interests in this; and then it must be remembered that the Major never

for one instant doubted that his views were the only views practicable,

and that his conduct was perfectly virtuous and respectable. He was a

man of honour, in a word: and had his eyes, what he called, open. He

took pity on this young greenhorn of a nephew, and wanted to open his

eyes too.

No man, for instance, went more regularly to church when in the country

than the old bachelor. "It don't matter so much in town, Pen," he said,

"for there the women go and the men are not missed. But when a gentleman

is sur ses terres, he must give an example to the country people: and

if I could turn a tune, I even think I should sing. The Duke of Saint

David's, whom I have the honour of knowing, always sings in the country,

and let me tell you, it has a doosed fine effect from the family pew.

And you are somebody down here. As long as the Claverings are away you

are the first man in the parish: and as good as any. You might represent

the town if you played your cards well. Your poor dear father would have

done so had he lived; so might you.--Not if you marry a lady, however

amiable, whom the country people won't meet.--Well, well: it's a painful

subject. Let us change it, my boy." But if Major Pendennis changed the

subject once he recurred to it a score of times in the day: and the

moral of his discourse always was, that Pen was throwing himself away.

Now it does not require much coaxing or wheedling to make a simple boy

believe that he is a very fine fellow.

Pen took his uncle's counsels to heart. He was glad enough, we have

said, to listen to his elder's talk. The conversation of Captain

Costigan became by no means pleasant to him, and the idea of that tipsy

old father-in-law haunted him with terror. He couldn't bring that man,

unshaven and reeking of punch, to associate with his mother. Even about

Emily--he faltered when the pitiless guardian began to question him.

"Was she accomplished?" He was obliged to own, no. "Was she clever?"

Well, she had a very good average intellect: but he could not absolutely

say she was clever. "Come, let us see some of her letters." So Pen

confessed that he had but those three of which we have made mention--and

that they were but trivial invitations or answers.

"She is cautious enough," the Major said, drily. "She is older than

you, my poor boy;" and then he apologised with the utmost frankness and

humility, and flung himself upon Pen's good feelings, begging the lad to

excuse a fond old uncle, who had only his family's honour in view--for

Arthur was ready to flame up in indignation whenever Miss Costigan's

honesty was doubted, and swore that he would never have her name

mentioned lightly, and never, never would part from her.

He repeated this to his uncle and his friends at home, and also, it must

be confessed, to Miss Fotheringay and the amiable family, at Chatteris,

with whom he still continued to spend some portion of his time. Miss

Emily was alarmed when she heard of the arrival of Pen's guardian, and

rightly conceived that the Major came down with hostile intentions to

herself. "I suppose ye intend to leave me, now your grand relation has

come down from town. He'll carry ye off, and you'll forget your poor

Emily, Mr. Arthur!"

Forget her! In her presence, in that of Miss Rouncy, the Columbine

and Milly's confidential friend of the Company, in the presence of the

Captain himself, Pen swore he never could think of any other woman but

his beloved Miss Fotheringay; and the Captain, looking up at his foils

which were hung as a trophy on the wall of the room where Pen and he

used to fence, grimly said, he would not advoise any man to meddle

rashly with the affections of his darling child; and would never believe

his gallant young Arthur, whom he treated as his son, whom he called

his son, would ever be guilty of conduct so revolting to every idaya of

honour and humanity.

He went up and embraced Pen after speaking. He cried, and wiped his

eye with one large dirty hand as he clasped Pen with the other.

Arthur shuddered in that grasp, and thought of his uncle at home.

His father-in-law looked unusually dirty and shabby; the odour of

whisky-and-water was even more decided than in common. How was he to

bring that man and his mother together? He trembled when he thought that

he had absolutely written to Costigan (enclosing to him a sovereign, the

loan of which the worthy gentleman had need), and saying that one day

he hoped to sign himself his affectionate son, Arthur Pendennis. He

was glad to get away from Chatteris that day; from Miss Rouncy the

confidante; from the old toping father-in-law; from the divine Emily

herself. "O, Emily, Emily," he cried inwardly, as he rattled homewards

on Rebecca, "you little know what sacrifices I am making for you!--for

you who are always so cold, so cautious, so mistrustful;" and he thought

of a character in Pope to whom he had often involuntarily compared her.

Pen never rode over to Chatteris upon a certain errand, but the Major

found out on what errand the boy had been. Faithful to his plan, Major

Pendennis gave his nephew no let or hindrance; but somehow the constant

feeling that the senior's eye was upon him, an uneasy shame attendant

upon that inevitable confession which the evening's conversation would

be sure to elicit in the most natural simple manner, made Pen go less

frequently to sigh away his soul at the feet of his charmer than he had

been wont to do previous to his uncle's arrival. There was no use trying

to deceive him; there was no pretext of dining with Smirke, or reading

Greek plays with Foker; Pen felt, when he returned from one of his

flying visits, that everybody knew whence he came, and appeared quite

guilty before his mother and guardian, over their books or their game at

picquet.

Once having walked out half a mile, to the Fairoaks Inn, beyond the

Lodge gates, to be in readiness for the Competitor coach, which changed

horses there, to take a run for Chatteris, a man on the roof touched his

hat to the young gentleman: it was his uncle's man, Mr. Morgan, who was

going on a message for his master, and had been took up at the Lodge, as

he said. And Mr. Morgan came back by the Rival, too; so that Pen had the

pleasure of that domestic's company both ways. Nothing was said at home.

The lad seemed to have every decent liberty; and yet he felt himself

dimly watched and guarded, and that there were eyes upon him even in the

presence of his Dulcinea.

In fact, Pen's suspicions were not unfounded, and his guardian had

sent forth to gather all possible information regarding the lad and

his interesting young friend. The discreet and ingenious Mr. Morgan, a

London confidential valet, whose fidelity could be trusted, had been

to Chatteris more than once, and made every inquiry regarding the

past history and present habits of the Captain and his daughter. He

delicately cross-examined the waiters, the ostlers, and all the inmates

of the bar at the George, and got from them what little they knew

respecting the worthy Captain. He was not held in very great regard

there, as it appeared. The waiters never saw the colour of his money,

and were warned not to furnish the poor gentleman with any liquor for

which some other party was not responsible. He swaggered sadly about the

coffee-room there, consumed a toothpick, and looked over the paper, and

if any friend asked him to dinner he stayed. Morgan heard at the George

of Pen's acquaintance with Mr. Foker, and he went over to Baymouth to

enter into relations with that gentleman's man; but the young student

was gone to a Coast Regatta, and his servant, of course, travelled in

charge of the dressing-case.

From the servants of the officers at the barracks Mr. Morgan found that

the Captain had so frequently and outrageously inebriated himself

there, that Colonel Swallowtail had forbidden him the messroom. The

indefatigable Morgan then put himself in communication with some of the

inferior actors at the theatre, and pumped them over their cigars and

punch, and all agreed that Costigan was poor, shabby, and given to debt

and to drink. But there was not a breath upon the reputation of Miss

Fotheringay: her father's courage was reported to have displayed itself

on more than one occasion towards persons disposed to treat his daughter

with freedom. She never came to the theatre but with her father: in his

most inebriated moments, that gentleman kept a watch over her; finally

Mr. Morgan, from his own experience added that he had been to see her

act, and was uncommon delighted with the performance, besides thinking

her a most splendid woman.

Mrs. Creed, the pew-opener, confirmed these statements to Doctor

Portman, who examined her personally, and threatened her with the

terrors of the Church one day after afternoon service. Mrs. Creed had

nothing unfavourable to her lodger to divulge. She saw nobody; only

one or two ladies of the theatre. The Captain did intoxicate himself

sometimes, and did not always pay his rent regularly, but he did when

he had money, or rather Miss Fotheringay did. Since the young gentleman

from Clavering had been and took lessons in fencing, one or two more had

come from the barracks; Sir Derby Oaks, and his young friend, Mr.

Foker, which was often together; and which was always driving over from

Baymouth in the tandem. But on the occasions of the lessons, Miss F. was

very seldom present, and generally came downstairs to Mrs. Creed's own

room.

The Doctor and the Major consulting together as they often did, groaned

in spirit over that information. Major Pendennis openly expressed his

disappointment; and, I believe, the Divine himself was ill pleased at

not being able to jack a hole in poor Miss Fotheringay's reputation.

Even about Pen himself, Mrs. Creed's reports were desperately

favourable. "Whenever he come," Mrs. Creed said, "She always have me

or one of the children with her. And Mrs. Creed, marm, says she, if

you please, marm, you'll on no account leave the room when that young

gentleman's here. And many's the time I've seen him a lookin' as if

he wished I was away, poor young man: and he took to coming in

service-time, when I wasn't at home, of course: but she always had one

of the boys up if her Pa wasn't at home, or old Mr. Bowser with her a

teaching of her her lesson, or one of the young ladies of the theayter."

It was all true: whatever encouragements might have been given him

before he avowed his passion, the prudence of Miss Emily was prodigious

after Pen had declared himself: and the poor fellow chafed against her

hopeless reserve, which maintained his ardour as it excited his anger.

The Major surveyed the state of things with a sigh. "If it were but a

temporary liaison," the excellent man said, "one could bear it. A young

fellow must sow his wild oats, and that sort of thing. But a virtuous

attachment is the deuce. It comes of the d----d romantic notions boys

get from being brought up by women."

"Allow me to say, Major, that you speak a little too like a man of the

world," replied the Doctor. "Nothing can be more desirable for Pen

than a virtuous attachment for a young lady of his own rank and with

a corresponding fortune--this present infatuation, of course, I must

deplore as sincerely as you do. If I were his guardian I should command

him to give it up."

"The very means, I tell you, to make him marry to-morrow. We have got

time from him, that is all, and we must do our best with that.

"I say, Major," said the Doctor, at the end of the conversation in which

the above subject was discussed--"I am not, of course, a play-going

man--but suppose, I say, we go and see her."

The Major laughed--he had been a fortnight at Fairoaks, and strange to

say, had not thought of that. "Well," he said, "why not? After all, it

is not my niece, but Miss Fotheringay the actress, and we have as good

a right as any other of the public to see her if we pay our money." So

upon a day when it was arranged that Pen was to dine at home, and pass

the evening with his mother, the two elderly gentlemen drove over to

Chatteris in the Doctor's chaise, and there, like a couple of jolly

bachelors, dined at the George Inn, before proceeding to the play.

Only two other guests were in the room,--an officer of the regiment

quartered at Chatteris, and a young gentleman whom the Doctor thought he

had somewhere seen. They left them at their meal, however, and hastened

to the theatre. It was Hamlet over again. Shakspeare was Article XL.

of stout old Doctor Portman's creed, to which he always made a point of

testifying publicly at least once in a year.

We have described the play before, and how those who saw Miss

Fotheringay perform in Ophelia saw precisely the same thing on one

night as on another. Both the elderly gentlemen looked at her with

extraordinary interest, thinking how very much young Pen was charmed

with her.

"Gad," said the Major, between his teeth, as he surveyed her when

she was called forward as usual, and swept her curtsies to the scanty

audience, "the young rascal has not made a bad choice."

The Doctor applauded her loudly and loyally. "Upon my word," said he,

"She is a very clever actress; and I must say, Major, she is endowed

with very considerable personal attractions."

"So that young officer thinks in the stage-box," Major Pendennis

answered, and he pointed out to Doctor Portman's attention the young

dragoon of the George Coffee-room, who sate in the box in question, and

applauded with immense enthusiasm. She looked extremely sweet upon him

too, thought the Major: but that's their way--and he shut up his natty

opera-glass and pocketed it, as if he wished to see no more that night.

Nor did the Doctor, of course, propose to stay for the after-piece, so

they rose and left the theatre; the Doctor returning to Mrs. Portman,

who was on a visit at the Deanery, and the Major walking home full of

thought towards the George, where he had bespoken a bed.

CHAPTER X. Facing the Enemy

Sauntering slowly homewards, Major Pendennis reached the George

presently, and found Mr. Morgan, his faithful valet, awaiting him at the

door of the George Inn, who stopped his master as he was about to take a

candle to go to bed, and said, with his usual air of knowing deference,

"I think, sir, if you would go into the coffee-room, there's a young

gentleman there as you would like to see."

"What, is Mr. Arthur here?" the Major said, in great anger.

"No, sir--but his great friend, Mr. Foker, sir. Lady Hagnes Foker's

son is here, sir. He's been asleep in the coffee-room since he took his

dinner, and has just rung for his coffee, sir. And I think, p'raps, you

might like to git into conversation with him," the valet said, opening

the coffee-room door.

The Major entered; and there indeed was Mr. Foker, the only occupant of

the place. He was rubbing his eyes, and sate before a table rated with

empty decanters and relics of dessert. He had intended to go to the play

too, but sleep had overtaken him after a copious meal, and he had flung

up his legs on the bench, and indulged in a nap instead of the dramatic

amusement. The Major was meditating how to address the young man, but

the latter prevented him that trouble.

"Like to look at the evening paper, sir?" said Mr. Foker, who was always

communicative and affable; and he took up the Globe from his table, and

offered it to the new-comer.

"I am very much obliged to you," said the Major, with a grateful bow and

smile. "If I don't mistake the family likeness, I have the pleasure

of speaking to Mr. Henry Foker, Lady Agnes Foker's son. I have the

happiness to name her ladyship among my acquaintances--and you bear,

sir, a Rosherville face."

"Hullo! I beg your pardon," Mr. Foker said, "I took you,"--he was going

to say--"I took you for a commercial gent." But he stopped that phrase.

"To whom have I the pleasure of speaking?" he added.

"To a relative of a friend and schoolfellow of yours--Arthur Pendennis,

my nephew, who has often spoken to me about you in terms of great

regard. I am Major Pendennis, of whom you may have heard him speak. May

I take my soda-water at your table? I have had the pleasure of sitting

at your grandfather's."

"Sir, you do me proud," said Mr. Foker, with much courtesy. "And so you

are Arthur Pendennis's uncle, are you?"

"And guardian," added the Major.

"He's as good a fellow as ever stepped, sir," said Mr. Foker.

"I am glad you think so."

"And clever, too--I was always a stupid chap, I was--but you see, sir, I

know 'em when they are clever, and like 'em of that sort."

"You show your taste and your modesty, too," said the Major. "I have

heard Arthur repeatedly speak of you, and he said your talents were very

good."

"I'm not good at the books," Mr. Foker said, wagging his head--"never

could manage that--Pendennis could--he used to do half the chaps'

verses--and yet"--the young gentleman broke out, "you are his guardian;

and I hope you will pardon me for saying that I think he's what we call

flat," the candid young gentleman said.

The Major found himself on the instant in the midst of a most

interesting and confidential conversation. "And how is Arthur a flat?"

he asked, with a smile.

"You know," Foker answered, winking at him--he would have winked at the

Duke of Wellington with just as little scruple, for he was in that state

of absence, candour, and fearlessness which a man sometimes possesses

after drinking a couple of bottles of wine--"You know Arthur's a

flat,--about women I mean."

"He is not the first of us, my dear Mr. Harry," answered the Major. "I

have heard something of this--but pray tell me more."

"Why, sir, you see--it's partly my fault. He went to the play one

night--for you see I'm down here readin' for my little go during the

Long, only I come over from Baymouth pretty often in my drag--well,

sir, we went to the play, and Pen was struck all of a heap with Miss

Fotheringay--Costigan her real name is--an uncommon fine gal she is too;

and the next morning I introduced him to the General, as we

call her father--a regular old scamp and such a boy for the

whisky-and-water!--and he's gone on being intimate there. And he's

fallen in love with her--and I'm blessed if he hasn't proposed to her,"

Foker said, slapping his hand on the table, until all the dessert began

to jingle.

"What! you know it too?" asked the Major.

"Know it! don't I? and many more too. We were talking about it at mess,

yesterday, and chaffing Derby Oaks--until he was as mad as a hatter.

Know Sir Derby Oaks? We dined together, and he went to the play: we were

standing at the door smoking, I remember, when you passed in to dinner."

"I remember Sir Thomas Oaks, his father, before he was a Baronet or

a Knight; he lived in Cavendish-square, and was physician to Queen

Charlotte."

"The young one is making the money spin, I can tell you," Mr. Foker

said.

"And is Sir Derby Oaks," the Major said, with great delight and anxiety,

"another soupirant?"

"Another what?" inquired Mr. Foker.

"Another admirer of Miss Fotheringay?"

"Lord bless you! we call him Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays, and Pen

Tuesdays, Thursdays, and Saturdays. But mind you, nothing wrong! No, no!

Miss F. is a deal too wide-awake for that, Major Pendennis. She plays

one off against the other. What you call two strings to her bow."

"I think you seem tolerably wide-awake, too, Mr. Foker, Pendennis said,

laughing.

"Pretty well, thank you, sir--how are you?" Foker replied,

imperturbably. "I'm not clever, p'raps: but I am rather downy; and

partial friends say I know what's o'clock tolerably well. Can I tell you

the time of day in any way?"

"Upon my word," the Major answered, quite delighted, "I think you may be

of very great service to me. You are a young man of the world, and

with such one likes to deal. And as such I need not inform you that our

family is by no means delighted at this absurd intrigue in which Arthur

is engaged."

"I should rather think not," said Mr. Foker. "Connexion not eligible.

Too much beer drunk on the premises. No Irish need apply. That I take to

be your meaning."

The Major said it was, exactly; though in truth he did not quite

understand what Mr. Foker's meaning was: and he proceeded to examine

his new acquaintance regarding the amiable family into which his nephew

proposed to enter, and soon got from the candid witness a number of

particulars regarding the House of Costigan.

We must do Mr. Foker the justice to say that he spoke most favourably

of Mr. and Miss Costigan's moral character. "You see," said he, "I

think the General is fond of the jovial bowl, and if I wanted to be very

certain of my money, it isn't in his pocket I'd invest it--but he has

always kept a watchful eye on his daughter, and neither he nor she will

stand anything but what's honourable. Pen's attentions to her are talked

about in the whole Company, and I hear all about them from a young lady

who used to be very intimate with her, and with whose family I sometimes

take tea in a friendly way. Miss Rouncy says, Sir Derby Oaks has been

hanging about Miss Fotheringay ever since his regiment has been down

here; but Pen has come in and cut him out lately, which has made the

Baronet so mad, that he has been very near on the point of proposing

too. Wish he would; and you'd see which of the two Miss Fotheringay

would jump at."

"I thought as much," the Major said. "You give me a great deal of

pleasure, Mr. Foker. I wish I could have seen you before."

"Didn't like to put in my oar," replied the other. "Don't speak till I'm

asked, when, if there's no objections, I speak pretty freely. Heard your

man had been hankering about my servant--didn't know myself what was

going on until Miss Fotheringay and Miss Rouncy had the row about the

ostrich feathers, when Miss R. told me everything."

"Miss Rouncy, I gather, was the confidante of the other."

"Confidant? I believe you. Why, she's twice as clever a girl as

Fotheringay, and literary and that, while Miss Foth can't do much more

than read."

"She can write," said the Major, remembering Pen's breast-pocket.

Foker broke out into a sardonic "He, he! Rouncy writes her letters," he

said; "every one of 'em; and since they've quarrelled, she don't know

how the deuce to get on. Miss Rouncy is an uncommon pretty hand, whereas

the old one makes dreadful work of the writing and spelling when

Bows ain't by. Rouncy's been settin' her copies lately--she writes a

beautiful hand, Rouncy does."

"I suppose you know it pretty well," said the Major archly upon which

Mr. Foker winked at him again.

"I would give a great deal to have a specimen of her hand-writing,"

continued Major Pendennis, "I dare say you could give me one."

"No, no, that would be too bad," Foker replied. "Perhaps I oughtn't to

have said as much as I have. Miss F.'s writin' ain't so very bad, I dare

say; only she got Miss R. to write the first letter, and has gone on

ever since. But you mark my word, that till they are friends again the

letters will stop."

"I hope they will never be reconciled," the Major said with great

sincerity; "and I can't tell you how delighted I am to have had the good

fortune of making your acquaintance. You must feel, my dear sir, as a

man of the world, how fatal to my nephew's prospects in life is this

step which he contemplates, and how eager we all must be to free him

from this absurd engagement."

"He has come out uncommon strong," said Mr. Foker; "I have seen his

verses; Rouncy copied 'em. And I said to myself when I saw 'em, 'Catch

me writin' verses to a woman,--that's all.'"

"He has made a fool of himself, as many a good fellow has before him.

How can we make him see his folly, and cure it? I am sure you will give

us what aid you can in extricating a generous young man from such a pair

of schemers as this father and daughter seem to be. Love on the lady's

side is out of the question."

"Love, indeed!" Foker said. "If Pen hadn't two thousand a year when he

came of age----"

"If Pen hadn't what?" cried out the Major in astonishment.

"Two thousand a year: hasn't he got two thousand a year?--the General

says he has."

"My dear friend," shrieked out the Major, with an eagerness which

this gentleman rarely showed, "thank you!--thank you!--I begin to see

now.--Two thousand a year! Why, his mother has but five hundred a year

in the world.--She is likely to live to eighty, and Arthur has not a

shilling but what she can allow him."

"What! he ain't rich then?" Foker asked.

"Upon my honour he has no more than what I say."

"And you ain't going to leave him anything?"

The Major had sunk every shilling he could scrape together on an

annuity, and of course was going to leave Pen nothing; but he did not

tell Foker this. "How much do you think a Major on half-pay can save?"

he asked. "If these people have been looking at him as a fortune, they

are utterly mistaken-and-and you have made me the happiest man in the

world."

"Sir to you," said Mr. Foker, politely, and when they parted for

the night they shook hands with the greatest cordiality; the younger

gentleman promising the elder not to leave Chatteris without a further

conversation in the morning. And as the Major went up to his room, and

Mr. Foker smoked his cigar against the door pillars of the George, Pen,

very likely, ten miles off; was lying in bed kissing the letter from his

Emily.

The next morning, before Mr. Foker drove off in his drag, the

insinuating Major had actually got a letter of Miss Rouncy's in his own

pocket-book. Let it be a lesson to women how they write. And in very

high spirits Major Pendennis went to call upon Doctor Portman at the

Deanery, and told him what happy discoveries he had made on the previous

night. As they sate in confidential conversation in the Dean's oak

breakfast-parlour they could look across the lawn and see Captain

Costigan's window, at which poor Pen had been only too visible some

three weeks since. The Doctor was most indignant against Mrs. Creed,

the landlady, for her duplicity, in concealing Sir Derby Oaks's constant

visits to her lodgers, and threatened to excommunicate her out of the

Cathedral. But the wary Major thought that all things were for the best;

and, having taken counsel with himself over night, felt himself quite

strong enough to go and face Captain Costigan.

"I'm going to fight the dragon," he said, with a laugh, to Doctor

Portman.

"And I shrive you, sir, and bid good fortune go with you," answered the

Doctor. Perhaps he and Mrs. Portman and Miss Myra, as they sate with

their friend, the Dean's lady, in her drawing-room, looked up more than

once at the enemy's window to see if they could perceive any signs of

the combat.

The Major walked round, according to the directions given him, and soon

found Mrs. Creed's little door. He passed it, and as he ascended to

Captain Costigan's apartment, he could hear a stamping of feet, and a

great shouting of "Ha, ha!" within.

"It's Sir Derby Oaks taking his fencing lesson," said the child, who

piloted Major Pendennis. "He takes it Mondays, Wednesdays, and Fridays."

The Major knocked, and at length a tall gentleman came forth, with a

foil and mask in one hand, and a fencing glove on the other.

Pendennis made him a deferential bow. "I believe I have the honour of

speaking to Captain Costigan--My name is Major Pendennis."

The Captain brought his weapon up to the salute, and said, "Major, the

honer is moine; I'm deloighted to see ye."

CHAPTER XI. Negotiation

The Major and Captain Costigan were old soldiers and accustomed to face

the enemy, so we may presume that they retained their presence of mind

perfectly; but the rest of the party assembled in Cos's sitting-room

were, perhaps, a little flurried at Pendennis's apparition. Miss

Fotheringay's slow heart began to beat no doubt, for her cheek flushed

up with a great healthy blush, as Lieutenant Sir Derby Oaks looked at

her with a scowl. The little crooked old man in the window-seat, who

had been witnessing the fencing-match between the two gentlemen (whose

stamping and jumping had been such as to cause him to give up all

attempts to continue writing the theatre music, in the copying of which

he had been engaged) looked up eagerly towards the new-comer as the

Major of the well-blacked boots entered the apartment distributing the

most graceful bows to everybody present.

"Me daughter--me friend, Mr. Bows--me gallant young pupil and friend,

I may call 'um, Sir Derby Oaks," said Costigan, splendidly waving his

hand, and pointing each of these individuals to the Major's attention.

"In one moment, Meejor, I'm your humble servant," and to dash into the

little adjoining chamber where he slept, to give a twist to his lank

hair with his hair-brush (a wonderful and ancient piece), to tear off

his old stock and put on a new one which Emily had constructed for him,

and to assume a handsome clean collar, and the new coat which had been

ordered upon the occasion of Miss Fotheringay's benefit, was with the

still active Costigan the work of a minute.

After him Sir Derby entered, and presently emerged from the same

apartment, where he also cased himself in his little shell-jacket, which

fitted tightly upon the young officer's big person; and which he, and

Miss Fotheringay, and poor Pen too, perhaps, admired prodigiously.

Meanwhile conversation was engaged between the actress and the

new-comer; and the usual remarks about the weather had been interchanged

before Costigan re-entered in his new 'Shoot,' as he called it.

"I needn't apologoise to ye, Meejor," he said, in his richest and most

courteous manner, "for receiving ye in me shirt-sleeves."

"An old soldier can't be better employed than in teaching a young one

the use of his sword," answered the Major, gallantly. "I remember in old

times hearing that you could use yours pretty well, Captain Costigan."

"What, ye've heard of Jack Costigan, Major," said the other, greatly.

The Major had, indeed; he had pumped his nephew concerning his new

friend, the Irish officer; and whether he had no other knowledge of the

Captain than what he had thus gained, or whether he actually remembered

him, we cannot say. But Major Pendennis was a person of honour and

undoubted veracity, and said that he perfectly well recollected meeting

Mr. Costigan, and hearing him sing at Sir Richard Strachan's table at

Walcheren.

At this information, and the bland and cordial manner in which it was

conveyed, Bows looked up, entirely puzzled. "But we will talk of these

matters another time," the Major continued, perhaps not wishing to

commit himself; "it is to Miss Fotheringay that I came to pay my

respects to-day;" and he performed another bow for her, so courtly and

gracious, that if she had been a duchess he could not have made it more

handsome.

"I had heard of your performances from my nephew, madam," the Major

said, "who raves about you, as I believe you know pretty well. But

Arthur is but a boy, and a wild enthusiastic young fellow, whose

opinions one must not take au pied de la lettre; and I confess I was

anxious to judge for myself. Permit me to say your performance delighted

and astonished me. I have seen our best actresses, and, on my word, I

think you surpass them all. You are as majestic as Mrs. Siddons."

"Faith, I always said so," Costigan said, winking at his daughter;

"Major, take a chair." Milly rose at this hint, took an uuripped satin

garment off the only vacant seat, and brought the latter to Major

Pendennis with one of her finest curtseys.

"You are as pathetic as Miss O'Neill," he continued, bowing and seating

himself; "your snatches of song reminded me of Mrs. Jordan in her best

time, when we were young men, Captain Costigan; and your manner reminded

me of Mars. Did you ever see the Mars, Miss Fotheringay?"

"There was two Mahers in Crow Street," remarked Miss Emily; "Fanny was

well enough, but Biddy was no great things."

"Sure, the Major means the god of war, Milly, my dear," interposed the

parent.

"It is not that Mars I meant, though Venus, I suppose, may be pardoned

for thinking about him," the Major replied with a smile directed in full

to Sir Derby Oaks, who now re-entered in his shell-jacket; but the

lady did not understand the words of which he made use, nor did the

compliment at all pacify Sir Derby, who, probably, did not understand it

either, and at any rate received it with great sulkiness and stiffness,

scowling uneasily at Miss Fotheringay, with an expression which seemed

to ask what the deuce does this man here?

Major Pendennis was not in the least annoyed by the gentleman's

ill-humour. On the contrary, it delighted him. "So," thought he, "a

rival is in the field;" and he offered up vows that Sir Derby might be,

not only a rival, but a winner too, in this love-match in which he and

Pen were engaged.

"I fear I interrupted your fencing lesson; but my stay in Chatteris

is very short, and I was anxious to make myself known to my old

fellow-campaigner Captain Costigan, and to see a lady nearer who had

charmed me so much from the stage. I was not the only man epris last

night, Miss Fotheringay (if I must call you so, though your own family

name is a very ancient and noble one). There was a reverend friend of

mine, who went home in raptures with Ophelia; and I saw Sir Derby Oaks

fling a bouquet which no actress ever merited better. I should have

brought one myself, had I known what I was going to see. Are not those

the very flowers in a glass of water on the mantelpiece yonder?"

"I am very fond of flowers," said Miss Fotheringay, with a languishing

ogle at Sir Derby Oaks--but the Baronet still scowled sulkily.

"Sweets to the sweet--isn't that the expression of the play?" Mr.

Pendennis asked, bent upon being good-humoured.

"'Pon my life, I don't know. Very likely it is. I ain't much of a

literary man," answered Sir Derby.

"Is it possible?" the Major continued, with an air of surprise. You

don't inherit your father's love of letters, then, Sir Derby? He was a

remarkably fine scholar, and I had the honour of knowing him very well."

"Indeed," said the other, and gave a sulky wag of his head.

"He saved my life," continued Pendennis.

"Did he now?" cried Miss Fotheringay, rolling her eyes first upon the

Major with surprise, then towards Sir Derby with gratitude--but the

latter was proof against those glances: and far from appearing to

be pleased that the Apothecary, his father, should have saved Major

Pendennis's life, the young man actually looked as if he wished the

event had turned the other way.

"My father, I believe, was a very good doctor," the young gentleman said

by way of reply. "I'm not in that line myself. I wish you good morning,

sir. I've got an appointment--Cos, bye-bye--Miss Fotheringay, good

morning." And, in spite of the young lady's imploring looks and

appealing smiles, the Dragoon bowed stiffly out of the room, and the

clatter of his sabre was heard as he strode down the creaking stair;

and the angry tones of his voice as he cursed little Tom Creed, who was

disporting in the passage, and whose peg-top Sir Derby kicked away with

an oath into the street.

The Major did not smile in the least, though he had every reason to be

amused. "Monstrous handsome young man that--as fine a looking soldier as

ever I saw," he said to Costigan.

"A credit to the army and to human nature in general," answered

Costigan. "A young man of refoined manners, polite affabilitee, and

princely fortune. His table is sumptuous: he's adawr'd in the regiment:

and he rides sixteen stone."

"A perfect champion," said the Major, laughing. "I have no doubt all the

ladies admire him."

"He's very well, in spite of his weight, now he's young," said Milly;

"but he's no conversation."

"He's best on horseback," Mr. Bows said; on which Milly replied,

that the Baronet had ridden third in the steeple-chase on his horse

Tareaways, and the Major began to comprehend that the young lady herself

was not of a particular genius, and to wonder how she should be so

stupid and act so well.

Costigan, with Irish hospitality, of course pressed refreshment upon his

guest: and the Major, who was no more hungry than you are after a Lord

Mayor's dinner, declared that he should like a biscuit and a glass of

wine above all things, as he felt quite faint from long fasting--but he

knew that to receive small kindnesses flatters the donors very much, and

that people must needs grow well disposed towards you as they give you

their hospitality.

"Some of the old Madara, Milly, love," Costigan said, winking to his

child--and that lady, turning to her father a glance of intelligence,

went out of the room, and down the stair, where she softly summoned her

little emissary Master Tommy Creed: and giving him a piece of money,

ordered him to go buy a pint of Madara wine at the Grapes, and

sixpennyworth of sorted biscuits at the baker's, and to return in a

hurry, when he might have two biscuits for himself.

Whilst Tommy Creed was gone on this errand, Miss Costigan sate below

with Mrs. Creed, telling her landlady how Mr. Arthur Pendennis's uncle,

the Major, was above-stairs; a nice, soft-spoken old gentleman; that

butter wouldn't melt in his mouth: and how Sir Derby had gone out of

the room in a rage of jealousy, and thinking what must be done to pacify

both of them.

"She keeps the keys of the cellar, Major," said Mr. Costigan, as the

girl left the room.

"Upon my word you have a very beautiful butler," answered Pendennis,

gallantly, "and I don't wonder at the young fellows raving about her.

When we were of their age, Captain Costigan, I think plainer women would

have done our business."

"Faith, and ye may say that, sir--and lucky is the man who gets her.

Ask me friend Bob Bows here whether Miss Fotheringay's moind is not even

shuparior to her person, and whether she does not possess a cultiveated

intellect, a refoined understanding, and an emiable disposition?"

"O of course," said Mr. Bows, rather drily. "Here comes Hebe blushing

from the cellar. Don't you think it is time to go to rehearsal, Miss

Hebe? You will be fined if you are later"--and he gave the young lady a

look, which intimated that they had much better leave the room and the

two elders together.

At this order Miss Hebe took up her bonnet and shawl, looking uncommonly

pretty, good-humoured, and smiling: and Bows gathered up his roll of

papers, and hobbled across the room for his hat and cane.

"Must you go?" said the Major. "Can't you give us a few minutes more,

Miss Fotheringay? Before you leave us, permit an old fellow to shake

you by the hand, and believe that I am proud to have had the honour

of making your acquaintance, and am most sincerely anxious to be your

friend."

Miss Fotheringay made a low curtsey at the conclusion of this gallant

speech, and the Major followed her retreating steps to the door, where

he squeezed her hand with the kindest and most paternal pressure. Bows

was puzzled with this exhibition of cordiality: "The lad's relatives

can't be really wanting to marry him to her," he thought--and so they

departed.

"Now for it," thought Major Pendennis; and as for Mr. Costigan he

profited instantaneously by his daughter's absence to drink up the rest

of the wine; and tossed off one bumper after another of the Madeira from

the Grapes, with an eager shaking hand. The Major came up to the table,

and took up his glass and drained it with a jovial smack. If it had been

Lord Steyne's particular, and not public-house Cape, he could not have

appeared to relish it more.

"Capital Madeira, Captain Costigan," he said. "Where do you get it? I

drink the health of that charming creature in a bumper. Faith, Captain,

I don't wonder that the men are wild about her. I never saw such eyes in

my life, or such a grand manner. I am sure she is as intellectual as she

is beautiful; and I have no doubt she's as good as she is clever."

"A good girl, sir,--a good girl, sir," said the delighted father; "and

I pledge a toast to her with all my heart. Shall I send to the--to the

cellar for another pint? It's handy by. No? Well, indeed sir, ye may say

she is a good girl, and the pride and glory of her father--honest old

Jack Costigan. The man who gets her will have a jew'l to a wife, sir;

and I drink his health, sir, and ye know who I mean, Major."

"I am not surprised at young or old falling in love with her," said the

Major, "and frankly must tell you, that though I was very angry with my

poor nephew Arthur, when I heard of the boy's passion--now I have seen

the lady I can pardon him any extent of it. By George, I should like to

enter for the race myself, if I weren't an old fellow and a poor one."

"And no better man, Major, I'm sure," cried Jack enraptured.

"Your friendship, sir, delights me. Your admiration for my girl brings

tears to me eyes--tears, sir--manlee tears--and when she leaves me

humble home for your own more splendid mansion, I hope she'll keep a

place for her poor old father, poor old Jack Costigan."--The Captain

suited the action to the word, and his bloodshot eyes were suffused with

water, as he addressed the Major.

"Your sentiments do you honour," the other said. "But, Captain Costigan,

I can't help smiling at one thing you have just said."

"And what's that, sir?" asked Jack, who was at a too heroic and

sentimental pitch to descend from it. You were speaking about our

splendid mansion--my sister's house, I mean.

"I mane the park and mansion of Arthur Pendennis, Esquire, of Fairoaks

Park, whom I hope to see a Mimber of Parliament for his native town of

Clavering, when he is of ege to take that responsible stetion," cried

the Captain with much dignity.

The Major smiled as he recognised a shaft of his own bow. It was he who

had set Pen upon the idea of sitting in Parliament for the neighbouring

borough--and the poor lad had evidently been bragging on the subject to

Costigan and the lady of his affections. "Fairoaks Park, my dear sir,"

he said. "Do you know our history? We are of excessively ancient family

certainly, but I began life with scarce enough money to purchase my

commission, and my eldest brother was a country apothecary: who made

every shilling he died possessed of out of his pestle and mortar."

"I have consented to waive that objection, sir," said Costigan

majestically, "in consideration of the known respectability of your

family."

"Curse your impudence," thought the Major; but he only smiled and bowed.

"The Costigans, too, have met with misfortunes; and our house of Castle

Costigan is by no manes what it was. I have known very honest men

apothecaries, sir, and there's some in Dublin that has had the honour of

dining at the Lord Leftenant's teeble."

"You are very kind to give us the benefit of your charity," the Major

continued: "but permit me to say that is not the question. You spoke

just now of my little nephew as heir of Fairoaks Park and I don't know

what besides."

"Funded property, I've no doubt, Meejor, and something handsome

eventually from yourself."

"My good sir, I tell you the boy is the son of a country apothecary,"

cried out Major Pendennis; "and that when he comes of age he won't have

a shilling."

"Pooh, Major, you're laughing at me," said Mr. Costigan, "me young

friend, I make no doubt, is heir to two thousand pounds a year."

"Two thousand fiddlesticks! I beg your pardon, my dear sir; but has the

boy been humbugging you?--it is not his habit. Upon my word and honour,

as a gentleman and an executor to my brother's will too, he left little

more than five hundred a year behind him."

"And with aconomy, a handsome sum of money too, sir," the Captain

answered. "Faith, I've known a man drink his clar't, and drive his

coach-and-four on five hundred a year and strict aconomy, in Ireland,

sir. We'll manage on it, sir--trust Jack Costigan for that."

"My dear Captain Costigan--I give you my word that my brother did not

leave a shilling to his son Arthur."

"Are ye joking with me, Meejor Pendennis?" cried Jack Costigan. "Are ye

thrifling with the feelings of a father and a gentleman?"

"I am telling you the honest truth," said Major Pendennis. "Every

shilling my brother had, he left to his widow: with a partial reversion,

it is true, to the boy. But she is a young woman, and may marry if he

offends her--or she may outlive him, for she comes of an uncommonly

long-lived family. And I ask you, as a gentleman and a man of the world,

what allowance can my sister, Mrs. Pendennis, make to her son out of

five hundred a year, which is all her fortune,--that shall enable him

to maintain himself and your daughter in the rank befitting such an

accomplished young lady?"

"Am I to understand, sir, that the young gentleman, your nephew, and

whom I have fosthered and cherished as the son of me bosom, is an

imposther who has been thrifling with the affections of me beloved

child?" exclaimed the General, with an outbreak of wrath.--"Have you

yourself been working upon the feelings of the young man's susceptible

nature to injuice him to break off an engagement, and with it me adored

Emily's heart? Have a care, sir, how you thrifle with the honour of John

Costigan. If I thought any mortal man meant to do so, be heavens I'd

have his blood, sir--were he old or young."

"Mr. Costigan!" cried out the Major.

"Mr. Costigan can protect his own and his daughter's honour, and will,

sir," said the other. "Look at that chest of dthrawers, it contains

heaps of letthers that that viper has addressed to that innocent child.

There's promises there, sir, enough to fill a bandbox with; and when I

have dragged the scoundthrel before the Courts of Law, and shown up his

perjury and his dishonour, I have another remedy in yondther mahogany

case, sir, which shall set me right, sir, with any individual--ye mark

me words, Major Pendennis--with any individual who has counselled your

nephew to insult a soldier and a gentleman. What? Me daughter to be

jilted, and me grey hairs dishonoured by an apothecary's son. By the

laws of Heaven, Sir, I should like to see the man that shall do it."

"I am to understand then that you threaten in the first place to publish

the letters of a boy of eighteen to a woman of eight-and-twenty: and

afterwards to do me the honour of calling me out," the Major said, still

with perfect coolness.

"You have described my intentions with perfect accuracy, Meejor

Pendennis," answered the Captain, as he pulled his ragged whiskers over

his chin.

"Well, well; these shall be the subjects of future arrangements, but

before we come to powder and ball, my good sir,--do have the kindness to

think with yourself in what earthly way I have injured you? I have told

you that my nephew is dependent upon his mother, who has scarcely more

than five hundred a year."

"I have my own opinion of the correctness of that assertion," said the

Captain.

"Will you go to my sister's lawyers, Messrs. Tatham here, and satisfy

yourself?"

"I decline to meet those gentlemen," said the Captain, with rather a

disturbed air. "If it be as you say, I have been athrociously deceived

by some one, and on that person I'll be revenged."

"Is it my nephew?" cried the Major, starting up and putting on his hat.

"Did he ever tell you that his property was two thousand a year? If he

did, I'm mistaken in the boy. To tell lies has not been a habit in our

family, Mr. Costigan, and I don't think my brother's son has learned

it as yet. Try and consider whether you have not deceived yourself; or

adopted extravagant reports from hearsay--As for me, sir, you are at

liberty to understand that I am not afraid of all the Costigans in

Ireland, and know quite well how to defend myself against any threats

from any quarter. I come here as the boy's guardian to protest against

a marriage, most absurd and unequal, that cannot but bring poverty and

misery with it: and in preventing it I conceive I am quite as much your

daughter's friend (who I have no doubt is an honourable young lady) as

the friend of my own family: and prevent the marriage I will, sir, by

every means in my power. There, I have said my say, sir."

"But I have not said mine, Major Pendennis--and ye shall hear more from

me," Mr. Costigan said, with a look of tremendous severity.

"'Sdeath, sir, what do you mean?" the Major asked, turning round on the

threshold of the door, and looking the intrepid Costigan in the face.

"Ye said, in the coorse of conversation, that ye were at the George

Hotel, I think," Mr. Costigan said in a stately manner. "A friend shall

wait upon ye there before ye leave town, sir."

"Let him make haste, Mr. Costigan," cried out the Major, almost beside

himself with rage. "I wish you a good morning, sir." And Captain

Costigan bowed a magnificent bow of defiance to Major Pendennis over the

landing-place as the latter retreated down the stairs.

CHAPTER XII. In which a Shooting Match is proposed

Early mention has been made in this history of Mr. Garbetts, Principal

Tragedian, a promising and athletic young actor, of jovial habits

and irregular inclinations, between whom and Mr. Costigan there was a

considerable intimacy. They were the chief ornaments of the convivial

club held at the Magpie Hotel; they helped each other in various bill

transactions in which they had been engaged, with the mutual loan of

each other's valuable signatures. They were friends, in fine: although

Mr. Garbetts seldom called at Costigan's house, being disliked by Miss

Fotheringay, of whom in her turn Mrs. Garbetts was considerably jealous.

The truth is, that Garbetts had paid his court to Miss Fotheringay

and been refused by her, before he offered his hand to Mrs. G. Their

history, however, forms no part of our present scheme--suffice it,

Mr. Garbetts was called in by Captain Costigan immediately after his

daughter and Mr. Bows had quitted the house, as a friend proper to be

consulted at the actual juncture. He was a large man, with a loud voice

and fierce aspect, who had the finest legs of the whole company, and

could break a poker in mere sport across his stalwart arm.

"Run, Tommy," said Mr. Costigan to the little messenger, "and fetch Mr.

Garbetts from his lodgings over the tripe shop, ye know, and tell 'em

to send two glasses of whisky-and-water, hot, from the Grapes." So Tommy

went his way; and presently Mr. Garbetts and the whisky came.

Captain Costigan did not disclose to him the whole of the previous

events, of which the reader is in possession; but, with the aid of the

spirits-and-water, he composed a letter of a threatening nature to Major

Pendennis's address, in which he called upon that gentleman to offer no

hindrance to the marriage projected between Mr. Arthur Pendennis and his

daughter, Miss Fotheringay, and to fix an early day for its celebration:

or, in any other case, to give him the satisfaction which was usual

between gentlemen of honour. And should Major Pendennis be disinclined

to this alternative, the Captain hinted, that he would force him to

accept by the use of a horsewhip, which he should employ upon the

Major's person. The precise terms of this letter we cannot give, for

reasons which shall be specified presently; but it was, no doubt,

couched in the Captain's finest style, and sealed elaborately with the

great silver seal of the Costigans--the only bit of the family plate

which the Captain possessed.

Garbetts was despatched then with this message and letter; and bidding

Heaven bless 'um the General squeezed his ambassador's hand, and saw him

depart. Then he took down his venerable and murderous duelling-pistols,

with flint locks, that had done the business of many a pretty fellow

in Dublin: and having examined these, and seen that they were in a

satisfactory condition, he brought from the drawer all Pen's letters and

poems which he kept there, and which he always read before he permitted

his Emily to enjoy their perusal.

In a score of minutes Garbetts came back with an anxious and crestfallen

countenance.

"Ye've seen 'um?" the Captain said.

"Why, yes," said Garbetts.

"And when is it for?" asked Costigan, trying the lock of one of the

ancient pistols, and bringing it to a level with his oi--as he called

that bloodshot orb.

"When is what for?" asked Mr. Garbetts.

"The meeting, my dear fellow?"

"You don't mean to say, you mean mortal combat, Captain," Garbetts said,

aghast.

"What the devil else do I mean, Garbetts?--I want to shoot that man that

has trajuiced me honor, or meself dthrop a victim on the sod."

"D---- if I carry challenges," Mr. Garbetts replied. "I'm a family

man, Captain, and will have nothing to do with pistols--take back your

letter;" and, to the surprise and indignation of Captain Costigan, his

emissary flung the letter down, with its great sprawling superscription

and blotched seal.

"Ye don't mean to say ye saw 'um and didn't give 'um the letter?" cried

out the Captain in a fury.

"I saw him, but I could not have speech with him, Captain," said Mr.

Garbetts.

"And why the devil not?" asked the other.

"There was one there I cared not to meet, nor would you," the tragedian

answered in a sepulchral voice. "The minion Tatham was there, Captain."

"The cowardly scoundthrel!" roared Costigan. "He's frightened, and

already going to swear the peace against me."

"I'll have nothing to do with the fighting, mark that," the tragedian

doggedly said, "and I wish I'd not seen Tatham neither, nor that bit

of----"

"Hold your tongue, Bob Acres. It's my belief ye're no better than a

coward," said Captain Costigan, quoting Sir Lucius O'Trigger, which

character he had performed with credit, both off and on the stage, and

after some more parley between the couple they separated in not very

good humour.

Their colloquy has been here condensed, as the reader knows the main

point upon which it turned. But the latter will now see how it is

impossible to give a correct account of the letter which the Captain

wrote to Major Pendennis, as it was never opened at all by that

gentleman.

When Miss Costigan came home from rehearsal, which she did in the

company of the faithful Mr. Bows, she found her father pacing up and

down their apartment in a great state of agitation, and in the midst of

a powerful odour of spirits-and-water, which, as it appeared, had not

succeeded in pacifying his disordered mind. The Pendennis papers were on

the table surrounding the empty goblets and now useless teaspoon which

had served to hold and mix the Captain's liquor and his friend's.

As Emily entered he seized her in his arms, and cried out, "Prepare

yourself, me child, me blessed child," in a voice of agony, and with

eyes brimful of tears.

"Ye're tipsy again, Papa," Miss Fotheringay said, pushing back her sire.

"Ye promised me ye wouldn't take spirits before dinner."

"It's to forget me sorrows, me poor girl, that I've taken just a drop,"

cried the bereaved father--"it's to drown me care that I drain the

bowl."

"Your care takes a deal of drowning, Captain dear," said Bows, mimicking

his friend's accent; "what has happened? Has that soft-spoken gentleman

in the wig been vexing you?"

"The oily miscreant! I'll have his blood!" roared Cos. Miss Milly,

it must be premised, had fled to her room out of his embrace, and was

taking off her bonnet and shawl there.

"I thought he meant mischief. He was so uncommon civil," the other said.

"What has he come to say?"

"O Bows! He has overwhellum'd me," the Captain said. "There's a hellish

conspiracy on foot against me poor girl; and it's me opinion that

both them Pendennises, nephew and uncle, is two infernal thrators and

scoundthrels, who should be conshumed from off the face of the earth."

"What is it? What has happened?" said Mr. Bows, growing rather excited.

Costigan then told him the Major's statement that the young Pendennis

had not two thousand, nor two hundred pounds a year; and expressed his

fury that he should have permitted such an impostor to coax and wheedle

his innocent girl, and that he should have nourished such a viper in his

own personal bosom. "I have shaken the reptile from me, however," said

Costigan; "and as for his uncle, I'll have such a revenge on that old

man, as shall make 'um rue the day he ever insulted a Costigan."

"What do you mean, General?" said Bows.

"I mean to have his life, Bows--his villanous, skulking life, my boy;"

and he rapped upon the battered old pistol-case in an ominous and savage

manner. Bows had often heard him appeal to that box of death, with which

he proposed to sacrifice his enemies; but the Captain did not tell him

that he had actually written and sent a challenge to Major Pendennis,

and Mr. Bows therefore rather disregarded the pistols in the present

instance.

At this juncture Miss Fotheringay returned to the common sitting-room

from her private apartment, looking perfectly healthy, happy, and

unconcerned, a striking and wholesome contrast to her father, who was in

a delirious tremor of grief, anger, and other agitation. She brought in

a pair of ex-white satin shoes with her, which she proposed to rub as

clean as might be with bread-crumb: intending to go mad with them upon

next Tuesday evening in Ophelia, in which character she was to reappear

on that night.

She looked at the papers on the table; stopped as if she was going to

ask a question, but thought better of it, and going to the cupboard,

selected an eligible piece of bread wherewith she might operate on the

satin slippers: and afterwards coming back to the table, seated herself

there commodiously with the shoes, and then asked her father, in her

honest, Irish brogue, "What have ye got them letthers, and pothry, and

stuff, of Master Arthur's out for, Pa? Sure ye don't want to be reading

over that nonsense."

"O Emilee!" cried the Captain, "that boy whom I loved as the boy of

mee bosom is only a scoundthrel, and a deceiver, mee poor girl:" and he

looked in the most tragical way at Mr. Bows, opposite; who, in his turn,

gazed somewhat anxiously at Miss Costigan.

"He! pooh! Sure the poor lad's as simple as a schoolboy," she said. "All

them children write verses and nonsense."

"He's been acting the part of a viper to this fireside, and a traitor

in this familee," cried the Captain. "I tell ye he's no better than an

impostor."

"What has the poor fellow done, Papa?" asked Emily.

"Done? He has deceived us in the most athrocious manner," Miss Emily's

papa said. "He has thrifled with your affections, and outraged my own

fine feelings. He has represented himself as a man of property, and it

turruns out that he is no betther than a beggar. Haven't I often told ye

he had two thousand a year? He's a pauper, I tell ye, Miss Costigan; a

depindent upon the bountee of his mother; a good woman, who may marry

again, who's likely to live for ever, and who has but five hundred a

year. How dar he ask ye to marry into a family which has not the means

of providing for ye? Ye've been grossly deceived and put upon, Milly,

and it's my belief his old ruffian of an uncle in a wig is in the plot

against us."

"That soft old gentleman? What has he been doing, Papa?" continued

Emily, still imperturbable.

Costigan informed Milly, that when she was gone, Major Pendennis told

him in his double-faced Pall Mall polite manner, that young Arthur had

no fortune at all, that the Major had asked him (Costigan) to go to the

lawyers ("wherein he knew the scoundthrels have a bill of mine, and I

can't meet them," the Captain parenthetically remarked), and see the

lad's father's will and finally, that an infernal swindle had been

practised upon him by the pair, and that he was resolved either on a

marriage, or on the blood of both of them.

Milly looked very grave and thoughtful, rubbing the white satin shoes.

"Sure, if he's no money, there's no use marrying him, Papa," she said

sententiously.

"Why did the villain say he was a man of prawpertee?" asked Costigan.

"The poor fellow always said he was poor," answered the girl. "'Twas you

would have it he was rich, Papa--and made me agree to take him."

"He should have been explicit and told us his income, Milly," answered

the father. "A young fellow who rides a blood mare, and makes presents

of shawls and bracelets, is an impostor if he has no money;--and as for

his uncle, bedad I'll pull off his wig whenever I see 'um. Bows, here,

shall take a message to him and tell him so. Either it's a marriage, or

he meets me in the field like a man, or I tweak 'um on the nose in front

of his hotel or in the gravel walks of Fairoaks Park before all the

county, bedad."

"Bedad, you may send somebody else with the message," said Bows,

laughing. "I'm a fiddler, not a fighting man, Captain."

"Pooh, you've no spirit, sir," roared the General. "I'll be my own

second, if no one will stand by and see me injured. And I'll take my

case of pistols and shoot 'um in the Coffee-room of the George."

"And so poor Arthur has no money?" sighed out Miss Costigan, rather

plaintively. "Poor lad, he was a good lad too: wild and talking

nonsense, with his verses and pothry and that, but a brave, generous

boy, and indeed I liked him--and he liked me too," she added, rather

softly, and rubbing away at the shoe.

"Why don't you marry him if you like him so?" Mr. Bows said, rather

savagely. "He is not more than ten years younger than you are. His

mother may relent, and you might go and live and have enough at Fairoaks

Park. Why not go and be a lady? I could go on with the fiddle, and the

General live on his half-pay. Why don't you marry him? You know he likes

you."

"There's others that likes me as well, Bows, that has no money and

that's old enough," Miss Milly said sententiously.

"Yes, d---- it," said Bows, with a bitter curse--"that are old enough

and poor enough and fools enough for anything."

"There's old fools, and young fools too. You've often said so you silly

man," the imperious beauty said, with a conscious glance at the old

gentleman. "If Pendennis has not enough money to live upon, it's folly

to talk about marrying him: and that's the long and short of it."

"And the boy?" said Mr. Bows. "By Jove! you throw a man away like an old

glove, Miss Costigan."

"I don't know what you mean, Bows," said Miss Fotheringay, placidly,

rubbing the second shoe. "If he had had half of the two thousand a year

that Papa gave him, or the half of that, I would marry him. But what is

the good of taking on with a beggar? We're poor enough already. There's

no use in my going to live with an old lady that's testy and cross,

maybe, and would grudge me every morsel of meat." (Sure, it's near

dinner time, and Suky not laid the cloth yet.) "And then," added Miss

Costigan quite simply, "suppose there was a family?--why, Papa, we

shouldn't be as well off as we are now."

"'Deed, then, you would not, Milly dear," answered the father.

"And there's an end to all the fine talk about Mrs. Arthur Pendennis

of Fairoaks Park--the member of Parliament's lady," said Milly, with a

laugh. "Pretty carriages and horses we should have to ride!--that you

were always talking about, Papa! But it's always the same. If a man

looked at me, you fancied he was going to marry me; and if he had a good

coat, you fancied he was as rich as Crazes."

"--As Croesus," said Mr. Bows.

"Well, call 'um what ye like. But it's a fact now that Papa has married

me these eight years a score of times. Wasn't I to be my Lady Poldoody

of Oystherstown Castle? Then there was the Navy Captain at Portsmouth,

and the old surgeon at Norwich, and the Methodist preacher here last

year, and who knows how many more? Well, I bet a penny, with all your

scheming, I shall die Milly Costigan at last. So poor little Arthur

has no money? Stop and take dinner, Bows; we've a beautiful beef-steak

pudding."

"I wonder whether she is on with Sir Derby Oaks," thought Bows, whose

eyes and thoughts were always watching her. "The dodges of women beat

all comprehension; and I am sure she wouldn't let the lad off so easily,

if she had not some other scheme on hand."

It will have been perceived that Miss Fotheringay, though silent in

general, and by no means brilliant as a conversationist, where poetry,

literature, or the fine arts were concerned, could talk freely, and with

good sense, too, in her own family circle. She cannot justly be called

a romantic person: nor were her literary acquirement great: she never

opened a Shakspeare from the day she left the stage, nor, indeed,

understood it during all the time she adorned the boards: but about a

pudding, a piece of needle-work, or her own domestic affairs, she was

as good a judge as could be found; and not being misled by a strong

imagination or a passionate temper, was better enabled to keep her

judgment cool. When, over their dinner, Costigan tried to convince

himself and the company, that the Major's statement regarding

Pen's finances was unworthy of credit, and a mere ruse upon the old

hypocrite's part so as to induce them, on their side, to break off the

match, Miss Milly would not, for a moment, admit the possibility of

deceit on the side of the adversary: and pointed out clearly that it

was her father who had deceived himself, and not poor little Pen who

had tried to take them in. As for that poor lad, she said she pitied

him with all her heart. And she ate an exceedingly good dinner; to the

admiration of Mr. Bows, who had a remarkable regard and contempt for

this woman, during and after which repast, the party devised upon the

best means of bringing this love-matter to a close. As for Costigan,

his idea of tweaking the Major's nose vanished with his supply of

after-dinner whisky-and-water; and he was submissive to his daughter,

and ready for any plan on which she might decide, in order to meet the

crisis which she saw was at hand.

The Captain, who, as long as he had a notion that he was wronged, was

eager to face and demolish both Pen and his uncle, perhaps shrank from

the idea of meeting the former, and asked "what the juice they were to

say to the lad if he remained steady to his engagement, and they broke

from theirs?" "What? don't you know how to throw a man over?" said Bows;

"ask a woman to tell you?" and Miss Fotheringay showed how this feat was

to be done simply enough--nothing was more easy. "Papa writes to Arthur

to know what settlements he proposes to make in event of a marriage; and

asks what his means are. Arthur writes back and says what he's got, and

you'll find it's as the Major says, I'll go bail. Then papa writes, and

says it's not enough, and the match had best be at an end."

"And, of course, you enclose a parting line, in which you say you

will always regard him as a brother," said Mr. Bows, eyeing her in his

scornful way.

"Of course, and so I shall," answered Miss Fotheringay. "He's a most

worthy young man, I'm sure. I'll thank ye hand me the salt. Them

filberts is beautiful."

"And there will be no noses pulled, Cos, my boy? I'm sorry you're

baulked," said Mr. Bows.

"Dad, I suppose not," said Cos, rubbing his own.--"What'll ye do about

them letters, and verses, and pomes, Milly, darling?--Ye must send 'em

back."

"Wigsby would give a hundred pound for 'em," Bows said, with a sneer.

"'Deed, then, he would," said Captain Costigan, who was easily led.

"Papa!" said Miss Milly.--"Ye wouldn't be for not sending the poor boy

his letters back? Them letters and pomes is mine. They were very long,

and full of all sorts of nonsense, and Latin, and things I couldn't

understand the half of; indeed I've not read 'em all; but we'll send

'em back to him when the proper time comes." And going to a drawer,

Miss Fotheringay took out from it a number of the County Chronicle and

Chatteris Champion, in which Pen had written a copy of flaming verses

celebrating her appearance in the character of Imogen, and putting

by the leaf upon which the poem appeared (for, like ladies of

her profession, she kept the favourable printed notices of her

performances), she wrapped up Pen's letters, poems, passions, and

fancies, and tied them with a piece of string neatly, as she would a

parcel of sugar.

Nor was she in the least moved while performing this act. What hours the

boy had passed over those papers! What love and longing: what generous

faith and manly devotion--what watchful nights and lonely fevers might

they tell of! She tied them up like so much grocery, and sate down and

made tea afterwards with a perfectly placid and contented heart: while

Pen was yearning after her ten miles off: and hugging her image to his

soul.

CHAPTER XIII. A Crisis

Meanwhile they were wondering at Fairoaks that the Major had not

returned. Dr. Portman and his lady, on their way home to Clavering,

stopped at Helen's lodge-gate, with a brief note for her from Major

Pendennis, in which he said he should remain at Chatteris another day,

being anxious to have some talk with Messrs. Tatham, the lawyers, whom

he would meet that afternoon; but no mention was made of the transaction

in which the writer had been engaged during the morning. Indeed the note

was written at the pause after the first part of the engagement, and

when the Major had decidedly had the worst of the battle.

Pen did not care somehow to go into the town whilst his uncle was there.

He did not like to have to fancy that his guardian might be spying at

him from that abominable Dean's grass-plat, whilst he was making love

in Miss Costigan's drawing-room; and the pleasures of a walk (a delight

which he was very rarely permitted to enjoy) would have been spoiled if

he had met the man of the polished boots on that occasion. His modest

love could not show in public by any outward signs, except the eyes

(with which the poor fellow ogled and gazed violently to be sure), but

it was dumb in the presence of third parties; and so much the better,

for of all the talk which takes place in this world, that of love-makers

is surely, to the uninitiated, the most silly. It is the vocabulary

without the key; it is the lamp without the flame. Let the respected

reader look or think over some old love-letters that he (or she) has had

and forgotten, and try them over again. How blank and meaningless

they seem! What glamour of infatuation was it which made that nonsense

beautiful? One wonders that such puling and trash could ever have made

one happy. And yet there were dates when you kissed those silly letters

with rapture--lived upon six absurd lines for a week, and until the

reactionary period came, when you were restless and miserable until you

got a fresh supply of folly.

That is why we decline to publish any of the letters and verses which

Mr. Pen wrote at this period of his life, out of mere regard for the

young fellow's character. They are too spooney and wild. Young ladies

ought not to be called upon to read them in cold blood. Bide your time,

young women; perhaps you will get and write them on your own account

soon. Meanwhile we will respect Mr. Pen's first outpourings, and keep

them tied up in the newspapers with Miss Fotheringay's string, and

sealed with Captain Costigan's great silver seal.

The Major came away from his interview with Captain Costigan in a state

of such concentrated fury as rendered him terrible to approach! "The

impudent bog-trotting scamp," he thought, "dare to threaten me! Dare to

talk of permitting his damned Costigans to marry with the Pendennises!

Send me a challenge! If the fellow can get anything in the shape of a

gentleman to carry it, I have the greatest mind in life not to baulk

him.--Psha! what would people say if I were to go out with a tipsy

mountebank, about a row with an actress in a barn!" So when the Major

saw Dr. Portman, who asked anxiously regarding the issue of his battle

with the dragon, Mr. Pendennis did not care to inform the divine of the

General's insolent behaviour, but stated that the affair was a very ugly

and disagreeable one, and that it was by no means over yet.

He enjoined Doctor and Mrs. Portman to say nothing about the business at

Fairoaks; whither he contented himself with despatching the note we have

before mentioned. And then he returned to his hotel, where he vented

his wrath upon Mr. Morgan his valet, "dammin and cussin upstairs and

downstairs," as that gentleman observed to Mr. Foker's man, in whose

company he partook of dinner in the servants' room of the George.

The servant carried the news to his master; and Mr. Foker having

finished his breakfast about this time, it being two o'clock in the

afternoon, remembered that he was anxious to know the result of the

interview between his two friends, and having inquired the number of

the Major's sitting-room, went over in his brocade dressing-gown, and

knocked for admission.

Major Pendennis had some business, as he had stated, respecting a

lease of the widow's, about which he was desirous of consulting old Mr.

Tatham, the lawyer, who had been his brother's man of business, and who

had a branch-office at Clavering, where he and his son attended market

and other days three or four in the week. This gentleman and his client

were now in consultation when Mr. Foker showed his grand dressing-gown

and embroidered skull-cap at Major Pendennis's door.

Seeing the Major engaged with papers and red-tape, and an old man with a

white head, the modest youth was for drawing back--and said, "O, you're

busy--call again another time." But Mr. Pendennis wanted to see him,

and begged him, with a smile, to enter: whereupon Mr. Foker took off

the embroidered tarboosh or fez (it had been worked by the fondest

of mothers) and advanced, bowing to the gentlemen and smiling on them

graciously. Mr. Tatham had never seen so splendid an apparition before

as this brocaded youth, who seated himself in an arm-chair, spreading

out his crimson skirts, and looking with exceeding kindness and

frankness on the other two tenants of the room. "You seem to like my

dressing-gown, sir," he said to Mr. Tatham. "A pretty thing, isn't it?

Neat, but not in the least gaudy. And how do you do, Major Pendennis,

sir, and how does the world treat you?"

There was that in Foker's manner and appearance which would have put

an Inquisitor into good humour, and it smoothed the wrinkles under

Pendennis's head of hair.

"I have had an interview with that Irishman (you may speak before my

friend, Mr. Tatham here, who knows all the affairs of the family), and

it has not, I own, been very satisfactory. He won't believe that my

nephew is poor: he says we are both liars: he did me the honour to hint

that I was a coward, as I took leave. And I thought when you knocked at

the door, that you might be the gentleman whom I expect with a challenge

from Mr. Costigan--that is how the world treats me, Mr. Foker."

"You don't mean that Irishman, the actress's father?" cried Mr. Tatham,

who was a dissenter himself, and did not patronise the drama.

"That Irishman, the actress's father--the very man. Have not you heard

what a fool my nephew has made of himself about the girl?"--Mr. Tatham,

who never entered the walls of a theatre, had heard nothing: and Major

Pendennis had to recount the story of his nephew's loves to the lawyer,

Mr. Foker coming in with appropriate comments in his usual familiar

language.

Tatham was lost in wonder at the narrative. Why had not Mrs. Pendennis

married a serious man, he thought--Mr. Tatham was a widower--and kept

this unfortunate boy from perdition? As for Mr. Costigan's daughter, he

would say nothing: her profession was sufficient to characterise her.

Mr. Foker here interposed to say he had known some uncommon good people

in the booths, as he called the Temple of the Muses. Well, it might be

so, Mr. Tatham hoped so--but the father, Tatham knew personally--a

man of the worst character, a wine-bibber and an idler in taverns and

billiard-rooms, and a notorious insolvent. "I can understand the

reason, Major," he said, "why the fellow would not come to my office

to ascertain the truth of the statements which you made him.--We have

a writ out against him and another disreputable fellow, one of the

play-actors, for a bill given to Mr. Skinner of this city, a most

respectable Grocer and Wine and Spirit Merchant, and a Member of the

Society of Friends. This Costigan came crying to Mr. Skinner,--crying in

the shop, sir,--and we have not proceeded against him or the other, as

neither were worth powder and shot."

It was whilst Mr. Tatham was engaged in telling this story that a third

knock came to the door, and there entered an athletic gentleman in a

shabby braided frock, bearing in his hand a letter with a large blotched

red seal.

"Can I have the honour of speaking with Major Pendennis in private?"

he began--"I have a few words for your ear, sir. I am the bearer of a

mission from my friend Captain Costigan,"--but here the man with the

bass voice paused, faltered, and turned pale--he caught sight of the red

and well-remembered face of Mr. Tatham.

"Hullo, Garbetts, speak up!" cried Mr. Foker, delighted.

"Why, bless my soul, it is the other party to the bill!" said Mr.

Tatham. "I say, sir; stop I say." But Garbetts, with a face as blank as

Macbeth's when Banquo's ghost appears upon him, gasped some inarticulate

words, and fled out of the room.

The Major's gravity was also entirely upset, and he burst out laughing.

So did Mr. Foker, who said, "By Jove, it was a good 'un." So did the

attorney, although by profession a serious man.

"I don't think there'll be any fight, Major," young Foker said; and

began mimicking the tragedian. "If there is, the old gentleman--your

name Tatham?--very happy to make your acquaintance, Mr. Tatham--may send

the bailiffs to separate the men;" and Mr. Tatham promised to do so. The

Major was by no means sorry at the ludicrous issue of the quarrel. "It

seems to me, sir," he said to Mr. Foker, "that you always arrive to put

me into good-humour."

Nor was this the only occasion on which Mr. Foker this day was destined

to be of service to the Pendennis family. We have said that he had

the entree of Captain Costigan's lodgings, and in the course of the

afternoon he thought he would pay the General a visit, and hear from his

own lips what had occurred in the conversation, in the morning, with Mr.

Pendennis. Captain Costigan was not at home. He had received permission,

nay, encouragement from his daughter, to go to the convivial club at

the Magpie Hotel, where no doubt he was bragging at that moment of his

desire to murder a certain ruffian; for he was not only brave, but he

knew it too, and liked to take out his courage, and, as it were, give it

an airing in company.

Costigan then was absent, but Miss Fotheringay was at home washing the

tea-cups whilst Mr. Bows sate opposite to her.

"Just done breakfast I see--how do?" said Mr. Foker, popping in his

little funny head.

"Get out, you funny little man," cried Miss Fotheringay.

"You mean come in, answered the other.--Here we are!" and entering the

room he folded his arms and began twirling his head round and round with

immense rapidity, like Harlequin in the Pantomime when he first issues

from his cocoon or envelope. Miss Fotheringay laughed with all her

heart: a wink of Foker's would set her off laughing, when the bitterest

joke Bows ever made could not get a smile from her, or the finest

of poor Pen's speeches would only puzzle her. At the end of the

harlequinade he sank down on one knee and kissed her hand. "You're the

drollest little man," she said, and gave him a great good-humoured slap.

Pen used to tremble as he kissed her hand. Pen would have died of a

slap.

These preliminaries over, the three began to talk; Mr. Foker amused his

companions by recounting to them the scene which he had just witnessed

of the discomfiture of Mr. Garbetts, by which they learned, for the

first time, how far the General had carried his wrath against Major

Pendennis. Foker spoke strongly in favour of the Major's character for

veracity and honour, and described him as a tip-top swell, moving in the

upper-circle of society, who would never submit to any deceit--much more

to deceive such a charming young woman as Miss Foth.

He touched delicately upon the delicate marriage question, though he

couldn't help showing that he held Pen rather cheap. In fact, he had a

perhaps just contempt for Mr. Pen's high-flown sentimentality; his own

weakness, as he thought, not lying that way. "I knew it wouldn't do,

Miss Foth," said he, nodding his little head. "Couldn't do. Didn't like

to put my hand into the bag, but knew it couldn't do. He's too young for

you: too green: a deal too green: and he turns out to be poor as Job.

Can't have him at no price, can she, Mr. Bo?"

"Indeed he's a nice poor boy," said the Fotheringay rather sadly.

"Poor little beggar," said Bows, with his hands in his pockets, and

stealing up a queer look at Miss Fotheringay. Perhaps he thought and

wondered at the way in which women play with men, and coax them and win

them and drop them.

But Mr. Bows had not the least objection to acknowledge that he thought

Miss Fotheringay was perfectly right in giving up Mr. Arthur Pendennis,

and that in his idea the match was always an absurd one: and Miss

Costigan owned that she thought so herself, only she couldn't send away

two thousand a year. "It all comes of believing Papa's silly stories,"

she said; "faith I'll choose for meself another time"--and very likely

the large image of Lieutenant Sir Derby Oaks entered into her mind at

that instant.

After praising Major Pendennis, whom Miss Costigan declared to be

a proper gentleman entirely, smelling of lavender, and as neat as a

pin,--and who was pronounced by Mr. Bows to be the right sort of fellow,

though rather too much of an old buck, Mr. Foker suddenly bethought him

to ask the pair to come and meet the Major that very evening at dinner

at his apartment at the George. "He agreed to dine with me, and I think

after the--after the little shindy this morning, in which I must say the

General was wrong, it would look kind, you know.--I know the Major fell

in love with you, Miss Foth: he said so."

"So she may be Mrs. Pendennis still," Bows said with a sneer--"No, thank

you, Mr. F.--I've dined."

"Sure, that was at three o'clock," said Miss Costigan, who had an honest

appetite, "and I can't go without you."

"We'll have lobster-salad and champagne," said the little monster,

who could not construe a line of Latin, or do a sum beyond the Rule of

Three. Now, for lobster-salad and champagne in an honourable manner,

Miss Costigan would have gone anywhere--and Major Pendennis actually

found himself at seven o'clock seated at a dinner-table in company with

Mr. Bows, a professional fiddler, and Miss Costigan, whose father had

wanted to blow his brains out a few hours before.

To make the happy meeting complete, Mr. Foker, who knew Costigan's

haunts, despatched Stoopid to the club at the Magpie, where the General

was in the act of singing a pathetic song, and brought him off to

supper. To find his daughter and Bows seated at the board was a surprise

indeed--Major Pendennis laughed, and cordially held out his hand, which

the General Officer grasped avec effusion as the French say. In fact he

was considerably inebriated, and had already been crying over his own

song before he joined the little party at the George. He burst into

tears more than once, during the entertainment, and called the Major his

dearest friend. Stoopid and Mr. Foker walked home with him: the Major

gallantly giving his arm to Miss Costigan. He was received with great

friendliness when he called the next day, when many civilities passed

between the gentlemen. On taking leave he expressed his anxious desire

to serve Miss Costigan on any occasion in which he could be useful to

her, and he shook hands with Mr. Foker most cordially and gratefully,

and said that gentleman had done him the very greatest service.

"All right," said Mr. Foker: and they parted with mutual esteem.

On his return to Fairoaks the next day, Major Pendennis did not say what

had happened to him on the previous night, or allude to the company in

which he had passed it. But he engaged Mr. Smirke to stop to dinner; and

any person accustomed to watch his manner might have remarked that there

was something constrained in his hilarity and talkativeness, and that

he was unusually gracious and watchful in his communications with his

nephew. He gave Pen an emphatic God-bless-you when the lad went to bed;

and as they were about to part for the night, he seemed as if he was

going to say something to Mrs. Pendennis, but he bethought him that if

he spoke he might spoil her night's rest, and allowed her to sleep in

peace.

The next morning he was down in the breakfast-room earlier than was his

custom, and saluted everybody there with great cordiality. The post

used to arrive commonly about the end of this meal. When John, the old

servant, entered, and discharged the bag of its letters and papers, the

Major looked hard at Pen as the lad got his--Arthur blushed, and put his

letter down. He knew the hand, it was that of old Costigan, and he did

not care to read it in public. Major Pendennis knew the letter, too. He

had put it into the post himself in Chatteris the day before.

He told little Laura to go away, which the child did, having a thorough

dislike to him; and as the door closed on her, he took Mrs. Pendennis's

hand, and giving her a look full of meaning, pointed to the letter under

the newspaper which Pen was pretending to read. "Will you come into the

drawing-room?" he said. "I want to speak to you." And she followed him,

wondering, into the hall.

"What is it?" she said nervously.

"The affair is at an end," Major Pendennis said. "He has a letter there

giving him his dismissal. I dictated it myself yesterday. There are a

few lines from the lady, too, bidding him farewell. It is all over."

Helen ran back to the dining-room, her brother following. Pen had jumped

at his letter the instant they were gone. He was reading it with a

stupefied face. It stated what the Major had said, that Mr. Costigan

was most gratified for the kindness with which Arthur had treated

his daughter, but that he was only now made aware of Mr. Pendennis's

peecupiary circumstances. They were such that marriage was at present

out of the question, and considering the great disparity in the age of

the two, a future union was impossible. Under these circumstances, and

with the deepest regret and esteem for him, Mr. Costigan bade Arthur

farewell, and suggested that he should cease visiting, for some time at

least, at his house.

A few lines from Miss Costigan were enclosed. She acquiesced in the

decision of her Papa. She pointed out that she was many years older

than Arthur, and that an engagement was not to be thought of. She

would always be grateful for his kindness to her, and hoped to keep his

friendship. But at present, and until the pain of the separation should

be over, she entreated they should not meet.

Pen read Costigan's letter and its enclosure mechanically, hardly

knowing what was before his eyes. He looked up wildly, and saw his

mother and uncle regarding him with sad faces. Helen's, indeed, was full

of tender maternal anxiety.

"What--what is this?" Pen said. "It's some joke. This is not her

writing. This is some servant's writing. Who's playing these tricks upon

me?"

"It comes under her father's envelope," the Major said. "Those letters

you had before were not in her hand: that is hers."

"How do you know?" said Pen very fiercely.

"I saw her write it," the uncle answered, as the boy started up; and his

mother, coming forward, took his hand. He put her away.

"How came you to see her? How came you between me and her? What have

I ever done to you that you should--Oh, it's not true! it's not

true!"--Pen broke out with a wild execration. "She can't have done it of

her own accord. She can't mean it. She's pledged to me. Who has told her

lies to break her from me?"

"Lies are not told in the family, Arthur," Major Pendennis replied. "I

told her the truth, which was, that you had no money to maintain her,

for her foolish father had represented you to be rich. And when she knew

how poor you were, she withdrew at once, and without any persuasion of

mine. She was quite right. She is ten years older than you are. She

is perfectly unfitted to be your wife, and knows it. Look at that

handwriting, and ask yourself, is such a woman fitted to be the

companion of your mother?"

"I will know from herself if it is true," Arthur said, crumpling up the

paper.

"Won't you take my word of honour? Her letters were written by a

confidant of hers, who writes better than she can--look here. Here's

one from the lady to your friend, Mr. Foker. You have seen her with Miss

Costigan, as whose amanuensis she acted"--the Major said, with ever so

little of a sneer, and laid down a certain billet which Mr. Foker had

given to him.

"It's not that," said Pen, burning with shame and rage. "I suppose what

you say is true, sir, but I'll hear it from herself."

"Arthur!" appealed his mother.

"I will see her," said Arthur. "I'll ask her to marry me, once more. I

will. No one shall prevent me."

"What, a woman who spells affection with one f? Nonsense, sir. Be a man,

and remember that your mother is a lady. She was never made to associate

with that tipsy old swindler or his daughter. Be a man and forget her,

as she does you."

"Be a man and comfort your mother, my Arthur," Helen said, going and

embracing him: and seeing that the pair were greatly moved, Major

Pendennis went out of the room and shut the door upon them, wisely

judging that they were best alone.

He had won a complete victory. He actually had brought away Pen's

letters in his portmanteau from Chatteris: having complimented Mr.

Costigan, when he returned them, by giving him the little promissory

note which had disquieted himself and Mr. Garbetts; and for which the

Major settled with Mr. Tatham.

Pen rushed wildly off to Chatteris that day, but in vain attempted to

see Miss Fotheringay, for whom he left a letter, enclosed to her

father. The enclosure was returned by Mr. Costigan, who begged that all

correspondence might end; and after one or two further attempts of

the lad's, the indignant General desired that their acquaintance might

cease. He cut Pen in the street. As Arthur and Foker were pacing the

Castle walk, one day, they came upon Emily on her father's arm. She

passed without any nod of recognition. Foker felt poor Pen trembling on

his arm.

His uncle wanted him to travel, to quit the country for a while, and

his mother urged him too: for he was growing very ill, and suffered

severely. But he refused, and said point-blank he would not go. He would

not obey in this instance: and his mother was too fond, and his uncle

too wise to force him. Whenever Miss Fotheringay acted, he rode over to

the Chatteris Theatre and saw her. One night there were so few people in

the house that the Manager returned the money. Pen came home and went

to bed at eight o'clock, and had a fever. If this continues, his mother

will be going over and fetching the girl, the Major thought, in despair.

As for Pen, he thought he should die. We are not going to describe his

feelings, or give a dreary journal of his despair and passion. Have not

other gentlemen been baulked in love besides Mr. Pen? Yes, indeed: but

few die of the malady.

CHAPTER XIV. In which Miss Fotheringay makes a new Engagement

Within a short period of the events above narrated, Mr. Manager Bingley

was performing his famous character of 'Rolla,' in 'Pizarro,' to a house

so exceedingly thin, that it would appear as if the part of Rolla was

by no means such a favourite with the people of Chatteris as it was with

the accomplished actor himself. Scarce anybody was in the theatre. Poor

Pen had the boxes almost all to himself, and sate there lonely, with

bloodshot eyes, leaning over the ledge, and gazing haggardly towards the

scene, when Cora came in. When she was not on the stage he saw nothing.

Spaniards and Peruvians, processions and battles, priests and virgins of

the sun, went in and out, and had their talk, but Arthur took no note

of any of them; and only saw Cora whom his soul longed after. He said

afterwards that he wondered he had not taken a pistol to shoot her, so

mad was he with love, and rage, and despair; and had it not been for his

mother at home, to whom he did not speak about his luckless condition,

but whose silent sympathy and watchfulness greatly comforted the simple

half heart-broken fellow, who knows but he might have done something

desperate, and have ended his days prematurely in front of Chatteris

gaol? There he sate then, miserable, and gazing at her. And she took no

more notice of him than he did of the rest of the house.

The Fotheringay was uncommonly handsome, in a white raiment and leopard

skin, with a sun upon her breast, and fine tawdry bracelets on her

beautiful glancing arms. She spouted to admiration the few words of her

part, and looked it still better. The eyes, which had overthrown Pen's

soul, rolled and gleamed as lustrous as ever; but it was not to him

that they were directed that night. He did not know to whom, or remark

a couple of gentlemen, in the box next to him, upon whom Miss

Fotheringay's glances were perpetually shining.

Nor had Pen noticed the extraordinary change which had taken place on

the stage a short time after the entry of these two gentlemen into the

theatre. There were so few people in the house, that the first act

of the play languished entirely, and there had been some question of

returning the money, as upon that other unfortunate night when poor Pen

had been driven away. The actors were perfectly careless about their

parts, and yawned through the dialogue, and talked loud to each other

in the intervals. Even Bingley was listless, and Mrs. B. in Elvira spoke

under her breath.

How came it that all of a sudden Mrs. Bingley began to raise her voice

and bellow like a bull of Bashan? Whence was it that Bingley, flinging

off his apathy, darted about the stage and yelled like Dean? Why did

Garbetts and Rowkins and Miss Rouncy try, each of them, the force of

their charms or graces, and act and swagger and scowl and spout their

very loudest at the two gentlemen in box No. 3?

One was a quiet little man in black, with a grey head and a jolly

shrewd face--the other was in all respects a splendid and remarkable

individual. He was a tall and portly gentleman with a hooked nose and a

profusion of curling brown hair and whiskers; his coat was covered with

the richest frogs-braiding and velvet. He had under-waistcoats, many

splendid rings, jewelled pins and neck-chains. When he took out his

yellow pocket-handkerchief with his hand that was cased in white kids,

a delightful odour of musk and bergamot was shaken through the house.

He was evidently a personage of rank, and it was at him that the little

Chatteris company was acting.

He was, in a word, no other than Mr. Dolphin, the great manager from

London, accompanied by his faithful friend and secretary Mr. William

Minns: without whom he never travelled. He had not been ten minutes in

the theatre before his august presence there was perceived by Bingley

and the rest: and they all began to act their best and try to engage his

attention. Even Miss Fotheringay's dull heart, which was disturbed at

nothing, felt perhaps a flutter, when she came in presence of the famous

London Impresario. She had not much to do in her part, but to look

handsome, and stand in picturesque attitudes encircling her child and

she did this work to admiration. In vain the various actors tried to win

the favour of the great stage Sultan. Pizarro never got a hand from him.

Bingley yelled, and Mrs. Bingley bellowed, and the Manager only took

snuff out of his great gold box. It was only in the last scene, when

Rolla comes in staggering with the infant (Bingley is not so strong

as he was and his fourth son Master Talma Bingley is a monstrous large

child for his age)--when Rolla comes staggering with the child to Cora,

who rushes forward with a shriek, and says--"O God, there's blood upon

him!"--that the London manager clapped his hands, and broke out with an

enthusiastic bravo.

Then having concluded his applause, Mr. Dolphin gave his secretary a

slap on the shoulder, and said, "By Jove, Billy, she'll do!"

"Who taught her that dodge?" said old Billy, who was a sardonic old

gentleman. "I remember her at the Olympic, and hang me if she could say

Bo to a goose."

It was little Mr. Bows in the orchestra who had taught her the 'dodge'

in question. All the company heard the applause, and, as the curtain

went down, came round her and congratulated and hated Miss Fotheringay.

Now Mr. Dolphin's appearance in the remote little Chatteris theatre may

be accounted for in this manner. In spite of all his exertions, and the

perpetual blazes of triumph, coruscations of talent, victories of good

old English comedy, which his play-bills advertised, his theatre (which,

if you please, and to injure no present susceptibilities and vested

interests, we shall call the Museum Theatre) by no means prospered,

and the famous Impresario found himself on the verge of ruin. The great

Hubbard had acted legitimate drama for twenty nights, and failed to

remunerate anybody but himself: the celebrated Mr. and Mrs. Cawdor

had come out in Mr. Rawhead's tragedy, and in their favourite round

of pieces, and had not attracted the public. Herr Garbage's lions and

tigers had drawn for a little time, until one of the animals had

bitten a piece out of the Herr's shoulder; when the Lord Chamberlain

interfered, and put a stop to this species of performance: and the grand

Lyrical Drama, though brought out with unexampled splendour and success,

with Monsieur Poumons as first tenor, and an enormous orchestra, had

almost crushed poor Dolphin in its triumphant progress: so that great

as his genius and resources were, they seemed to be at an end. He was

dragging on his season wretchedly with half salaries, small operas,

feeble old comedies, and his ballet company; and everybody was looking

out for the day when he should appear in the Gazette.

One of the illustrious patrons of the Museum Theatre, and occupant of

the great proscenium-box, was a gentleman whose name has been mentioned

in a previous history; that refined patron of the arts, and enlightened

lover of music and the drama, the Most Noble the Marquis of Steyne. His

lordship's avocations as a statesman prevented him from attending the

playhouse very often, or coming very early. But he occasionally appeared

at the theatre in time for the ballet, and was always received with the

greatest respect by the Manager, from whom he sometimes condescended

to receive a visit in his box. It communicated with the stage, and when

anything occurred there which particularly pleased him, when a new face

made its appearance among the coryphees, or a fair dancer executed a

pas with especial grace or agility, Mr. Wenham, Mr. Wagg, or some other

aide-de-camp of the noble Marquis, would be commissioned to go behind

the scenes, and express the great man's approbation, or make the

inquiries which were prompted by his lordship's curiosity, or his

interest in the dramatic art. He could not be seen by the audience, for

Lord Steyne sate modestly behind a curtain, and looked only towards the

stage--but you could know he was in the house, by the glances which all

the corps-de-ballet, and all the principal dancers, cast towards his

box. I have seen many scores of pairs of eyes (as in the Palm Dance in

the ballet of Cook at Otaheite, where no less than a hundred-and-twenty

lovely female savages in palm leaves and feather aprons, were made to

dance round Floridor as Captain Cook) ogling that box as they performed

before it, and have often wondered to remark the presence of mind of

Mademoiselle Sauterelle, or Mademoiselle de Bondi (known as la petite

Caoutchoue), who, when actually up in the air quivering like so many

shuttlecocks, always kept their lovely eyes winking at that box in which

the great Steyne sate. Now and then you would hear a harsh voice from

behind the curtain cry, "Brava, Brava," or a pair of white gloves wave

from it, and begin to applaud. Bondi, or Sauterelle, when they came down

to earth, curtsied and smiled, especially to those hands, before they

walked up the stage again, panting and happy.

One night this great Prince surrounded by a few choice friends was in

his box at the Museum, and they were making such a noise and laughter

that the pit was scandalised, and many indignant voices were bawling out

silence so loudly, that Wagg wondered the police did not interfere

to take the rascals out. Wenham was amusing the party in the box

with extracts from a private letter which he had received from Major

Pendennis, whose absence in the country at the full London season had

been remarked, and of course deplored by his friends.

"The secret is out," said Mr. Wenham, "there's a woman in the case."

"Why, d---- it, Wenham, he's your age," said the gentleman behind the

curtain.

"Pour les ames bien nees, l'amour ne compte pas le nombre des annees,"

said Mr. Wenham, with a gallant air. "For my part, I hope to be a victim

till I die, and to break my heart every year of my life." The meaning of

which sentence was, "My lord, you need not talk; I'm three years younger

than you, and twice as well conserve."

"Wenham, you affect me," said the great man, with one of his usual

oaths. "By ---- you do. I like to see a fellow preserving all the

illusions of youth up to our time of life--and keeping his heart warm

as yours is. Hang it, sir, it's a comfort to meet with such a generous,

candid creature.--Who's that gal in the second row, with blue ribbons,

third from the stage--fine gal. Yes, you and I are sentimentalists. Wagg

I don't think so much cares--it's the stomach rather more than the heart

with you, eh, Wagg, my boy?"

"I like everything that's good," said Mr. Wagg, generously. "Beauty and

Burgundy, Venus and Venison. I don't say that Venus's turtles are to be

despised, because they don't cook them at the London Tavern: but--but

tell us about old Pendennis, Mr. Wenham," he abruptly concluded--for his

joke flagged just then, as he saw that his patron was not listening. In

fact, Steyne's glasses were up, and he was examining some object on the

stage.

"Yes, I've heard that joke about Venus's turtle and the London Tavern

before--you begin to fail, my poor Wagg. If you don't mind I shall be

obliged to have a new Jester," Lord Steyne said, laying down his glass.

"Go on, Wenham, about old Pendennis."

"Dear Wenham,"--he begins, Mr. Wenham read,--"as you have had my

character in your hands for the last three weeks, and no doubt have torn

me to shreds, according to your custom, I think you can afford to

be good-humoured by way of variety, and to do me a service. It is a

delicate matter, entre nous, une affaire de coeur. There is a young

friend of mine who is gone wild about a certain Miss Fotheringay, an

actress at the theatre here, and I must own to you, as handsome a woman,

and, as it appears to me, as good an actress as ever put on rouge. She

does Ophelia, Lady Teazle, Mrs. Haller--that sort of thing. Upon my

word, she is as splendid as Georges in her best days, and as far as I

know, utterly superior to anything we have on our scene. I want a London

engagement for her. Can't you get your friend Dolphin to come and see

her--to engage her--to take her out of this place? A word from a noble

friend of ours (you understand) would be invaluable, and if you could

get the Gaunt House interest for me--I will promise anything I can in

return for your service--which I shall consider one of the greatest that

can be done to me. Do, do this now as a good fellow, which I always said

you were: and in return, command yours truly, A. Pendennis."

"It's a clear case," said Mr. Wenham, having read this letter; "old

Pendennis is in love."

"And wants to get the woman up to London--evidently," continued Mr.

Wagg.

"I should like to see Pendennis on his knees, with the rheumatism," said

Mr. Wenham.

"Or accommodating the beloved object with a lock of his hair," said

Wagg.

"Stuff." said the great man. "He has relations in the country, hasn't

he? He said something about a nephew, whose interest could return a

member. It is the nephew's affair, depend on it. The young one is in

a scrape. I was myself--when I was in the fifth form at Eton--a

market-gardener's daughter--and swore I'd marry her. I was mad about

her--poor Polly!"--here he made a pause, and perhaps the past rose up to

Lord Steyne, and George Gaunt was a boy again not altogether lost.--"But

I say, she must be a fine woman from Pendennis's account. Have in

Dolphin, and let us hear if he knows anything of her."

At this Wenham sprang out of the box, passed the servitor who waited at

the door communicating with the stage, and who saluted Mr. Wenham with

profound respect; and the latter emissary, pushing on and familiar

with the place, had no difficulty in finding out the manager, who was

employed, as he not unfrequently was, in swearing and cursing the ladies

of the corps-de-ballet for not doing their duty.

The oaths died away on Mr. Dolphin's lips, as soon as he saw Mr. Wenham;

and he drew off the hand which was clenched in the face of one of

the offending coryphees, to grasp that of the new-comer. "How do, Mr.

Wenham? How's his lordship to-night? Looks uncommonly well," said the

manager smiling, as if he had never been out of temper in his life; and

he was only too delighted to follow Lord Steyne's ambassador, and pay

his personal respects to that great man.

The visit to Chatteris was the result of their conversation: and Mr.

Dolphin wrote to his lordship from that place, and did himself the

honour to inform the Marquess of Steyne, that he had seen the lady about

whom his lordship had spoken, that he was as much struck by her talents

as he was by her personal appearance, and that he had made an engagement

with Miss Fotheringay, who would soon have the honour of appearing

before a London audience, and his noble and enlightened patron the

Marquess of Steyne.

Pen read the announcement of Miss Fotheringay's engagement in the

Chatteris paper, where he had so often praised her charms. The Editor

made very handsome mention of her talent and beauty, and prophesied her

success in the metropolis. Bingley, the manager, began to advertise "The

last night of Miss Fotheringay's engagement." Poor Pen and Sir Derby

Oaks were very constant at the play: Sir Derby in the stage-box,

throwing bouquets and getting glances.--Pen in the almost deserted

boxes, haggard, wretched and lonely. Nobody cared whether Miss

Fotheringay was going or staying except those two--and perhaps one more,

which was Mr. Bows of the orchestra.

He came out of his place one night, and went into the house to the box

where Pen was; and he held out his hand to him, and asked him to come

and walk. They walked down the street together; and went and sate upon

Chatteris bridge in the moonlight, and talked about Her. "We may sit

on the same bridge," said he; "we have been in the same boat for a long

time. You are not the only man who has made a fool of himself about that

woman. And I have less excuse than you, because I am older and know her

better. She has no more heart than the stone you are leaning on; and it

or you or I might fall into the water, and never come up again, and she

wouldn't care. Yes--she would care for me, because she wants me to teach

her: and she won't be able to get on without me, and will be forced to

send for me from London. But she wouldn't if she didn't want me. She has

no heart and no head, and no sense, and no feelings, and no griefs or

cares, whatever. I was going to say no pleasures--but the fact is, she

does like her dinner, and she is pleased when people admire her."

"And you do?" said Pen, interested out of himself, and wondering at the

crabbed homely little old man.

"It's a habit, like taking snuff, or drinking drams," said the other.

"I've been taking her these five years, and can't do without her. It was

I made her. If she doesn't send for me, I shall follow her: but I know

she'll send for me. She wants me. Some day she'll marry, and fling me

over, as I do the end of this cigar."

The little flaming spark dropped into the water below, and disappeared;

and Pen, as he rode home that night, actually thought about somebody but

himself.

CHAPTER XV. The happy Village

Until the enemy had retired altogether from before the place, Major

Pendennis was resolved to keep his garrison in Fairoaks. He did not

appear to watch Pen's behaviour or to put any restraint on his nephew's

actions, but he managed nevertheless to keep the lad constantly under

his eye or those of his agents, and young Arthur's comings and goings

were quite well known to his vigilant guardian.

I suppose there is scarcely any man who reads this or any other novel

but has been baulked in love some time or the other, by fate and

circumstance, by falsehood of women, or his own fault. Let that worthy

friend recall his own sensations under the circumstances, and apply

them as illustrative of Mr. Pen's anguish. Ah! what weary nights and

sickening fevers! Ah! what mad desires dashing up against some rock

of obstruction or indifference, and flung back again from the

unimpressionable granite! If a list could be made this very night in

London of the groans, thoughts, imprecations of tossing lovers, what a

catalogue it would be! I wonder what a percentage of the male population

of the metropolis will be lying awake at two or three o'clock to-morrow

morning, counting the hours as they go by knelling drearily, and rolling

from left to right, restless, yearning and heart-sick? What a pang

it is! I never knew a man die of love certainly, but I have known

a twelve-stone man go down to nine-stone five under a disappointed

passion, so that pretty nearly quarter of him may be said to have

perished: and that is no small portion. He has come back to his old

size subsequently; perhaps is bigger than ever: very likely some new

affection has closed round his heart and ribs and made them comfortable,

and young Pen is a man who will console himself like the rest of us. We

say this lest the ladies should be disposed to deplore him prematurely,

or be seriously uneasy with regard to his complaint. His mother was, but

what will not a maternal fondness fear or invent? "Depend on it, my dear

creature," Major Pendennis would say gallantly to her, "the boy will

recover. As soon as we get her out of the country we will take him

somewhere, and show him a little life. Meantime make yourself easy about

him. Half a fellow's pangs at losing a woman result from vanity more

than affection. To be left by a woman is the deuce and all, to be sure;

but look how easily we leave 'em."

Mrs. Pendennis did not know. This sort of knowledge had by no means come

within the simple lady's scope. Indeed she did not like the subject or

to talk of it: her heart had had its own little private misadventure and

she had borne up against it and cured it: and perhaps she had not much

patience with other folk's passions, except, of course, Arthur's, whose

sufferings she made her own, feeling indeed very likely in many of the

boy's illnesses and pains a great deal more than Pen himself endured.

And she watched him through this present grief with a jealous silent

sympathy; although, as we have said, he did not talk to her of his

unfortunate condition.

The Major must be allowed to have had not a little merit and

forbearance, and to have exhibited a highly creditable degree of family

affection. The life at Fairoaks was uncommonly dull to a man who had the

entree of half the houses in London, and was in the habit of making

his bow in three or four drawing-rooms of a night. A dinner with Doctor

Portman or a neighbouring Squire now and then; a dreary rubber at

backgammon with the widow, who did her utmost to amuse him; these were

the chief of his pleasures. He used to long for the arrival of the

bag with the letters, and he read every word of the evening paper. He

doctored himself too, assiduously,--a course of quiet living would suit

him well, he thought, after the London banquets. He dressed himself

laboriously every morning and afternoon: he took regular exercise up

and down the terrace walk. Thus with his cane, his toilet, his

medicine-chest, his backgammon-box, and his newspaper, this worthy and

worldly philosopher fenced himself against ennui; and if he did not

improve each shining hour, like the bees by the widow's garden wall,

Major Pendennis made one hour after another pass as he could, and

rendered his captivity just tolerable. After this period it was remarked

that he was fond of bringing round the conversation to the American war,

the massacre of Wyoming and the brilliant actions of Saint Lucie, the

fact being that he had a couple of volumes of the 'Annual Register' in

his bedroom, which he sedulously studied. It is thus a well-regulated

man will accommodate himself to circumstances, and show himself calmly

superior to fortune.

Pen sometimes took the box at backgammon of a night, or would listen to

his mother's simple music of summer evenings--but he was very restless

and wretched in spite of all: and has been known to be up before the

early daylight even; and down at a carp-pond in Clavering Park, a

dreary pool with innumerable whispering rushes and green alders, where

a milkmaid drowned herself in the Baronet's grandfather's time, and her

ghost was said to walk still. But Pen did not drown himself, as perhaps

his mother fancied might be his intention. He liked to go and fish

there, and think and think at leisure, as the float quivered in the

little eddies of the pond, and the fish flapped about him. If he got a

bite he was excited enough: and in this way occasionally brought home

carps, tenches, and eels, which the Major cooked in the Continental

fashion.

By this pond, and under a tree, which was his favourite resort, Pen

composed a number of poems suitable to his circumstances over which

verses he blushed in after days, wondering how he could ever have

invented such rubbish. And as for the tree, why it is in a hollow of

this very tree, where he used to put his tin-box of ground-bait, and

other fishing commodities, that he afterwards--but we are advancing

matters. Suffice it to say, he wrote poems and relieved himself very

much. When a man's grief or passion is at this point, it may be loud,

but it is not very severe. When a gentleman is cudgelling his brain to

find any rhyme for sorrow, besides borrow and to-morrow, his woes are

nearer at an end than he thinks for. So were Pen's. He had his hot

and cold fits, his days of sullenness and peevishness, and of blank

resignation and despondency, and occasional mad paroxysms of rage and

longing, in which fits Rebecca would be saddled and galloped fiercely

about the country, or into Chatteris, her rider gesticulating wildly on

her back, and astonishing carters and turnpikemen as he passed, crying

out the name of the false one.

Mr. Foker became a very frequent and welcome visitor at Fairoaks during

this period, where his good spirits and oddities always amused the Major

and Pendennis, while they astonished the widow and little Laura not a

little. His tandem made a great sensation in Clavering market-place;

where he upset a market stall, and cut Mrs. Pybus's poodle over the

shaven quarters, and drank a glass of raspberry bitters at the Clavering

Arms. All the society in the little place heard who he was, and looked

out his name in their Peerages. He was so young, and their books so old,

that his name did not appear in many of their volumes; and his mamma,

now quite an antiquated lady, figured amongst the progeny of the Earl

of Rosherville, as Lady Agnes Milton still. But his name, wealth, and

honourable lineage were speedily known about Clavering, where you may be

sure that poor Pen's little transaction with the Chatteris actress was

also pretty freely discussed.

Looking at the little old town of Clavering St. Mary from the London

road as it runs by the lodge at Fairoaks, and seeing the rapid and

shining Brawl winding down from the town and skirting the woods of

Clavering Park, and the ancient church tower and peaked roofs of the

houses rising up amongst trees and old walls, behind which swells a

fair background of sunshiny hills that stretch from Clavering westwards

towards the sea--the place looks so cheery and comfortable that many a

traveller's heart must have yearned towards it from the coach-top, and

he must have thought that it was in such a calm friendly nook he would

like to shelter at the end of life's struggle. Tom Smith, who used to

drive the Alacrity coach, would often point to a tree near the river,

from which a fine view of the church and town was commanded, and inform

his companion on the box that "Artises come and take hoff the Church

from that there tree--It was a Habby once, sir:"--and indeed a pretty

view it is, which I recommend to Mr. Stanfield or Mr. Roberts, for their

next tour.

Like Constantinople seen from the Bosphorus; like Mrs. Rougemont viewed

in her box from the opposite side of the house; like many an object

which we pursue in life, and admire before we have attained it;

Clavering is rather prettier at a distance than it is on a closer

acquaintance. The town so cheerful of aspect a few furlongs off, looks

very blank and dreary. Except on market days there is nobody in the

streets. The clack of a pair of pattens echoes through half the place,

and you may hear the creaking of the rusty old ensign at the Clavering

Arms, without being disturbed by any other noise. There has not been a

ball in the Assembly Rooms since the Clavering volunteers gave one to

their Colonel, the old Sir Francis Clavering; and the stables which

once held a great part of that brilliant, but defunct regiment, are now

cheerless and empty, except on Thursdays, when the farmers put up there,

and their tilted carts and gigs make a feeble show of liveliness in the

place, or on Petty Sessions, when the magistrates attend in what used to

be the old card-room.

On the south side of the market rises up the church, with its great grey

towers, of which the sun illuminates the delicate carving; deepening the

shadows of the huge buttresses, and gilding the glittering windows and

flaming vanes. The image of the Patroness of the Church was wrenched out

of the porch centuries ago: such of the statues of saints as were within

reach of stones and hammer at that period of pious demolition, are

maimed and headless, and of those who were out of fire, only Doctor

Portman knows the names and history, for his curate, Smirke, is not

much of an antiquarian, and Mr. Simcoe (husband of the Honourable Mrs.

Simcoe), incumbent and architect of the Chapel of Ease in the lower

town, thinks them the abomination of desolation.

The Rectory is a stout broad-shouldered brick house, of the reign of

Anne. It communicates with the church and market by different gates, and

stands at the opening of Yew-tree Lane, where the Grammar School

(Rev. ---- Wapshot) is; Yew-tree Cottage (Miss Flather); the butchers'

slaughtering-house, an old barn or brew-house of the Abbey times, and

the Misses Finucane's establishment for young ladies. The two schools

had their pews in the loft on each side of the organ, until the

Abbey Church getting rather empty, through the falling-off of the

congregation, who were inveigled to the Heresy-shop in the lower town,

the Doctor induced the Misses Finucane to bring their pretty little

flock downstairs; and the young ladies' bonnets make a tolerable show

in the rather vacant aisles. Nobody is in the great pew of the Clavering

family, except the statues of defunct baronets and their ladies: there

is Sir Poyntz Clavering, Knight and Baronet, kneeling in a square

beard opposite his wife in a ruff: a very fat lady, the Dame Rebecca

Clavering, in alto-relievo, is borne up to Heaven by two little

blue-veined angels, who seem to have a severe task--and so forth. How

well in after life Pen remembered those effigies, and how often in youth

he scanned them as the Doctor was grumbling the sermon from the

pulpit, and Smirke's mild head and forehead curl peered over the great

prayer-book in the desk!

The Fairoaks folks were constant at the old church; their servants had

a pew, so had the Doctor's, so had Wapshot's, and those of Misses

Finucane's establishment, three maids and a very nice-looking young man

in a livery. The Wapshot Family were numerous and faithful. Glanders and

his children regularly came to church: so did one of the apothecaries.

Mrs. Pybus went, turn and turn about, to the Low Town church, and to the

Abbey: the Charity School and their families of course came; Wapshot's

boys made a good cheerful noise, scuffling with their feet as they

marched into church and up the organ-loft stair, and blowing their noses

a good deal during the service. To be brief, the congregation looked as

decent as might be in these bad times. The Abbey Church was furnished

with a magnificent screen, and many hatchments and heraldic tombstones.

The Doctor spent a great part of his income in beautifying his darling

place; he had endowed it with a superb painted window, bought in the

Netherlands, and an organ grand enough for a cathedral.

But in spite of organ and window, in consequence of the latter very

likely, which had come out of a Papistical place of worship and

was blazoned all over with idolatry, Clavering New Church prospered

scandalously in the teeth of Orthodoxy; and many of the Doctor's

congregation deserted to Mr. Simcoe and the honourable woman his wife.

Their efforts had thinned the very Ebenezer hard by them, which building

before Simcoe's advent used to be so full, that you could see the backs

of the congregation squeezing out of the arched windows thereof. Mr.

Simcoe's tracts fluttered into the doors of all the Doctor's cottages,

and were taken as greedily as honest Mrs. Portman's soup, with the

quality of which the graceless people found fault. With the folks at the

Ribbon Factory situated by the weir on the Brawl side, and round which

the Low Town had grown, Orthodoxy could make no way at all. Quiet

Miss Myra was put out of court by impetuous Mrs. Simcoe and her female

aides-de-camp. Ah, it was a hard burthen for the Doctor's lady to

bear, to behold her husband's congregation dwindling away; to give

the precedence on the few occasions when they met to a notorious

low-churchman's wife who was the daughter of an Irish Peer; to know that

there was a party in Clavering, their own town of Clavering, on which

her Doctor spent a great deal more than his professional income, who

held him up to odium because he played a rubber at whist; and pronounced

him to be a Heathen because he went to the play. In her grief she

besought him to give up the play and the rubber,--indeed they could

scarcely get a table now, so dreadful was the outcry against the

sport,--but the Doctor declared that he would do what he thought right,

and what the great and good George the Third did (whose Chaplain he had

been): and as for giving up whist because those silly folks cried out

against it, he would play dummy to the end of his days with his wife and

Myra, rather than yield to their despicable persecutions.

Of the two families, owners of the Factory (which had spoiled the Brawl

as a trout-stream and brought all the mischief into the town), the

senior partner, Mr. Rolt, went to Ebenezer; the junior, Mr. Barker,

to the New Church. In a word, people quarrelled in this little place

a great deal more than neighbours do in London; and in the Book Club,

which the prudent and conciliating Pendennis had set up, and which ought

to have been a neutral territory, they bickered so much that nobody

scarcely was ever seen in the reading-room, except Smirke, who, though

he kept up a faint amity with the Simcoe faction, had still a taste for

magazines and light worldly literature; and old Glanders, whose white

head and grizzly moustache might be seen at the window; and of course,

little Mrs. Pybus, who looked at everybody's letters as the Post brought

them (for the Clavering Reading-room, as every one knows, used to be

held at Baker's Library, London Street, formerly Hog Lane), and read

every advertisement in the paper.

It may be imagined how great a sensation was created in this amiable

little community when the news reached it of Mr. Pen's love-passages at

Chatteris. It was carried from house to house, and formed the subject of

talk at high-church, low-church, and no-church tables; it was canvassed

by the Misses Finucane and their teachers, and very likely debated by

the young ladies in the dormitories for what we know; Wapshot's big boys

had their version of the story, and eyed Pen curiously as he sate in his

pew at church, or raised the finger of scorn at him as he passed through

Chatteris. They always hated him and called him Lord Pendennis, because

he did not wear corduroys as they did, and rode a horse, and gave

himself the airs of a buck.

And if the truth must be told, it was Mrs. Portman herself who was the

chief narrator of the story of Pen's loves. Whatever tales this candid

woman heard, she was sure to impart them to her neighbours; and after

she had been put into possession of Pen's secret by the little scandal

at Chatteris, poor Doctor Portman knew that it would next day be about

the parish of which he was the Rector. And so indeed it was; the whole

society there had the legend--at the news-room, at the milliner's, at

the shoe-shop, and the general warehouse at the corner of the market; at

Mrs. Pybus's, at the Glanders's, at the Honourable Mrs. Simcoe's soiree,

at the Factory; nay, through the mill itself the tale was current in a

few hours, and young Arthur Pendennis's madness was in every mouth.

All Dr. Portman's acquaintances barked out upon him when he walked the

street the next day. The poor divine knew that his Betsy was the author

of the rumour, and groaned in spirit. Well, well,--it must have come

in a day or two, and it was as well that the town should have the real

story. What the Clavering folks thought of Mrs. Pendennis for spoiling

her son, and of that precocious young rascal of an Arthur for daring

to propose to a play-actress, need not be told here. If pride exists

amongst any folks in our country, and assuredly we have enough of it,

there is no pride more deep-seated than that of twopenny old gentlewomen

in small towns. "Gracious goodness," the cry was, "how infatuated the

mother is about that pert and headstrong boy who gives himself the

airs of a lord on his blood-horse, and for whom our society is not good

enough, and who would marry an odious painted actress off a booth, where

very likely he wants to rant himself. If dear good Mr. Pendennis had

been alive this scandal would never have happened."

No more it would, very likely, nor should we have been occupied in

narrating Pen's history. It was true that he gave himself airs to the

Clavering folks. Naturally haughty and frank, their cackle and small

talk and small dignities bored him, and he showed a contempt which he

could not conceal. The Doctor and the Curate were the only people Pen

cared for in the place--even Mrs. Portman shared in the general distrust

of him, and of his mother, the widow, who kept herself aloof from the

village society, and was sneered at accordingly, because she tried,

forsooth, to keep her head up with the great County families. She,

indeed! Mrs. Barker at the Factory has four times the butcher's meat

that goes up to Fairoaks, with all their fine airs.

Etc. etc. etc.: let the reader fill up these details according to his

liking and experience of village scandal. They will suffice to show

how it was that a good woman occupied solely in doing her duty to her

neighbour and her children, and an honest, brave lad, impetuous, and

full of good, and wishing well to every mortal alive found enemies and

detractors amongst people to whom they were superior, and to whom they

had never done anything like harm. The Clavering curs were yelping all

round the house of Fairoaks, and delighted to pull Pen down.

Doctor Portman and Smirke were both cautious of informing the widow of

the constant outbreak of calumny which was pursuing poor Pen, though

Glanders, who was a friend of the house, kept him au courant. It may be

imagined what his indignation was: was there any man in the village

whom he could call to account? Presently some wags began to chalk

up 'Fotheringay for ever!' and other sarcastic allusions to late

transactions, at Fairoaks' gate. Another brought a large playbill from

Chatteris, and wafered it there one night. On one occasion Pen, riding

through the Lower Town, fancied he heard the Factory boys jeer him; and

finally going through the Doctor's gate into the churchyard, where some

of Wapshot's boys were lounging, the biggest of them, a young gentleman

about twenty years of age, son of a neighbouring small Squire, who lived

in the doubtful capacity of parlour-boarder with Mr. Wapshot, flung

himself into a theatrical attitude near a newly-made grave, and began

repeating Hamlet's verses over Ophelia, with a hideous leer at Pen.

The young fellow was so enraged that he rushed at Hobnell Major with a

shriek very much resembling an oath, cut him furiously across the face

with the riding-whip which he carried, flung it away, calling upon the

cowardly villain to defend himself, and in another minute knocked the

bewildered young ruffian into the grave which was just waiting for a

different lodger.

Then with his fists clenched, and his face quivering with passion and

indignation, he roared out to Mr. Hobnell's gaping companions, to know

if any of the blackguards would come on? But they held back with a

growl, and retreated as Doctor Portman came up to his wicket, and Mr.

Hobnell, with his nose and lip bleeding piteously, emerged from the

grave.

Pen, looking death and defiance at the lads, who retreated towards'

their side of the churchyard, walked back again through the Doctor's

wicket, and was interrogated by that gentleman. The young fellow was

so agitated he could scarcely speak. His voice broke into a sob as he

answered. "The ------ coward insulted me, sir," he said; and the Doctor

passed over the oath, and respected the emotion of the honest suffering

young heart.

Pendennis the elder, who like a real man of the world had a proper and

constant dread of the opinion of his neighbour, was prodigiously annoyed

by the absurd little tempest which was blowing in Chatteris, and tossing

about Master Pen's reputation. Doctor Portman and Captain Glanders had

to support the charges of the whole Chatteris society against the young

reprobate, who was looked upon as a monster of crime. Pen did not

say anything about the churchyard scuffle at home; but went over to

Baymouth, and took counsel with his friend Harry Foker, Esq., who drove

over his drag presently to the Clavering Arms, whence he sent Stoopid

with a note to Thomas Hobnell, Esq., at the Rev. J. Wapshot's, and a

civil message to ask when he should wait upon that gentleman.

Stoopid brought back word that the note had been opened by Mr. Hobnell,

and read to half a dozen of the big boys, on whom it seemed to make a

great impression; and that after consulting together, and laughing, Mr.

Hobnell said he would send an answer "arter arternoon school, which the

bell was a-ringing: and Mr. Wapshot he came out in his Master's gownd."

Stoopid was learned in academical costume, having attended Mr. Foker at

St. Boniface.

Mr. Foker went out to see the curiosities of Clavering meanwhile; but

not having a taste for architecture, Doctor Portman's fine church did

not engage his attention much and he pronounced the tower to be as

mouldy as an old Stilton cheese. He walked down the street and looked

at the few shops there; he saw Captain Glanders at the window of the

Reading-room, and having taken a good stare at that gentleman, he wagged

his head at him in token of satisfaction; he inquired the price of meat

at the butcher's with an air of the greatest interest, and asked "when

was next killing day?" he flattened his little nose against Madame

Fribsby's window to see if haply there was a pretty workwoman in her

premises; but there was no face more comely than the doll's or dummy's

wearing the French cap in the window, only that of Madame Fribsby

herself, dimly visible in the parlour, reading a novel. That object was

not of sufficient interest to keep Mr. Foker very long in contemplation,

and so having exhausted the town and the inn stables, in which there

were no cattle, save the single old pair of posters that earned a scanty

livelihood by transporting the gentry round about to the county dinners,

Mr. Foker was giving himself up to ennui entirely, when a messenger from

Mr. Hobnell was at length announced.

It was no other than Mr. Wapshot himself, who came with an air of great

indignation, and holding Pen's missive in his hand, asked Mr. Foker "how

dared he bring such an unchristian message as a challenge to a boy of

his school?"

In fact Pen had written a note to his adversary of the day before,

telling him that if after the chastisement which his insolence richly

deserved, he felt inclined to ask the reparation which was usually given

amongst gentlemen, Mr. Arthur Pendennis's friend, Mr. Henry Foker, was

empowered to make any arrangements for the satisfaction of Mr. Hobnell.

"And so he sent you with the answer--did he, sir?" Mr. Foker said,

surveying the Schoolmaster in his black coat and clerical costume.

"If he had accepted this wicked challenge, I should have flogged him,"

Mr. Wapshot said, and gave Mr. Foker a glance which seemed to say, "and

I should like very much to flog you too."

"Uncommon kind of you, sir, I'm sure," said Pen's emissary. "I told my

principal that I didn't think the other man would fight," he continued

with a great air of dignity. "He prefers being flogged to fighting,

sir, I dare say. May I offer you any refreshment, Mr.? I haven't the

advantage of your name."

"My name is Wapshot, sir, and I am Master of the Grammar School of this

town, sir," cried the other: "and I want no refreshment, sir, I thank

you, and have no desire to make your acquaintance, sir."

"I didn't seek yours, sir, I'm sure," replied Mr. Foker. "In affairs

of this sort, you see, I think it is a pity that the clergy should be

called in, but there's no accounting for tastes, sir."

"I think it's a pity that boys should talk about committing murder, sir,

as lightly as you do," roared the Schoolmaster; "and if I had you in my

school----"

"I dare say you would teach me better, sir," Mr. Foker said, with a bow.

"Thank you, sir. I've finished my education, sir, and ain't a-going back

to school, sir--when I do, I'll remember your kind offer, sir. John,

show this gentleman downstairs--and, of course, as Mr. Hobnell likes

being thrashed, we can have no objection, sir, and we shall be very

happy to accommodate him, whenever he comes our way."

And with this, the young fellow bowed the elder gentleman out of the

room, and sate down and wrote a note off to Pen, in which he informed

the latter that Mr. Hobnell was not disposed to fight, and proposed to

put up with the caning which Pen had administered to him.

CHAPTER XVI. More Storms in the Puddle

Pen's conduct in this business of course was soon made public, and

angered his friend Doctor Portman not a little: while it only amused

Major Pendennis. As for the good Mrs. Pendennis, she was almost

distracted when she heard of the squabble, and of Pen's unchristian

behaviour. All sorts of wretchedness, discomfort, crime, annoyance,

seemed to come out of this transaction in which the luckless boy had

engaged; and she longed more than ever to see him out of Chatteris for a

while,--anywhere removed from the woman who had brought him into so much

trouble.

Pen when remonstrated with by this fond parent, and angrily rebuked by

the Doctor for his violence and ferocious intentions, took the matter au

grand serieux, with the happy conceit and gravity of youth: said that he

himself was very sorry for the affair, that the insult had come upon him

without the slightest provocation on his part; that he would permit no

man to insult him upon this head without vindicating his own honour, and

appealing with great dignity to his uncle, asked whether he could have

acted otherwise as a gentleman, than as he did in resenting the outrage

offered to him, and in offering satisfaction to the person chastised?

"Vous allez trop vite, my good sir," said the uncle, rather puzzled, for

he had been indoctrinating his nephew with some of his own notions upon

the point of honour--old-world notions savouring of the camp and pistol

a great deal more than our soberer opinions of the present day--"between

men of the world I don't say; but between two schoolboys, this sort of

thing is ridiculous, my dear boy--perfectly ridiculous."

"It is extremely wicked, and unlike my son," said Mrs. Pendennis, with

tears in her eyes, and bewildered with the obstinacy of the boy.

Pen kissed her, and said with great pomposity, "Women, dear mother,

don't understand these matters--I put myself into Foker's hands--I had

no other course to pursue."

Major Pendennis grinned and shrugged his shoulders. The young ones were

certainly making great progress, he thought. Mrs. Pendennis declared

that that Foker was a wicked horrid little wretch, and was sure that he

would lead her dear boy into mischief, if Pen went to the same College

with him. "I have a great mind not to let him go at all," she said: and

only that she remembered that the lad's father had always destined him

for the College in which he had had his own brief education, very likely

the fond mother would have put a veto upon his going to the University.

That he was to go, and at the next October term, had been arranged

between all the authorities who presided over the lad's welfare. Foker

had promised to introduce him to the right set; and Major Pendennis laid

great store upon Pen's introduction into College life and society by

this admirable young gentleman. "Mr. Foker knows the very best young men

now at the University," the Major said, "and Pen will form acquaintances

there who will be of the greatest advantage through life to him. The

young Marquis of Plinlimmon is there, eldest son of the Duke of Saint

David's--Lord Magnus Charters is there, Lord Runnymede's son, and a

first cousin of Mr. Foker (Lady Runnymede, my dear, was Lady Agatha

Milton, you of course remember); Lady Agnes will certainly invite him to

Logwood; and far from being alarmed at his intimacy with her son, who

is a singular and humorous, but most prudent and amiable young man, to

whom, I am sure, we are under every obligation for his admirable conduct

in the affair of the Fotheringay marriage, I look upon it as one of the

very luckiest things which could have happened to Pen, that he should

have formed an intimacy with this most amusing young gentleman."

Helen sighed, she supposed the Major knew best. Mr. Foker had been very

kind in the wretched business with Miss Costigan, certainly, and she

was grateful to him. But she could not feel otherwise than a

dim presentiment of evil; and all these quarrels, and riots, and

worldliness, scared her about the fate of her boy.

Doctor Portman was decidedly of opinion that Pen should go to College.

He hoped the lad would read, and have a moderate indulgence of the

best society too. He was of opinion that Pen would distinguish himself:

Smirke spoke very highly of his proficiency: the Doctor himself had

heard him construe, and thought he acquitted himself remarkably well.

That he should go out of Chatteris was a great point at any rate; and

Pen, who was distracted from his private grief by the various rows and

troubles which had risen round about him, gloomily said he would obey.

There were assizes, races, and the entertainments and the flux of

company consequent upon them, at Chatteris, during a part of the months

of August and September, and Miss Fotheringay still continued to act,

and take farewell of the audiences at the Chatteris Theatre during that

time. Nobody seemed to be particularly affected by her presence, or her

announced departure, except those persons whom we have named; nor could

the polite county folks, who had houses in London, and very likely

admired the Fotheringay prodigiously in the capital, when they had been

taught to do so by the Fashion which set in in her favour, find anything

remarkable in the actress performing on the little Chatteris boards.

Many genius and many a quack, for that matter, has met with a similar

fate before and since Miss Costigan's time. This honest woman meanwhile

bore up against the public neglect, and any other crosses or vexations

which she might have in life, with her usual equanimity; and ate, drank,

acted, slept, with that regularity and comfort which belongs to people

of her temperament. What a deal of grief, care, and other harmful

excitement does a healthy dulness and cheerful insensibility avoid! Nor

do I mean to say that Virtue is not Virtue because it is never tempted

to go astray; only that dulness is a much finer gift than we give it

credit for being; and that some people are very lucky whom Nature has

endowed with a good store of that great anodyne.

Pen used to go drearily in and out from the play at Chatteris during

this season, and pretty much according to his fancy. His proceedings

tortured his mother not a little, and her anxiety would have led her

often to interfere, had not the Major constantly checked, and at the

same time encouraged her; for the wily man of the world fancied he saw

that a favourable turn had occurred in Pen's malady. It was the violent

efflux of versification, among other symptoms, which gave Pen's guardian

and physician satisfaction. He might be heard spouting verses in the

shrubbery walks, or muttering them between his teeth as he sat with

the home party of evenings. One day prowling about the house in Pen's

absence, the Major found a great book full of verses in the lad's study.

They were in English, and in Latin; quotations from the classic authors

were given in the scholastic manner in the foot-notes. He can't be very

bad, wisely thought the Pall-Mall Philosopher: and he made Pen's mother

remark (not, perhaps, without a secret feeling of disappointment, for

she loved romance like other soft women), that the young gentleman

during the last fortnight came home quite hungry to dinner at night,

and also showed a very decent appetite at the breakfast-table in the

morning. "Gad, I wish I could," said the Major, thinking ruefully of his

dinner pills. "The boy begins to sleep well, depend upon that." It was

cruel, but it was true.

Having no other soul to confide in--for he could not speak to his mother

of his loves and disappointments--his uncle treated them in a scornful

and worldly tone, which, though carefully guarded and polite, yet jarred

greatly on the feelings of Mr. Pen--and Foker was much too coarse to

appreciate those refined sentimental secrets--the lad's friendship for

the Curate redoubled, or rather, he was never tired of having Smirke for

a listener on that one subject. What is a lovee without a confidant?

Pen employed Mr. Smirke, as Corydon does the elm-tree, to cut out his

mistress's name upon. He made him echo with the name of the beautiful

Amaryllis. When men have left off playing the tune, they do not care

much for the pipe: but Pen thought he had a great friendship for Smirke,

because he could sigh out his loves and griefs into his tutor's ears;

and Smirke had his own reasons for always being ready at the lad's call.

Pen's affection gushed out in a multitude of sonnets to the friend of

his heart, as he styled the Curate, which the other received with

great sympathy. He plied Smirke with Latin Sapphics and Alcaics. The

love-songs multiplied under his fluent pen; and Smirke declared and

believed that they were beautiful. On the other hand, Pen expressed a

boundless gratitude to think that Heaven should have sent him such a

friend at such a moment. He presented his tutor with his best-bound

books, and his gold guard-chain, and wanted him to take his

double-barrelled gun. He went into Chatteris and got a gold pencil-case

on credit (for he had no money, and indeed was still in debt to Smirke

for some of the Fotheringay presents), which he presented to Smirke,

with an inscription indicative of his unalterable and eternal regard

for the Curate; who of course was pleased with every mark of the boy's

attachment.

The poor Curate was naturally very much dismayed at the contemplated

departure of his pupil. When Arthur should go, Smirke's occupation and

delight would go too. What pretext could he find for a daily visit to

Fairoaks and that kind word or glance from the lady there, which was as

necessary to the Curate as the frugal dinner which Madame Fribsby served

him? Arthur gone, he would only be allowed to make visits like any other

acquaintance: little Laura could not accommodate him by learning the

Catechism more than once a week: he had curled himself like ivy round

Fairoaks: he pined at the thought that he must lose his hold of the

place. Should he speak his mind and go down on his knees to the widow?

He thought over any indications in her behaviour which flattered his

hopes. She had praised his sermons three weeks before: she had thanked

him exceedingly for his present of a melon, for a small dinner-party

which Mrs. Pendennis gave: she said she should always be grateful to

him for his kindness to Arthur, and when he declared that there were no

bounds to his love and affection for that dear boy, she had certainly

replied in a romantic manner, indicating her own strong gratitude and

regard to all her son's friends. Should he speak out?--or should he

delay? If he spoke and she refused him, it was awful to think that the

gate of Fairoaks might be shut upon him for ever--and within that door

lay all the world for Mr. Smirke.

Thus, oh friendly readers, we see how every man in the world has his own

private griefs and business, by which he is more cast down or occupied

than by the affairs or sorrows of any other person. While Mrs. Pendennis

is disquieting herself about losing her son, and that anxious hold she

has had of him, as long as he has remained in the mother's nest, whence

he is about to take flight into the great world beyond--while the

Major's great soul chafes and frets, inwardly vexed as he thinks what

great parties are going on in London, and that he might be sunning

himself in the glances of Dukes and Duchesses, but for those cursed

affairs which keep him in a wretched little country hole--while Pen

is tossing between his passion and a more agreeable sensation,

unacknowledged yet, but swaying him considerably, namely, his longing

to see the world--Mr. Smirke has a private care watching at his bedside,

and sitting behind him on his pony; and is no more satisfied than the

rest of us. How lonely we are in the world; how selfish and secret,

everybody! You and your wife have pressed the same pillow for forty

years and fancy yourselves united. Psha, does she cry out when you have

the gout, or do you lie awake when she has the toothache? Your artless

daughter, seemingly all innocence and devoted to her mamma and her

piano-lesson, is thinking of neither, but of the young Lieutenant with

whom she danced at the last ball--the honest frank boy just returned

from school is secretly speculating upon the money you will give him,

and the debts he owes the tart-man. The old grandmother crooning in the

corner and bound to another world within a few months, has some business

or cares which are quite private and her own--very likely she is

thinking of fifty years back, and that night when she made such an

impression, and danced a cotillon with the Captain before your father

proposed for her: or, what a silly little overrated creature your wife

is, and how absurdly you are infatuated about her--and, as for your

wife--O philosophic reader, answer and say,--Do you tell her all? Ah,

sir--a distinct universe walks about under your hat and under mine--all

things in nature are different to each--the woman we look at has not the

same features, the dish we eat from has not the same taste to the one

and the other--you and I are but a pair of infinite isolations, with

some fellow-islands a little more or less near to us. Let us return,

however, to the solitary Smirke.

Smirke had one confidante for his passion--that most injudicious woman,

Madame Fribsby. How she became Madame Fribsby, nobody knows: she had

left Clavering to go to a milliner's in London as Miss Fribsby--she

pretended that she had got the rank in Paris during her residence in

that city. But how could the French king, were he ever so much disposed,

give her any such title? We shall not inquire into this mystery,

however. Suffice to say, she went away from home a bouncing young lass;

she returned a rather elderly character, with a Madonna front and a

melancholy countenance--bought the late Mrs. Harbottle's business for

a song--took her elderly mother to live with her; was very good to the

poor, was constant at church, and had the best of characters. But there

was no one in all Clavering, not Mrs. Portman herself, who read so many

novels as Madame Fribsby. She had plenty of time for this amusement,

for, in truth, very few people besides the folks at the Rectory and

Fairoaks employed her; and by a perpetual perusal of such works (which

were by no means so moral or edifying in the days of which we write, as

they are at present) she had got to be so absurdly sentimental, that in

her eyes life was nothing but an immense love-match; and she never

could see two people together, but she fancied they were dying for one

another.

On the day after Mrs. Pendennis's visit to the Curate, which we have

recorded many pages back, Madame Fribsby settled in her mind that Mr.

Smirke must be in love with the widow, and did everything in her power

to encourage this passion on both sides. Mrs. Pendennis she very seldom

saw, indeed, except in public, and in her pew at church. That lady had

very little need of millinery, or made most of her own dresses and caps;

but on the rare occasions when Madame Fribsby received visits from

Mrs. Pendennis or paid her respects at Fairoaks, she never failed to

entertain the widow with praises of the Curate, pointing out what an

angelical man he was, how gentle, how studious, how lonely; and she

would wonder that no lady would take pity upon him.

Helen laughed at these sentimental remarks, and wondered that Madame

herself did not compassionate her lodger, and console him. Madame

Fribsby shook her Madonna front, "Mong cure a boco souffare," she said,

laying her hand on the part she designated as her cure. "It est more

en Espang, Madame," she said with a sigh. She was proud of her intimacy

with the French language, and spoke it with more volubility than

correctness. Mrs. Pendennis did not care to penetrate the secrets of

this wounded heart: except to her few intimates she was a reserved and

it may be a very proud woman; she looked upon her son's tutor merely

as an attendant on that young Prince, to be treated with respect as a

clergyman certainly, but with proper dignity as a dependant on the

house of Pendennis. Nor were Madame's constant allusions to the Curate

particularly agreeable to her. It required a very ingenious sentimental

turn indeed to find out that the widow had a secret regard for Mr.

Smirke, to which pernicious error however Madame Fribsby persisted in

holding.

Her lodger was very much more willing to talk on this subject with his

soft-hearted landlady. Every time after that she praised the Curate to

Mrs. Pendennis, she came away from the latter with the notion that

the widow herself had been praising him. "Etre soul au monde est bien

ouneeyoung," she would say, glancing up at a print of a French carbineer

in a green coat and brass cuirass which decorated her apartment--"Depend

upon it when Master Pendennis goes to College, his Ma will find herself

very lonely. She is quite young yet.--You wouldn't suppose her to be

five-and-twenty. Monsieur le Cury, song cure est touchy--j'ang suis

sure--Je conny cela biang--Ally Monsieur Smirke."

He softly blushed; he sighed; he hoped; he feared; he doubted; he

sometimes yielded to the delightful idea--his pleasure was to sit in

Madame Fribsby's apartment, and talk upon the subject, where, as

the greater part of the conversation was carried on in French by the

Milliner, and her old mother was deaf, that retired old individual (who

had once been a housekeeper, wife and widow of a butler in the Clavering

family) could understand scarce one syllable of their talk.

Thus it was, that when Major Pendennis announced to his nephew's tutor

that the young fellow would go to College in October, and that Mr.

Smirke's valuable services would no longer be needful to his pupil,

for which services the Major, who spoke as grandly as a lord, professed

himself exceedingly grateful, and besought Mr. Smirke to command

his interests in any way--thus it was, that the Curate felt that the

critical moment was come for him, and was racked and tortured by those

severe pangs which the occasion warranted.

Madame Fribsby had, of course, taken the strongest interest in the

progress of Mr. Pen's love affair with Miss Fotheringay. She had been

over to Chatteris, and having seen that actress perform, had pronounced

that she was old and overrated: and had talked over Master Pen's passion

in her shop many and many a time to the half-dozen old maids, and old

women in male clothes, who are to be found in little country towns, and

who formed the genteel population of Clavering. Captain Glanders, H.P.,

had pronounced that Pen was going to be a devil of a fellow, and

had begun early: Mrs. Glanders had told him to check his horrid

observations, and to respect his own wife, if he pleased. She said it

would be a lesson to Helen for her pride and absurd infatuation about

that boy. Mrs. Pybus said many people were proud of very small things,

and for her part, she didn't know why an apothecary's wife should give

herself such airs. Mrs. Wapshot called her daughters away from that

side of the street, one day when Pen, on Rebecca, was stopping at the

saddler's, to get a new lash to his whip--one and all of these people

had made visits of curiosity to Fairoaks, and had tried to condole with

the widow, or bring the subject of the Fotheringay affair on the tapis,

and had been severally checked by the haughty reserve of Mrs. Pendennis,

supported by the frigid politeness of the Major her brother.

These rebuffs, however, did not put an end to the gossip, and slander

went on increasing about the unlucky Fairoaks' family. Glanders (H.P.),

a retired cavalry officer, whose half-pay and large family compelled

him to fuddle himself with brandy-and-water instead of claret after he

quitted the Dragoons, had the occasional entree at Fairoaks, and kept

his friend the Major there informed of all the stories which were

current at Clavering. Mrs. Pybus had taken an inside place by the coach

to Chatteris, and gone to the George on purpose to get the particulars.

Mrs. Speers's man, had treated Mr. Foker's servant to drink at Baymouth

for a similar purpose. It was said that Pen had hanged himself for

despair in the orchard, and that his uncle had cut him down; that, on

the contrary, it was Miss Costigan who was jilted, and not young Arthur;

and that the affair had only been hushed up by the payment of a large

sum of money, the exact amount of which there were several people in

Clavering could testify--the sum of course varying according to the

calculation of the individual narrator of the story.

Pen shook his mane and raged like a furious lion when these scandals,

affecting Miss Costigan's honour and his own, came to his ears. Why was

not Pybus a man (she had whiskers enough), that he might call her out

and shoot her? Seeing Simcoe pass by, Pen glared at him so from his

saddle on Rebecca, and clutched his whip in a manner so menacing, that

that clergyman went home and wrote a sermon, or thought over a sermon

(for he delivered oral testimony at great length), in which he spoke

of Jezebel, theatrical entertainments (a double cut this--for Doctor

Portman, the Rector of the old church, was known to frequent such), and

of youth going to perdition, in a manner which made it clear to every

capacity that Pen was the individual meant, and on the road alluded to.

What stories more were there not against young Pendennis, whilst he

sate sulking, Achilles-like in his tent, for the loss of his ravished

Briseis?

After the affair with Hobnell, Pen was pronounced to be a murderer as

well as a profligate, and his name became a name of terror and a byword

in Clavering. But this was not all; he was not the only one of the

family about whom the village began to chatter, and his unlucky mother

was the next to become a victim to their gossip.

"It is all settled," said Mrs. Pybus to Mrs. Speers, "the boy is to go

to College, and then the widow is to console herself."

"He's been there every day, in the most open manner, my dear," continued

Mrs. Speers.

"Enough to make poor Mr. Pendennis turn in his grave," said Mrs.

Wapshot.

"She never liked him, that we know," says No. 1.

"Married him for his money. Everybody knows that: was a penniless

hanger-on of Lady Pontypool's," says No. 2.

"It's rather too open, though, to encourage a lover under pretence of

having a tutor for your son," cried No. 3.

"Hush! here comes Mrs. Portman," some one said, as the good Rector's

wife entered Madame Fribsby's shop, to inspect her monthly book of

fashions just arrived from London. And the fact is that Madame Fribsby

had been able to hold out no longer; and one day, after she and her

lodger had been talking of Pen's approaching departure, and the Curate

had gone off to give one of his last lessons to that gentleman, Madame

Fribsby had communicated to Mrs. Pybus, who happened to step in with

Mrs. Speers, her strong suspicion, her certainty almost, that there was

an attachment between a certain clerical gentleman and a certain lady,

whose naughty son was growing quite unmanageable, and that a certain

marriage would take place pretty soon.

Mrs. Portman saw it all, of course, when the matter was mentioned. What

a sly fox that Curate was! He was low-church, and she never liked him.

And to think of Mrs. Pendennis taking a fancy to him after she had

been married to such a man as Mr. Pendennis! She could hardly stay five

minutes at Madame Fribsby's, so eager was she to run to the Rectory and

give Doctor Portman the news.

When Doctor Portman heard this piece of intelligence, he was in such

a rage with his curate, that his first movement was to break with Mr.

Smirke, and to beg him to transfer his services to some other parish.

"That milksop of a creature pretend to be worthy of such a woman as Mrs.

Pendennis," broke out the Doctor: "where will impudence stop next!"

"She is much too old for Mr. Smirke," Mrs. Portman remarked: "why, poor

dear Mrs. Pendennis might be his mother almost."

"You always choose the most charitable reason, Betsy," cried the Rector.

"A matron with a son grown up--she would never think of marrying again."

"You only think men should marry again, Doctor Portman, answered his

lady, bridling up.

"You stupid old woman," said the Doctor, "when I am gone, you shall

marry whomsoever you like. I will leave orders in my will, my dear,

to that effect: and I'll bequeath a ring to my successor, and my Ghost

shall come and dance at your wedding."

"It is cruel for a clergyman to talk so," the lady answered, with a

ready whimper: but these little breezes used to pass very rapidly over

the surface of the Doctor's domestic bliss; and were followed by a great

calm and sunshine. The Doctor adopted a plan for soothing Mrs. Portman's

ruffled countenance, which has a great effect when it is tried between a

worthy couple who are sincerely fond of one another; and which, I think,

becomes 'John Anderson' at three-score, just as much as it used to do

when he was a black-haired young Jo of five-and-twenty.

"Hadn't you better speak to Mr. Smirke, John?" Mrs Portman asked.

"When Pen goes to College, cadit quaestio," replied the Rector,

"Smirke's visits at Fairoaks will cease of themselves, and there will be

no need to bother the widow. She has trouble enough on her hands, with

the affairs of that silly young scapegrace, without being pestered by

the tittle-tattle of this place. It is all an invention of that fool,

Fribsby."

"Against whom I always warned you,--you know I did, my dear John,"

interposed Mrs. Portman.

"That you did; you very often do, my love," the Doctor answered with a

laugh. "It is not for want of warning on your part, I am sure, that I

have formed my opinion of most women with whom we are acquainted. Madame

Fribsby is a fool, and fond of gossip, and so are some other folks. But

she is good to the poor: she takes care of her mother, and she comes

to church twice every Sunday. And as for Smirke, my dear----" here the

Doctor's face assumed for one moment a comical expression, which Mrs.

Portman did not perceive (for she was looking out of the drawing-room

window, and wondering what Mrs. Pybus could want cheapening fowls

again in the market, when she had bad poultry from Livermore's two days

before)--"and as for Mr. Smirke, my dear Betsy, will you promise me that

you will never breathe to any mortal what I am going to tell you as a

profound secret?"

"What is it, my dear John!--of course I won't," answered the Rector's

lady.

"Well, then--I cannot say it is a fact, mind--but if you find that

Smirke is at this moment--ay, and has been for years--engaged to a young

lady, a Miss--a Miss Thompson, if you will have the name, who lives

on Clapham Common--yes, on Clapham Common, not far from Mrs. Smirke's

house, what becomes of your story then about Smirke and Mrs. Pendennis?"

"Why did you not tell me this before?" asked the Doctor's wife.--"How

long have you known it?--How we all of us have been deceived in that

man!"

"Why should I meddle in other folks' business, my dear?" the Doctor

answered. "I know how to keep a secret--and perhaps this is only an

invention like that other absurd story; at least, Madame Portman, I

should never have told you this but for the other, which I beg you to

contradict whenever you hear it." And so saying the Doctor went away to

his study, and Mrs. Portman seeing that the day was a remarkably fine

one, thought she would take advantage of the weather and pay a few

visits.

The Doctor looking out of his study window saw the wife of his

bosom presently issue forth, attired in her best. She crossed the

Market-place, saluting the market-women right and left, and giving a

glance at the grocery and general emporium at the corner: then entering

London Street (formerly Hog Lane), she stopped for a minute at

Madame Fribsby's window, and looking at the fashions which hung up

there,--seemed hesitating whether she should enter; but she passed on

and never stopped again until she came to Mrs. Pybus's little green gate

and garden, through which she went to that lady's cottage.

There, of course, her husband lost sight of Mrs. Portman. "Oh, what a

long bow I have pulled," he said inwardly--"Goodness forgive me! and

shot my own flesh and blood. There must be no more tattling and scandal

about that house. I must stop it, and speak to Smirke. I'll ask him to

dinner this very day."

Having a sermon to compose, the Doctor sat down to that work, and was so

engaged in the composition, that he had not concluded it until near five

o'clock in the afternoon: when he stepped over to Mr. Smirke's lodgings,

to put his hospitable intentions, regarding that gentleman, into effect.

He reached Madame Fribsby's door, just as the Curate issued from it.

Mr. Smirke was magnificently dressed, and as he turned out his toes, he

showed a pair of elegant open-worked silk stockings and glossy pumps.

His white cravat was arranged in a splendid stiff tie, and his gold

shirt studs shone on his spotless linen. His hair was curled round his

fair temples. Had he borrowed Madame Fribsby's irons to give that curly

grace? His white cambric pocket-handkerchief was scented with the most

delicious eau-de-Cologne.

"O gracilis puer,"--cried the Doctor.--"Whither are you bound? I wanted

you to come home to dinner."

"I am engaged to dine at--at Fairoaks," said Mr. Smirke, blushing

faintly and whisking the scented pocket-handkerchief, and his pony

being in waiting, he mounted and rode away simpering down the street.

No accident befell him that day, and he arrived with his tie in the very

best order at Mrs. Pendennis's house.

CHAPTER XVII. Which concludes the first Part of this History

The Curate had gone on his daily errand to Fairoaks, and was upstairs in

Pens study pretending to read with his pupil, in the early part of that

very afternoon when Mrs. Portman, after transacting business with Mrs.

Pybus, had found the weather so exceedingly fine that she pursued her

walk as far as Fairoaks, in order to pay a visit to her dear friend

there. In the course of their conversation, the Rector's lady told

Mrs. Pendennis and the Major a very great secret about the Curate, Mr.

Smirke, which was no less than that he had an attachment, a very old

attachment, which he had long kept quite private.

"And on whom is it that Mr. Smirke has bestowed his heart?" asked Mrs.

Pendennis, with a superb air but rather an inward alarm.

"Why, my dear," the other lady answered, "when he first came and used

to dine at the Rectory, people said we wanted him for Myra, and we were

forced to give up asking him. Then they used to say he was smitten in

another quarter; but I always contradicted it for my part, and said that

you----"

"That I," cried Mrs. Pendennis; "people are very impertinent, I am sure.

Mr. Smirke came here as Arthur's tutor, and I am surprised that anybody

should dare to speak so----"

"'Pon my soul, it is a little too much," the Major said, laying down the

newspaper and the double eye-glass.

"I've no patience with that Mrs. Pybus," Helen continued indignantly.

"I told her there was no truth in it," Mrs. Portman said. "I always

said so, my dear: and now it comes out that my demure gentleman has been

engaged to a young lady--Miss Thompson, of Clapham Common, ever so

long: and I am delighted for my part, and on Myra's account, too, for

an unmarried curate is always objectionable about one's house: and of

course it is strictly private, but I thought I would tell you, as it

might remove unpleasantnesses. But mind: not one word, if you please,

about the story."

Mrs. Pendennis said, with perfect sincerity, that she was exceedingly

glad to hear the news: and hoped Mr. Smirke, who was a very kind and

amiable man, would have a deserving wife: and when her visitor

went away, Helen and her brother talked of the matter with great

satisfaction, the kind lady rebuking herself for her haughty behaviour

to Mr. Smirke, whom she had avoided of late, instead of being grateful

to him for his constant attention to Arthur.

"Gratitude to this kind of people," the Major said, "is very well; but

familiarity is out of the question. This gentleman gives his lessons and

receives his money like any other master. You are too humble, my good

soul. There must be distinctions in ranks, and that sort of thing. I

told you before, you were too kind to Mr. Smirke."

But Helen did not think so: and now that Arthur was going away, and she

bethought her how very polite Mr. Smirke had been; how he had gone on

messages for her; how he had brought books and copied music; how he had

taught Laura so many things, and given her so many kind presents, her

heart smote her on account of her ingratitude towards the Curate;--so

much so, that when he came down from study with Pen, and was hankering

about the hall previous to his departure, she went out and shook hands

with him with rather a blushing face, and begged him to come into her

drawing-room, where she said they now never saw him. And as there was to

be rather a good dinner that day, she invited Mr. Smirke to partake of

it; and we may be sure that he was too happy to accept such a delightful

summons.

Eased, by the above report, of all her former doubts and misgivings

regarding the Curate, Helen was exceedingly kind and gracious to Mr.

Smirke during dinner, redoubling her attentions, perhaps, because Major

Pendennis was very high and reserved with his nephew's tutor. When

Pendennis asked Smirke to drink wine, he addressed him as if he was a

Sovereign speaking to a petty retainer, in a manner so condescending,

that even Pen laughed at it, although quite ready, for his part, to be

as conceited as most young men are.

But Smirke did not care for the impertinences of the Major so long as he

had his hostess's kind behaviour; and he passed a delightful time by her

side at table, exerting all his powers of conversation to please her,

talking in a manner both clerical and worldly, about the Fancy Bazaar,

and the Great Missionary Meeting, about the last new novel, and the

Bishop's excellent sermon about the fashionable parties in London, an

account of which he read in the newspapers--in fine, he neglected

no art, by which a College divine who has both sprightly and serious

talents, a taste for the genteel, an irreproachable conduct, and a

susceptible heart, will try and make himself agreeable to the person on

whom he has fixed his affections.

Major Pendennis came yawning out of the dining-room very soon after his

sister and little Laura had left the apartment. "What an unsufferable

bore that man is, and how he did talk!" the Major said.

"He has been very good to Arthur, who is very fond of him," Mrs.

Pendennis said,--"I wonder who the Miss Thompson is whom he is going to

marry?"

"I always thought the fellow was looking in another direction," said the

Major.

"And in what?" asked Mrs. Pendennis quite innocently,--"towards Myra

Portman?"

"Towards Helen Pendennis, if you must know," answered her

brother-in-law.

"Towards me! impossible!" Helen said, who knew perfectly well that such

had been the case. "His marriage will be a very happy thing. I hope

Arthur will not take too much wine."

Now Arthur, flushed with a good deal of pride at the privilege of having

the keys of the cellar, and remembering that a very few more dinners

would probably take place which he and his dear friend Smirke could

share, had brought up a liberal supply of claret for the company's

drinking, and when the elders with little Laura left him, he and the

Curate began to pass the wine very freely.

One bottle speedily yielded up the ghost, another shed more than half

its blood, before the two topers had been much more than half an hour

together--Pen, with a hollow laugh and voice, had drunk off one bumper

to the falsehood of women, and had said sardonically, that wine at any

rate was a mistress who never deceived, and was sure to give a man a

welcome.

Smirke gently said that he knew for his part some women who were all

truth and tenderness; and casting up his eyes towards the ceiling, and

heaving a sigh as if evoking some being dear and unmentionable, he took

up his glass and drained it, and the rosy liquor began to suffuse his

face.

Pen trolled over some verses he had been making that morning, in which

he informed himself that the woman who had slighted his passion could

not be worthy to win it: that he was awaking from love's mad fever, and,

of course, under these circumstances, proceeded to leave her, and to

quit a heartless deceiver: that a name which had one day been famous in

the land, might again be heard in it: and, that though he never should

be the happy and careless boy he was but a few months since, or his

heart be what it had been ere passion had filled it and grief had

well-nigh killed it; that though to him personally death was as welcome

as life, and that he would not hesitate to part with the latter, but for

the love of one kind being whose happiness depended on his own,--yet

he hoped to show he was a man worthy of his race, and that one day the

false one should be brought to know how great was the treasure and noble

the heart which she had flung away.

Pen, we say, who was a very excitable person, rolled out these verses in

his rich sweet voice, which trembled with emotion whilst our young poet

spoke. He had a trick of blushing when in this excited state, and his

large and honest grey eyes also exhibited proofs of a sensibility so

genuine, hearty, and manly, that Miss Costigan, if she had a heart, must

needs have softened towards him; and very likely she was, as he said,

altogether unworthy of the affection which he lavished upon her.

The sentimental Smirke was caught by the emotion which agitated

his young friend. He grasped Pen's hand over the dessert dishes and

wine-glasses. He said the verses were beautiful: that Pen was a poet, a

great poet, and likely by Heaven's permission to run a great career in

the world. "Go on and prosper, dear Arthur," he cried; "the wounds under

which at present you suffer are only temporary, and the very grief you

endure will cleanse and strengthen your heart. I have always prophesied

the greatest and brightest things of you, as soon as you have corrected

some failings and weaknesses of character, which at present belong to

you. But you will get over these, my boy; you will get over these; and

when you are famous and celebrated, as I know you will be, will you

remember your old tutor and the happy early days of your youth?"

Pen swore he would: with another shake of the hand across the glasses

and apricots. "I shall never forget how kind you have been to me,

Smirke," he said. "I don't know what I should have done without you. You

are my best friend."

"Am I, really, Arthur?" said Smirke, looking through his spectacles;

and his heart began to beat so that he thought Pen must almost hear it

throbbing.

"My best friend, my friend for ever," Pen said. "God bless you, old

boy," and he drank up the last glass of the second bottle of the famous

wine which his father had laid in, which his uncle had bought, which

Lord Levant had imported, and which now, like a slave indifferent, was

ministering pleasure to its present owner, and giving its young master

delectation.

"We'll have another bottle, old boy," Pen said, "by Jove we will.

Hurray!--claret goes for nothing. My uncle was telling me that he

saw Sheridan drink five bottles at Brookes's, besides a bottle of

Maraschino. This is some of the finest wine in England, he says. So

it is, by Jove. There's nothing like it. Nunc vino pellite curas--cras

ingens iterabimus aeq,--fill your glass, Old Smirke, a hogshead of it

won't do you any harm." And Mr. Pen began to sing the drinking song out

of Der Freischuetz. The dining-room windows were open, and his mother

was softly pacing on the lawn outside, while little Laura was looking at

the sunset. The sweet fresh notes of the boy's voice came to the widow.

It cheered her kind heart to hear him sing.

"You--you are taking too much wine, Arthur," Mr. Smirke said

softly--"you are exciting yourself."

"No," said Pen, "women give headaches, but this don't. Fill your glass,

old fellow, and let's drink--I say, Smirke, my boy--let's drink to

her--your her, I mean, not mine, for whom I swear I'll care no more--no,

not a penny--no, not a fig--no, not a glass of wine. Tell us about the

lady, Smirke; I've often seen you sighing about her."

"Oh!" said Smirke--and his beautiful cambric shirt front and glistening

studs heaved with the emotion which agitated his gentle and suffering

bosom.

"Oh--what a sigh!" Pen cried, growing very hilarious; "fill, my boy, and

drink the toast, you can't refuse a toast, no gentleman refuses a

toast. Here's her health, and good luck to you, and may she soon be Mrs.

Smirke."

"Do you say so?" Smirke said, all of a tremble. "Do you really say so,

Arthur?"

"Say so; of course, I say so. Down with it. Here's Mrs. Smirke's good

health: Hip, hip, hurray!"

Smirke convulsively gulped down his glass of wine, and Pen waved his

over his head, cheering so as to make his mother and Laura wonder on the

lawn, and his uncle, who was dozing over the paper in the drawing-room,

start, and say to himself, "That boy's drinking too much." Smirke put

down the glass.

"I accept the omen," gasped out the blushing Curate. "Oh my dear Arthur,

you--you know her----"

"What--Myra Portman? I wish you joy; she's got a dev'lish large waist;

but I wish you joy, old fellow."

"Oh, Arthur!" groaned the Curate again, and nodded his head, speechless.

"Beg your pardon--sorry I offended you--but she has got a large waist,

you know--devilish large waist," Pen continued--the third bottle

evidently beginning to act upon the young gentleman.

"It's not Miss Portman," the other said, in a voice of agony.

"Is it anybody at Chatteris or at Clapham? Somebody here? No--it ain't

old Pybus? it can't be Miss Rolt at the Factory--she's only fourteen."

"It's somebody rather older than I am, Pen," the Curate cried, looking

up at his friend, and then guiltily casting his eyes down into his

plate.

Pen burst out laughing. "It's Madame Fribsby; by Jove, it's Madame

Fribsby. Madame Frib. by the immortal Gods!"

The Curate could contain no more. "O Pen," he cried, "how can you

suppose that any of those--of those more than ordinary beings you have

named could have an influence upon this heart, when I have been daily in

the habit of contemplating perfection! I may be insane, I may be madly

ambitious, I may be presumptuous--but for two years my heart has been

filled by one image, and has known no other idol. Haven't I loved you as

a son, Arthur?--say, hasn't Charles Smirke loved you as a son?"

"Yes, old boy, you've been very good to me," Pen said, whose liking,

however, for his tutor was not by any means of the filial kind.

"My means," rushed on Smirke, "are at present limited, I own, and my

mother is not so liberal as might be desired; but what she has will be

mine at her death. Were she to hear of my marrying a lady of rank

and good fortune, my mother would be liberal, I am sure she would be

liberal. Whatever I have or subsequently inherit--and it's five hundred

a year at the very least--would be settled upon her and--and--and you at

my death--that is."

"What the deuce do you mean?--and what have I to do with your money?"

cried out Pen, in a puzzle.

"Arthur, Arthur!" exclaimed the other wildly; "you say I am your dearest

friend--Let me be more. Oh, can't you see that the angelic being I

love--the purest, the best of women--is no other than your dear, dear

angel of a--mother."

"My mother!" cried out Arthur, jumping up and sober in a minute. "Pooh!

damn it, Smirke, you must be mad--she's seven or eight years older than

you are."

"Did you find that any objection?" cried Smirke piteously, and alluding,

of course, to the elderly subject of Pen's own passion.

The lad felt the hint, and blushed quite red. "The cases are not

similar, Smirke," he said, "and the allusion might have been spared. A

man may forget his own rank and elevate any woman to it: but allow me to

say our positions are very different."

"How do you mean, dear Arthur?" the Curate interposed sadly, cowering as

he felt that his sentence was about to be read.

"Mean?" said Arthur. "I mean what I say. My tutor, I say my tutor, has

no right to ask a lady of my mother's rank of life to marry him. It's

a breach of confidence. I say it's a liberty you take, Smirke--it's a

liberty. Mean, indeed!"

"O Arthur!" the Curate began to cry with clasped hands, and a scared

face, but Arthur gave another stamp with his foot and began to pull at

the bell. "Don't let's have any more of this. We'll have some coffee, if

you please," he said with a majestic air; and the old butler entering at

the summons, Arthur bade him to serve that refreshment.

John said he had just carried coffee into the drawing-room, where his

uncle was asking for Master Arthur, and the old man gave a glance

of wonder at the three empty claret-bottles. Smirke said he thought

he'd--he'd rather not go into the drawing-room, on which Arthur

haughtily said, "As you please," and called for Mr. Smirke's horse to

be brought round. The poor fellow said he knew the way to the stable and

would get his pony himself, and he went into the hall and sadly put on

his coat and hat.

Pen followed him out uncovered. Helen was still walking up and down the

soft lawn as the sun was setting, and the Curate took off his hat and

bowed by way of farewell, and passed on to the door leading to the

stable court, by which the pair disappeared. Smirke knew the way to the

stable, as he said, well enough. He fumbled at the girths of the saddle,

which Pen fastened for him, and put on the bridle and led the pony into

the yard. The boy was touched by the grief which appeared in the other's

face as he mounted. Pen held out his hand, and Smirke wrung it silently.

"I say, Smirke," he said in an agitated voice, "forgive me if I have

said anything harsh--for you have always been very, very kind to me. But

it can't be, old fellow, it can't be. Be a man. God bless you."

Smirke nodded his head silently, and rode out of the lodge-gate: and Pen

looked after him for a couple of minutes, until he disappeared down the

road, and the clatter of the pony's hoofs died away. Helen was still

lingering on the lawn waiting until the boy came back--she put his

hair off his forehead and kissed it fondly. She was afraid he had been

drinking too much wine. Why had Mr. Smirke gone away without any tea?

He looked at her with a kind humour beaming in his eyes "Smirke is

unwell," he said with a laugh. For a long while Hele had not seen the

boy looking so cheerful. He put his arm round her waist, and walked her

up and down the walk in front of the house. Laura began to drub on the

drawing-room window and nod and laugh from it. "Come along, you two

people," cried on Major Pendennis, "your coffee is getting quite cold."

When Laura was gone to bed, Pen, who was big with his secret, burst

out with it, and described the dismal but ludicrous scene which had

occurred. Helen heard of it with many blushes, which became her pale

face very well, and a perplexity which Arthur roguishly enjoyed.

"Confound the fellow's impudence," Major Pendennis said as he took his

candle, "where will the assurance of these people stop?" Pen and

his mother had a long talk that night, full of love, confidence, and

laughter, and the boy somehow slept more soundly and woke up more easily

than he had done for many months before.

Before the great Mr. Dolphin quitted Chatteris, he not only made an

advantageous engagement with Miss Fotheringay, but he liberally left

with her a sum of money to pay off any debts which the little family

might have contracted during their stay in the place, and which, mainly

through the lady's own economy and management, were not considerable.

The small account with the spirit merchant, which Major Pendennis had

settled, was the chief of Captain Costigan's debts, and though the

Captain at one time talked about repaying every farthing of the money,

it never appears that he executed his menace, nor did the laws of honour

in the least call upon him to accomplish that threat.

When Miss Costigan had seen all the outstanding bills paid to the

uttermost shilling, she handed over the balance to her father, who broke

out into hospitalities to all his friends, gave the little Creeds more

apples and gingerbread than he had ever bestowed upon them, so that the

widow Creed ever after held the memory of her lodger in veneration, and

the young ones wept bitterly when he went away; and in a word managed

the money so cleverly that it was entirely expended before many days,

and that he was compelled to draw upon Mr. Dolphin for a sum to pay for

travelling expenses when the time of their departure arrived.

There was held at an inn in that county town a weekly meeting of a

festive, almost a riotous character, of a society of gentlemen who

called themselves the Buccaneers. Some of the choice spirits of

Chatteris belonged to this cheerful club. Graves, the apothecary (than

whom a better fellow never put a pipe in his mouth and smoked it),

Smart, the talented and humorous portrait-painter of High Street,

Croker, an excellent auctioneer, and the uncompromising Hicks, the able

Editor for twenty-three years of the County Chronicle and Chatteris

Champion, were amongst the crew of the Buccaneers, whom also Bingley,

the manager, liked to join of a Saturday evening, whenever he received

permission from his lady.

Costigan had been also an occasional Buccaneer. But a want of

punctuality of payments had of late somewhat excluded him from the

Society, where he was subject to disagreeable remarks from the landlord,

who said that a Buccaneer who didn't pay his shot was utterly unworthy

to be a Marine Bandit. But when it became known to the 'Ears, as the

Clubbists called themselves familiarly, that Miss Fotheringay had made

a splendid engagement, a great revolution of feeling took place in the

Club regarding Captain Costigan. Solly, mine host of the Grapes (and I

need not say, as worthy a fellow as ever stood behind a bar), told

the gents in the Buccaneers' room one night how noble the Captain had

behaved; having been round and paid off all his ticks in Chatteris,

including his score of three pound fourteen here--and pronounced that

Cos was a good feller, a gentleman at bottom, and he, Solly, had always

said so, and finally worked upon the feelings of the Buccaneers to give

the Captain a dinner.

The banquet took place on the last night of Costigan's stay at

Chatteris, and was served in Solly's accustomed manner. As good a plain

dinner of old English fare as ever smoked on a table was prepared by

Mrs. Solly; and about eighteen gentlemen sate down to the festive board.

Mr. Jubber (the eminent draper of High Street) was in the Chair,

having the distinguished guest of the Club on his right. The able and

consistent Hicks officiated as croupier on the occasion; most of the

gentlemen of the Club were present, and H. Foker, Esq., and Spavin,

Esq., friends of Captain Costigan, were also participators in the

entertainment. The cloth having been drawn, the Chairman said,

"Costigan, there is wine, if you like," but the Captain preferring

punch, that liquor was voted by acclamation: and 'Non Nobis' having been

sung in admirable style by Messrs. Bingley, Hicks, and Bullby (of the

Cathedral choir, than whom a more jovial spirit "ne'er tossed off a

bumper or emptied a bowl"), the Chairman gave the health of the 'King!'

which was drunk with the loyalty of Chatteris men, and then without

further circumlocution proposed their friend 'Captain Costigan.'

After the enthusiastic cheering which rang through old Chatteris had

subsided, Captain Costigan rose in reply, and made a speech of twenty

minutes, in which he was repeatedly overcome by his emotions.

The gallant Captain said he must be pardoned for incoherence, if his

heart was too full to speak. He was quitting a city celebrated for

its antiquitee, its hospitalitee, the beautee of its women, the manly

fidelitee, generositee, and jovialitee of its men. (Cheers.) He was

going from that ancient and venerable city, of which while Mimoree

held her sayt, he should never think without the fondest emotion, to a

methrawpolis where the talents of his daughther were about to have full

play, and where he would watch over her like a guardian angel. He should

never forget that it was at Chatteris she had acquired the skill which

she was about to exercise in another sphere, and in her name and his own

Jack Costigan thanked and blessed them. The gallant officer's speech was

received with tremendous cheers.

Mr. Hicks, Croupier, in a brilliant and energetic manner, proposed Miss

Fotheringay's health.

Captain Costigan returned thanks in a speech full of feeling and

eloquence.

Mr. Jubber proposed the Drama and the Chatteris Theatre, and Mr. Bingley

was about to rise but was prevented by Captain Costigan, who, as long

connected with the Chatteris Theatre and on behalf of his daughter,

thanked the company. He informed them that he had been in garrison, at

Gibraltar, and at Malta, and had been at the taking of Flushing. The

Duke of York was a patron of the Drama; he had the honour of dining with

His Royal Highness and the Duke of Kent many times; and the former had

justly been named the friend of the soldier. (Cheers.)

The Army was then proposed, and Captain Costigan returned thanks. In the

course of the night he sang his well-known songs, 'The Deserter,'

'The Shan Van Voght,' 'The Little Pig under the Bed,' and 'The Vale of

Avoca.' The evening was a great triumph for him--it ended. All triumphs

and all evenings end. And the next day, Miss Costigan having taken leave

of all her friends, having been reconciled to Miss Rouncy, to whom

she left a necklace and a white satin gown--the next day, he and Miss

Costigan had places in the Competitor coach rolling by the gates of

Fairoaks Lodge--and Pendennis never saw them.

Tom Smith, the coachman, pointed out Fairoaks to Mr. Costigan, who sate

on the box smelling of rum-and-water--and the Captain said it was a

poor place--and added, "Ye should see Castle Costigan, County Mayo, me

boy,"--which Tom said he should like very much to see.

They were gone and Pen had never seen them! He only knew of their

departure by its announcement in the county paper the next day: and

straight galloped over to Chatteris to hear the truth of this news. They

were gone indeed. A card of 'Lodgings to let' was placed in the dear

little familiar window. He rushed up into the room and viewed it over.

He sate ever so long in the old window-seat looking into the Dean's

garden: whence he and Emily had so often looked out together. He walked,

with a sort of terror, into her little empty bedroom. It was swept out

and prepared for new-comers. The glass which had reflected her fair face

was shining ready for her successor. The curtains lay square folded on

the little bed: he flung himself down and buried his head on the vacant

pillow.

Laura had netted a purse into which his mother had put some sovereigns,

and Pen had found it on his dressing-table that very morning. He gave

one to the little servant who had been used to wait upon the Costigans,

and another to the children, because they said they were very fond of

her. It was but a few months back, yet what years ago it seemed since

he had first entered that room! He felt that it was all done. The

very missing her at the coach had something fatal in it. Blank, weary,

utterly wretched and lonely the poor lad felt.

His mother saw She was gone by his look when he came home. He was eager

to fly too now, as were other folks round about Chatteris. Poor Smirke

wanted to go away from the sight of the syren widow. Foker began to

think he had had enough of Baymouth, and that a few supper-parties at

Saint Boniface would not be unpleasant. And Major Pendennis longed to be

off, and have a little pheasant-shooting at Stillbrook, and get rid

of all annoyances and tracasseries of the village. The widow and Laura

nervously set about the preparation for Pen's kit, and filled trunks

with his books and linen. Helen wrote cards with the name of Arthur

Pendennis, Esq., which were duly nailed on the boxes; and at which both

she and Laura looked with tearful wistful eyes. It was not until long,

long after he was gone, that Pen remembered how constant and tender the

affection of these women had been, and how selfish his own conduct was.

A night soon comes, when the mail, with echoing horn and blazing lamps,

stops at the lodge-gate of Fairoaks, and Pen's trunks and his uncle's

are placed on the roof of the carriage, into which the pair presently

afterwards enter. Helen and Laura are standing by the evergreens of the

shrubbery, their figures lighted up by the coach lamps; the guard cries

all right: in another instant the carriage whirls onward; the lights

disappear, and Helen's heart and prayers go with them. Her sainted

benedictions follow the departing boy. He has left the home-nest in

which he has been chafing, and whither, after his very first flight, he

returned bleeding and wounded; he is eager to go forth again, and try

his restless wings.

How lonely the house looks without him! The corded trunks and book-boxes

are there in his empty study. Laura asks leave to come and sleep in

Helen's room: and when she has cried herself to sleep there, the mother

goes softly into Pen's vacant chamber, and kneels down by the bed on

which the moon is shining, and there prays for her boy, as mothers only

know how to plead. He knows that her pure blessings are following him,

as he is carried miles away.

CHAPTER XVIII. Alma Mater

Every man, however brief or inglorious may have been his academical

career, must remember with kindness and tenderness the old university

comrades and days. The young man's life is just beginning: the boy's

leading-strings are cut, and he has all the novel delights and dignities

of freedom. He has no idea of cares yet, or of bad health, or of

roguery, or poverty, or to-morrow's disappointment. The play has not

been acted so often as to make him tired. Though the after drink, as

we mechanically go on repeating it, is stale and bitter, how pure and

brilliant was that first sparkling draught of pleasure!--How the boy

rushes at the cup, and with what a wild eagerness he drains it! But

old epicures who are cut off from the delights of the table, and are

restricted to a poached egg and a glass of water, like to see people

with good appetites; and, as the next best thing to being amused at a

pantomime one's-self is to see one's children enjoy it, I hope there may

be no degree of age or experience to which mortal may attain, when he

shall become such a glum philosopher as not to be pleased by the sight

of happy youth. Coming back a few weeks since from a brief visit to the

old University of Oxbridge, where my friend Mr. Arthur Pendennis passed

some period of his life, I made the journey in the railroad by the side

of a young fellow at present a student of Saint Boniface. He had got an

exeat somehow, and was bent on a day's lark in London: he never stopped

rattling and talking from the commencement of the journey until its

close (which was a great deal too soon for me, for I never was tired of

listening to the honest young fellow's jokes and cheery laughter); and

when we arrived at the terminus nothing would satisfy him but a hansom

cab, so that he might get into town the quicker, and plunge into the

pleasures awaiting him there. Away the young lad went whirling, with

joy lighting up his honest face; and as for the reader's humble servant,

having but a small carpet-bag, I got up on the outside of the omnibus,

and sate there very contentedly between a Jew-pedlar smoking bad cigars,

and a gentleman's servant taking care of a poodle-dog, until we got

our fated complement of passengers and boxes, when the coachman drove

leisurely away. We weren't in a hurry to get to town. Neither one of us

was particularly eager about rushing into that near smoking Babylon, or

thought of dining at the Club that night, or dancing at the Casino. Yet

a few years more, and my young friend of the railroad will be not a whit

more eager.

There were no railroads made when Arthur Pendennis went to the famous

University of Oxbridge; but he drove thither in a well-appointed coach,

filled inside and out with dons, gownsmen, young freshmen about to

enter, and their guardians, who were conducting them to the university.

A fat old gentleman, in grey stockings, from the City, who sate by Major

Pendennis inside the coach, having his pale-faced son opposite, was

frightened beyond measure when he heard that the coach had been driven

for a couple of stages by young Mr. Foker, of Saint Boniface College,

who was the friend of all men, including coachmen, and could drive

as well as Tom Hicks himself. Pen sate on the roof, examining coach,

passengers, and country with great delight and curiosity. His heart

jumped with pleasure as the famous university came in view, and the

magnificent prospect of venerable towers and pinnacles, tall elms and

shining river, spread before him.

Pen had passed a few days with his uncle at the Major's lodgings, in

Bury Street, before they set out for Oxbridge. Major Pendennis thought

that the lad's wardrobe wanted renewal; and Arthur was by no means

averse to any plan which was to bring him new coats and waistcoats.

There was no end to the sacrifices which the self-denying uncle made in

the youth's behalf. London was awfully lonely. The Pall Mall pavement

was deserted; the very red jackets had gone out of town. There was

scarce a face to be seen in the bow-windows of the clubs. The Major

conducted his nephew into one or two of those desert mansions, and wrote

down the lad's name on the candidate-list of one of them; and Arthur's

pleasure at this compliment on his guardian's part was excessive. He

read in the parchment volume his name and titles, as 'Arthur Pendennis,

Esquire, of Fairoaks Lodge, ----shire and Saint Boniface College,

Oxbridge; proposed by Major Pendennis, and seconded by Viscount

Colchicum,' with a thrill of intense gratification. "You will come in

for ballot in about three years, by which time you will have taken your

degree," the guardian said. Pen longed for the three years to be over,

and surveyed the stucco-halls, and vast libraries, and drawing-rooms

as already his own property. The Major laughed slyly to see the pompous

airs of the simple young fellow as he strutted out of the building. He

and Foker drove down in the latter's cab one day to the Grey Friars,

and renewed acquaintance with some of their old comrades there. The boys

came crowding up to the cab as it stood by the Grey Friars gates, where

they were entering, and admired the chestnut horse, and the tights and

livery and gravity of Stoopid, the tiger. The bell for afternoon-school

rang as they were swaggering about the play-ground talking to their old

cronies. The awful Doctor passed into school with his grammar in

his hand. Foker slunk away uneasily at his presence, but Pen went up

blushing, and shook the dignitary by the hand. He laughed as he thought

that well-remembered Latin Grammar had boxed his ears many a time. He

was generous, good-natured, and, in a word, perfectly conceited and

satisfied with himself.

Then they drove to the parental brew-house. Foker's Entire is composed

in an enormous pile of buildings, not far from the Grey Friars, and the

name of that well-known firm is gilded upon innumerable public-house

signs, tenanted by its vassals in the neighbourhood; and the venerable

junior partner and manager did honour to the young lord of the vats

and his friend, and served them with silver flagons of brown-stout, so

strong, that you would have thought, not only the young men, but the

very horse Mr. Harry Foker drove, was affected by the potency of the

drink, for he rushed home to the west-end of the town at a rapid pace,

which endangered the pie-stalls and the women on the crossings, and

brought the cab-steps into collision with the posts at the street

corners, and caused Stoopid to swing fearfully on his board behind.

The Major was quite pleased when Pen was with his young acquaintance;

listened to Mr. Foker's artless stories with the greatest interest; gave

the two boys a fine dinner at a Covent Garden Coffee-house, whence they

proceeded to the play; but was above all happy when Mr. and Lady Agnes

Foker, who happened to be in London, requested the pleasure of Major

Pendennis and Mr. Arthur Pendennis's company at dinner in Grosvenor

Street. "Having obtained the entree into Lady Agnes Foker's house," he

said to Pen with an affectionate solemnity which befitted the importance

of the occasion, "it behoves you, my dear boy, to keep it. You must mind

and never neglect to call in Grosvenor Street when you come to London.

I recommend you to read up carefully, in Debrett, the alliances and

genealogy of the Earls of Rosherville, and if you can, to make some

trifling allusions to the family, something historical, neat, and

complimentary, and that sort of thing, which you, who have a poetic

fancy, can do pretty well. Mr. Foker himself is a worthy man, though not

of high extraction or indeed much education. He always makes a point of

having some of the family porter served round after dinner, which you

will on no account refuse, and which I shall drink myself, though all

beer disagrees with me confoundedly." And the heroic martyr did actually

sacrifice himself, as he said he would, on the day when the dinner took

place, and old Mr. Foker, at the head of his table, made his usual joke

about Foker's Entire. We should all of us, I am sure, have liked to see

the Major's grin, when the worthy old gentleman made his time-honoured

joke.

Lady Agnes, who, wrapped up in Harry, was the fondest of mothers, and

one of the most good-natured though not the wisest of women, received

her son's friend with great cordiality: and astonished Pen by accounts

of the severe course of studies which her darling boy was pursuing, and

which she feared might injure his dear health. Foker the elder burst

into a horse-laugh at some of these speeches, and the heir of the house

winked his eye very knowingly at his friend. And Lady Agnes then going

through her son's history from the earliest time, and recounting his

miraculous sufferings in the measles and hooping-cough, his escape

from drowning, the shocking tyrannies practised upon him at that horrid

school, whither Mr. Foker would send him because he had been brought up

there himself, and she never would forgive that disagreeable Doctor, no

never--Lady Agnes, we say, having prattled away for an hour incessantly

about her son, voted the two Messieurs Pendennis most agreeable men; and

when pheasants came with the second course, which the Major praised

as the very finest birds he ever saw, her ladyship said they came from

Logwood (as the Major knew perfectly well), and hoped that they would

both pay her a visit there--at Christmas, or when dear Harry was at home

for the vacations.

"God bless you, my dear boy," Pendennis said to Arthur, as they were

lighting their candles in Bury Street afterwards to go to bed. "You

made that little allusion to Agincourt, where one of the Roshervilles

distinguished himself, very neatly and well, although Lady Agnes did not

quite understand it: but it was exceedingly well for a beginner--though

you oughtn't to blush so, by the way--and I beseech you, my dear Arthur,

to remember through life, that with an entree--with a good entree,

mind--it is just as easy for you to have good society as bad, and that

it costs a man, when properly introduced, no more trouble or soins to

keep a good footing in the best houses in London than to dine with a

lawyer in Bedford Square. Mind this when you are at Oxbridge pursuing

your studies, and for Heaven's sake be very particular in the

acquaintances which you make. The premier pas in life is the most

important of all--did you write to your mother to-day?--No?--well,

do, before you go, and call and ask Mr. Foker for a frank--They like

it--Good night. God bless you."

Pen wrote a droll account of his doings in London, and the play, and the

visit to the old Friars, and the brewery, and the party at Mr. Foker's,

to his dearest mother, who was saying her prayers at home in the lonely

house at Fairoaks, her heart full of love and tenderness unutterable for

the boy: and she and Laura read that letter and those which followed,

many, many times, and brooded over them as women do. It was the first

step in life that Pen was making--Ah! what a dangerous journey it

is, and how the bravest may stumble and the strongest fail. Brother

wayfarer! may you have a kind arm to support yours on the path, and a

friendly hand to succour those who fall beside you. May truth guide,

mercy forgive at the end, and love accompany always. Without that

lamp how blind the traveller would be, and how black and cheerless the

journey!

So the coach drove up to that ancient and comfortable inn the Trencher,

which stands in Main Street, Oxbridge, and Pen with delight and

eagerness remarked, for the first time, gownsmen going about, chapel

bells clinking (bells in Oxbridge are ringing from morning-tide till

even-song)--towers and pinnacles rising calm and stately over the gables

and antique house-roofs of the homely busy city. Previous communications

had taken place between Dr. Portman on Pen's part, and Mr. Buck,

Tutor of Boniface, on whose side Pen was entered; and as soon as Major

Pendennis had arranged his personal appearance, so that it should make

a satisfactory impression upon Pen's tutor, the pair walked down Main

Street, and passed the great gate and belfry-tower of Saint George's

College, and so came, as they were directed, to Saint Boniface: where

again Pen's heart began to beat as they entered at the wicket of the

venerable ivy-mantled gate of the College. It is surmounted with an

ancient dome almost covered with creepers, and adorned with the effigy

of the Saint from whom the House takes its name, and many coats-of-arms

of its royal and noble benefactors.

The porter pointed out a queer old tower at the corner of the

quadrangle, by which Mr. Buck's rooms were approached, and the two

gentlemen walked acrosse the square, the main features of which were at

once and for ever stamped in Pen's mind--the pretty fountain playing

in the centre of the fair grass plats; the tall chapel windows and

buttresses rising to the right; the hall with its tapering lantern and

oriel window; the lodge, from the doors of which the Master issued with

rustling silks; the lines of the surrounding rooms pleasantly broken by

carved chimneys, grey turrets, and quaint gables--all these Mr. Pen's

eyes drank in with an eagerness which belongs to first impressions; and

Major Pendennis surveyed with that calmness which belongs to a gentleman

who does not care for the picturesque, and whose eyes have been somewhat

dimmed by the constant glare of the pavement of Pall Mall.

Saint George's is the great College of the University of Oxbridge, with

its four vast quadrangles, and its beautiful hall and gardens, and the

Georgians, as the men are called wear gowns of a peculiar cut, and give

themselves no small airs of superiority over all other young men.

Little Saint Boniface is but a petty hermitage in comparison of the huge

consecrated pile alongside of which it lies. But considering its size

it has always kept an excellent name in the university. Its ton is very

good: the best families of certain counties have time out of mind sent

up their young men to Saint Boniface: the college livings are remarkably

good: the fellowships easy; the Boniface men had had more than their

fair share of university honours; their boat was third upon the river;

their chapel-choir is not inferior to Saint George's itself; and the

Boniface ale the best in Oxbridge. In the comfortable old wainscoted

College-Hall, and round about Roubilliac's statue of Saint Boniface (who

stands in an attitude of seraphic benediction over the uncommonly good

cheer of the fellows' table) there are portraits of many most eminent

Bonifacians. There is the learned Doctor Griddle, who suffered in Henry

VIII.'s time, and Archbishop Bush who roasted him--there is Lord

Chief Justice Hicks--the Duke of St. David's, K.G., Chancellor of the

University and Member of this College--Sprott the Poet, of whose fame

the college is justly proud--Doctor Blogg, the late master, and friend

of Doctor Johnson, who visited him at Saint Boniface--and other lawyers,

scholars, and divines, whose portraitures look from the walls, or whose

coats-of-arms shine in emerald and ruby, gold and azure, in the tall

windows of the refectory. The venerable cook of the college is one of

the best artists in Oxbridge (his son took the highest honours in the

other University of Camford), and the wine in the fellows' room has long

been famed for its excellence and abundance.

Into this certainly not the least snugly sheltered arbour amongst the

groves of Academe, Pen now found his way, leaning on his uncle's arm,

and they speedily reached Mr. Buck's rooms, and were conducted into the

apartment of that courteous gentleman.

He had received previous information from Dr. Portman regarding Pen,

with respect to whose family, fortune, and personal merits the honest

Doctor had spoken with no small enthusiasm. Indeed Portman had described

Arthur to the tutor as "a young gentleman of some fortune and landed

estate, of one of the most ancient families in the kingdom, and

possessing such a character and genius as were sure, under the proper

guidance, to make him a credit to the college and the university." Under

such recommendations the tutor was, of course, most cordial to the young

freshman and his guardian, invited the latter to dine in hall, where he

would have the satisfaction of seeing his nephew wear his gown and eat

his dinner for the first time, and requested the pair to take wine at

his rooms after hall, and in consequence of the highly favourable report

he had received of Mr. Arthur Pendennis, said, he should be happy

to give him the best set of rooms to be had in college--a

gentleman-pensioner's set, indeed, which were just luckily vacant. So

they parted until dinner-time, which was very near at hand, and Major

Pendennis pronounced Mr. Buck to be uncommonly civil indeed. Indeed when

a College Magnate takes the trouble to be polite, there is no man more

splendidly courteous. Immersed in their books and excluded from the

world by the gravity of their occupations, these reverend men assume a

solemn magnificence of compliment in which they rustle and swell as in

their grand robes of state. Those silks and brocades are not put on for

all comers or every day.

When the two gentlemen had taken leave of the tutor in his study, and

had returned to Mr. Buck's ante-room, or lecture-room, a very handsome

apartment, turkey-carpeted, and hung with excellent prints and richly

framed pictures, they found the tutor's servant already in waiting

there, accompanied by a man with a bag full of caps and a number of

gowns, from which Pen might select a cap and gown for himself, and the

servant, no doubt, would get a commission proportionable to the service

done by him. Mr. Pen was all in a tremor of pleasure as the bustling

tailor tried on a gown and pronounced that it was an excellent fit; and

then he put the pretty college cap on, in rather a dandified manner and

somewhat on one side, as he had seen Fiddicombe, the youngest master at

Grey Friars, wear it. And he inspected the entire costume with a great

deal of satisfaction in one of the great gilt mirrors which ornamented

Mr. Buck's lecture-room: for some of these college divines are no more

above looking--glasses than a lady is, and look to the set of their

gowns and caps quite as anxiously as folks do of the lovelier sex. The

Major smiled as he saw the boy dandifying himself in the glass: the old

gentleman was not displeased with the appearance of the comely lad.

Then Davis, the skip or attendant, led the way, keys in hand, across the

quadrangle, the Major and Pen following him, the latter blushing, and

pleased with his new academical habiliments, across the quadrangle to

the rooms which were destined for the freshman; and which were vacated

by the retreat of the gentleman-pensioner, Mr. Spicer. The rooms were

very comfortable, with large cross beams, high wainscots, and small

windows in deep embrasures. Mr. Spicer's furniture was there, and to be

sold at a valuation, and Major Pendennis agreed on his nephew's behalf

to take the available part of it, laughingly however declining (as,

indeed, Pen did for his own part) six sporting prints, and four groups

of opera-dancers with gauze draperies, which formed the late occupant's

pictorial collection.

Then they went to hall, where Pen sate down and ate his commons with his

brother freshmen, and the Major took his place at the high-table along

with the college dignitaries and other fathers or guardians of youth,

who had come up with their sons to Oxbridge; and after hall they went to

Mr. Buck's to take wine; and after wine to chapel, where the Major sate

with great gravity in the upper place, having a fine view of the

Master in his carved throne or stall under the organ-loft, where that

gentleman, the learned Doctor Donne, sate magnificent, with his great

prayer-book before him, an image of statuesque piety and rigid devotion.

All the young freshmen behaved with gravity and decorum, but Pen was

shocked to see that atrocious little Foker, who came in very late,

and half a dozen of his comrades in the gentlemen-pensioners' seats,

giggling and talking as if they had been in so many stalls at the Opera.

But these circumstances, it must be remembered, took place some years

back, when William the Fourth was king. Young men are much better

behaved now, and besides, Saint Boniface was rather a fast college.

Pen could hardly sleep at night in his bedroom at the Trencher: so

anxious was he to begin his college life, and to get into his own

apartments. What did he think about, as he lay tossing and awake? Was it

about his mother at home; the pious soul whose life was bound up in

his? Yes, let us hope he thought of her a little. Was it about Miss

Fotheringay, and his eternal passion, which had kept him awake so many

nights, and created such wretchedness and such longing? He had a trick

of blushing, and if you had been in the room, and the candle had not

been out, you might have seen the youth's countenance redden more than

once, as he broke out into passionate incoherent exclamations regarding

that luckless event of his life. His uncle's lessons had not been thrown

away upon him; the mist of passion had passed from his eyes now, and he

saw her as she was. To think that he, Pendennis, had been enslaved by

such a woman, and then jilted by her! that he should have stooped so

low, to be trampled on the mire! that there was a time in his life, and

that but a few months back, when he was willing to take Costigan for his

father-in-law!

"Poor old Smirke!" Pen presently laughed out--"well, I'll write and try

and console the poor old boy. He won't die of his passion, ha, ha!" The

Major, had he been awake, might have heard a score of such ejaculations

uttered by Pen as he lay awake and restless through the first night of

his residence at Oxbridge.

It would, perhaps, have been better for a youth, the battle of whose

life was going to begin on the morrow, to have passed the eve in a

fferent sort of vigil: but the world had got hold of Pen in the shape of

his selfish old Mentor: and those who have any interest in his character

must have perceived ere now, that this lad was very weak as well as

very impetuous, very vain as well as very frank, and if of a generous

disposition, not a little selfish in the midst of his profuseness, and

also rather fickle, as all eager pursuers of self-gratification are.

The six months' passion had aged him very considerably. There was an

immense gulf between Pen the victim of love, and Pen the innocent boy

of eighteen, sighing after it: and so Arthur Pendennis had all the

experience and superiority, besides that command which afterwards

conceit and imperiousness of disposition gave him over the young men

with whom he now began to live.

He and his uncle passed the morning with great satisfaction in making

purchases for the better comfort of the apartments which the lad was

about to occupy. Mr. Spicer's china and glass was in a dreadfully

dismantled condition, his lamps smashed, and his bookcases by no means

so spacious as those shelves which would be requisite to receive the

contents of the boxes which were lying in the hall at Fairoaks, and

which were addressed to Arthur in the hand of poor Helen.

The boxes arrived in a few days, that his mother had packed with so

much care. Pen was touched as he read the superscriptions in the dear

well-known hand, and he arranged in their proper places all the books,

his old friends, and all the linen and table-cloths which Helen had

selected from the family stock, and all the jam-pots which little

Laura had bound in straw, and the hundred simple gifts of home. Pen

had another Alma Mater now. But it is not all children who take to her

kindly.

CHAPTER XIX. Pendennis of Boniface

Our friend Pen was not sorry when his Mentor took leave of the young

gentleman on the second day after the arrival of the pair in Oxbridge,

and we may be sure that the Major on his part was very glad to have

discharged his duty, and to have the duty over. More than three months

of precious time had that martyr of a Major given up to his nephew--Was

ever selfish man called upon to make a greater sacrifice? Do you know

many men or Majors who would do as much? A man will lay down his head,

or peril his life for his honour, but let us be shy how we ask him to

give up his ease or his heart's desire. Very few of us can bear that

trial. Say, worthy reader, if thou hast peradventure a beard, wouldst

thou do as much? I will not say that a woman will not. They are used to

it: we take care to accustom them to sacrifices but, my good sir, the

amount of self-denial which you have probably exerted through life, when

put down to your account elsewhere, will not probably swell the balance

on the credit side much. Well, well, there is no use in speaking of such

ugly matters, and you are too polite to use a vulgar to quoque. But

I wish to state once for all that I greatly admire the Major for his

conduct during the past quarter, and think that he has quite a right to

be pleased at getting a holiday. Foker and Pen saw him off in the coach,

and the former young gentleman gave particular orders to the coachman

to take care of that gentleman inside. It pleased the elder Pendennis to

have his nephew in the company of a young fellow who would introduce him

to the best set of the university. The Major rushed off to London and

thence to Cheltenham, from which Watering-place he descended upon some

neighbouring great houses, whereof the families were not gone abroad,

and where good shooting and company was to be had.

A quarter of the space which custom has awarded to works styled the

Serial Nature, has been assigned to the account of one passage in Pen's

career, and it is manifest that the whole of his adventures cannot be

treated at a similar length, unless some descendant of the chronicler

of Pen's history should take up the pen at his decease, and continue the

narrative for the successors of the present generation of readers. We

are not about to go through the young fellow's academical career with,

by any means, a similar minuteness. Alas, the life of such boys does not

bear telling altogether. I wish it did. I ask you, does yours? As long

as what we call our honour is clear, I suppose your mind is pretty easy.

Women are pure, but not men. Women are unselfish, but not men. And I

would not wish to say of poor Arthur Pendennis that he was worse than

his neighbours, only that his neighbours are bad for the most part.

Let us have the candour to own as much at least. Can you point out ten

spotless men of your acquaintance? Mine is pretty large, but I can't

find ten saints in the list.

During the first term of Mr. Pen's academical life, he attended

classical and mathematical lectures with tolerable assiduity; but

discovering before very long time that he had little taste or genius

for the pursuing of the exact sciences, and being perhaps rather annoyed

that one or two very vulgar young men, who did not even use straps to

their trousers so as to cover the abominably thick and coarse shoes and

stockings which they wore, beat him completely in the lecture-room, he

gave up his attendance at that course, and announced to his fond parent

that he proposed to devote himself exclusively to the cultivation of

Greek and Roman Literature.

Mrs. Pendennis was, for her part, quite satisfied that her darling boy

should pursue that branch of learning for which he had the greatest

inclination; and only besought him not to ruin his health by too much

study, for she had heard the most melancholy stories of young students

who, by over-fatigue, had brought on brain-fevers and perished untimely

in the midst of their university career. And Pen's health, which was

always delicate, was to be regarded, as she justly said, beyond all

considerations or vain honours. Pen, although not aware of any lurking

disease which was likely to end his life, yet kindly promised his mamma

not to sit up reading too late of nights, and stuck to his word in this

respect with a great deal more tenacity of resolution than he exhibited

upon some other occasions, when perhaps he was a little remiss.

Presently he began too to find that he learned little good in the

classical lecture. His fellow-students there were too dull, as in

mathematics they were too learned for him. Mr. Buck, the tutor, was no

better a scholar than many a fifth-form boy at Grey Friars; might have

some stupid humdrum notions about the metre and grammatical construction

of a passage of Aeschylus or Aristophanes, but had no more notion of the

poetry than Mrs. Binge, his bed-maker; and Pen grew weary of hearing the

dull students and tutor blunder through a few lines of a play, which he

could read in a tenth part of the time which they gave to it. After all,

private reading, as he began to perceive, was the only study which was

really profitable to a man; and he announced to his mamma that he should

read by himself a great deal more, and in public a great deal less. That

excellent woman knew no more about Homer than she did about Algebra, but

she was quite contented with Pen's arrangements regarding his course of

studies, and felt perfectly confident that her dear boy would get the

place which he merited.

Pen did not come home until after Christmas, a little to the fond

mother's disappointment, and Laura's, who was longing for him to make a

fine snow fortification, such as he had made three winters before. But

he was invited to Logwood, Lady Agnes Foker's, where there were private

theatricals, and a gay Christmas party of very fine folks, some of

them whom Major Pendennis would on no account have his nephew neglect.

However, he stayed at home for the last three weeks of the vacation,

and Laura had the opportunity of remarking what a quantity of fine

new clothes he brought with him, and his mother admired his improved

appearance and manly and decided tone.

He did not come home at Easter; but when he arrived for the long

vacation, he brought more smart clothes; appearing in the morning in

wonderful shooting jackets, with remarkable buttons; and in the evening

in gorgeous velvet waistcoats, with richly-embroidered cravats, and

curious linen. And as she pried about his room, she saw, oh, such a

beautiful dressing-case, with silver mountings, and a quantity of lovely

rings and jewellery. And he had a new French watch and gold chain, in

place of the big old chronometer, with its bunch of jingling seals,

which had hung from the fob of John Pendennis, and by the second-hand of

which the defunct doctor had felt many a patient's pulse in his time.

It was but a few months back Pen had longed for this watch, which he

thought the most splendid and august timepiece in the world; and just

before he went to college, Helen had taken it out of her trinket-box

(where it had remained unwound since the death of her husband) and given

it to Pen with a solemn and appropriate little speech respecting his

father's virtues and the proper use of time. This portly and valuable

chronometer Pen now pronounced to be out of date, and, indeed, made

some comparisons between it and a warming-pan, which Laura thought

disrespectful, and he left the watch in a drawer, in the company of

soiled primrose gloves, cravats which had gone out of favour, and of

that other school watch which has once before been mentioned in this

history. Our old friend, Rebecca, Pen pronounced to be no long up to his

weight, and swapped her away for another and more powerful horse, for

which he had to pay rather a heavy figure. Mr. Pendennis gave the boy

the money for the new horse; and Laura cried when Rebecca was fetched

away.

Also Pen brought a large box of cigars branded Colorados, Afrancesados,

Telescopios, Fudson Oxford Street, or by some such strange titles, and

began to consume these not only about the stables and green-houses,

where they were very good for Helen's plants, but in his own study, of

which practice his mother did not at first approve. But he was at work

upon a prize-poem, he said, and could not compose without his cigar, and

quoted the late lamented it Lord Byron's lines in favour of the custom

of smoking. As he was smoking to such good purpose, his mother could not

of course refuse permission: in fact, the good soul coming into the room

one day in the midst of Pen's labours (he was consulting a novel which

had recently appeared, for the cultivation of the light literature

of his own country as well as of foreign nations became every

student)--Helen, we say, coming into the room and finding Pen on the

sofa at this work, rather than disturb him went for a light-box and his

cigar-case to his bedroom which was adjacent, and actually put the

cigar into his mouth and lighted the match at which he kindled it. Pen

laughed, and kissed his mother's hand as it hung fondly over the back of

the sofa. "Dear old mother," he said, "if I were to tell you to burn the

house down, I think you would do it." And it is very likely that Mr. Pen

was right, and that the foolish woman would have done almost as much for

him as he said.

Besides the works of English "light literature" which this diligent

student devoured, he brought down boxes of the light literature of the

neighbouring country of France: into the leaves of which when Helen

dipped, she read such things as caused her to open her eyes with wonder.

But Pen showed her that it was not he who made the books, though it

was absolutely necessary that he should keep up his French by an

acquaintance with the most celebrated writers of the day, and that it

was as clearly his duty to read the eminent Paul de Kock, as to study

Swift or Moliere. And Mrs. Pendennis yielded with a sigh of perplexity.

But Miss Laura was warned off the books, both by his anxious mother, and

that rigid moralist Mr. Arthur Pendennis himself, who, however he might

be called upon to study every branch of literature in order to form his

mind and to perfect his style, would by no means prescribe such a course

of reading to a young lady whose business in life was very different.

In the course of this long vacation Mr. Pen drank up the bin of claret

which his father had laid in, and of which we have heard the son

remark that there was not a headache in a hogshead; and this wine

being exhausted, he wrote for a further supply to "his wine merchants,"

Messrs. Binney and Latham of Mark Lane, London: from whom, indeed, old

Doctor Portman had recommended Pen to get a supply of port and sherry

on going to college. "You will have, no doubt, to entertain your young

friends at Boniface with wine-parties," the honest rector had remarked

to the lad. "They used to be customary at college in my time, and I

would advise you to employ an honest and respectable house in London for

your small stock of wine, rather than to have recourse to the Oxbridge

tradesmen, whose liquor, if I remember rightly, was both deleterious in

quality and exorbitant in price." And the obedient young gentleman took

the Doctor's advice, and patronised Messrs. Binney and Latham at the

rector's suggestion.

So when he wrote orders for a stock of wine to be sent down to the

cellars at Fairoaks, he hinted that Messrs. B. and L. might send in his

university account for wine at the same time with the Fairoaks bill.

The poor widow was frightened at the amount. But Pen laughed at her

old-fashioned views, said that the bill was moderate, that everybody

drank claret and champagne now, and, finally, the widow paid, feeling

dimly that the expenses of her household were increasing considerably,

and that her narrow income would scarce suffice to meet them. But

they were only occasional. Pen merely came home for a few weeks at the

vacation. Laura and she might pinch when he was gone. In the brief time

he was with them, ought they not to make him happy?

Arthur's own allowances were liberal all this time; indeed, much more

so than those of the sons of far more wealthy men. Years before, the

thrifty and affectionate John Pendennis, whose darling project it had

ever been to give his son a university education, and those advantages

of which his own father's extravagance had deprived him, had begun

laying by a store of money which he called Arthur's Education Fund. Year

after year in his book his executors found entries of sums vested as A.

E. F., and during the period subsequent to her husband's decease, and

before Pen's entry at college, the widow had added sundry sums to

this fund, so that when Arthur went up to Oxbridge it reached no

inconsiderable amount. Let him be liberally allowanced, was Major

Pendennis's maxim. Let him make his first entree into the world as a

gentleman, and take his place with men of good rank and station: after

giving it to him, it will be his own duty to hold it. There is no such

bad policy as stinting a boy--or putting him on a lower allowance than

his fellows. Arthur will have to face the world and fight for himself

presently. Meanwhile we shall have procured for him good friends,

gentlemanly habits, and have him well backed and well trained against

the time when the real struggle comes. And these liberal opinions the

Major probably advanced both because they were just, and because he was

not dealing with his own money.

Thus young Pen, the only son of an estated country gentleman, with a

good allowance, and a gentlemanlike bearing and person, looked to be

a lad of much more consequence than he was really; and was held by the

Oxbridge authorities, tradesmen, and undergraduates, as quite a young

buck and member of the aristocracy. His manner was frank, brave, and

perhaps a little impertinent, as becomes a high-spirited youth. He was

perfectly generous and free-handed with his money, which seemed

pretty plentiful. He loved joviality, and had a good voice for a song.

Boat-racing had not risen in Pen's time to the fureur which, as we are

given to understand, it has since attained in the university; and riding

and tandem-driving were the fashions of the ingenuous youth. Pen rode

well to hounds, appeared in pink, as became a young buck, and, not

particularly extravagant in equestrian or any other amusement, yet

managed to run up a fine bill at Nile's, the livery-stable keeper, and

in a number of other quarters. In fact, this lucky young gentleman had

almost every taste to a considerable degree. He was very fond of books

of all sorts: Doctor Portman had taught him to like rare editions, and

his own taste led him to like beautiful bindings. It was marvellous

what tall copies, and gilding, and marbling, and blind-tooling, the

booksellers and binders put upon Pen's bookshelves. He had a very

fair taste in matters of art, and a keen relish for prints of a high

school--none of your French Opera Dancers, or tawdry Racing Prints, such

as had delighted the simple eyes of Mr. Spicer, his predecessor--but

your Stranges, and Rembrandt etchings, and Wilkies before the letter,

with which his apartments were furnished presently in the most perfect

good taste, as was allowed in the university, where this young fellow

got no small reputation. We have mentioned that he exhibited a certain

partiality for rings, jewellery, and fine raiment of all sorts; and

it must be owned that Mr. Pen, during his time at the university, was

rather a dressy man, and loved to array himself in splendour. He and his

polite friends would dress themselves out with as much care in order to

go and dine at each other's rooms, as other folks would who were going

to enslave a mistress. They said he used to wear rings over his

kid gloves, which he always denies; but what follies will not youth

perpetrate with its own admirable gravity and simplicity? That he took

perfumed baths is a truth; and he used to say that he took them after

meeting certain men of a very low set in hall.

In Pen's second year, when Miss Fotheringay made her chief hit in

London, and scores of prints were published of her, Pen had one of these

hung in his bedroom, and confided to the men of his set how awfully, how

wildly, how madly, how passionately, he had loved that woman. He showed

them in confidence the verses that he had written to her, and his brow

would darken, his eyes roll, his chest heave with emotion as he recalled

that fatal period of his life, and described the woes and agonies which

he had suffered. The verses were copied out, handed about, sneered at,

admired, passed from coterie to coterie. There are few things which

elevate a lad in the estimation of his brother boys, more than to have

a character for a great and romantic passion. Perhaps there is something

noble in it at all times--among very young men it is considered

heroic--Pen was pronounced a tremendous fellow. They said he had almost

committed suicide: that he had fought a duel with a baronet about her.

Freshmen pointed him out to each other. As at the promenade time at two

o'clock he swaggered out of college, surrounded by his cronies, he was

famous to behold. He was elaborately attired. He would ogle the ladies

who came to lionise the university, and passed before him on the arms

of happy gownsmen, and give his opinion upon their personal charms, or

their toilettes, with the gravity of a critic whose experience entitled

him to speak with authority. Men used to say that they had been walking

with Pendennis, and were as pleased to be seen in his company as some of

us would be if we walked with a duke down Pall Mall. He and the Proctor

capped each other as they met, as if they were rival powers, and the men

hardly knew which was the greater.

In fact, in the course of his second year, Arthur Pendennis had become

one of the men of fashion in the university. It is curious to watch

that facile admiration, and simple fidelity of youth. They hang round

a leader; and wonder at him, and love him, and imitate him. No

generous boy ever lived, I suppose, that has not had some wonderment of

admiration for another boy; and Monsieur Pen at Oxbridge had his school,

his faithful band of friends and his rivals. When the young men heard

at the haberdashers' shops that Mr. Pendennis, of Boniface, had just

ordered a crimson satin-cravat, you would see a couple of dozen crimson

satin cravats in Main Street in the course of the week--and Simon, the

Jeweller, was known to sell no less than two gross of Pendennis pins,

from a pattern which the young gentleman had selected in his shop.

Now if any person with an arithmetical turn of mind will take the

trouble to calculate what a sum of money it would cost a young man to

indulge freely in all the above propensities which we have said Mr. Pen

possessed, it will be seen that a young fellow, with such liberal tastes

and amusements, must needs in the course of two or three years spend or

owe a very handsome sum of money. We have said our friend Pen had not a

calculating turn. No one propensity of his was outrageously extravagant;

and it is certain that Paddington's tailor's account; Guttlebury's

cook's bill for dinners; Dillon Tandy's bill with Finn, the print

seller, for Raphael-Morgheus and Landseer proofs, and Wormall's dealings

with Parkton, the great bookseller, for Aldine editions, black-letter

folios, and richly illuminated Missals of the XVI. Century; and

Snaffle's or Foker's score with Nile the horsedealer, were, each and all

of them, incomparably greater than any little bills which Mr. Pen might

run up with the above-mentioned tradesmen. But Pendennis of Boniface

had the advantage over all these young gentlemen, his friends and

associates, of a universality of taste: and whereas young Lord

Paddington did not care twopence for the most beautiful print, or to

look into any gilt frame that had not a mirror within it; and Guttlebury

did not mind in the least how he was dressed, and had an aversion for

horse exercise, nay a terror of it; and Snaffle never read any printed

works but the 'Racing Calendar' or 'Bell's Life,' or cared for any

manuscript except his greasy little scrawl of a betting-book:--our

Catholic-minded young friend occupied himself in every one of the

branches of science or pleasure above-mentioned, and distinguished

himself tolerably in each.

Hence young Pen got a prodigious reputation in the university, and was

hailed as a sort of Crichton; and as for the English verse prize, in

competition for which we have seen him busily engaged at Fairoaks, Jones

of Jesus carried it that year certainly, but the undergraduates thought

Pen's a much finer poem, and he had his verses printed at his

own expense, and distributed in gilt morocco covers amongst his

acquaintance. I found a copy of it lately in a dusty corner of Mr. Pen's

bookcases, and have it before me this minute, bound up in a collection

of old Oxbridge tracts, university statutes, prize-poems by successful

and unsuccessful candidates, declamations recited in the college chapel,

speeches delivered at the Union Debating Society, and inscribed by

Arthur with his name and college, Pendennis--Boniface; or presented

to him by his affectionate friend Thompson or Jackson, the author. How

strange the epigraphs look in those half-boyish hands, and what a thrill

the sight of the documents gives one after the lapse of a few lustres!

How fate, since that time, has removed some, estranged others, dealt

awfully with all! Many a hand is cold that wrote those kindly memorials,

and that we pressed in the confident and generous grasp of youthful

friendship. What passions our friendships were in those old days, how

artless and void of doubt! How the arm you were never tired of having

linked in yours under the fair college avenues or by the river side,

where it washes Magdalen Gardens, or Christ Church Meadows, or winds

by Trinity and King's, was withdrawn of necessity, when you entered

presently the world, and each parted to push and struggle for himself

through the great mob on the way through life! Are we the same men now

that wrote those inscriptions--that read those poems? that delivered or

heard those essays and speeches so simple, so pompous, so ludicrously

solemn; parodied so artlessly from books, and spoken with smug chubby

faces, and such an admirable aping of wisdom and gravity? Here is the

book before me: it is scarcely fifteen years old. Here is Jack moaning

with despair and Byronic misanthropy, whose career at the university

was one of unmixed milk-punch. Here is Tom's daring Essay in defence of

suicide and of republicanism in general, apropos of the death of

Roland and the Girondins--Tom's, who wears the starchest tie in all the

diocese, and would go to Smithfield rather than eat a beefsteak on a

Friday in Lent. Here is Bob of the ---- Circuit, who has made a fortune

in Railroad Committees, and whose dinners are so good--bellowing out

with Tancred and Godfrey, "On to the breach, ye soldiers of the cross,

Scale the red wall and swim the choking foss. Ye dauntless archers,

twang your cross-bows well; On, bill and battle-axe and mangonel! Ply

battering-ram and hurtling catapult, Jerusalem is ours--id Deus vult."

After which comes a mellifluous description of the gardens of Sharon

and the maids of Salem, and a prophecy that roses shall deck the entire

country of Syria, and a speedy reign of peace be established--all in

undeniably decasyllabic lines, and the queerest aping of sense and

sentiment and poetry. And there are Essays and Poems along with these

grave parodies, and boyish exercises (which are at once so frank and

false and mirthful, yet, somehow, so mournful) by youthful hands, that

shall never write more. Fate has interposed darkly, and the young voices

are silent, and the eager brains have ceased to work. This one had

genius and a great descent, and seemed to be destined for honours which

now are of little worth to him: that had virtue, learning, genius--every

faculty and endowment which might secure love, admiration, and worldly

fame: an obscure and solitary churchyard contains the grave of many fond

hopes, and the pathetic stone which bids them farewell--I saw the sun

shining on it in the fall of last year, and heard the sweet village

choir raising anthems round about. What boots whether it be Westminster

or a little country spire which covers your ashes, or if, a few days

sooner or later, the world forgets you?

Amidst these friends, then, and a host more, Pen passed more than two

brilliant and happy years of his life. He had his fill of pleasure and

popularity. No dinner- or supper-party was complete without him; and

Pen's jovial wit, and Pen's songs, and dashing courage and frank and

manly bearing, charmed all the undergraduates, and even disarmed the

tutors who cried out at his idleness, and murmured about his extravagant

way of life. Though he became the favourite and leader of young men who

were much his superiors in wealth and station, he was much too generous

to endeavour to propitiate them by any meanness or cringing on his own

part, and would not neglect the humblest man of his acquaintance in

order to curry favour with the richest young grandee in the university.

His name is still remembered at the Union Debating Club, as one of the

brilliant orators of his day. By the way, from having been an ardent

Tory in his freshman's year, his principles took a sudden turn

afterwards, and he became a liberal of the most violent order. He avowed

himself a Dantonist, and asserted that Louis the Sixteenth was served

right. And as for Charles the First, he vowed that he would chop off

that monarch's head with his own right hand were he then in the room at

the Union Debating Club, and had Cromwell no other executioner for the

traitor. He and Lord Magnus Charters, the Marquis of Runnymede's son,

before-mentioned, were the most truculent republicans of their day.

There are reputations of this sort made, quite independent of the

collegiate hierarchy, in the republic of gownsmen. A man may be famous

in the Honour-lists and entirely unknown to the undergraduates: who

elect kings and chieftains of their own, whom they admire and obey, as

negro-gangs have private black sovereigns in their own body, to whom

they pay an occult obedience, besides that which they publicly profess

for their owners and drivers. Among the young ones Pen became famous

and popular: not that he did much, but there was a general determination

that he could do a great deal if he chose. "Ah, if Pendennis of Boniface

would but try," the men said, "he might do anything." He was backed for

the Greek Ode won by Smith of Trinity; everybody was sure he would have

the Latin hexameter prize which Brown of St. John's, however, carried

off, and in this way one university honour after another was lost by

him, until, after two or three failures, Mr. Pen ceased to compete. But

he got a declamation prize in his own college, and brought home to

his mother and Laura at Fairoaks a set of prize-books begilt with the

college arms, and so big, well-bound, and magnificent, that these ladies

thought there had been no such prize ever given in a college before

as this of Pen's, and that he had won the very largest honour which

Oxbridge was capable of awarding.

As vacation after vacation and term after term passed away without the

desired news that Pen had sate for any scholarship or won any honour,

Doctor Portman grew mightily gloomy in his behaviour towards Arthur,

and adopted a sulky grandeur of deportment towards him, which the lad

returned by a similar haughtiness. One vacation he did not call upon the

Doctor at all, much to his mother's annoyance, who thought that it was

a privilege to enter the Rectory-house at Clavering, and listened to Dr.

Portman's antique jokes and stories, though ever so often repeated, with

unfailing veneration. "I cannot stand the Doctor's patronising air", Pen

said. "He's too kind to me, a great deal fatherly. I have seen in the

world better men than him, and am not going to bore myself by listening

to his dull old stories and drinking his stupid old port wine." The

tacit feud between Pen and the Doctor made the widow nervous, so that

she too avoided Portman, and was afraid to go to the Rectory when Arthur

was at home.

One Sunday in the last long vacation, the wretched boy pushed his

rebellious spirit so far as not to go to church, and he was seen at

the gate of the Clavering Arms smoking a cigar, in the face of the

congregation as it issued from St. Mary's. There was an awful sensation

in the village society, Portman prophesied Pen's ruin after that, and

groaned in spirit over the rebellious young prodigal.

So did Helen tremble in her heart, and little Laura--Laura had grown

to be a fine young stripling by this time, graceful and fair, clinging

round Helen and worshipping her, with a passionate affection. Both

of these women felt that their boy was changed. He was no longer the

artless Pen of old days, so brave, so artless, so impetuous, and tender.

His face looked careworn and haggard, his voice had a deeper sound,

and tones more sarcastic. Care seemed to be pursuing him; but he only

laughed when his mother questioned him, and parried her anxious queries

with some scornful jest. Nor did he spend much of his vacations at home;

he went on visits to one great friend or another, and scared the quiet

pair at Fairoaks by stories of great houses whither he had been invited;

and by talking of lords without their titles.

Honest Harry Foker, who had been the means of introducing Arthur

Pendennis to that set of young men at the university, from whose society

and connexions Arthur's uncle expected that the lad would get so

much benefit; who had called for Arthur's first song at his first

supper-party; and who had presented him at the Barmecide Club, where

none but the very best men of Oxbridge were admitted (it consisted in

Pen's time of six noblemen, eight gentlemen-pensioners, and twelve of

the most select commoners of the university), soon found himself left

far behind by the young freshman in the fashionable world of Oxbridge,

and being a generous and worthy fellow, without a spark of envy in

his composition, was exceedingly pleased at the success of his young

protege, and admired Pen quite as much as any of the other youth did. I

was he who followed Pen now, and quoted his sayings; learned his songs,

and retailed them at minor supper-parties, and was never weary of

hearing them from the gifted young poet's own mouth--for a good deal of

the time which Mr. Pen might have employed much more advantageously

in the pursuit of the regular scholastic studies, was given up to the

composition of secular ballads, which he sang about at parties according

to university wont.

It had been as well for Arthur if the honest Foker had remained for some

time at college, for, with all his vivacity, he was a prudent young

man, and often curbed Pen's propensity to extravagance: but Foker's

collegiate career did not last very long after Arthur's entrance at

Boniface. Repeated differences with the university authorities caused

Mr. Foker to quit Oxbridge in an untimely manner. He would persist in

attending races on the neighbouring Hungerford Heath, in spite of the

injunctions of his academic superiors. He never could be got to frequent

the chapel of the college with that regularity of piety which Alma Mater

demands from her children; tandems, which are abominations in the eyes

of the heads and tutors, were Foker's greatest delight, and so reckless

was his driving and frequent the accidents and upsets out of his drag,

that Pen called taking a drive with him taking the "Diversions of

Purley;" finally, having a dinner-party at his rooms to entertain some

friends from London, nothing would satisfy Mr. Foker but painting Mr.

Buck's door vermilion, in which freak he was caught by the proctors; and

although young Black Strap, the celebrated negro fighter, who was one of

Mr. Foker's distinguished guests, and was holding the can of paint while

the young artist operated on the door, knocked down two of the proctor's

attendants and performed prodigies of valour, yet these feats rather

injured than served Foker, whom the proctor knew very well and who was

taken with the brush in his hand, and who was summarily convened and

sent down from the university.

The tutor wrote a very kind and feeling letter to Lady Agnes on the

subject, stating that everybody was fond of the youth; that he never

meant harm to any mortal creature; that he for his own part would have

been delighted to pardon the harmless little boyish frolic, had not its

unhappy publicity rendered it impossible to look the freak over, and

breathing the most fervent wishes for the young fellow's welfare--wishes

no doubt sincere, for Foker, as we know, came of a noble family on his

mother's side, and on the other was heir to a great number of thousand

pounds a year.

"It don't matter," said Foker, talking over the matter with Pen,--"a

little sooner or a little later, what is the odds? I should have been

plucked for my little-go again, I know I should--that Latin I cannot

screw into my head, and my mamma's anguish would have broke out next

term. The Governor will blow like an old grampus, I know he will,--well,

we must stop till he gets his wind again. I shall probably go abroad and

improve my mind with foreign travel. Yes, parly-voo's the ticket. It'ly,

and that sort of thing. I'll go to Paris and learn to dance and complete

my education. But it's not me I'm anxious about, Pen. As long as people

drink beer I don't care,--it's about you I'm doubtful, my boy. You're

going too fast, and can't keep up the pace, I tell you. It's not the

fifty you owe me,--pay it or not when you like,--but it's the every-day

pace, and I tell you it will kill you. You're livin' as if there was no

end to the money in the stockin' at home. You oughtn't to give dinners,

you ought to eat 'em. Fellows are glad to have you. You oughtn't to owe

horse bills, you ought to ride other chaps' nags. You know no more about

betting than I do about Algebra: the chaps will win your money as sure

as you sport it. Hang me if you are not trying everything. I saw you sit

down to ecarte last week at Trumpington's, and taking your turn with the

bones after Ringwood's supper. They'll beat you at it, Pen, my boy, even

if they play on the square, which. I don't say they don't, nor which I

don't say they do, mind. But I won't play with 'em. You're no match for

'em. You ain't up to their weight. It's like little Black Strap standing

up to Tom Spring,--the Black's a pretty fighter but, Law bless you, his

arm ain't long enough to touch Tom,--and I tell you, you're going it

with fellers beyond your weight. Look here--If you'll promise me never

to bet nor touch a box nor a card, I'll let you off the two ponies."

But Pen, laughingly, said, "that though it wasn't convenient to him to

pay the two ponies at that moment, he by no means wished to be let off

any just debts he owed;" and he and Foker parted, not without many dark

forebodings on the latter's part with regard to his friend, who Harry

thought was travelling speedily on the road to ruin.

"One must do at Rome as Rome does," Pen said, in a dandified manner,

jingling some sovereigns in his waistcoat-pocket. "A little quiet play

at ecarte can't hurt a man who plays pretty well--I came away fourteen

sovereigns richer from Ringwood's supper, and, gad! I wanted the

money."--And he walked off, after having taken leave of poor Foker, who

went away without any beat of drum, or offer to drive the coach out of

Oxbridge, to superintend a little dinner which he was going to give at

his own rooms in Boniface, about which dinners, the cook of the college,

who had a great respect for Mr. Pendennis, always took especial pains

for his young favourite.

CHAPTER XX. Rake's Progress

Some short time before Mr. Foker's departure from Oxbridge, there had

come up to Boniface a gentleman who had once, as it turned out, belonged

to the other University of Camford, which he had quitted on account of

some differences with the tutors and authorities there. This gentleman,

whose name was Horace Bloundell, was of the ancient Suffolk

family of Bloundell-Bloundell, of Bloundell-Bloundell Hall,

Bloundell-Bloundellshire, as the young wags used to call it; and no

doubt it was on account of his descent, and because Dr. Donne, the

Master of Boniface, was a Suffolk man, and related perhaps to the

family, that Mr. Horace Bloundell was taken in at Boniface, after St.

George's and one or two other Colleges had refused to receive him. There

was a living in the family, which it was important for Mr. Bloundell

to hold; and, being in a dragoon regiment at the time when his third

brother, for whom the living was originally intended, sickened and died,

Mr. Bloundell determined upon quitting crimson pantaloons and sable

shakos, for the black coat and white neckcloth of the English divine.

The misfortunes which occurred at Camford, occasioned some slight

disturbance to Mr. Bloundell's plans; but although defeated upon one

occasion, the resolute ex-dragoon was not dismayed, and set to work to

win a victory elsewhere.

In Pen's second year Major Pendennis paid a brief visit to his nephew,

and was introduced to several of Pen's university friends--the gentle

and polite Lord Plinlimmon, the gallant and open-hearted Magnus

Charters, the sly and witty Harland; the intrepid Ringwood, who was

called Rupert in the Union Debating Club, from his opinions and the

bravery of his blunders; Broadbent, styled Barebones Broadbent from the

republican nature of his opinions (he was of a dissenting family from

Bristol and a perfect Boanerges of debate); Mr. Bloundell-Bloundell

finally, who had at once taken his place among the select of the

university.

Major Pendennis, though he did not understand Harland's Greek

quotations, or quite appreciate Broadbent's thick shoes and dingy hands,

was nevertheless delighted with the company assembled round his nephew,

and highly approved of all the young men with the exception of that one

who gave himself the greatest airs in the society, and affected most to

have the manners of a man of the world.

As he and Pen sate at breakfast on the morning after the party in the

rooms of the latter, the Major gave his opinions regarding the young

men, with whom he was in the greatest good-humour. He had regaled them

with some of his stories, which, though not quite so fresh in London

(where people have a diseased appetite for novelty in the way of

anecdotes), were entirely new at Oxbridge, and the lads heard them with

that honest sympathy, that eager pleasure, that boisterous laughter, or

that profound respect, so rare in the metropolis, and which must be so

delightful to the professed raconteur. Only once or twice during the

telling of the anecdote Mr. Bloundell's face wore a look of scorn,

or betrayed by its expression that he was acquainted with the tales

narrated. Once he had the audacity to question the accuracy of one of

the particulars of a tale as given by Major Pendennis, and gave his own

version of the anecdote, about which he knew he was right, for he

heard it openly talked of at the Club by So-and-so and T'other who were

present at the business. The youngsters present looked up with wonder

at their associate, who dared to interrupt the Major--few of them

could appreciate that melancholy grace and politeness with which Major

Pendennis at once acceded to Mr. Bloundell's version of the story,

and thanked him for correcting his own error. They stared on the next

occasion of meeting, when Bloundell spoke in contemptuous terms of

old Pen; said everybody knew old Pen, regular old trencherman at Gaunt

House, notorious old bore, regular old fogy.

Major Pendennis on his side liked Mr. Bloundell not a whit. These

sympathies are pretty sure to be mutual amongst men and women, and if,

for my part, some kind friend tells me that such and such a man has been

abusing me, I am almost sure, on my own side, that I have a misliking

to such and such a man. We like or dislike each other, as folks like or

dislike the odour of certain flowers, or the taste of certain dishes or

wines, or certain books. We can't tell why--but as a general rule, all

the reasons in the world will not make us love Dr. Fell, and as sure as

we dislike him, we may be sure that he dislikes us.

So the Major said, "Pen, my boy, your dinner went off a merveille; you

did the honours very nicely--you carved well--I am glad you learned to

carve--it is done on the sideboard now in most good houses, but is

still an important point, and may aid you in middle-life--young Lord

Plinlimmon is a very amiable young man, quite the image of his dear

mother (whom I knew as Lady Aquila Brownbill); and Lord Magnus's

republicanism will wear off--it sits prettily enough on a young

patrician in early life, though nothing is so loathsome among persons

of our rank--Mr. Broadbent seems to have much eloquence and considerable

reading your friend Foker is always delightful: but your acquaintance,

Mr. Bloundell, struck me as in all respects a most ineligible young

man."

"Bless my soul, sir, Bloundell-Bloundell!" cried Pen, laughing; "why,

sir, he's the most popular man of the university. We elected him of

the Barmecides the first week he came up--had a special meeting on

purpose--he's of an excellent family--Suffolk Bloundells, descended from

Richard's Blondel, bear a harp in chief--and motto O Mong Roy."

"A man may have a very good coat-of-arms, and be a tiger, my boy," the

Major said, chipping his egg; "that man is a tiger, mark my word--a low

man. I will lay a wager that he left his regiment, which was a good one

(for a more respectable man than my friend Lord Martingale never sate in

a saddle), in bad odour. There is the unmistakable look of slang and bad

habits about this Mr. Bloundell. He frequents low gambling-houses and

billiard-hells, sir--he haunts third-rate clubs--I know he does. I know

by his style. I never was mistaken in my man yet. Did you remark the

quantity of rings and jewellery he wore? That person has Scamp written

on his countenance, if any man ever had. Mark my words and avoid him.

Let us turn the conversation. The dinner was a leetle too fine, but I

don't object to your making a few extra frais when you receive friends.

Of course, you don't do it often, and only those whom it is your

interest to feter. The cutlets were excellent, and the souffle

uncommonly light and good. The third bottle of champagne was not

necessary; but you have a good income, and as long as you keep within

it, I shall not quarrel with you, my dear boy."

Poor Pen! the worthy uncle little knew how often those dinners took

place, while the reckless young Amphitryon delighted to show his

hospitality and skill in gourmandise. There is no art than that (so long

to learn, so difficult to acquire, so impossible and beyond the means of

many unhappy people!) about which boys are more anxious to have an air

of knowingness. A taste and knowledge of wines and cookery appears to

them to be the sign of an accomplished roue and manly gentleman. I

like to see them wink at a glass of claret, as if they had an intimate

acquaintance with it, and discuss a salmi--poor boys--it is only when

they grow old that they know they know nothing of the science, when

perhaps their conscience whispers them that the science is in itself

little worth, and that a leg of mutton and content is as good as the

dinners of pontiffs. But little Pen, in his character of Admirable

Crichton, thought it necessary to be a great judge and practitioner of

dinners; we have just said how the college cook respected him, and shall

soon have to deplore that that worthy man so blindly trusted our Pen. In

the third year of the lad's residence at Oxbridge, his staircase was by

no means encumbered with dish-covers and desserts, and waiters carrying

in dishes, and skips opening iced champagne; crowds of different sorts

of attendants, with faces sulky or piteous, hung about the outer oak,

and assailed the unfortunate lad as he issued out of his den.

Nor did his guardian's advice take any effect, or induce Mr. Pen to

avoid the society of the disreputable Mr. Bloundell. What young men like

in their companions is, what had got Pen a great part of his own repute

and popularity, a real or supposed knowledge of life. A man who has seen

the world, or can speak of it with a knowing air--a roue, or Lovelace,

who has his adventures to relate, is sure of an admiring audience among

boys. It is hard to confess, but so it is. We respect that sort of

prowess. From our school-days we have been taught to admire it. Are

there five in the hundred, out of the hundreds and hundreds of English

school-boys, brought up at our great schools and colleges, that must not

own at one time of their lives to having read and liked Don Juan? Awful

propagation of evil!--The idea of it should make the man tremble who

holds the pen, lest untruth, or impurity, or unjust anger, or unjust

praise escape it.

One such diseased creature as this is enough to infect a whole colony,

and the tutors of Boniface began to find the moral tone of their college

lowered and their young men growing unruly, and almost ungentleman-like,

soon after Mr. Bloundell's arrival at Oxbridge. The young magnates of

the neighbouring great College of St. George's, who regarded Pen, and in

whose society he lived, were not taken in by Bloundell's flashy graces,

and rakish airs of fashion. Broadbent called him Captain Macheath, and

said he would live to be hanged. Foker, during his brief stay at the

university with Macheath, with characteristic caution declined to say

anything in the Captain's disfavour, but hinted to Pen that he had

better have him for a partner at whist than play against him, and better

back him at ecarte than bet on the other side. "You see, he plays better

than you do, Pen," was the astute young gentleman's remark: "he plays

uncommon well, the Captain does;--and Pen, I wouldn't take the odds too

freely from him, if I was you. I don't think he's too flush of money,

the Captain ain't." But beyond these dark suggestions and generalities,

the cautious Foker could not be got to speak.

Not that his advice would have had more weight with a headstrong young

man, than advice commonly has with a lad who is determined on pursuing

his own way. Pen's appetite for pleasure was insatiable, and he rushed

at it wherever it presented itself, with an eagerness which bespoke

his fiery constitution and youthful health. He called taking pleasure

"Seeing life," and quoted well-known maxims from Terence, from Horace,

from Shakspeare, to show that one should do all that might become a man.

He bade fair to be utterly used up and a roue, in a few years, if he

were to continue at the pace at which he was going.

One night after a supper-party in college, at which Pen and Macheath had

been present, and at which a little quiet vingt-et-un had been played

(an amusement much pleasanter to men in their second and third year than

the boisterous custom of singing songs, which bring the proctors about

the rooms, and which have grown quite stale by this time, every man

having expended his budget)--as the men had taken their caps and were

going away, after no great losses or winnings on any side, Mr. Bloundell

playfully took up a green wine-glass from the supper-table, which had

been destined to contain iced cup, but into which he inserted something

still more pernicious, namely a pair of dice, which the gentleman took

out of his waistcoat-pocket, and put into the glass. Then giving the

glass a graceful wave which showed that his hand was quite experienced

in the throwing of dice, he called sevens the main, and whisking the

ivory cubes gently on the table, swept them up lightly again from the

cloth, and repeated this process two or three times. The other men

looked on, Pen, of course, among the number, who had never used the dice

as yet, except to play a humdrum game of backgammon at home.

Mr. Bloundell, who had a good voice, began to troll out the chorus from

Robert the Devil, an Opera then in great vogue, in which chorus many of

the men joined, especially Pen, who was in very high spirits, having

won a good number of shillings and half-crowns at the vingt-et-un--and

presently, instead of going home, most of the party were seated round

the table playing at dice, the green glass going round from hand to hand

until Pen finally shivered it, after throwing six mains.

From that night Pen plunged into the delights of the game of hazard,

as eagerly as it was his custom to pursue any new pleasure. Dice can be

played of mornings as well as after dinner or supper. Bloundell would

come into Pen's rooms after breakfast, and it was astonishing how

quick the time passed as the bones were rattling. They had little quiet

parties with closed doors, and Bloundell devised a box lined with felt,

so that the dice should make no noise, and their tell-tale rattle not

bring the sharp-eared tutors up to the rooms. Bloundell, Ringwood,

and Pen were once very nearly caught by Mr. Buck, who, passing in the

Quadrangle, thought he heard the words "Two to one on the caster,"

through Pen's open window; but when the tutor got into Arthur's rooms he

found the lads with three Homers before them, and Pen said he was trying

to coach the two other men, and asked Mr. Buck with great gravity what

was the present condition of the River Scamander, and whether it was

navigable or no?

Mr. Arthur Pendennis did not win much money in these transactions with

Mr. Bloundell, or indeed gain good of any kind except a knowledge of the

odds at hazard, which he might have learned out of books.

Captain Macheath had other accomplishments which he exercised for Pen's

benefit. The Captain's stories had a great and unfortunate charm for

Arthur, who was never tired of hearing Bloundell's histories of garrison

conquests, and of his feats in country-quarters.--He had been at Paris,

and had plenty of legends about the Palais Royal, and the Salon, and

Frascati's. He had gone to the Salon one night, after a dinner at the

Cafe de Paris, "when we were all devilishly cut, by Jove; and on waking

in the morning in my own rooms, I found myself with twelve thousand

francs under my pillow, and a hundred and forty-nine Napoleons in one

of my boots. Wasn't that a coup, hay?" the Captain said. Pen's eyes

glistened with excitement as he heard this story. He respected the man

who could win such a sum of money. He sighed, and said it would set

him all right. Macheath laughed, and told him to drink another drop of

Maraschino. "I could tell you stories much more wonderful than that,"

he added; and so indeed the Captain could have done, without any further

trouble than that of invention, with which portion of the poetic faculty

Nature had copiously endowed him.

He laughed to scorn Pen's love for Miss Fotheringay, when he came to

hear of that amour from Arthur, as he pretty soon did, for, we have

said, Pen was not averse to telling the story now to his confidential

friends, and he and they were rather proud of the transaction. But

Macheath took away all Pen's conceit on this head, not by demonstrating

the folly of the lad's passion for an uneducated woman much his senior

in years, but by exposing his absurd desire of gratifying his passion in

a legitimate way. "Marry her," said he, "you might as well marry ----,"

and he named one of the most notorious actresses on the stage.

"She hadn't a shred of a character." He knew twenty men who were openly

admirers of her, and named them, and the sums each had spent upon her. I

know no kind of calumny more frightful or frequent than this which takes

away the character of women, no men more reckless and mischievous than

those who lightly use it, and no kind of cowards more despicable than

the people who invent these slanders.

Is it, or not, a misfortune that a man, himself of a candid disposition,

and disposed, like our friend Pen, to blurt out the truth on all

occasions, begins life by believing all that is said to him? Would it be

better for a lad to be less trustful, and so less honest? It requires

no small experience of the world to know that a man, who has no especial

reason thereto, is telling you lies. I am not sure whether it is not

best to go on being duped for a certain time. At all events, our honest

Pen had a natural credulity, which enabled him to accept all statements

which were made to him, and he took every one of Captain Macheath's

figments as if they had been the most unquestioned facts of history.

So Bloundell's account about Miss Fotheringay pained and mortified Pen

exceedingly. If he had been ashamed of his passion before,--what were

his feelings regarding it now, when the object of so much pure flame

and adoration turned out to be only a worthless impostor, an impostor

detected by all but him? It never occurred to Pen to doubt the fact, or

to question whether the stories of a man who, like his new friend, never

spoke well of any woman, were likely to be true.

One Easter vacation, when Pen had announced to his mother and uncle his

intention not to go down, but stay at Oxbridge and read, Mr. Pen was

nevertheless induced to take a brief visit to London in company with

his friend Mr. Bloundell. They put up at a hotel in Covent Garden, where

Bloundell had a tick, as he called it, and took the pleasures of the

town very freely after the wont of young university men. Bloundell still

belonged to a military club, whither he took Pen to dine once or twice

(the young men would drive thither in a cab, trembling lest they

should meet Major Pendennis on his beat in Pall Mall), and here Pen

was introduced to a number of gallant young fellows with spurs and

mustachios, with whom he drank pale-ale of mornings and beat the town of

a night. Here he saw a deal of life, indeed: nor in his career about the

theatres and singing-houses which these roaring young blades frequented,

was he very likely to meet his guardian. One night, nevertheless, they

were very near to each other: a plank only separating Pen, who was

in the boxes of the Museum Theatre, from the Major, who was in Lord

Steyne's box, along with that venerated nobleman. The Fotheringay was

in the pride of her glory. Shad made a hit: that is, she had drawn very

good houses for nearly a year, had starred the provinces with great

eclat, had come back to shine in London with somewhat diminished lustre,

and now was acting with "ever increasing attraction; etc.," "triumph

of the good old British drama," as the play-bills avowed, to houses in

which there was plenty of room for anybody who wanted to see her.

It was not the first time Pen had seen her, since that memorable day

when the two had parted in Chatteris. In the previous year, when the

town was making much of her, and the press lauded her beauty, Pen had

found a pretext for coming to London in term-time, and had rushed off to

the theatre to see his old flame. He recollected it rather than

renewed it. He remembered how ardently he used to be on the look-out at

Chatteris, when the speech before Ophelia's or Mrs. Haller's entrance on

the stage was made by the proper actor. Now, as the actor spoke, he had

a sort of feeble thrill: as the house began to thunder with applause,

and Ophelia entered with her old bow and sweeping curtsey, Pen felt a

slight shock and blushed very much as he looked at her, and could not

help thinking that all the house was regarding him. He hardly heard her

for the first part of the play: and he thought with such rage of the

humiliation to which she had subjected him, that he began to fancy he

was jealous and in love with her still. But that illusion did not last

very long. He ran round to the stage-door of the theatre to see her if

possible, but he did not succeed. She passed indeed under his nose with

a female companion, but he did not know her,--nor did she recognise

him. The next night he came in late, and stayed very quietly for the

afterpiece, and on the third and last night of his stay in London--why,

Taglioni was going to dance at the Opera,--Taglioni! and there was to

be Don Giovanni, which he admired of all things in the world: so Mr. Pen

went to Don Giovanni and Taglioni.

This time the illusion about her was quite gone. She was not less

handsome, but she was not the same, somehow. The light was gone out of

her eyes which used to flash there, or Pen's no longer were dazzled

by it. The rich voice spoke as of old, yet it did not make Pen's bosom

thrill as formerly. He thought he could recognise the brogue underneath:

the accents seemed to him coarse and false. It annoyed him to hear the

same emphasis on the same words, only uttered a little louder: worse

than this, it annoyed him to think that he should ever have mistaken

that loud imitation for genius, or melted at those mechanical sobs and

sighs. He felt that it was in another life almost, that it was another

man who had so madly loved her. He was ashamed and bitterly humiliated,

and very lonely. Ah, poor Pen! the delusion is better than the truth

sometimes, and fine dreams than dismal waking.

They went and had an uproarious supper that night, and Mr. Pen had a

fine headache the next morning, with which he went back to Oxbridge,

having spent all his ready money.

As all this narrative is taken from Pen's own confessions, so that

the reader may be assured of the truth of every word of it, and as Pen

himself never had any accurate notion of the manner in which he spent

his money, and plunged himself in much deeper pecuniary difficulties,

during his luckless residence at Oxbridge University, it is, of course,

impossible for me to give any accurate account of his involvements,

beyond that general notion of his way of life, which has been sketched

a few pages back. He does not speak too hardly of the roguery of the

university tradesmen, or of those in London whom he honoured with his

patronage at the outset of his career. Even Finch, the money-lender,

to whom Bloundell introduced him, and with whom he had various

transactions, in which the young rascal's signature appeared upon

stamped paper, treated him, according to Pen's own account, with

forbearance, and never mulcted him of more than a hundred per cent. The

old college-cook, his fervent admirer, made him a private bill, offered

to send him in dinners up to the very last, and never would have pressed

his account to his dying day. There was that kindness and frankness

about Arthur Pendennis, which won most people who came in contact with

him, and which, if it rendered him an easy prey to rogues, got him,

perhaps, more goodwill than he merited from many honest men. It was

impossible to resist his good-nature, or, in his worst moments, not to

hope for his rescue from utter ruin.

At the time of his full career of university pleasure, he would leave

the gayest party to go and sit with a sick friend. He never knew

the difference between small and great in the treatment of his

acquaintances, however much the unlucky lad's tastes, which were of the

sumptuous order, led him to prefer good society; he was only too ready

to share his guinea with a poor friend, and when he got money had an

irresistible propensity for paying, which he never could conquer through

life.

In his third year at college, the duns began to gather awfully round

about him, and there was a levee at his oak which scandalised the

tutors, and would have scared many a stouter heart. With some of

these he used to battle, some he would bully (under Mr. Bloundell's

directions, who was a master in this art, though he took a degree in no

other), and some deprecate. And it is reported of him that little Mary

Frodsham, the daughter of a certain poor gilder and frame-maker,

whom Mr. Pen had thought fit to employ, and who had made a number of

beautiful frames for his fine prints, coming to Pendennis with a piteous

tale that her father was ill with ague, and that there was an execution

in their house, Pen in an anguish of remorse rushed away, pawned his

grand watch and every single article of jewellery except two old gold

sleeve-buttons, which had belonged to his father, and rushed with the

proceeds to Frodsham's shop, where, with tears in his eyes, and the

deepest repentance and humility, he asked the poor tradesman's pardon.

This, young gentlemen, is not told as an instance of Pen's virtue, but

rather of his weakness. It would have been much more virtuous to have

had no prints at all. He still stood for the baubles which he sold

in order to pay Frodsham's bill, and his mother had cruelly to pinch

herself in order to discharge the jeweller's account, so that she was

in the end the sufferer by the lad's impertinent fancies and follies. We

are not presenting Pen to you as a hero or a model, only as a lad, who,

in the midst of a thousand vanities and weaknesses, has as yet some

generous impulses, and is not altogether dishonest.

We have said it was to the scandal of Mr. Buck the tutor that Pen's

extravagances became known: from the manner in which he entered college,

the associates he kept, and the introductions of Doctor Portman and the

Major, Buck for a long time thought that his pupil was a man of large

property, and wondered rather that he only wore a plain gown. Once on

going up to London to the levee with an address from his Majesty's Loyal

University of Oxbridge, Buck had seen Major Pendennis at St. James's in

conversation with two knights of the garter, in the carriage of one of

whom the dazzled tutor saw the Major whisked away after the levee. He

asked Pen to wine the instant he came back, let him off from chapels

and lectures more than ever, and felt perfectly sure that he was a young

gentleman of large estate.

Thus, he was thunderstruck when he heard the truth, and received a

dismal confession from Pen. His university debts were large, and the

tutor had nothing to do, and of course Pen did not acquaint him, with

his London debts. What man ever does tell all when pressed by his

friends about his liabilities? The tutor learned enough to know that Pen

was poor, that he had spent a handsome, almost a magnificent allowance,

and had raised around him such a fine crop of debts, as it would be very

hard work for any man to mow down; for there is no plant that grows so

rapidly when once it has taken root.

Perhaps it was because she was so tender and good that Pen was terrified

lest his mother should know of his sins. "I can't bear to break it to

her," he said to the tutor in an agony of grief. "O! sir, I've been a

villain to her"--and he repented, and he wished he had the time to come

over again, and he asked himself, "Why, why did his uncle insist upon

the necessity of living with great people, and in how much did all his

grand acquaintance profit him?"

They were not shy, but Pen thought they were, and slunk from them

during his last terms at college. He was as gloomy as a death's-head at

parties, which he avoided of his own part, or to which his young friends

soon ceased to invite him. Everybody knew that Pendennis was "hard up."

That man Bloundell, who could pay nobody, and who was obliged to go down

after three terms, was his ruin, the men said. His melancholy figure

might be seen shirking about the lonely quadrangles in his battered old

cap and torn gown, and he who had been the pride of the university but

a year before, the man whom all the young ones loved to look at, was now

the object of conversation at freshmen's wine-parties, and they spoke of

him with wonder and awe.

At last came the Degree Examinations. Many a young man of his year

whose hob-nailed shoes Pen had derided, and whose face or coat he

had caricatured--many a man whom he had treated with scorn in the

lecture-room or crushed with his eloquence in the debating-club--many

of his own set who had not half his brains, but a little regularity and

constancy of occupation, took high places in the honours or passed with

decent credit. And where in the list was Pen the superb, Pen the wit and

dandy, Pen the poet and orator? Ah, where was Pen the widow's darling

and sole pride? Let us hide our heads, and shut up the page. The lists

came out; and a dreadful rumour rushed through the university, that

Pendennis of Boniface was plucked.

CHAPTER XXI. Flight after Defeat

Everybody who has the least knowledge of Heraldry and the Peerage must

be aware that the noble family of which, as we know, Helen Pendennis was

a member, bears for a crest, a nest full of little pelicans pecking at

the ensanguined bosom of a big maternal bird, which plentifully supplies

the little wretches with the nutriment on which, according to the

heraldic legend, they are supposed to be brought up. Very likely female

pelicans like so to bleed under the selfish little beaks of their young

ones: it is certain that women do. There must be some sort of pleasure,

which we men don't understand, which accompanies the pain of being

scarified, and indeed I believe some women would rather actually so

suffer than not. They like sacrificing themselves in behalf of the

object which their instinct teaches them to love. Be it for a reckless

husband, a dissipated son, a darling scapegrace of a brother, how ready

their hearts are to pour out their best treasures for the benefit of the

cherished person; and what a deal of this sort of enjoyment are we, on

one side, ready to give the soft creatures! There is scarce a man

that reads this, but has administered pleasure in this fashion to his

womankind, and has treated them to the luxury of forgiving him. They

don't mind how they live themselves; but when the prodigal comes home

they make a rejoicing, and kill the fatted calf for him: and at the very

first hint that the sinner is returning, the kind angels prepare their

festival, and Mercy and Forgiveness go smiling out to welcome him. I

hope it may be so always for all: if we have only Justice to look to,

Heaven help us!

During the latter part of Pen's residence at the University of Oxbridge,

his uncle's partiality had greatly increased for the lad. The Major was

proud of Arthur, who had high spirits, frank manners, a good person, and

high gentleman-like bearing. It pleased the old London bachelor to see

Pen walking with the young patricians of his university, and he (who was

never known to entertain his friends, and whose stinginess had passed

into a sort of byword among some wags at the Club, who envied his many

engagements, and did not choose to consider his poverty) was charmed to

give his nephew and the young lords snug little dinners at his lodgings,

and to regale them with good claret, and his very best bons mots and

stories: some of which would be injured by the repetition, for the

Major's manner of telling them was incomparably neat and careful; and

others, whereof the repetition would do good to nobody. He paid his

court to their parents through the young men, and to himself as it were

by their company. He made more than one visit to Oxbridge, where the

young fellows were amused by entertaining the old gentleman, and gave

parties and breakfasts and fetes, partly to joke him and partly to do

him honour. He plied them with his stories. He made himself juvenile and

hilarious in the company of the young lords. He went to hear Pen at a

grand debate at the Union, crowed and cheered, and rapped his stick

in chorus with the cheers of the men, and was astounded at the boy's

eloquence and fire. He thought he had got a young Pitt for a nephew.

He had an almost paternal fondness for Pen. He wrote to the lad letters

with playful advice and the news of the town. He bragged about Arthur

at his Clubs, and introduced him with pleasure into his conversation;

saying, that, Egad, the young fellows were putting the old ones to the

wall; that the lads who were coming up, young Lord Plinlimmon, a friend

of my boy, young Lord Magnus Charters, a chum of my scapegrace, etc.,

would make a greater figure in the world than even their fathers had

done before them. He asked permission to bring Arthur to a grand fete

at Gaunt House; saw him with ineffable satisfaction dancing with the

sisters of the young noblemen before mentioned; and gave himself as much

trouble to procure cards of invitation for the lad to some good houses,

as if he had been a mamma with a daughter to marry, and not an old

half-pay officer in a wig. And he boasted everywhere of the boy's great

talents, and remarkable oratorical powers; and of the brilliant degree

he was going to take. Lord Runnymede would take him on his embassy, or

the Duke would bring him in for one of his boroughs, he wrote over

and over again to Helen; who, for her part, was too ready to believe

anything that anybody chose to say in favour of her son.

And all this pride and affection of uncle and mother had been trampled

down by Pen's wicked extravagance and idleness! I don't envy Pen's

feelings (as the phrase is), as he thought of what he had done. He had

slept, and the tortoise had won the race. He had marred at its outset

what might have been a brilliant career. He had dipped ungenerously into

a generous mother's purse; basely and recklessly spilt her little cruse.

O! it was a coward hand that could strike and rob a creature so tender.

And if Pen felt the wrong which he had done to others, are we to suppose

that a young gentleman of his vanity did not feel still more keenly the

shame he had brought upon himself? Let us be assured that there is no

more cruel remorse than that; and no groans more piteous than those of

wounded self-love. Like Joel Miller's friend, the Senior Wrangler, who

bowed to the audience from his box at the play, because he and the king

happened to enter the theatre at the same time, only with a fatuity by

no means so agreeable to himself, poor Arthur Pendennis felt perfectly

convinced that all England would remark the absence of his name from the

examination-lists, and talk about his misfortune. His wounded tutor,

his many duns, the skip and bed-maker who waited upon him, the

undergraduates of his own time and the years below him, whom he had

patronised or scorned--how could he bear to look any of them in the face

now? He rushed to his rooms, into which he shut himself, and there he

penned a letter to his tutor, full of thanks, regards, remorse, and

despair, requesting that his name might be taken off the college books,

and intimating a wish and expectation that death would speedily end the

woes of the disgraced Arthur Pendennis.

Then he slunk out, scarcely knowing whither he went, but mechanically

taking the unfrequented little lanes by the backs of the colleges, until

he cleared the university precincts, and got down to the banks of the

Camisis river, now deserted, but so often alive with the boat-races, and

the crowds of cheering gownsmen, he wandered on and on, until he found

himself at some miles' distance from Oxbridge, or rather was found by

some acquaintances leaving that city.

As Pen went up a hill, a drizzling January rain beating in his face, and

his ragged gown flying behind him--for he had not divested himself of

his academical garments since the morning--a postchaise came rattling

up the road, on the box of which a servant was seated, whilst within, or

rather half out of the carriage window, sate a young gentleman smoking a

cigar, and loudly encouraging the postboy. It was our young acquaintance

of Baymouth Mr. Spavin, who had got his degree, and was driving

homewards in triumph in his yellow postchaise. He caught a sight of the

figure, madly gesticulating as he worked up the hill, and of poor Pen's

pale and ghastly face as the chaise whirled by him.

"Wo!" roared Mr. Spavin to the postboy, and the horses stopped in their

mad career, and the carriage pulled up some fifty yards before Pen. He

presently heard his own name shouted, and beheld the upper half of the

body of Mr. Spavin thrust out of the side-window of the vehicle, and

beckoning Pen vehemently towards it.

Pen stopped, hesitated--nodded his head fiercely, and pointed onwards,

as if desirous that the postillion should proceed. He did not speak:

but his countenance must have looked very desperate, for young Spavin,

having stared at him with an expression of blank alarm, jumped out

of the carriage presently, ran towards Pen holding out his hand, and

grasping Pen's, said, "I say--hullo, old boy, where are you going, and

what's the row now?"

"I'm going where I deserve to go," said Pen, with an imprecation.

"This ain't the way," said Mr. Spavin, smiling. "This is the Fenbury

road. I say, Pen, don't take on because you are plucked. It's nothing

when you are used to it. I've been plucked three times, old boy--and

after the first time I didn't care. Glad it's over, though. You'll have

better luck next time."

Pen looked at his early acquaintance,--who had been plucked, who had

been rusticated, who had only, after repeated failures, learned to

read and write correctly, and who, in spite of all these drawbacks, had

attained the honour of a degree. "This man has passed," he thought, "and

I have failed!" It was almost too much for him to bear.

"Good-bye, Spavin," said he; "I'm very glad you are through. Don't let

me keep you; I'm in a hurry--I'm going to town to-night."

"Gammon," said Mr. Spavin. "This ain't the way to town; this is the

Fenbury road, I tell you."

"I was just going to turn back," Pen said.

"All the coaches are full with the men going down," Spavin said. Pen

winced. "You'd not get a place for a ten-pound note. Get into my yellow;

I'll drop you at Mudford, where you have a chance of the Fenbury mail.

I'll lend you a hat and a coat; I've got lots. Come along; jump in,

old boy--go it, leathers!"--and in this way Pen found himself in Mr.

Spavin's postchaise, and rode with that gentleman as far as the Ram Inn

at Mudford, fifteen miles from Oxbridge; where the Fenbury mail changed

horses, and where Pen got a place on to London.

The next day there was an immense excitement in Boniface College,

Oxbridge, where, for some time, a rumour prevailed, to the terror

of Pen's tutor and tradesmen, that Pendennis, maddened at losing his

degree, had made away with himself--a battered cap, in which his name

was almost discernible, together with a seal bearing his crest of an

eagle looking at a now extinct sun, had been found three miles on the

Fenbury road, near a mill-stream, and, for four-and-twenty hours, it was

supposed that poor Pen had flung himself into the stream, until letters

arrived from him, bearing the London post-mark.

The mail reached London at the dreary hour of five; and he hastened to

the inn at Covent Garden, at which he was accustomed to put up, where

the ever-wakeful porter admitted him, and showed him to a bed. Pen

looked hard at the man, and wondered whether Boots knew he was plucked?

When in bed he could not sleep there. He tossed about until the

appearance of the dismal London daylight, when he sprang up desperately,

and walked off to his uncle's lodgings in Bury Street; where the maid,

who was scouring the steps, looked up suspiciously at him, as he came

with an unshaven face, and yesterday's linen. He thought she knew of his

mishap, too.

"Good evens! Mr. Harthur, what as appened, sir?" Mr. Morgan, the valet,

asked, who had just arranged the well-brushed clothes and shiny boots

at the door of his master's bedroom, and was carrying in his wig to the

Major.

"I want to see my uncle," he cried, in a ghastly voice, and flung

himself down on a chair.

Morgan backed before the pale and desperate-looking young man, with

terrified and wondering glances, and disappeared in his master's

apartment.

The Major put his head out of the bedroom door, as soon as he had his

wig on.

"What? examination over? Senior Wrangler, double First Class, hay? said

the old gentleman--I'll come directly;" and the head disappeared.

"They don't know what has happened," groaned Pen; "what will they say

when they know all?"

Pen had been standing with his back to the window, and to such a dubious

light as Bury Street enjoys of a foggy January morning, so that his

uncle could not see the expression of the young man's countenance, or

the looks of gloom and despair which even Mr. Morgan had remarked.

But when the Major came out of his dressing-room neat and radiant, and

preceded by faint odours from Delcroix's shop, from which emporium Major

Pendennis's wig and his pocket-handkerchief got their perfume, he held

out one of his hands to Pen, and was about addressing him in his cheery

high-toned voice, when he caught sight of the boy's face at length, and

dropping his hand, said, "Good God! Pen, what's the matter?"

"You'll see it in the papers at breakfast, sir," Pen said.

"See what?"

"My name isn't there, sir."

"Hang it, why should it be?" asked the Major, more perplexed.

"I have lost everything, sir," Pen groaned out; "my honour's gone; I'm

ruined irretrievably; I can't go back to Oxbridge."

"Lost your honour?" screamed out the Major. "Heaven alive! you don't

mean to say you have shown the white feather?"

Pen laughed bitterly at the word feather, and repeated it. "No, it isn't

that, sir. I'm not afraid of being shot; I wish to God anybody would. I

have not got my degree. I--I'm plucked, sir."

The Major had heard of plucking, but in a very vague and cursory way,

and concluded that it was some ceremony performed corporally upon

rebellious university youth. "I wonder you can look me in the face

after such a disgrace, sir," he said; "I wonder you submitted to it as a

gentleman."

"I couldn't help it, sir. I did my classical papers well enough it was

those infernal mathematics, which I have always neglected."

"Was it--was it done in public, sir?" the Major said.

"What?"

"The--the plucking?" asked the guardian, looking Pen anxiously in the

face.

Pen perceived the error under which his guardian was labouring, and

in the midst of his misery the blunder caused the poor wretch a faint

smile, and served to bring down the conversation from the tragedy-key,

in which Pen had been disposed to carry it on. He explained to his uncle

that he had gone in to pass his examination, and failed. On which the

Major said, that though he had expected far better things of his nephew,

there was no great misfortune in this, and no dishonour as far as he

saw, and that Pen must try again.

"Me again at Oxbridge," Pen thought, "after such a humiliation as that!"

He felt that, except he went down to burn the place, he could not enter

it.

But it was when he came to tell his uncle of his debts that the other

felt surprise and anger most keenly, and broke out in speeches most

severe upon Pen, which the lad bore, as best might, without flinching.

He had determined to make a clean breast, and had formed a full, true,

and complete list of all his bills and liabilities at the university,

and in London. They consisted of various items, such as:

London Tailor. Oxbridge do.

Oxbridge do. Bill for horses.

Haberdasher, for shirts and gloves. Printseller.

Jeweller. Books.

College Cook. Binding.

Grump, for desserts. Hairdresser and Perfumery.

Bootmaker. Hotel bill in London.

Wine Merchant in London. Sundries.

All which items the reader may fill in at his pleasure--such accounts

have been inspected by the parents of many university youth,--and it

appeared that Mr. Pen's bills in all amounted to about seven hundred

pounds; and, furthermore, it was calculated that he had had more than

twice that sum of ready money during his stay at Oxbridge. This sum he

had spent, and for it had to show--what?

"You need not press a man who is down, sir," Pen said to his uncle,

gloomily. "I know very well, sir, how wicked and idle I have been. My

mother won't like to see me dishonoured, sir," he continued, with his

voice failing; "and I know she will pay these accounts. But I shall ask

her for no more money."

"As you like, sir," the Major said. "You are of age, and my hands are

washed of your affairs. But you can't live without money, and have no

means of making it that I see, though you have a fine talent in spending

it, and it is my belief that you will proceed as you have begun, and

ruin your mother before you are five years older.--Good morning; it is

time for me to go to breakfast. My engagements won't permit me to see

you much during the time that you stay in London. I presume that you

will acquaint your mother with the news which you have just conveyed to

me."

And pulling on his hat, and trembling in his limbs somewhat, Major

Pendennis walked out of his lodgings before his nephew, and went

ruefully off to take his accustomed corner at the Club. He saw the

Oxbridge examination-lists in the morning papers, and read over the

names, not understanding the business, with mournful accuracy. He

consulted various old fogies of his acquaintance, in the course of the

day, at his Clubs; Wenham, a Dean, various Civilians; and, as it is

called, "took their opinion," showing to some of them the amount of

his nephew's debts, which he had dotted down on the back of a card, and

asking what was to be done, and whether such debts were not monstrous,

preposterous? What was to be done?--There was nothing for it but to

pay. Wenham and the others told the Major of young men who owed twice

as much--five times as much--as Arthur, and with no means at all to pay.

The consultations, and calculations, and opinions, comforted the Major

somewhat. After all, he was not to pay.

But he thought bitterly of the many plans he had formed to make a man

of his nephew, of the sacrifices which he had made, and of the manner in

which he was disappointed. And he wrote off a letter to Doctor Portman,

informing him of the direful events which had taken place, and begging

the Doctor to break them to Helen. For the orthodox old gentleman

preserved the regular routine in all things, and was of opinion that it

was more correct to "break" a piece of bad news to a person by means of

a (possibly maladroit and unfeeling) messenger, than to convey it simply

to its destination by a note. So the Major wrote to Doctor Portman,

and then went out to dinner, one of the saddest men in any London

dining-room that day.

Pen, too, wrote his letter, and skulked about London streets for

the rest of the day, fancying that everybody was looking at him and

whispering to his neighbour, "That is Pendennis of Boniface, who was

plucked yesterday." His letter to his mother was full of tenderness and

remorse: he wept the bitterest tears over it--and the repentance and

passion soothed him to some degree.

He saw a party of roaring young blades from Oxbridge in the coffee-room

of his hotel, and slunk away from them, and paced the streets. He

remembers, he says, the prints which he saw hanging up at Ackermann's

window in the rain, and a book which he read at a stall near the Temple:

at night he went to the pit of the play, and saw Miss Fotheringay, but

he doesn't in the least recollect in what piece.

On the second day there came a kind letter from his tutor, containing

many grave and appropriate remarks upon the event which had befallen

him, but strongly urging Pen not to take his name off the university

books, and to retrieve a disaster which, everybody knew, was owing

to his own carelessness alone, and which he might repair by a month's

application. He said he had ordered Pen's skip to pack up some trunks of

the young gentleman's wardrobe, which duly arrived with fresh copies of

all Pen's bills laid on the top.

On the third day there arrived a letter from home; which Pen read in his

bedroom, and the result of which was that he fell down on his knees with

his head in the bedclothes, and then prayed out his heart and humbled

himself; and having gone downstairs and eaten an immense breakfast he

sallied forth and took his place at the Bull and Mouth, Piccadilly, by

the Chatteris coach for that evening.

CHAPTER XXII. Prodigal's Return

Such a letter as the Major wrote of course, sent Doctor Portman to

Fairoaks, and he went off with that alacrity which a good man shows when

he has disagreeable news to commit. He wishes the deed were done, and

done quickly. He is sorry, but que voulez-vous? the tooth must be taken

out, and he has you in the chair, and it is surprising with what courage

and vigour of wrist he applies the forceps. Perhaps he would not be

quite so active or eager if it were his tooth; but, in fine, it is your

duty to have it out. So the doctor, having read the epistle out to Myra

and Mrs. Portman, with many damnatory comments upon the young scapegrace

who was goin deeper and deeper into perdition, left those ladies to

spread the news through the Clavering society, which they did with their

accustomed accuracy and despatch, and strode over to Fairoaks to break

the intelligence to the widow.

She had the news already. She had read Pen's letter, and it had relieved

her somehow. A gloomy presentiment of evil had been hanging over her for

many, many months past. She knew the worst now, and her darling boy was

come back to her repentant and tender-hearted. Did she want more?

All that the Rector could say (and his remarks were both dictated by

common-sense, and made respectable by antiquity) could not bring Helen

to feel any indignation or particular unhappiness, except that the boy

should be unhappy. What was this degree that they made such an outcry

about, and what good would it do Pen? Why did Doctor Portman and his

uncle insist upon sending the boy to a place where there was so much

temptation to be risked, and so little good to be won? Why didn't they

leave him at home with his mother? As for his debts, of course they must

be paid;--his debts!--wasn't his father's money all his, and hadn't he

a right to spend it? In this way the widow met the virtuous Doctor, and

all the arrows of his indignation somehow took no effect upon her gentle

bosom.

For some time past, an agreeable practice, known since times ever

so ancient, by which brothers and sisters are wont to exhibit their

affection towards one another, and in which Pen and his little sister

Laura had been accustomed to indulge pretty frequently in their childish

days, had been given up by the mutual consent of those two individuals.

Coming back from college after an absence from home of some months, in

place of the simple girl whom he had left behind him, Mr. Arthur found

a tall, slim, handsome young lady, to whom he could not somehow proffer

the kiss which he had been in the habit of administering previously, and

who received him with a gracious curtsey and a proffered hand, and with

a great blush which rose up to the cheek, just upon the very spot which

young Pen had been used to salute.

I am not good at descriptions of female beauty; and, indeed, do not care

for it in the least (thinking that goodness and virtue are, of course,

far more advantageous to a young lady than any mere fleeting charms of

person and face), and so shall not attempt any particular delineation

of Miss Laura Bell at the age of sixteen years. At that age she had

attained her present altitude of five feet four inches, so that she was

called tall and gawky by some, and a Maypole by others, of her own sex,

who prefer littler women. But if she was a Maypole, she had beautiful

roses about her head, and it is a fact that many swains were disposed to

dance round her. She was ordinarily pale, with a faint rose tinge in

her cheeks; but they flushed up in a minute when occasion called,

and continued so blushing ever so long, the roses remaining after the

emotion had passed away which had summoned those pretty flowers into

existence. Her eyes have been described as very large from her earliest

childhood, and retained that characteristic in later life. Good-natured

critics (always females) said that she was in the habit of making play

with those eyes, and ogling the gentlemen and ladies in her company; but

the fact is, that Nature had made them so to shine and to look, and they

could no more help so looking and shining than one star can help being

brighter than another. It was doubtless to mitigate their brightness

that Miss Laura's eyes were provided with two pairs of veils in the

shape of the longest and finest black eyelashes, so that, when she

closed her eyes, the same people who found fault with those orbs, said

that she wanted to show her eyelashes off; and, indeed, I daresay that

to see her asleep would have been a pretty sight.

As for her complexion, that was nearly as brilliant as Lady Mantrap's,

and without the powder which her ladyship uses. Her nose must be left to

the reader's imaginaton: if her mouth was rather large (as Miss Piminy

avers, who, but for her known appetite, one would think could not

swallow anything larger than a button) everybody allowed that her smile

was charming, and showed off a set of pearly teeth, whilst her voice

was so low and sweet, that to hear it was like listening to sweet music.

Because she is in the habit of wearing very long dresses, people of

course say that her feet are not small: but it may be that they are

of the size becoming her figure, and it does not follow, because Mrs.

Pincher is always putting her foot out, that all other ladies should be

perpetually bringing theirs on the tapis. In fine, Miss Laura Bell at

the age of sixteen, was a sweet young lady. Many thousands of such are

to be found, let us hope, in this country where there is no lack of

goodness, and modesty, and purity, and beauty.

Now Miss Laura, since she had learned to think for herself (and in the

past two years her mind and her person had both developed themselves

considerably) had only been half pleased with Pen's general conduct and

bearing. His letters to his mother at home had become of late very

rare and short. It was in vain that the fond widow urged how constant

Arthur's occupations and studies were and how many his engagements.

"It is better that he should lose a prize" Laura said "than forget his

mother; and indeed, mamma, I don't see that he gets many prizes. Why

doesn't he come home and stay with you, instead of passing his vacations

at his great friends' fine houses? There is nobody there will love him

half so much as--as you do." "As I do only, Laura?" sighed out Mrs.

Pendennis. Laura declared stoutly that she did not love Pen a bit, when

he did not do his duty to his mother nor would she be convinced by any

of Helen's fond arguments, that the boy must make his way in the

world; that his uncle was most desirous that Pen should cultivate the

acquaintance of persons who were likely to befriend him in life; that

men had a thousand ties and calls which women could not understand,

and so forth. Perhaps Helen no more believed in these excuses than her

adopted daughter did; but she tried to believe that she believed them,

and comforted herself with the maternal infatuation. And that is a point

whereon I suppose many a gentleman has reflected, that, do what we will,

we are pretty sure of the woman's love that once has been ours; and that

that untiring tenderness and forgiveness never fail us.

Also, there had been that freedom, not to say audacity, in Arthur's

latter talk and ways, which had shocked and displeased Laura. Not that

he ever offended her by rudeness, or addressed to her a word which

she ought not to hear, for Mr. Pen was a gentleman, and by nature and

education polite to every woman high and low; but he spoke lightly and

laxly of women in general; was less courteous in his actions than in his

words--neglectful in sundry ways, and in many of the little offices of

life. It offended Miss Laura that he should smoke his horrid pipes in

the house; that he should refuse to go to church with his mother, or

on walks or visits with her, and be found yawning over his novel in his

dressing-gown, when the gentle widow returned from those duties. The

hero of Laura's early infancy, about whom she had passed so many, many

nights talking with Helen (who recited endless stories of the boy's

virtues, and love, and bravery, when he was away at school), was a

very different person from the young man whom now she knew; bold

and brilliant, sarcastic and defiant, seeming to scorn the simple

occupations or pleasures, or even devotions, of the women with whom he

lived, and whom he quitted on such light pretexts.

The Fotheringay affair, too, when Laura came to hear of it (which she

did first by some sarcastic allusions of Major Pendennis, when on a

visit to Fairoaks, and then from their neighbours at Clavering, who

had plenty of information to give her on this head), vastly shocked and

outraged Miss Laura. A Pendennis fling himself away on such a woman as

that! Helen's boy galloping away from home, day after day, to fall on

his knees to an actress, and drink with her horrid father! A good son

want to bring such a man and such a woman into his house, and set her

over his mother! "I would have run away, mamma; I would, if I had had to

walk barefoot through the snow," Laura said.

"And you would have left me too, then?" Helen answered; on which, of

course, Laura withdrew her previous observation, and the two women

rushed into each other's embraces with that warmth which belonged to

both their natures, and which characterises not a few of their sex.

Whence came all Whence came all the indignation of Miss Laura about

Arthur's passion? Perhaps she did not know, that, if men throw

themselves away upon women, women throw themselves away upon men,

too; and that there is no more accounting for love, than for any other

physical liking or antipathy: perhaps she had been misinformed by the

Clavering people and old Mrs. Portman, who was vastly bitter against

Pen, especially since his impertinent behaviour to the Doctor and since

the wretch had smoked cigars in church-time: perhaps, finally, she was

jealous; but this is a vice in which it is said the ladies very seldom

indulge.

Albeit she was angry with Pen, against his mother she had no such

feeling; but devoted herself to Helen with the utmost force of her

girlish affection--such affection as women, whose hearts are disengaged,

are apt to bestow upon the near female friend. It was devotion--it was

passion--it was all sorts of fondness and folly; it was a profusion of

caresses, tender epithets and endearments, such as it does not become

sober historians with beards to narrate. Do not let us men despise these

instincts because we cannot feel them. These women were made for our

comfort and delectation, gentlemen,--with all the rest of the minor

animals.

But as soon as Miss Laura heard that Pen was unfortunate and unhappy,

all her wrath against him straightway vanished, and gave place to the

most tender and unreasonable compassion. He was the Pen of old days

once more restored to her, the frank and affectionate, the generous and

tender-hearted. She at once took side with Helen against Doctor Portman,

when he outcried at the enormity of Pen's transgressions. Debts? what

were his debts? they were a trifle; he had been thrown into expensive

society by his uncle's order, and of course was obliged to live in

the same manner as the young gentlemen whose company he frequented.

Disgraced by not getting his degree? the poor boy was ill when he went

in for the examinations: he couldn't think of his mathematics and stuff

on account of those very debts which oppressed him; very likely some of

the odious tutors and masters were jealous of him, and had favourites of

their own whom they wanted to put over his head. Other people disliked

him, and were cruel to him, and were unfair to him, she was very sure.

And so, with flushing cheeks and eyes bright with anger, this young

creature reasoned; and she went up and seized Helen's hand, and kissed

her in the Doctor's presence, and her looks braved the Doctor, and

seemed to ask how he dared to say a word against her darling mother's

Pen?

When that divine took his leave, not a little discomfited and amazed at

the pertinacious obstinacy of the women, Laura repeated her embraces and

arguments with tenfold fervour to Helen, who felt that there was a

great deal of cogency in most of the latter. There must be some jealousy

against Pen. She felt quite sure that he had offended some of the

examiners, who had taken a mean revenge of him--nothing more likely.

Altogether, the announcement of the misfortune vexed these two ladies

very little indeed. Pen, who was plunged in his shame and grief in

London, and torn with great remorse for thinking of his mother's sorrow,

would have wondered, had he seen how easily she bore the calamity.

Indeed, calamity is welcome to women if they think it will bring truant

affection home again: and if you have reduced your mistress to a crust,

depend upon it that she won't repine, and only take a very little bit of

it for herself, provided you will eat the remainder in her company.

And directly the Doctor was gone, Laura ordered fires to be lighted

in Mr. Arthur's rooms, and his bedding to be aired; and had these

preparations completed by the time Helen had finished a most tender

and affectionate letter to Pen: when the girl, smiling fondly, took her

mamma by the hand, and led her into those apartments where the fires

were blazing so cheerfully, and there the two kind creatures sate down

on the bed, and talked about Pen ever so long. Laura added a postscript

to Helen's letter, in which she called him her dearest Pen, and bade him

come home instantly, with two of the handsomest dashes under the word,

and be happy with his mother and his affectionate sister Laura.

In the middle of the night--as these two ladies, after reading their

bibles a great deal during the evening, and after taking just a look

into Pen's room as they passed to their own--in the middle of the night,

I say, Laura, whose head not unfrequently chose to occupy that pillow

which the nightcap of the late Pendennis had been accustomed to press,

cried out suddenly, "Mamma, are you awake?"

Helen stirred and said, "Yes, I'm awake." The truth is, though she had

been lying quite still and silent, she had not been asleep one instant,

but had been looking at the night-lamp in the chimney, and had been

thinking of Pen for hours and hours.

Then Miss Laura (who had been acting with similar hypocrisy, and lying,

occupied with her own thoughts, as motionless as Helen's brooch, with

Pen's and Laura's hair in it, on the frilled white pincushion on the

dressing-table) began to tell Mrs. Pendennis of a notable plan which

she had been forming in her busy little brains; and by which all Pen's

embarrassments would be made to vanish in a moment, and without the

least trouble to anybody.

"You know, mamma," this young lady said, "that I have been living with

you for ten years, during which time you have never taken any of my

money, and have been treating me just as if I was a charity girl. Now,

this obligation has offended me very much, because I am proud and do not

like to be beholden to people. And as, if I had gone to school--only I

wouldn't--it must have cost me at least fifty pounds a year, it is clear

that I owe you fifty times ten pounds, which I know you have put in the

bank at Chatteris for me, and which doesn't belong to me a bit. Now,

to-morrow we will go to Chatteris, and see that nice old Mr. Rowdy, with

the bald head, and ask him for it,--not for his head, but for the five

hundred pounds: and I dare say he will send you two more, which we will

save and pay back; and we will send the money to Pen, who can pay all

his debts without hurting anybody and then we will live happy ever

after."

What Helen replied to this speech need not be repeated, as the widow's

answer was made up of a great number of incoherent ejaculations,

embraces, and other irrelative matter. But the two women slept well

after that talk; and when the night-lamp went out with a splutter, and

the sun rose gloriously over the purple hills, and the birds began

to sing and pipe cheerfully amidst the leafless trees and glistening

evergreens on Fairoaks lawn, Helen woke too, and as she looked at the

sweet face of the girl sleeping beside her, her lips parted with a

smile, blushes on her cheeks, her spotless bosom heaving and falling

with gentle undulations, as if happy dreams were sweeping over it--Pen's

mother felt happy and grateful beyond all power of words, save such as

pious women offer up to the Beneficent Dispenser of love and mercy--in

Whose honour a chorus of such praises is constantly rising up all round

the world.

Although it was January and rather cold weather, so sincere was Mr.

Pen's remorse, and so determined his plans of economy, that he would not

take an inside place in the coach, but sate up behind with his friend

the Guard, who remembered his former liberality, and lent him plenty of

great-coats. Perhaps it was the cold that made his knees tremble as he

got down at the lodge-gate, or it may be that he was agitated at the

notion of seeing the kind creature for whose love he had made so selfish

a return. Old John was in waiting to receive his master's baggage, but

he appeared in a fustian jacket, and no longer wore his livery of drab

and blue. "I'se garner and stable man, and lives in the ladge now," this

worthy man remarked, with a grin of welcome to Pen, and something of a

blush; but instantly as Pen turned the corner of the shrubbery and

was out of eye-shot of the coach, Helen made her appearance, her face

beaming with love and forgiveness--for forgiving is what some women love

best of all.

We may be sure that the widow, having a certain other object in view,

had lost no time in writing off to Pen an account of the noble, the

magnanimous, the magnificent offer of Laura, filling up her letter with

a profusion of benedictions upon both her children. It was probably the

knowledge of this money-obligation which caused Pen to blush very much

when he saw Laura, who was in waiting in the hall, and who this time,

and for this time only, broke through the little arrangement of which we

have spoken, as having subsisted between her and Arthur for the last few

years; but the truth is, there has been a great deal too much said about

kissing in the present chapter.

So the Prodigal came home, and the fatted calf was killed for him, and

he was made as happy as two simple women could make him. No allusions

were made to the Oxbridge mishap, or questions asked as to his farther

proceedings, for some time. But Pen debated these anxiously in his own

mind, and up in his own room, where he passed much time in cogitation.

A few days after he came home, he rode to Chatteris on his horse, and

came back on the top of the coach. He then informed his mother that he

had left the horse to be sold; and when that operation was effected, he

handed her over the cheque, which she, and possibly Pen himself,

thought was an act of uncommon virtue and self-denial, but which Laura

pronounced to be only strict justice.

He rarely mentioned the loan which she had made, and which, indeed,

had been accepted by the widow with certain modifications; but once or

twice, and with great hesitation and stammering, he alluded to it, and

thanked her; but it evidently pained his vanity to be beholden to the

orphan for succour. He was wild to find some means of repaying her.

He left off drinking wine, and betook himself, but with great

moderation, to the refreshment of whisky-and-water. He gave up

cigar-smoking; but it must be confessed that of late years he had liked

pipes and tobacco as well or even better, so that this sacrifice was not

a very severe one.

He fell asleep a great deal after dinner when he joined the ladies

in the drawing-room, and was certainly very moody and melancholy. He

watched the coaches with great interest, walked in to read the papers

at Clavering assiduously, dined with anybody who would ask him (and the

widow was glad that he should have any entertainment in their solitary

place), and played a good deal at cribbage with Captain Glanders.

He avoided Dr. Portman, who, in his turn, whenever Pen passed, gave him

very severe looks from under his shovel-hat. He went to church with his

mother, however, very regularly, and read prayers for her at home to the

little household. Always humble, it was greatly diminished now: a couple

of maids did the work of the house of Fairoaks: the silver dish-covers

never saw the light at all.

John put on his livery to go to church, and assert his dignity on

Sundays, but it was only for form's sake. He was gardener and out-door

man, vice Upton, resigned. There was but little fire in Fairoaks

kitchen, and John and the maids drank their evening beer there by the

light, of a single candle. All this was Mr. Pen's doing, and the state

of things did not increas his cheerfulness.

For some time Pen said no power on earth could induce him to go back to

Oxbridge again, after his failure there; but one day Laura said to him,

with many blushes, that she thought, as some sort of reparation, of

punishment on himself for his--for his idleness, he ought to go back and

get his degree, if he could fetch it by doing so; and so back Mr. Pen

went.

A plucked man is a dismal being in a university; belonging to no set of

men there, and owned by no one. Pen felt himself plucked indeed of

all the fine feathers which he had won during his brilliant years, and

rarely appeared out of his college; regularly going to morning chapel,

and shutting himself up in his rooms of nights, away from the noise and

suppers of the undergraduates. There were no duns about his door, they

were all paid--scarcely any cards were left there. The men of his

year had taken their degrees, and were gone. He went into a second

examination, and passed with perfect ease. He was somewhat more easy in

his mind when he appeared in his bachelor's gown.

On his way back from Oxbridge he paid a visit to his uncle in London;

but the old gentleman received him with very cold looks, and would

scarcely give him his forefinger to shake. He called a second time, but

Morgan, the valet, said his master was from home.

Pen came back to Fairoaks, and to his books and to his idleness, and

loneliness and despair. He commenced several tragedies, and wrote many

copies of verses of a gloomy cast. He formed plans of reading and broke

them. He thought about enlisting--about the Spanish legion--about a

profession. He chafed against his captivity, and cursed the idleness

which had caused it. Helen said he was breaking his heart, and was sad

to see his prostration. As soon as they could afford it, he should go

abroad--he should go to London--he should be freed from the dull society

of two poor women. It was dull--very, certainly. The tender widow's

habitual melancholy seemed to deepen into a sadder gloom; and Laura

saw with alarm that the dear friend became every year more languid and

weary, and that her pale cheek grew more wan.

CHAPTER XXIII. New Faces

The inmates of Fairoaks were drowsily pursuing this humdrum existence,

while the great house upon the hill, on the other side of the River

Brawl, was shaking off the slumber in which it had lain during the lives

of two generations of masters, and giving extraordinary signs of renewed

liveliness.

Just about the time of Pen's little mishap, and when he was so absorbed

in the grief occasioned by that calamity as to take no notice of events

which befell persons less interesting to himself than Arthur Pendennis,

an announcement appeared in the provincial journals which caused no

small sensation in the county at least, and in all the towns, villages,

halls and mansions, and parsonages for many miles round Clavering

Park. At Clavering Market; at Cackleby Fair; at Chatteris Sessions; on

Gooseberry Green, as the squire's carriage met the vicar's one-horse

contrivance, and the inmates of both vehicles stopped on the road to

talk; at Tinkleton Church gate, as the bell was tolling in the sunshine,

and the white smocks and scarlet cloaks came trooping over the green

common, to Sunday worship; in a hundred societies round about--the word

was, that Clavering Park was to be inhabited again.

Some five years before, the county papers had advertised the marriage at

Florence, at the British Legation, of Francis Clavering, Esq., only son

of Sir Francis Clavering, Bart., of Clavering Park, with Jemima Augusta,

daughter of Samuel Snell, of Calcutta, Esq., and widow of the late J.

Amory, Esq. At that time the legend in the county was that Clavering,

who had been ruined for many a year, had married a widow from India with

some money. Some of the county folks caught a sight of the newly-married

pair. The Kickleburys, travelling in Italy, had seen them. Clavering

occupied the Poggi Palace at Florence, gave parties, and lived

comfortably--but could never come to England. Another year--young

Peregrine, of Cackleby, making a Long Vacation tour, had fallen in with

the Claverings occupying Schloss Schinkenstein, on the Mummel See. At

Rome, at Lucca, at Nice, at the baths and gambling places of the Rhine

and Belgium, this worthy couple might occasionally be heard of by the

curious, and rumours of them came, as it were by gusts, to Clavering's

ancestral place.

Their last place of abode was Paris, where they appear to have lived in

great fashion and splendour after the news of the death of Samuel Snell,

Esq., of Calcutta, reached his orphan daughter in Europe.

Of Sir Francis Clavering's antecedents little can be said that would be

advantageous to that respected baronet. The son of an outlaw, living

in a dismal old chateau near Bruges, this gentleman had made a feeble

attempt to start in life with a commission in a dragoon regiment, and

had broken down almost at the outset. Transactions at the gambling-table

had speedily effected his ruin; after a couple of years in the army

he had been forced to sell out, had passed some time in Her Majesty's

prison of the Fleet, and had then shipped over to Ostend to join the

gouty exile, his father. And in Belgium, France and Germany, for some

years, this decayed and abortive prodigal might be seen lurking about

billiard-rooms and watering-places, punting at gambling-houses, dancing

at boarding-house balls, and riding steeple-chases on other folks'

horses.

It was at a boarding-house at Lausanne that Francis Clavering made

what he called the lucky coup of marrying the widow Amory, very lately

returned from Calcutta. His father died soon after, by consequence of

whose demise his wife became Lady Clavering. The title so delighted Mr.

Snell of Calcutta, that he doubled his daughter's allowance; and dying

himself soon after, left a fortune to her and her children the amount of

which was, if not magnified by rumour, something very splendid indeed.

Before this time there had been, not rumours unfavourable to Lady

Clavering's reputation, but unpleasant impressions regarding her

ladyship. The best English people abroad were shy of making her

acquaintance; her manners were not the most refined; her origin was

lamentably low and doubtful. The retired East Indians, who are to be

found in considerable force in most of the continental towns frequented

by English, spoke with much scorn of the disreputable old lawyer and

indigo-smuggler her father, and of Amory, her first husband, who had

been mate of the Indiaman in which Miss Snell came out to join her

father at Calcutta. Neither father nor daughter were in society at

Calcutta, or had ever been heard of at Government House. Old Sir Jasper

Rogers, who had been Chief Justice of Calcutta, had once said to his

wife, that he could tell a queer story about Lady Clavering's first

husband; but greatly to Lady Rogers's disappointment, and that of the

young ladies his daughters, the old Judge could never be got to reveal

that mystery.

They were all, however, glad enough to go to Lady Clavering's parties,

when her ladyship took the Hotel Bouilli in the Rue Grenelle at Paris,

and blazed out in the polite world there in the winter of 183--.

The Faubourg St. Germain took her up. Viscount Bagwig, our excellent

ambassador, paid her marked attention. The princes of the family

frequented her salons. The most rigid and noted of the English ladies

resident in the French capital acknowledged and countenanced her; the

virtuous Lady Elderbury, the severe Lady Rockminster, the venerable

Countess of Southdown--people, in a word, renowned for austerity, and of

quite a dazzling moral purity:--so great and beneficent an influence had

the possession of ten (some said twenty) thousand a year exercised

upon Lady Clavering's character and reputation. And her munificence

and good-will were unbounded. Anybody (in society) who had a scheme of

charity was sure to find her purse open. The French ladies of piety got

money from her to support their schools and convents; she subscribed

indifferently for the Armenian patriarch; for Father Barbarossa, who

came to Europe to collect funds for his monastery on Mount Athos;

for the Baptist Mission to Quashyboo, and the Orthodox Settlement in

Feefawfoo, the largest and most savage of the Cannibal Islands. And it

is on record of her, that, on the same day on which Madame de Cricri got

five Napoleons from her in support of the poor persecuted Jesuits, who

were at that time in very bad odour in France, Lady Budelight put her

down in her subscription-list for the Rev. J. Ramshorn, who had had

a vision which ordered him to convert the Pope of Rome. And more than

this, and for the benefit of the worldly, her ladyship gave the best

dinners, and the grandest balls and suppers, which were known at Paris

during that season.

And it was during this time, that the good-natured lady must have

arranged matters with her husband's creditors in England, for Sir

Francis reappeared in his native country, without fear of arrest; was

announced in the Morning Post, and the county paper, as having taken up

his residence at Mivart's Hotel; and one day the anxious old housekeeper

at Clavering House beheld a carriage and four horses drive up the

long avenue, and stop before the moss-grown steps in front of the vast

melancholy portico.

Three gentlemen were in the carriage--an open one. On the back seat was

our old acquaintance, Mr. Tatham of Chatteris, whilst in the places of

honour sate a handsome and portly gentleman enveloped in mustachios,

whiskers, fur collars, and braiding, and by him a pale languid man who

descended feebly from the carriage, when the little lawyer, and the

gentleman in fur, nimbly jumped out of it.

They walked up the great moss-grown steps to the hall-door, and

a foreign attendant, with earrings and a gold-laced cap, pulled

strenuously at the great bell-handle at the cracked and sculptured gate.

The bell was heard clanging loudly through the vast gloomy mansion.

Steps resounded presently upon the marble pavement of the hall within;

and the doors opened, and finally Mrs. Blenkinsop, the housekeeper,

Polly, her aide-de-camp, and Smart, the keeper, appeared bowing humbly.

Smart, the keeper, pulled the wisp of hay-coloured hair which adorned

his sunburnt forehead, kicked out his left heel as if there were a

dog biting at his calves, and brought down his head to a bow. Old Mrs

Blenkinsop dropped a curtsey. Little Polly, her aide-de-camp, made a

curtsey and several rapid bows likewise; and Mrs. Blenkinsop, with a

great deal of emotion, quavered out, "Welcome to Clavering, Sir Francis.

It du my poor eyes good to see one of the family once more."

The speech and the greetings were all addressed to the grand gentleman

in fur and braiding, who wore his hat so magnificently on one side, and

twirled his mustachios so royally. But he burst out laughing, and said,

"You've saddled the wrong horse, old lady--I'm not Sir Francis Clavering

what's come to revisit the halls of my ancestors. Friends and vassals!

behold your rightful lord!"

And he pointed his hand towards the pale, languid gentleman who said,

"Don't be an ass, Ned."

"Yes, Mrs. Blenkinsop, I'm Sir Francis Clavering; I recollect you quite

well. Forgot me, I suppose?--How dy do?" and he took the old lady's

trembling hand; and nodded in her astonished face, in a not unkind

manner.

Mrs. Blenkinsop declared upon her conscience that she would have known

Sir Francis anywhere, that he was the very image of Sir Francis, his

father, and of Sir John who had gone before.

"O yes--thanky--of course--very much obliged--and that sort of thing,"

Sir Francis said, looking vacantly about the hall "Dismal old place,

ain't it, Ned? Never saw it but once, when my governor quarrelled with

gwandfather in the year twenty-thwee.

"Dismal?--beautiful!--the Castle of Otranto!--the Mysteries of Udolpho,

by Jove!" said the individual addressed as Ned. "What a fireplace! You

might roast an elephant in it. Splendid carved gallery! Inigo Jones, by

Jove! I'd lay five to two it's Inigo Jones."

"The upper part by Inigo Jones; the lower was altered by the eminent

Dutch architect, Vanderputty, in George the First his time, by Sir

Richard, fourth baronet," said the housekeeper.

"O indeed," said the Baronet "Gad, Ned, you know everything."

"I know a few things, Frank," Ned answered. "I know that's not a Snyders

over the mantelpiece--bet you three to one it's a copy. We'll restore

it, my boy. A lick of varnish, and it will come out wonderfully, sir.

That old fellow in the red gown, I suppose, is Sir Richard."

"Sheriff of the county, and sate in parliament in the reign of Queen

Anne," said the housekeeper, wondering at the stranger's knowledge;

"that on the right is Theodosia, wife of Harbottle, second baronet, by

Lely, represented in the character of Venus, the Goddess of Beauty,--her

son Gregory, the third baronet, by her side, as Cupid, God of Love, with

a bow and arrows; that on the next panel is Sir Rupert, made a knight

banneret by Charles the First, and whose property was confuscated by

Oliver Cromwell."

"Thank you--needn't go on, Mrs. Blenkinsop," said the Baronet, "We'll

walk about the place ourselves. Frosch, give me a cigar. Have a cigar,

Mr. Tatham?"

Little Mr. Tatham tried a cigar which Sir Francis's courier handed to

him, and over which the lawyer spluttered fearfully. "Needn't come with

us, Mrs. Blenkinsop. What's--his--name--you--Smart--feed the horses and

wash their mouths. Shan't stay long. Come along, Strong,--I know the

way: I was here in twenty-thwee, at the end of my gwandfather's time."

And Sir Francis and Captain Strong, for such was the style and title of

Sir Francis's friend, passed out of the hall into the reception-rooms,

leaving the discomfited Mrs. Blenkinsop to disappear by a side-door

which led to her apartments, now the only habitable rooms in the

long-uninhabited mansion.

It was a place so big that no tenant could afford to live in it; and Sir

Francis and his friend walked through room after room, admiring their

vastness and dreary and deserted grandeur. On the right of the hall-door

were the saloons and drawing-rooms, and on the other side the oak room,

the parlour, the grand dining-room, the library, where Pen had found

books in old days. Round three sides of the hall ran a gallery, by

which, and corresponding passages, the chief bedrooms were approached,

and of which many were of stately proportions and exhibited marks of

splendour. On the second story was a labyrinth of little discomfortable

garrets, destined for the attendants of the great folks who inhabited

the mansion in the days when it was first built: and I do not know any

more cheering mark of the increased philanthropy of our own times, than

to contrast our domestic architecture with that of our ancestors, and to

see how much better servants and poor are cared for now, than in times

when my lord and my lady slept under gold canopies, and their servants

lay above them in quarters not so airy or so clean as stables are now.

Up and down the house the two gentlemen wandered, the owner of the

mansion being very silent and resigned about the pleasure of possessing

it; whereas the Captain, his friend, examined the premises with so much

interest and eagerness that you would have thought he was the

master, and the other the indifferent spectator of the place. "I see

capabilities in it--capabilities in it, sir," cried the Captain. "Gad,

sir, leave it to me, and I'll make it the pride of the country, at

a small expense. What a theatre we can have in the library here, the

curtains between the columns which divide the room! What a famous room

for a galop!--it will hold the whole shire. We'll hang the morning

parlour with the tapestry in your second salon in the Rue de Grenelle,

and furnish the oak room with the Moyen-age cabinets and the armour.

Armour looks splendid against black oak, and there's a Venice glass in

the Quai Voltaire, which will suit that high mantelpiece to an inch,

sir. The long saloon, white and crimson of course; the drawing-room

yellow satin; and the little drawing-room light blue, with lace

over--hay?"

"I recollect my old governor caning me in that little room," Sir Francis

said sententiously; "he always hated me, my old governor."

"Chintz is the dodge, I suppose, for my lady's rooms--the suite in

the landing, to the south, the bedroom, the sitting-room, and the

dressing-room. We'll throw a conservatory out, over the balcony. Where

will you have your rooms?"

"Put mine in the north wing," said the Baronet, with a yawn, "and out

of the reach of Miss Amory's confounded piano. I can't bear it. She's

scweeching from morning till night."

The Captain burst out laughing. He settled the whole further

arrangements of the house in the course of their walk through it; and,

the promenade ended, they went into the steward's room, now inhabited by

Mrs. Blenkinsop, and where Mr. Tatham was sitting poring over a plan of

the estate, and the old housekeeper had prepared a collation in honour

of her lord and master.

Then they inspected the kitchen and stables, about both of which Sir

Francis was rather interested, and Captain Strong was for examining

the gardens; but the Baronet said, "D---- the gardens, and that sort of

thing!" and finally he drove away from the house as unconcernedly as he

had entered it; and that night the people of Clavering learned that Sir

Francis Clavering had paid a visit to the Park, and was coming to live

in the county.

When this fact came to be known at Chatteris, all the folks in the place

were set in commotion: High Church and Low Church, half-pay captains and

old maids and dowagers, sporting squireens of the viciniage, farmers,

tradesmen, and factory people--all the population in and round about

the little place. The news was brought to Fairoaks, and received by the

ladies there, and by Mr. Pen, with some excitement. "Mrs. Pybus says

there is a very pretty girl in the family, Arthur," Laura said, who was

as kind and thoughtful upon this point as women generally are: "a Miss

Amory, Lady Clavering's daughter by her first marriage. Of course, you

will fall in love with her as soon as she arrives."

Helen cried out, "Don't talk nonsense, Laura." Pen laughed, and said,

"Well, there is the young Sir Francis for you."

"He is but four years old," Miss Laura replied. "But I shall console

myself with that handsome officer, Sir Francis's friend. He was at

church last Sunday, in the Clavering pew, and his mustachios were

beautiful."

Indeed the number of Sir Francis's family (whereof the members have all

been mentioned in the above paragraphs) was pretty soon known in his

town, and everything else, as nearly as human industry and ingenuity

could calculate, regarding his household. The Park avenue and grounds

were dotted now with town folks of the summer evenings, who made their

way up to the great house, peered about the premises, and criticised

the improvements which were taking place there. Loads upon loads of

furniture arrived in numberless vans from Chatteris and London; and

numerous as the vans are, there was not one but Captain Glanders knew

what it contained, and escorted the baggage up to the Park House.

He and Captain Edward Strong had formed an intimate acquaintance by this

time. The younger Captain occupied those very lodgings at Clavering,

which the peaceful Smirke had previously tenanted, and was deep in the

good graces of Madame Fribsby, his landlady; and of the whole town,

indeed. The Captain was splendid in person and raiment; fresh-coloured,

blue-eyed, black-whiskered, broad-chested, athletic--a slight tendency

to fulness did not take away from the comeliness of his jolly figure--a

braver soldier never presented a broader chest to the enemy. As he

strode down Clavering High Street, his hat on one side, his cane

clanking on the pavement, or waving round him in the execution of

military cuts and soldatesque manoeuvres--his jolly laughter ringing

through the otherwise silent street--he was as welcome as sunshine to

the place, and a comfort to every inhabitant in it.

On the first market-day he knew every pretty girl in the market: he

joked with all the women: had a word with the farmers about their stock,

and dined at the Agricultural Ordinary at the Clavering Arms, where he

set them all dying with laughing by his fun and jokes. "Tu be sure he be

a vine veller, tu be sure that he be," was the universal opinion of the

gentlemen in top-boots. He shook hands with a score of them, as they

rode out of the inn-yard on their old nags, waving his hat to them

splendidly as he smoked his cigar in the inn-gate. In the course of the

evening he was free of the landlady's bar, knew what rent the landlord

paid, how many acres he farmed, how much malt he put in his strong

beer; and whether he ever ran in a little brandy unexcised by kings from

Baymouth, or the fishing villages along the coast.

He had tried to live at the great house first; but it was so dull he

couldn't stand it. "I am a creature born for society," he told Captain

Glanders. "I'm down here to see Clavering's house set in order; for

between ourselves, Frank has no energy, sir, no energy; he's not the

chest for it, sir (and he threw out his own trunk as he spoke); but I

must have social intercourse. Old Mrs. Blenkinsop goes to bed at seven,

and takes Polly with her. There was nobody but me and the Ghost for the

first two nights at the great house, and I own it, sir, I like company.

Most old soldiers do."

Glanders asked Strong where he had served? Captain Strong curled his

mustache, and said with a laugh, that the other might almost ask where

he had not served. "I began, sir, as cadet of Hungarian Uhlans, and

when the war of Greek independence broke out, quitted that service in

consequence of a quarrel with my governor, and was one of seven

who escaped from Missolonghi, and was blown up in one of Botzaris's

fireships, at the age of seventeen. I'll show you my Cross of the

Redeemer, if you'll come over to my lodgings and take a glass of grog

with me, Captain, this evening. I've a few of those baubles in my desk.

I've the White Eagle of Poland; Skrzynecki gave it me" (he pronounced

Skrzynecki's name with wonderful accuracy and gusto) "upon the field

of Ostrolenka. I was a lieutenant of the fourth regiment, sir, and we

marched through Diebitsch's lines--bang thro' 'em into Prussia, sir,

without firing a shot. Ah, Captain, that was a mismanaged business. I

received this wound by the side of the King before Oporto,--where he

would have pounded the stock-jobbing Pedroites, had Bourmont followed my

advice; and I served in Spain with the King's troops, until the death of

my dear friend, Zumalacarreguy, when I saw the game was over, and hung

up my toasting iron, Captain. Alava offered me a regiment, the Queen's

Muleteros; but I couldn't--damme, I couldn't--and now, sir, you know Ned

Strong--the Chevalier Strong they call me abroad--as well as he knows

himself."

In this way almost everybody in Clavering came to know Ned Strong. He

told Madame Fribsby, he told the landlord of the George, he told Baker

at the reading-rooms, he told Mrs. Glanders, and the young ones, at

dinner: and, finally, he told Mr. Arthur Pendennis, who, yawning into

Clavering one day, found the Chevalier Strong in company with Captain

Glanders; and who was delighted with his new acquaintance.

Before many days were over, Captain Strong was as much at home in

Helen's drawing-room as he was in Madame Fribsby's first floor; and made

the lonely house very gay with his good-humour and ceaseless flow of

talk. The two women had never before seen such a man. He had a thousand

stories about battles and dangers to interest them--about Greek

captives, Polish beauties, and Spanish nuns. He could sing scores of

songs, in half a dozen languages, and would sit down to the piano and

troll them off in a rich manly voice. Both the ladies pronounced him

to be delightful--and so he was; though, indeed, they had not had much

choice of man's society as yet, having seen in the course of their lives

but few persons, except old Portman and the Major, and Mr. Pen, who was

a genius, to be sure; but then your geniuses are somewhat flat and moody

at home.

And Captain Strong acquainted his new friends at Fairoaks, not only with

his own biography, but with the whole history of the family now coming

to Clavering. It was he who had made the marriage between his friend

Frank and the widow Amory. She wanted rank, and he wanted money. What

match could be more suitable? He organised it; he made those two people

happy. There was no particular romantic attachment between them; the

widow was not of an age or a person for romance, and Sir Francis, if he

had his game at billiards, and his dinner, cared for little besides.

But they were as happy as people could be. Clavering would return to his

native place and country, his wife's fortune would pay his encumbrances

off, and his son and heir would be one of the first men in the county.

"And Miss Amory?" Laura asked. Laura was uncommonly curious about Miss

Amory.

Strong laughed. "Oh, Miss Amory is a muse--Miss Amory is a mystery--Miss

Amory is a femme incomprise." "What is that?" asked simple Mrs.

Pendennis--but the Chevalier gave her no answer: perhaps could not

give her one. "Miss Amory paints, Miss Amory writes poems, Miss Amory

composes music, Miss Amory rides like Diana Vernon. Miss Amory is a

paragon, in a word."

"I hate clever women," said Pen.

"Thank you," said Laura. For her part she was sure she should be charmed

with Miss Amory, and quite longed to have such a friend. And with this

she looked Pen full in the face, as if every word the little hypocrite

said was Gospel truth.

Thus, an intimacy was arranged and prepared beforehand between the

Fairoaks family and their wealthy neighbours at the Park; and Pen and

Laura were to the full as eager for their arrival, as even the most

curious of the Clavering folks. A Londoner, who sees fresh faces and

yawns at them every day may smile at the eagerness with which country

people expect a visitor. A cockney comes amongst them, and is remembered

by his rural entertainers for years after he has left them, and

forgotten them very likely--floated far away from them on the vast

London sea. But the islanders remember long after the mariner has sailed

away, and can tell you what he said and what he wore, and how he looked

and how he laughed. In fine, a new arrival is an event in the country

not to be understood by us, who don't, and had rather not, know who

lives next door.

When the painters and upholsterers had done their work in the house, and

so beautified it, under Captain Strong's superintendence, that he might

well be proud of his taste, that gentleman announced that he should go

to London, where the whole family had arrived by this time, and should

speedily return to establish them in their renovated mansion.

Detachments of domestics preceded them. Carriages came down by sea, and

were brought over from Baymouth by horses which had previously arrived

under the care of grooms and coachmen. One day the 'Alacrity' coach

brought down on its roof two large and melancholy men, who were dropped

at the Park lodge with their trunks, and who were Messieurs Frederic and

James, metropolitan footmen, who had no objection to the country, and

brought with them state and other suits of the Clavering uniform.

On another day, the mail deposited at the gate a foreign gentleman,

adorned with many ringlets and chains. He made a great riot at the

lodge-gate to the keeper's wife (who, being a West-country woman, did

not understand his English or his Gascon French), because there was no

carriage in waiting to drive him to the house, a mile off, and because

he could not walk entire leagues in his fatigued state and varnished

boots. This was Monsieur Alcide Mirobolant, formerly Chef of his

Highness the Duc de Borodino, of H. Eminence Cardinal Beccafico, and

at present Chef of the bouche of Sir Clavering, Baronet:--Monsieur

Mirobolant's library, pictures, and piano had arrived previously in

charge of the intelligent young Englishman, his aide-de-camp. He was,

moreover, aided by a professed female cook, likewise from London, who

had inferior females under her orders.

He did not dine in the steward's room, but took his nutriment in

solitude in his own apartments, where a female servant was affected to

his private use. It was a grand sight to behold him in his dressing-gown

composing a menu. He always sate down and played the piano for some

time before that. If interrupted, he remonstrated pathetically with

his little maid. Every great artist, he said, had need of solitude to

perfectionate his works.

But we are advancing matters in the fulness of our love and respect for

Monsieur Mirobolant, and bringing him prematurely on the stage.

The Chevalier Strong had a hand in the engagement of all the London

domestics, and, indeed, seemed to be the master of the house. There were

those among them who said he was the house-steward, only he dined with

the family. Howbeit, he knew how to make himself respected, and two of

by no means the least comfortable rooms of the house were assigned to

his particular use.

He was walking upon the terrace finally upon the eventful day when,

amidst an immense jangling of bells from Clavering Church, where the

flag was flying, an open carriage and one of those travelling chariots

or family arks, which only English philoprogenitiveness could invent

drove rapidly with foaming horses through the Park gates, and up to the

steps of the Hall. The two battans of the sculptured door flew open. The

superior officers in black, the large and melancholy gentlemen, now in

livery with their hair in powder, the country menials engaged to aid

them, were in waiting in the hall, and bowed like elms when autumn winds

wail in the park. Through this avenue passed Sir Francis Clavering with

a most unmoved face: Lady Clavering, with a pair of bright black

eyes, and a good-humoured countenance, which waggled and nodded very

graciously: Master Francis Clavering, who was holding his mamma's skirt

(and who stopped the procession to look at the largest footman, whose

appearance seemed to strike the young gentleman), and Miss Blandy,

governess to Master Francis, and Miss Amory, her ladyship's daughter,

giving her arm to Captain Strong. It was summer, but fires of welcome

were crackling in the great hall chimney, and in the rooms which the

family were to occupy.

Monsieur Mirobolant had looked at the procession from one of the

lime-trees in the avenue. "Elle est la," he said, laying his jewelled

hand on his richly-embroidered velvet glass buttons, "Je t'ai vue, je

te benis, O ma sylphide, O mon ange!" and he dived into the thicket, and

made his way back to his furnaces and saucepans.

The next Sunday the same party which had just made its appearance at

Clavering Park, came and publicly took possession of the ancient pew

in the church, where so many of the Baronet's ancestors had prayed, and

were now kneeling in effigy. There was such a run to see the new folks,

that the Low Church was deserted, to the disgust of its pastor; and

as the state barouche, with the greys and coachman in silver wig, and

solemn footmen, drew up at the old churchyard-gate, there was such a

crowd assembled there as had not been seen for many a long day. Captain

Strong knew everybody, and saluted for all the company--the country

people vowed my lady was not handsome, to be sure, but pronounced her to

be uncommon fine dressed, as indeed she was--with the finest of shawls,

the finest of pelisses, the brilliantest of bonnets and wreaths, and a

power of rings, cameos, brooches, chains, bangles, and other nameless

gimcracks; and ribbons of every breadth and colour of the rainbow

flaming on her person. Miss Amory appeared meek in dove-colour, like a

vestal virgin--while Master Francis was in the costume, then prevalent,

of Rob Roy Macgregor, a celebrated Highland outlaw. The Baronet was not

more animated than ordinarily--there was a happy vacuity about him which

enabled him to face a dinner, a death, a church, a marriage, with the

same indifferent ease.

A pew for the Clavering servants was filled by these domestics, and the

enraptured congregation saw the gentlemen from London with "vlower on

their heeds," and the miraculous coachman with his silver wig, take

their places in that pew so soon as his horses were put up at the

Clavering Arms.

In the course of the service, Master Francis began to make such a

yelling in the pew, that Frederic, the tallest of the footmen, was

beckoned by his master, and rose and went and carried out Master

Francis, who roared and beat him on the head, so that the powder flew

round about, like clouds of incense. Nor was he pacified until placed on

the box of the carriage, where he played at horses with John's whip.

"You see the little beggar's never been to church before, Miss Bell,"

the Baronet drawled out to a young lady who was visiting him; "no wonder

he should make a row: I don't go in town neither, but I think it's right

in the country to give a good example--and that sort of thing."

Miss Bell laughed and said, "The little boy had not given a particularly

good example."

"Gad, I don't know, and that sort of thing," said the Baronet. "It

ain't so bad neither. Whenever he wants a thing, Frank always cwies, and

whenever he cwies he gets it."

Here the child in question began to howl for a dish of sweetmeats on the

luncheon-table, and making a lunge across the table-cloth, upset a glass

of wine over the best waistcoat of one of the guests present, Mr. Arthur

Pendennis, who was greatly annoyed at being made to look foolish, and at

having his spotless cambric shirt front blotched with wine.

"We do spoil him so," said Lady Clavering to Mrs. Pendennis, finally

gazing at the cherub, whose hands and face were now frothed over

with the species of lather which is inserted in the confection called

meringues a la creme.

"It is very wrong," said Mrs. Pendennis, as if she had never done such a

thing herself as spoil a child.

"Mamma says she spoils my brother,--do you think anything could, Miss

Bell? Look at him,--isn't he like a little angel?"

"Gad, I was quite wight," said the Baronet. "He has cwied, and he has

got it, you see. Go it, Fwank, old boy."

"Sir Francis is a very judicious parent," Miss Amory whispered. Don't

you think so, Miss Bell? I shan't call you Miss Bell--I shall call you

Laura. I admired you so at church. Your robe was not well made, nor your

bonnet very fresh. But you have such beautiful grey eyes, and such a

lovely tint."

"Thank you," said Miss Bell, laughing.

"Your cousin is handsome, and thinks so. He is uneasy de sa personne.

He has not seen the world yet. Has he genius? Has he suffered? A lady,

a little woman in a rumpled satin and velvet shoes--a Miss Pybus--came

here, and said he has suffered. I, too, have suffered,--and you, Laura,

has your heart ever been touched?"

Laura said "No!" but perhaps blushed a little at the idea or the

question, so that the other said,--

"Ah Laura! I see it all. It is the beau cousin. Tell me everything. I

already love you as a sister."

"You are very kind," said Miss Bell, smiling, "and--and it must be owned

that it is a very sudden attachment."

"All attachments are so. It is electricity--spontaneity. It is

instantaneous. I knew I should love you from the moment I saw you. Do

you not feel it yourself?"

"Not yet," said Laura; "but--I daresay I shall if I try."

"Call me by my name, then."

"But I don't know it," Laura cried out.

"My name is Blanche--isn't it a pretty name? Call me by it."

"Blanche--it is very pretty, indeed."

"And while mamma talks with that kind-looking lady--what relation is she

to you? She must have been pretty once, but is rather passee; she is not

well gantee, but she has a pretty hand--and while mamma talks to her,

come with me to my own room,--my own, own room. It's a darling room,

though that horrid creature, Captain Strong, did arrange it. Are you

eprise of him? He says you are, but I know better; it is the

beau cousin. Yes--il a de beaux yeux. Je n'aime pas les blonds,

ordinairement. Car je suis blonde moi--je suis Blanche et blonde,"--and

she looked at her face and made a moue in the glass; and never stopped

for Laura's answer to the questions which she had put.

Blanche was fair, and like a sylph. She had fair hair, with green

reflections in it. But she had dark eyebrows. She had long black

eyelashes, which veiled beautiful brown eyes. She had such a slim waist,

that it was a wonder to behold; and such a slim little feet, that you

would have thought the grass would hardly bend under them. Her lips were

of the colour of faint rosebuds, and her voice warbled limpidly over a

set of the sweetest little pearly teeth ever seen. She showed them very

often, for they were very pretty. She was very good-natured, and a smile

not only showed her teeth wonderfully, but likewise exhibited two lovely

little pink dimples, that nestled in either cheek.

She showed Laura her drawings, which the other thought charming. She

played her some of her waltzes, with a rapid and brilliant finger,

and Laura was still more charmed. And she then read her some poems, in

French and English, likewise of her own composition, and which she kept

locked in her own book--her own dear little book; it was bound in blue

velvet, with a gilt lock, and on it was printed in gold the title of

'Mes Larmes.'

"Mes Larmes!--isn't it a pretty name?" the young lady continued, who

was pleased with everything that she did, and did everything very well.

Laura owned that it was. She had never seen anything like it before;

anything so lovely, so accomplished, so fragile and pretty; warbling so

prettily, and tripping about such a pretty room, with such a number

of pretty books, pictures, flowers, round about her. The honest and

generous country girl forgot even jealousy in her admiration. "Indeed,

Blanche," she said, "everything in the room is pretty; and you are the

prettiest of all." The other smiled, looked in the glass, went up and

took both of Laura's hands, and kissed them, and sat down to the piano,

and shook out a little song, as if she had been a nightingale.

This was the first visit paid by Fairoaks to Clavering Park, in return

for Clavering Park's visit to Fairoaks, in reply to Fairoaks's cards

left a few days after the arrival of Sir Francis's family. The intimacy

between the young ladies sprang up like Jack's Bean-stalk to the skies

in a single night. The large footmen were perpetually walking with

little rose-coloured pink notes to Fairoaks; where there was a pretty

house-maid in the kitchen, who might possibly tempt those gentlemen

to so humble a place. Miss Amory sent music, or Miss Amory sent a new

novel, or a picture from the 'Journal des Modes,' to Laura; or my lady's

compliments arrived with flowers and fruit; or Miss Amory begged and

prayed Miss Bell to come to dinner; and dear Mrs. Pendennis, if she was

strong enough; and Mr. Arthur, if a humdrum party were not too stupid

for him; and would send a pony-carriage for Mrs. Pendennis; and would

take no denial.

Neither Arthur nor Laura wished to refuse. And Helen, who was, indeed,

somewhat ailing, was glad that the two should have their pleasure; and

would look at them fondly as they set forth, and ask in her heart that

she might not be called away until those two beings whom she loved best

in the world should be joined together. As they went out and crossed

over the bridge, she remembered summer evenings five-and-twenty

years ago, when she, too, had bloomed in her brief prime of love and

happiness. It was all over now. The moon was looking from the purpling

sky, and the stars glittering there, just as they used in the early,

well-remembered evenings. He was lying dead far away, with the billows

rolling between them. Good God! how well she remembered the last look of

his face as they parted. It looked out at her through the vista of long

years, as sad and as clear as then.

So Mr. Pen and Miss Laura found the society at Clavering Park an

uncommonly agreeable resort of summer evenings. Blanche vowed that she

raffoled of Laura; and, very likely, Mr. Pen was pleased with Blanche.

His spirits came back: he laughed and rattled till Laura wondered to

hear him. It was not the same Pen, yawning in a shooting jacket, in the

Fairoaks parlour, who appeared alert and brisk, and smiling and well

dressed, in Lady Clavering's drawing-room. Sometimes they had music.

Laura had a sweet contralto voice, and sang with Blanche, who had had

the best continental instruction, and was charmed to be her friend's

mistress. Sometimes Mr. Pen joined in these concerts, or oftener looked

sweet upon Miss Blanche as she sang. Sometimes they had glees, when

Captain Strong's chest was of vast service, and he boomed out in a

prodigious bass, of which he was not a little proud.

"Good fellow, Strong--ain't he, Miss Bell?" Sir Francis would say

to her. "Plays at ecarte with Lady Clavering--plays anything,

pitch-and-toss, pianoforty, cwibbage if you like. How long do you think

he's been staying with me? He came for a week with a carpet-bag, and

Gad, he's been staying here thwee years. Good fellow, ain't he? Don't

know how he gets a shillin' though, begad I don't, Miss Lauwa."

And yet the Chevalier, if he lost his money to Lady Clavering, always

paid it; and if he lived with his friend for three years, paid for that

too--in good-humour, in kindness and joviality, in a thousand little

services by which he made himself agreeable. What gentleman could want a

better friend than a man who was always in spirits, never in the way

or out of it, and was ready to execute any commission for his patron,

whether it was to sing a song or meet a lawyer, to fight a duel or to

carve a capon?

Although Laura and Pen commonly went to Clavering Park together, yet

sometimes Mr. Pen took walks there unattended by her, and about which he

did not tell her. He took to fishing the Brawl, which runs through the

Park, and passes not very far from the garden-wall. And by the oddest

coincidence, Miss Amory would walk out (having been to look at her

flowers), and would be quite surprised to see Mr. Pendennis fishing.

I wonder what trout Pen caught while the young lady was looking on? or

whether Miss Blanche was the pretty little fish which played round his

fly, and which Mr. Pen was endeavouring to hook? It must be owned, he

became very fond of that healthful and invigorating pursuit of angling,

and was whipping the Brawl continually with his fly.

As for Miss Blanche she had a kind heart; and having, as she owned,

herself "suffered" a good deal in the course of her brief life and

experience--why, she could compassionate other susceptible beings

like Pen, who had suffered too. Her love for Laura and that dear Mrs.

Pendennis redoubled: if they were not at the Park, she was not easy

unless she herself was at Fairoaks. She played with Laura; she read

French and German with Laura; and Mr. Pen read French and German along

with them. He turned sentimental ballads of Schiller and Goethe into

English verse for the ladies, and Blanche unlocked 'Mes Larmes' for him,

and imparted to him some of the plaintive outpourings of her own tender

Muse.

It appeared from these poems that this young creature had indeed

suffered prodigiously. She was familiar with the idea of suicide. Death

she repeatedly longed for. A faded rose inspired her with such grief

that you would have thought she must die in pain of it. It was a wonder

how a young creature (who had had a snug home or been at a comfortable

boarding-school, and had no outward grief or hardship to complain of)

should have suffered so much--should have found the means of getting at

such an ocean of despair and passion (as a runaway boy who will get to

sea), and having embarked on it should survive it. What a talent she

must have had for weeping to be able to pour out so many of Mes Larmes!

They were not particularly briny, Miss Blanche's tears, that is the

truth; but Pen, who read her verses, thought them very well for a

lady--and wrote some verses himself for her. His were very violent and

passionate, very hot, sweet and strong: and he not only wrote verses;

but--O the villain! O, the deceiver! he altered and adapted former

poems in his possession, and which had been composed for a certain

Emily Fotheringay, for the use and to the Christian name of Miss Blanche

Amory.

CHAPTER XXIV. A Little Innocent

Every house has its skeleton in it somewhere, and it may be a comfort to

some unhappy folks to think that the luckier and most wealthy of their

neighbours have their miseries and causes of disquiet. Our little

innocent Muse of Blanche, who sang so nicely and talked so sweetly, you

would have thought she must have made sunshine where ever she went, was

the skeleton, or the misery, or the bore, or the Nemesis of Clavering

House, and of most of the inhabitants thereof. As one little stone in

your own shoe or your horse's, suffices to put either to torture and to

make your journey miserable, so in life a little obstacle is sufficient

to obstruct your entire progress, and subject you to endless annoyance

and disquiet. Who would have guessed that such a smiling little fairy as

Blanche Amory could be the cause of discord in any family?

"I say, Strong," one day the Baronet said, as the pair were conversing

after dinner over the billiard-table, and that great unbosomer of

secrets, a cigar; "I say, Strong, I wish to the doose your wife was

dead."

"So do I. That's a cannon, by Jove. But she won't; she'll live for

ever--you see if she don't. Why do you wish her off the hooks, Frank, my

boy?" asked Captain Strong.

"Because then you might marry Missy. She ain't bad-looking. She'll have

ten thousand, and that's a good bit of money for such a poor old devil

as you," drawled out the other gentleman.

"And gad, Strong, I hate her worse and worse every day. I can't stand

her, Strong, by gad, I can't."

"I wouldn't take her at twice the figure," Captain Strong said,

laughing. "I never saw such a little devil in my life."

"I should like to poison her," said the sententious Baronet; "by Jove I

should."

"Why, what has she been at now?" asked his friend.

"Nothing particular," answered Sir Francis; "only her old tricks. That

girl has such a knack of making everybody miserable that, hang me, it's

quite surprising. Last night she sent the governess crying away from

the dinner-table. Afterwards, as I was passing Frank's room, I heard the

poor little beggar howling in the dark, and found his sister had been

frightening his soul out of his body, by telling him stories about the

ghost that's in the house. At lunch she gave my lady a turn; and though

my wife's a fool, she's a good soul--I'm hanged if she ain't."

"What did Missy do to her?" Strong asked.

"Why, hang me, if she didn't begin talking about the late Amory, my

predecessor," the Baronet said, with a grin. "She got some picture out

of the Keepsake, and said she was sure it was like her dear father, She

wanted to know where her father's grave was. Hang her father! Whenever

Miss Amory talks about him, Lady Clavering always bursts out crying: and

the little devil will talk about him in order to spite her mother.

Today when she began, I got in a confounded rage; said I was her father;

and--and that sort of thing, and then, sir, she took a shy at me."

"And what did she say about you, Frank?" Mr. Strong, still laughing,

inquired of his friend and patron.

"Gad, she said I wasn't her father; that I wasn't fit to comprehend her;

that her father must have been a man of genius, and fine feelings, and

that sort of thing: whereas I had married her mother for money."

"Well, didn't you?" asked Strong.

"It don't make it any the pleasanter to hear because it's true, don't

you know," Sir Francis Clavering answered. "I ain't a literary man and

that; but I ain't such a fool as she makes me out. I don't know how it

is, but she always manages to put me in the hole, don't you understand.

She turns all the house round her in her quiet way, and with her

confounded sentimental airs. I wish she was dead, Ned."

"It was my wife whom you wanted dead just now," Strong said, always in

perfect good-humour; upon which the Baron with his accustomed candour,

said, "Well; when people bore my life out, I do wish they were dead, and

I wish Missy were down a well, with all my heart."

Thus it will be seen from the above report of this candid conversation

that our accomplished little friend had some peculiarities or defects of

character which rendered her not very popular. She was a young lady of

some genius, exquisite sympathies and considerable literary attainments,

living, like many another genius, with relatives who could not

comprehend her. Neither her mother nor her stepfather were persons of

a literary turn. Bell's Life and the Racing Calendar were the extent of

the Baronet's reading, and Lady Clavering still wrote like a schoolgirl

of thirteen, and with an extraordinary disregard to grammar and

spelling. And as Miss Amory felt very keenly that she was not

appreciated, and that she lived with persons who were not her equals in

intellect or conversational power, she lost no opportunity to acquaint

her family circle with their inferiority to herself, and not only was

a martyr, but took care to let everybody know that she was so. If she

suffered, as she said and thought she did, severely, are we to wonder

that a young creature of such delicate sensibilities should shriek and

cry out a good deal? Without sympathy life is nothing; and would it not

have been a want of candour on her part to affect a cheerfulness which

she did not feel, or pretend a respect for those towards whom it was

quite impossible she should entertain any reverence? If a poetess may

not bemoan her lot, of what earthly use is her lyre? Blanche struck

hers only to the saddest of tunes; and sang elegies over her dead hopes,

dirges over her early frost-nipt buds of affection, as became such a

melancholy fate and Muse.

Her actual distresses, as we have said, had not been up to the present

time very considerable: but her griefs lay; like those of most of us,

in her own soul--that being sad and habitually dissatisfied, what wonder

that she should weep? So Mes Larmes dribbled out of her eyes any day at

command: she could furnish an unlimited supply of tears, and her faculty

of shedding them increased by practice. For sentiment is like another

complaint mentioned by Horace, as increasing by self-indulgence (I

am sorry to say, ladies, that the complaint in question is called the

dropsy), and the more you cry, the more you will be able and desirous to

do so.

Missy had begun to gush at a very early age. Lamartine was her favourite

bard from the period when she first could feel: and she had subsequently

improved her mind by a sedulous study of novels of the great modern

authors of the French language. There was not a romance of Balzac and

George Sand which the indefatigable little creature had not devoured--by

the time she was sixteen: and, however little she sympathised with her

relatives at home, she had friends, as she said, in the spirit-world,

meaning the tender Indiana, the passionate and poetic Lelia, the amiable

Trenmor, that high-souled convict, that angel of the galleys,--the fiery

Stenio,--and the other numberless heroes of the French romances. She had

been in love with Prince Rodolph and Prince Djalma while she was yet at

school, and had settled the divorce question, and the rights of woman,

with Indiana, before she had left off pinafores. The impetuous little

lady played at love with these imaginary worthies as a little while

before she had played at maternity with her doll. Pretty little poetical

spirits! It is curious to watch them with those playthings. To-day the

blue-eyed one is the favourite, and the black-eyed one is pushed behind

the drawers. To-morrow blue-eyes may take its turn of neglect and it may

be an odious little wretch with a burnt nose, or torn bead of hair, and

no eyes at all, that takes the first place in Miss's affection, and is

dandled and caressed in her arms.

As novelists are supposed to know everything, even the secrets of female

hearts, which the owners themselves do not perhaps know, we may state

that at eleven years of age Mademoiselle Betsi, as Miss Amory was then

called, had felt tender emotions towards a young Savoyard organ-grinder

at Paris, whom she Persisted in believing to be a prince carried off

from his parents; that at twelve an old and hideous drawing-master (but,

ah, what age or personal defects are proof against woman's love?) had

agitated her young heart; and that, at thirteen, being at Madame de

Caramel's boarding-school, in the Champs Elysees, which, as everybody

knows, is next door to Monsieur Rogron's (Chevalier of the Legion of

Honour) pension for young gentlemen, a correspondence by letter took

place between the seduisante Miss Betsi and two young gentlemen of the

College of Charlemagne, who were pensioners of the Chevalier Rogron.

In the above paragraph our young friend has been called by a Christian

name different to that under which we were lately presented to her. The

fact is, that Miss Amory, called Missy at home, had really at the first

been christened Betsy--but assumed the name of Blanche of her own will

and fantasy, and crowned herself with it; and the weapon which the

Baronet, her stepfather, held in terror over her, was the threat to call

her publicly by her name of Betsy, by which menace he sometimes managed

to keep the young rebel in order.

We have spoken just now of children's dolls, and of the manner in which

those little people take up and neglect their darling toys, and very

likely this history will show that Miss Blanche assumed and put away

her live dolls with a similar girlish inconstancy. She had had hosts of

dear, dear, darling, friends ere now, and had quite a little museum

of locks of hair in her treasure-chest, which she had gathered in the

course of her sentimental progress. Some dear friends had married: some

had gone to other schools: one beloved sister she had lost from the

pension, and found again, O, horror! her darling, her Leocadie keeping

the books in her father's shop, a grocer in the Rue du Bac: in fact,

she had met with a number of disappointments, estrangements,

disillusionments, as she called them in her pretty French jargon, and

had seen and suffered a great deal for so young a woman. But it is

the lot of sensibility to suffer, and of confiding tenderness to be

deceived, and she felt that she was only undergoing the penalties of

genius in these pangs and disappointments of her young career.

Meanwhile, she managed to make the honest lady, her mother, as

uncomfortable as circumstances would permit; and caused her worthy

stepfather to wish she was dead. With the exception of Captain Strong,

whose invincible good-humour was proof against her sarcasms, the little

lady ruled the whole house with he tongue. If Lady Clavering talked

about Sparrowgrass instead of Asparagus, or called an object a hobject,

as this unfortunate lady would sometimes do, Missy calmly corrected

her, and frightened the good soul, her mother, into errors only the more

frequent as she grew more nervous under her daughter's eye.

It is not to be supposed, considering the vast interest which the

arrival of the family at Clavering Park inspired in the inhabitants

of the little town, that Madame Fribsby alone, of all the folks in

Clavering, should have remained unmoved and incurious. At the first

appearance of the Park family in church, Madame noted every article of

toilette which the ladies wore, from their bonnets to their brodequins,

and took a survey of the attire of the ladies' maids in the pew allotted

to them. We fear that Doctor Portman's sermon, though it was one of

his oldest and most valued compositions, had little effect upon Madame

Fribsby on that day.

In a very few days afterwards, she had managed for herself an interview

with Lady Clavering's confidential attendant in the housekeeper's room

at the Park; and her cards in French and English, stating that she

received the newest fashions from Paris from her correspondent Madame

Victorine, and that she was in the custom of making court and ball

dresses for the nobility and gentry of the shire, were in the possession

of Lady Clavering and Miss Amory, and favourably received, as she was

happy to hear, by those ladies.

Mrs. Bonner, Lady Clavering's lady, became soon a great frequenter of

Madame Fribsby's drawing-room, and partook of many entertainments at the

milliner's expense. A meal of green tea, scandal, hot Sally-Lunn cakes,

and a little novel reading, were always at the service of Mrs. Bonner,

whenever she was free to pass an evening in the town. And she found

much more time for these pleasures than her junior officer, Miss Amory's

maid, who seldom could be spared for a holiday, and was worked as hard

as any factory-girl by that inexorable little Muse, her mistress.

The Muse loved to be dressed becomingly, and, having a lively fancy and

a poetic desire for change, was for altering her attire every day.

Her maid having a taste in dressmaking--to which art she had been an

apprentice at Paris, before she entered into Miss Blanche's service

there--was kept from morning till night altering and remodelling Miss

Amory's habiliments; and rose very early and went to bed very late, in

obedience to the untiring caprices of her little taskmistress. The

girl was of respectable English parents. There are many of our people,

colonists of Paris, who have seen better days, who are not quite ruined,

who do not quite live upon charity, and yet cannot get on without it;

and as her father was a cripple incapable of work, and her return home

would only increase the burthen and add to the misery of the family,

poor Pincott was fain to stay where she could maintain herself, and

spare a little relief to her parents.

Our Muse, with the candour which distinguished her, never failed to

remind her attendant of the real state of matters. "I should send you

away, Pincott, for you are a great deal too weak, and your eyes are

failing you, and you are always crying and snivelling and wanting the

doctor; but I wish that your parents at home should be supported, and I

go on enduring you for their sake, mind," the dear Blanche would say to

her timid little attendant. Or, "Pincott, your wretched appearance and

slavish manner, and red eyes, positively give me the migraine; and

I think I shall make you wear rouge, so that you may look a little

cheerful;" or, "Pincott, I can't bear, even for the sake of your

starving parents, that you should tear my hair out of my head in that

manner; and I will thank you to write to them and say that I dispense

with your services." After which sort of speeches, and after keeping her

for an hour trembling over her hair, which the young lady loved to have

combed, as she perused one of her favourite French novels, she would go

to bed at one o'clock, and say, "Pincott, you may kiss me. Good night.

I should like you to have the pink dress ready for the morning." And so

with blessing upon her attendant, she would turn round and go to sleep.

The Muse might lie in bed as long as she chose of a morning, and availed

herself of that privilege; but Pincott had to rise very early indeed to

get her mistress's task done; and had to appear next day with the same

red eyes and the same wan face, which displeased Miss Amory by their

want of gaiety, and caused the mistress to be so angry, because the

servant persisted in being and looking unwell and unhappy. Not that

Blanche ever thought she was a hard mistress. Indeed, she made quite a

friend of Pincott, at times, and wrote some very pretty verses about the

lonely little tiring-maid, whose heart was far away. Our beloved Blanche

was a superior being, and expected to be waited upon as such. And I

do not know whether there are any other ladies in this world who treat

their servants or dependants so, but it may be that there are such, and

that the tyranny which they exercise over their subordinates, and

the pangs which they can manage to inflict with a soft voice, and a

well-bred simper, are as cruel as those which a slave-driver administers

with an oath and a whip.

But Blanche was a Muse--a delicate little creature, quite tremulous with

excitability, whose eyes filled with tears at the smallest emotion;

and who knows, but that it was the very fineness of her feelings which

caused them to be froissed so easily? You crush a butterfly by merely

touching it. Vulgar people have no idea of the sensibility of a Muse.

So little Pincott being occupied all day and night in stitching,

hemming, ripping, combing, ironing, crimping, for her mistress; reading

to her when in bed,--for the girl was mistress of the two languages, and

had a sweet voice and manner--could take no share in Madame Fribsby's

soirees, nor indeed was she much missed, or considered of sufficient

consequence to appear at their entertainments.

But there was another person connected with the Clavering establishment,

who became a constant guest of our friend, the milliner. This was the

chief of the kitchen, Monsieur Mirobolant, with whom Madame Fribsby soon

formed an intimacy.

Not having been accustomed to the appearance or society of persons

of the French nation, the rustic inhabitants of Clavering were not so

favourably impressed by Monsieur Alcide's manners and appearance, as

that gentleman might have desired that they should be. He walked among

them quite unsuspiciously upon the afternoon of a summer day, when his

services were not required at the House, in his usual favourite costume,

namely, his light green frock or paletot, his crimson velvet waistcoat,

with blue glass buttons, his pantalon Ecossais, of a very large and

decided check pattern, his orange satin neckcloth, and his jean-boots,

with tips of shiny leather,--these, with a gold-embroidered cap, and a

richly gilt cane, or other varieties of ornament of a similar tendency,

formed his usual holiday costume, in which he flattered himself there

was nothing remarkable (unless, indeed, the beauty of his person should

attract observation), and in which he considered that he exhibited the

appearance of a gentleman of good Parisian ton.

He walked then down the street, grinning and ogling every woman he met

with glances, which he meant should kill them outright, and peered over

the railings, and in at the windows, where females were, in the tranquil

summer evening. But Betsy, Mrs. Pybus's maid, shrank back with a Lor

bless us, as Alcide ogled her over the laurel-bush; the Miss Bakers, and

their mamma, stared with wonder; and presently a crowd began to follow

the interesting foreigner, of ragged urchins and children, who left

their dirt-pies in the street to pursue him.

For some time he thought that admiration was the cause which led these

persons in his wake, and walked on, pleased himself that he could

so easily confer on others so much harmless pleasure. But the little

children and dirt-pie manufacturers were presently succeeded by

followers of a larger growth, and a number of lads and girls from

the factory being let loose at this hour, joined the mob, and began

laughing, jeering, hooting, and calling opprobrious names at the

Frenchman. Some cried out "Frenchy! Frenchy!" some exclaimed "Frogs!"

one asked for a lock of his hair, which was long and in richly-flowing

ringlets; and at length the poor artist began to perceive that he was an

object of derision rather than of respect to the rude grinning mob.

It was at this juncture that Madame Fribsby spied the unlucky gentleman

with the train at his heels, and heard the scornful shouts with which

they assailed him. She ran out of her room, and across the street to the

persecuted foreigner; she held out her hand, and, addressing him in his

own language, invited him into her abode; and when she had housed him

fairly within her door, she stood bravely at the threshold before the

gibing factory girls and boys, and said they were a pack of cowards to

insult a poor man who could not speak their language, and was alone

and without protection. The little crowd, with some ironical cheers

and hootings, nevertheless felt the force of Madame Fribsby's vigorous

allocution, and retreated before her; for the old lady was rather

respected in the place, and her oddity and her kindness had made her

many friends there.

Poor Mirobolant was grateful indeed to hear the language of his country

ever so ill spoken. Frenchmen pardon our faults in their language

much more readily than we excuse their bad English; and will face our

blunders throughout a long conversation, without the least propensity

to grin. The rescued artist vowed that Madame Fribsby was his guardian

angel, and that he had not as yet met with such suavity and politeness

among les Anglaises. He was as courteous and complimentary to her as

if it was the fairest and noblest of ladies whom he was addressing for

Alcide Mirobolant paid homage after his fashion to all womankind, and

never dreamed of a distinction of ranks in the realms of beauty, as his

phrase was.

A cream, flavoured with pineapple--a mayonnaise of lobster, which he

flattered himself was not unworthy of his hand, or of her to whom he had

the honour to offer it as an homage, and a box of preserved fruits of

Provence, were brought by one of the chef's aides-de-camp, in a basket,

the next day to the milliner's, and were accompanied with a gallant note

to the amiable Madame Fribsbi. "Her kindness," Alcide said, "had made

a green place in the desert of his existence,--her suavity would ever

contrast in memory with the grossierete of the rustic population,

who were not worthy to possess such a jewel." An intimacy of the most

confidential nature thus sprang up between the milliner and the chief

of the kitchen; but I do not know whether it was with pleasure or

mortification that Madame received the declarations of friendship which

the young Alcides proffered to her, for he persisted in calling her "La

respectable Fribsbi," "La vertueuse Fribsbi,"--and in stating that he

should consider her as his mother, while he hoped she would regard him

as her son. Ah! it was not very long ago, Fribsby thought, that words

had been addressed to her in that dear French language, indicating a

different sort of attachment. And she sighed as she looked up at the

picture of her Carabineer. For it is surprising how young some people's

hearts remain when their heads have need of a front or a little

hair-dye,--and, at this moment, Madame Fribsby, as she told young

Alcide, felt as romantic as a girl of eighteen.

When the conversation took this turn--and at their first intimacy

Madame Fribsby was rather inclined so to lead it--Alcide always politely

diverged to another subject: it was as his mother that he persisted

in considering the good milliner. He would recognise her in no other

capacity, and with that relationship the gentle lady was forced to

content herself, when she found how deeply the artist's heart was

engaged elsewhere.

He was not long before he described to her the subject and origin of his

passion.

"I declared myself to her," said Alcide, laying his hand on his

heart, "in a manner which was as novel as I am charmed to think it was

agreeable. Where cannot Love penetrate, respectable Madame Fribsbi?

Cupid is the father of invention!--I inquired of the domestics what were

the plats of which Mademoiselle partook with most pleasure; and built

up my little battery accordingly. On a day when her parents had gone to

dine in the world (and I am grieved to say that a grossier dinner at a

restaurateur, in the Boulevard, or in the Palais Royal seemed to form

the delights of these unrefined persons), the charming Miss entertained

some comrades of the pension; and I advised myself to send up a little

repast suitable to so delicate young palates. Her lovely name is

Blanche. The name of the maiden is white; the wreath of roses which she

wears is white. I determined that my dinner should be as spotless as

the snow. At her accustomed hour, and instead of the rude gigot a l'eau,

which was ordinarily served at her too simple table, I sent her up a

little potage a la Reine--a la Reine Blanche I called it,--as white as

her own tint--and confectioned with the most fragrant cream and almonds.

I then offered up at her shrine a filet de merlan a l'gnes, and a

delicate plat which I designated as Eperlan a la Sainte-Therese, and

of which my charming Miss partook with pleasure. I followed this by two

little entrees of sweetbread and chicken; and the only brown thing which

I permitted myself in the entertainment was a little roast of lamb,

which I lay in a meadow of spinaches, surrounded with croustillons,

representing sheep, and ornamented with daisies and other savage

flowers. After this came my second service: a pudding a la Reine

Elizabeth (who, Madame Fribsbi knows, was a maiden princess); a dish

of opal-coloured plover's eggs which I called Nid de tourtereaux a la

Roucoule; placing in the midst of them two of those tender volatiles,

billing each other, and confectioned with butter; a basket containing

little gateaux of apricots, which, I know, all young ladies adore; and

a jelly of marasquin, bland insinuating, intoxicating as the glance of

beauty. This I designated Ambroisie de Calypso a la Souveraine de

mon Coeur. And when the ice was brought in--an ice of plombiere and

cherries--how do you think I had shaped them, Madame Fribsbi? In the

form of two hearts united with an arrow, on which I had laid, before it

entered, a bridal veil in cut-paper, surmounted by a wreath of virginal

orange-flowers. I stood at the door to watch the effect of this entry.

It was but one cry of admiration. The three young ladies filled their

glasses with the sparkling Ay, and carried me in a toast. I heard it--I

heard Miss speak of me--I heard her say, 'Tell Monsieur Mirobolant that

we thank him--we admire him--we love him!' My feet almost failed me as

she spoke.

"Since that, can I have any reason to doubt that the young artist has

made some progress in the heart of the English Miss? I am modest, but

my glass informs me that I am not ill-looking. Other victories have

convinced me of the fact."

"Dangerous man!" cried the milliner.

"The blond misses of Albion see nothing in the dull inhabitants of their

brumous isle, which can compare with the ardour and vivacity of the

children of the South. We bring our sunshine with us; we are Frenchmen,

and accustomed to conquer. Were it not for this affair of the heart, and

my determination to marry an Anglaise, do you think I would stop in this

island (which is not altogether ungrateful, since I have found here a

tender mother in the respectable Madame Fribsbi), in this island,

in this family? My genius would use itself in the company of these

rustics--the poesy of my art cannot be understood by these carnivorous

insularies. No--the men are odious, but the women--the women! I own,

dear Fribsbi, are seducing! I have vowed to marry one; and as I cannot

go into your markets and purchase, according to the custom of the

country, I am resolved to adopt another custom, and fly with one to

Gretna Grin. The blonde Miss will go. She is fascinated. Her eyes have

told me so. The white dove wants but the signal to fly."

"Have you any correspondence with her?" asked Fribsby, in amazement, and

not knowing whether the young lady or the lover might be labouring under

a romantic delusion.

"I correspond with her by means of my art. She partakes of dishes which

I make expressly for her. I insinuate to her thus a thousand hints

which as she is perfectly spiritual, she receives. But I want other

intelligences near her."

"There is Pincott, her maid," said Madame Fribsby, who, by aptitude or

education, seemed to have some knowledge of affairs of the heart, but

the great artist's brow darkened at this suggestion.

"Madame," he said, "there are points upon which a gallant man ought to

silence himself; though, if he break the secret, he may do so with the

least impropriety to his best friend--his adopted mother. Know then,

that there is a cause why Miss Pincott should be hostile to me--a cause

not uncommon with your sex--jealousy."

"Perfidious monster!" said the confidante.

"Ah, no," said the artist, with a deep bass voice, and a tragic

accent worthy of the Port St Martin and his favourite melodrames, "not

perfidious, but fatal. Yes, I am a fatal man, Madame Fribsbi. To inspire

hopeless passion is my destiny. I cannot help it that women love me. Is

it my fault that that young woman deperishes and languishes to the view

of the eye, consumed by a flame which I cannot return? Listen! There are

others in this family who are similarly unhappy. The governess of the

young Milor has encountered me in my walks, and looked at me in a way

which can bear but one interpretation. And Milady herself, who is of

mature age, but who has oriental blood, has once or twice addressed

compliments to the lonely artist which can admit of no mistake. I avoid

the household, I seek solitude, I undergo my destiny. I can marry but

one, and am resolved it shall be to a lady of your nation. And, if her

fortune is sufficient I think Miss would be the person who would be most

suitable. I wish to ascertain what her means are before I lead her to

Gretna Grin."

Whether Alcides was as irresistible a conqueror as his namesake, or

whether he was simply crazy, is a point which must be left to the

reader's judgment. But the latter if he had had the benefit of much

French acquaintance, has perhaps met with men amongst them who fancied

themselves almost as invincible; and who, if you credit them, have made

equal havoc in the hearts of les Anglaises.

CHAPTER XXV. Contains both Love and Jealousy

Our readers have already heard Sir Francis Clavering's candid opinion

of the lady who had given him her fortune and restored him to his native

country and home, and it must be owned that the Baronet was not far

wrong in his estimate of his wife, and that Lady Clavering was not the

wisest or the best educated of women. She had had a couple of years'

education in Europe, in a suburb of London, which she persisted in

calling Ackney to her dying day, whence she had been summoned to join

her father at Calcutta at the age of fifteen. And it was on her voyage

thither, on board the Ramchunder East Indiaman, Captain Bragg, in which

ship she had two years previously made her journey to Europe, that she

formed the acquaintance of her first husband, Mr. Amory, who was third

mate of the vessel in question.

We are not going to enter into the early part of Lady Clavering's

history, but Captain Bragg, under whose charge Miss Snell went out to

her father, who was one of the Captain's consignees, and part owner

of the Ramchunder and many other vessels, found reason to put the

rebellious rascal of a mate in irons, until they reached the Cape, where

the Captain left his officer behind; and finally delivered his ward to

her father at Calcutta, after a stormy and perilous voyage in which the

Ramchunder and the cargo and passengers incurred no small danger and

damage.

Some months afterwards Amory made his appearance at Calcutta, having

worked his way out before the mast from the Cape--married the rich

Attorney's daughter in spite of that old speculator--set up as

indigo-planter and failed--set up as agent and failed again--set up as

editor of the Sunderbund Pilot and failed again--quarrelling ceaselessly

with his father-in-law and his wife during the progress of all these

mercantile transactions and disasters, and ending his career finally

with a crash which compelled him to leave Calcutta and go to New South

Wales. It was in the course of these luckless proceedings, that Mr.

Amory probably made the acquaintance of Sir Jasper Rogers, the respected

Judge of the Supreme Court of Calcutta, who has been mentioned before:

and, as the truth must out, it was by making an improper use of his

father-in-law's name, who could write perfectly well, and had no need of

an amanuensis, that fortune finally forsook Mr. Amory and caused him to

abandon all further struggles with her.

Not being in the habit of reading the Calcutta law-reports very

assiduously, the European public did not know of these facts as well

as people did in Bengal, and Mrs. Amory and her father finding her

residence in India not a comfortable one, it was agreed that the lady

should return to Europe, whither she came with her little daughter Betsy

or Blanche, then four years old. They were accompanied by Betsy's

nurse, who has been presented to the reader in the last chapter as the

confidential maid of Lady Clavering, Mrs. Bonner: and Captain Bragg

took a house for them in the near neighbourhood of his residence in

Pocklington Street.

It was a very hard bitter summer, and the rain it rained every day

for some time after Mrs. Amory's arrival. Bragg was very pompous and

disagreeable, perhaps ashamed, perhaps anxious, to get rid of the Indian

lady. She believed that all the world in London was talking about

her husband's disaster, and that the King and Queen and the Court of

Directors were aware of her unlucky history. She had a good allowance

from her father; she had no call to live in England; and she

determined to go abroad. Away she went, then, glad to escape the gloomy

surveillance of the odious bully, Captain Bragg. People had no objection

to receive her at the continental towns where she stopped, and at the

various boarding-houses, where she royally paid her way. She called

Hackney Ackney, to be sure (though otherwise she spoke English with

a little foreign twang, very curious and not unpleasant); she dressed

amazingly; she was conspicuous for her love of eating and drinking,

and prepared curries and pillaws at every boarding-house which she

frequented; but her singularities of language and behaviour only gave a

zest to her society, and Mrs. Amory was deservedly popular. She was

the most good-natured, jovial, and generous of women. She was up to any

party of pleasure by whomsoever proposed. She brought three times more

champagne and fowl and ham to the picnics than anyone else. She took

endless boxes for the play, and tickets for the masked balls, and

gave them away to everybody. She paid the boarding-house people months

beforehand; she helped poor shabby mustachiod bucks and dowagers whose

remittances had not arrived, with constant supplies from her purse; and

in this way she tramped through Europe, and appeared at Brussels, at

Paris, at Milan, at Naples, at Rome, as her fancy led her. News of

Amory's death reached her at the latter place, where Captain Clavering

was then staying, unable to pay his hotel bill, as, indeed, was his

friend, the Chevalier Strong; and the good-natured widow married the

descendant of the ancient house of Clavering--professing, indeed, no

particular grief for the scapegrace of a husband whom she had lost. We

have brought her thus up to the present time when she was mistress

of Clavering Park, in the midst of which Mr. Pinckney, the celebrated

painter, pourtrayed her with her little boy by her side.

Missy followed her mamma in most of her peregrinations, and so learned a

deal of life. She had a governess for some time; and after her mother's

second marriage, the benefit of Madame de Caramel's select pension in

the Champs Elysees. When the Claverings came to England, she of course

came with them. It was only within a few years, after the death of her

grandfather, and the birth of her little brother, that she began to

understand that her position in life was altered, and that Miss Amory,

nobody's daughter, was a very small personage in a house compared with

Master Francis Clavering, heir to an ancient baronetcy and a noble

estate. But for little Frank, she would have been an heiress, in spite

of her father: and though she knew, and cared not much about money,

of which she never had any stint, and though she was a romantic little

Muse, as we have seen, yet she could not reasonably be grateful to the

persons who had so contributed to change her condition: nor, indeed,

did she understand what the latter really was, until she had made some

further progress, and acquired more accurate knowledge in the world.

But this was clear, that her stepfather was dull and weak: that mamma

dropped her H's, and was not refined in manners or appearance; and that

little Frank was a spoiled quarrelsome urchin, always having his way,

always treading upon her feet, always upsetting his dinner on her

dresses, and keeping her out of her inheritance. None of these, as she

felt, could comprehend her: and her solitary heart naturally pined

for other attachments, and she sought around her where to bestow the

precious boon of her unoccupied affection.

This dear girl, then, from want of sympathy, or other cause, made

herself so disagreeable at home, and frightened her mother and bored her

stepfather so much, that they were quite as anxious as she could be that

she should settle for herself in life; and hence Sir Francis Clavering's

desire expressed to his friend, in the last chapter, that Mrs. Strong

should die, and that he would take Blanche to himself as a second Mrs.

Strong.

But as this could not be, any other person was welcome to win her: and

a smart young fellow, well-looking and well educated like our friend

Arthur Pendennis, was quite free to propose for her if he had a mind,

and would have been received with open arms by Lady Clavering as a

son-in-law, had he had the courage to come forward as a competitor for

Miss Amory's hand.

Mr. Pen, however, besides other drawbacks, chose to entertain an extreme

diffidence about himself. He was ashamed of his late failures, of his

idle and nameless condition, of the poverty which he had brought on his

mother by his folly, and there was as much of vanity as remorse in his

present state of doubt and distrust. How could he ever hope for such

a prize as this brilliant Blanche Amory, who lived in a fine park and

mansion, and was waited on by a score of grand domestics, whilst a

maid-servant brought in their meagre meal at Fairoaks, and his mother

was obliged to pinch and manage to make both ends meet? Obstacles

seemed for him insurmountable, which would have vanished had he marched

manfully upon them: and he preferred despairing, or dallying with

his wishes,--or perhaps he had not positively shaped them as yet,--to

attempting to win gallantly the object of his desire. Many a young

man fails by that species of vanity called shyness, who might, for the

asking have his will.

But we do not pretend to say that Pen had, as yet, ascertained his: or

that he was doing much more than thinking about falling in love. Miss

Amory was charming and lively. She fascinated and cajoled him by a

thousand arts or natural graces or flatteries. But there were lurking

reasons and doubts, besides shyness and vanity, withholding him. In

spite of her cleverness, and her protestations, and her fascinations,

Pen's mother had divined the girl, and did not trust her. Mrs. Pendennis

saw Blanche light-minded and frivolous, detected many wants in her which

offended the pure and pious-minded lady; a want of reverence for her

parents, and for things more sacred, Helen thought: worldliness and

selfishness couched under pretty words and tender expressions. Laura and

Pen battled these points strongly at first with the widow--Laura being

as yet enthusiastic about her new friend, and Pen not far-gone enough in

love to attempt any concealment of his feelings. He would laugh at these

objections of Helen's, and say, "Psha, mother! you are jealous about

Laura--all women are jealous."

But when, in the course of a month or two, and by watching the pair

with that anxiety with which brooding women watch over their sons'

affections--and in acknowledging which, I have no doubt there is a

sexual jealousy on the mother's part, and a secret pang--when Helen saw

that the intimacy appeared to make progress, that the two young people

were perpetually finding pretexts to meet, and that Miss Blanche was at

Fairoaks or Mr. Pen at the Park every day, the poor widow's heart began

to fail her--her darling project seemed to vanish before her; and,

giving way to her weakness, she fairly told Pen one day what her views

and longings were; that she felt herself breaking, and not long for this

world, and that she hoped and prayed before she went, that she might see

her two children one. The late events, Pen's life and career and former

passion for the actress, had broken the spirit of this tender lady. She

felt that he had escaped her, and was in the maternal nest no more; and

she clung with a sickening fondness to Laura, Laura who had been left to

her by Francis in Heaven.

Pen kissed and soothed her in his grand patronising way. He had seen

something of this, he had long thought his mother wanted to make this

marriage--did Laura know anything of it? (Not she,--Mrs. Pendennis

said--not for worlds would she have breathed a word of it to

Laura)--"Well, well, there was time enough, his mother wouldn't die,"

Pen said, laughingly: "he wouldn't hear of any such thing, and as for

the Muse, she is too grand a lady to think about poor little me--and as

for Laura, who knows that she would have me? She would do anything you

told her, to be sure. But am I worthy of her?"

"O, Pen, you might be," was the widow's reply; not that Mr. Pen

ever doubted that he was; and a feeling of indefinable pleasure and

self-complacency came over him as he thought over this proposal, and

imaged Laura to himself, as his memory remembered her for years past,

always fair and open, kindly and pious, cheerful, tender and true. He

looked at her with brightening eyes as she came in from the garden at

the end of this talk, her cheeks rather flushed, her looks frank and

smiling--a basket of roses in her hand.

She took the finest of them and brought it to Mrs. Pendennis, who was

refreshed by the odour and colour of these flowers; and hung over her

fondly and gave it to her.

"And I might have this prize for the asking!" Pen thought with a thrill

of triumph, as he looked at the kindly girl. "Why, she is as beautiful

and as generous as her roses." The image of the two women remained for

ever after in his mind, and he never recalled it but the tears came into

his eyes.

Before very many weeks' intimacy with her new acquaintance, however,

Miss Laura was obliged to give in to Helen's opinion, and own that the

Muse was selfish, unkind, and inconstant. Of course Blanche confided to

her bosom friend all the little griefs and domestic annoyances; how the

family could not comprehend her and she moved among them an isolated

being; how her poor mamma's education had been neglected, and she was

forced to blush for her blunders; how Sir Francis was a weak person

deplorably unintellectual, and only happy when smoking his odious

cigars; how, since the birth of her little brother, she had seen her

mother's precious affection, which she valued more than anything in

life, estranged from her once darling daughter; how she was alone,

alone, alone in the world.

But these griefs, real and heart-rending though they might be to a young

lady of exquisite sensibility, did not convince Laura of the propriety

of Blanche's conduct in many small incidents of Little Frank, for

instance, life might be very provoking, and might have deprived Blanche

of her mamma's affection, but this was no reason why Blanche should box

the child's ears because he upset a glass of water over her drawing, and

why she should call him many opprobrious names in the English and French

language; and the preference accorded to little Frank was certainly no

reason why Blanche should give herself imperial airs of command towards

the boy's governess, and send that young lady upon messages through

the house to bring her book or to fetch her pocket-handkerchief. When a

domestic performed an errand for honest Laura, she was always thankful

and pleased; whereas she could not but perceive that the little Muse had

not the slightest scruple in giving her commands to all the world round

about her, and in disturbing anybody's ease or comfort, in order to

administer to her own. It was Laura's first experience in friendship;

and it pained the kind creature's heart to be obliged to give up as

delusions, one by one, those charms and brilliant qualities in which

her fancy had dressed her new friend, and to find that the fascinating

little fairy was but a mortal, and not a very amiable mortal after

all. What generous person is there that has not been so deceived in his

time?--what person, perhaps, that has not so disappointed others in his

turn?

After the scene with little Frank, in which that refractory son and heir

of the house of Clavering had received the compliments in French and

English, and the accompanying box on the ear from his sister, Miss

Laura who had plenty of humour, could not help calling to mind some very

touching and tender verses which the Muse had read to her out of Mes

Larmes, and which began, "My pretty baby brother, may angels guard thy

rest," in which the Muse, after complimenting the baby upon the station

in life which it was about to occupy, and contrasting it with her own

lonely condition, vowed nevertheless that the angel boy would never

enjoy such affection as hers was, or find in the false world before him

anything so constant and tender as a sister's heart. "It may be," the

forlorn one said, "it may be, you will slight it, my pretty baby sweet,

You will spurn me from your bosom, I'll cling around your feet! O let

me, let me, love you! the world will prove to you As false as 'tis to

others, but I am ever true." And behold the Muse was boxing the darling

brother's ears instead of kneeling at his feet, and giving Miss Laura

her first lesson in the Cynical philosophy--not quite her first,

however,--something like this selfishness and waywardness, something

like this contrast between practice and poetry, between grand versified

aspirations and everyday life, she had witnessed at home in the person

of our young friend Mr. Pen.

But then Pen was different. Pen was a man. It seemed natural somehow

that he should be self-willed and should have his own way. And under his

waywardness and selfishness, indeed there was a kind and generous heart.

O it was hard that such a diamond should be changed away against such a

false stone as this. In a word, Laura began to be tired of her admired

Blanche. She had assayed her and found her not true; and her former

admiration and delight, which she had expressed with her accustomed

generous artlessness, gave way to a feeling, which we shall not call

contempt, but which was very near it; and which caused Laura to adopt

towards Miss Amory a grave and tranquil tone of superiority, which was

at first by no means to the Muse's liking. Nobody likes to be found out,

or, having held a high place, to submit to step down.

The consciousness that this event was impending did not serve to

increase Miss Blanche's good-humour, and as it made her peevish and

dissatisfied with herself, it probably rendered her even less agreeable

to the persons round about her. So there arose, one fatal day, a

battle-royal between dearest Blanche and dearest Laura, in which the

friendship between them was all but slain outright. Dearest Blanche had

been unusually capricious and wicked on this day. She had been insolent

to her mother; savage with little Frank; odiously impertinent in her

behaviour to the boy's governess; and intolerably cruel to Pincott, her

attendant. Not venturing to attack her friend (for the little tyrant was

of a timid feline nature, and only used her claws upon those who were

weaker than herself), she maltreated all these, and especially poor

Pincott, who was menial, confidante, companion (slave always), according

to the caprice of her young mistress.

This girl, who had been sitting in the room with the young ladies, being

driven thence in tears, occasioned by the cruelty of her mistress, and

raked with a parting sarcasm as she went sobbing from the door, Laura

fairly broke out into a loud and indignant invective--wondered how one

so young could forget the deference owing to her elders as well as to

her inferiors in station; and professing so much sensibility of her own,

could torture the feelings of others so wantonly. Laura told her friend

that her conduct was absolutely wicked, and that she ought to ask pardon

of Heaven on her knees for it. And having delivered herself of a hot

and voluble speech whereof the delivery astonished the speaker as much

almost as her auditor, she ran to her bonnet and shawl, and went home

across the park in a great flurry and perturbation, and to the surprise

of Mrs. Pendennis, who had not expected her until night.

Alone with Helen, Laura gave an account of the scene, and gave up her

friend henceforth. "O Mamma," she said, "you were right; Blanche, who

seems so soft and so kind, is, as you have said, selfish and cruel. She

who is always speaking of her affections can have no heart. No honest

girl would afflict a mother so, or torture a dependant; and--and, I give

her up from this day, and I will have no other friend but you."

On this the two ladies went through the osculatory ceremony which they

were in the habit of performing, and Mrs. Pendennis got a great secret

comfort from the little quarrel--for Laura's confession seemed to say,

"That girl can never be a wife for Pen, for she is light-minded and

heartless, and quite unworthy of our noble hero. He will be sure to find

out her unworthiness for his own part, and then he will be saved from

this flighty creature, and awake out of his delusion."

But Miss Laura did not tell Mrs. Pendennis, perhaps did not acknowledge

to herself, what had been the real cause of the day's quarrel. Being in

a very wicked mood, and bent upon mischief everywhere, the little wicked

Muse of a Blanche had very soon begun her tricks. Her darling Laura

had come to pass a long day; and as they were sitting in her own room

together, had chosen to bring the conversation round to the subject of

Mr. Pen.

"I am afraid he is sadly fickle," Miss Blanche observed; "Mrs. Pybus,

and many more Clavering people, have told us all about the actress."

"I was quite a child when it happened, and I don't know anything about

it," Laura answered, blushing very much.

"He used her very ill," Blanche said, wagging her little head. "He was

false to her."

"I am sure he was not," Laura cried out; "he acted most generously by

her; he wanted to give up everything to marry her. It was she that was

false to him. He nearly broke his heart about it: he----"

"I thought you didn't know anything about the story, dearest,"

interposed Miss Blanche.

"Mamma has said so," said Laura.

"Well, he is very clever," continued the other little dear, "What a

sweet poet he is! Have you ever read his poems?"

"Only the 'Fisherman and the Diver,' which he translated for us, and his

Prize Poem, which didn't get the prize; and, indeed, I thought it very

pompous and prosy," Laura said, laughing.

"Has he never written you any poems, then, love?" asked Miss Amory.

"No, my dear," said Miss Bell.

Blanche ran up to her friend, kissed her fondly, called her my dearest

Laura at least three times, looked her archly in the face, nodded

her head, and said, "Promise to tell no-o-body, and I will show you

something."

And tripping across the room daintily to a little mother-of-pearl inlaid

desk, she opened it with a silver key, and took out two or three papers

crumpled and rather stained with green, which she submitted to her

friend. Laura took them and read them. They were love-verses sure

enough--something about Undine--about a Naiad--about a river. She looked

at them for a long time; but in truth the lines were not very distinct

before her eyes.

"And you have answered them, Blanche?" she asked, putting them back.

"O no! not for worlds, dearest," the other said: and when her dearest

Laura had quite done with the verses, she tripped back and popped them

again into the pretty desk.

Then she went to her piano, and sang two or three songs of Rossini,

whose flourishes of music her flexible little voice could execute to

perfection, and Laura sate by, vaguely listening as she performed these

pieces. What was Miss Bell thinking about the while? She hardly knew;

but sate there silent as the songs rolled by. After this concert the

young ladies were summoned to the room where luncheon was served; and

whither they of course went with their arms round each other's waists.

And it could not have been jealousy or anger on Laura's part which had

made her silent; for, after they had tripped along the corridor and

descended the steps, and were about to open the door which leads into

the hall, Laura paused, and looking her friend kindly and frankly in the

face, kissed her with a sisterly warmth.

Something occurred after this--Master Frank's manner of eating,

probably, or mamma's blunders, or Sir Francis smelling of cigars--which

vexed Miss Blanche, and she gave way to that series of naughtinesses

whereof we have spoken, and which ended in the above little quarrel.

CHAPTER XXVI. A House full of Visitors

The difference between the girls did not last long. Laura was always

too eager to forgive and be forgiven, and as for Miss Blanche, her

hostilities, never very long or durable, had not been provoked by the

above scene. Nobody cares about being accused of wickedness. No vanity

is hurt by that sort of charge: Blanche was rather pleased than provoked

by her friend's indignation, which never would have been raised but for

a cause which both knew, though neither spoke of.

And so Laura, with a sigh, was obliged to confess that the romantic part

of her first friendship was at an end, and that the object of it was

only worthy of a very ordinary sort of regard.

As for Blanche, she instantly composed a copy of touching verses,

setting forth her desertion and disenchantment. It was only the old

story, she wrote, of love meeting with coldness, and fidelity returned

by neglect; and some new neighbours arriving from London about this

time, in whose family there were daughters, Miss Amory had the advantage

of selecting an eternal friend from one of these young ladies, and

imparting her sorrows and disappointments to this new sister. The

tall footmen came but seldom now with notes to the sweet Laura; the

pony-carriage was but rarely despatched to Fairoaks to be at the orders

of the ladies there. Blanche adopted a sweet look of suffering

martyrdom when Laura came to see her. The other laughed at her friend's

sentimental mood, and treated it with a good-humour that was by no means

respectful.

But if Miss Blanche found new female friends to console her, the

faithful historian is also bound to say, that she discovered some

acquaintances of the other sex who seemed to give her consolation

too. If ever this artless young creature met a young man, and had ten

minutes' conversation with him in a garden walk, in a drawing-room

window, or in the intervals of a waltz, she confided in him, so to

speak--made play with her beautiful eyes--spoke in a tone of tender

interest, and simple and touching appeal, and left him, to perform the

same pretty little drama in behalf of his successor.

When the Claverings first came down to the Park, there were very few

audiences before whom Miss Blanche could perform: hence Pen had all the

benefits of her glances and confidences, and the drawing-room window or

the garden walk all to himself. In the town of Clavering, it has been

said, there were actually young men: in the near surrounding country,

only a curate or two or a rustic young squire, with large feet and

ill-made clothes. To the dragoons quartered at Chatteris the Baronet

made no overtures: it was unluckily his own regiment: he had left it

on bad terms with some officers of the corps--an ugly business about

a horse bargain--a disputed play account--blind-Hookey--a white

feather--who need ask?--it is not our business to inquire too closely

into the bygones of our characters, except in so far as their previous

history appertains to the development of this present story.

But the autumn, and the end of the Parliamentary Session and the London

season, brought one or two county families down to their houses, and

filled tolerably the neighbouring little watering-place of Baymouth,

and opened our friend Mr. Bingley's Theatre Royal at Chatteris, and

collected the usual company at the Assizes and Race-balls there. Up to

this time, the old county families had been rather shy of our friends of

Clavering Park. The Fogeys of Drummington; the Squares of Tozely Park;

the Welbores of The Barrow, etc.: all sorts of stories were current

among these folks regarding the family at Clavering;--indeed, nobody

ought to say that people in the country have no imagination who heard

them talk about new neighbours. About Sir Francis and his Lady, and her

birth and parentage, about Miss Amory, about Captain Strong, there had

been endless histories which need not be recapitulated; and the family

of the Park had been three months in the county before the great people

around began to call.

But at the end of the season, the Earl of Trehawk, Lord Lieutenant

of the County, coming to Eyrie Castle, and the Countess Dowager of

Rockminster, whose son was also a magnate of the land, to occupy

a mansion on the Marine Parade at Baymouth--these great folks came

publicly, immediately, and in state, to call upon the family of

Clavering Park; and the carriages of the county families speedily

followed in the track which had been left in the avenue by their lordly

wheels.

It was then that Mirobolant began to have an opportunity of exercising

that skill which he possessed, and of forgetting, in the occupations of

his art, the pangs of love. It was then that the large footmen were too

much employed at Clavering Park to be able to bring messages, or dally

over the cup of small beer with the poor little maids at Fairoaks. It

was then that Blanche found other dear friends than Laura, and other

places to walk in besides the river-side, where Pen was fishing. He came

day after day, and whipped the stream, but the "fish, fish!" wouldn't do

their duty, nor the Peri appear. And here, though in strict confidence,

and with a request that the matter go no further, we may as well allude

to a delicate business, of which previous hint has been given. Mention

has been made, in a former page, of a certain hollow tree, at which

Pen used to take his station when engaged in his passion for Miss

Fotheringay, and the cavity of which he afterwards used for other

purposes than to insert his baits and fishing-cans in. The truth is,

be converted this tree into a post-office. Under a piece of moss and a

stone, he used to put little poems, or letters equally poetical, which

were addressed to a certain Undine, or Naiad who frequented the stream,

and which, once or twice, were replaced by a receipt in the shape of a

flower, or by a modest little word or two of acknowledgment, written

in a delicate hand, in French or English, and on pink scented paper.

Certainly, Miss Amory used to walk by this stream, as we have seen; and

it is a fact that she used pink scented paper for her correspondence.

But after the great folks had invaded Clavering Park, and the family

coach passed out of the lodge-gates, evening after evening, on their way

to the other great country houses, nobody came to fetch Pen's letters at

the post-office; the white paper was not exchanged for the pink, but lay

undisturbed under its stone and its moss, whilst the tree was reflected

into the stream, and the Brawl went rolling by. There was not much in

the letters certainly; in the pink notes scarcely anything--merely a

little word or two, half jocular, half sympathetic, such as might be

written by any young lady. But oh, you silly Pendennis, if you wanted

this one, why did you not speak? Perhaps neither party was in earnest.

You were only playing at being in love, and the sportive little Undine

was humouring you at the same play.

But if a man is baulked at this game, he not unfrequently loses his

temper; and when nobody came any more for Pen's poems, he began to look

upon those compositions in a very serious light. He felt almost tragical

and romantic again, as in his first affair of the heart:--at any rate

he was bent upon having an explanation. One day he went to the Hall and

there was a roomful of visitors: on another, Miss Amory was not to be

seen; she was going to a ball that night, and was lying down to take a

little sleep. Pen cursed balls, and the narrowness of his means, and

the humility of his position in the country that caused him to be passed

over by the givers of these entertainments. On a third occasion, Miss

Amory was in the garden, and he ran thither; she was walking there in

state with no less personages than the Bishop and Bishopess of Chatteris

and the episcopal family, who scowled at him, and drew up in great

dignity when he was presented to them, and they heard his name. The

Right Reverend Prelate had heard it before, and also of the little

transaction in the Dean's garden.

"The Bishop says you're a sad young man," good-natured Lady Clavering

whispered to him. "What have you been a doing of? Nothink, I hope, to

vex such a dear Mar as yours? How is your dear Mar? Why don't she come

and me? We an't seen her this ever such a time. We're a goin about a

gaddin, so that we don't see no neighbours now. Give my love to her and

Laurar, and come all to dinner to-morrow."

Mrs. Pendennis was too unwell to come out but Laura and Pen came, and

there was a great party, and Pen only got an opportunity of a hurried

word with Miss Amory. "You never come to the river now," he said.

"I can't," said Blanche, "the house is full of people."

"Undine has left the stream," Mr. Pen went on, choosing to be poetical.

"She never ought to have gone there," Miss Amory answered. "She won't go

again. It was very foolish: very wrong: it was only play. Besides, you

have other consolations at home," she added, looking him full in the

face an instant, and dropping her eyes.

If he wanted her, why did he not speak then? She might have said "Yes"

even then. But as she spoke of other consolations at home, he thought of

Laura, so affectionate and so pure, and of his mother at home, who

had bent her fond heart upon uniting him with her adopted daughter.

"Blanche!" he began, in a vexed tone,--"Miss Amory!"

"Laura is looking at us, Mr. Pendennis," the young lady said. "I must go

back to the company," and she ran off, leaving Mr. Pendennis to bite his

nails in perplexity, and to look out into the moonlight in the garden.

Laura indeed was looking at Pen. She was talking with, or appearing to

listen to the talk of, Mr. Pynsent, Lord Rockminster's son, and grandson

of the Dowager Lady, who was seated in state in the place of honour,

gravely receiving Lady Clavering's bad grammar, and patronising the

vacuous Sir Francis, whose interest in the county she was desirous to

secure. Pynsent and Pen had been at Oxbridge together, where the latter,

during his heyday of good fortune and fashion, had been the superior of

the young patrician, and perhaps rather supercilious towards him. They

had met for the first time, since they parted at the University, at

the table to-day, and given each other that exceedingly impertinent and

amusing demi-nod of recognition which is practised in England only, and

only to perfection by University men,--and which seems to say, "Confound

you--what do you do here?"

"I knew that man at Oxbridge," Mr. Pynsent said to Miss Bell--"a Mr.

Pendennis, I think."

"Yes," said Miss Bell.

"He seems rather sweet upon Miss Amory," the gentleman went on. Laura

looked at them, and perhaps thought so too, but said nothing.

"A man of large property in the county, ain't he? He used to talk about

representing it. He used to speak at the Union. Whereabouts do his

estates lie?"

Laura smiled. "His estates lie on the other side of the river, near the

lodge-gate. He is my cousin, and I live there."

"Where?" asked Mr. Pynsent, with a laugh.

"Why, on the other side of the river, at Fairoaks," answered Miss Bell.

"Many pheasants there? Cover looks rather good," said the simple

gentleman.

Laura smiled again. "We have nine hens and a cock, a pig, and an old

pointer."

"Pendennis don't preserve, then?" continued Mr. Pynsent.

"You should come and see him," the girl said, laughing, and greatly

amused at the notion that her Pen was a great county gentleman, and

perhaps had given himself out to be such.

"Indeed, I quite long to renew our acquaintance," Mr. Pynsent said,

gallantly, and with a look which fairly said, "It is you that I would

like to come and see"--to which look and speech Miss Laura vouchsafed a

smile, and made a little bow.

Here Blanche came stepping up with her most fascinating smile and ogle,

and begged dear Laura to come and take the second in a song. Laura was

ready to do anything good-natured, and went to the piano; by which Mr.

Pynsent listened as long as the duet lasted, and until Miss Amory began

for herself, when he strode away.

"What a nice, frank, amiable, well-bred girl that is, Wagg," said Mr.

Pynsent to a gentleman who had come over with him from Baymouth--"the

tall one, I mean, with the ringlets and red lips--monstrous red, ain't

they?"

"What do you think of the girl of the house?" asked Wagg.

"I think she's a lean, scraggy humbug," said Mr. Pynsent, with great

candour. "She drags her shoulders out of her dress, she never lets

her eyes alone: and she goes simpering and ogling about like a French

waiting-maid.

"Pynsent, be civil," cried the other, "somebody can hear."

"Oh, it's Pendennis of Boniface," Mr. Pynsent said. "Fine evening, Mr.

Pendennis; we were just talking of your charming cousin."

"Any relation to my old friend, Major Pendennis?" asked Mr. Wagg.

"His nephew. Had the pleasure of meeting you at Gaunt House," Mr. Pen

said with his very best air--the acquaintance between the gentlemen was

made in an instant.

In the afternoon of the next day, the two gentlemen who were staying

at Clavering Park were found by Mr. Pen on his return from a fishing

excursion, in which he had no sport, seated in his mother's drawing-room

in comfortable conversation with the widow and her ward. Mr. Pynsent,

tall and gaunt, with large red whiskers and an imposing tuft to his

chin, was striding over a chair in the intimate neighbourhood of Miss

Laura. She was amused by his talk, which was simple, straightforward,

rather humorous and keen, and interspersed with homely expressions of

a style which is sometimes called slang. It was the first specimen of a

young London dandy that Laura had seen or heard: for she had been but a

chit at the time of Mr. Foker's introduction at Fairoaks, nor indeed was

that ingenuous gentleman much more than a boy, and his refinement was

only that of a school and college.

Mr. Wagg, as he entered the Fairoaks premises with his companion, eyed

and noted everything. "Old gardener," he said, seeing Mr. John at the

lodge--"old red livery waistcoat--clothes hanging out to dry on the

gooseberry-bushes--blue aprons, white ducks--gad, they must be young

Pendennis's white ducks--nobody else wears 'em in the family. Rather a

shy place for a sucking county member, ay, Pynsent?"

"Snug little crib," said Mr. Pynsent, "pretty cosy little lawn."

"Mr. Pendennis at home, old gentleman?" Mr. Wagg said to the old

domestic. John answered, "No, Master Pendennis was agone out."

"Are the ladies at home?" asked the younger visitor. Mr. John answered,

"Yes, they be;" and as the pair walked over the trim gravel, and by the

neat shrubberies, up the steps to the hall-door, which old John opened,

Mr. Wagg noted everything that he saw; the barometer and the letter-bag,

the umbrellas and the ladies' clogs, Pen's hats and tartan wrapper, and

old John opening the drawing-room door, to introduce the new-comers.

Such minutiae attracted Wagg instinctively; he seized them in spite of

himself.

"Old fellow does all the work," he whispered to Pynsent. "Caleb

Balderstone. Shouldn't wonder if he's the housemaid." The next minute

the pair were in the presence of the Fairoaks ladies; in whom Pynsent

could not help recognising two perfectly well-bred ladies, and to whom

Mr. Wagg made his obeisance, with florid bows, and extra courtesy,

accompanied with an occasional knowing leer at his companion. Mr.

Pynsent did not choose to acknowledge these signals, except by extreme

haughtiness towards Mr. Wagg, and particular deference to the ladies. If

there was one thing laughable in Mr. Wagg's eyes, it was poverty. He had

the soul of a butler who had been brought from his pantry to make fun in

the drawing-room. His jokes were plenty, and his good-nature thoroughly

genuine, but he did not seem to understand that a gentleman could wear

an old coat, or that a lady could be respectable unless she had her

carriage, or employed a French milliner.

"Charming place, ma'am," said he, bowing to the widow; "noble

prospect--delightful to us Cocknies, who seldom see anything but Pall

Mall." The widow said simply, she had never been in London but once in

her life--before her son was born.

"Fine village, ma'am, fine village," said Mr. Wagg, "and increasing

every day. It'll be quite a large town soon. It's not a bad place to

live in for those who can't get the country, and will repay a visit when

you honour it."

"My brother, Major Pendennis, has often mentioned your name to us," the

widow said, "and we have been very much amused by some of your droll

books, sir," Helen continued, who never could be brought to like Mr.

Wagg's books, and detested their tone most thoroughly.

"He is my very good friend," Mr. Wagg said, with a low bow, "and one of

the best known men about town, and where known, ma'am, appreciated--I

assure you appreciated. He is with our friend Steyne, at

Aix-la-Chapelle. Steyne has a touch of the gout and so, between

ourselves, has your brother. I am going to Stillbrook for the

pheasant-shooting, and afterwards to Bareacres, where Pendennis and I

shall probably meet;" and he poured out a flood of fashionable talk,

introducing the names of a score of peers, and rattling on with

breathless spirits, whilst the simple widow listened in silent wonder.

What a man, she thought; are all the men of fashion in London like this?

I am sure Pen will never like him.

Mr. Pynsent was in the meanwhile engaged with Miss Laura. He named some

of the houses in the neighbourhood whither he was going, and hoped very

much that he should see Miss Bell at some of them. He hoped that her

aunt would give her a season in London. He said, that in the next

parliament it was probable that he should canvass the county, and he

hoped to get Pendennis's interest here. He spoke of Pen's triumph as

an orator at Oxbridge, and asked was he coming into parliament too? He

talked on very pleasantly, and greatly to Laura's satisfaction, until

Pen himself appeared, and, as has been said, found these gentlemen.

Pen behaved very courteously to the pair, now that they have found their

way into his quarters; and though he recollected with some twinges a

conversation at Oxbridge, when Pynsent was present, and in which after

a great debate at the Union, and in the midst of considerable excitement

produced by a supper and champagne-cup,--he had announced his intention

of coming in for his native county, and had absolutely returned thanks

in a fine speech as the future member; yet Mr. Pynsent's manner was

so frank and cordial, that Pen hoped Pynsent might have forgotten his

little fanfaronnade, and any other braggadocio speeches or actions which

he might have made. He suited himself to the tone of the visitors, then,

and talked about Plinlimmon and Magnus Charters, and the old set at

Oxbridge, with careless familiarity and high-bred ease, as if he lived

with marquises every day, and a duke was no more to him than a village

curate.

But at this juncture, and it being then six o'clock in the evening,

Betsy, the maid, who did not know of the advent of strangers, walked

into the room without any preliminary but that of flinging the door

wide open before her, and bearing in her arms a tray, containing three

tea-cups, a tea-pot, and a plate of thick bread-and-butter. All Pen's

splendour and magnificence vanished away at this--and he faltered and

became quite abashed. "What will they think of us?" he thought: and,

indeed, Wagg thrust his tongue in his cheek, thought the tea infinitely

contemptible, and leered and winked at Pynsent to that effect.

But to Mr. Pynsent the transaction appeared perfectly simple--there was

no reason present to his mind why people should not drink tea at six

if they were minded, as well as at any other hour; and he asked of Mr.

Wagg, when they went away, "What the devil he was grinning and winking

at, and what amused him?"

"Didn't you see how the cub was ashamed of the thick bread-and-butter?

I dare say they're going to have treacle if they are good. I'll take an

opportunity of telling old Pendennis when we get back to town," Mr. Wagg

chuckled out.

"Don't see the fun," said Mr. Pynsent.

"Never thought you did," growled Wagg between his teeth; they walked

home rather sulkily.

Wagg told the story at dinner very smartly, with wonderful accuracy of

observation. He described old John, the clothes that were drying,

the clogs in the hall, the drawing-room, and its furniture and

pictures;--"Old man with a beak and bald head--feu Pendennis I bet two

to one; sticking-plaster full-length of a youth in a cap and gown--the

present Marquis of Fairoaks, of course; the widow when young in a

miniature, Mrs. Mee; she had the gown on when we came, or a dress made

the year after, and the tips cut off the fingers of her gloves which she

stitches her son's collars with; and then the sarving maid came in

with their teas so we left the Earl and the Countess to their

bread-and-butter."

Blanche, near whom he sate as he told this story, and who adored les

hommes desprit, burst out laughing, and called him such an odd, droll

creature. But Pynsent, who began to be utterly disgusted with him, broke

out in a loud voice, and said, "I don't know, Mr. Wagg, what sort of

ladies you are accustomed to meet in your own family, but by gad, as far

as a first acquaintance can show, I never met two better-bred women in

my life, and I hope, ma'am, you'll call upon 'em," he added, addressing

Lady Rockminster, who was seated at Sir Francis Clavering's right hand.

Sir Francis turned to the guest on his left, and whispered. "That's

what I call a sticker for Wagg." And Lady Clavering, giving the young

gentleman a delighted tap with her fan, winked her black eyes at him,

and said, "Mr. Pynsent, you're a good feller."

After the affair with Blanche, a difference ever so slight, a tone

of melancholy, perhaps a little bitter, might be perceived in Laura's

converse with her cousin. She seemed to weigh him and find him wanting

too; the widow saw the girl's clear and honest eyes watching the young

man at times, and a look of almost scorn pass over her face, as he

lounged in the room with the women, or lazily sauntered smoking upon the

lawn, or lolled under a tree there over a book which he was too listless

to read.

"What has happened between you?" eager-sighted Helen asked of the girl.

"Something has happened. Has that wicked little Blanche been making

mischief? Tell me, Laura."

"Nothing has happened at all," Laura said.

"Then why do you look at Pen so?" asked his mother quickly.

"Look at him, dear mother!" said the girl. "We two women are no society

for him: we don't interest him; we are not clever enough for such a

genius as Pen. He wastes his life and energies away among us, tied to

our apron-strings. He interests himself in nothing: he scarcely cares to

go beyond the garden-gate. Even Captain Glanders and Captain Strong pall

upon him," she added with a bitter laugh; "and they are men, you know,

and our superiors. He will never be happy while he is here. Why, is he

not facing the world, and without a profession?"

"We have got enough, with great economy," said the widow, her heart

beginning to beat violently. "Pen has spent nothing for months. I'm sure

he is very good. I am sure he might be very happy with us."

"Don't agitate yourself so, dear mother," the girl answered. "I don't

like to see you so. You should not be sad because Pen is unhappy here.

All men are so. They must work. They must make themselves names and a

place in the world. Look, the two captains have fought and seen battles;

that Mr. Pynsent, who came here, and who will be very rich, is in

a public office; he works very hard, he aspires to a name and a

reputation. He says Pen was one of the best speakers at Oxbridge, and

had as great a character for talent as any of the young gentlemen there.

Pen himself laughs at Mr. Wagg's celebrity (and indeed he is a horrid

person), and says he is a dunce, and that anybody could write his

books."

"I am sure they are odious and vulgar," interposed the widow.

"Yet he has a reputation.--You see the County Chronicle says,

'The celebrated Mr. Wagg has been sojourning at Baymouth--let our

fashionables and eccentrics look out for something from his caustic

pen.' If Pen can write better than this gentleman, and speak better than

Mr. Pynsent, why doesn't he? Mamma, he can't make speeches to us; or

distinguish himself here. He ought to go away, indeed he ought."

"Dear Laura," said Helen, taking the girl's hand. "Is it kind of you

to hurry him so? I have been waiting. I have been saving up money these

many months--to--to pay back your advance to us."

"Hush, mother!" Laura cried, embracing her friend hastily. "It was your

money, not mine. Never speak about that again. How much money have you

saved?"

Helen said there were more than two hundred pounds at the bank, and that

she would be enabled to pay off all Laura's money by the end of the next

year.

"Give it him--let him have the two hundred pounds. Let him go to London

and be a lawyer: be something, be worthy of his mother--and of mine,

dearest mamma," said the good girl; upon which, and with her usual

tenderness and emotion, the fond widow declared that Laura was a

blessing to her and the best of girls--and I hope no one in this

instance will be disposed to contradict her.

The widow and her daughter had more than one conversation on this

subject; and the elder gave way to the superior reason of the honest and

stronger-minded girl; and indeed, whenever there was a sacrifice to be

made on her part, this kind lady was only too eager to make it. But she

took her own way, and did not loose sight of the end she had in view,

in imparting these new plans to Pen. One day she told him of these

projects, and it who that had formed them; how it was Laura who insisted

upon his going to London and studying; how it was Laura who would

not hear of the--the money arrangements when he came back from

Oxbridge--being settled just then: how it was Laura whom he had to

thank, if indeed he thought that he had to go.

At that news Pen's countenance blazed up with pleasure, and he hugged

his mother to his heart with an ardour that I fear disappointed the fond

lady; but she rallied when he said, "By Heaven! she is a noble girl, and

may God Almighty bless her mother! I have been wearing myself away for

months here, longing to work, and not knowing how. I've been fretting

over the thoughts of my shame, and my debts, and my past cursed

extravagance and follies. I've suffered infernally. My heart has been

half broken--never mind about that. If I can get a chance to redeem

the past, and to do my duty to myself and the best mother in the world,

indeed, indeed, I will. I'll be worthy of you yet. Heaven bless you! God

bless Laura! Why isn't she here, that I may go and thank her?" Pen

went on with more incoherent phrases; paced up and down the room,

drank glasses of water, jumped about his mother with a thousand

embraces--began to laugh--began to sing--was happier than she had seen

him since he was a boy--since he had tasted of the fruit of that awful

Tree of Life, which, from the beginning, has tempted all mankind.

Laura was not at home. Laura was on a visit to the stately Lady

Rockminster, daughter to my Lord Bareacres, sister to the late Lady

Pontypool, and by consequence a distant kinswoman of Helen's, as her

ladyship, who was deeply versed in genealogy, was graciously to point

out to the modest country lady. Mr. Pen was greatly delighted at the

relationship being acknowledged; though perhaps not over well pleased

that Lady Rockminster took Miss Bell home with her for a couple of days

to Baymouth, and did not make the slightest invitation to Mr. Arthur

Pendennis. There was to be a ball at Baymouth, and it was to be Miss

Laura's first appearance. The dowager came to fetch her in her carriage,

and she went off with a white dress in her box, happy and blushing, like

the rose to which Pen compared her.

This was the night of the ball--a public entertainment at the Baymouth

Hotel. "By Jove!" said Pen, "I'll ride over--No, I won't ride, but I'll

go too." His mother was charmed that he should do so; and, as he was

debating about the conveyance in which he should start for Baymouth,

Captain Strong called opportunely, said he was going himself, and that

he would put his horse, The Butcher Boy, into the gig, and drive Pen

over.

When the grand company began to fill the house at Clavering Park, the

Chevalier Strong, who, as his patron said, was never in the way or out

of it, seldom intruded himself upon its society, but went elsewhere to

seek his relaxation. "I've seen plenty of grand dinners in my time," he

said, "and dined, by Jove, in a company where there was a king and royal

duke at top and bottom, and every man along the table had six stars

on his coat; but dammy, Glanders, this finery don't suit me; and the

English ladies with their confounded buckram airs, and the squires with

their politics after dinner, send me to sleep--sink me dead if they

don't. I like a place where I can blow my cigar when the cloth is

removed, and when I'm thirsty, have my beer in its native pewter." So on

a gala-day at Clavering Park, the Chevalier would content himself

with superintending the arrangements of the table, and drilling the

major-domo and servants; and having looked over the bill-of-fare with

Monsieur Mirobolant, would not care to take the least part in the

banquet. "Send me up a cutlet and a bottle of claret to my room," this

philosopher would say, and from the windows of that apartment, which

commanded the terrace and avenue, he would survey the company as they

arrived in their carriages, or take a peep at the ladies in the hall

through an oeil-de-boeuf which commanded it from his corridor. And the

guests being seated, Strong would cross the park to Captain Glanders's

cottage at Clavering, or to pay the landlady a visit at the Clavering

Arms, or to drop in upon Madame Fribsby over her novel and tea. Wherever

the Chevalier went he was welcome, and whenever he came away a smell of

hot brandy-and-water lingered behind him.

The Butcher Boy--not the worst horse in Sir Francis's stable--was

appropriated to Captain Strong's express use; and the old Campaigner

saddled him or brought him home at all hours of the day or night,

and drove or rode him up and down the country. Where there was a

public-house with a good tap of beer--where there was a tenant with a

pretty daughter who played on the piano--to Chatteris, to the play, or

the barracks--to Baymouth, if any fun was on foot there; to the rural

fairs or races, the Chevalier and his brown horse made their way

continually; and this worthy gentleman lived at free quarters in a

friendly country. The Butcher Boy soon took Pen and the Chevalier to

Baymouth. The latter was as familiar with the hotel and landlord there

as with every other inn round about; and having been accommodated with a

bedroom to dress, they entered the ballroom. The Chevalier was splendid.

He wore three little gold crosses in a brochette on the portly breast of

his blue coat, and looked like a foreign field-marshal.

The ball was public and all sorts of persons were admitted and

encouraged to come, young Pynsent having views upon the county and Lady

Rockminster being patroness of the ball. There was a quadrille for the

aristocracy at one end, and select benches for the people of fashion.

Towards this end the Chevalier did not care to penetrate far (as he said

he did not care for the nobs); but in the other part of the room he knew

everybody--the wine-merchants', innkeepers', tradesmen's, solicitors',

squire-farmers' daughters, their sires and brothers, and plunged about

shaking hands.

"Who is that man with the blue ribbon and the three-pointed star?" asked

Pen. A gentleman in black with ringlets and a tuft stood gazing fiercely

about him, with one hand in the arm-hole of his waistcoat and the other

holding his claque.

"By Jupiter, it's Mirobolant!" cried Strong, bursting out laughing. "Bon

jour, Chef!--Bon jour, Chevalier!"

"De la croix de Juillet, Chevalier!" said the Chef, laying his hand on

his decoration.

"By Jove, here's some more ribbon!" said Pen, amused.

A man with very black hair and whiskers, dyed evidently with the

purple of Tyre, with twinkling eyes and white eyelashes, and a thousand

wrinkles in his face, which was of a strange red colour, with two

under-vests, and large gloves and hands, and a profusion of diamonds

and jewels in his waistcoat and stock, with coarse feet crumpled

into immense shiny boots, and a piece of parti-coloured ribbon in his

button-hole, here came up and nodded familiarly to the Chevalier.

The Chevalier shook hands. "My friend Mr. Pendennis," Strong said.

"Colonel Altamont, of the bodyguard of his Highness the Nawaub of

Lucknow." That officer bowed to the salute of Pen; who was now looking

out eagerly to see if the person wanted had entered the room.

Not yet. But the band began presently performing 'See the Conquering

Hero comes,' and a host of fashionables--Dowager Countess of

Rockminster, Mr. Pynsent and Miss Bell, Sir Francis Clavering, Bart., of

Clavering Park, Lady Clavering and Miss Amory, Sir Horace Fogey, Bart.,

Lady Fogey, Colonel and Mrs. Higgs Wagg, Esq. (as the county paper

afterwards described them), entered the room.

Pen rushed by Blanche, ran up to Laura, and seized her hand. "God bless

you!" he said, "I want to speak to you--I must speak to you--Let me

dance with you." "Not for three dances, dear Pen," she said, smiling:

and he fell back, biting his nails with vexation, and forgetting to

salute Pynsent.

After Lady Rockminster's party, Lady Clavering's followed in the

procession.

Colonel Altamont eyed it hard, holding a most musky pocket-handkerchief

up to his face, and bursting with laughter behind it.

"Who's the gal in green along with 'em, Cap'n?" he asked of Strong.

"That's Miss Amory, Lady Clavering's daughter," replied the Chevalier.

The Colonel could hardly contain himself for laughing.

CHAPTER XXVII. Contains some Ball-practising

Under some calico draperies in the shady embrasure of a window, Arthur

Pendennis chose to assume a very gloomy and frowning countenance, and

to watch Miss Bell dance her first quadrille with Mr. Pynsent for a

partner. That gentleman was as solemn and severe as Englishmen are upon

such occasions, and walked through the dance as he would have walked

up to his pew in church, without a smile upon his face, or allowing any

outward circumstance to interfere with his attention to the grave duty

in which he was engaged. But Miss Laura's face was beaming with pleasure

and good-nature. The lights and the crowd and music excited her. As she

spread out her white robes, and performed her part of the dance, smiling

and happy, her brown ringlets flowing back over her fair shoulders from

her honest rosy face, more than one gentleman in the room admired and

looked after her; and Lady Fogey, who had a house in London and gave

herself no small airs of fashion when in the country, asked of Lady

Rockminster who the young person was, mentioned a reigning beauty in

London whom, in her ladyship's opinion, Laura was rather like, and

pronounced that she would "do."

Lady Rockminster would have been very much surprised if any protegee of

hers would not "do," and wondered at Lady Fogey's impudence in judging

upon the point at all. She surveyed Laura with majestic glances through

her eyeglass. She was pleased with the girl's artless looks, and gay

innocent manner. Her manner is very good, her ladyship thought. Her

arms are rather red, but that is a defect of her youth. Her tone is far

better than that of the little pert Miss Amory, who is dancing opposite

to her.

Miss Blanche was, indeed, the vis-a-vis of Miss Laura, and smiled most

killingly upon her dearest friend, and nodded to her and talked to her,

when they met during the quadrille evolutions, and patronised her a

great deal. Her shoulders were the whitest in the whole room: and they

were never easy in her frock for one single instant: nor were her eyes,

which rolled about incessantly: nor was her little figure:--it seemed to

say to all the people, "Come and look at me--not at that pink, healthy,

bouncing country lass, Miss Bell, who scarcely knew how to dance till

I taught her. This is the true Parisian manner--this is the prettiest

little foot in the room, and the prettiest little chaussure too. Look at

it, Mr. Pynsent. Look at it, Mr. Pendennis, you who are scowling behind

the curtain--I know you are longing to dance with me."

Laura went on dancing, and keeping an attentive eye upon Mr. Pen in

the embrasure of the window. He did not quit that retirement during

the first quadrille, nor until the second, when the good-natured Lady

Clavering beckoned to him to come up to her to the dais or place of

honour where the dowagers were,--and whither Pen went blushing and

exceedingly awkward, as most conceited young fellows are. He performed a

haughty salutation to Lady Rockminster, who hardly acknowledged his bow,

and then went and paid his respects to the widow of the late Amory,

who was splendid in diamonds, velvet, lace, feathers, and all sorts of

millinery and goldsmith's ware.

Young Mr. Fogey, then in the fifth form at Eton, and ardently expecting

his beard and his commission in a dragoon regiment, was the second

partner who was honoured with Miss Bell's hand. He was rapt in

admiration of that young lady. He thought he had never seen so charming

a creature. "I like you much better than the French girl" (for this

young gentleman had been dancing with Miss Amory before), he candidly

said to her. Laura laughed, and looked more good-humoured than ever;

and in the midst of her laughter caught a sight of Pen, and continued to

laugh as he, on his side, continued to look absurdly pompous and sulky.

The next dance was a waltz, and young Fogey thought, with a sigh, that

he did not know how to waltz, and vowed he would have a master the next

holidays.

Mr. Pynsent again claimed Miss Bell's hand for this dance; and Pen

beheld her, in a fury, twirling round the room, her waist encircled by

the arm of that gentleman. He never used to be angry before when, on

summer evenings, the chairs and tables being removed, and the governess

called downstairs to play the piano, he and the Chevalier Strong (who

was a splendid performer, and could dance a British hornpipe, a German

waltz, or a Spanish fandango, if need were), and the two young ladies,

Blanche and Laura, improvised little balls at Clavering Park. Laura

enjoyed this dancing so much, and was so animated, that she even

animated Mr. Pynsent. Blanche, who could dance beautifully, had an

unlucky partner, Captain Broadfoot, of the Dragoons, then stationed at

Chatteris. For Captain Broadfoot, though devoting himself with great

energy to the object in view, could not get round in time: and, not

having the least ear for music, was unaware that his movements were too

slow.

So, in the waltz as in the quadrille, Miss Blanche saw that her dear

friend Laura had the honours of the dance, and was by no means pleased

with the latter's success. After a couple of turns with the heavy

dragoon, she pleaded fatigue, and requested to be led back to her place,

near her mamma, to whom Pen was talking; and she asked him why he had

not asked her to waltz, and had left her for the mercies of that great

odious man in spurs and a red coat?

"I thought spurs and scarlet were the most fascinating objects in the

world to young ladies," Pen answered. "I never should have dared to put

my black coat in competition with that splendid red jacket."

"You are very unkind and cruel and sulky and naughty," said Miss Amory,

with another shrug of the shoulders. "You had better go away. Your

cousin is looking at us over Mr. Pynsent's shoulder."

"Will you waltz with me?" said Pen.

"Not this waltz. I can't, having just sent away that good Captain

Broadfoot. Look at Mr. Pynsent, did you ever see such a creature? But

I will dance the next waltz with you, and the quadrille too. I am

promised, but I will tell Mr. Poole that I had forgotten my engagement

to you."

"Women forget very readily," Pendennis said.

"But they always come back, and are very repentant and sorry for what

they've done," Blanche said. "See, here comes the Foker, and dear Laura

leaning on him. How pretty she looks!"

Laura came up, and put out her hand to Pen, to whom Pynsent made a

sort of bow, appearing to be not much more graceful than that domestic

instrument to which Miss Amory compared him.

But Laura's face was full of kindness. "I am so glad to have come, dear

Pen," she said. "I can speak to you now. How is mamma? The three dances

are over, and I am engaged to you for the next, Pen."

"I have just engaged myself to Miss Amory," said Pen; and Miss Amory

nodded her head, and made her usual little curtsey. "I don't intend to

give him up, dearest Laura," she said.

"Well, then, he'll waltz with me, dear Blanche," said the other. "Won't

you, Pen?"

"I promised to waltz with Miss Amory."

"Provoking!" said Laura, and making a curtsey in her turn she went and

placed herself under the ample wing of Lady Rockminster.

Pen was delighted with his mischief. The two prettiest girls in the room

were quarrelling about him. He flattered himself he had punished Miss

Laura. He leaned in a dandified air, with his elbow over the wall, and

talked to Blanche: he quizzed unmercifully all the men in the room--the

heavy dragoons in their tight jackets--the country dandies in their

queer attire--the strange toilettes of the ladies. One seemed to have a

bird's nest in her head; another had six pounds of grapes in her hair,

besides her false pearls. "It's a coiffure of almonds and raisins," said

Pen "and might be served up for dessert." In a word, he was exceedingly

satirical and amusing.

During the quadrille he carried on this kind of conversation with

unflinching bitterness and vivacity, and kept Blanche continually

laughing, both at his wickedness and jokes, which were good, and also

because Laura was again their vis-a-vis, and could see and hear how

merry and confidential they were.

"Arthur is charming to-night," she whispered to Laura, across Cornet

Perch's shell-jacket, as Pen was performing cavalier seul before

them, drawling through that figure with a thumb in the pocket of each

waistcoat.

"Who?" said Laura.

"Arthur," answered Blanche, in French. "Oh, it's such a pretty name!"

And now the young ladies went over to Pen's side, and Cornet Perch

performed a pas seul in his turn. He had no waistcoat pocket to put his

hands into, and they looked large and swollen as they hung before him

depending from the tight arms in the jacket.

During the interval between the quadrille and the succeeding waltz, Pen

did not take any notice of Laura, except to ask her whether her partner,

Cornet Perch, was an amusing youth, and whether she liked him so well

as her other partner, Mr. Pynsent. Having planted which two daggers in

Laura's gentle bosom, Mr. Pendennis proceeded to rattle on with Blanche

Amory, and to make jokes good or bad, but which were always loud. Laura

was at a loss to account for her cousin's sulky behaviour, and ignorant

in what she had offended him; however, she was not angry in her turn at

Pen's splenetic mood, for she was the most good-natured and forgiving

of women, and besides, an exhibition of jealousy on a man's part is not

always disagreeable to a lady.

As Pen would not dance with her, she was glad to take up with the active

Chevalier Strong, who was a still better performer than Pen; and being

very fond of dancing, as every brisk and innocent young girl should be,

when the waltz music began she set off, and chose to enjoy herself with

all her heart. Captain Broadfoot on this occasion occupied the floor

in conjunction with a lady of proportions scarcely inferior to his own;

Miss Roundle, a large young woman in a strawberry-ice coloured crape

dress, the daughter of the lady with the grapes in her head, whose

bunches Pen had admired.

And now taking his time, and with his fair partner Blanche hanging

lovingly on the arm which encircled her, Mr. Arthur Pendennis set out

upon his waltzing career, and felt, as he whirled round to the music,

that he and Blanche were performing very brilliantly indeed. Very likely

he looked to see if Miss Bell thought so too; but she did not or would

not see him, and was always engaged with her partner Captain Strong. But

Pen's triumph was not destined to last long; and it was doomed that poor

Blanche was to have yet another discomfiture on that unfortunate night.

While she and Pen were whirling round as light and brisk as a couple of

opera-dancers, honest Captain Broadfoot and the lady round whose large

waist he was clinging, were twisting round very leisurely according to

their natures, and indeed were in everybody's way. But they were more

in Pendennis's way than in anybody's else, for he and Blanche, whilst

executing their rapid gyrations, came bolt up against the heavy dragoon

and his lady, and with such force that the centre of gravity was lost by

all four of the circumvolving bodies; Captain Broadfoot and Miss Roundle

were fairly upset, as was Pen himself, who was less lucky than his

partner Miss Amory, who was only thrown upon a bench against a wall.

But Pendennis came fairly down upon the floor, sprawling in the general

ruin with Broadfoot and Miss Roundle. The Captain, though heavy, was

good-natured, and was the first to burst out into a loud laugh at his

own misfortune, which nobody therefore heeded. But Miss Amory was savage

at her mishap; Miss Roundle placed on her seant, and looking pitifully

round, presented an object which very few people could see without

laughing; and Pen was furious when he heard the people giggling about

him. He was one of those sarcastic young fellows that did not bear a

laugh at his own expense, and of all things in the world feared ridicule

most.

As he got up Laura and Strong were laughing at him; everybody was

laughing; Pynsent and his partner were laughing; and Pen boiled with

wrath against the pair, and could have stabbed them both on the spot. He

turned away in a fury from them, and began blundering out apologies to

Miss Amory. It was the other couple's fault--the woman in pink had done

it--Pen hoped Miss Amory was not hurt--would she not have the courage to

take another turn?

Miss Amory in a pet said she was very much hurt indeed, and she would

not take another turn; and she accepted with great thanks a glass of

water which a cavalier, who wore a blue ribbon and a three-pointed star,

rushed to fetch for her when he had seen the deplorable accident. She

drank the water, smiled upon the bringer gracefully, and turning

her white shoulder at Mr. Pen in the most marked and haughty manner,

besought the gentleman with the star to conduct her to her mamma; and

she held out her hand in order to take his arm.

The man with the star trembled with delight at this mark of her favour;

he bowed over her hand, pressed it to his coat fervidly, and looked

round him with triumph.

It was no other than the happy Mirobolant whom Blanche had selected as

an escort. But the truth is, that the young lady had never fairly looked

in the artist's face since he had been employed in her mother's family,

and had no idea but it was a foreign nobleman on whose arm she was

leaning. As she went off, Pen forgot his humiliation in his surprise,

and cried out, "By Jove, it's the cook!"

The instant he had uttered the words, he was sorry for having spoken

them--for it was Blanche who had herself invited Mirobolant to escort

her, nor could the artist do otherwise than comply with a lady's

command. Blanche in her flutter did not hear what Arthur said; but

Mirobolant heard him, and cast a furious glance at him over his

shoulder, which rather amused Mr. Pen. He was in a mischievous and sulky

humour; wanting perhaps to pick a quarrel with somebody; but the idea

of having insulted a cook, or that such an individual should have any

feeling of honour at all, did not much enter into the mind of this lofty

young aristocrat, the apothecary's son.

It had never entered that poor artist's head, that he as a man was not

equal to any other mortal, or that there was anything in his position so

degrading as to prevent him from giving his arm to a lady who asked

for it. He had seen in the fetes in his own country fine ladies, not

certainly demoiselles (but the demoiselle Anglaise he knew was a great

deal more free than the spinster in France), join in the dance with

Blaise or Pierre; and he would have taken Blanche up to Lady

Clavering, and possibly have asked her to dance too, but he heard

Pen's exclamation, which struck him as if it had shot him, and cruelly

humiliated and angered him. She did not know what caused him to start,

and to grind a Gascon oath between his teeth.

But Strong, who was acquainted with the poor fellow's state of mind,

having had the interesting information from our friend Madame Fribsby,

was luckily in the way when wanted, and saying something rapidly in

Spanish, which the other understood, the Chevalier begged Miss Amory to

come and take an ice before she went back to Lady Clavering. Upon which

the unhappy Mirobolant relinquished the arm which he had held for a

minute, and with a most profound and piteous bow, fell back. "Don't you

know who it is?" Strong asked of Miss Amory, as he led her away. "It is

the chef Mirobolant."

"How should I know?" asked Blanche. "He has a croix; he is very

distingue; he has beautiful eyes."

"The poor fellow is mad for your beaux yeux, I believe," Strong said.

"He is a very good cook, but he is not quite right in the head."

"What did you say to him in the unknown tongue?" asked Miss Blanche.

"He is a Gascon, and comes from the borders of Spain," Strong answered.

"I told him he would lose his place if he walked with you."

"Poor Monsieur Mirobolant!" said Blanche.

"Did you see the look he gave Pendennis?"--Strong asked, enjoying the

idea of the mischief--"I think he would like to run little Pen through

with one of his spits."

"He is an odious, conceited, clumsy creature, that Mr. Pen," said

Blanche.

"Broadfoot looked as if he would like to kill him too, so did Pynsent,"

Strong said. "What ice will you have--water ice or cream ice?"

"Water ice. Who is that odd man staring at me--he is decore too."

"That is my friend Colonel Altamont, a very queer character, in the

service of the Nawaub of Lucknow. Hallo! what's that noise? I'll be back

in an instant," said the Chevalier, and sprang out of the room to the

ballroom, where a scuffle and a noise of high voices was heard.

The refreshment-room, in which Miss Amory now found herself, was a room

set apart for the purposes of supper, which Mr. Rincer the landlord had

provided for those who chose to partake, at the rate of five shillings

per head. Also, refreshments of a superior class were here ready for the

ladies and gentlemen of the county families who came to the ball; but

the commoner sort of persons were kept out of the room by a waiter

who stood at the portal, and who said that was a select room for Lady

Clavering and Lady Rockminster's parties, and not to be opened to

the public till supper-time, which was not to be until past midnight.

Pynsent, who danced with his constituents' daughters, took them and

their mammas in for their refreshment there. Strong, who was manager and

master of the revels wherever he went, had of course the entree--and the

only person who was now occupying the room was the gentleman with the

black wig and the orders in his button--hole; the officer in the service

of his Highness the Nawaub of Lucknow.

This gentleman had established himself very early in the evening in this

apartment, where, saying he was confoundedly thirsty, he called for a

bottle of champagne. At this order the waiter instantly supposed that he

had to do with a grandee, and the Colonel sate down and began to eat his

supper and absorb his drink, and enter affably into conversation with

anybody who entered the room.

Sir Francis Clavering and Mr. Wagg found him there, when they left the

ballroom, which they did pretty early--Sir Francis to go and smoke

a cigar, and look at the people gathered outside the ballroom on the

shore, which he declared was much better fun than to remain within; Mr.

Wagg to hang on to a Baronet's arm, as he was always pleased to do on

the arm of the greatest man in the company. Colonel Altamont had stared

at these gentlemen in so odd a manner, as they passed through the

'Select' room, that Clavering made inquiries of the landlord who he was,

and hinted a strong opinion that the officer of the Nawaub's service was

drunk.

Mr. Pynsent, too, had had the honour of a conversation with the servant

of the Indian potentate. It was Pynsent's cue to speak to everybody

(which he did, to do him justice, in the most ungracious manner); and he

took the gentleman in the black wig for some constituent, some merchant

captain, or other outlandish man of the place. Mr. Pynsent, then, coming

into the refreshment-room with a lady, the wife of a constituent, on his

arm, the Colonel asked him if he would try a glass of Sham? Pynsent

took it with great gravity, bowed, tasted the wine, and pronounced

it excellent, and with the utmost politeness retreated before Colonel

Altamont. This gravity and decorum routed and surprised the Colonel more

than any other kind of behaviour probably would: he stared after Pynsent

stupidly, and pronounced to the landlord over the counter that he was

a rum one. Mr. Rincer blushed, and hardly knew what to say. Mr. Pynsent

was a county Earl's grandson, going to set up as a Parliament man.

Colonel Altamont on the other hand, wore orders and diamonds, jingled

sovereigns constantly in his pocket, and paid his way like a man; so not

knowing what to say, Mr. Rincer said, "Yes, Colonel--yes, ma'am, did

you say tea? Cup a tea for Mr. Jones, Mrs. R.," and so got off that

discussion regarding Mr. Pynsent's qualities, into which the Nizam's

officer appeared inclined to enter.

In fact, if the truth must be told, Mr. Altamont, having remained at

the buffet almost all night, and employed himself very actively whilst

there, had considerably flushed his brain by drinking, and he was still

going on drinking, when Mr. Strong and Miss Amory entered the room.

When the Chevalier ran out of the apartment, attracted by the noise in

the dancing-room, the Colonel rose from his chair with his little red

eyes glowing like coals, and, with rather an unsteady gait advanced

towards Blanche, who was sipping her ice. She was absorbed in absorbing

it, for it was very fresh and good; or she was not curious to know what

was going on in the adjoining room, although the waiters were, who ran

after Chevalier Strong. So that when she looked up from her glass, she

beheld this strange man staring at her out of his little red eyes. "Who

was he? It was quite exciting."

"And so you're Betsy Amory," said he, after gazing at her. "Betsy Amory,

by Jove!"

"Who--who speaks to me?" said Betsy, alias Blanche.

But the noise in the ballroom is really becoming so loud, that we must

rush back thither, and see what is the cause of the disturbance.

CHAPTER XXVIII. Which is both Quarrelsome and Sentimental

Civil war was raging, high words passing, people pushing and squeezing

together in an unseemly manner, round a window in the corner of

the ballroom, close by the door through which the Chevalier Strong

shouldered his way. Through the opened window, the crowd in the street

below was sending up sarcastic remarks, such as "Pitch into him!"

"Where's the police?" and the like; and a ring of individuals, amongst

whom Madame Fribsby was conspicuous, was gathered round Monsieur

Alcide Mirobolant on the one side; whilst several gentlemen and ladies

surrounded our friend Arthur Pendennis on the other. Strong penetrated

into this assembly, elbowing by Madame Fribsby, who was charmed at the

Chevalier's appearance, and cried, "Save him, save him!" in frantic and

pathetic accents.

The cause of the disturbance, it appeared, was the angry little chef of

Sir Francis Clavering's culinary establishment. Shortly after Strong had

quitted the room, and whilst Mr. Pen, greatly irate at his downfall in

the waltz, which had made him look ridiculous in the eyes of the nation,

and by Miss Amory's behaviour to him, which had still further insulted

his dignity, was endeavouring to get some coolness of body and temper,

by looking out of window towards the sea, which was sparkling in the

distance, and murmuring in a wonderful calm--whilst he was really trying

to compose himself, and owning to himself, perhaps, that he had acted in

a very absurd and peevish manner during the night--he felt a hand upon

his shoulder; and, on looking round, beheld, to his utter surprise and

horror, that the hand in question belonged to Monsieur Mirobolant, whose

eyes were glaring out of his pale face and ringlets at Mr. Pen. To be

tapped on the shoulder by a French cook was a piece of familiarity

which made the blood of the Pendennises to boil up in the veins of their

descendant, and he was astounded, almost more than enraged, at such an

indignity.

"You speak French?" Mirobolant said in his own language to Pen.

"What is that to you, pray?" said Pen, in English.

"At any rate, you understand it?" continued the other, with a bow.

"Yes, sir," said Pen, with a stamp of his foot; "I understand it pretty

well."

"Vous me comprendrez alors, Monsieur Pendennis," replied the other,

rolling out his r with Gascon force, "quand je vous dis que vous etes un

lache. Monsieur Pendennis--un lache, entendez-vous?"

"What?" said Pen, starting round on him.

"You understand the meaning of the word and its consequences among men

of honour?" the artist said, putting his hand on his hip, and staring at

Pen.

"The consequences are, that I will fling you out of window, you impudent

scoundrel," bawled out Mr. Pen; and darting upon the Frenchman, he would

very likely have put his threat into execution, for the window was at

hand, and the artist by no means a match for the young gentleman--had

not Captain Broadfoot and another heavy officer flung themselves between

the combatants,--had not the ladies begun to scream,--had not the

fiddles stopped, had not the crowd of people come running in that

direction,--had not Laura, with a face of great alarm, looked over their

heads and asked for Heaven's sake what was wrong,--had not the opportune

Strong made his appearance from the refreshment-room, and found Alcides

grinding his teeth and jabbering oaths in his Galleon French, and

Pen looking uncommonly wicked, although trying to appear as calm as

possible, when the ladies and the crowd came up.

"What has happened?" Strong asked of the chef, in Spanish.

"I am Chevalier de Juillet," said the other, slapping his breast, "and

he has insulted me."

"What has he said to you?" asked Strong.

"Il m'a appele--Cuisinier," hissed out the little Frenchman.

Strong could hardly help laughing. "Come away with me, poor Chevalier,"

he said. "We must not quarrel before ladies. Come away; I will carry

your message to Mr. Pendennis.--The poor fellow is not right in his

head," he whispered to one or two people about him;--and others, and

anxious Laura's face visible amongst these, gathered round Pen and asked

the cause of the disturbance.

Pen did not know. "The man was going to give his arm to a young lady,

on which I said that he was a cook, and the man called me a coward and

challenged me to fight. I own I was so surprised and indignant, that

if you gentlemen had not stopped me, I should have thrown him out of

window," Pen said.

"D---- him, serve him right, too,--the impudent foreign scoundrel," the

gentlemen said.

"I--I'm very sorry if I hurt his feelings, though," Pen added and Laura

was glad to hear him say that; although some of the young bucks said,

"No, hang the fellow,--hang those impudent foreigners--little thrashing

would do them good."

"You will go and shake hands with him before you go to sleep--won't you,

Pen?" said Laura, coming up to him. "Foreigners may be more susceptible

than we are, and have different manners. If you hurt a poor man's

feelings, I am sure you would be the first to ask his pardon. Wouldn't

you, dear Pen?"

She looked all forgiveness and gentleness, like an angel, as she spoke;

and Pen took both her hands, and looked into her kind face, and said

indeed he would.

"How fond that girl is of me!" he thought, as she stood gazing at him.

"Shall I speak to her now? No--not now. I must have this absurd business

with the Frenchman over."

Laura asked--Wouldn't he stop and dance with her? She was as anxious to

keep him in the room, as he to quit it. "Won't you stop and waltz with

me, Pen? I'm not afraid to waltz with you."

This was an affectionate, but an unlucky speech. Pen saw himself

prostrate on the ground, having tumbled over Miss Roundle and the

dragoon, and flung Blanche up against the wall--saw himself on the

ground, and all the people laughing at him, Laura and Pynsent amongst

them.

"I shall never dance again," he replied, with a dark and determined

face. "Never. I'm surprised you should ask me."

"Is it because you can't get Blanche for a partner?" asked Laura, with a

wicked, unlucky captiousness.

"Because I don't wish to make a fool of myself, for other people to

laugh at me," Pen answered--"for you to laugh at me, Laura. I saw you

and Pynsent. By Jove! no man shall laugh at me."

"Pen, Pen, don't be so wicked!" cried out the poor girl, hurt at the

morbid perverseness and savage vanity of Pen. He was glaring round in

the direction of Mr. Pynsent as if he would have liked to engage that

gentleman as he had done the cook. "Who thinks the worse of you

for stumbling in a waltz?" If Laura does, we don't. "Why are you so

sensitive, and ready to think evil?"

Here again, by ill luck, Mr. Pynsent came up to Laura, and said "I have

it in command from Lady Rockminster to ask whether I may take you in to

supper?"

"I--I was going in with my cousin," Laura said.

"O--pray, no!" said Pen. "You are in such good hands, that I can't do

better than leave you: and I'm going home."

"Good-night, Mr. Pendennis," Pynsent said, drily--to which speech

(which, in fact, meant, "Go to the deuce for an insolent, jealous,

impertinent jackanapes, whose ears I should like to box") Mr. Pendennis

did not vouchsafe any reply, except a bow: and in spite of Laura's

imploring looks, he left the room.

"How beautifully calm and bright the night outside is!" said Mr.

Pynsent; "and what a murmur the sea is making! It would be pleasanter to

be walking on the beach, than in this hot room."

"Very," said Laura.

"What a strange congregation of people," continued Pynsent. "I have

had to go up and perform the agreeable to most of them--the attorney's

daughters--the apothecary's wife--I scarcely know whom. There was a man

in the refreshment-room, who insisted upon treating me to champagne--a

seafaring-looking man--extraordinarily dressed, and seeming half tipsy.

As a public man one is bound to conciliate all these people, but it is

a hard task--especially when one would so very much like to be

elsewhere"--and he blushed rather as he spoke.

"I beg your pardon," said Laura--"I--I was not listening. Indeed--I was

frightened about that quarrel between my cousin and that--that--French

person."

"Your cousin has been rather unlucky to-night," Pynsent said. "There

are three or four persons whom he has not succeeded in pleasing--captain

Broadwood; what is his name--the officer--and the young lady in red with

whom he danced--and Miss Blanche--and the poor chef--and I don't think

he seemed to be particularly pleased with me."

"Didn't he leave me in charge to you?" Laura said, looking up into Mr.

Pynsent's face, and dropping her eyes instantly, like a guilty little

story-telling coquette.

"Indeed, I can forgive him a good deal for that," Pynsent eagerly

cried out, and she took his arm, and he led off his little prize in the

direction of the supper-room.

She had no great desire for that repast, though it was served in

Rincer's well-known style, as the county paper said, giving an account

of the entertainment afterwards; indeed, she was very distraite; and

exceedingly pained and unhappy about Pen. Captious and quarrelsome;

jealous and selfish; fickle and violent and unjust when his anger led

him astray; how could her mother (as indeed Helen had by a thousand

words and hints) ask her to give her heart to such a man? and suppose

she were to do so, would it make him happy?

But she got some relief at length, when, at the end of half an hour--a

long half-hour it had seemed to her--a waiter brought her a little note

in pencil from Pen, who said, "I met Cooky below ready to fight me;

and I asked his pardon. I'm glad I did it. I wanted to speak to you

to-night, but will keep what I had to say till you come home. God bless

you. Dance away all night with Pynsent, and be very happy.--PEN." Laura

was very thankful for this letter, and to think that there was goodness

and forgiveness still in her mother's boy.

Pen went downstairs, his heart reproaching him for his absurd behaviour

to Laura, whose gentle and imploring looks followed and rebuked him; and

he was scarcely out of the ballroom door but he longed to turn back

and ask her pardon. But he remembered that he had left her with

that confounded Pynsent. He could not apologise before him. He would

compromise and forget his wrath, and make his peace with the Frenchman.

The Chevalier was pacing down below in the hall of the inn when Pen

descended from the ballroom; and he came up to Pen, with all sorts of

fun and mischief lighting up his jolly face.

"I have got him in the coffee-room," he said, "with a brace of pistols

and a candle. Or would you like swords on the beach? Mirobolant is a

dead hand with the foils, and killed four gardes-du-corps with his own

point in the barricades of July."

"Confound it," said Pen, in a fury, "I can't fight a cook!"

"He is a Chevalier of July," replied the other. "They present arms to

him in his own country."

"And do you ask me, Captain Strong, to go out with a servant?" Pen asked

fiercely; "I'll call a policeman him but--but----"

"You'll invite me to hair triggers?" cried Strong, with a laugh. "Thank

you for nothing; I was but joking. I came to settle quarrels, not to

fight them. I have been soothing down Mirobolant; I have told him that

you did not apply the word 'Cook' to him in an offensive sense: that it

was contrary to all the customs of the country that a hired officer of

a household, as I called it, should give his arm to the daughter of

the house." And then he told Pen the grand secret which he had had from

Madame Fribsby of the violent passion under which the poor artist was

labouring.

When Arthur heard this tale, he broke out into a hearty laugh, in which

Strong joined, and his rage against the poor cook vanished at once. He

had been absurdly jealous himself all the evening, and had longed for a

pretext to insult Pynsent. He remembered how jealous he had been of Oaks

in his first affair; he was ready to pardon anything to a man under a

passion like that: and he went into the coffee-room where Mirobolant was

waiting, with an outstretched hand, and made him a speech in French,

in which he declared that he was "sincerement fache d'avoir use une

expression qui avoit pu blesser Monsieur Mirobolant, et qu'il donnoit sa

parole comme un gentilhomme qu'il ne l'avoit jamais, jamais--intende,"

said Pen, who made a shot at a French word for "intended," and was

secretly much pleased with his own fluency and correctness in speaking

that language.

"Bravo, bravo!" cried Strong, as much amused with Pen's speech as

pleased by his kind manner. And the Chevalier Mirobolant of course

withdraws, and sincerely regrets the expression of which he made use.

"Monsieur Pendennis has disproved my words himself," said Alcide with

great politeness; "he has shown that he is a galant homme."

And so they shook hands and parted, Arthur in the first place

despatching his note to Laura before he and Strong committed themselves

to the Butcher Boy.

As they drove along, Strong complimented Pen upon his behaviour, as well

as upon his skill in French. "You're a good fellow, Pendennis, and you

speak French like Chateaubriand, by Jove."

"I've been accustomed to it from my youth upwards," said Pen; and Strong

had the grace not to laugh for five minutes, when he exploded into fits

of hilarity which Pendennis has never perhaps understood up to this day.

It was daybreak when they got to the Brawl, where they separated.

By that time the ball at Baymouth was over too. Madame Fribsby and

Mirobolant were on their way home in the Clavering fly; Laura was in bed

with an easy heart and asleep at Lady Rockminster's; and the Claverings

at rest at the inn at Baymouth, where they had quarters for the night.

A short time after the disturbance between Pen and the chef, Blanche had

come out of the refreshment-room, looking as pale as a lemon-ice. She

told her maid, having no other confidante at hand, that she had met with

the most romantic adventure--the most singular man--one who had known

the author of her being--her persecuted--her unhappy--her heroic--her

murdered father; and she began a sonnet to his manes before she went to

sleep.

So Pen returned to Fairoaks, in company with his friend the Chevalier,

without having uttered a word of the message which he had been so

anxious to deliver to Laura at Baymouth. He could wait, however, until

her return home, which was to take place on the succeeding day. He was

not seriously jealous of the progress made by Mr. Pynsent in her

favour; and he felt pretty certain that in this, as in any other family

arrangement, he had but to ask and have, and Laura, like his mother,

could refuse him nothing.

When Helen's anxious looks inquired of him what had happened at

Baymouth, and whether her darling project was fulfilled, Pen, in a gay

tone, told of the calamity which had befallen; laughingly said, that no

man could think about declarations under such a mishap, and made light

of the matter. "There will be plenty of time for sentiment, dear mother,

when Laura comes back," he said, and he looked in the glass with a

killing air, and his mother put his hair off his forehead and kissed

him, and of course thought, for her part, that no woman could resist

him: and was exceedingly happy that day.

When he was not with her, Mr. Pen occupied himself in packing books and

portmanteaus, burning and arranging papers, cleaning his gun and putting

it into its case: in fact, in making dispositions for departure. For

though he was ready to marry, this gentleman was eager to go to London

too, rightly considering that at three-and-twenty it was quite time for

him to begin upon the serious business of life, and to set about making

a fortune as quickly as possible.

The means to this end he had already shaped out for himself. "I shall

take chambers," he said, "and enter myself at an Inn of Court. With a

couple of hundred pounds I shall be able to carry through the first year

very well; after that I have little doubt my pen will support me, as

it is doing with several Oxbridge men now in town. I have a tragedy, a

comedy, and a novel, all nearly finished, and for which I can't fail to

get a price. And so I shall be able to live pretty well, without drawing

upon my poor mother, until I have made my way at the bar. Then, some day

I will come back and make her dear soul happy by marrying Laura. She is

as good and as sweet-tempered a girl as ever lived, besides being really

very good-looking, and the engagement will serve to steady me,--won't

it, Ponto?" Thus, smoking his pipe, and talking to his dog as he

sauntered through the gardens and orchards of the little domain of

Fairoaks, this young day-dreamer built castles in the air for himself:

"Yes, she'll steady me, won't she? And you'll miss me when I've gone,

won't you, old boy?" he asked of Ponto, who quivered his tail and thrust

his brown nose into his master's fist. Ponto licked his hand and shoe,

as they all did in that house, and Mr. Pen received their homage as

other folks do the flattery which they get.

Laura came home rather late in the evening of the second day; and Mr.

Pynsent, as ill luck would have it, drove her from Clavering. The poor

girl could not refuse his offer, but his appearance brought a dark cloud

upon the brow of Arthur Pendennis. Laura saw this, and was pained by

it: the eager widow, however, was aware of nothing, and being anxious,

doubtless, that the delicate question should be asked at once, was for

going to bed very soon after Laura's arrival, and rose for that purpose

to leave the sofa where she now generally lay, and where Laura would

come and sit and work or read by her. But when Helen rose, Laura said,

with a blush and rather an alarmed voice, that she was also very tired

and wanted to go to bed: so that the widow was disappointed in her

scheme for that night at least, and Mr. Pen was left another day in

suspense regarding his fate.

His dignity was offended at being thus obliged to remain in the

ante-chamber when he wanted an audience. Such a sultan as he, could not

afford to be kept waiting. However, he went to bed and slept upon his

disappointment pretty comfortably, and did not wake until the early

morning, when he looked up and saw his mother standing in his room.

"Dear Pen, rouse up," said this lady. "Do not be lazy. It is the most

beautiful morning in the world. I have not been able to sleep since

daybreak; and Laura has been out for an hour. She is in the garden.

Everybody ought to be in the garden and out on such a morning as this."

Pen laughed. He saw what thoughts were uppermost in the simple woman's

heart. His good-natured laughter cheered the widow. "Oh you profound

dissembler," he said, kissing his mother. "Oh you artful creature! Can

nobody escape from your wicked tricks? and will you make your only son

your victim?" Helen too laughed, she blushed, she fluttered, and was

agitated. She was as happy as she could be--a good tender, matchmaking

woman, the dearest project of whose heart was about to be accomplished.

So, after exchanging some knowing looks and hasty words, Helen left

Arthur; and this young hero, rising from his bed, proceeded to decorate

his beautiful person, and shave his ambrosial chin; and in half an hour

he issued out from his apartment into the garden in quest of Laura. His

reflections as he made his toilette were rather dismal. "I am going to

tie myself for life," he thought, "to please my mother. Laura is the

best of women, and--and she has given me her money. I wish to Heaven I

had not received it; I wish I had not this duty to perform just yet. But

as both the women have set their hearts on the match, why I suppose I

must satisfy them--and now for it. A man may do worse than make happy

two of the best creatures in the world." So Pen, now he was actually

come to the point, felt very grave, and by no means elated, and, indeed,

thought it was a great sacrifice he was going to perform.

It was Miss Laura's custom, upon her garden excursions, to wear a sort

of uniform, which, though homely, was thought by many people to be not

unbecoming. She had a large straw hat, with a streamer of broad ribbon,

which was useless probably, but the hat sufficiently protected the

owner's pretty face from the sun. Over her accustomed gown she wore a

blouse or pinafore, which, being fastened round her little waist by a

smart belt, looked extremely well, and her bands were guaranteed from

the thorns of her favourite rose-bushes by a pair of gauntlets, which

gave this young lady a military and resolute air.

Somehow she had the very same smile with which she had laughed at him on

the night previous, and the recollection of his disaster again offended

Pen. But Laura, though she saw him coming down the walk looking so

gloomy and full of care, accorded to him a smile of the most perfect

and provoking good-humour, and went to meet him, holding one of the

gauntlets to him, so that he might shake it if he liked--and Mr. Pen

condescended to do so. His face, however, did not lose its tragic

expression in consequence of this favour, and he continued to regard her

with a dismal and solemn air.

"Excuse my glove," said Laura, with a laugh, pressing Pen's hand kindly

with it. "We are not angry again, are we, Pen?"

"Why do you laugh at me?" said Pen. "You did the other night, and made a

fool of me to the people at Baymouth."

"My dear Arthur, I meant you no wrong," the girl answered. "You and Miss

Roundle looked so droll as you--as you met with your little accident,

that I could not make a tragedy of it. Dear Pen, it wasn't a serious

fall. And, besides, it was Miss Roundle who was the most unfortunate."

"Confound Miss Roundle," bellowed out Pen.

"I'm sure she looked so," said Laura, archly. "You were up in an

instant; but that poor lady sitting on the ground in her red crape

dress, and looking about her with that piteous face--can I ever forget

her?"--and Laura began to make a face in imitation of Miss Roundle's

under the disaster, but she checked herself repentantly, saying, "Well,

we must not laugh at her, but I am sure we ought to laugh at you, Pen,

if you were angry about such a trifle."

"You should not laugh at me, Laura," said Pen, with some bitterness;

"not you, of all people."

"And why not? Are you such a great man?" asked Laura.

"Ah no, Laura, I'm such a poor one," Pen answered. "Haven't you baited

me enough already?"

"My dear Pen, and how?" cried Laura. "Indeed, indeed, I didn't think to

vex you by such a trifle. I thought such a clever man as you could bear

a harmless little joke from his sister," she said, holding her hand out

again. "Dear Arthur, if I have hurt you, I beg your pardon."

"It is your kindness that humiliates me more even than your laughter,

Laura," Pen said. "You are always my superior."

"What! superior to the great Arthur Pendennis? How can it be possible?"

said Miss Laura, who may have had a little wickedness as well as a great

deal of kindness in her composition. "You can't mean that any woman is

your equal?"

"Those who confer benefits should not sneer," said Pen. "I don't like my

benefactor to laugh at me, Laura; it makes the obligation very hard to

bear. You scorn me because I have taken your money, and I am worthy to

be scorned; but the blow is hard coming from you."

"Money! Obligation! For shame, Pen; this is ungenerous," Laura said,

flushing red. "May not our mother claim everything that belongs to us?

Don't I owe her all my happiness in this world, Arthur? What matters

about a few paltry guineas, if we can set her tender heart at rest, and

ease her mind regarding you? I would dig in the fields, I would go out

and be a servant--I would die for her. You know I would," said Miss

Laura, kindling up; "and you call this paltry money an obligation? Oh,

Pen, it's cruel--it's unworthy of you to take it so! If my brother may

not share with me my superfluity, who may?--Mine?--I tell you it was not

mine; it was all mamma's to do with as she chose, and so is everything

I have," said Laura; "my life is hers." And the enthusiastic girl looked

towards the windows of the widow's room, and blessed in her heart the

kind creature within.

Helen was looking, unseen, out of that window towards which Laura's eyes

and heart were turned as she spoke, and was watching her two children

with the deepest interest and emotion, longing and hoping that the

prayer of her life might be fulfilled; and if Laura had spoken as Helen

hoped, who knows what temptations Arthur Pendennis might have been

spared, or what different trials he would have had to undergo? He might

have remained at Fairoaks all his days, and died a country gentleman.

But would he have escaped then? Temptation is an obsequious servant

that has no objection to the country, and we know that it takes up its

lodging in hermitages as well as in cities; and that in the most remote

and inaccessible desert it keeps company with the fugitive solitary.

"Is your life my mother's?" said Pen, beginning to tremble, and speak in

a very agitated manner. "You know, Laura, what the great object of hers

is?" And he took her hand once more.

"What, Arthur?" she said, dropping it, and looking at him, at the window

again, and then dropping her eyes to the ground, so that they avoided

Pen's gaze. She, too, trembled, for she felt that the crisis for which

she had been secretly preparing was come.

"Our mother has one wish above all others in the world, Laura," Pen

said; "and I think you know it. I own to you that she has spoken to me

of it; and if you will fulfil it, dear sister, I am ready. I am but very

young as yet; but I have had so many pains and disappointments, that I

am old and weary. I think I have hardly got a heart to offer. Before I

have almost begun the race in life, I am a tired man. My career has been

a failure; I have been protected by those whom I by right should have

protected. I own that your nobleness and generosity, dear Laura, shame

me, whilst they render me grateful. When I heard from our mother what

you had done for me; that it was you who armed me and bade me go out

for one struggle more; I longed to go and throw myself at your feet, and

say, 'Laura, will you come and share the contest with me?' Your sympathy

will cheer me while it lasts. I shall have one of the tenderest and most

generous creatures under heaven to aid and bear me company. Will you

take me, dear Laura, and make our mother happy?"

"Do you think mamma would be happy if you were otherwise, Arthur?" Laura

said in a low sad voice.

"And why should I not be," asked Pen eagerly, "with so dear a creature

as you by my side? I have not my first love to give you. I am a broken

man. But indeed I would love you fondly and truly. I have lost many an

illusion and ambition, but I am not without hope still. Talents I know I

have, wretchedly as I have misapplied them: they may serve me yet: they

would, had I a motive for action. Let me go away and think that I am

pledged to return to you. Let me go and work, and hope, that you will

share my success if I gain it. You have given me so much, Laura dear,

will you take from me nothing?"

"What have you got to give, Arthur?" Laura said, with a grave sadness

of tone, which made Pen start, and see that his words had committed him.

Indeed, his declaration had not been such as he would have made it

two days earlier, when, full of hope and gratitude, he had run over to

Laura, his liberatress, to thank her for his recovered freedom. Had

he been permitted to speak then, he had spoken, and she, perhaps, had

listened differently. It would have been a grateful heart asking for

hers; not a weary one offered to her, to take or to leave. Laura was

offended with the terms in which Pen offered himself to her. He had, in

fact, said that he had no love, and yet would take no denial. "I give

myself to you to please my mother," he had said: "take me, as she wishes

that I should make this sacrifice." The girl's spirit would brook a

husband under no such conditions: she was not minded to run forward

because Pen chose to hold out the handkerchief, and her tone, in reply

to Arthur, showed her determination to be independent.

"No, Arthur," she said, "our marriage would not make mamma happy, as she

fancies; for it would not content you very long. I, too, have known

what her wishes were; for she is too open to conceal anything she has at

heart: and once, perhaps, I thought--but that is over now--that I could

have made you--that it might have been as she wished."

"You have seen somebody else," said Pen, angry at her tone, and

recalling the incidents of the past days.

"That allusion might have been spared," Laura replied, flinging up her

head. "A heart which has worn out love at three-and-twenty, as yours

has, you say, should have survived jealousy too. I do not condescend to

say whether I have seen or encouraged any other person. I shall neither

admit the charge, nor deny it: and beg you also to allude to it no

more."

"I ask your pardon, Laura, if I have offended you: but if I am jealous,

does it not prove that I have a heart?"

"Not for me, Arthur. Perhaps you think you love me now but it is only

for an instant, and because you are foiled. Were there no obstacle, you

would feel no ardour to overcome it. No, Arthur, you don't love me. You

would weary of me in three months, as--as you do of most things; and

mamma, seeing you tired of me, would be more unhappy than at my refusal

to be yours. Let us be brother and sister, Arthur, as heretofore--but no

more. You will get over this little disappointment."

"I will try," said Arthur, in a great indignation.

"Have you not tried before?" Laura said, with some anger, for she had

been angry with Arthur for a very long time, and was now determined, I

suppose, to speak her mind. "And the next time, Arthur, when you offer

yourself to a woman, do not say as you have done to me, 'I have no

heart--I do not love you; but I am ready to marry you because my mother

wishes for the match.' We require more than this in return for our

love--that is, I think so. I have had no experience hitherto, and have

not had the--the practice which you supposed me to have, when you spoke

but now of my having seen somebody else. Did you tell your first love

that you had no heart, Arthur? or your second that you did not love her,

but that she might have you if she liked?"

"What--what do you mean?" asked Arthur, blushing, and still in great

wrath.

"I mean Blanche Amory, Arthur Pendennis," Laura said, proudly. "It

is but two months since you were sighing at her feet--making poems

to her--placing them in hollow trees by the river-side. I knew all. I

watched you--that is, she showed them to me. Neither one nor the other

were in earnest perhaps; but it is too soon now, Arthur, to begin a new

attachment. Go through the time of your--your widowhood at least, and do

not think of marrying until you are out of mourning"--(Here the girl's

eyes filled with tears, and she passed her hand across them.) "I am

angry and hurt, and I have no right to be so, and I ask your pardon in

my turn now, dear Arthur. You had a right to love Blanche. She was a

thousand times prettier and more accomplished than--than any girl near

us here; and you not could know that she had no heart; and so you were

right to leave her too. I ought not to rebuke you about Blanche Amory,

and because she deceived you. Pardon me, Pen,"--and she held the kind

hand out to Pen once more.

"We were both jealous," said Pen. "Dear Laura, let us both forgive"--and

he seized her band and would have drawn her towards him. He thought that

she was relenting, and already assumed the airs of a victor.

But she shrank back, and her tears passed away; and she fixed on him

a look so melancholy and severe, that the young man in his turn shrank

before it. "Do not mistake me, Arthur," she said, "it cannot be. You do

not know what you ask, and do not be too angry with me for saying that

I think you do not deserve it. What do you offer in exchange to a woman

for her love, honour, and obedience? If ever I say these words, dear

Pen, I hope to say them in earnest, and by the blessing of God to keep

my vow. But you--what tie binds you? You do not care about many things

which we poor women hold sacred, I do not like to think or ask how far

your incredulity leads you. You offer to marry to please our mother,

and own that you have no heart to give away. Oh, Arthur, what is it you

offer me? What a rash compact would you enter into so lightly? A month

ago, and you would have given yourself to another. I pray you do not

trifle with your own or others' hearts so recklessly. Go and work; go

and mend, dear Arthur, for I see your faults, and dare speak of them

now: go and get fame, as you say that you can, and I will pray for my

brother, and watch our dearest mother at home."

"Is that your final decision, Laura?" Arthur cried.

"Yes," said Laura, bowing her head; and once more giving him her hand,

she went away. He saw her pass under the creepers of the little porch,

and disappear into the house. The curtains of his mother's window fell

at the same minute, but he did not mark that, or suspect that Helen had

been witnessing the scene.

Was he pleased, or was he angry at its termination? He had asked her,

and a secret triumph filled his heart to think that he was still free.

She had refused him, but did she not love him? That avowal of jealousy

made him still think that her heart was his own, whatever her lips might

utter.

And now we ought, perhaps, to describe another scene which took place at

Fairoaks, between the widow and Laura, when the latter had to tell Helen

that she had refused Arthur Pendennis. Perhaps it was the hardest task

of all which Laura had to go through in this matter: and the one which

gave her the most pain. But as we do not like to see a good woman

unjust, we shall not say a word more of the quarrel which now befell

between Helen and her adopted daughter, or of the bitter tears which the

poor girl was made to shed. It was the only difference which she and the

widow had ever had as yet, and the more cruel from this cause. Pen left

home whilst it was as yet pending--and Helen, who could pardon almost

everything, could not pardon an act of justice in Laura.

CHAPTER XXIX. Babylon

Our reader must now please to quit the woods and sea-shore of the

west, and the gossip of Clavering, and the humdrum life of poor little

Fairoaks, and transport himself with Arthur Pendennis, on the 'Alacrity'

coach, to London, whither he goes once for all to face the world and to

make his fortune. As the coach whirls through the night away from the

friendly gates of home, many a plan does the young man cast in his mind

of future life and conduct, prudence, and peradventure success and fame.

He knows he is a better man than many who have hitherto been ahead of

him in the race: his first failure has caused him remorse, and brought

with it reflection; it has not taken away his courage, or, let us add,

his good opinion of himself. A hundred eager fancies and busy hopes

keep him awake. How much older his mishaps and a year's thought and

self-communion have made him, than when, twelve months since, he passed

on this road on his way to and from Oxbridge! His thoughts turn in the

night with inexpressible fondness and tenderness towards the fond mother

who blessed him when parting, and who, in spite of all his past faults

and follies, trusts him and loves him still. Blessings be on her! he

prays, as he looks up to the stars overhead. O Heaven! give him strength

to work, to endure, to be honest, to avoid temptation, to be worthy of

the loving soul who loves him so entirely! Very likely she is awake,

too, at that moment, and sending up to the same Father purer prayers

than his for the welfare of her boy. That woman's love is a talisman by

which he holds and hopes to get his safety. And Laura's--he would have

fain carried her affection with him too, but she has denied it, as he is

not worthy of it. He owns as much with shame and remorse; confesses how

much better and loftier her nature is than his own--confesses it, and

yet is glad to be free. "I am not good enough for such a creature," he

owns to himself. He draws back before her spotless beauty and innocence,

as from something that scares him. He feels he is not fit for such a

mate as that; as many a wild prodigal who has been pious and guiltless

in early days, keeps away from a church which he used to frequent

once--shunning it, but not hostile to it--only feeling that he has no

right in that pure place.

With these thoughts to occupy him, Pen did not fall asleep until the

nipping dawn of an October morning, and woke considerably refreshed when

the coach stopped at the old breakfasting place at B----, where he had

had a score of merry meals on his way to and from school and college

many times since he was a boy. As they left that place, the sun broke

out brightly, the pace was rapid, the horn blew, the milestones flew by,

Pen smoked and joked with guard and fellow-passengers and people along

the familiar road; it grew more busy and animated at every instant; the

last team of greys came out at H----, and the coach drove into London.

What young fellow has not felt a thrill as he entered the vast place?

Hundreds of other carriages, crowded with their thousands of men, were

hastening to the great city. "Here is my place," thought Pen; "here is

my battle beginning, in which I must fight and conquer, or fall. I have

been a boy and a dawdler as yet. Oh, I long, I long to show that I can

be a man." And from his place on the coach-roof the eager young fellow

looked down upon the city, with the sort of longing desire which young

soldiers feel on the eve of a campaign.

As they came along the road, Pen had formed acquaintance with a cheery

fellow-passenger in a shabby cloak, who talked a great deal about men

of letters with whom he was very familiar, and who was, in fact, the

reporter of a London newspaper, as whose representative he had been

to attend a great wrestling-match in the west. This gentleman knew

intimately, as it appeared, all the leading men of letters of his day,

and talked about Tom Campbell, and Tom Hood, and Sydney Smith, and this

and the other, as if he had been their most intimate friend. As they

passed by Brompton, this gentleman pointed out to Pen Mr. Hurtle, the

reviewer, walking with his umbrella. Pen craned over the coach to have a

long look at the great Hurtle. He was a Boniface man, said Pen. And Mr.

Doolan, of the Star newspaper (for such was the gentleman's name and

address upon the card which he handed to Pen), said "Faith he was, and

he knew him very well." Pen thought it was quite an honour to have seen

the great Mr. Hurtle, whose works he admired. He believed fondly, as

yet, in authors, reviewers, and editors of newspapers. Even Wagg, whose

books did not appear to him to be masterpieces of human intellect, he

yet secretly revered as a successful writer. He mentioned that he had

met Wagg in the country, and Doolan told him how that famous novelist

received three hundther pounds a volume for every one of his novels. Pen

began to calculate instantly whether he might not make five thousand a

year.

The very first acquaintance of his own whom Arthur met, as the coach

pulled up at the Gloster Coffee-house, was his old friend Harry Foker,

who came prancing down Arlington Street behind an enormous cab-horse.

He had white kid gloves and white reins, and nature had by this time

decorated him with a considerable tuft on the chin. A very small

cab-boy, vice Stoopid retired, swung on behind Foker's vehicle;

knock-kneed and in the tightest leather breeches. Foker looked at the

dusty coach, and the smoking horses of the 'Alacrity' by which he

had made journeys in former times. "What, Foker!" cried out

Pendennis--"Hullo! Pen, my boy!" said the other, and he waved his whip

by way of amity and salute to Arthur, who was very glad to see his queer

friend's kind old face. Mr. Doolan had a great respect for Pen who had

an acquaintance in such a grand cab; and Pen was greatly excited and

pleased to be at liberty and in London. He asked Doolan to come and dine

with him at the Covent Garden Coffee-house, where he put up: he called a

cab and rattled away thither in the highest spirits. He was glad to see

the bustling waiter and polite bowing landlord again; and asked for the

landlady, and missed the old Boots and would have liked to shake hands

with everybody. He had a hundred pounds in his pocket. He dressed

himself in his very best; dined in the coffee-room with a modest pint

of sherry (for he was determined to be very economical), and went to the

theatre adjoining.

The lights and the music, the crowd and the gaiety, charmed and

exhilarated Pen, as those sights will do young fellows from college and

the country, to whom they are tolerably new. He laughed at the jokes; he

applauded the songs, to the delight of some of the dreary old habitues

of the boxes, who had ceased long ago to find the least excitement in

their place of nightly resort, and were pleased to see any one so fresh,

and so much amused. At the end of the first piece, he went and strutted

about the lobbies of the theatre, as if he was in a resort of the

highest fashion. What tired frequenter of the London pave is there that

cannot remember having had similar early delusions, and would not call

them back again? Here was young Foker again, like an ardent votary of

pleasure as he was. He was walking with Grandy Tiptoff, of the Household

Brigade, Lord Tiptoff's brother, and Lord Colchicum, Captain Tiptoff's

uncle, a venerable peer, who had been a man of pleasure since the first

French Revolution. Foker rushed upon Pen with eagerness, and insisted

that the latter should come into his private box, where a lady with the

longest ringlets and the fairest shoulders, was seated. This was Miss

Blenkinsop, the eminent actress of high comedy; and in the back of the

box snoozing in a wig, sate old Blenkinsop, her papa. He was described

in the theatrical prints as the "veteran Blenkinsop"--"the useful

Blenkinsop"--"that old favourite of the public, Blenkinsop"--those parts

in the drama, which are called the heavy fathers, were usually assigned

to this veteran, who, indeed, acted the heavy father in public, as in

private life.

At this time, it being about eleven o'clock, Mrs. Pendennis was gone to

bed at Fairoaks, and wondering whether her dearest Arthur was at rest

after his journey. At this time Laura, too, was awake. And at this time

yesterday night, as the coach rolled over silent commons, where cottage

windows twinkled, and by darkling woods under calm starlit skies, Pen

was vowing to reform and to resist temptation, and his heart was at

home. Meanwhile the farce was going on very successfully, and Mrs.

Leary, in a hussar jacket and braided pantaloons, was enchanting the

audience with her archness, her lovely figure, and her delightful

ballads.

Pen, being new to the town, would have liked to listen to Mrs. Leary;

but the other people in the box did not care about her song or her

pantaloons, and kept up an incessant chattering. Tiptoff knew where her

maillots came from. Colchicum saw her when she came out in '14. Miss

Blenkinsop said she sang out of all tune, to the pain and astonishment

of Pen, who thought that she was as beautiful as an angel, and that

she sang like a nightingale; and when Hoppus came on as Sir Harcourt

Featherby, the young man of the piece, the gentlemen in the box declared

that Hoppus was getting too stale, and Tiptoff was for flinging Miss

Blenkinsop's bouquet to him.

"Not for the world," cried the daughter of the veteran Blenkinsop; "Lord

Colchicum gave it to me."

Pen remembered that nobleman's name, and with a bow and a blush said he

believed he had to thank Lord Colchicum for having proposed him at the

Megatherium Club, at the request of his uncle, Major Pendennis.

"What, you're Wigsby's nephew, are you?" said the peer. "I beg your

pardon, we always call him Wigsby." Pen blushed to hear his venerable

uncle called by such a familiar name. "We balloted you in last week,

didn't we? Yes, last Wednesday night. Your uncle wasn't there."

Here was delightful news for Pen! He professed himself very much obliged

indeed to Lord Colchicum, and made him a handsome speech of thanks, to

which the other listened with his double opera-glass up to his eyes.

Pen was full of excitement at the idea of being a member of this polite

Club.

"Don't be always looking at that box, you naughty creature," cried Miss

Blenkinsop.

"She's a dev'lish fine woman, that Mirabel," said Tiptoff; "though

Mirabel was a d----d fool to marry her."

"A stupid old spooney," said the peer.

"Mirabel!" cried out Pendennis.

"Ha! ha!" laughed out Harry Foker. "We've heard of her before, haven't

we, Pen?"

It was Pen's first love. It was Miss Fotheringay. The year before she

had been led to the altar by Sir Charles Mirabel, G.C.B., and formerly

envoy to the Court of Pumpernickel, who had taken so active a part

in the negotiations before the Congress of Swammerdam, and signed, on

behalf of H.B.M., the Peace of Pultusk.

"Emily was always as stupid as an owl," said Miss Blenkinsop.

"Eh! Eh! pas si bete," the old Peer said.

"Oh, for shame!" cried the actress, who did not in the least know what

he meant.

And Pen looked out and beheld his first love once again--and wondered

how he ever could have loved her.

Thus on the very first night of his arrival in London, Mr. Arthur

Pendennis found himself introduced to a Club, to an actress of genteel

comedy and a heavy father of the Stage, and to a dashing society of

jovial blades, old and young; for my Lord Colchicum, though stricken in

years, bald of head and enfeebled in person, was still indefatigable in

the pursuit of enjoyment, and it was the venerable Viscount's boast

that he could drink as much claret as the youngest member of the society

which he frequented. He lived with the youth about town: he gave them

countless dinners at Richmond and Greenwich: an enlightened patron of

the drama in all languages and of the Terpsichorean art, he received

dramatic professors of all nations at his banquets--English from the

Covent Garden and Strand houses, Italians from the Haymarket, French

from their own pretty little theatre, or the boards of the Opera where

they danced. And at his villa on the Thames, this pillar of the State

gave sumptuous entertainments to scores of young men of fashion,

who very affably consorted with the ladies and gentlemen of the

greenroom--with the former chiefly, for Viscount Colchicum preferred

their society as more polished and gay than that of their male brethren.

Pen went the next day and paid his entrance-money at the Club, which

operation carried off exactly one-third of his hundred pounds; and

took possession of the edifice, and ate his luncheon there with immense

satisfaction. He plunged into an easy-chair in the library, and tried to

read all the magazines. He wondered whether the members were looking at

him, and that they could dare to keep on their hats in such fine rooms.

He sate down and wrote a letter to Fairoaks on the Club paper, and said,

what a comfort this place would be to him after his day's work was

over. He went over to his uncle's lodgings in Bury Street with some

considerable tremor, and in compliance with his mother's earnest desire,

that he should instantly call on Major Pendennis; and was not a little

relieved to find that the Major had not yet returned to town. His

apartments were blank. Brown hollands covered his library-table, and

bills and letters lay on the mantelpiece, grimly awaiting the return of

their owner. The Major was on the Continent, the landlady of the house

said, at Badnbadn, with the Marcus of Steyne. Pen left his card upon the

shelf with the rest. Fairoaks was written on it still.

When the Major returned to London, which he did in time for the fogs of

November, after enjoying which he proposed to spend Christmas with some

friends in the country, he found another card of Arthur's, on which Lamb

Court, Temple, was engraved, and a note from that young gentleman and

from his mother, stating that he was come to town, was entered a member

of the Upper Temple, and was reading hard for the bar.

Lamb Court, Temple:--where was it? Major Pendennis remembered that

some ladies of fashion used to talk of dining with Mr. Ayliffe, the

barrister, who was "in society," and who lived there in the King's

Bench, of which prison there was probably a branch in the Temple, and

Ayliffe was very likely an officer. Mr. Deuceace, Lord Crabs's son, had

also lived there, he recollected. He despatched Morgan to find out where

Lamb Court was, and to report upon the lodging selected by Mr. Arthur.

That alert messenger had little difficulty in discovering Mr. Pen's

abode. Discreet Morgan had in his time traced people far more difficult

to find than Arthur.

"What sort of a place is it, Morgan?" asked the Major, out of the

bed-curtains in Bury Street the next morning, as the valet was arranging

his toilette in the deep yellow London fog.

"I should say rayther a shy place," said Mr. Morgan. "The lawyers lives

there, and has their names on the doors. Mr. Harthur lives three pair

high, sir. Mr. Warrington lives there too, sir."

"Suffolk Warringtons! I shouldn't wonder: a good family," thought the

Major. "The cadets of many of our good families follow the robe as a

profession. Comfortable rooms, eh?"

"Honly saw the outside of the door, sir, with Mr. Warrington's name and

Mr. Arthur's painted up, and a piece of paper with 'Back at 6;' but I

couldn't see no servant, sir."

"Economical at any rate," said the Major.

"Very, sir. Three pair, sir. Nasty black staircase as ever I see. Wonder

how a gentleman can live in such a place."

"Pray, who taught you where gentlemen should or should not live, Morgan?

Mr. Arthur, sir, is going to study for the bar, sir," the Major said

with much dignity; and closed the conversation and began to array

himself in the yellow fog.

"Boys will be boys," the mollified uncle thought to himself. "He has

written to me a devilish good letter. Colchicum says he has had him to

dine, and thinks him a gentlemanlike lad. His mother is one of the best

creatures in the world. If he has sown his wild oats, and will stick

to his business, he may do well yet. Think of Charley Mirabel, the old

fool, marrying that flame of his! that Fotheringay! He doesn't like to

come here until I give him leave, and puts it in a very manly nice way.

I was deuced angry with him, after his Oxbridge escapades--and showed

it too when he was here before--Gad, I'll go and see him, hang me if I

don't."

And having ascertained from Morgan that he could reach the Temple

without much difficulty, and that a city omnibus would put him down

at the gate, the Major one day after breakfast at his Club--not the

Polyanthus, whereof Mr. Pen was just elected a member, but another Club:

for the Major was too wise to have a nephew as a constant inmate of any

house where he was in the habit of passing his time--the Major one day

entered one of those public vehicles, and bade the conductor to put him

down at the gate of the Upper Temple.

When Major Pendennis reached that dingy portal it was about twelve

o'clock in the day; and he was directed by a civil personage with a

badge and a white apron, through some dark alleys, and under various

melancholy archways into courts each more dismal than the other, until

finally he reached Lamb Court. If it was dark in Pall Mail, what was it

in Lamb Court? Candles were burning in many of the rooms there--in the

pupil-room of Mr. Hodgeman, the special pleader, where six pupils were

scribbling declarations under the tallow; in Sir Hokey Walker's clerk's

room, where the clerk, a person far more gentlemanlike and cheerful in

appearance than the celebrated counsel, his master, was conversing in a

patronising manner with the managing clerk of an attorney at the door;

and in Curling the wigmaker's melancholy shop, where, from behind the

feeble glimmer of a couple of lights, large serpents' and judges' wigs

were looming drearily, with the blank blocks looking at the lamp-post in

the court. Two little clerks were playing at toss-halfpenny under that

lamp. A laundress in pattens passed in at one door, a newspaper boy

issued from another. A porter, whose white apron was faintly visible,

paced up and down. It would be impossible to conceive a place more

dismal, and the Major shuddered to think that any one should select such

a residence. "Good Ged!" he said, "the poor boy mustn't live on here."

The feeble and filthy oil-lamps, with which the staircases of the Upper

Temple are lighted of nights, were of course not illuminating the stairs

by day, and Major Pendennis, having read with difficulty his nephew's

name under Mr. Warrington's on the wall of No. 6, found still greater

difficulty in climbing the abominable black stairs, up the banisters of

which, which contributed their damp exudations to his gloves, he groped

painfully until he came to the third story. A candle was in the passage

of one of the two sets of rooms; the doors were open, and the names of

Mr. Warrington and Mr. A. Pendennis were very clearly visible to the

Major as he went in. An Irish charwoman, with a pail and broom, opened

the door for the Major.

"Is that the beer?" cried out a great voice: "give us hold of it."

The gentleman who was speaking was seated on a table, unshorn and

smoking a short pipe; in a farther chair sate Pen, with a cigar, and

his legs near the fire. A little boy, who acted as the clerk of these

gentlemen, was grinning in the Major's face, at the idea of his being

mistaken for beer. Here, upon the third floor, the rooms were somewhat

lighter, and the Major could see place.

"Pen, my boy, it's I--it's your uncle," he said, choking with the smoke.

But as most young men of fashion used the weed, he pardoned the practice

easily enough.

Mr. Warrington got up from the table, and Pen, in a very perturbed

manner, from his chair. "Beg your pardon for mistaking you," said

Warrington, in a frank, loud voice. "Will you take a cigar, sir? Clear

those things off the chair, Pidgeon, and pull it round to the fire."

Pen flung his cigar into the grate; and was pleased with the cordiality

with which his uncle shook him by the hand. As soon as he could speak

for the stairs and the smoke, the Major began to ask Pen very kindly

about himself and about his mother; for blood is blood, and he was

pleased once more to see the boy.

Pen gave his news, and then introduced Mr. Warrington--an old Boniface

man--whose chambers he shared.

The Major was quite satisfied when he heard that Mr. Warrington was a

younger son of Sir Miles Warrington of Suffolk. He had served with an

uncle of his in India and in New South Wales, years ago.

"Took a sheep-farm there, sir, made a fortune--better thing than law or

soldiering," Warrington said. "Think I shall go there too." And here

the expected beer coming in, in a tankard with a glass bottom, Mr.

Warrington, with a laugh, said he supposed the Major would not have any,

and took a long, deep draught himself, after which he wiped his wrist

across his beard with great satisfaction. The young man was perfectly

easy and unembarrassed. He was dressed in a ragged old shooting jacket,

and had a bristly blue beard. He was drinking beer like a coalheaver,

and yet you couldn't but perceive that he was a gentleman.

When he had sate for a minute or two after his draught he went out of

the room, leaving it to Pen and his uncle, that they might talk over

family affairs were they so inclined.

"Rough and ready, your chum seems," the Major said. "Somewhat different

from your dandy friends at Oxbridge."

"Times are altered," Arthur replied, with a blush. "Warrington is only

just called, and has no business, but he knows law pretty well; and

until I can afford to read with a pleader, I use his books, and get his

help."

"Is that one of the books?" the Major asked, with a smile. A French

novel was lying at the foot of Pen's chair.

"This is not a working day, sir," the lad said. "We were out very

late at a party last night--at Lady Whiston's," Pen added, knowing his

uncle's weakness. "Everybody in town was there except you, sir; Counts,

Ambassadors, Turks, Stars and Garters--I don't know who--it's all in the

paper--and my name, too," said Pen, with great glee. "I met an old flame

of mine there, sir," he added, with a laugh. "You know whom I mean,

sir,--Lady Mirabel--to whom I was introduced over again. She shook

hands, and was gracious enough. I may thank you for being out of that

scrape, sir. She presented me to the husband, too--an old beau in a star

and a blonde wig. He does not seem very wise. She has asked me to call

on her, sir: and I may go now without any fear of losing my heart."

"What, we have had some new loves, have we?" the Major asked in high

good-humour.

"Some two or three," Mr. Pen said, laughing. "But I don't put on my

grand serieux any more, sir. That goes off after the first flame."

"Very right, my dear boy. Flames and darts and passion, and that sort of

thing, do very well for a lad: and you were but a lad when that affair

with the Fotheringill--Fotheringay--(what's her name?) came off. But a

man of the world gives up those follies. You still may do very well.

You have been bit, but you may recover. You are heir to a little

independence; which everybody fancies is a doosid deal more. You have

a good name, good wits, good manners, and a good person--and, begad!

I don't see why you shouldn't marry a woman with money--get into

Parliament--distinguish yourself, and--and, in fact, that sort of thing.

Remember, it's as easy to marry a rich woman as a poor woman: and a

devilish deal pleasanter to sit down to a good dinner, than to a scrag

of mutton in lodgings. Make up your mind to that. A woman with a good

jointure is a doosid deal easier a profession than the law, let me tell

you that. Look out; I shall be on the watch for you: and I shall die

content, my boy, if I can see you with a good ladylike wife, and a good

carriage, and a good pair of horses, living in society, and seeing your

friends, like a gentleman. Would you like to vegetate like your dear

good mother at Fairoaks? Dammy, sir! life, without money and the best

society isn't worth having." It was thus this affectionate uncle spoke,

and expounded to Pen his simple philosophy.

"What would my mother and Laura say to this, I wonder?" thought the lad.

Indeed old Pendennis's morals were not their morals, nor was his wisdom

theirs.

This affecting conversation between uncle and nephew had scarcely

concluded, when Warrington came out of his bedroom, no longer in rags,

but dressed like a gentleman, straight and tall and perfectly frank and

good-humoured. He did the honours of his ragged sitting-room with as

much ease as if it had been the finest apartment in London. And queer

rooms they were in which the Major found his nephew. The carpet was full

of holes--the table stained with many circles of Warrington's previous

ale-pots. There was a small library of law-books, books of poetry,

and of mathematics, of which he was very fond. (He had been one of the

hardest livers and hardest readers of his time at Oxbridge, where the

name of Stunning Warrington was yet famous for beating bargemen, pulling

matches, winning prizes, and drinking milk-punch.) A print of the old

college hung up over the mantelpiece, and some battered volumes of

Plato, bearing its well-known arms, were on the book-shelves. There were

two easy-chairs; a standing reading-desk piled with bills; a couple of

very meagre briefs on a broken-legged study-table. Indeed, there was

scarcely any article of furniture that had not been in the wars, and was

not wounded. "Look here, sir, here is Pen's room. He is a dandy, and

has got curtains to his bed, and wears shiny boots, and a silver

dressing-case." Indeed, Pen's room was rather coquettishly arranged, and

a couple of neat prints of opera-dancers, besides a drawing of Fairoaks,

hung on the walls. In Warrington's room there was scarcely any article

of furniture, save a great shower-bath, and a heap of books by the

bedside: where he lay upon straw like Margery Daw, and smoked his pipe,

and read half through the night his favourite poetry or mathematics.

When he had completed his simple toilette, Mr. Warrington came out of

this room, and proceeded to the cupboard to search for his breakfast.

"Might I offer you a mutton-chop, sir? We cook 'em ourselves hot and

hot: and I am teaching Pen the first principles of law, cooking, and

morality at the same time. He's a lazy beggar, sir, and too much of a

dandy."

And so saying, Mr. Warrington wiped a gridiron with a piece of paper,

put it on the fire, and on it two mutton-chops, and took from the

cupboard a couple of plates and some knives and silver forks, and

castors.

"Say but a word, Major Pendennis," he said; "there's another chop in the

cupboard, or Pidgeon shall go out and get you anything you like."

Major Pendennis sate in wonder and amusement, but he said he had just

breakfasted, and wouldn't have any lunch. So Warrington cooked the

chops, and popped them hissing hot upon the plates.

Pen fell to at his chop with a good appetite, after looking up at his

uncle, and seeing that gentleman was still in good-humour.

"You see, sir," Warrington said, "Mrs. Flanagan isn't here to do 'em,

and we can't employ the boy, for the little beggar is all day occupied

cleaning Pen's boots. And now for another swig at the beer. Pen drinks

tea; it's only fit for old women."

"And so you were at Lady Whiston's last night," the Major said, not in

truth knowing what observation to make to this rough diamond.

"I at Lady Whiston's! not such a flat, sir. I don't care for female

society. In fact it bores me. I spent my evening philosophically at the

Back Kitchen."

"The Back Kitchen? indeed!" said the Major.

"I see you don't know what it means," Warrington said. "Ask Pen. He was

there after Lady Whiston's. Tell Major Pendennis about the Back Kitchen,

Pen--don't be ashamed of yourself."

So Pen said it was a little eccentric society of men of letters and men

about town, to which he had been presented; and the Major began to

think that the young fellow had seen a good deal of the world since his

arrival in London.

CHAPTER XXX. The Knights of the Temple

Colleges, schools, and inns of courts still have some respect for

antiquity, and maintain a great number of the customs and institutions

of our ancestors, with which those persons who do not particularly

regard their forefathers, or perhaps are not very well acquainted with

them; have long since done away. A well-ordained workhouse or prison

si much better provided with the appliances of health, comfort, and

cleanliness, than a respectable Foundation School a venerable College,

or a learned Inn. In the latter place of residence men are contented to

sleep in dingy closets, and to pay for the sitting-room and the cupboard

which is their dormitory, the price of a good villa and garden in the

suburbs, or of a roomy house in the neglected squares of the town. The

poorest mechanic in Spitalfields has a cistern and an unbounded suppy

of water at his command; but the gentlemen of the inns of court, and

the gentlemen of the universities, have their supply of this cosmetic

fetched in jugs by laundresses and bedmakers, and live in abodes which

were erected long before the custom of cleanliness and decency obtained

among us. There are individuals still alive who sneer at the people and

speak of them with epithets of scorn. Gentlemen, there can be but little

doubt that your ancestors were the Great Unwashed: and in the Temple

especially, it is pretty certain, that only under the greatest

difficulties and restrictions the virtue which has been pronounced to be

next to godliness could have been practised at all.

Old Grump, of the Norfolk Circuit, who had lived for more than thirty

years in the chambers under those occupied by Warrington and Pendennis,

and who used to be awakened by the roaring of the shower-baths which

those gentlemen had erected in their apartments--a part of the contents

of which occasionally trickled through the roof into Mr. Grump's

room,--declared that the practice was an absurd, newfangled, dandified

folly, and daily cursed the laundress who slopped the staircase by which

he had to pass. Grump, now much more than half a century old, had indeed

never used the luxury in question. He had done without water very well,

and so had our fathers before him. Of all those knights and baronets,

lords and gentlemen, bearing arms, whose escutcheons are painted

upon the walls of the famous hall of the Upper Temple, was there no

philanthropist good-natured enough to devise a set of Hummums for the

benefit of the lawyers, his fellows and successors? The Temple historian

makes no mention of such a scheme. There is Pump Court and Fountain

Court, with their hydraulic apparatus, but one never heard of a bencher

disporting in the fountain; and can't but think how many a counsel

learned in the law of old days might have benefited by the pump.

Nevertheless, those venerable Inns which have the Lamb and Flag and the

Winged Horse for their ensigns, have attractions for persons who

inhabit them, and a share of rough comforts and freedom which men always

remember with pleasure. I don't know whether the student of law

permits himself the refreshment of enthusiasm, or indulges in poetical

reminiscences as he passes by historical chambers, and says, "Yonder

Eldon lived--upon this site Coke mused upon Littleton--here Chitty

toiled--here Barnewall and Alderson joined in their famous labours--here

Byles composed his great work upon bills, and Smith compiled his

immortal leading cases--here Gustavus still toils, with Solomon to aid

him:" but the man of letters can't but love the place which has been

inhabited by so many of his brethren, or peopled by their creations as

real to us at this day as the authors whose children they were--and Sir

Roger de Coverley walking in the Temple Garden, and discoursing with

Mr. Spectator about the beauties in hoops and patches who are sauntering

over the grass, is just as lively a figure to me as old Samuel Johnson

rolling through the fog with the Scotch gentleman at his heels on their

way to Dr. Goldsmith's chambers in Brick Court; or Harry Fielding, with

inked ruffles and a wet towel round his head, dashing off articles

at midnight for the Covent Garden Journal, while the printer's boy is

asleep in the passage.

If we could but get the history of a single day as it passed in any one

of those four-storied houses in the dingy court where our friends Pen

and Warrington dwelt, some Temple Asmodeus might furnish us with a queer

volume. There may be a great parliamentary counsel on the ground floor,

who drives off to Belgravia at dinner-time, when his clerk, too, becomes

a gentleman, and goes away to entertain his friends, and to take his

pleasure. But a short time since he was hungry and briefless in some

garret of the Inn; lived by stealthy literature; hoped, and waited, and

sickened, and no clients came; exhausted his own means and his friends'

kindness; had to remonstrate humbly with duns, and to implore the

patience of poor creditors. Ruin seemed to be staring him in the face,

when, behold, a turn of the wheel of fortune, and the lucky wretch in

possession of one of those prodigious prizes which are sometimes drawn

in the great lottery of the Bar. Many a better lawyer than himself does

not make a fifth part of the income of his clerk, who, a few months

since, could scarcely get credit for blacking for his master's unpaid

boots. On the first floor, perhaps, you will have a venerable man whose

name is famous, who has lived for half a century in the Inn, whose

brains are full of books, and whose shelves are stored with classical

and legal lore. He has lived alone all these fifty years, alone and for

himself, amassing learning, and compiling a fortune. He comes home now

at night alone from the club, where he has been dining freely, to the

lonely chambers where he lives a godless old recluse. When he dies, his

Inn will erect a tablet to his honour, and his heirs burn a part of his

library. Would you like to have such a prospect for your old age, to

store up learning and money, and end so? But we must not linger too long

by Mr. Doomsday's door. Worthy Mr. Grump lives over him, who is also an

ancient inhabitant of the Inn, and who, when Doomsday comes home to read

Catullus, is sitting down with three steady seniors of his standing,

to a steady rubber at whist, after a dinner at which they have consumed

their three steady bottles of Port. You may see the old boys asleep at

the Temple Church of a Sunday. Attorneys seldom trouble them, and

they have small fortunes of their own. On the other side of the third

landing, where Pen and Warrington live, till long after midnight, sits

Mr. Paley, who took the highest honours, and who is a fellow of his

college, who will sit and read and note cases until two o'clock in the

morning; who will rise at seven and be at the pleader's chambers as soon

as they are open, where he will work until an hour before dinner-time;

who will come home from Hall and read and note cases again until

dawn next day, when perhaps Mr. Arthur Pendennis and his friend Mr.

Warrington are returning from some of their wild expeditions. How

differently employed Mr. Paley has been! He has not been throwing

himself away: he has only been bringing a great intellect laboriously

down to the comprehension of a mean subject, and in his fierce grasp of

that, resolutely excluding from his mind all higher thoughts, all better

things, all the wisdom of philosophers and historians, all the thoughts

of poets; all wit, fancy, reflection, art, love, truth altogether--so

that he may master that enormous legend of the law, which he proposes

to gain his livelihood by expounding. Warrington and Paley had been

competitors for university honours in former days, and had run each

other hard; and everybody said now that the former was wasting his time

and energies, whilst all people praised Paley for his industry. There

may be doubts, however, as to which was using his time best. The one

could afford time to think, and the other never could. The one could

have sympathies and do kindnesses; and the other must needs be always

selfish. He could not cultivate a friendship or do a charity, or admire

a work of genius, or kindle at the sight of beauty or the sound of a

sweet song--he had no time, and no eyes for anything but his law-books.

All was dark outside his reading-lamp. Love, and Nature, and Art (which

is the expression of our praise and sense of the beautiful world of God)

were shut out from him. And as he turned off his lonely lamp at night,

he never thought but that he had spent the day profitably, and went to

sleep alike thankless and remorseless. But he shuddered when he met his

old companion Warrington on the stairs, and shunned him as one that was

doomed to perdition.

It may have been the sight of that cadaverous ambition and

self-complacent meanness, which showed itself in Paley's yellow face,

and twinkled in his narrow eyes, or it may have been a natural appetite

for pleasure and joviality, of which it must be confessed Mr. Pen was

exceedingly fond, which deterred that luckless youth from pursuing

his designs upon the Bench or the Woolsack with the ardour, or rather

steadiness, which is requisite in gentlemen who would climb to those

seats of honour. He enjoyed the Temple life with a great deal of relish:

his worthy relatives thought he was reading as became a regular student;

and his uncle wrote home congratulatory letters to the kind widow

at Fairoaks, announcing that the lad had sown his wild oats, and

was becoming quite steady. The truth is, that it was a new sort of

excitement to Pen, the life in which he was now engaged, and having

given up some of the dandified pretensions, and fine-gentleman airs

which he had contracted among his aristocratic college acquaintances,

of whom he now saw but little, the rough pleasures and amusements of

a London bachelor were very novel and agreeable to him, and he enjoyed

them all. Time was he would have envied the dandies their fine horses

in Rotten Row, but he was contented now to walk in the Park and look

at them. He was too young to succeed in London society without a better

name and a larger fortune than he had, and too lazy to get on without

these adjuncts. Old Pendennis fondly thought he was busied with law

because he neglected the social advantages presented to him, and, having

been at half a dozen balls and evening parties, retreated before their

dulness and sameness; and whenever anybody made inquiries of the worthy

Major about his nephew the old gentleman said the young rascal was

reformed, and could not be got away from his books. But the Major would

have been almost as much horrified as Mr. Paley was, had he known what

was Mr. Pen's real course of life, and how much pleasure entered into

his law studies.

A long morning's reading, a walk in the park, a pull on the river, a

stretch up the hill to Hampstead, and a modest tavern dinner; a bachelor

night passed here or there, in joviality, not vice (for Arthur Pendennis

admired women so heartily that he never could bear the society of any

of them that were not, in his fancy at least, good and pure); a quiet

evening at home, alone with a friend and a pipe or two, and a humble

potation of British spirits, whereof Mrs. Flanagan, the laundress,

invariably tested the quality;--these were our young gentleman's

pursuits, and it must be owned that his life was not unpleasant. In

term-time, Mr. Pen showed a most praiseworthy regularity in performing

one part of the law-student's course of duty, and eating his dinners

in Hall. Indeed, that Hall of the Upper Temple is a sight not

uninteresting, and with the exception of some trifling improvements and

anachronisms which have been introduced into the practice there, a

man may sit down and fancy that he joins in a meal of the seventeenth

century. The bar have their messes, the students their tables apart;

the benchers sit at the high table on the raised platform surrounded by

pictures of judges of the law and portraits of royal personages who have

honoured its festivities with their presence and patronage. Pen looked

about, on his first introduction, not a little amused with the scene

which he witnessed. Among his comrades of the student class there

were gentlemen of all ages, from sixty to seventeen; stout grey-headed

attorneys who were proceeding to take the superior dignity,--dandies

and men--about town who wished for some reason to be barristers of seven

years' standing,--swarthy, black-eyed natives of the Colonies, who came

to be called here before they practised in their own islands,--and many

gentlemen of the Irish nation, who make a sojourn in Middle Temple

Lane before they return to the green country of their birth. There were

little squads of reading students who talked law all dinner-time; there

were rowing men, whose discourse was of sculling matches, the Red House,

Vauxhall and the Opera; there were others great in politics, and orators

of the students' debating clubs; with all of which sets, except the

first, whose talk was an almost unknown and a quite uninteresting

language to him, Mr. Pen made a gradual acquaintance, and had many

points of sympathy.

The ancient and liberal Inn of the Upper Temple provides in its Hall,

and for a most moderate price, an excellent wholesome dinner of soup,

meat, tarts, and port wine or sherry, for the barristers and students

who attend that place of refection. The parties are arranged in messes

of four, each of which quartets has its piece of beef or leg of mutton,

its sufficient apple-pie and its bottle of wine. But the honest habitues

of the hall, amongst the lower rank of students, who have a taste

for good living, have many harmless arts by which they improve their

banquet, and innocent 'dodges' (if we may be permitted to use an

excellent phrase that has become vernacular since the appearance of the

last dictionaries) by which they strive to attain for themselves more

delicate food than the common every-day roast meat of the students'

tables.

"Wait a bit," said Mr. Lowton, one of these Temple gourmands. "Wait a

bit," said Mr. Lowton, tugging at Pen's gown--"the side-tables are very

full, and there's only three benchers to eat ten dishes--if we wait,

perhaps we shall get something from their table." And Pen looked with

some amusement, as did Mr. Lowton with eyes of fond desire, towards the

benchers' high table, where three old gentlemen were standing up before

a dozen silver dish-covers, while the clerk was quavering out a grace.

Lowton was great in the conduct of the dinner. His aim was to manage so

as to be the first, a captain of the mess, and to secure for himself

the thirteenth glass of the bottle of port wine. Thus he would have the

command of the joint on which he operated his favourite cuts, and made

rapid dexterous appropriations of gravy, which amused Pen infinitely.

Poor Jack Lowton! thy pleasures in life were very harmless; an eager

epicure, thy desires did not go beyond eighteen pence.

Pen was somewhat older than many of his fellow-students, and there was

that about his style and appearance, which, as we have said, was rather

haughty and impertinent, that stamped him as a man of ton--very unlike

those pale students who were talking law to one another, and those

ferocious dandies, in rowing shirts and astonishing pins and waistcoats,

who represented the idle part of the little community. The humble and

good-natured Lowton had felt attracted by Pen's superior looks and

presence--and had made acquaintance with him at the mess by opening the

conversation.

"This is boiled-beef day, I believe, sir," said Lowton to Pen.

"Upon my word, sir, I'm not aware," said Pen, hardly able to contain his

laughter, but added, "I'm a stranger; this is my first term;" on which

Lowton began to point out to him the notabilities in the Hall.

"That's Boosey the bencher, the bald one sitting under the picture and

aving soup; I wonder whether it's turtle? They often ave turtle. Next

is Balls, the King's Counsel, and Swettenham--Hodge and Swettenham, you

know. That's old Grump, the senior of the bar; they say he's dined here

forty years. They often send 'em down their fish from the benchers to

the senior table. Do you see those four fellows seated opposite us?

Those are regular swells--tip-top fellows, I can tell you--Mr. Trail,

the Bishop of Ealing's son, Honourable Fred. Ringwood, Lord Cinqbar's

brother, you know. He'll have a good place, I bet any money; and Bob

Suckling, who's always with him--a high fellow too. Ha! ha!" Here Lowton

burst into a laugh.

"What is it?" said Pen, still amused.

"I say, I like to mess with those chaps," Lowton said, winking his eye

knowingly, and pouring out his glass of wine.

"And why?" asked Pen.

"Why! they don't come down here to dine, you know, they only make

believe to dine. They dine here, Law bless you! They go to some of the

swell clubs, or else to some grand dinner-party. You see their names in

the Morning Post at all the fine parties in London. Why, I bet anything

that Ringwood has his cab, or Trail his Brougham (he's a devil of a

fellow, and makes the bishop's money spin, I can tell you) at the corner

of Essex Street at this minute. They dine! They won't dine these two

hours, I dare say."

"But why should you like to mess with them, if they don't eat any

dinner?" Pen asked, still puzzled. "There's plenty, isn't there?"

"How green you are," said Lowton. "Excuse me, but you are green. They

don't drink any wine, don't you see, and a fellow gets the bottle to

himself if he likes it when he messes with those three chaps. That's why

Corkoran got in with 'em."

"Ah, Mr. Lowton, I see you are a sly fellow," Pen said, delighted with

his acquaintance: on which the other modestly replied, that he had lived

in London the better part of his life, and of course had his eyes about

him; and went on with his catalogue to Pen.

"There's a lot of Irish here," he said; "that Corkoran's one, and

I can't say I like him. You see that handsome chap with the blue

neck-cloth, and pink shirt, and yellow waistcoat, that's another; that's

Molloy Maloney of Ballymaloney, and nephew to Major-General Sir Hector

O'Dowd, he, he," Lowton said, trying to imitate the Hibernian

accent. "He's always bragging about his uncle; and came into Hall in

silver-striped trousers the day he had been presented. That other near

him, with the long black hair, is a tremendous rebel. By Jove, sir, to

hear him at the Forum it makes your blood freeze; and the next is an

Irishman, too, Jack Finucane, reporter of a newspaper. They all stick

together, those Irish. It's your turn to fill your glass. What? you

won't have any port? Don't like port with your dinner? Here's your

health." And this worthy man found himself not the less attached to

Pendennis because the latter disliked port wine at dinner.

It was while Pen was taking his share of one of these dinners with his

acquaintance Lowton as the captain of his mess, that there came to join

them a gentleman in a barrister's gown, who could not find a seat, as it

appeared, amongst the persons of his own degree, and who strode over the

table and took his place on the bench where Pen sate. He was dressed in

old clothes and a faded gown, which hung behind him, and he wore a shirt

which, though clean, was extremely ragged, and very different to

the magnificent pink raiment of Mr. Molloy Maloney, who occupied

a commanding position in the next mess. In order to notify their

appearance at dinner, it is the custom of the gentlemen who eat in the

Upper Temple Hall to write down their names upon slips of paper, which

are provided for that purpose, with a pencil for each mess. Lowton wrote

his name first, then came Arthur Pendennis, and the next was that of

the gentleman in the old clothes. He smiled when he saw Pen's name,

and looked at him. "We ought to know each other," he said. "We're both

Boniface men; my name's Warrington."

"Are you St---- Warrington?" Pen said, delighted to see this hero.

Warrington laughed--"Stunning Warrington--yes," he said, "I recollect

you in your freshman's term. But you appear to have quite cut me out."

"The college talks about you still," said Pen, who had a generous

admiration for talent and pluck. "The bargeman you thrashed, Bill Simes,

don't you remember, wants you up again at Oxbridge. The Miss Notleys,

the haberdashers----"

"Hush!" said Warrington--"glad to make your acquaintance, Pendennis.

Heard a good deal about you."

The young men were friends immediately, and at once deep in

college-talk. And Pen, who had been acting rather the fine gentleman on

a previous day, when he pretended to Lowton that he could not drink port

wine at dinner, seeing Warrington take his share with a great deal of

gusto, did not scruple about helping himself any more, rather to the

disappointment of honest Lowton. When the dinner was over, Warrington

asked Arthur where he was going.

"I thought of going home to dress, and hear Grisi in Norma," Pen said.

"Are you going to meet anybody there?" he asked.

Pen said, "No--only to hear the music," of which he was fond.

"You had much better come home and smoke a pipe with me," said

Warrington,--"a very short one. Come, I live close by in Lamb Court, and

we'll talk over Boniface and old times."

They went away; Lowton sighed after them. He knew Warrington was

a baronet's son, and he looked up with simple reverence to all the

aristocracy. Pen and Warrington became sworn friends from that night.

Warrington's cheerfulness and jovial temper, his good sense, his rough

welcome, and his never-failing pipe of tobacco, charmed Pen, who found

it more pleasant to dive into shilling taverns with him, than to dine

in solitary state amongst the silent and polite frequenters of the

Polyanthus.

Ere long Pen gave up the lodgings in St. James's, to which he had

migrated on quitting his hotel, and found it was much more economical to

take up his abode with Warrington in Lamb Court, and furnish and occupy

his friend's vacant room there. For it must be said of Pen, that no man

was more easily led than he to do a thing, when it was a novelty, or

when he had a mind to it. And Pidgeon, the youth, and Flanagan, the

laundress, divided their allegiance now between Warrington and Pen.

CHAPTER XXXI. Old and new Acquaintances

Elated with the idea of seeing life, Pen went into a hundred queer

London haunts. He liked to think he was consorting with all sorts

of men--so he beheld coalheavers in their tap-rooms; boxers in their

inn-parlours; honest citizens disporting in the suburbs or on the river;

and he would have liked to hob and nob with celebrated pickpockets, or

drink a pot of ale with a company of burglars and cracksmen, had chance

afforded him an opportunity of making the acquaintance of this class of

society. It was good to see the gravity with which Warrington listened

to the Tutbury Pet or the Brighton Stunner at the Champion's Arms, and

behold the interest which he took in the coalheaving company assembled

at the Fox-under-the-Hill. His acquaintance with the public-houses of

the metropolis and its neighbourhood, and with the frequenters of their

various parlours, was prodigious. He was the personal friend of the

landlord and landlady, and welcome to the bar as to the clubroom. He

liked their society, he said, better than that of his own class, whose

manners annoyed him, and whose conversation bored him. "In society,"

he used to say, "everybody is the same, wears the same dress, eats and

drinks, and says the same things; one young dandy at the club talks and

looks just like another, one Miss at a ball exactly resembles another,

whereas there's character here. I like to talk with the strongest man in

England, or the man who can drink the most beer in England, or with

that tremendous republican of a hatter, who thinks Thistlewood was the

greatest character in history. I like better gin-and-water than claret.

I like a sanded floor in Carnaby Market better than a chalked one in

Mayfair. I prefer Snobs, I own it." Indeed, this gentleman was a social

republican; and it never entered his head while conversing with Jack

and Tom that he was in any respect their better; although, perhaps, the

deference which they paid him might secretly please him.

Pen followed him then to these various resorts of men with great glee

and assiduity. But he was considerably younger, and therefore much more

pompous and stately than Warrington, in fact a young prince in disguise,

visiting the poor of his father's kingdom. They respected him as a high

chap, a fine fellow, a regular young swell. He had somehow about him

an air of imperious good-humour, and a royal frankness and majesty,

although he was only heir-apparent to twopence-halfpenny, and but one

in descent from a gallypot. If these positions are made for us, we

acquiesce in them very easily; and are always pretty ready to assume a

superiority over those who are as good as ourselves. Pen's condescension

at this time of his life was a fine thing to witness. Amongst men of

ability this assumption and impertinence passes off with extreme

youth: but it is curious to watch the conceit of a generous and clever

lad--there is something almost touching in that early exhibition of

simplicity and folly.

So, after reading pretty hard of a morning, and, I fear, not law merely,

but politics and general history and literature, which were as necessary

for the advancement and instruction of a young man as mere dry law,

after applying with tolerable assiduity to letters, to reviews, to

elemental books of law, and, above all, to the newspaper, until the hour

of dinner was drawing nigh, these young gentlemen would sally out upon

the town with great spirits and appetite, and bent upon enjoying a merry

night as they had passed a pleasant forenoon. It was a jovial time, that

of four-and-twenty, when every muscle of mind and body was in healthy

action, when the world was new as yet, and one moved over it spurred

onwards by good spirits and the delightful capability to enjoy. If ever

we feel young afterwards, it is with the comrades of that time: the

tunes we hum in our old age, are those we learned then. Sometimes,

perhaps, the festivity of that period revives in our memory; but how

dingy the pleasure-garden has grown, how tattered the garlands look, how

scant and old the company, and what a number of the lights have gone

out since that day! Grey hairs have come on like daylight streaming

in--daylight and a headache with it. Pleasure has gone to bed with the

rouge on her cheeks. Well, friend, let us walk through the day, sober

and sad, but friendly.

I wonder what Laura and Helen would have said, could they have seen, as

they might not unfrequently have done had they been up and in London, in

the very early morning when the bridges began to blush in the sunrise,

and the tranquil streets of the city to shine in the dawn, Mr. Pen and

Mr. Warrington rattling over the echoing flags towards the Temple, after

one of their wild nights of carouse--nights wild, but not so wicked as

such nights sometimes are, for Warrington was a woman-hater; and Pen, as

we have said, too lofty to stoop to a vulgar intrigue. Our young Prince

of Fairoaks never could speak to one of the sex but with respectful

courtesy, and shrank from a coarse word or gesture with instinctive

delicacy--for though we have seen him fall in love with a fool, as his

betters and inferiors have done, and as it is probable that he did more

than once in his life, yet for the time of the delusion it was always as

a Goddess that he considered her, and chose to wait upon her. Men serve

women kneeling--when they get on their feet, they go away.

That was what an acquaintance of Pen's said to him in his hard homely

way;--an old friend with whom he had fallen in again in London--no other

than honest Mr. Bows of the Chatteris Theatre, who was now employed as

pianoforte player, to accompany the eminent lyrical talent which nightly

delighted the public at the Fielding's Head in Covent Garden: and where

was held the little club called the Back Kitchen.

Numbers of Pen's friends frequented this very merry meeting. The

Fielding's Head had been a house of entertainment, almost since the

time when the famous author of 'Tom Jones' presided as magistrate in the

neighbouring Bow Street; his place was pointed out, and the chair

said to have been his, still occupied by the president of the night's

entertainment. The worthy Cutts, the landlord of the Fielding's Head,

generally occupied this post when not disabled by gout or other illness.

His jolly appearance and fine voice may be remembered by some of my

male readers: he used to sing profusely in the course of the harmonic

meeting, and his songs were of what may be called the British

Brandy-and-Water School of Song--such as 'The Good Old English

Gentleman,' 'Dear Tom, this Brown Jug,' and so forth--songs in which

pathos and hospitality are blended, and the praises of good liquor and

the social affections are chanted in a baritone voice. The charms of our

women, the heroic deeds of our naval and military commanders, are often

sung in the ballads of this school; and many a time in my youth have I

admired how Cutts the singer, after he had worked us all up to patriotic

enthusiasm, by describing the way in which the brave Abercrombie

received his death-wound, or made us join him in tears, which he shed

liberally himself, as in faltering accents he told how autumn's falling

leaf "proclaimed the old man he must die"--how Cutts the singer became

at once Cutts the landlord, and, before the applause which we were

making with our fists on his table, in compliment to his heart-stirring

melody, had died away,--was calling, "Now, gentlemen, give your orders,

the waiter's in the room--John, a champagne cup for Mr. Green. I

think, sir, you said sausages and mashed potatoes? John, attend on the

gentleman."

"And I'll thank ye give me a glass of punch too, John, and take care the

wather boils," a voice would cry not unfrequently, a well-known voice to

Pen, which made the lad blush and start when he heard it first--that of

the venerable Captain Costigan; who was now established in London, and

one of the great pillars of the harmonic meetings at the Fielding's

Head.

The Captain's manners and conversation brought very many young men to

the place. He was a character, and his fame had begun to spread soon

after his arrival in the metropolis, and especially after his daughter's

marriage. He was great in his conversation to the friend for the

time being (who was the neighbour drinking by his side), about "me

daughther." He told of her marriage, and of the events previous and

subsequent to that ceremony; of the carriages she kept; of Mirabel's

adoration for her and for him; of the hundther pounds which he was at

perfect liberty to draw from his son-in-law, whenever necessity urged

him. And having stated that it was his firm intention to "dthraw next

Sathurday, I give ye me secred word and honour next Sathurday, the

fourteenth, when ye'll see the money will be handed over to me at

Coutts's, the very instant I present the cheque," the Captain would

not unfrequently propose to borrow a half-crown of his friend until the

arrival of that day of Greek Calends, when, on the honour of an officer

and gentleman, he would repee the thrifling obligetion.

Sir Charles Mirabel had not that enthusiastic attachment to his

father-in-law, of which the latter sometimes boasted (although in other

stages of emotion Cos would inveigh, with tears in his eyes, against the

ingratitude of the child of his bosom, and the stinginess of the wealthy

old man who had married her); but the pair had acted not unkindly

towards Costigan; had settled a small pension on him, which was paid

regularly, and forestalled with even more regularity by poor Cos; and

the period of the payments was always well known by his friend at

the Fielding's Head, whither the honest Captain took care to repair,

bank-notes in hand, calling loudly for change in the midst of the full

harmonic meeting. "I think ye'll find that note won't be refused at the

Bank of England, Cutts, my boy," Captain Costigan would say. "Bows,

have a glass? Ye needn't stint yourself to-night, anyhow; and a glass of

punch will make ye play con spirito." For he was lavishly free with his

money when it came to him, and was scarcely known to button his breeches

pocket, except when the coin was gone, or sometimes, indeed, when a

creditor came by.

It was in one of these moments of exultation that Pen found his old

friend swaggering at the singers' table at the Back Kitchen of the

Fielding's Head, and ordering glasses of brandy-and-water for any of his

acquaintances who made their appearance in the apartment. Warrington,

who was on confidential terms with the bass singer, made his way up to

this quarter of the room, and Pen walked at his friend's heels.

Pen started and blushed to see Costigan. He had just come from Lady

Whiston's party, where he had met and spoken with the Captain's daughter

again for the first time after very old old days. He came up with

outstretched hand, very kindly and warmly to greet the old man; still

retaining a strong remembrance of the time when Costigan's daughter had

been everything in the world to him. For though this young gentleman may

have been somewhat capricious in his attachments, and occasionally have

transferred his affections from one woman to another, yet he always

respected the place where Love had dwelt, and, like the Sultan of

Turkey, desired that honours should be paid to the lady towards whom

he had once thrown the royal pocket-handkerchief. The tipsy Captain

returning the clasp of Pen's hand with all the strength of a palm

which had become very shaky by the constant lifting up of weights

of brandy-and-water, looked hard in Pen's face, and said, "Grecious

Heavens, is it possible? Me dear boy, me dear fellow, me dear friend;"

and then with a look of muddled curiosity, fairly broke down with, "I

know your face, me dear dear friend, but, bedad, I've forgot your name."

Five years of constant punch had passed since Pen and Costigan met.

Arthur was a good deal changed, and the Captain may surly be excused for

forgetting him; when a man at the actual moment sees things double, we

may expect that his view of the past will be rather muzzy.

Pen saw his condition and laughed, although, perhaps, he was

somewhat mortified. "Don't you remember me, Captain?" he said. "I am

Pendennis--Arthur Pendennis, of Chatteris."

The sound of the young man's friendly voice recalled and steadied Cos's

tipsy remembrance, and he saluted Arthur, as soon as he knew him, with a

loud volley of friendly greetings. Pen was his dearest boy, his gallant

young friend, his noble collagian, whom he had held in his inmost heart

ever since they had parted--how was his fawther, no, his mother, and

his guardian, the General, the Major? "I preshoom, from your apparance,

you've come into your prawpertee; and, bedad, yee'll spend it like a man

of spirit--I'll go bail for that. No? not yet come into your estete? If

ye want any thrifle, heark ye, there's poor old Jack Costigan has got

a guinea or two in his pocket--and, be heavens! you shall never want,

Awthur, me dear boy. What'll ye have? John, come hither, and look

aloive; give this gentleman a glass of punch, and I'll pay for't.--Your

friend? I've seen him before. Permit me to have the honour of making

meself known to ye, sir, and requesting ye'll take a glass of punch."

"I don't envy Sir Charles Mirabel his father-in-law," thought Pendennis.

"And how is my old friend, Mr. Bows, Captain? Have you any news of him,

and do you see him still?"

"No doubt he's very well," said the Captain, jingling his money, and

whistling the air of a song--'The Little Doodeen'--for the singing

of which he was celebrated at the Fielding's Head. "Me dear boy--I've

forgot your name again--but my name's Costigan, Jack Costigan, and I'd

loike ye to take as many tumblers of punch in my name as ever ye

loike. Ye know my name; I'm not ashamed of it." And so the captain went

maundering on.

"It's pay-day with the General," said Mr. Hodgen, the bass singer, with

whom Warrington was in deep conversation: "and he's a precious deal more

than half seas over. He has already tried that 'Little Doodeen' of his,

and broke it, too, just before I sang 'King Death.' Have you heard

my new song, 'The Body Snatcher,' Mr. Warrington?--angcored at Saint

Bartholomew's the other night--composed expressly for me. Per'aps you

or your friend would like a copy of the song, sir? John, just 'ave

the kyndness to 'and over a 'Body Snatcher' 'ere, will yer?--There's a

portrait of me, sir, as I sing it--as the Snatcher--considered rather

like."

"Thank you," said Warrington; "heard it nine times--know it by heart,

Hodgen."

Here the gentleman who presided at the pianoforte began to play upon his

instrument, and Pen, looking in the direction of the music, beheld that

very Mr. Bows, for whom he had been asking but now, and whose existence

Costigan had momentarily forgotten. The little old man sate before the

battered piano (which had injured its constitution wofully by sitting up

so many nights, and spoke with a voice, as it were, at once hoarse and

faint), and accompanied the singers, or played with taste and grace in

the intervals of the songs.

Bows had seen and recollected Pen at once when the latter came into the

room, and had remarked the eager warmth of the young man's recognition

of Costigan. He now began to play an air, which Pen instantly remembered

as one which used to be sung by the chorus of villagers in 'The

Stranger,' just before Mrs. Haller came in. It shook Pen as he heard

it. He remembered how his heart used to beat as that air was played,

and before the divine Emily made her entry. Nobody, save Arthur, too any

notice of old Bows's playing: it was scarcely heard amidst the clatter

of knives and forks, the calls for poached eggs and kidneys, and the

tramp of guests and waiters.

Pen went up and kindly shook the player by the hand at the end of his

performance; and Bows greeted Arthur with great respect and cordiality.

"What, you haven't forgot the old tune, Mr. Pendennis?" he said; "I

thought you'd remember it. I take it, it was the first tune of that sort

you ever heard played--wasn't it, sir? You were quite a young chap then.

I fear the Captain's very bad to-night. He breaks out on a pay-day; and

I shall have the deuce's own trouble in getting home. We live together.

We still hang on, sir, in partnership, though Miss Em--though my lady

Mirabel has left the firm.--And so you remember old times, do you?

Wasn't she a beauty, sir?--Your health and my service to you,"--and he

took a sip at the pewter measure of porter which stood by his side as he

played.

Pen had many opportunities of seeing his early acquaintance afterwards,

and of renewing his relations with Costigan and the old musician.

As they sate thus in friendly colloquy, men of all sorts and conditions

entered and quitted the house of entertainment; and Pen had the pleasure

of seeing as many different persons of his race, as the most eager

observer need desire to inspect. Healthy country tradesmen and farmers,

in London for their business, came and recreated themselves with

the jolly singing and suppers of the Back Kitchen,--squads of young

apprentices and assistants, the shutters being closed over the scene

of their labours, came hither for fresh air doubtless,--rakish young

medical students, gallant, dashing, what is called "loudly" dressed, and

(must it be owned?) somewhat dirty,--were here smoking and drinking,

and vociferously applauding the songs; young university bucks were to

be found here, too, with that indescribable genteel simper which is only

learned at the knees of Alma Mater;--and handsome young guardsmen, and

florid bucks from the St. James's Street Clubs--nay, senators English

and Irish; and even members of the House of Peers.

The bass singer had made an immense hit with his song of 'The Body

Snatcher,' and the town rushed to listen to it. The curtain drew aside,

and Mr. Hodgen appeared in the character of the Snatcher, sitting on a

coffin, with a flask of gin before him, with a spade, and a candle stuck

in a skull. The song was sung with a really admirable terrific humour.

The singer's voice went down so low, that its grumbles rumbled into the

hearer's awe-stricken soul; and in the chorus he clamped with his spade,

and gave a demoniac "Ha! ha!" which caused the very glasses to quiver

on the table, as with terror. None of the other singers, not even

Cutts himself, as that high-minded man owned, could stand up before

the Snatcher, and he commonly used to retire to Mrs. Cutts's private

apartments, or into the bar, before that fatal song extinguished

him. Poor Cos's ditty, 'The Little Doodeen,' which Bows accompanied

charmingly on the piano, was sung but to a few admirers, who might

choose to remain after the tremendous resurrectionist chant. The room

was commonly emptied after that, or only left in possession of a very

few and persevering votaries of pleasure.

Whilst Pen and his friend were sitting here together one night, or

rather morning, two habitues of the house entered almost together. "Mr.

Hoolan and Mr. Doolan," whispered Warrington to Pen, saluting these

gentlemen, and in the latter Pen recognised his friend of the Alacrity

coach, who could not dine with Pen on the day on which the latter had

invited him, being compelled by his professional duties to decline

dinner-engagements on Fridays, he had stated, with his compliments to

Mr. Pendennis.

Doolan's paper, the Dawn, was lying on the table much bestained by

porter, and cheek-by-jowl with Hoolan's paper, which we shall call the

Day; the Dawn was Liberal--the Day was ultra-Conservative. Many of our

journals are officered by Irish gentlemen, and their gallant brigade

does the penning among us, as their ancestors used to transact the

fighting in Europe; and engage under many a flag, to be good friends

when the battle is over.

"Kidneys, John, and a glass of stout," says Hoolan. "How are you,

Morgan? how's Mrs. Doolan?"

"Doing pretty well, thank ye, Mick, my boy--faith she's accustomed to

it," said Doolan. "How's the lady that owns ye? Maybe I'll step down

Sunday, and have a glass of punch, Kilburn way."

"Don't bring Patsey with you, Mick, for our Georgy's got the measles,"

said the friendly Morgan, and they straightway fell to talk about

matters connected with their trade--about the foreign mails--about who

was correspondent at Paris, and who wrote from Madrid--about the expense

the Morning Journal was at in sending couriers, about the circulation of

the Evening Star, and so forth.

Warrington, laughing, took the Dawn which was lying before him, and

pointed to one of the leading articles in that journal, which commenced

thus--

"As rogues of note in former days who had some wicked work to

perform,--an enemy to be put out of the way, a quantity of false coin

to be passed, a lie to be told or a murder to be done--employed a

professional perjurer or assassin to do the work, which they were

themselves too notorious or too cowardly to execute: our notorious

contemporary, the Day, engages smashers out of doors to utter forgeries

against individuals, and calls in auxiliary cut-throats to murder the

reputation of those who offend him. A black-vizarded ruffian (whom we

will unmask), who signs the forged name of Trefoil, is at present one of

the chief bravoes and bullies in our contemporary's establishment. He is

the eunuch who brings the bowstring, and strangles at the order of

the Day. We can convict this cowardly slave, and propose to do so. The

charge which he has brought against Lord Bangbanagher, because he is a

Liberal Irish peer, and against the Board of Poor Law Guardians of the

Bangbanagher Union, is," etc.

"How did they like the article at your place, Mick?" asked Morgan; "when

the Captain puts his hand to it he's a tremendous hand at a smasher. He

wrote the article in two hours--in--whew--you know where, while the boy

was waiting."

"Our governor thinks the public don't mind a straw about these newspaper

rows, and has told the Docthor to stop answering," said the other. "Them

two talked it out together in my room. The Docthor would have liked a

turn, for he says it's such easy writing, and requires no reading up of

a subject: but the governor put a stopper on him."

"The taste for eloquence is going out, Mick," said Morgan.

"'Deed then it is, Morgan," said Mick. "That was fine writing when the

Docthor wrote in the Phaynix, and he and Condy Roony blazed away at each

other day after day."

"And with powder and shot, too, as well as paper," says Morgan, "Faith,

the Docthor was out twice, and Condy Roony winged his man."

"They are talking about Doctor Boyne and Captain Shandon," Warrington

said, "who are the two Irish controversialists of the Dawn and the Day,

Dr. Boyne being the Protestant champion and Captain Shandon the Liberal

orator. They are the best friends in the world, I believe, in spite

of their newspaper controversies; and though they cry out against the

English for abusing their country, by Jove they abuse it themselves

more in a single article than we should take the pains to do in a dozen

volumes. How are you, Doolan?"

"Your servant, Mr. Warrington--Mr. Pendennis, I am delighted to have

the honour of seeing ye again. The night's journey on the top of the

Alacrity was one of the most agreeable I ever enjoyed in my life, and it

was your liveliness and urbanity that made the trip so charming. I have

often thought over that happy night, sir, and talked over it to Mrs.

Doolan. I have seen your elegant young friend, Mr. Foker, too, here,

sir, not unfrequently. He is an occasional frequenter of this hostelry,

and a right good one it is. Mr. Pendennis, when I saw you I was on the

Tom and Jerry Weekly Paper; I have now the honour to be sub-editor of

the Dawn, one of the best-written papers of the empire"--and he bowed

very slightly to Mr. Warrington. His speech was unctuous and measured,

his courtesy oriental, his tone, when talking with the two Englishmen,

quite different to that with which he spoke to his comrade.

"Why the devil will the fellow compliment so?" growled Warrington, with

a sneer which he hardly took the pains to suppress. "Psha--who comes

here?--all Parnassus is abroad to-night: here's Archer. We shall have

some fun. Well, Archer, House up?"

"Haven't been there. I have been," said Archer, with an air of mystery,

"where I was wanted. Get me some supper, John--something substantial. I

hate your grandees who give you nothing to eat. If it had been at Apsley

House, it would have been quite different. The Duke knows what I like,

and says to the Groom of the Chambers, 'Martin, you will have some cold

beef, not too much done, and a pint bottle of pale ale, and some

brown sherry, ready in my study as usual;--Archer is coming here this

evening.' The Duke doesn't eat supper himself, but he likes to see a man

enjoy a hearty meal, and he knows that I dine early. A man can't live

upon air, be hanged to him."

"Let me introduce you to my friend, Mr. Pendennis," Warrington said,

with great gravity. "Pen, this is Mr Archer, whom you have heard me

talk about. You must know Pen's uncle, the Major, Archer, you who know

everybody?"

"Dined with him the day before yesterday at Gaunt House," Archer said.

"We were four--the French Ambassador, Steyne, and we two commoners."

"Why, my uncle is in Scot----" Pen was going to break out, but

Warrington pressed his foot under the table as a signal for him to be

quiet.

"It was about the same business that I have been to the palace

to-night," Archer went on simply, "and where I've been kept four hours,

in an anteroom, with nothing but yesterday's Times, which I knew by

heart, as I wrote three of the leading articles myself; and though the

Lord Chamberlain came in four times, and once holding the royal teacup

and saucer in his hand, he did not so much as say to me, 'Archer, will

you have a cup of tea?'"

"Indeed! what is in the wind now?" asked Warrington--and turning to Pen,

added, "You know, I suppose, that when there is anything wrong at Court

they always send for Archer."

"There is something wrong," said Mr. Archer, "and as the story will be

all over the town in a day or two I don't mind telling it. At the last

Chantilly races, where I rode Brian Boru for my old friend the Duke de

Saint Cloud--the old King said to me, Archer, I'm uneasy about Saint

Cloud. I have arranged his marriage with the Princess Marie Cunegonde;

the peace of Europe depends upon it--for Russia will declare war if the

marriage does not take place, and the young fool is so mad about Madame

Massena, Marshal Massena's wife, that he actually refuses to be a party

to the marriage. Well, Sir, I spoke to Saint Cloud, and having got him

into pretty good humour by winning the race, and a good bit of money

into the bargain, he said to me, 'Archer, tell the Governor I'll think

of it.'"

"How do you say Governor in French?" asked Pen, who piqued himself on

knowing that language.

"Oh, we speak in English--I taught him when we were boys, and I saved

his life at Twickenham, when he fell out of a punt," Archer said. "I

shall never forget the Queen's looks as I brought him out of the water.

She gave me this diamond ring, and always calls me Charles to this day."

"Madame Massena must be rather an old woman, Archer," Warrington said.

"Dev'lish old--old enough to be his grandmother; I told him so," Archer

answered at once. "But those attachments for old women are the deuce and

all. That's what the King feels: that's what shocks the poor Queen so

much. They went away from Paris last Tuesday night, and are living at

this present moment at Jaunay's Hotel."

"Has there been a private marriage, Archer?" asked Warrington.

"Whether there has or not I don't know," Mr. Archer replied, "all I know

is that I was kept waiting for four hours at the palace; that I never

saw a man in such a state of agitation as the King of Belgium when he

came out to speak to me, and that I'm devilish hungry--and here comes

some supper."

"He has been pretty well to-night," said Warrington, as the pair went

home together: "but I have known him in much greater force, and keeping

a whole room in a state of wonder. Put aside his archery practice,

that man is both able and honest--a good man of business, an excellent

friend, admirable to his family as husband, father, and son."

"What is it makes him pull the long bow in that wonderful manner?"

"An amiable insanity," answered Warrington. "He never did anybody harm

by his talk, or said evil of anybody. He is a stout politician too, and

would never write a word or do an act against his party, as many of us

do."

"Of us! Who are we?" asked Pen. "Of what profession is Mr. Archer?"

"Of the Corporation of the Goosequill--of the Press, my boy," said

Warrington; "of the fourth estate."

"Are you, too, of the craft, then?" Pendennis said.

"We will talk about that another time," answered the other. They were

passing through the Strand as they talked, and by a newspaper office,

which was all lighted up and bright. Reporters were coming out of the

place, or rushing up to it in cabs; there were lamps burning in the

editors' rooms, and above where the compositors were at work: the

windows of the building were in a blaze of gas.

"Look at that, Pen," Warrington said. "There she is--the great

engine--she never sleeps. She has her ambassadors in every quarter of

the world--her couriers upon every road. Her officers march along

with armies, and her envoys walk into statesmen's cabinets. They are

ubiquitous. Yonder journal has an agent, at this minute, giving bribes

at Madrid; and another inspecting the price of potatoes in Covent

Garden. Look! here comes the Foreign Express galloping in. They will be

able to give news to Downing Street to-morrow: funds will rise or fall,

fortunes be made or lost; Lord B. will get up, and, holding the paper in

his hand, and seeing the noble marquis in his place, will make a great

speech; and--and Mr. Doolan will be called away from his supper at the

Back Kitchen; for he is foreign sub-editor, and sees the mail on the

newspaper sheet before he goes to his own."

And so talking, the friends turned into their chambers, as the dawn was

beginning to peep.

CHAPTER XXXII. In which the Printer's Devil comes to the Door

Pen, in the midst of his revels and enjoyments, humble as they were,

and moderate in cost if not in kind, saw an awful sword hanging over

him which must drop down before long and put an end to his frolics and

feasting. His money was very nearly spent. His club subscription had

carried away a third part of it. He had paid for the chief articles of

furniture with which he had supplied his little bedroom: in fine, he was

come to the last five-pound note in his pocket-book, and could think of

no method of providing a successor: for our friend had been bred up like

a young prince as yet, or as a child in arms whom his mother feeds when

it cries out.

Warrington did not know what his comrade's means were. An only child,

with a mother at her country house, and an old dandy of an uncle who

dined with a great man every day, Pen might have a large bank at his

command for anything that the other knew. He had gold chains and

a dressing-case fit for a lord. His habits were those of an

aristocrat,--not that he was expensive upon any particular point, for he

dined and laughed over the pint of porter and the plate of beef from the

cook's shop with perfect content and good appetite,--but he could not

adopt the penny-wise precautions of life. He could not give twopence to

a waiter; he could not refrain from taking a cab if he had a mind to do

so, or if it rained, and as surely as he took the cab he overpaid the

driver. He had a scorn for cleaned gloves and minor economies. Had

he been bred to ten thousand a year he could scarcely have been more

free-handed; and for a beggar, with a sad story, or a couple of pretty

piteous-faced children, he never could resist putting his hand into his

pocket. It was a sumptuous nature, perhaps, that could not be brought

to regard money; a natural generosity and kindness; and possibly a petty

vanity that was pleased with praise, even with the praise of waiters and

cabmen. I doubt whether the wisest of us know what our own motives are,

and whether some of the actions of which we are the very proudest

will not surprise us when we trace them, as we shall one day, to their

source.

Warrington then did not know, and Pen had not thought proper to confide

to his friend, his pecuniary history. That Pen had been wild and

wickedly extravagant at college, the other was aware; everybody at

college was extravagant and wild; but how great the son's expenses had

been, and how small the mother's means, were points which had not been

as yet submitted to Mr. Warrington's examination.

At last the story came out, while Pen was grimly surveying the

change for the last five-pound note, as it lay upon the tray from the

public-house by Mr. Warrington's pot of ale.

"It is the last rose of summer," said Pen; "its blooming companions

have gone long ago; and behold the last one of the garland has shed its

leaves;" and he told Warrington the whole story which we know of his

mother's means, of his own follies, of Laura's generosity; during which

time Warrington smoked his pipe and listened intent.

"Impecuniosity will do you good," Pen's friend said, knocking out the

ashes at the end of the narration; "I don't know anything more wholesome

for a man--for an honest man, mind you--for another, the medicine loses

its effect--than a state of tick. It is an alterative and a tonic; it

keeps your moral man in a perpetual state of excitement: as a man who

is riding at a fence, or has his opponent's single-stick before him, is

forced to look his obstacle steadily in the face, and braces himself to

repulse or overcome it; a little necessity brings out your pluck if you

have any, and nerves you to grapple with fortune. You will discover

what a number of things you can do without when you have no money to buy

them. You won't want new gloves and varnished boots, eau de Cologne

and cabs to ride in. You have been bred up as a molly-coddle, Pen, and

spoilt by the women. A single man who has health and brains, and can't

find a livelihood in the world, doesn't deserve to stay there. Let him

pay his last halfpenny and jump over Waterloo Bridge. Let him steal a

leg of mutton and be transported and get out of the country--he is not

fit to live in it. Dixi; I have spoken. Give us another pull at the pale

ale.

"You have certainly spoken; but how is one to live?" said Pen. "There is

beef and bread in plenty in England, but you must pay for it with work

or money. And who will take my work? and what work can I do?"

Warrington burst out laughing. "Suppose we advertise in the Times," he

said, "for an usher's place at a classical and commercial academy--A

gentleman, B.A. of St. Boniface College, and who was plucked for his

degree--"

"Confound you," cried Pen.

"--Wishes to give lessons in classics and mathematics, and the rudiments

of the French language; he can cut hair, attend to the younger pupils,

and play a second on the piano with the daughters of the principal.

Address A. P., Lamb Court, Temple."

"Go on," said Pen, growling.

"Men take to all sorts of professions. Why, there is your friend

Bloundell-Bloundell is a professional blackleg, and travels the

Continent, where he picks up young gentlemen of fashion and fleeces

them. There is Bob O'Toole, with whom I was at school, who drives

the Ballynafad mail now, and carries honest Jack Finucane's own

correspondence to that city. I know a man, sir, a doctor's son,

like--well, don't be angry, I meant nothing offensive--a doctor's son,

I say, who was walking the hospitals here, and quarrelled with his

governor on questions of finance, and what did he do when he came to his

last five-pound note? he let his mustachios grow, went into a provincial

town, where he announced himself as Professor Spineto, chiropodist to

the Emperor of All the Russians, and by a happy operation on the editor

of the country newspaper, established himself in practice, and lived

reputably for three years. He has been reconciled to his family, and has

succeeded to his father's gallypots."

"Hang gallypots," cried Pen. "I can't drive a coach, cut corns, or cheat

at cards. There's nothing else you propose."

"Yes; there's our own correspondent," Warrington said. "Every man

has his secrets, look you. Before you told me the story of your

money-matters, I had no idea but that you were a gentleman of fortune,

for, with your confounded airs and appearance, anybody would suppose you

to be so. From what you tell me about your mother's income, it is clear

that you must not lay any more hands on it. You can't go on spunging

upon the women. You must pay off that trump of a girl. Laura is her

name?--here is your health, Laura!--and carry a hod rather than ask for

a shilling from home."

"But how earn one?" asked Pen.

"How do I live, think you?" said the other. "On my younger brother's

allowance, Pendennis? I have secrets of my own, my boy;" and here

Warrington's countenance fell. "I made away with that allowance five

years ago: if I had made away with myself a little time before, it would

have been better. I have played off my own bat, ever since. I don't want

much money. When my purse is out, I go to work and fill it, and then lie

idle like a serpent or an Indian, until I have digested the mass. Look,

I begin to feel empty," Warrington said, and showed Pen a long lean

purse, with but a few sovereigns at one end of it.

"But how do you fill it?" said Pen.

"I write," said Warrington. "I don't tell the world that I do so," he

added, with a blush. "I do not choose that questions should be asked:

or, perhaps, I am an ass, and don't wish it to be said that George

Warrington writes for bread. But I write in the Law Reviews: look here,

these articles are mine." And he turned over some sheets. "I write in

a newspaper now and then, of which a friend of mine is editor." And

Warrington, going with Pendennis to the club one day, called for a

file of the Dawn, and pointed with his finger silently to one or

two articles, which Pen read with delight. He had no difficulty in

recognising the style afterwards--the strong thoughts and curt periods,

the sense, the satire, and the scholarship.

"I am not up to this," said Pen, with a genuine admiration of his

friend's powers. "I know very little about politics or history,

Warrington; and have but a smattering of letters. I can't fly upon such

a wing as yours."

"But you can on your own, my boy, which is lighter, and soars higher,

perhaps," the other said, good-naturedly. "Those little scraps and

verses which I have seen of yours show me, what is rare in these days,

a natural gift, sir. You needn't blush, you conceited young jackanapes.

You have thought so yourself any time these ten years. You have got the

sacred flame--a little of the real poetical fire, sir, I think; and all

our oil-lamps are nothing compared to that, though ever so well trimmed.

You are a poet, Pen, my boy," and so speaking, Warrington stretched out

his broad hand, and clapped Pen on the shoulder.

Arthur was so delighted that the tears came into his eyes. "How kind you

are to me, Warrington!" he said.

"I like you, old boy," said the other. "I was dev'lish lonely in

chambers, and wanted somebody, and the sight of your honest face somehow

pleased me. I liked the way you laughed at Lowton--that poor good little

snob. And, in fine, the reason why I cannot tell--but so it is, young

'un. I'm alone in the world, sir; and I wanted some one to keep me

company;" and a glance of extreme kindness and melancholy passed out of

Warrington's dark eyes.

Pen was too much pleased with his own thoughts to perceive the sadness

of the friend who was complimenting him. "Thank you, Warrington," he

said, "thank you for your friendship to me, and--and what you say about

me. I have often thought I was a poet. I will be one--I think I am one,

as you say so, though the world mayn't. Is it--is it the Ariadne in

Naxos which you liked (I was only eighteen when I wrote it), or the

Prize Poem?"

Warrington burst into a roar of laughter. "Why, young goose," he yelled

out--"of all the miserable weak rubbish I ever tried, Ariadne in Naxos

is the most mawkish and disgusting. The Prize Poem is so pompous and

feeble, that I'm positively surprised, sir, it didn't get the medal. You

don't suppose that you are a serious poet, do you, and are going to cut

out Milton and Aeschylus? Are you setting up to be a Pindar, you absurd

little tom-tit, and fancy you have the strength and pinion which the

Theban eagle bear, sailing with supreme dominion through the azure

fields of air? No, my boy, I think you can write a magazine article, and

turn a pretty copy of verses; that's what I think of you."

"By Jove!" said Pen, bouncing up and stamping his foot, "I'll show you

that I am a better man than you think for."

Warrington only laughed the more, and blew twenty-four puffs rapidly out

of his pipe by way of reply to Pen.

An opportunity for showing his skill presented itself before very

long. That eminent publisher, Mr. Bacon (formerly Bacon and Bungay) of

Paternoster Row, besides being the proprietor of the legal Review,

in which Mr. Warrington wrote, and of other periodicals of note and

gravity, used to present to the world every year a beautiful gilt volume

called the Spring Annual, edited by the Lady Violet Lebas, and numbering

amongst its contributors not only the most eminent, but the most

fashionable, poets of our time. Young Lord Dodo's poems first appeared

in this miscellany--the Honourable Percy Popjoy, whose chivalrous

ballads have obtained him such a reputation--Bedwin Sands's Eastern

Ghazuls, and many more of the works of our young nobles, were fast given

to the world in the Spring Annual, which has since shared the fate

of other vernal blossoms, and perished out of the world. The book was

daintily illustrated with pictures of reigning beauties, or other prints

of a tender and voluptuous character; and, as these plates were prepared

long beforehand, requiring much time in engraving, it was the eminent

poets who had to write to the plates, and not the painters who

illustrated the poems.

One day, just when this volume was on the eve of publication, it chanced

that Mr. Warrington called in Paternoster Row to talk with Mr. Hack, Mr.

Bacon's reader and general manager of publications--for Mr. Bacon, not

having the least taste in poetry or in literature of any kind, wisely

employed the services of a professional gentleman. Warrington, then,

going into Mr. Hack's room on business of his own, found that gentleman

with a bundle of proof plates and sheets of the Spring Annual before

him, and glanced at some of them.

Percy Popjoy had written some verses to illustrate one of the pictures,

which was called The Church Porch. A Spanish damsel was hastening to

church with a large prayer-book; a youth in a cloak was hidden in a

niche watching this young woman. The picture was pretty: but the great

genius of Percy Popjoy had deserted him, for he had made the most

execrable verses which ever were perpetrated by a young nobleman.

Warrington burst out laughing as he read the poem: and Mr. Hack laughed

too but with rather a rueful face.--"It won't do," he said, "the public

won't stand it. Bungay's people are going to bring out a very good book,

and have set up Miss Bunyan against Lady Violet. We have most titles to

be sure--but the verses are too bad. Lady Violet herself owns it; she's

busy with her own poem; what's to be done? We can't lose the plate. The

governor gave sixty pounds for it."

"I know a fellow who would do some verses, I think," said Warrington.

"Let me take the plate home in my pocket: and send to my chambers in the

morning for the verses. You'll pay well, of course."

"Of course," said Mr. Hack; and Warrington, having despatched his own

business, went home to Mr. Pen, plate in hand.

"Now, boy, here's a chance for you. Turn me off a copy of verses to

this."

"What's this? A Church Porch--A lady entering it, and a youth out of a

wine-shop window ogling her.--What the deuce am I to do with it?"

"Try," said Warrington. "Earn your livelihood for once, you who long so

to do it."

"Well, I will try," said Pen.

"And I'll go out to dinner," said Warrington, and left Mr. Pen in a

brown study.

When Warrington came home that night, at a very late hour, the verses

were done. "There they are," said Pen. "I've screwed 'em out at last. I

think they'll do."

"I think, they will," said Warrington, after reading them; they ran as

follows:--

The Church Porch

Although I enter not,

Yet round about the spot

Sometimes I hover,

And at the sacred gate,

With longing eyes I wait,

Expectant of her.

The Minster bell tolls out

Above the city's rout

And noise and humming

They've stopp'd the chiming bell,

I hear the organ's swell

She's coming, she's coming!

My lady comes at last,

Timid and stepping fast,

And hastening hither,

With modest eyes downcast.

She comes--she's here--she's past.

May Heaven go with her!

Kneel undisturb'd, fair saint,

Pour out your praise or plaint

Meekly and duly.

I will not enter there,

To sully your pure prayer

With thoughts unruly.

But suffer me to pace

Round the forbidden place,

Lingering a minute,

Like outcast spirits, who wait

And see through Heaven's gate

Angels within it.

"Have you got any more, young fellow?" asked Warrington. "We must make

them give you a couple of guineas a page; and if the verses are liked,

why, you'll get an entree into Bacon's magazines, and may turn a decent

penny."

Pen examined his portfolio and found another ballad which he thought

might figure with advantage in the Spring Annual, and consigning these

two precious documents to Warrington, the pair walked from the Temple

to the famous haunt of the Muses and their masters, Paternoster Row.

Bacon's shop was an ancient low-browed building, with a few of the books

published by the firm displayed in the windows, under a bust of my Lord

of Verulam, and the name of Mr. Bacon in brass on the private door.

Exactly opposite to Bacon's house was that of Mr. Bungay, which was

newly painted and elaborately decorated in the style of the seventeenth

century, so that you might have fancied stately Mr. Evelyn passing over

the threshold, or curious Mr. Pepys examining the books in the window.

Warrington went into the shop of Mr. Bacon, but Pen stayed without.

It was agreed that his ambassador should act for him entirely; and the

young fellow paced up and down the street in a very nervous condition,

until he should learn the result of the negotiation. Many a poor devil

before him has trodden those flags, with similar cares and anxieties

at his heels, his bread and his fame dependent upon the sentence of his

magnanimous patrons of the Row. Pen looked at all the wonders of all the

shops, and the strange variety of literature which they exhibit. In this

were displayed black-letter volumes and books in the clear pale types

of Aldus and Elzevir: in the next, you might see the Penny Horrific

Register; the Halfpenny Annals of Crime and History of the most

celebrated murderers of all countries, The Raff's Magazine, The Larky

Swell, and other publications of the penny press; whilst at the next

window, portraits of ill-favoured individuals, with fac-similes of the

venerated signatures of the Reverend Grimes Wapshot, the Reverend Elias

Howle, and the works written and the sermons preached by them, showed

the British Dissenter where he could find mental pabulum. Hard by would

be a little casement hung with emblems, with medals and rosaries

with little paltry prints of saints gilt and painted, and books of

controversial theology, by which the faithful of the Roman opinion

might learn a short way to deal with Protestants, at a penny apiece, or

ninepence the dozen for distribution; whilst in the very next window you

might see 'Come out of Rome,' a sermon preached at the opening of the

Shepherd's Bush College, by John Thomas Lord Bishop of Ealing. Scarce

an opinion but has its expositor and its place of exhibition in this

peaceful old Paternoster Row, under the toll of the bells of Saint Paul.

Pen looked in at all the windows and shops, as a gentleman who is

going to have an interview with the dentist examines the books on the

waiting-room table. He remembered them afterwards. It seemed to him that

Warrington would never come out; and indeed the latter was engaged for

some time in pleading his friend's cause.

Pen's natural conceit would have swollen immensely if he could but have

heard the report which Warrington gave of him. It happened that

Mr. Bacon himself had occasion to descend to Mr. Hack's room whilst

Warrington was talking there, and Warrington, knowing Bacon's

weaknesses, acted upon them with great adroitness in his friend's

behalf. In the first place, he put on his hat to speak to Bacon, and

addressed him from the table on which he seated himself. Bacon liked to

be treated with rudeness by a gentleman, and used to pass it on to his

inferiors as boys pass the mark. "What! not know Mr. Pendennis, Mr.

Bacon?" Warrington said. "You can't live much in the world, or you would

know him. A man of property in the West, of one of the most ancient

families in England, related to half the nobility in the empire--he's

cousin to Lord Pontypool--he was one of the most distinguished men at

Oxbridge; he dines at Gaunt House every week."

"Law bless me, you don't say so, sir. Well--really--Law bless me now,"

said Mr. Bacon.

"I have just been showing Mr. Hack some of his verses, which he sat up

last night, at my request, to write; and Hack talks about giving him a

copy of the book--the what-d'-you-call-'em."

"Law bless me now, does he? The what-d'-you-call-'em. Indeed!"

"'The Spring Annual' is its name,--as payment for those verses. You

don't suppose that such a man as Mr. Arthur Pendennis gives up a dinner

at Gaunt House for nothing? You know as well as anybody, that the men of

fashion want to be paid."

"That they do, Mr. Warrington, sir," said the publisher.

"I tell you he's a star; he'll make a name, sir. He's a new man, sir."

"They've said that of so many of those young swells, Mr. Warrington,"

the publisher interposed, with a sigh. "There was Lord Viscount Dodo,

now; I gave his Lordship a good bit of money for his poems, and only

sold eighty copies. Mr. Popjoy's Hadgincourt, sir, fell dead."

"Well, then, I'll take my man over to Bungay," Warrington said, and

rose from the table. This threat was too much for Mr. Bacon, who

was instantly ready to accede to any reasonable proposal of Mr.

Warrington's, and finally asked his manager what those proposals were?

When he heard that the negotiation only related as yet to a couple of

ballads, which Mr. Warrington offered for the Spring Annual, Mr. Bacon

said, "Law bless you, give him a check directly;" and with this paper

Warrington went out to his friend, and placed it, grinning, in Pen's

hands. Pen was as elated as if somebody had left him a fortune. He

offered Warrington a dinner at Richmond instantly. "What should he go

and buy for Laura and his mother? He must buy something for them."

"They'll like the book better than anything else," said Warrington,

"with the young one's name to the verses, printed among the swells."

"Thank God! thank God!" cried Arthur, "I needn't be a charge upon the

old mother. I can pay off Laura now. I can get my own living. I can make

my own way."

"I can marry the grand vizier's daughter: I can purchase a house in

Belgrave Square; I can build a fine castle in the air!" said Warrington,

pleased with the other's exultation. "Well, you may get bread and

cheese, Pen: and I own it tastes well, the bread which you earn

yourself."

They had a magnum of claret at dinner at the club that day, at Pen's

charges. It was long since he had indulged in such a luxury, but

Warrington would not baulk him: and they drank together to the health of

the Spring Annual.

It never rains but it pours, according to the proverb; so very speedily

another chance occurred, by which Mr. Pen was to be helped in his scheme

of making a livelihood. Warrington one day threw him a letter across

the table, which was brought by a printer's boy, "from Captain Shandon,

sir"--the little emissary said: and then went and fell asleep on his

accustomed bench in the passage. He paid many a subsequent visit there,

and brought many a message to Pen.

F. P. Tuesday Morning.

"MY DEAR SIR,--Bungay will be here to-day, about the Pall Mall

Gazette. You would be the very man to help us with a genuine West-end

article,--you understand--dashing, trenchant, and d---- aristocratic.

Lady Hipshaw will write; but she's not much you know, and we've two

lords; but the less they do the better. We must have you. We'll give you

your own terms, and we'll make a hit with the Gazette.

"Shall B. come and see you, or can you look in upon me here?--Ever

yours,

"C. S."

"Some more opposition," Warrington said, when Pen had read the note.

"Bungay and Bacon are at daggers drawn; each married the sister of the

other, and they were for some time the closest friends and partners.

Hack says it was Mrs. Bungay who caused all the mischief between the

two; whereas Shandon, who reads for Bungay a good deal, says Mrs. Bacon

did the business; but I don't know which is right, Peachum or Lockit.

But since they have separated, it is a furious war between the two

publishers; and no sooner does one bring out a book of travels, or

poems, a magazine or periodical, quarterly, or monthly, or weekly, or

annual, but the rival is in the field with something similar. I have

heard poor Shandon tell with great glee how he made Bungay give a grand

dinner at Blackwall to all his writers, by saying that Bacon had invited

his corps to an entertainment at Greenwich. When Bungay engaged your

celebrated friend Mr. Wagg to edit the 'Londoner,' Bacon straightway

rushed off and secured Mr. Grindle to give his name to the 'Westminster

Magazine.' When Bacon brought out his comic Irish novel of 'Barney

Brallaghan,' off went Bungay to Dublin, and produced his rollicking

Hibernian story of 'Looney MacTwolter.' When Doctor Hicks brought out

his 'Wanderings in Mesopotamia' under Bacon's auspices, Bungay produced

Professor Sandiman's 'Researches in Zahara;' and Bungay is publishing

his 'Pall Mall Gazette' as a counterpoise to Bacon's 'Whitehall Review.'

Let us go and hear about the 'Gazette.' There may be a place for you in

it, Pen, my boy. We will go and see Shandon. We are sure to find him at

home."

"Where does he live?" asked Pen.

"In the Fleet Prison," Warrington said. "And very much at home he is

there, too. He is the king of the place."

Pen had never seen this scene of London life, and walked with no small

interest in at the grim gate of that dismal edifice. They went through

the anteroom, where the officers and janitors of the place were seated,

and passing in at the wicket, entered the prison. The noise and the

crowd, the life and the shouting, the shabby bustle of the place, struck

and excited Pen. People moved about ceaselessly and restless, like caged

animals in a menagerie. Men were playing at fives. Others pacing and

tramping: this one in colloquy with his lawyer in dingy black--that one

walking sadly, with his wife by his side, and a child on his arm.

Some were arrayed in tattered dressing-gowns, and had a look of rakish

fashion. Everybody seemed to be busy, humming, and on the move. Pen felt

as if he choked in the place, and as if the door being locked upon him

they never would let him out.

They went through a court up a stone staircase, and through passages

full of people, and noise, and cross lights, and black doors clapping

and banging;--Pen feeling as one does in a feverish morning dream. At

last the same little runner who had brought Shandon's note, and had

followed them down Fleet Street munching apples, and who showed the way

to the two gentlemen through the prison, said, "This is the Captain's

door," and Mr. Shandon's voice from within bade them enter.

The room, though bare, was not uncheerful. The sun was shining in at the

window--near which sate a lady at work, who had been gay and beautiful

once, but in whose faded face kindness and tenderness still beamed.

Through all his errors and reckless mishaps and misfortunes, this

faithful creature adored her husband, and thought him the best and

cleverest, as indeed he was one of the kindest of men. Nothing ever

seemed to disturb the sweetness of his temper; not debts: not duns:

not misery: not the bottle, not his wife's unhappy position, or his

children's ruined chances. He was perfectly fond of wife and children

after his fashion: he always had the kindest words and smiles for them,

and ruined them with the utmost sweetness of temper. He never could

refuse himself or any man any enjoyment which his money could purchase;

he would share his last guinea with Jack and Tom, and we may be sure he

had a score of such retainers. He would sign his name at the back of

any man's bill, and never pay any debt of his own. He would write on any

side, and attack himself or another man with equal indifference. He

was one of the wittiest, the most amiable, and the most incorrigible of

Irishmen. Nobody could help liking Charley Shandon who saw him once, and

those whom he ruined could scarcely be angry with him.

When Pen and Warrington arrived, the Captain (he had been in an Irish

militia regiment once, and the title remained with him) was sitting on

his bed in a torn dressing-gown, with a desk on his knees, at which he

was scribbling as fast as his rapid pen could write. Slip after slip of

paper fell off the desk wet on to the ground. A picture of his children

was hung up over his bed, and the youngest of them was pattering about

the room.

Opposite the Captain sate Mr. Bungay, a portly man of stolid

countenance, with whom the little child had been trying a conversation.

"Papa's a very clever man," said she; "mamma says so."

"Oh, very," said Mr. Bungay.

"And you're a very rich man, Mr. Bundy," cried the child, who could

hardly speak plain.

"Mary!" said Mamma, from her work.

"Oh, never mind," Bungay roared out with a great laugh; "no harm in

saying I'm rich--he, he--I am pretty well off, my little dear."

"If you're rich, why don't you take papa out of piz'n?" asked the child.

Mamma at this began to wipe her eyes with the work on which she was

employed. (The poor lady had hung curtains up in the room, had brought

the children's picture and placed it there, and had made one or two

attempts to ornament it.) Mamma began to cry; Mr. Bungay turned red, and

looked fiercely out of his bloodshot little eyes; Shandon's pen went on,

and Pen and Warrington arrived with their knock.

Captain Shandon looked up from his work. "How do you do, Mr.

Warrington," he said. "I'll speak to you in a minute. Please sit down,

gentlemen, if you can find places," and away went the pen again.

Warrington pulled forward an old portmanteau--the only available

seat--and sate down on it, with a bow to Mrs. Shandon and a nod to

Bungay: the child came and looked at Pen solemnly and in a couple of

minutes the swift scribbling ceased; and Shandon, turning the desk over

on the bed, stooped and picked up the papers.

"I think this will do," said he. "It's the prospectus for the Pall Mall

Gazette."

"And here's the money for it," Mr. Bungay said, laying down a five-pound

note. "I'm as good as my word, I am. When I say I'll pay, I pay."

"Faith that's more than some of us can say," said Shandon, and he

eagerly clapped the note into his pocket.

CHAPTER XXXIII. Which is passed in the Neighbourhood of Ludgate Hill

Our imprisoned Captain announced, in smart and emphatic language in his

prospectus, that the time had come at last when it was necessary for the

gentlemen of England to band together in defence of their common rights

and their glorious order, menaced on all sides by foreign revolutions,

by intestine radicalism, by the artful calumnies of mill-owners and

cotton-lords, and the stupid hostility of the masses whom they gulled

and led. "The ancient monarchy was insulted," the Captain said, "by a

ferocious republican rabble. The Church was deserted by envious dissent,

and undermined by stealthy infidelity. The good institutions, which

had made our country glorious, and the name of English Gentleman the

proudest in the world, were left without defence, and exposed to

assault and contumely from men to whom no sanctuary was sacred, for

they believed in nothing holy; no history venerable, for they were too

ignorant to have heard of the past; and no law was binding which they

were strong enough to break, when their leaders gave the signal for

plunder. It was because the kings of France mistrusted their gentlemen,"

Mr. Shandon remarked, "that the monarchy of Saint Louis went down: it

was because the people of England still believed in their gentlemen,

that this country encountered and overcame the greatest enemy a nation

ever met: it was because we were headed by gentlemen, that the Eagles

retreated before us from the Donro to the Garonne: it was a gentleman

who broke the line at Trafalgar, and swept the plain of Waterloo."

Bungay nodded his head in a knowing manner, and winked his eyes when the

Captain came to the Waterloo passage: and Warrington burst out laughing.

"You see how our venerable friend Bungay is affected," Shandon said,

slily looking up from his papers--"that's your true sort of test. I have

used the Duke of Wellington and the battle of Waterloo a hundred times,

and I never knew the Duke to fail."

The Captain then went on to confess, with much candour, that up to the

present time the gentlemen of England, confident of their right, and

careless of those who questioned it, had left the political interest

of their order as they did the management of their estates, or the

settlement of their legal affairs, to persons affected to each peculiar

service, and had permitted their interests to be represented in

the press by professional proctors and advocates. That time Shandon

professed to consider was now gone by: the gentlemen of England must

be their own champions: the declared enemies of their order were brave,

strong, numerous, and uncompromising. They must meet their foes in the

field: they must not be belied and misrepresented by hireling advocates:

they must not have Grub Street publishing Gazettes from Whitehall;

"that's a dig at Bacon's people, Mr. Bungay," said Shandon, turning

round to the publisher. Bungay clapped his stick on the floor. "Hang

him, pitch into him, Capting," he said with exultation: and turning to

Warrington, wagged his dull head more vehemently than ever, and said,

"For a slashing article, sir, there's nobody like the Capting--no-obody

like him."

The prospectus-writer went on to say that some gentlemen, whose names

were, for obvious reasons, not brought before the public (at which Mr.

Warrington began to laugh again), had determined to bring forward a

journal, of which the principles were so-and-so. "These men are proud

of their order, and anxious to uphold it," cried out Captain Shandon,

flourishing his paper with a grin. "They are loyal to their Sovereign,

by faithful conviction and ancestral allegiance; they love their Church,

where they would have their children worship, and for which their

forefathers bled; they love their country, and would keep it what the

gentlemen of England--yes, the gentlemen of England (we'll have that in

large caps, Bungay, my boy) have made it--the greatest and freest in the

world: and as the names of some of them are appended to the deed which

secured our liberties at Runnymede--"

"What's that?" asked Mr. Bungay.

"An ancestor of mine sealed it with his sword-hilt," Pen said, with

great gravity.

"It's the Habeas Corpus, Mr. Bungay," Warrington said, on which the

publisher answered, "All right, I dare say," and yawned, though he said,

"Go on, Capting."

"--at Runnymede; they are ready to defend that freedom to-day with sword

and pen, and now, as then, to rally round the old laws and liberties of

England."

"Bravo!" cried Warrington. The little child stood wondering; the lady

was working silently, and looking with fond admiration. "Come here,

little Mary," said Warrington, and patted the child's fair curls with

his large hand. But she shrank back from his rough caress, and preferred

to go and take refuge at Pen's knee, and play with his fine watch-chain:

and Pen was very much pleased that she came to him; for he was very

soft-hearted and simple, though he concealed his gentleness under a shy

and pompous demeanour. So she clambered up on his lap, whilst her father

continued to read his programme.

"You were laughing," the Captain said to Warrington, "about 'the

obvious reasons' which I mentioned. Now, I'll show ye what they are, ye

unbelieving heathen. 'We have said,'" he went on, "'that we cannot give

the names of the parties engaged in this undertaking, and that there

were obvious reasons for that concealment. We number influential

friends in both Houses of the Senate, and have secured allies in every

diplomatic circle in Europe. Our sources of intelligence are such as

cannot, by any possibility, be made public--and, indeed, such as no

other London or European journal could, by any chance, acquire. But this

we are free to say, that the very earliest information connected with

the movement of English and Continental politics will be found only in

the columns of the Pall Mall Gazette, The Statesman and the Capitalist,

the Country Gentleman and the Divine, will be amongst our readers,

because our writers are amongst them. We address ourselves to the higher

circles of society: we care not to disown it--the Pall Mall Gazette is

written by gentlemen for gentlemen; its conductors speak to the classes

in which they live and were born. The field-preacher has his journal,

the radical free-thinker has his journal: why should the Gentlemen of

England be unrepresented in the Press?'"

Mr. Shandon then went on with much modesty to descant upon the literary

and fashionable departments of the Pall Mall Gazette, which were to be

conducted by gentlemen of acknowledged reputation; men famous at the

Universities (at which Mr Pendennis could scarcely help laughing and

blushing), known at the Clubs, and of the Society which they described.

He pointed out delicately to advertisers that there would be no such

medium as the Pall Mall Gazette for giving publicity to their sales;

and he eloquently called upon the nobility of England, the baronetage of

England, the revered clergy of England, the bar of England, the matrons,

the daughters, the homes and hearths of England, to rally round the good

old cause; and Bungay at the conclusion of the reading woke up from a

second snooze in which he had indulged himself, and again said it was

all right.

The reading of the prospectus concluded, the gentlemen present entered

into some details regarding the political and literary management of the

paper, and Mr. Bungay sate by listening and nodding his head, as if he

understood what was the subject of their conversation, and approved

of their opinions. Bungay's opinions, in truth, were pretty simple. He

thought the Captain could write the best smashing article in England.

He wanted the opposition house of Bacon smashed, and it was his opinion

that the Captain could do that business. If the Captain had written a

letter of Junius on a sheet of paper, or copied a part of the Church

Catechism, Mr. Bungay would have been perfectly contented, and have

considered that the article was a smashing article. And he pocketed the

papers with the greatest satisfaction: and he not only paid for the MS.,

as we have seen, but he called little Mary to him, and gave her a penny

as he went away.

The reading of the manuscript over, the party engaged in general

conversation, Shandon leading with a jaunty fashionable air in

compliment to the two guests who sate with him and, and who, by their

appearance and manner, he presumed to be persons of the beau monde. He

knew very little indeed of the great world, but he had seen it, and made

the most of what he had seen. He spoke of the characters of the day,

and great personages of the fashion, with easy familiarity and jocular

allusions, as if it had been his habit to live amongst them. He told

anecdotes of their private life, and of conversations he had had, and

entertainments at which he had been present, and at which such and

such a thing occurred. Pen was amused to hear the shabby prisoner in a

tattered dressing-gown talking glibly about the great of the land. Mrs.

Shandon was always delighted when her husband told these tales, and

believed in them fondly every one. She did not want to mingle in the

fashionable world herself, she was not clever enough; but the great

Society was the very place for her Charles: he shone in it: he was

respected in it. Indeed, Shandon had once been asked to dinner by the

Earl of X; his wife treasured the invitation-card in her workbox at that

very day.

Mr. Bungay presently had enough of this talk and got up to take leave,

whereupon Warrington and Pen rose to depart with the publisher, though

the latter would have liked to stay to make a further acquaintance with

this family, who interested him and touched him. He said something about

hoping for permission to repeat his visit, upon which Shandon, with

a rueful grin, said he was always to be found at home, and should be

delighted to see Mr. Pennington.

"I'll see you to my park-gate, gentlemen," said Captain Shandon, seizing

his hat, in spite of a deprecatory look and a faint cry of "Charles"

from Mrs. Shandon. And the Captain, in shabby slippers, shuffled out

before his guests, leading the way through the dismal passages of the

prison. His hand was already fiddling with his waistcoat pocket, where

Bungay's five-pound note was, as he took leave of the three gentlemen

at the wicket; one of them, Mr. Arthur Pendennis, being greatly relieved

when he was out of the horrid place, and again freely treading the flags

of Farringdon Street.

Mrs. Shandon sadly went on with her work at the window looking into the

court. She saw Shandon with a couple of men at his heels run rapidly

in the direction of the prison tavern. She had hoped to have had him to

dinner herself that day: there was a piece of meat, and some salad in

a basin, on the ledge outside of the window of their room which she had

expected that she and little Mary were to share with the child's father.

But there was no chance of that now. He would be in that tavern until

the hours for closing it; then he would go and play at cards or drink in

some other man's room and come back silent, with glazed eyes, reeling a

little on his walk, that his wife might nurse him. Oh, what varieties of

pain do we not make our women suffer!

So Mrs. Shandon went to the cupboard, and, in lieu of a dinner, made

herself some tea. And in those varieties of pain of which we spoke anon,

what a part of confidante has that poor tea-pot played ever since the

kindly plant was introduced among us! What myriads of women have cried

over it, to be sure! What sick-beds it has smoked by! What fevered lips

have received refreshment from out of it! Nature meant very gently by

women when she made that tea-plant; and with a little thought what a

series of pictures and groups the fancy may conjure up and assemble

round the tea-pot and cup! Melissa and Sacharissa are talking

love-secrets over it. Poor Polly has it and her lover's letters upon

the table; his letters who was her lover yesterday, and when it was with

pleasure, not despair, she wept over them. Mary tripping noiselessly

comes into her mother's bedroom, bearing a cup of the consoler to the

widow who will take no other food, Ruth is busy concocting it for her

husband, who is coming home from the harvest-field--one could fill a

page with hints for such pictures;--finally, Mrs. Shandon and little

Mary sit down and drink their tea together, while the Captain goes out

and takes his pleasure. She cares for nothing else but that, when her

husband is away.

A gentleman with whom we are already slightly acquainted, Mr. Jack

Finucane, a townsman of Captain Shandon's, found the Captain's wife and

little Mary (for whom Jack always brought a sweetmeat in his pocket)

over this meal. Jack thought Shandon the greatest of created geniuses,

had had one or two helps from the good-natured prodigal, who had always

a kind word, and sometimes a guinea for any friend in need; and never

missed a day in seeing his patron. He was ready to run Shandon's errands

and transact his money-business with publishers and newspaper editors,

duns, creditors, holders of Shandon's acceptances, gentlemen disposed

to speculate in those securities, and to transact the thousand little

affairs of an embarrassed Irish gentleman. I never knew an embarrassed

Irish gentleman yet, but he had an aide-de-camp of his own nation,

likewise in circumstances of pecuniary discomfort. That aide-de-camp

has subordinates of his own, who again may have other insolvent

dependents--all through his life our Captain marched at the head of a

ragged staff, who shared in the rough fortunes of their chieftain.

"He won't have that five-pound note very long, I bet a guinea," Mr.

Bungay said of the Captain, as he and his two companions walked away

from the prison; and the publisher judged rightly, for when Mrs.

Shandon came to empty her husband's pockets, she found but a couple of

shillings, and a few halfpence out of the morning's remittance. Shandon

had given a pound to one follower; had sent a leg of mutton and potatoes

and beer to an acquaintance in the poor side of the prison; had paid an

outstanding bill at the tavern where he had changed his five-pound

note; had had a dinner with two friends there, to whom he lost sundry

half-crowns at cards afterwards; so that the night left him as poor as

the morning had found him.

The publisher and the two gentlemen had had some talk together after

quitting Shandon, and Warrington reiterated to Bungay what he had said

to his rival, Bacon, viz., that Pen was a high fellow, of great genius,

and what was more, well with the great world, and related to "no end"

of the peerage. Bungay replied that he should be happy to have dealings

with Mr. Pendennis, and hoped to have the pleasure of seeing both gents

to cut mutton with him before long, and so, with mutual politeness and

protestations, they parted.

"It is hard to see such a man as Shandon," Pen said, musing, and talking

that night over the sight which he had witnessed, "of accomplishments so

multifarious, and of such an undoubted talent and humour, an inmate of

a gaol for half his time, and a bookseller's hanger-on when out of

prison."

"I am a bookseller's hanger-on--you are going to try your paces as a

hack," Warrington said with a laugh. "We are all hacks upon some road or

other. I would rather be myself, than Paley our neighbour in chambers:

who has as much enjoyment of his life as a mole. A deuced deal of

undeserved compassion has been thrown away upon what you call your

bookseller's drudge."

"Much solitary pipes and ale make a cynic of you," said Pen "You are a

Diogenes by a beer-barrel, Warrington. No man shall tell me that a

man of genius, as Shandon is, ought to be driven by such a vulgar

slave-driver, as yonder Mr. Bungay, whom we have just left, who fattens

on the profits of the other's brains, and enriches himself out of his

journeyman's labour. It makes me indignant to see a gentleman the serf

of such a creature as that, of a man who can't speak the language that

he lives by, who is not fit to black Shandon's boots."

"So you have begun already to gird at the publishers, and to take your

side amongst our order. Bravo, Pen, my be boy!" Warrington answered,

laughing still. "What have you got to say against Bungay's relations

with Shandon? Was it the publisher, think you, who sent the author to

prison? Is it Bungay who is tippling away the five-pound note which we

saw just now, or Shandon?"

"Misfortune drives a man into bad company," Pen said. "It is easy to cry

'Fie!' against a poor fellow who has no society but such as he finds in

a prison; and no resource except forgetfulness and the bottle. We must

deal kindly with the eccentricities of genius, and remember that

the very ardour and enthusiasm of temperament which makes the author

delightful often leads the man astray."

"A fiddlestick about men of genius!" Warrington cried out, who was

a very severe moralist upon some points, though possibly a very had

practitioner. "I deny that there are so many geniuses as people who

whimper about the fate of men of letters assert there are. There are

thousands of clever fellows in the world who could, if they would, turn

verses, write articles, read books, and deliver a judgment upon

them; the talk of professional critics and writers is not a whit more

brilliant, or profound, or amusing, than that of any other society of

educated people. If a lawyer, or a soldier, or a parson, outruns his

income, and does not pay his bills, he must go to gaol; and an author

must go, too. If an author fuddles himself, I don't know why he should

be let off a headache the next morning,--if he orders a coat from the

tailor's, why he shouldn't pay for it."

"I would give him more money to buy coats," said Pen, smiling. "I suppose

I should like to belong to a well-dressed profession. I protest against

that wretch of a middle-man whom I see between Genius and his great

landlord, the Public, and who stops more than half of the labourer's

earnings and fame."

"I am a prose labourer," Warrington said; "you, my boy, are a poet in a

small way, and so, I suppose, consider you are authorised to be flighty.

What is it you want? Do you want a body of capitalists that shall be

forced to purchase the works of all authors, who may present themselves,

manuscript in hand? Everybody who writes his epic, every driveller who

can or can't spell, and produces his novel or his tragedy,--are they

all to come and find a bag of sovereigns in exchange for their worthless

reams of paper? Who is to settle what is good or bad, saleable or

otherwise? Will you give the buyer leave, in fine, to purchase or not?

Why, sir, when Johnson sate behind the screen at Saint John's Gate, and

took his dinner apart, because he was too shabby and poor to join the

literary bigwigs who were regaling themselves, round Mr. Cave's best

table-cloth, the tradesman was doing him no wrong. You couldn't force

the publisher to recognise the man of genius in the young man who

presented himself before him, ragged, gaunt, and hungry. Rags are not

a proof of genius; whereas capital is absolute, as times go, and is

perforce the bargain-master. It has a right to deal with the literary

inventor as with any other;--if I produce a novelty in the book trade,

I must do the best I can with it; but I can no more force Mr. Murray to

purchase my book of travels or sermons, than I can compel Mr. Tattersall

to give me a hundred guineas for my horse. I may have my own ideas of

the value of my Pegasus, and think him the most wonderful of animals;

but the dealer has a right to his opinion, too, and may want a lady's

horse, or a cob for a heavy timid rider, or a sound hack for the road,

and my beast won't suit him."

"You deal in metaphors, Warrington," Pen said; "but you rightly say

that you are very prosaic. Poor Shandon! There is something about the

kindness of that man, and the gentleness of that sweet creature of a

wife, which touches me profoundly. I like him, I am afraid, better than

a better man."

"And so do I," Warrington said. "Let us give him the benefit of our

sympathy, and the pity that is due to his weakness: though I fear that

sort of kindness would be resented as contempt by a more high-minded

man. You see he takes his consolation along with his misfortune, and

one generates the other or balances ii, as the way of the world. He is a

prisoner, but he is not unhappy."

"His genius sings within his prison bars," Pen said.

"Yes," Warrington said, bitterly; "Shandon accommodates himself to a

cage pretty well. He ought to be wretched, but he has Jack and Tom to

drink with, and that consoles him: he might have a high place, but, as

he can't, why, he can drink with Tom and Jack;--he might be providing

for his wife and children, but Thomas and John have got a bottle of

brandy which they want him to taste;--he might pay poor Snip, the

tailor, the twenty pounds which the poor devil wants for his landlord,

but John and Thomas lay their hands upon his purse;--and so he drinks

whilst his tradesman goes to gaol and his family to ruin. Let us pity

the misfortunes of genius, and conspire against the publishing tyrants

who oppress men of letters."

"What! are you going to have another glass of brandy-and-water?" Pen

said, with a humorous look. It was at the Black Kitchen that the above

philosophical conversation took place between the two young men.

Warrington began to laugh as usual. "Video meliora proboque--I mean,

bring it me hot, with sugar, John," he said to waiter.

"I would have some more, too, only I don't want it," said Pen. "It

does not seem to me, Warrington, that we are much better than our

neighbours." And Warrington's last glass having been despatched, the

pair returned to their chambers.

They found a couple of notes in the letter-box, on their return, which

had been sent by their acquaintance of the morning, Mr. Bungay. That

hospitable gentleman presented his compliments to each of the gentlemen,

and requested their pleasure of company at dinner on an early day, to

meet a few literary friends.

"We shall have a grand spread, Warrington. We shall meet all Bungay's

corps."

"All except poor Shandon," said Pen, nodding a good-night to his friend,

and he went into his own little room. The events and acquaintances of

the day had excited him a good deal, and he lay for some time awake

thinking over them, as Warrington's vigorous and regular snore from the

neighbouring apartment pronounced that that gentleman was engaged in

deep slumber.

Is it true, thought Pendennis, lying on his bed and gazing at a bright

moon without, that lighted up a corner of his dressing-table, and the

frame of a little sketch of Fairoaks drawn by Laura, and hung over his

drawers--is it true that I am going to earn my bread at last, and with

my pen? that I shall impoverish the dear mother no longer; and that I

may gain a name and reputation in the world, perhaps? These are welcome

if they come, thought the young visionary, laughing and blushing to

himself, though alone and in the night, as he thought how dearly he

would relish honour and fame if they could be his. If fortune favours

me, I laud her; if she frowns, I resign her. I pray Heaven I may be

honest if I fail, or if I succeed. I pray Heaven I may tell the truth

as far as I know it: that I mayn't swerve from it through flattery, or

interest, or personal enmity, or party prejudice. Dearest old mother,

what a pride will you have, if I can do anything worthy of our name

I and you, Laura, you won't scorn me as the worthless idler and

spendthrift, when you see that I--when I have achieved a--psha! what

an Alnaschar I am because I have made five pounds by my poems, and am

engaged to write half a dozen articles for a newspaper. He went on with

these musings, more happy and hopeful, and in a humbler frame of mind,

than he had felt to be for many a day. He thought over the errors and

idleness, the passions, extravagances, disappointments, of his wayward

youth: he got up from the bed: threw open the window, and looked out

into the night: and then, by some impulse, which we hope was a good one,

he went up and kissed the picture of Fairoaks, and flinging himself down

on his knees by the bed, remained for some time in that posture of hope

and submission. When he rose, it was with streaming eyes. He had found

himself repeating, mechanically, some little words which he had been

accustomed to repeat as a child at his mother's side, after the saying

of which she would softly take him to his bed and close the curtains

round him, hushing him with a benediction.

The next day, Mr. Pidgeon, their attendant, brought in a large

brown-paper parcel, directed to G. Warrington, Esq., with Mr. Trotter's

compliments, and a note which Warrington read.

"Pen, you beggar!" roared Warrington to Pen, who was in his own room.

"Hullo!" sung out Pen.

"Come here, you're wanted," cried the other, and Pen came out.

"What is it?" said he.

"Catch!" cried Warrington, and flung the parcel at Pen's head, who would

have been knocked down had he not caught it.

"It's books for review for the Pall Mall Gazette: pitch into 'em,"

Warrington said. As for Pen, he never had been so delighted in his life:

his hand trembled as he cut the string of the packet, and beheld within

a smart set of new neat calico-bound books--travels, and novels, and

poems.

"Sport the oak, Pidgeon," said he. "I'm not at home to anybody to-day."

And he flung into his easy-chair, and hardly gave himself time to drink

his tea, so eager was he to begin to read and to review.

CHAPTER XXXIV. In which the History still hovers about Fleet Street

Captain Shandon, urged on by his wife, who seldom meddled in business

matters, had stipulated that John Finucane, Esquire, of the Upper

Temple, should be appointed sub-editor of forthcoming Pall Mall Gazette,

and this post was accordingly conferred upon Mr. Finucane by the

spirited proprietor of the Journal. Indeed he deserved any kindness at

the hands of Shandon, so fondly attached was he, as we have said, to

the Captain and his family, and so eager to do him a service. It was in

Finucane's chambers that Shandon in former days used to hide when danger

was near and bailiffs abroad: until at length his hiding-place was

known, and the sheriff's officers came as regularly to wait for the

Captain on Finucane's staircase as at his own door. It was to Finucane's

chambers that poor Mrs. Shandon came often and often to explain her

troubles and griefs, and devise means of rescue for her adored Captain.

Many a meal did Finucane furnish for her and the child there. It was an

honour to his little rooms to be visited by such a lady; and as she went

down the staircase with her veil over her face, Fin would lean over the

balustrade looking after her, to see that no Temple Lovelace assailed

her upon the road, perhaps hoping that some rogue might be induced to

waylay her, so that he, Fin, might have the pleasure of rushing to her

rescue, and breaking the rascal's bones. It was a sincere pleasure to

Mrs. Shandon when the arrangements were made by which her kind honest

champion was appointed her husband's aide-de-camp in the newspaper.

He would have sate with Mrs. Shandon as late as the prison hours

permitted, and had indeed many a time witnessed the putting to bed

of little Mary, who occupied a crib in the room; and to whose evening

prayers that God might bless papa, Finucane, although of the Romish

faith himself, had said Amen with a great deal of sympathy--but he had

an appointment with Mr. Bungay regarding the affairs of the paper which

they were to discuss over a quiet dinner. So he went away at six o'clock

from Mrs. Shandon, but made his accustomed appearance at the Fleet

Prison next morning, having arrayed himself in his best clothes and

ornaments, which, though cheap as to cost, were very brilliant as

to colour and appearance, and having in his pocket four pounds two

shillings, being the amount of his week's salary at the Daily Journal,

minus two shillings expended by him in the purchase of a pair of gloves

on his way to the prison.

He had cut his mutton with Mr. Bungay, as the latter gentleman phrased

it, and Mr. Trotter, Bungay's reader and literary man of business, at

Dick's Coffee-house on the previous day, and entered at large into his

views respecting the conduct of the Pall Mall Gazette. In a masterly

manner he had pointed out what should be the sub-editorial arrangements

of the paper: what should be the type for the various articles: who

should report the markets; who the turf and ring; who the Church

intelligence; and who the fashionable chit-chat. He was acquainted with

gentlemen engaged in cultivating these various departments of knowledge,

and in communicating them afterwards to the public--in fine, Jack

Finucane was, as Shandon had said of him, and as he proudly owned

himself to be, one of the best sub-editors of a paper in London. He knew

the weekly earnings of every man connected with the Press, and was up

to a thousand dodges, or ingenious economic contrivances, by which

money could be saved to spirited capitalists, who were going to set up

a paper. He at once dazzled and mystified Mr. Bungay, who was slow of

comprehension, by the rapidity of the calculations which he exhibited

on paper, as they sate in the box. And Bungay afterwards owned to his

subordinate Mr. Trotter, that that Irishman seemed a clever fellow.

And now having succeeded in making this impression upon Mr. Bungay,

the faithful fellow worked round to the point which he had very near at

heart, viz., the liberation from prison of his admired friend and chief,

Captain Shandon. He knew to a shilling the amount of the detainers

which were against the Captain at the porter's lodge of the Fleet; and,

indeed, professed to know all his debts, though this was impossible,

for no man in England, certainly not the Captain himself, was acquainted

with them. He pointed out what Shandon's engagements already were; and

how much better he would work if removed from confinement (though this

Mr. Bungay denied, for, "when the Captain's locked up," he said, "we are

sure to find him at home; whereas, when he's free, you can never catch

hold of him"); finally, he so worked on Mr. Bungay's feelings, by

describing Mrs. Shandon pining away in the prison, and the child

sickening there, that the publisher was induced to promise that, if Mrs.

Shandon would come to him in the morning, he would see what could be

done. And the colloquy ending at this time with the second round of

brandy-and-water, although Finucane, who had four guineas in his pocket,

would have discharged the tavern reckoning with delight, Bungay said,

"No, sir,--this is my affair, sir, if you please. James, take the bill,

and eighteenpence for yourself," and he handed over the necessary funds

to the waiter. Thus it was that Finucane, who went to bed at the Temple

after the dinner at Dick's, found himself actually with his week's

salary intact upon Saturday morning.

He gave Mrs. Shandon a wink so knowing and joyful, that that kind

creature knew some good news was in store for her, and hastened to get

her bonnet and shawl, when Fin asked if he might have the honour of

taking her a walk, and giving her a little fresh air. And little Mary

jumped for joy at the idea of this holiday, for Finucane never neglected

to give her a toy, or to take her to a show, and brought newspaper

orders in his pocket for all sorts of London diversions to amuse the

child. Indeed, he loved them with all his heart, and would cheerfully

have dashed out his rambling brains to do them, or his adored Captain, a

service.

"May I go, Charley? or shall I stay with you, for you're poorly,

dear, this morning? He's got a headache, Mr. Finucane. He suffers from

headaches, and I persuaded him to stay in bed," Mrs. Shandon said.

"Go along with you, and Polly. Jack, take care of 'em. Hand me over the

Burton's Anatomy, and leave me to my abominable devices," Shandon said,

with perfect good-humour. He was writing, and not uncommonly took his

Greek and Latin quotations (of which he knew the use as a public writer)

from that wonderful repertory of learning.

So Fin gave his arm to Mrs. Shandon, and Mary went skipping down the

passages of the prison, and through the gate into the free air. From

Fleet Street to Paternoster Row is not very far. As the three reached

Mr. Bungay's shop, Mrs. Bungay was also entering at the private door,

holding in her hand a paper parcel and a manuscript volume bound in red,

and, indeed, containing an account of her transactions with the butcher

in the neighbouring market. Mrs. Bungay was in a gorgeous shot-silk

dress, which flamed with red and purple; she wore a yellow shawl, and

had red flowers inside her bonnet, and a brilliant light blue parasol.

Mrs. Shandon was in an old black watered silk; her bonnet had never seen

very brilliant days of prosperity any more than its owner, but she could

not help looking like a lady whatever her attire was. The two women

curtsied to each other, each according to her fashion.

"I hope you're pretty well, mum?" said Mrs. Bungay.

"It's a very fine day," said Mrs. Shandon.

"Won't you step in, mum?" said Mrs. Bungay, looking so hard at the child

as almost to frighten her.

"I--I came about business with Mr. Bungay--I--I hope he's pretty well?"

said timid Mrs. Shandon.

"If you go to see him in the counting-house, couldn't you, couldn't you

leave your little gurl with me?" said Mrs. Bungay, in a deep voice, and

with a tragic look, as she held out one finger towards the child.

"I want to stay with mamma," cried little Mary, burying her face in her

mother's dress.

"Go with this lady, Mary, my dear," said the mother.

"I'll show you some pretty pictures," said Mrs. Bungay, with the voice

of an ogress, "and some nice things besides; look here,"--and opening

her brown-paper parcel, Mrs. Bungay displayed some choice sweet

buscuits, such as her Bungay loved after his wine. Little Mary followed

after this attraction, the whole party entering at the private entrance,

from which a side door led into Mr. Bungay's commercial apartments.

Here, however, as the child was about to part from her mother, her

courage again failed her, and again she ran to the maternal petticoat;

upon which the kind and gentle Mrs. Shandon, seeing the look of

disappointment in Mrs. Bungay's face, good-naturedly said, "If you will

let me, I will come up too, and sit for a few minutes," and so the three

females ascended the stairs together. A second biscuit charmed little

Mary into perfect confidence, and in a minute or two she prattled away

without the least restraint.

Faithful Finucane meanwhile found Mr. Bungay in a severer mood than he

had been on the night previous, when two-thirds of a bottle of port,

and two large glasses of brandy-and-water, had warmed his soul into

enthusiasm, and made him generous in his promises towards Captain

Shandon. His impetuous wife had rebuked him on his return home. She

had ordered that he should give no relief to the Captain; he was a

good-for-nothing fellow, whom no money would help; she disapproved of

the plan of the Pall Mall Gazette, and expected that Bungay would only

lose his money in it as they were losing over the way (she always called

her brother's establishment "over the way") by the Whitehall Journal.

Let Shandon stop in prison and do his work; it was the best place for

him. In vain Finucane pleaded and promised and implored, for his friend

Bungay had had an hour's lecture in the morning and was inexorable.

But what honest Jack failed to do below-stairs in the counting-house,

the pretty faces and manners of the mother and child were effecting in

the drawing-room, where they were melting the fierce but really soft

Mrs. Bungay. There was an artless sweetness in Mrs. Shandon's voice, and

a winning frankness of manner, which made most people fond of her,

and pity her: and taking courage by the rugged kindness with which her

hostess received her, the Captain's lady told her story, and described

her husband's goodness and virtues, and her child's failing health (she

was obliged to part with two of them, she said, and send them to school,

for she could not have them in that horrid place)--that Mrs. Bungay,

though as grim as Lady Macbeth, melted under the influence of the

simple tale, and said she would go down and speak to Bungay. Now in this

household to speak was to command, with Mrs. Bungay; and with Bungay, to

hear was to obey.

It was just when poor Finucane was in despair about his negotiation,

that the majestic Mrs. Bungay descended upon her spouse, politely

requested Mr. Finucane to step up to his friends in her drawing-room,

while she held a few minutes' conversation with Mr. B., and when

the pair were alone the publisher's better half informed him of her

intentions towards the Captain's lady.

"What's in the wind now, my dear?" Maecenas asked, surprised at his

wife's altered tone. "You wouldn't hear of my doing anything for the

Captain this morning: I wonder what has been a changing of you.

"The Capting is an Irishman," Mrs. Bungay replied; "and those Irish I

have always said I couldn't abide. But his wife is a lady, as any one

can see; and a good woman, and a clergyman's daughter, and a West

of England woman, B., which I am myself, by my mother's side--and, O

Marmaduke! didn't you remark the little gurl?"

"Yes, Mrs. B., I saw the little girl."

"And didn't you see how like she was to our angel, Bessy, Mr. B.?"--and

Mrs. Bungay's thoughts flew back to a period eighteen years back, when

Bacon and Bungay had just set up in business as small booksellers in a

country town, and when she had had a child, named Bessy, something like

the little Mary who had moved her compassion.

"Well, well, my dear," Mr. Bungay said, seeing the little eyes of his

wife begin to twinkle and grow red; "the Captain ain't in for much.

There's only a hundred and thirty pound against him. Half the money

will take him out of the Fleet, Finucane says, and we'll pay him half

salaries till he has made the account square. When the little 'un said,

'Why don't you take Par out of prizn?' I did feel it, Flora, upon my

honour I did, now." And the upshot of this conversation was, that Mr.

and Mrs. Bungay both ascended to the drawing-room, and Mr. Bungay made

a heavy and clumsy speech, in which he announced to Mrs. Shandon, that,

hearing sixty-five pounds would set her husband free, he was ready to

advance that sum of money, deducting it from the Captain's salary, and

that he would give it to her on condition that she would personally

settle with the creditors regarding her husband's liberation.

I think this was the happiest day that Mrs. Shandon and Mr. Finucane had

had for a long time. "Bedad, Bungay, you're a trump!" roared out Fin,

in an overpowering brogue and emotion. "Give us your fist, old boy: and

won't we send the Pall Mall Gazette up to ten thousand a week, that's

all!" and he jumped about the room, and tossed up little Mary, with a

hundred frantic antics.

"If I could drive you anywhere in my carriage, Mrs. Shandon--I'm

sure it's quite at your service," Mrs. Bungay said, looking out at a

one-horsed vehicle which had just driven up, and in which this lady took

the air considerably--and the two ladies, with little Mary between them

(whose tiny hand Maecenas's wife kept fixed in her great grasp), with

the delighted Mr. Finucane on the back seat, drove away from Paternoster

Row, as the owner of the vehicle threw triumphant glances at the

opposite windows at Bacon's.

"It won't do the Captain any good," thought Bungay, going back to his

desk and accounts, "but Mrs. B. becomes reglar upset when she thinks

about her misfortune. The child would have been of age yesterday, if

she'd lived. Flora told me so:" and he wondered how women did remember

things.

We are happy to say that Mrs. Shandon sped with very good success upon

her errand. She who had had to mollify creditors when she had no money

at all, and only tears and entreaties wherewith to soothe them, found no

difficulty in making them relent by means of a bribe of ten shillings

in the pound; and the next Sunday was the last, for some time at least,

which the Captain spent in prison.

CHAPTER XXXV. Dinner in the Row

Upon the appointed day our two friends made their appearance at Mr.

Bungay's door in Paternoster Row; not the public entrance through which

booksellers' boys issued with their sacks full of Bungay's volumes,

and around which timid aspirants lingered with their virgin manuscripts

ready for sale to Sultan Bungay, but at the private door of the house,

whence the splendid Mrs. Bungay would come forth to step into her chaise

and take her drive, settling herself on the cushions, and casting looks

of defiance at Mrs. Bacon's opposite windows--at Mrs. Bacon, who was as

yet a chaiseless woman.

On such occasions, when very much wroth at her sister-in-law's splendour

Mrs. Bacon would fling up the sash of her drawing-room window, and look

out with her four children at the chaise, as much as to say, "Look

at these four darlings. Flora Bungay! this is why I can't drive in my

carriage; you would give a coach-and-four to have the same reason." And

it was with these arrows out of her quiver that Emma Bacon shot Flora

Bungay as she sate in her chariot envious and childless.

As Pen and Warrington came to Bungay's door, a carriage and a cab drove

up to Bacon's. Old Dr. Slocum descended heavily from the first; the

Doctor's equipage was as ponderous as his style, but both had a fine

sonorous effect upon the publishers in the Row. A couple of dazzling

white waistcoats stepped out of the cab.

Warrington laughed. "You see Bacon has his dinner-party too. That is

Dr. Slocum, author of 'Memoirs of the Poisoners.' You would hardly have

recognised our friend Hoolan in that gallant white waistcoat. Doolan is

one of Bungay's men, and faith, here he comes." Indeed, Messrs. Hoolan

and Doolan had come from the Strand in the same cab, tossing up by the

way which should pay the shilling; and Mr. D. stepped from the other

side of the way, arrayed in black, with a large pair of white gloves

which were spread out on his hands, and which the owner could not help

regarding with pleasure.

The house porter in an evening coat, and gentlemen with gloves as large

as Doolan's, but of the famous Berlin web, were on the passage of Mr.

Bungay's house to receive the guests' hats and coats, and bawl their

names up the stair. Some of the latter had arrived when the three new

visitors made their appearance; but there was only Mrs. Bungay in red

satin and a turban to represent her own charming sex. She made curtsies

to each new-comer as he entered the drawing-room, but her mind was

evidently pre-occupied by extraneous thoughts. The fact is, Mrs. Bacon's

dinner-party was disturbing her, and as soon as she had received each

individual of her own company, Flora Bungay flew back to the embrasure

of the window, whence she could rake the carriages of Emma Bacon's

friends as they came rattling up the Row. The sight of Dr. Slocum's

large carriage, with the gaunt job-horses, crushed Flora: none but hack

cabs had driven up to her own door on that day.

They were all literary gentlemen, though unknown as yet to Pen. There

was Mr. Bole, the real editor of the magazine, of which Mr. Wagg was the

nominal chief; Mr. Trotter, who, from having broken out on the world as

a poet of a tragic and suicidial cast, had now subsided into one of Mr.

Bungay's back shops as reader for that gentleman; and Captain Sumph,

an ex-beau reader about town, and related in some indistinct manner to

Literature and the Peerage. He was said to have written a book once, to

have been a friend of Lord Byron, to be related to Lord Sumphington; in

fact, anecdotes of Byron formed his staple, and he seldom spoke but with

the name of that poet or some of his contemporaries in his mouth, as

thus: "I remember poor Shelley, at school being sent up for good for a

copy of verses, every line of which I wrote, by Jove;" or, "I recollect,

when I was at Missolonghi with Byron, offering to bet gamba," and

so forth. This gentleman, Pen remarked, was listened to with great

attention by Mrs. Bungay; his anecdotes of the aristocracy, of which

he was a middle-aged member, delighted the publisher's lady; and he was

almost a greater man than the great Mr. Wagg himself in her eyes. Had

he but come in his own carriage, Mrs. Bungay would have made her Bungay

purchase any given volume from his pen.

Mr. Bungay went about to his guests as they arrived, and did the honours

of his house with much cordiality. "How are you, sir? Fine day, sir.

Glad to see you year, sir. Flora, my love, let me ave the honour of

introducing Mr. Warrington to you. Mr. Warrington, Mrs. Bungay; Mr.

Pendennis, Mrs. Bungay. Hope you've brought good appetites with you,

gentlemen. You, Doolan, I know ave, for you've always ad a deuce of a

twist."

"Lor, Bungay!" said Mrs. Bungay.

"Faith, a man must be hard to please, Bungay, who can't eat a good

dinner in this house," Doolan said, and he winked and stroked his lean

chops with his large gloves; and made appeals of friendship to Mrs.

Bungay, which that honest woman refused with scorn from the timid man.

"She couldn't abide that Doolan," she said in confidence to her friends.

Indeed, all his flatteries failed to win her.

As they talked, Mrs. Bungay surveying mankind from her window, a

magnificent vision of an enormous grey cab-horse appeared, and neared

rapidly. A pair of white reins, held by small white gloves, were visible

behind it; a face pale, but richly decorated with a chin-tuft, the head

of an exiguous groom bobbing over the cab-head--these bright things were

revealed to the delighted Mrs. Bungay. "The Honourable Percy Popjoy's

quite punctual, I declare," she said, and sailed to the door to be in

waiting at the nobleman's arrival.

"It's Percy Popjoy," said Pen, looking out of window, and seeing an

individual, in extremely lacquered boots, descend from the swinging cab:

and, in fact, it was that young nobleman Lord Falconet's eldest son,

as we all very well know, who was come to dine with the publisher--his

publisher of the Row.

"He was my fag at Eton," Warrington said. "I ought to have licked him

a little more." He and Pen had had some bouts at the Oxbridge Union

debates, in which Pen had had very much the better of Percy: who

presently appeared, with his hat under his arm, and a look of

indescribable good-humour and fatuity in his round dimpled face: upon

which Nature had burst out with a chin-tuft, but, exhausted with the

effort, had left the rest of the countenance bare of hair.

The temporary groom of the chambers bawled out, "The Honourable Percy

Popjoy," much to that gentleman's discomposure at hearing his titles

announced.

"What did the man want to take away my hat for, Bungay?" he asked of

the publisher. "Can't do without my hat--want it to make my bow to

Mrs. Bungay. How well you look. Mrs. Bungay, to-day. Haven't seen your

carriage in the Park: why haven't you been there? I missed you; indeed,

I did."

"I'm afraid you're a sad quiz," said Mrs. Bungay.

"Quiz! Never made a joke in my--hullo! who's here? How d'ye do,

Pendennis? How d'ye do, Warrington? These are old friends of mine, Mrs.

Bungay. I say, how the doose did you come here?" he asked of the two

young men, turnip his lacquered heels upon Mrs. Bungay, who respected

her husband's two young guests, now that she found they were intimate

with a lord's son.

"What! do they know him?" she asked rapidly of Mr. B.

"High fellers, I tell you--the young one related to all the nobility,"

said the publisher; and both ran forward, smiling and bowing, to greet

almost as great personages as the young lord--no less characters,

indeed, than the great Mr. Wenham and the great Mr. Wagg, who were now

announced.

Mr. Wenham entered, wearing the usual demure look and stealthy smile

with which he commonly surveyed the tips of his neat little shining

boots, and which he but seldom brought to bear upon the person who

addressed him. Wagg's white waistcoat spread out, on the contrary,

with profuse brilliancy; his burly, red face shone resplendent over it,

lighted up with the thoughts of good jokes and a good dinner. He liked

to make his entree into a drawing-room with a laugh, and, when he

went away at night, to leave a joke exploding behind him. No personal

calamities or distresses (of which that humourist had his share in

common with the unjocular part of mankind) could altogether keep his

humour down. Whatever his griefs might be, the thought of a dinner

rallied his great soul; and when he saw a lord, he saluted him with a

pun.

Wenham went up, then, with a smug smile and whisper, to Mrs. Bungay, and

looked at her from under his eyes, and showed her the tips of his shoes.

Wagg said she looked charming, and pushed on straight at the young

nobleman, whom he called Pop, and to whom he instantly related a funny

story, seasoned with what the French call gros sel. He was delighted

to see Pen, too, and shook hands with him, and slapped him on the back

cordially; for he was full of spirits and good-humour. And he talked in

a loud voice about their last place and occasion of meeting at Baymouth;

and asked how their friends of Clavering Park were, and whether Sir

Francis was not coming to London for the season; and whether Pen had

been to see Lady Rockminster, who had arrived--fine old lady, Lady

Rockminster! These remarks Wagg made not for Pen's ear so much as for

the edification of the company, whom he was glad to inform that he paid

visits to gentlemen's country seats, and was on intimate terms with the

nobility.

Wenham also shook hands with our young friend--all of which scenes Mrs.

Bungay remarked with respectful pleasure, and communicated her ideas to

Bungay, afterwards, regarding the importance of Mr. Pendennis--ideas by

which Pen profited much more than he was aware.

Pen, who had read, and rather admired some of her works (and expected to

find in Miss Bunion a person somewhat resembling her own description

of herself in the 'Passion-Flower,' in which she stated that her youth

resembled--

"A violet, shrinking meanly

When blows the March wind keenly;

A timid fawn, on wild-wood lawn,

Where oak-boughs rustle greenly,--"

and that her maturer beauty was something very different, certainly, to

the artless loveliness of her prime, but still exceedingly captivating

and striking), beheld, rather to his surprise and amusement, a large and

bony woman in a crumpled satin dress, who came creaking into the room

with a step as heavy as a grenadier's. Wagg instantly noted the straw

which she brought in at the rumpled skirt of her dress, and would

have stooped to pick it up: but Miss Bunion disarmed all criticism by

observing this ornament herself, and, putting her own large foot upon

it, so as to separate it from her robe, she stooped and picked up the

straw, saying to Mrs. Bungay, that she was very sorry to be a little

late, but that the omnibus was very slow, and what a comfort it was to

get a ride all the way from Brompton for sixpence. Nobody laughed at the

poetess's speech, it was uttered so simply. Indeed, the worthy woman had

not the least notion of being ashamed of an action incidental upon her

poverty.

"Is that 'Passion-Flowers?'" Pen said to Wenham, by whom he was

standing. "Why, her picture in the volume represents her as a very

well-looking young woman."

"You know passion-flowers, like all others, will run to seed," Wenham

said; "Miss Bunion's portrait was probably painted some years ago."

"Well, I like her for not being ashamed of her poverty."

"So do I," said Mr. Wenham, who would have starved rather than have come

to dinner in an omnibus, "but I don't think that she need flourish the

straw about, do you, Mr. Pendennis? My dear Miss Bunion, how do you do?

I was in a great lady's drawing-room this morning, and everybody was

charmed with your new volume. Those lines on the christening of Lady

Fanny Fantail brought tears into the Duchess's eyes. I said that I

thought I should have the pleasure of meeting you to-day, and she begged

me to thank you, and say how greatly she was pleased."

This history, told in a bland smiling manner, of a Duchess whom Wenham

had met that very morning, too, quite put poor Wagg's dowager and

baronet out of court, and placed Wenham beyond Wagg as a man of fashion.

Wenham kept this inestimable advantage, and having the conversation to

himself, ran on with a number of anecdotes regarding the aristocracy.

He tried to bring Mr. Popjoy into the conversation by making appeals to

him, and saying, "I was telling your father this morning," or, "I

think you were present at W. house the other night when the Duke said

so-and-so," but Mr. Popjoy would not gratify him by joining in the talk,

preferring to fall back into the window recess with Mrs. Bungay, and

watch the cabs that drove up to the opposite door. At least, if he would

not talk, the hostess hoped that those odious Bacons would see how she

had secured the noble Percy Popjoy for her party.

And now the bell of Saint Paul's tolled half an hour later than that

for which Mr. Bungay had invited his party, and it was complete with the

exception of two guests, who at last made their appearance, and in whom

Pen was pleased to recognise Captain and Mrs. Shandon.

When these two had made their greetings to the master and mistress of

the house, and exchanged nods of more or less recognition with most of

the people present, Pen and Warrington went up, and shook hands very

warmly with Mrs. Shandon, who, perhaps, was affected to meet them, and

think where it was she had seen them but a few days before. Shandon was

brushed up, and looked pretty smart, in a red velvet waistcoat, and a

frill, into which his wife had stuck her best brooch. In spite of Mrs.

Bungay's kindness, perhaps in consequence of it, Mrs. Shandon felt great

terror and timidity in approaching her: indeed, she was more awful than

ever in her red satin and bird of paradise, and it was not until she had

asked in her great voice about the dear little gurl, that the latter was

somewhat encouraged, and ventured to speak.

"Nice-looking woman," Popjoy whispered to Warrington. "Do introduce

me to Captain Shandon, Warrington. I'm told he's a tremendous clever

fellow; and, dammy, I adore intellect, by Jove I do!" This was the

truth: Heaven had not endowed young Mr. Popjoy with much intellect of

his own, but had given him a generous faculty for admiring, if not for

appreciating, the intellect of others. "And introduce me to Miss Bunion.

I'm told she's very clever too. She's rum to look at, certainly, but

that don't matter. Dammy, I consider myself a literary man, and I wish

to know all the clever fellows." So Mr. Popjoy and Mr. Shandon had the

pleasure of becoming acquainted with one another; and now the doors of

the adjoining dining-room being flung open, the party entered and took

their seats at table. Pen found himself next to Bunion on one side, and

to Mr. Wagg--the truth is, Wagg fled alarmed from the vacant place by

the poetess, and Pen was compelled to take it.

The gifted being did not talk much during dinner, but Pen remarked that

she ate with a vast appetite, and never refused any of the supplies of

wine which were offered to her by the butler. Indeed, Miss Bunion having

considered Mr. Pendennis for a minute, who gave himself rather grand

airs, and who was attired in an extremely fashionable style, with his

very best chains, shirt studs, and cambric fronts, he was set down, and

not without reason, as a prig by the poetess; who thought it was much

better to attend to her dinner than to take any notice of him. She told

him as much in after days with her usual candour. "I took you for one of

the little Mayfair dandies," she said to Pen. "You looked as solemn as

a little undertaker; and as I disliked, beyond measure, the odious

creature who was on the other side of me, I thought it was best to eat

my dinner and hold my tongue."

"And you did both very well, my dear Miss Bunion," Pen said with a

laugh.

"Well, so I do, but I intend to talk to you the next time a great deal:

for you are neither so solemn, nor so stupid, nor so pert as you look."

"Ah, Miss Bunion, how I pine for that 'next time' to come," Pen said

with an air of comical gallantry:--But we must return to the day, and

the dinner at Paternoster Row.

The repast was of the richest description--"What I call of the florid

Gothic style," Wagg whispered to Penn, who sate beside the humourist,

in his side-wing voice. The men in creaking shoes and Berlin gloves were

numerous and solemn, carrying on rapid conversations behind the guests,

as they moved to and fro with the dishes. Doolan called out, "Waither,"

to one of them, and blushed when he thought of his blunder. Mrs.

Bungay's footboy was lost amidst those large and black-coated

attendants.

"Look at that very bow-windowed man," Wagg said. "He's an undertaker in

Amen Corner, and attends funerals and dinners. Cold meat and hot, don't

you perceive? He's the sham butler here, and I observe, my dear Mr.

Pendennis, as you will through life, that wherever there is a sham

butler at a London dinner there is sham wine--this sherry is filthy.

Bungay, my boy, where did you get this delicious brown sherry?"

"I'm glad you like it, Mr. Wagg; glass with you," said the publisher.

"It's some I got from Alderman Benning's store, and gave a good figure

for it, I can tell you. Mr. Pendennis, will you join us? Your 'ealth,

gentlemen."

"The old rogue, where does he expect to go to? It came from the

public-house," Wagg said. "It requires two men to carry off that sherry,

'tis so uncommonly strong. I wish I had a bottle of old Steyne's wine

here, Pendennis: your uncle and I have had many a one. He sends it about

to people where he is in the habit of dining. I remember at poor Rawdon

Crawley's, Sir Pitt Crawley's brother--he was Governor of Coventry

Island--Steyne's chef always came in the morning, and the butler arrived

wit the champagne from Gaunt House, in the ice-pails ready."

"How good this is!" said Popjoy, good-naturedly. "You must have a cordon

bleu in your kitchen."

"O yes," Mrs. Bungay said, thinking he spoke of a jack-chain very

likely.

"I mean a French chef," said the polite guest.

"O yes, your lordship," again said the lady.

"Does your artist say he's a Frenchman, Mrs. B.?" called out Wagg.

"Well, I'm sure I don't know," answered the publisher's lady.

"Because, if he does, he's a quizzin yer," cried Mr. Wagg; but nobody

saw the pun, which disconcerted somewhat the bashful punster. "The

dinner is from Griggs, in St. Paul's Churchyard; so is Bacon's," he

whispered Pen. "Bungay writes to give half-a-crown a head more than

Bacon, so does Bacon. They would poison each other's ices if they

could get near them; and as for the made-dishes--they are poison.

This--hum--ha--this Brimborion a la Sevigne is delicious, Mrs. B.," he

said, helping himself to a dish which the undertaker handed to him.

"Well, I'm glad you like it," Mrs. Bungay answered, blushing and not

knowing whether the name of the dish was actually that which Wagg

gave to it, but dimly conscious that that individual was quizzing

her. Accordingly she hated Mr. Wagg with female ardour; and would have

deposed him from his command over Mr. Bungay's periodical, but that

his name was great in the trade, and his reputation in the land

considerable.

By the displacement of persons, Warrington had found himself on the

right hand of Mrs. Shandon, who sate in plain black silk and faded

ornaments by the side of the florid publisher. The sad smile of the lady

moved his rough heart to pity. Nobody seemed to interest himself about

her: she sate looking at her husband, who himself seemed rather abashed

in the presence of some of the company. Wenham and Wagg both knew

him and his circumstances. He had worked with the latter, and was

immeasurably his superior in wit, genius, and acquirement; but Wagg's

star was brilliant in the world, and poor Shandon was unknown there. He

could not speak before the noisy talk of the coarser and more successful

man; but drank his wine in silence, and as much of it as the people

would give him. He was under surveillance. Bungay had warned the

undertaker not to fill the Captain's glass too often or too full. It

was a melancholy precaution that, and the more melancholy that it was

necessary. Mrs. Shandon, too, cast alarmed glances across the table to

see that her husband did not exceed.

Abashed by the failure of his first pun, for he was impudent and easily

disconcerted, Wagg kept his conversation pretty much to Pen during the

rest of dinner, and of course chiefly spoke about their neighbours.

"This is one of Bungay's grand field-days," he said. "We are all

Bungavians here.--Did you read Popjoy's novel? It was an old magazine

story written by poor Buzzard years ago, and forgotten here until Mr.

Trotter (that is Trotter with the large shirt collar) fished it out and

bethought him that it was applicable to the late elopement; so Bob wrote

a few chapters a propos--Popjoy permitted the use of his name, and

I dare say supplied a page here and there--and 'Desperation, or the

Fugitive Duchess' made its appearance. The great fun is to examine

Popjoy about his own work, of which he doesn't know a word.--I say,

Popjoy, what a capital passage that is in Volume Three,--where the

Cardinal in disguise, after being converted by the Bishop of London,

proposes marriage to the Duchess's daughter."

"Glad you like it," Popjoy answered; "it's a favourite bit of my own."

"There's no such thing in the whole book," whispered Wagg to Pen.

"Invented it myself. Gad! it wouldn't be a bad plot for a high-church

novel."

"I remember poor Byron, Hobhouse, Trelawney, and myself, dining with

Cardinal Mezzocaldo at Rome," Captain Sumph began, "and we had some

Orvieto wine for dinner, which Byron liked very much. And I remember

how the Cardinal regretted that he was a single man. We went to Civita

Vecchia two days afterwards, where Byron's yacht was--and, by Jove,

the Cardinal died within three weeks; and Byron was very sorry, for he

rather liked him."

"A devilish interesting story, Sumph, indeed," Wagg said.

"You should publish some of those stories, Captain Sumph, you really

should. Such a volume would make our friend Bungay's fortune," Shandon

said.

"Why don't you ask Sumph to publish 'em in your new paper--the

what-d'ye-call-'em--hay, Shandon?" bawled out Wagg.

"Why don't you ask him to publish 'em in your old magazine, the

Thingumbob?" Shandon replied.

"Is there going to be a new paper?" asked Wenham, who knew perfectly

well, but was ashamed of his connection with the press.

"Bungay going to bring out a paper?" cried Popjoy, who, on the contrary,

was proud of his literary reputation and acquaintances. "You must employ

me. Mrs. Bungay, use your influence with him, and make him employ me.

Prose or verse--what shall it be? Novels, poems, travels, or leading

articles, begad. Anything or everything--only let Bungay pay me, and I'm

ready--I am now my dear Mrs. Bungay, begad now."

"It's to be called the Small Beer Chronicle," growled Wagg, "and little

Popjoy is to be engaged for the infantine department."

"It is to be called the Pall Mall Gazette, sir, and we shall be very

happy to have you with us," Shandon said.

"Pall Mall Gazette--why Pall Mall Gazette?" asked Wagg.

"Because the editor was born at Dublin, the sub-editor at Cork, because

the proprietor lives in Paternoster Row;--and the paper is published in

Catherine Street, Strand. Won't that reason suffice you, Wagg?" Shandon

said; he was getting rather angry. "Everything must have a name. My dog

Ponto has got a namee. You've got a name, and a name which you deserve,

more or less, indeed. Why d'ye grudge the name to our paper?"

"By any other name it would smell as sweet," said Wagg.

"I'll have ye remember its name's not what-d'ye-call-'em, Mr. Wagg,"

said Shandon. "You know its name well enough, and--and you know mine."

"And I know your address too," said Wagg; but this was spoken in an

undertone, and the good-natured Irishman was appeased almost in an

instant after his ebullition of spleen, and asked Wagg to drink wine

with him in a friendly voice.

When the ladies retired from the table, the talk grew louder still; and

presently Wenham, in a courtly speech, proposed that everybody should

drink to the health of the new Journal, eulogising highly the talents,

wit, and learning of its editor, Captain Shandon. It was his maxim

never to lose the support of a newspaper man, and in the course of that

evening he went round and saluted every literary gentleman present with

a privy compliment specially addressed to him; informing this one how

great an impression had been made in Downing Street by his last article,

and telling that one how profoundly his good friend, the Duke of

So-and-So, had been struck by the ability of the late numbers.

The evening came to a close, and in spite of all the precautions to

the contrary, poor Shandon reeled in his walk, and went home to his new

lodgings, with his faithful wife by his side, and the cabman on his

box jeering at him. Wenham had a chariot of his own, which he put at

Popjoy's seat; and the timid Miss Bunion seeing Mr. Wagg, who was her

neighbour, about to depart, insisted upon a seat in his carriage, much

to that gentleman's discomfiture.

Pen and Warrington walked home together in the moonlight. "And now,"

Warrington said, "that you have seen the men of letters, tell me, was I

far wrong in saying that there are thousands of people in this town, who

don't write books, who are, to the full, as clever and intellectual as

people who do?"

Pen was forced to confess that the literary personages with whom he

had become acquainted had not said much, in the course of the night's

conversation, that was worthy to be remembered or quoted. In fact not

one word about literature had been said during the whole course of the

night:--and it may be whispered to those uninitiated people who are

anxious to know the habits and make the acquaintance of men of letters,

that there are no race of people who talk about books, or, perhaps, who

read books, so little as literary men.

CHAPTER XXXVI. The Pall Mall Gazette

Considerable success at first attended the new journal. It was generally

stated, that an influential political party supported the paper; and

great names were cited amongst the contributors to its columns. Was

there any foundation for these rumours? We are not at liberty to say

whether they were ill-founded; but this much we may divulge, that an

article upon foreign policy, which was generally attributed to a noble

Lord, whose connexion with the Foreign Office is very well known, was

in reality composed by Captain Shandon, in the parlour of the Bear and

Staff public-house near Whitehall Stairs, whither the printer's boy

had tracked him, and where a literary ally of his, Mr. Bludyer, had a

temporary residence; and that a series of papers on finance questions,

which were universally supposed to be written by a great Statesman of

the House of Commons, were in reality composed by Mr. George Warrington

of the Upper Temple.

That there may have been some dealings between the Pall Mall Gazette and

this influential party, is very possible, Percy Popjoy (whose father,

Lord Falconet, was a member of the party) might be seen not unfrequently

ascending the stairs to Warrington's chambers; and some information

appeared in the paper which it gave a character, and could only be got

from very peculiar sources. Several poems, feeble in thought, but loud

and vigorous in expression, appeared in the Pall Mall Gazette, with the

signature of "P. P."; and it must be owned that his novel was praised in

the new journal in a very outrageous manner.

In the political department of the paper Mr. Pen did not take any share;

but he was a most active literary contributor. The Pall Mall Gazette had

its offices, as we have heard, in Catherine Street, in the Strand, and

hither Pen often came with his manuscripts in his pocket, and with a

great deal of bustle and pleasure; such as a man feels at the outset

of his literary career, when to see himself in print is still a novel

sensation, and he yet pleases himself to think that his writings are

creating some noise in the world.

Here it was that Mr. Jack Finucane, the sub-editor, compiled with paste

and scissors the Journal of which he was supervisor. With an eagle eye

he scanned all the paragraphs of all the newspapers which had anything

to do with the world of fashion over which he presided. He didn't let a

death or a dinner-party of the aristocracy pass without having the event

recorded in the columns of his Journal; and from the most recondite

provincial prints, and distant Scotch and Irish newspapers, he fished

out astonishing paragraphs and intelligence regarding the upper classes

of society. It was a grand, nay, a touching sight, for a philosopher, to

see Jack Finucane, Esquire, with a plate of meat from the cookshop and

glass of porter from the public-house, for his meal, recounting the

feasts of the great as if h had been present at them; and in tattered

trousers and dingy shirt-sleeves, cheerfully describing and arranging

the most brilliant fetes of the world of fashion. The incongruity of

Finucane's avocation, and his manners and appearance amused his new

friend Pen. Since he left his own native village, where his rank

probably was not very, lofty Jack had seldom seen any society but such

as used the parlour of the taverns which he frequented, whereas from his

writing you would have supposed that he dined with ambassadors, and that

his common lounge was the bow-window of White's. Errors of description,

it is true, occasionally slipped from his pen; but the Ballinafad

Sentinel, of which he was own correspondent, suffered by these, not the

Pall Mall Gazette, in which Jack was not permitted to write much, his

London chiefs thinking that the scissors and the paste were better

wielded by him than the pen.

Pen took a great deal of pains with the writing of his reviews, and

having a pretty fair share of desultory reading, acquired in the early

years of his life an eager fancy and a keen sense of fun, his articles

pleased his chief and the public, and he was proud to think that he

deserved the money which he earned. We may be sure that the Pall Mall

Gazette was taken in regularly at Fairoaks, and read with delight by the

two ladies there. It was received at Clavering Park, too, where we know

there was a young lady of great literary tastes; and old Doctor Portman

himself, to whom the widow sent her paper after she had got her son's

articles by heart, signified his approval of Pen's productions, saying

that the lad had spirit, taste, and fancy, and wrote, if not like a

scholar, at any rate like a gentleman.

And what was the astonishment and delight of our friend Major Pendennis,

on walking into one of his clubs, the Regent, where Wenham, Lord

Falconet, and some other gentlemen of good reputation and fashion were

assembled, to hear them one day talking over a number of the Pall Mall

Gazette, and of an article which appeared in its columns, making some

bitter fun of the book recently published by the wife of a celebrated

member of the opposition party. The book in question was a Book of

Travels in Spain and Italy, by the Countess of Muffborough, in which

it was difficult to say which was the most wonderful, the French or the

English, in which languages her ladyship wrote indifferently, and upon

the blunders of which the critic pounced with delightful mischief.

The critic was no other than Pen: he jumped and danced round about his

subject with the greatest jocularity and high spirits: he showed up the

noble lady's faults with admirable mock gravity and decorum. There was

not a word in the article which was not polite and gentlemanlike; and

the unfortunate subject of the criticism was scarified and laughed at

during the operation. Wenham's bilious countenance was puckered up with

malign pleasure as he read the critique. Lady Muffborough had not asked

him to her parties during the last year. Lord Falconet giggled and

laughed with all his heart; Lord Muffborough and he had been rivals ever

since they began life; and these complimented Major Pendennis, who until

now had scarcely paid any attention to some hints which his Fairoaks

correspondence threw out of "dear Arthur's constant and severe literary

occupations, which I fear may undermine the poor boy's health," and had

thought any notice of Mr. Pen and his newspaper connexions quite below

his dignity as a Major and a gentleman.

But when the oracular Wenham praised the boy's production; when Lord

Falconet, who had had the news from Percy Popjoy, approved of the genius

of young Pen; when the great Lord Steyne himself, to whom the Major

referred the article, laughed and sniggered over it, swore it was

capital, and that the Muffborough would writhe under it, like a whale

under a harpoon, the Major, as in duty bound, began to admire his nephew

very much, said, "By gad, the young rascal had some stuff in him, and

would do something; he had always said he would do something;" and with

a hand quite tremulous with pleasure, the old gentleman sate down to

write to the widow at Fairoaks all that the great folks had said in

praise of Pen; and he wrote to the young rascal, too, asking when he

would come and eat a chop with his old uncle, and saying that he was

commissioned to take him to dinner at Gaunt House, for Lord Steyne liked

anybody who could entertain him, whether by his folly, wit, or by his

dulness, by his oddity, affectation, good spirits, or any other quality.

Pen flung his letter across the table to Warrington: perhaps he was

disappointed that the other did not seem to be much affected by it.

The courage of young critics is prodigious: they clamber up to the

judgment-seat, and, with scarce a hesitation, give their opinion

upon works the most intricate or profound. Had Macaulay's History or

Herschel's Astronomy been put before Pen at this period, he would have

looked through the volumes, meditated his opinion over a cigar, and

signified his august approval of either author, as if the critic had

been their born superior and indulgent master and patron. By the help

of the Biographie Universelle or the British Museum, he would be able to

take a rapid resume of a historical period, and allude to names, dates,

and facts, in such a masterly, easy way, as to astonish his mamma at

home, who wondered where her boy could have acquired such a prodigious

store of reading and himself, too, when he came to read over his

articles two or three months after they had been composed, and when he

had forgotten the subject and the books which he had consulted. At that

period of his life, Mr. Pen owns that he would not have hesitated,

at twenty-four hours' notice, to pass his opinion upon the greatest

scholars, or to give a judgment upon the Encyclopaedia. Luckily he

had Warrington to laugh at him and to keep down his impertinence by

a constant and wholesome ridicule, or he might have become conceited

beyond all sufferance; for Shandon liked the dash and flippancy of his

young aide-de-camp, and was, indeed, better pleased with Pen's light and

brilliant flashes, than with the heavier metal which his elder coadjutor

brought to bear.

But though he might justly be blamed on the score of impertinence and a

certain prematurity of judgment, Mr. Pen was a perfectly honest critic;

a great deal too candid for Mr. Bungay's purposes, indeed, who grumbled

sadly at his impartiality. Pen and his chief, the Captain, had a dispute

upon this subject one day. "In the name of common-sense, Mr. Pendennis,"

Shandon asked, "what have you been doing--praising one of Mr. Bacon's

books? Bungay has been with me in a fury this morning at seeing a

laudatory article upon one of the works of the odious firm over the

way."

Pen's eyes opened with wide astonishment. "Do you mean to say," he

asked, "that we are to praise no books that Bacon publishes: or that, if

the books are good, we are to say they are bad?"

"My good young friend--for what do you suppose a benevolent publisher

undertakes a critical journal, to benefit his rival?" Shandon inquired.

"To benefit himself certainly, but to tell the truth too," Pen said,

"ruat coelum, to tell the truth."

"And my prospectus," said Shandon, with a laugh and a sner; "do you

consider that was a work of mathematical accuracy of statement?"

"Pardon me, that is not the question," Pen said "and I don't think you

very much care to argue it. I had some qualms of conscience about that

same prospectus, and debated the matter with my friend Warrington. We

agreed, however," Pen said, laughing "that because the prospectus was

rather declamatory and poetical, and the giant was painted upon the

show-board rather larger than the original, who was inside the caravan;

we need not be too scrupulous about this trifling inaccuracy, but

might do our part of the show, without loss of character or remorse of

conscience. We are the fiddlers, and play our tunes only; you are the

showman."

"And leader of the van," said Shandon. "Well, I am glad that your

conscience gave you leave to play for us."

"Yes, but," said Pen, with a fine sense of the dignity of his position,

"we are all party men in England, and I will stick to my party like a

Briton. I will be as good-natured as you like to our own side, he is a

fool who quarrels with his own nest; and I will hit the enemy as hard as

you like--but with fair play, Captain, if you please. One can't tell

all the truth, I suppose; but one can tell nothing but the truth; and

I would rather starve, by Jove, and never earn another penny by my pen"

(this redoubted instrument had now been in use for some six weeks,

and Pen spoke of it with vast enthusiasm and respect) "than strike an

opponent an unfair blow, or, if called upon to place him, rank him below

his honest desert."

"Well, Mr. Pendennis, when we want Bacon smashed, we must get some other

hammer to do it," Shandon said, with fatal good-nature; and very likely

thought within himself, "A few years hence perhaps the young gentleman

won't be so squeamish." The veteran Condottiere himself was no longer so

scrupulous. He had fought and killed on so many a side for many a year

past, that remorse had long left him. "Gad," said he, "you've a tender

conscience, Mr. Pendennis. It's the luxury of all novices, and I may

have had one once myself; but that sort of bloom wears off with the

rubbing of the world, and I'm not going to the trouble myself of putting

on an artificial complexion, like our pious friend Wenham, or our model

of virtue, Wagg."

"I don't know whether some people's hypocrisy is not better, Captain,

than other's cynicism."

"It's more profitable, at any rate," said the Captain, biting his

nails. "That Wenham is as dull a quack as ever quacked: and you see the

carriage in which he drove to dinner. Faith, it'll be a long time before

Mrs. Shandon will take a drive in her own chariot. God help her, poor

thing!" And Pen went away from his chief, after their little dispute and

colloquy, pointing his own moral to the Captain's tale, and thinking

to himself, "Behold this man, stored with genius, wit, learning, and a

hundred good natural gifts: see how he has wrecked them, by paltering

with his honesty, and forgetting to respect himself. Wilt thou remember

thyself, O Pen? thou art conceited enough! Wilt thou sell thy honour for

a bottle? No, by heaven's grace, we will be honest, whatever befalls,

and our mouths shall only speak the truth when they open."

A punishment, or, at least, a trial, was in store for Mr. Pen. In the

very next number of the Pall Mall Gazette, Warrington read out, with

roars of laughter, an article which by no means amused Arthur Pendennis,

who was himself at work with a criticism for the next week's number

of the same journal; and in which the Spring Annual was ferociously

maltreated by some unknown writer. The person of all most cruelly mauled

was Pen himself. His verses had not appeared with his own name in the

Spring Annual, but under an assumed signature. As he had refused

to review the book, Shandon had handed it over to Mr. Bludyer,

with directions to that author to dispose of it. And he had done so

effectually. Mr. Bludyer, who was a man of very considerable talent, and

of a race which, I believe, is quite extinct in the press of our time,

had a certain notoriety in his profession, and reputation for savage

humour. He smashed and trampled down the poor spring flowers with no

more mercy than a bull would have on a parterre; and having cut up the

volume to his heart's content, went and sold it at a bookstall, and

purchased a pint of brandy with the proceeds of the volume.

CHAPTER XXXVII. Where Pen appears in Town and Country

Let us be allowed to pass over a few months of the history of Mr. Arthur

Pendennis's lifetime, during the which, many events may have occurred

which were more interesting and exciting to himself, than they would be

likely to prove to the reader of his present memoirs. We left him, in

his last chapter, regularly entered upon his business as a professional

writer, or literary hack, as Mr. Warrington chooses to style himself and

his friend; and we know how the life of any hack, legal or literary, in

a curacy, or in a marching regiment, or at a merchant's desk, is dull of

routine, and tedious of description. One day's labour resembles another

much too closely. A literary man has often to work for his bread

against time, or against his will, or in spite of his health, or of his

indolence, or of his repugnance to the subject on which he is called to

exert himself, just like any other daily toiler. When you want to

make money by Pegasus (as he must, perhaps, who has no other saleable

property), farewell poetry and aerial flights: Pegasus only rises now

like Mr. Green's balloon, at periods advertised beforehand, and when

the spectator's money has been paid. Pegasus trots in harness, over the

stony pavement, and pulls a cart or a cab behind him. Often Pegasus does

his work with panting sides and trembling knees, and not seldom gets a

cut of the whip from his driver.

Do not let us, however, be too prodigal of our pity upon Pegasus. There

is no reason why this animal should be exempt from labour, or illness,

or decay, any more than any of the other creatures of God's world. If he

gets the whip, Pegasus often deserves it, and I for one am quite ready

to protest my friend, George Warrington, against the doctrine which

poetical sympathisers are inclined to put forward, viz., that of

letters, and what is called genius, are to be exempt from prose duties

of this daily, bread-wanting, tax-paying life, and not to be made to

work and pay like their neighbours.

Well, then, the Pall Mall Gazette being duly established and Arthur

Pendennis's merits recognised as a flippant, witty, and amusing critic,

he worked away hard every week, preparing reviews of such works as came

into his department, and writing his reviews with flippancy certainly,

but with honesty, and to the best of his power. It might be that

a historian of threescore, who had spent a quarter of a century in

composing a work of which our young gentleman disposed in the course

of a couple of days' reading at the British Museum, was not altogether

fairly treated by such a facile critic; or that a poet who had been

elaborating sublime sonnets and odes until he thought them fit for the

public and for fame, was annoyed by two or three dozen pert lines in Mr.

Pen's review, in which the poet's claims were settled by the critic,

as if the latter were my lord on the bench and the author a miserable

little suitor trembling before him. The actors at the theatres

complained of him wofully, too, and very likely he was too hard upon

them. But there was not much harm done after all. It is different now,

as we know; but there were so few great historians, or great poets, or

great actors, in Pen's time, that scarce any at all came up for judgment

his critical desk. Those who got a little whipping, got what in the main

was good for them; not that the judge was any better or wiser than the

persons whom he sentenced, or indeed ever fancied himself so. Pen had a

strong sense of humour and justice, and had not therefore an overweening

respect for his own works; besides, he had his friend Warrington at his

elbow--a terrible critic if the young man was disposed to be conceited,

and more savage over Pen than ever he was to those whom he tried at his

literary assize.

By these critical labours, and by occasional contributions to leading

articles of the journal, when, without wounding his paper, this eminent

publicist could conscientiously speak his mind, Mr. Arthur Pendennis

gained the sum of four pounds four shillings weekly, and with no small

pains and labour. Likewise be furnished Magazines and Reviews with

articles of his composition, and is believed to have been (though

on this score he never chooses to speak) London correspondent of the

Chatteris Champion, which at that time contained some very brilliant

and eloquent letters from the metropolis. By these labours the fortunate

youth was enabled to earn a sum very nearly equal to four hundred pounds

a year; and on the second Christmas after his arrival in London, he

actually brought a hundred pounds to his mother, as a dividend upon the

debt which he owed to Laura. That Mrs. Pendennis read every word of her

son's works, and considered him to be the profoundest thinker and most

elegant writer of the day; that she thought his retribution of the

hundred pounds an act of angelic virtue; that she feared he was ruining

his health by his labours, and was delighted when he told her of the

society which he met, and of the great men of letters and fashion

whom he saw, will be imagined by all readers who have seen son-worship

amongst mothers, and that charming simplicity of love with which women

in the country watch the career of their darlings in London. If John has

held such and such a brief; if Tom has been invited to such and such

a ball; or George has met this or that great and famous man at dinner;

what a delight there is in the hearts of mothers and sisters at home in

Somersetshire! How young Hopeful's letters are read and remembered! What

a theme for village talk they give, and friendly congratulation! In the

second winter, Pen came for a very brief space, and cheered the widow's

heart, and lightened up the lonely house at Fairoaks. Helen had her son

all to herself; Laura was away on a visit to old Lady Rockminster; the

folks of Clavering Park were absent; the very few old friends of the

house, Doctor Portman at their head, called upon Mr. Pen, and treated

him with marked respect; between mother and son, it was all fondness,

confidence, and affection. It was the happiest fortnight of the widow's

whole life; perhaps in the lives of both of them. The holiday was gone

only too quickly; and Pen was back in the busy world, and the gentle

widow alone again. She sent Arthur's money to Laura: I don't know why

this young lady took the opportunity of leaving home when Pen was coming

thither, or whether he was the more piqued or relieved by her absence.

He was by this time, by his own merits and his uncle's introductions,

pretty well introduced into London, and known both in literary and

polite circles. Amongst the former his fashionable reputation stood him

in no little stead; he was considered to be a gentleman of good present

means and better expectations, who wrote for his pleasure, than which

there cannot be a greater recommendation to a young literary aspirant.

Bacon, Bungay and Co. were proud to accept his articles; Mr. Wenham

asked him to dinner; Mr. Wagg looked upon him with a favourable eye;

and they reported how they met him at the houses of persons of fashion,

amongst whom he was pretty welcome, as they did not trouble themselves

about his means, present or future; as his appearance and address were

good; and as he had got a character for being a clever fellow. Finally,

he was asked to one house, because he was seen at another house: and

thus no small varieties of London life were presented to the young man:

he was made familiar with all sorts of people from Paternoster Row to

Pimlico, and was as much at home at Mayfair dining-tables as at those

tavern boards where some of his companions of the pen were accustomed to

assemble.

Full of high spirits and curiosity, easily adapting himself to all whom

he met, the young fellow pleased himself in this strange variety and

jumble of men, and made himself welcome, or at ease at least, wherever

he went. He would breakfast, for instance, at Mr. Plover's of a morning,

in company with a Peer, a Bishop, a parliamentary orator, two blue

ladies of fashion, a popular preacher, the author of the last new novel,

and the very latest lion imported from Egypt or from America: and would

quit this distinguished society for the back room at the newspaper

office, where pens and ink and the wet proof-sheets were awaiting him.

Here would be Finucane, the sub-editor, with the last news from the

Row: and Shandon would come in presently, and giving a nod to Pen, would

begin scribbling his leading article at the other end of the table,

flanked by the pint of sherry, which, when the attendant boy beheld him,

was always silently brought for the Captain: or Mr. Bludyer's roaring

voice would be heard in the front room, where that truculent

critic would impound the books on the counter in spite of the timid

remonstrances of Mr. Midge, the publisher, and after looking through the

volumes would sell them at his accustomed bookstall, and having drunken

and dined upon the produce of the sale in a tavern box, would call for

ink and paper, and proceed to "smash" the author of his dinner and the

novel. Towards evening Mr. Pen would stroll in the direction of his

club, and take up Warrington there for a constitutional walk. This

exercise freed the lungs, and gave an appetite for dinner, after which

Pen had the privilege to make his bow at some very pleasant houses which

were opened to him; or the town before him for amusement. There was the

Opera; or the Eagle Tavern; or a ball to go to in Mayfair; or a quiet

night with a cigar and a book and a long talk with Warrington; or a

wonderful new song at the Back Kitchen;--at this time of his life Mr.

Pen beheld all sorts of places and men; and very likely did not know

how much he enjoyed himself until long after, when balls gave him no

pleasure, neither did farces make him laugh; nor did the tavern joke

produce the least excitement in him; nor did the loveliest dancer that

ever showed her ankles cause him to stir from his chair after dinner. At

his present mature age all these pleasures are over: and the times have

passed away too. It is but a very very few years since--but the time is

gone, and most of the men. Bludyer will no more bully authors or cheat

landlords of their score. Shandon, the learned and thriftless, the witty

and unwise, sleeps his last sleep. They buried honest Doolan the other

day: never will he cringe or flatter, never pull long-bow or empty

whisky-noggin any more.

The London season was now blooming in its full vigour, and the

fashionable newspapers abounded with information regarding the grand

banquets, routs, and balls which were enlivening the polite world. Our

gracious Sovereign was holding levees and drawing-rooms at St. James's:

the bow-windows of the clubs were crowded with the heads of respectable

red-faced newspaper-reading gentlemen: along the Serpentine trailed

thousands of carriages: squadrons of dandy horsemen trampled over

Rotten Row, everybody was in town, in a word; and of course Major Arthur

Pendennis, who was somebody, was not absent.

With his head tied up in a smart bandana handkerchief and his meagre

carcass enveloped in a brilliant Turkish dressing-gown, the worthy

gentleman sate on a certain morning by his fireside letting his feet

gently simmer in a bath, whilst he took his early cup of tea, and

perused his Morning Post. He could not have faced the day without his

two hours' toilet, without his early cup of tea, without his Morning

Post. I suppose nobody in the world except Morgan, not even Morgan's

master himself, knew how feeble and ancient the Major was growing, and

what numberless little comforts he required.

If men sneer, as our habit is, at the artifices of an old beauty, at

her paint, perfumes, ringlets; at those innumerable, and to us unknown,

stratagems with which she is said to remedy the ravages of time and

reconstruct the charms whereof years have bereft her; the ladies, it is

to be presumed, are not on their side altogether ignorant that men are

vain as well as they, and that the toilets of old bucks are to the full

as elaborate as their own. How is it that old Blushington keeps that

constant little rose-tint on his cheeks; and where does old Blondel get

the preparation which makes his silver hair pass for golden? Have

you ever seen Lord Hotspur get off his horse when he thinks nobody is

looking? Taken out of his stirrups, his shiny boots can hardly totter up

the steps of Hotspur House. He is a dashing young nobleman still as you

see the back of him in Rotten Row; when you behold him on foot, what

an old, old fellow! Did you ever form to yourself any idea of Dick Lacy

(Dick has been Dick these sixty years) in a natural state, and without

his stays? All these men are objects whom the observer of human life

and manners may contemplate with as much profit as the most elderly

Belgravian Venus, or inveterate Mayfair Jezebel. An old reprobate

daddy-longlegs, who has never said his prayers (except perhaps in

public) these fifty years: an old buck who still clings to as many of

the habits of youth as his feeble grasp of health can hold by: who has

given up the bottle, but sits with young fellows over it, and tells

naughty stories upon toast-and-water--who has given up beauty, but still

talks about it as wickedly as the youngest roue in company--such an old

fellow, I say, if any parson in Pimlico or St. James's were to order

the beadles to bring him into the middle aisle, and there set him in

an armchair, and make a text of him, and preach about him to the

congregation, could be turned to a wholesome use for once in his life,

and might be surprised to find that some good thoughts came out of him.

But we are wandering from our text, the honest Major, who sits all this

while with his feet cooling in the bath: Morgan takes them out of that

place of purification, and dries them daintily, and proceeds to set the

old gentleman on his legs, with waistband and wig, starched cravat, and

spotless boots and gloves.

It was during these hours of the toilet that Morgan and his employer had

their confidential conversations, for they did not meet much at other

times of the day--the Major abhorring the society of his own chairs and

tables in his lodgings; and Morgan, his master's toilet over and letters

delivered, had his time very much on his own hands.

This spare time the active and well-mannered gentleman bestowed among

the valets and butlers of the nobility, his acquaintance; and Morgan

Pendennis, as he was styled, for, by such compound names, gentlemen's

gentlemen are called in their private circles, was a frequent and

welcome guest at some of the very highest tables in this town. He was a

member of two influential clubs in Mayfair and Pimlico; and he was thus

enabled to know the whole gossip of the town, and entertain his master

very agreeably during the two hours' toilet conversation. He knew a

hundred tales and legends regarding persons of the very highest ton,

whose valets canvass their august secrets, just, my dear Madam, as our

own parlour-maids and dependants in the kitchen discuss our characters,

our stinginess and generosity, our pecuniary means or embarrassments,

and our little domestic or connubial tiffs and quarrels. If I leave this

manuscript open on my table, I have not the slightest doubt Betty will

read it, and they will talk it over in the lower regions to-night; and

to-morrow she will bring in my breakfast with a face of such entire

imperturbable innocence, that no mortal could suppose her guilty

of playing the spy. If you and the Captain have high words upon any

subject, which is just possible, the circumstances of the quarrel,

and the characters of both of you, will be discussed with impartial

eloquence over the kitchen tea-table; and if Mrs. Smith's maid should

by chance be taking a dish of tea with yours, her presence will not

undoubtedly act as a restraint upon the discussion in question; her

opinion will be given with candour; and the next day her mistress will

probably know that Captain and Mrs. Jones have been a quarrelling as

usual. Nothing is secret. Take it as a rule that John knows everything:

and as in our humble world so in the greatest: a duke is no more a hero

to his valet-de-chambre than you or I; and his Grace's Man at his club,

in company doubtless with other Men of equal social rank, talks over

his master's character and affairs with the ingenuous truthfulness which

befits gentlemen who are met together in confidence. Who is a niggard

and screws up his money-boxes: who is in the hands of the money-lenders,

and is putting his noble name on the back of bills of exchange: who

is intimate with whose wife: who wants whom to marry her daughter,

and which he won't, no not at any price:--all these facts gentlemen's

confidential gentlemen discuss confidentially, and are known and

examined by every person who has any claim to rank in genteel society.

In a word, if old Pendennis himself was said to know everything, and

was at once admirably scandalous and delightfully discreet; it is but

justice to Morgan to say, that a great deal of his master's information

was supplied to that worthy man by his valet, who went out and foraged

knowledge for him. Indeed, what more effectual plan is there to get a

knowledge of London society, than to begin at the foundation--that is,

at the kitchen floor?

So Mr. Morgan and his employer conversed as the latter's toilet

proceeded. There had been a drawing-room on the previous day, and

the Major read among the presentations that of Lady Clavering by Lady

Rockminster, and of Miss Amory by her mother Lady Clavering,--and in a

further part of the paper their dresses were described, with a precision

and in a jargon which will puzzle and amuse the antiquary of future

generations. The sight of these names carried Pendennis back to the

country. "How long have the Claverings been in London?" he asked; "pray,

Morgan, have you seen any of their people?"

"Sir Francis have sent away his foring man, sir," Mr. Morgan replied;

"and have took a friend of mine as own man, sir. Indeed he applied on

my reckmendation. You may recklect Towler, sir,--tall red-aired man--but

dyes his air. Was groom of the chambers in Lord Levant's family till his

Lordship broke hup. It's a fall for Towler, sir; but pore men can't be

particklar," said the valet, with a pathetic voice.

"Devilish hard on Towler, by gad!" said the Major, amused, "and not

pleasant for Lord Levant--he, he!"

"Always knew it was coming, sir. I spoke to you of it Michaelmas was

four years: when her Ladyship put the diamonds in pawn. It was Towler,

sir, took 'em in two cabs to Dobree's--and a good deal of the plate went

the same way. Don't you remember seeing of it at Blackwall, with the

Levant arms and coronick, and Lord Levant settn oppsit to it at the

Marquis of Steyne's dinner? Beg your pardon; did I cut you, sir?"

Morgan was now operating upon the Major's chin--he continued the theme

while strapping the skilful razor. "They've took a house in Grosvenor

Place, and are coming out strong, sir. Her Ladyship's going to give

three parties, besides a dinner a week, sir. Her fortune won't stand

it--can't stand it."

"Gad, she had a devilish good cook when I was at Fairoaks," the Major

said, with very little compassion for the widow Amory's fortune.

"Marobblan was his name, sir; Marobblan's gone away, sir," Morgan

said,--and the Major, this time, with hearty sympathy, said, "he was

devilish sorry to lose him."

"There's been a tremenjuous row about that Mosseer Marobblan,"

Morgan continued "At a ball at Baymouth, sir, bless his impadence, he

challenged Mr. Harthur to fight a jewel, sir, which Mr. Arthur was

very near knocking him down, and pitchin' him outawinder, and serve him

right; but Chevalier Strong, sir, came up and stopped the shindy--I beg

pardon, the holtercation, sir--them French cooks has as much pride and

hinsolence as if they was real gentlemen."

"I heard something of that quarrel," said the Major; "but Mirobolant was

not turned off for that?"

"No, sir--that affair, sir, which Mr. Harthur forgave it him and beayved

most handsome, was hushed hup: it was about Miss Hamory, sir, that he

ad is dismissial. Those French fellers, they fancy everybody is in love

with 'em; and he climbed up the large grape vine to her winder, sir,

and was a trying to get in, when he was caught, sir; and Mr. Strong came

out, and they got the garden-engine and played on him, and there was no

end of a row, sir."

"Confound his impudence! You don't mean to say Miss Amory encouraged

him," cried the Major, amazed at a peculiar expression in Mr. Morgan's

countenance.

Morgan resumed his imperturbable demeanour. "Know nothing about it, sir.

Servants don't know them kind of things the least. Most probbly there

was nothing in it--so many lies is told about families--Marobblan went

away, bag and baggage, saucepans, and pianna, and all--the feller ad a

pianna, and wrote potry in French, and he took a lodging at Clavering,

and he hankered about the primises, and it was said that Madam Fribsy,

the milliner, brought letters to Miss Hamory, though I don't believe a

word about it; nor that he tried to pison hisself with charcoal, which

it was all a humbug betwigst him and Madam Fribsy; and he was nearly

shot by the keeper in the park."

In the course of that very day, it chanced that the Major had stationed

himself in the great window of Bays's Club in Saint James's Street, at

the hour in the afternoon when you see a half-score of respectable old

bucks similarly recreating themselves (Bays's is rather an old-fashioned

place of resort now, and many of its members more than middle-aged; but

in the time of the Prince Regent, these old fellows occupied the

same window, and were some of the very greatest dandies in this

empire)--Major Pendennis was looking from the great window, and spied

his nephew Arthur walking down the street in company with his friend Mr.

Popjoy.

"Look!" said Popjoy to Pen, as they passed, "did you ever pass Bays's

at four o'clock, without seeing that collection of old fogies? It's

a regular museum. They ought to be cast in wax, and set up at Madame

Tussaud's--"

"--In a chamber of old horrors by themselves," Pen said, laughing.

"--In the chamber of horrors! Gad, doosid good!" Pop cried. "They are

old rogues, most of 'em, and no mistake. There's old Blondel; there's

my Uncle Colchicum, the most confounded old sinner in Europe;

there's--hullo! there's somebody rapping the window and nodding at us."

"It's my uncle, the Major," said Pen. "Is he an old sinner too?"

"Notorious old rogue," Pop said, wagging his head. ("Notowious old

wogue," he pronounced the words, thereby rendering them much more

emphatic.)--"He's beckoning you in; he wants to speak to you."

"Come in too," Pen said.

"--Can't," replied the other. "Cut uncle Col. two years ago, about

Mademoiselle Frangipane--Ta, ta," and the young sinner took leave

of Pen, and the club of the elder criminals, and sauntered into

Blacquiere's, an adjacent establishment, frequented by reprobates of his

own age.

Colchicum, Blondel, and the senior bucks had just been conversing about

the Clavering family, whose appearance in London had formed the subject

of Major Pendennis's morning conversation with his valet. Mr. Blondel's

house was next to that of Sir Francis Clavering, in Grosvenor Place:

giving very good dinners himself, he had remarked some activity in his

neighbour's kitchen. Sir Francis, indeed, had a new chef, who had

come in more than once and dressed Mr. Blondel's dinner for him; that

gentleman having only a remarkably expert female artist permanently

engaged in his establishment, and employing such chiefs of note as

happened to be free on the occasion of his grand banquets. "They go to

a devilish expense and see devilish bad company as yet, I hear," Mr.

Blondel said, "they scour the streets, by gad, to get people to dine

with 'em. Champignon says it breaks his heart to serve up a dinner to

their society. What a shame it is that those low people should have

money at all," cried Mr. Blondel, whose grandfather had been a reputable

leather-breeches maker, and whose father had lent money to the Princes.

"I wish I had fallen in with the widow myself" sighed Lord Colchicum,

"and not been laid up with that confounded gout at Leghorn--I would have

married the woman myself.--I'm told she has six hundred thousand pounds

in the Threes."

"Not quite so much as that,--I knew her family in India,"--Major

Pendennis said, "I knew her family in India; her father was an

enormously rich old indigo-planter,--know all about her;--Clavering has

the next estate to ours in the country.--Ha! there's my nephew walking

with"--"With mine,--the infernal young scamp," said Lord Colchicum

glowering at Popjoy out of his heavy eyebrows; and he turned away from

the window as Major Pendennis tapped upon it.

The Major was in high good-humour. The sun was bright, the air brisk and

invigorating. He had determined upon a visit to Lady Clavering on that

day, and bethought him that Arthur would be a good companion for the

walk across the Green Park to her ladyship's door. Master Pen was not

displeased to accompany his illustrious relative, who pointed out a

dozen great men in that brief transit through St. James's Street, and

got bows from a Duke at a crossing, a Bishop (on a cob), and a Cabinet

Minister with an umbrella. The Duke gave the elder Pendennis a finger

of a pipe-clayed glove to shake, which the Major embraced with great

veneration; and all Pen's blood tingled as he found himself in actual

communication, as it were, with this famous man (for Pen had possession

of the Major's left arm, whilst the gentleman's other wing was engaged

with his Grace's right) and he wished all Grey Friars' School, all

Oxbridge University, all Paternoster Row and the Temple and Laura and

his mother at Fairoaks, could be standing on each side of the street, to

see the meeting between him and his uncle, and the most famous duke in

Christendom.

"How do, Pendennis?--fine day," were his Grace's remarkable words, and

with a nod of his august head he passed on--in a blue frock-coat and

spotless white duck trousers, in a white stock, with a shining buckle

behind.

Old Pendennis, whose likeness to his Grace has been remarked, began to

imitate him unconsciously, after they had parted, speaking with curt

sentences, after the manner of the great man. We have all of us, no

doubt, met with more than one military officer who has so imitated the

manner of a certain great Captain of the Age; and has, perhaps, changed

his own natural character and disposition, because Fate had endowed him

with an aquiline nose. In like manner have we not seen many another man

pride himself on having a tall forehead and a supposed likeness to Mr.

Canning? many another go through life swelling with self-gratification

on account of an imagined resemblance (we say "imagined," because that

anybody should be really like that most beautiful and perfect of men is

impossible) to the great and revered George IV.: many third parties, who

wore low necks to their dresses because they fancied that Lord Byron and

themselves were similar in appearance: and has not the grave closed but

lately upon poor Tom Bickerstaff, who having no more imagination

than Mr. Joseph Hume, looked in the glass and fancied himself like

Shakspeare? shaved his forehead so as farther to resemble the immortal

bard, wrote tragedies incessantly, and died perfectly crazy--actually

perished of his forehead? These or similar freaks of vanity most people

who have frequented the world must have seen in their experience. Pen

laughed in his roguish sleeve at the manner in which his uncle began to

imitate the great man from whom they had just parted but Mr. Pen was as

vain in his own way, perhaps, as the elder gentleman, and strutted, with

a very consequential air of his own, by the Major's side.

"Yes, my dear boy," said the old bachelor, as they sauntered through

the Green Park, where many poor children were disporting happily, and

errand-boys were playing at toss-halfpenny, and black sheep were grazing

in the sunshine, and an actor was learning his part on a bench, and

nursery-maids and their charges sauntered here and there, and several

couples were walking in a leisurely manner; "yes, depend on it, my boy;

for a poor man, there is nothing like having good acquaintances. Who

were those men, with whom you saw me in the bow-window at Bays's?

Two were Peers of the realm. Hobananob will be a Peer, as soon as his

grand-uncle dies, and he has had his third seizure; and of the other

four, not one has less than his seven thousand a year. Did you see that

dark blue brougham, with that tremendous stepping horse, waiting at the

door of the club? You'll know it again. It is Sir Hugh Trumpington's;

he was never known to walk in his life; never appears in the streets on

foot--never: and if he is going two doors off, to see his mother, the

old dowager (to whom I shall certainly introduce you, for she receives

some of the best company in London), gad, sir--he mounts his horse at

No. 23, and dismounts again at No. 25 A. He is now upstairs, at Bays's,

playing picquet with Count Punter: he is the second-best player in

England--as well he may be; for he plays every day of his life, except

Sundays (for Sir Hugh is an uncommonly religious man) from half-past

three till half-past seven, when he dresses for dinner.

"A very pious manner of spending his time," Pen said, laughing and

thinking that his uncle was falling into the twaddling state.

"Gad, sir, that is not the question. A man of his estate may employ his

time as he chooses. When you are a baronet, a county member, with

ten thousand acres of the best land in Cheshire, and such a place as

Trumpington (though he never goes there), you may do as you like."

"And so that was his brougham, sir, was it?" the nephew said with almost

a sneer.

"His brougham--O ay, yes!--and that brings me back to my point--revenons

a nos moutons. Yes, begad! revenons a nous moutons. Well, that brougham

is mine if I choose, between four and seven. Just as much mine as if I

jobbed it from Tilbury's, begad, for thirty pound a month. Sir Hugh is

the best natured fellow in the world; and if it hadn't been so fine an

afternoon as it is, you and I would have been in that brougham at

this very minute on our way to Grosvenor Place. That is the benefit of

knowing rich men;--I dine for nothing, sir;--I go into the country, and

I'm mounted for nothing. Other fellows keep hounds and gamekeepers for

me. Sic vos, non vobis, as we used to say at Grey Friars, hey? I'm of

the opinion of my old friend Leech, of the Forty-fourth; and a devilish

good shrewd fellow he was, as most Scotchmen are. Gad, sir, Leech used

to say, 'He was so poor that he couldn't afford to know a poor man.'"

"You don't act up to your principles, uncle," Pen said good-naturedly.

"Up to my principles; how, sir?" the Major asked, rather testily.

"You would have cut me in Saint James's Street, sir," Pen said, "were

your practice not more benevolent than your theory; you who live with

dukes and magnates of the land, and would take no notice of a poor devil

like me." By which speech we may see that Mr. Pen was getting on in the

world, and could flatter as well as laugh in his sleeve.

Major Pendennis was appeased instantly, and very much pleased. He

tapped affectionately his nephew's arm on which he was leaning, and

said,--"you, sir, you are my flesh and blood! Hang it, sir, I've been

very proud of you and very fond of you, but for your confounded follies

and extravagances--and wild oats, sir, which I hope you've sown 'em.

I hope you've sown 'em; begad! My object, Arthur, is to make a man of

you--to see you well placed in the world, as becomes one of your name

and my own, sir. You have got yourself a little reputation by your

literary talents, which I am very far from undervaluing, though in my

time, begad, poetry and genius and that sort of thing were devilish

disreputable. There was poor Byron, for instance, who ruined

himself, and contracted the worst habits by living with poets and

newspaper-writers, and people of that kind: But the times are changed

now--there's a run upon literature--clever fellows get into the best

houses in town, begad! Tempora mutantur, sir; and by Jove, I suppose

whatever is is right, as Shakspeare says."

Pen did not think fit to tell his uncle who was the author who had made

use of that remarkable phrase, and here descending from the Green Park,

the pair made their way into Grosvenor Place, and to the door of the

mansion occupied there by Sir Francis and Lady Clavering.

The dining-room shutters of this handsome mansion were freshly gilded;

the knockers shone gorgeous upon the newly painted door; the balcony

before the drawing-room bloomed with a portable garden of the most

beautiful plants, and with flowers, white, and pink, and scarlet; the

windows of the upper room (the sacred chamber and dressing-room of my

lady, doubtless), and even a pretty little casement of the third story,

which keen-sighted Mr. Pen presumed to belong to the virgin bedroom of

Miss Blanche Amory, were similarly adorned with floral ornaments, and

the whole exterior face of the house presented the most brilliant aspect

which fresh new paint, shining plate-glass, newly cleaned bricks, and

spotless mortar, could offer to the beholder.

"How Strong must have rejoiced in organising all this splendour,"

thought Pen. He recognised the Chevalier's genius in the magnificence

before him.

"Lady Clavering is going out for her drive," the Major said. "We

shall only have to leave our pasteboards, Arthur." He used the word

'pasteboards,' having heard it from some of the ingenuous youth of

the nobility about town, and as a modern phrase suited to Pen's tender

years. Indeed, as the two gentlemen reached the door, a landau drove up,

a magnificent yellow carriage, lined with brocade or satin of a faint

cream colour, drawn by wonderful grey horses, with flaming ribbons,

and harness blazing all over with crests: no less than three of these

heraldic emblems surmounted the coats-of-arms on the panels, and these

shields contained a prodigious number of quarterings, betokening the

antiquity and splendour of the house of Clavering and Snell. A coachman

in a tight silver wig surmounted the magnificent hammer-cloth (whereon

the same arms were worked in bullion), and controlled the prancing

greys--a young man still, but of a solemn countenance, with a laced

waistcoat and buckles in his shoes--little buckles, unlike those which

John and Jeames, the footmen, wear, and which we know are large, and

spread elegantly over the foot.

One of the leaves of the hall door was opened, and John--one of the

largest of his race--was leaning against the door-pillar with his

ambrosial hair powdered, his legs crossed; beautiful, silk-stockinged;

in his hand his cane, gold-headed, dolichoskion. Jeames was invisible,

but near at hand, waiting in the hall, with the gentleman who does not

wear livery, and ready to fling down the roll of hair-cloth over which

her ladyship was to step to her carriage. These things and men, the

which to tell of demands time, are seen in the glance of a practised

eye: and, in fact, the Major and Pen had scarcely crossed the street,

when the second battant of the door flew open; the horse-hair carpet

tumbled down the door-steps to those of the carriage; John was opening

it on one side of the emblazoned door, and Jeames on the other, the two

ladies, attired in the highest style of fashion, and accompanied by a

third, who carried a Blenheim spaniel, yelping in a light blue ribbon,

came forth to ascend the carriage.

Miss Amory was the first to enter, which she did with aerial lightness,

and took the place which she liked best. Lady Clavering next followed,

but her ladyship was more mature of age and heavy of foot, and one of

those feet, attired in a green satin boot, with some part of a stocking,

which was very fine, whatever the ankle might be which it encircled,

might be seen swaying on the carriage-step, as her ladyship leaned for

support on the arm of the unbending Jeames, by the enraptured observer

of female beauty who happened to be passing at the time of this imposing

ceremonial.

The Pendennises senior and junior beheld those charms as they came up to

the door--the Major looking grave and courtly, and Pen somewhat abashed

at the carriage and its owners; for he thought of sundry little passages

at Clavering, which made his heart beat rather quick.

At that moment Lady Clavering, looking round the pair,--she was on

the first carriage-step, and would have been in the vehicle in another

second, but she gave a start backwards (which caused some of the powder

to fly from the hair of ambrosial Jeames), and crying out, "Lor, if it

isn't Arthur Pendennis and the old Major!" jumped back to terra

firma directly, and holding out two fat hands, encased in tight

orange-coloured gloves, the good-natured woman warmly greeted the Major

and his nephew.

"Come in both of you.--Why haven't you been before?--Get out, Blanche,

and come and see your old friends.--O, I'm so glad to see you. We've

been waitin and waitin for you ever so long. Come in, luncheon ain't

gone down," cried out this hospitable lady, squeezing Pen's hand in both

hers (she had dropped the Major's after a brief wrench of recognition),

and Blanche, casting up her eyes towards the chimneys, descended from

the carriage presently, with a timid, blushing, appealing look, and gave

a little hand to Major Pendennis.

The companion with the spaniel looked about irresolute, and doubting

whether she should not take Fido his airing; but she too turned right

about face and entered the house, after Lady Clavering, her daughter,

and the two gentlemen. And the carriage, with the prancing greys, was

left unoccupied, save by the coachman in the silver wig.

CHAPTER XXXVIII. In which the Sylph reappears

Better folks than Morgan, the valet, were not so well instructed as

that gentleman, regarding the amount of Lady Clavering's riches; and the

legend in London, upon her Ladyship's arrival in the polite metropolis,

was, that her fortune was enormous. Indigo factories, opium clippers,

banks overflowing with rupees, diamonds and jewels of native princes,

and vast sums of interest paid by them for loans contracted by

themselves or their predecessors to Lady Clavering's father, were

mentioned as sources of her wealth. Her account at her London banker's

was positively known, and the sum embraced so many cyphers as to create

as many O's of admiration in the wondering hearer. It was a known fact

that an envoy from an Indian Prince, a Colonel Altamont, the Nawaub of

Lucknow's prime favourite, an extraordinary man, who had, it was said,

embraced Mahometanism, and undergone a thousand wild and perilous

adventures was at present in this country, trying to negotiate with the

Begum Clavering, the sale of the Nawaub's celebrated nose-ring diamond,

'the light of the Dewan.'

Under the title of the Begum, Lady Clavering's fame began to spread in

London before she herself descended upon the Capital, and as it has been

the boast of Delolme, and Blackstone, and all panegyrists of the British

Constitution, that we admit into our aristocracy merit of every kind,

and that the lowliest-born man, if he but deserve it, may wear the robes

of a peer, and sit alongside of a Cavendish or a Stanley: so it ought to

be the boast of our good society, that haughty though it be, naturally

jealous of its privileges, and careful who shall be admitted into its

circle, yet, if an individual be but rich enough, all barriers are

instantly removed, and he or she is welcomed, as from his wealth he

merits to be. This fact shows our British independence and honest

feeling--our higher orders are not such mere haughty aristocrats as the

ignorant represent them: on the contrary, if a man have money they will

hold out their hands to him, eat his dinners, dance at his balls, marry

his daughters, or give their own lovely girls to his sons, as affably as

your commonest roturier would do.

As he had superintended the arrangements of the country mansion, our

friend, the Chevalier Strong, gave the benefit of his taste and advice

to the fashionable London upholsterers, who prepared the town house for

the reception of the Clavering family. In the decoration of this elegant

abode, honest Strong's soul rejoiced as much as if he had been himself

its proprietor. He hung and re-hung the pictures, he studied the

positions of sofas, he had interviews with wine merchants and purveyors

who were to supply the new establishment; and at the same time the

Baronet's factotum and confidential friend took the opportunity of

furnishing his own chambers, and stocking his snug little cellar: his

friends complimented him upon the neatness of the former; and the

select guests who came in to share Strong's cutlet new found a bottle

of excellent claret to accompany the meal. The Chevalier was now, as he

said, "in clover:" he had a very comfortable set of rooms in Shepherd's

Inn. He was waited on by a former Spanish Legionary and comrade of his

whom he had left at a breach of a Spanish fort, and found at a crossing

in Tottenham-court Road, and whom he had elevated to the rank of

body-servant to himself and to the chum who, at present, shared his

lodgings. This was no other than the favourite of the Nawaub of Lucknow,

the valiant Colonel Altamont.

No man was less curious, or at any rate, more discreet, than Ned Strong,

and he did not care to inquire into the mysterious connexion which, very

soon after their first meeting at Baymouth was established between Sir

Francis Clavering and the envoy of the Nawaub. The latter knew some

secret regarding the former, which put Clavering into his power,

somehow; and Strong, who knew that his patron's early life had been

rather irregular, and that his career with his regiment in India had not

been brilliant, supposed that the Colonel, who swore he knew Clavering

well at Calcutta, had some hold upon Sir Francis, to which the latter

was forced to yield. In truth, Strong had long understood Sir Francis

Clavering's character, as that of a man utterly weak in purpose, in

principle, and intellect, a moral and physical trifler and poltroon.

With poor Clavering, his Excellency had had one or two interviews after

their Baymouth meeting, the nature of which conversations the Baronet

did not confide to Strong: although he sent letters to Altamont by that

gentleman, who was his ambassador in all sorts of affairs. On one of

these occasions the Nawaub's envoy must have been in an exceeding ill

humour; for he crushed Clavering's letter in his hand, and said with his

own particular manner and emphasis:--

"A hundred, be hanged. I'll have no more letters nor no more

shilly-shally. Tell Clavering I'll have a thousand, or by Jove I'll

split, and burst him all to atoms. Let him give me a thousand and I'll

go abroad, and I give you my honour as a gentleman, I'll not ask him for

no more for a year. Give him that message from me, Strong, my boy; and

tell him if the money ain't here next Friday at twelve o'clock, as

sure as my name's what it is, I'll have a paragraph in the newspaper on

Saturday, and next week I'll blow up the whole concern."

Strong carried back these words to his principal, on whom their effect

was such that actually on the day and hour appointed, the Chevalier made

his appearance once more at Altamont's hotel at Baymouth, with the sum

of money required. Altamont was a gentleman, he said, and behaved as

such; he paid his bill at the Inn, and the Baymouth paper announced his

departure on a foreign tour. Strong saw him embark at Dover. "It must

be forgery at the very least," he thought, "that has put Clavering into

this fellow's power, and the Colonel has got the bill."

Before the year was out, however, this happy country saw the Colonel

once more upon its shores. A confounded run on the red had finished

him, he said, at Baden Baden: no gentleman could stand against a colour

coming up fourteen times. He had been obliged to draw upon Sir Francis

Clavering for means of returning home: and Clavering, though pressed for

money (for he had election expenses, had set up his establishment in the

country and was engaged in furnishing his London house), yet found means

to accept Colonel Altamont's bill, though evidently very much against

his will; for in Strong's hearing, Sir Francis wished to heaven, with

many curses, that the Colonel could have been locked up in a debtor's

goal in Germany for life, so that he might never be troubled again.

These sums for the Colonel Sir Francis was obliged to raise without the

knowledge of his wife; for though perfectly liberal, nay, sumptuous in

her expenditure, the good lady had inherited a tolerable aptitude for

business along with the large fortune of her father, Snell, and gave

to her husband only such a handsome allowance as she thought befitted

a gentleman of his rank. Now and again she would give him a present,

or pay an outstanding gambling debt; but she always exacted a pretty

accurate account of the moneys so required; and respecting the subsidies

to the Colonel, Clavering fairly told Strong that he couldn't speak to

his wife.

Part of Mr. Strong's business in life was to procure this money and

other sums, for his patron. And in the Chevalier's apartments, in

Shepherd's Inn, many negotiations took place between gentlemen of the

moneyed world and Sir Francis Clavering, and many valuable bank-notes

and pieces of stamped paper were passed between them. When a man has

been in the habit of getting in debt from his early youth, and of

exchanging his promises to pay at twelve months against present sums

of money, it would seem as if no piece of good fortune ever permanently

benefited him: a little while after the advent of prosperity, the

money-lender is pretty certain to be in the house again, and the bills

with the old signature in the market. Clavering found it more convenient

to see these gentry at Strong's lodgings than at his own; and such was

the Chevalier's friendship for the Baronet that although he did not

possess a shilling of his own, his name might be seen as the drawer of

almost all the bills of exchange which Sir Francis Clavering accepted.

Having drawn Clavering's bills, he got them discounted "in the City."

When they became due he parleyed with the bill-holders, and gave

them instalments of their debt, or got time in exchange for fresh

acceptances. Regularly or irregularly, gentlemen must live somehow:

and as we read how, the other day, at Comorn, the troops forming that

garrison were gay and lively, acted plays, danced at balls, and consumed

their rations; though menaced with an assault from the enemy without the

walls, and with a gallows if the Austrians were successful,--so there

are hundreds of gallant spirits in this town, walking about in good

spirits, dining every day in tolerable gaiety and plenty, and going to

sleep comfortably; with a bailiff always more or less near, and a

rope of debt round their necks--the which trifling inconveniences, Ned

Strong, the old soldier, bore very easily.

But we shall have another opportunity of making acquaintance with these

and some other interesting inhabitants of Shepherd's Inn, and in the

meanwhile are keeping Lady Clavering and her friends too long waiting on

the door-steps of Grosvenor Place.

First they went into the gorgeous dining-room, fitted up, Lady Clavering

couldn't for goodness gracious tell why, in the middle-aged style,

"unless," said her good-natured ladyship, laughing, "because me and

Clavering are middle-aged people;"--and here they were offered the

copious remains of the luncheon of which Lady Clavering and Blanche had

just partaken. When nobody was near, our little Sylphide, who scarcely

ate at dinner more than the six grains of rice of Amina, the friend of

the Ghouls in the Arabian Nights, was most active with her knife and

fork, and consumed a very substantial portion of mutton cutlets: in

which piece of hypocrisy it is believed she resembled other young ladies

of fashion. Pen and his uncle declined the refection, but they admired

the dining-room with fitting compliments, and pronounced it "very

chaste," that being the proper phrase. There were, indeed, high-backed

Dutch chairs of the seventeenth century; there was a sculptured carved

buffet of the sixteenth; there was a sideboard robbed out of the carved

work of a church in the Low Countries, and a large brass cathedral lamp

over the round oak table; there were old family portraits from Wardour

Street and tapestry from France, bits of armour, double-handed swords

and battle-axes made of carton-pierre, looking-glasses, statuettes of

saints, and Dresden china--nothing, in a word, could be chaster. Behind

the dining-room was the library, fitted with busts and books all of

a size, and wonderful easy-chairs, and solemn bronzes in the severe

classic style. Here it was that, guarded by double doors, Sir Francis

smoked cigars, and read Bell's Life in London, and went to sleep after

dinner, when he was not smoking over the billiard-table at his clubs, or

punting at the gambling-houses in Saint James's.

But what could equal the chaste splendour of the drawing-rooms?--the

carpets were so magnificently fluffy that your foot made no more noise

on them than your shadow: on their white ground bloomed roses and tulips

as big as warming-pans: about the room were high chairs and low chairs,

bandy-legged chairs, chairs so attenuated that it was a wonder any but

a sylph could sit upon them, marquetterie-tables covered with marvellous

gimcracks, china ornaments of all ages and countries, bronzes, gilt

daggers, Books of Beauty, yataghans, Turkish papooshes and boxes of

Parisian bonbons. Wherever you sate down there were Dresden shepherds

and shepherdesses convenient at your elbow; there were, moreover, light

blue poodles and ducks and cocks and hens in porcelain; there were

nymphs by Boucher, and shepherdesses by Greuze, very chaste indeed;

there were muslin curtains and brocade curtains, gilt cages with

parroquets and love-birds, two squealing cockatoos, each out-squealing

and out-chattering the other; a clock singing tunes on a console-table,

and another booming the hours like Great Tom, on the mantelpiece--there

was, in a word, everything that comfort could desire, and the most

elegant taste devise. A London drawing-room, fitted up without regard

to expense, is surely one of the noblest and most curious sights of the

present day. The Romans of the Lower Empire, the dear Marchionesses and

Countesses of Louis XV., could scarcely have had a finer taste than our

modern folks exhibit; and everybody who saw Lady Clavering's reception

rooms, was forced to confess that they were most elegant; and that the

prettiest rooms in London--Lady Harley Quin's, Lady Hanway Wardour's,

or Mrs. Hodge-Podgson's own; the great Railroad Croesus' wife, were not

fitted up with a more consummate "chastity."

Poor Lady Clavering, meanwhile, knew little regarding these things, and

had a sad want of respect for the splendours around her. "I only know

they cost a precious deal of money, Major," she said to her guest, "and

that I don't advise you to try one of them gossamer gilt chairs: I came

down on one the night we gave our second dinner-party. Why didn't you

come and see us before? We'd have asked you to it."

"You would have liked to see Mamma break a chair, wouldn't you, Mr.

Pendennis?" dear Blanche said with a sneer. She was angry because Pen

was talking and laughing with Mamma, because Mamma had made a number of

blunders in describing the house--for a hundred other good reasons.

"I should like to have been by to give Lady Clavering my arm if she had

need of it," Pen answered, with a bow and a blush.

"Quel preux Chevalier!" cried the Sylphide, tossing up her little head.

"I have a fellow-feeling with those who fall, remember," Pen said. "I

suffered myself very much from doing so once."

"And you went home to Laura to console you," said Miss Amory. Pen

winced. He did not like the remembrance of the consolation which Laura

had given to him, nor was he very well pleased to find that his rebuff

in that quarter was known to the world; so as he had nothing to say in

reply, he began to be immensely interested in the furniture round about

him, and to praise Lady Clavering's taste with all his might.

"No, don't praise me," said honest Lady Clavering, "it's all the

upholsterer's doings and Captain Strong's, they did it all while we

was at the Park--and--and--Lady Rockminster has been here and says the

salongs are very well," said Lady Clavering, with an air and tone of

great deference.

"My cousin Laura has been staying with her," Pen said.

"It's not the dowager: it is the Lady Rockminster."

"Indeed!" cried Major Pendennis, when he heard this great name of

fashion. "If you have her ladyship's approval, Lady Clavering, you

cannot be far wrong. No, no, you cannot be far wrong. Lady Rockminster,

I should say, Arthur, is the very centre of the circle of fashion and

taste. The rooms are beautiful indeed!" and the Major's voice hushed

as he spoke of this great lady, and he looked round and surveyed the

apartments awfully and respectfully, as if he had been at church.

"Yes, Lady Rockminster has took us up," said Lady Clavering.

"Taken us up, Mamma," cried Blanche, in a shrill voice.

"Well, taken us up, then," said my lady; "it's very kind of her, and

I dare say we shall like it when we git used to it, only at first one

don't fancy being took--well, taken up, at all. She is going to give

our balls for us; and wants to invite all our dinners. But I won't stand

that. I will have my old friends and I won't let her send all the cards

out, and sit mum at the head of my own table. You must come to me,

Arthur and Major--come, let me see, on the 14th.--It ain't one of our

grand dinners, Blanche," she said, looking round at her daughter, who

bit her lips and frowned very savagely for a sylphide.

The Major, with a smile and a bow, said he would much rather come to a

quiet meeting than to a grand dinner. He had had enough of those large

entertainments, and preferred the simplicity of the home circle.

"I always think a dinner's the best the second day," said Lady

Clavering, thinking to mend her first speech. "On the 14th we'll be

quite a snug little party;" at which second blunder, Miss Blanche

clasped her hands in despair, and said "O, mamma, vous etes

incorrigible." Major Pendennis vowed that he liked snug dinners of all

things in the world, and confounded her ladyship's impudence for daring

to ask such a man as him to a second day's dinner. But he was a man of

an economical turn of mind, and bethinking himself that he could throw

over these people if anything better should offer, he accepted with

the blandest air. As for Pen, he was not a diner-out of thirty years'

standing as yet, and the idea of a fine feast in a fine house was still

perfectly welcome to him.

"What was that pretty little quarrel which engaged itself between your

worship and Miss Amory?" the Major asked of Pen, as they walked away

together. "I thought you used to au mieux in that quarter."

"Used to be," answered Pen, with a dandified air "is a vague phrase

regarding a woman. Was and is are two very different terms, sir, as

regards women's hearts especially.

"Egad, they change as we do," cried the elder. "When we took the Cape of

Good Hope, I recollect there was a lady who talked poisoning herself for

your humble servant; and, begad, in three months she ran away from her

husband with somebody else. Don't get yourself entangled with that Miss

Amory, She is forward, affected, and under-bred; and her character is

somewhat--never mind what. But don't think of her; ten thousand pound

won't do for you. What, my good fellow, is ten thousand pound? I would

scarcely pay that girl's milliner's bill with the interest of the

money."

"You seem to be a connoisseur in millinery, Uncle" Pen said.

"I was, sir, I was," replied the senior; "and the old war-horse, you

know, never hears the sound of a trumpet, but he begins to he, he!--you

understand,"--and he gave a killing and somewhat superannuated leer and

bow to a carriage that passed them and entered the Park.

"Lady Catherine Martingale's carriage" he said "mons'ous fine girls

the daughters, though, gad, I remember their mother a thousand

times handsomer. No, Arthur, my dear fellow, with your person and

expectations, you ought to make a good coup in marriage some day or

other; and though I wouldn't have this repeated at Fairoaks, you rogue,

ha! ha! a reputation for a little wickedness, and for being an homme

dangereux, don't hurt a young fellow with the women. They like it, sir,

they hate a milksop--young men must be young men, you know. But for

marriage," continued the veteran moralist, "that is a very different

matter. Marry a woman with money. I've told you before it is as easy to

get a rich wife as a poor one; and a doosed deal more comfortable to sit

down to a well-cooked dinner, with your little entrees nicely served,

than to have nothing but a damned cold leg of mutton between you and

your wife. We shall have a good dinner on the 14th, when we dine with

Sir Francis Clavering: stick to that, my boy, in your relations with the

family. Cultivate 'em, but keep 'em for dining. No more of your youthful

follies and nonsense about love in a cottage."

"It must be a cottage with a double coach-house, a cottage of gentility,

sir," said Pen, quoting the hackneyed ballad of the Devil's Walk: but

his Uncle did not know that poem (though, perhaps, he might be

leading Pen upon the very promenade in question), and went on with his

philosophical remarks, very much pleased with the aptness of the pupil

to whom he addressed them. Indeed Arthur Pendennis was a clever fellow,

who took his colour very readily from his neighbour, and found the

adaptation only too easy.

Warrington, the grumbler, growled out that Pen was becoming such a puppy

that soon there would be no bearing him. But the truth is, the young

man's success and dashing manners pleased his elder companion. He liked

to see Pen gay and spirited, and brimful of health, and life, and

hope; as a man who has long since left off being amused with clown and

harlequin, still gets a pleasure in watching a child at a pantomime.

Mr. Pen's former sulkiness disappeared with his better fortune: and he

bloomed as the sun began to shine upon him.

CHAPTER XXXIX. Colonel Altamont appears and disappears

On the day appointed, Major Pendennis, who had formed no better

engagement, and Arthur who desired none, arrived together to dine with

Sir Francis Clavering. The only tenants of the drawing-room when Pen

and his uncle reached it, were Sir Francis and his wife, and our friend

Captain Strong, whom Arthur was very glad to see, though the Major

looked very sulkily at Strong, being by no means well pleased to sit

down to dinner with Clavering's d---- house-steward, as he irreverently

called Strong. But Mr. Welbore Welbore, Clavering's country neighbour

and brother member of Parliament, speedily arriving, Pendennis the elder

was somewhat appeased, for Welbore, though perfectly dull, and taking

no more part in the conversation at dinner than the footman behind his

chair, was a respectable country gentleman of ancient family and seven

thousand a year: and the Major felt always at ease in such society. To

these were added other persons of note: the Dowager Lady Rockminster,

who had her reasons for being well with the Clavering family, and the

Lady Agnes Foker, with her son Mr. Harry, our old acquaintance. Mr.

Pynsent could not come, his parliamentary duties keeping him at the

House, duties which sate upon the two other senators very lightly. Miss

Blanche Amory was the last of the company who made her appearance. She

was dressed in a killing white silk dress which displayed her pearly

shoulders to the utmost advantage. Foker whisped to Pen, who regarded

her with eyes of evident admiration, that he considered her "a stunner."

She chose to be very gracious to Arthur upon this day, and held out her

hand most cordially, and talked about dear Fairoaks, and asked for

dear Laura and his mother, and said she was longing to go back to the

country, and in fact was entirely simple, affectionate, and artless.

Harry Foker thought he had never seen anybody so amiable and delightful

Not accustomed much to the society of ladies, and ordinarily being dumb

to their presence, he found that he could speak before Miss Amory,

and became uncommonly lively and talkative, even before the dinner was

announced and the party descended to the lower rooms. He would have

longed to give his arm to the fair Blanche, and conduct her down the

broad carpeted stair; but she fell to the lot of Pen upon this occasion,

Mr. Foker being appointed to escort Mrs. Welbore Welbore, in consequence

of his superior rank as an earl's grandson.

But though he was separated from the object of his desire during the

passage downstairs, the delighted Foker found himself by Miss Amory's

side at the dinner-table, and flattered himself that he had manoeuvred

very well in securing that happy place. It may be that the move was not

his, but that it was made by another person. Blanche had thus the two

young men, one on each side of her, and each tried to render himself

gallant and agreeable.

Foker's mamma, from her place, surveying her darling boy, was surprised

at his vivacity. Harry talked constantly to his fair neighbour about the

topics of the day.

"Seen Taglioni in the Sylphide, Miss Amory? Bring me that souprame of

Volile again if you please (this was addressed to the attendant near

him), very good: can't think where the souprames come from; what becomes

of the legs of the fowls, I wonder? She's clipping in the Sylphide,

ain't she?" and he began very kindly to hum the pretty air which

pervades that prettiest of all ballets, now faded into the past with

that most beautiful and gracious of all dancers. Will the young folks

ever see anything so charming, anything so classic, anything like

Taglioni?

"Miss Amory is a sylph herself," said Mr. Pen.

"What a delightful tenor voice you have, Mr. Foker," said the young

lady. "I am sure you have been well taught. I sing a little myself. I

should like to sing with you."

Pen remembered that words very similar had been addressed to himself by

the young lady, and that she had liked to sing with him in former days.

And sneering within himself, he wondered with how many other gentlemen

she had sung duets since his time? But he did not think fit to put this

awkward question aloud: and only said, with the very tenderest air which

he could assume, "I should like to hear you sing again, Miss Blanche. I

never heard a voice I liked so well as yours, I think."

"I thought you liked Laura's," said Miss Blanche.

"Laura's is a contralto: and that voice is very often out, you know,"

Pen said, bitterly. "I have heard a great deal of music, in London,"

he continued. "I'm tired of those professional people--they sing too

loud--or I have grown too old or too blase. One grows old very soon, in

London, Miss Amory. And like all old fellows, I only care for the songs

I heard in my youth."

"I like English music best. I don't care for foreign songs much. Get me

some saddle of mutton," said Mr. Foker.

"I adore English ballads, of all things," said Miss Amory.

"Sing me one of the old songs after dinner, will you?" said Pen, with an

imploring voice.

"Shall I sing you an English song, after dinner?" asked the Sylphide,

turning to Mr. Foker. "I will, if you will promise to come up soon:" and

she gave him a perfect broadside of her eyes.

"I'll come up after dinner, fast enough," he said, simply. "I don't care

about much wine afterwards--I take my whack at dinner--I mean my share,

you know; and when I have had as much as I want I toddle up to tea. I'm

a domestic character, Miss Amory--my habits are simple--and when I'm

pleased I'm generally in a good-humour, ain't I, Pen?--that jelly, if

you please--not that one, the other with the cherries inside. How the

doose do they get those cherries inside the jellies?" In this way

the artless youth prattled on: and Miss Amory listened to him with

inexhaustible good-humour. When the ladies took their departure for the

upper regions, Blanche made the two young men promise faithfully to quit

the table soon, and departed with kind glances to each. She dropped her

gloves on Foker's side of the table and her handkerchief on Pen's. Each

had had some little attention paid to him: her politeness to Mr. Foker

was perhaps a little more encouraging than her kindness to Arthur: but

the benevolent little creature did her best to make both the gentlemen

happy. Foker caught her last glance as she rushed out of the door; that

bright look passed over Mr. Strong's broad white waistcoat and shot

straight at Harry Foker's. The door closed on the charmer: he sate down

with a sigh, and swallowed a bumper of claret.

As the dinner at which Pen and his uncle took their places was not one

of our grand parties, it had been served at a considerably earlier hour

than those ceremonial banquets of the London season, which custom has

ordained shall scarcely take place before nine o'clock; and, the company

being small, and Miss Blanche anxious to betake herself to her piano in

the drawing-room, giving constant hints to her mother to retreat,--Lady

Clavering made that signal very speedily, so that it was quite

daylight yet when the ladies reached the upper apartments, from the

flower-embroidered balconies of which they could command a view of the

two Parks, of the poor couples and children still sauntering in the one,

and of the equipages of ladies and the horses of dandies passing through

the arch of the other. The sun, in a word had not set behind the elms

of Kensington Gardens, and was still gilding the statue erected by the

ladies of England in honour of his Grace the Duke of Wellington, when

Lady Clavering and her female friends left the gentlemen drinking wine.

The windows of the dining-room were opened to let in the fresh air,

and afforded to the passers-by in the street a pleasant, or perhaps,

tantalising view of six gentlemen in white waistcoats with a quantity

of decanters and a variety of fruits before them--little boys, as they

passed and jumped up at the area-railings and took a peep, said to one

another, "Hi hi, Jim, shouldn't you like to be there and have a cut of

that there pineapple?"--the horses and carriages of the nobility and

gentry passed by conveying them to Belgravian toilets: the policeman,

with clamping feet patrolled up and down before the mansion: the shades

of evening began to fall: the gasman came and lighted the lamps before

Sir Francis's door: the butler entered the dining-room, and illuminated

the antique gothic chandelier over the antique carved oak dining-table:

so that from outside the house you looked inwards upon a night-scene of

feasting and wax-candles; and from within you beheld a vision of a calm

summer evening, and the wall of Saint James's Park, and the sky above,

in which a star or two was just beginning to twinkle.

Jeames, with folded legs, leaning against the door-pillar of his

master's abode, looked forth musingly upon the latter tranquil sight:

whilst a spectator clinging to the railings examined the former scene.

Policeman X passing, gave his attention to neither, but fixed it upon

the individual holding by the railings, and gazing into Sir Francis

Clavering's dining-room, where Strong was laughing and talking away,

making the conversation for the party.

The man at the railing was very gorgeously attired with chains,

jewellery, and waistcoats, which the illumination from the house lighted

up to great advantage; his boots were shiny; he had brass buttons to his

coat, and large white wristbands over his knuckles; and indeed looked so

grand, that X imagined he beheld a member of parliament, or a person

of consideration before him. Whatever his rank, however, the M.P.,

or person of consideration, was considerably excited by wine; for he

lurched and reeled somewhat in his gait, and his hat was cocked over

his wild and bloodshot eyes in a manner which no sober hat ever could

assume. His copious black hair was evidently surreptitious, and his

whiskers of the Tyrian purple.

As Strong's laughter, following after one of his own gros mots, came

ringing out of window, this gentleman without laughed and sniggered in

the queerest way likewise, and he slapped his thigh and winked at Jeames

pensive in the portico, as much as to say, "Plush, my boy, isn't that a

good story?"

Jeames's attention had been gradually drawn from the moon in the

heavens to this sublunary scene; and he was puzzled and alarmed by the

appearance of the man in shiny boots. "A holtercation," he remarked

afterwards, in the servants'-hall--a "holtercation with a feller in

the streets is never no good; and indeed he was not hired for any

such purpose." So, having surveyed the man for some time, who went

on laughing, reeling, nodding his head with tipsy knowingness, Jeames

looked out of the portico, and softly called "Pleaceman," and beckoned

to that officer.

X marched up resolute, with one Berlin glove stuck in his belt-side, and

Jeames simply pointed with his index finger to the individual who was

laughing against the railings. Not one single word more than "Pleaceman"

did he say, but stood there in the calm summer evening, pointing calmly:

a grand sight.

X advanced to the individual and said, "Now, sir, will you have the

kindness to move hon?"

The individual, who was in perfect good-humour, did not appear to bear

one word which Policeman X uttered, but nodded and waggled his grinning

head at Strong, until his hat almost fell from his head over the area

railings.

"Now, sir, move on, do you hear?" cries X, in a much more peremptory

tone, and he touched the stranger gently with one of the fingers

enclosed in the gauntlets of the Berlin woof.

He of the many rings instantly started, or rather staggered back, into

what is called an attitude of self-defence, and in that position began

the operation which is entitled 'squaring' at Policeman X, and showed

himself brave and warlike, if unsteady. "Hullo! keep your hands off a

gentleman," he said, with an oath which need not be repeated.

"Move on out of this," said X, "and don't be a blocking up the pavement,

staring into gentlemen's dining-rooms."

"Not stare--ho, ho,--not stare--that is a good one," replied the other

with a satiric laugh and sneer--"Who's to prevent me from staring,

looking at my friends, if I like? not you, old highlows."

"Friends! I dessay. Move on," answered X.

"If you touch me, I'll pitch into you, I will," roared the other. "I

tell you I know 'em all--That's Sir Francis Clavering, Baronet, M.P.--I

know him, and he knows me--and that's Strong, and that's the young chap

that made the row at the ball. I say, Strong, Strong!"

"It's that d---- Altamont," cried Sir Francis within, with a start and a

guilty look; and Strong also, with a look of annoyance, got up from the

table, and ran out to the intruder.

A gentleman in a white waistcoat, running out from a dining-room

bareheaded, a policeman, and an individual decently attired, engaged in

almost fisticuffs on the pavement, were enough to make a crowd, even in

that quiet neighbourhood, at half-past eight o'clock in the evening, and

a small mob began to assemble before Sir Francis Clavering's door. "For

God's sake, come in," Strong said, seizing his acquaintance's arm. "Send

for a cab, James, if you please," he added in an under voice to that

domestic; and carrying the excited gentleman out of the street, the

outer door was closed upon him, and the small crowd began to move away.

Mr. Strong had intended to convey the stranger into Sir Francis's

private sitting-room, where the hats of the male guests were awaiting

them, and having there soothed his friend by bland conversation, to have

carried him off as soon as the cab arrived--but the new-comer was in a

great state of wrath at the indignity which had been put upon him; and

when Strong would have led him into the second door, said in a tipsy

voice, "That ain't the door--that's the dining-room door--where the

drink's going on--and I'll go and have some, by Jove; I'll go and have

some." At this audacity the butler stood aghast in the hall, and placed

himself before the door: but it opened behind him, and the master of the

house made his appearance, with anxious looks.

"I will have some,--by ---- I will," the intruder was roaring out, as

Sir Francis came forward. "Hullo! Clavering, I say I'm come to have some

wine with you; hay! old boy--hay, old corkscrew? Get us a bottle of the

yellow seal, you old thief--the very best--a hundred rupees a dozen, and

no mistake."

The host reflected a moment over his company. There is only Welbore,

Pendennis, and those two lads, he thought--and with a forced laugh and a

piteous look, he said,--"Well, Altamont, come in. I am very glad to see

you, I'm sure."

Colonel Altamont, for the intelligent reader has doubtless long ere this

discovered in the stranger His Excellency the Ambassador of the Nawaub

of Lucknow, reeled into the dining-room, with a triumphant look towards

Jeames, the footman, which seemed to say, "There, sir, what do you think

of that? Now, am I a gentleman or no?" and sank down into the first

vacant chair. Sir Francis Clavering timidly stammered out the Colonel's

name to his guest Mr. Welbore Welbore, and his Excellency began drinking

wine forthwith and gazing round upon the company, now with the most

wonderful frowns, and anon with the blandest smiles, and hiccupped

remarks encomiastic of the drink which he was imbibing.

"Very singular man. Has resided long in a native court in India,"

Strong said, with great gravity, the Chevalier's presence of mind never

deserting him--"in those Indian courts they get very singular habits."

"Very," said Major Pendennis, drily, and wondering what in goodness'

name was the company into which he had got.

Mr. Foker was pleased with the new-comer. "It's the man who would sing

the Malay song at the Back Kitchen," he whispered to Pen. "Try this

pine, sir," he then said to Colonel Altamont, "it's uncommonly fine."

"Pines--I've seen 'em feed pigs on pines," said the Colonel.

"All the Nawaub of Lucknow's pigs are fed on pines," Strong whispered to

Major Pendennis.

"Oh, of course," the Major answered. Sir Francis Clavering was, in the

meanwhile, endeavouring to make an excuse to his brother-guest for the

new-comer's condition, and muttered something regarding Altamont, that

he was an extraordinary character, very eccentric, very--had Indian

habits--didn't understand the rules of English society--to which

old Welbore, a shrewd old gentleman, who drank his wine with great

regularity, said, "that seemed pretty clear."

Then the Colonel, seeing Pen's honest face, regarded it for a while with

as much steadiness as became his condition; and said, "I know you, too,

young fellow. I remember you. Baymouth ball, by Jingo. Wanted to fight

the Frenchman. I remember you;" and he laughed, and he squared with his

fists, and seemed hugely amused in the drunken depths of his mind, as

these recollections passed, or, rather, reeled across it.

"Mr. Pendennis, you remember Colonel Altamont, at Baymouth?" Strong

said: upon which Pen, bowing rather stiffly, said, "he had the pleasure

of remembering that circumstance perfectly."

"What's his name?" cried the Colonel. Strong named Mr. Pendennis again.

"Pendennis!--Pendennis be hanged!" Altamont roared out to the surprise

of every one, and thumping with his fist on the table.

"My name is also Pendennis, sir," said the Major, whose dignity was

exceedingly mortified by the evening's events--that he, Major Pendennis,

should have been asked to such a party, and that a drunken man should

have been introduced to it. "My name is Pendennis, and I will be obliged

to you not to curse it too loudly."

The tipsy man turned round to look at him, and as he looked, it appeared

as if Colonel Altamont suddenly grew sober. He put his hand across his

forehead, and in doing so, displaced somewhat the black wig which he

wore; and his eyes stared fiercely at the Major, who, in his turn, like

a resolute old warrior as he was, looked at his opponent very keenly and

steadily. At the end of the mutual inspection, Altamont began to button

up his brass-buttoned coat, and rising up from his chair, suddenly, and

to the company's astonishment, reeled towards the door, and issued

from it, followed by Strong: all that the latter heard him utter

was--"Captain Beak! Captain Beak, by jingo!"

There had not passed above a quarter of an hour from his strange

appearance to his equally sudden departure. The two young men and

the baronet's other guest wondered at the scene, and could find no

explanation for it. Clavering seemed exceedingly pale and agitated, and

turned with looks of almost terror towards Major Pendennis. The latter

had been eyeing his host keenly for a moment or two. "Do you know him?"

asked Sir Francis of the Major.

"I am sure I have seen the fellow," the Major replied, looking as if

he, too, was puzzled. "Yes, I have it. He was a deserter from the Horse

Artillery who got into the Nawaub's service. I remember his face quite

well."

"Oh!" said Clavering, with a sigh which indicated immense relief of

mind, and the Major looked at him with a twinkle of his sharp old eyes.

The cab which Strong had desired to be called, drove away with the

Chevalier and Colonel Altamont; coffee was brought to the remaining

gentlemen, and they went upstairs to the ladies in the drawing-room,

Foker declaring confidentially to Pen that "this was the rummest go

he ever saw," which decision Pen said, laughing, "Showed great

discrimination on Mr. Foker's part."

Then, according to her promise, Miss Amory made music for the young men.

Foker was enraptured with her performance, and kindly joined in the

airs which she sang, when he happened to be acquainted with them. Pen

affected to talk aside with others of the party, but Blanche brought him

quickly to the piano, by singing some of his own words, those which

we have given in a previous number, indeed, and which the Sylphide had

herself, she said, set to music. I don't know whether the air was hers,

or how much of it was arranged for her by Signor Twankidillo, from whom

she took lessons: but good or bad, original or otherwise, it delighted

Mr. Pen, who remained by her side, and turned the leaves now for her

most assiduously--"Gad! how I wish I could write verses like you, Pen,"

Foker sighed afterwards to his companion. "If I could do 'em, wouldn't

I, that's all? But I never was a dab at writing, you see, and I'm sorry

I was so idle when I was at school."

No mention was made before the ladies of the curious little scene which

had been transacted below-stairs; although Pen was just on the point of

describing it to Miss Amory, when that young lady inquired for Captain

Strong, who she wished should join her in a duet. But chancing to look

up towards Sir Francis Clavering, Arthur saw a peculiar expression of

alarm in the baronet's ordinarily vacuous face, and discreetly held his

tongue. It was rather a dull evening. Welbore went to sleep as he always

did at music and after dinner: nor did Major Pendennis entertain the

ladies with copious anecdotes and endless little scandalous stories,

as his wont was, but sate silent for the most part, and appeared to be

listening to the music, and watching the fair young performer.

The hour of departure having arrived the Major rose, regretting that so

delightful an evening should have passed away so quickly, and addressed

a particularly fine compliment to Miss Amory upon her splendid talents

as a singer. "Your daughter, Lady Clavering," he said to that lady, "is

a perfect nightingale--a perfect nightingale, begad! I have scarcely

ever heard anything equal to her, and her pronunciation of every

language--begad, of every language--seems to me to be perfect; and

the best houses in London must open before a young lady who has such

talents, and, allow an old fellow to say, Miss Amory, such a face."

Blanche was as much astonished by these compliments as Pen was, to whom

his uncle, a little time since, had been speaking in very disparaging

terms of the Sylph. The Major and the two young men walked home

together, after Mr. Foker had placed his mother in her carriage, and

procured a light for an enormous cigar.

The young gentleman's company or his tobacco did not appear to be

agreeable to Major Pendennis, who eyed him askance several times, and

with a look which plainly indicated that he wished Mr. Foker would take

his leave; but Foker hung on resolutely to the uncle and nephew, even

until they came to the former's door in Bury Street, where the Major

wished the lads good night.

"And I say, Pen," he said in a confidential whisper, calling his nephew

back, "mind you make a point of calling in Grosvenor Place to-morrow.

They've been uncommonly civil; mons'ously civil and kind."

Pen promised and wondered, and the Major's door having been closed upon

him by Morgan, Foker took Pen's arm, and walked with him for some time

silently puffing his cigar. At last, when they had reached Charing Cross

on Arthur's way home to the Temple, Harry Foker relieved himself, and

broke out with that eulogium upon poetry, and those regrets regarding a

misspent youth which have just been mentioned. And all the way along

the Strand, and up to the door of Pen's very staircase, in Lamb Court,

Temple, young Harry Foker did not cease to speak about singing and

Blanche Amory.

CHAPTER XL. Relates to Mr. Harry Foker's Affairs

Since that fatal but delightful night in Grosvenor Place, Mr. Harry

Foker's heart had been in such a state of agitation as you would hardly

have thought so great a philosopher could endure. When we remember what

good advice he had given to Pen in former days, how an early wisdom and

knowledge of the world had manifested itself in this gifted youth; how

a constant course of self-indulgence, such as becomes a gentleman of his

means and expectations, ought by right to have increased his cynicism,

and made him, with every succeeding day of his life, care less and less

for every individual in the world, with the single exception of Mr.

Harry Foker, one may wonder that he should fall into the mishap to which

most of us are subject once or twice in our lives, and disquiet his

great mind about a woman. But Foker, though early wise, was still a man.

He could no more escape the common lot than Achilles, or Ajax, or Lord

Nelson, or Adam our first father, and now, his time being come, young

Harry became a victim to Love, the All-conqueror.

When he went to the Back Kitchen that night after quitting Arthur

Pendennis at his staircase-door in Lamb Court, the gin-twist and

devilled turkey had no charms for him, the jokes of his companions

fell flatly on his ear; and when Mr. Hodgen, the singer of 'The Body

Snatcher,' had a new chant even more dreadful and humorous than that

famous composition, Foker, although he appeared his friend, and said

"Bravo, Hodgen," as common politeness and his position as one of the

chiefs of the Back Kitchen bound him to do, yet never distinctly

heard one word of the song, which under its title of 'The Cat in the

Cupboard,' Hodgen has since rendered so famous. Late and very tired, he

slipped into his private apartments at home and sought the downy pillow,

but his slumbers were disturbed by the fever of his soul, and the very

instant that he woke from his agitated sleep, the image of Miss Amory

presented itself to him, and said, "Here I am, I am your princess

and beauty, you have discovered me, and shall care for nothing else

hereafter."

Heavens, how stale and distasteful his former pursuits and friendships

appeared to him! He had not been, up to the present time, much

accustomed to the society of females of his own rank in life. When he

spoke of such, he called them "modest women." That virtue which, let us

hope, they possessed, had not hitherto compensated to Mr. Foker for the

absence of more lively qualities which most of his own relatives did not

enjoy, and which he found in Mesdemoiselles, the ladies of the theatre.

His mother, though good and tender, did not amuse her boy; his

cousins, the daughters of his maternal uncle, the respectable Earl of

Rosherville, wearied him beyond measure. One was blue, and a geologist;

one was a horsewoman, and smoked cigars; one was exceedingly Low Church,

and had the most heterodox views on religious matters; at least, so the

other said, who was herself of the very Highest Church faction, and made

the cupboard in her room into an oratory, and fasted on every Friday in

the year. Their paternal house of Drummington, Foker could very seldom

be got to visit. He swore he had rather go on the treadmill than stay

there. He was not much beloved by the inhabitants. Lord Erith, Lord

Rosherville's heir, considered his cousin a low person, of deplorably

vulgar habits and manners; while Foker, and with equal reason, voted

Erith a prig and a dullard, the nightcap of the House of Commons, the

Speaker's opprobrium, the dreariest of philanthropic spouters. Nor could

George Robert, Earl of Gravesend and Rosherville, ever forget that on

one evening when he condescended to play at billiards with his nephew,

that young gentleman poked his lordship in the side with his cue, and

said, "Well, old cock, I've seen many a bad stroke in my life, but I

never saw such a bad one as that there." He played the game out with

angelic sweetness of temper, for Harry was his guest as well as his

nephew; but he was nearly having a fit in the night; and he kept to

his own rooms until young Harry quitted Drummington on his return to

Oxbridge, where the interesting youth was finishing his education at

the time when the occurrence took place. It was an awful blow to the

venerable earl; the circumstance was never alluded to in the family; he

shunned Foker whenever he came to see them in London or in the country,

and could hardly be brought to gasp out a "How d'ye do?" to the

young blasphemer. But he would not break his sister Agnes's heart, by

banishing Harry from the family altogether; nor, indeed, could he afford

to break with Mr. Foker, senior, between whom and his lordship there had

been many private transactions, producing an exchange of bank-cheques

from Mr. Foker, and autographs from the earl himself, with the letters I

O U written over his illustrious signature.

Besides the four daughters of Lord Gravesend whose various qualities

have been enumerated in the former paragraph, his lordship was blessed

with a fifth girl, the Lady Ana Milton, who, from her earliest years

and nursery, had been destined to a peculiar position in life. It was

ordained between her parents and her aunt, that when Mr Harry Foker

attained a proper age, Lady Ann should become his wife. The idea had

been familiar to her mind when she yet wore pinafores, and when Harry

the dirtiest of little boys, used to come back with black eyes from

school to Drummington, or to his father's house of Logwood, where Lady

Ann lived, much with her aunt. Both of the young people coincided

with the arrangement proposed by the elders, without any protests or

difficulty. It no more entered Lady Ann's mind to question the order of

her father, than it would have entered Esther's to dispute the commands

of Ahasuerus. The heir-apparent of the house of Foker was also obedient,

for when the old gentleman said, "Harry, your uncle and I have agreed

that when you're of a proper age, you'll marry Lady Ann. She won't have

any money, but she's good blood, and a good one to look at, and I shall

make you comfortable. If you refuse, you'll have your mother's jointure,

and two hundred a year during my life"--Harry, who knew that his sire,

though a man of few words, was yet implicitly to be trusted, acquiesced

at once in the parental decree, and said, "Well, sir, if Ann's

agreeable, I say ditto. She's not a bad-looking girl."

"And she has the best blood in England, sir. Your mother's blood, your

own blood, sir," said the Brewer. "There's nothing like it, sir."

"Well, sir, as you like it," Harry replied. "When you want me, please

ring the bell. Only there's no hurry, and I hope you'll give us a long

day. I should like to have my fling out before I marry."

"Fling away, Harry," answered the benevolent father. "Nobody prevents

you, do they?" And so very little more was said upon this subject, and

Mr. Harry pursued those amusements in life which suited him best; and

hung up a little picture of his cousin in his sitting-room, amidst

the French prints, the favourite actresses and dancers, the racing and

coaching works of art, which suited his taste and formed his gallery.

It was an insignificant little picture, representing a simple round face

with ringlets; and it made, as it must be confessed, a very poor

figure by the side of Mademoiselle Petitot, dancing over a rainbow, or

Mademoiselle Redowa, grinning in red boots and a lancer's cap.

Being engaged and disposed of, Lady Ann Milton did not go out so much

in the world as her sisters: and often stayed at home in London at the

parental house in Gaunt Square, when her mamma with the other ladies

went abroad. They talked and they danced with one man after another,

and the men came and went, and the stories about them were various. But

there was only this one story about Ann: she was engaged to Harry Foker:

she never was to think about anybody else. It was not a very amusing

story.

Well, the instant Foker awoke on the day after Lady Clavering's dinner,

there was Blanche's image glaring upon him with its clear grey eyes, and

winning smile. There was her tune ringing in his ears, "Yet round about

the spot, ofttimes I hover, ofttimes I hover," which poor Foker began

piteously to hum, as he sat up in his bed under the crimson silken

coverlet. Opposite him was a French Print, of a Turkish lady and her

Greek lover, surprised by a venerable Ottoman, the lady's husband; on

the other wall was a French print of a gentleman and lady, riding and

kissing each other at full gallop; all round the chaste bedroom were

more French prints, either portraits of gauzy nymphs of the Opera, or

lovely illustrations of the novels; or mayhap, an English chef-d'oeuvre

or two, in which Miss Calverley of T. R. E. O. would be represented in

tight pantaloons in her favourite page part; or Miss Rougemont as Venus;

their value enhanced by the signatures of these ladies, Maria Calverley,

or Frederica Rougemont, inscribed underneath the prints in an exquisite

facsimile. Such were the pictures in which honest Harry delighted. He

was no worse than many of his neighbours; he was an idle jovial kindly

fast man about town; and if his rooms were rather profusely decorated

with works of French art, so that simple Lady Agnes, his mamma on

entering the apartments where her darling sate enveloped in fragrant

clouds of Latakia, was often bewildered by the novelties which she

beheld there, why, it must be remembered, that he was richer than most

young men, and could better afford to gratify his taste.

A letter from Miss Calverley written in a very degage style of

spelling and handwriting, scrawling freely over the filagree paper, and

commencing by calling Mr. Harry, her dear Hokey-pokey-fokey, lay on his

bed table by his side, amidst keys, sovereigns, cigar-cases, and a bit

of verbena, which Miss Amory had given him, and reminding him of the

arrival of the day when he was 'to stand that dinner at the Elefant and

Castle, at Richmond, which he had promised;' a card for a private box

at Miss Rougemont's approaching benefit, a bundle of tickets for 'Ben

Budgeon's night, the North Lancashire Pippin, at Martin Faunce's, the

Three-cornered Hat, in St. Martin's Lane; where Conkey Sam, Dick the

Nailor, and Deadman (the Worcestershire Nobber), would put on the

gloves, and the lovers of the good old British sport were invited to

attend'--these and sundry other memoirs of Mr. Foker's pursuits and

pleasure lay on the table by his side when he woke.

Ah! how faint all these pleasures seemed now. What did he care for

Conkey Sam or the Worcestershire Nobber? What for the French prints

ogling him from all sides of the room; those regular stunning slap-up

out-and-outers? And Calverley spelling bad, and calling him Hokey-fokey,

confound her impudence! The idea of being engaged to a dinner at

the Elephant and Castle at Richmond with that old woman (who was

seven-and-thirty years old, if she was a day) filled his mind with

dreary disgust now, instead of that pleasure which he had only yesterday

expected to find from the entertainment.

When his fond mamma beheld her boy that morning, she remarked on the

pallor of his cheek, and the general gloom of his aspect. "Why do you

go on playing billiards at that wicked Spratt's?" Lady Agnes asked. "My

dearest child, those billiards will kill you, I'm sure they will."

"It isn't the billiards," Harry said, gloomily.

"Then it's the dreadful Back Kitchen," said the Lady Agnes. "I've often

thought, d'you know, Harry, of writing to the landlady, and begging that

she would have the kindness to put only very little wine in the negus

which you take, and see that you have your shawl on before you get into

your brougham."

"Do, ma'am. Mrs Cutts is a most kind motley woman," Harry said. "But it

isn't the Back Kitchen, neither," he added, with a ghastly sigh.

As Lady Agnes never denied her son anything, and fell into all his ways

with the fondest acquiescence, she was rewarded by a perfect confidence

on young Harry's part, who never thought to disguise from her a

knowledge of the haunts which he frequented; and, on the contrary,

brought her home choice anecdotes from the clubs and billiard-rooms,

which the simple lady relished, if she did not understand. "My son goes

to Spratt's," she would say to her confidential friends. "All the young

men go to Spratt's after their balls. It is de rigueur, my dear; and

they play billiards as they used to play macao and hazard in Mr. Fox's

time. Yes, my dear father often told me that they sate up always until

nine o'clock the next morning with Mr. Fox at Brookes's, whom I remember

at Drnmmington, when I was a little girl, in a buff waistcoat and black

satin small-clothes. My brother Erith never played as a young man, nor

sate up late--he had no health for it; but my boy must do as everybody

does, you know. Yes, and then he often goes to a place called the Back

Kitchen, frequented by all the wits and authors, you know, whom one does

not see in society, but whom it is a great privilege and pleasure for

Harry to meet, and there he hears the questions of the day discussed;

and my dear father often said that it was our duty to encourage

literature, and he had hoped to see the late Dr. Johnson at Drummington,

only Dr. Johnson died. Yes, and Mr. Sheridan came over, and drank a

great deal of wine,--everybody drank a great deal of wine in those

days,--and papa's wine-merchant's bill was ten times as much as Erith's

is, who gets it as he wants it from Fortnum and Mason's and doesn't keep

any stock at all."

"That was an uncommon good dinner we had yesterday, ma'am," the artful

Harry broke out. "Their clear soup's better than ours. Moufflet will

put too much taragon into everything. The supreme de volaille was very

good--uncommon, and the sweets were better than Moufflet's sweets. Did

you taste the plombiere, ma'am, and the maraschino jelly? Stunningly

good that maraschino jelly!"

Lady Agnes expressed her agreement in these, as in almost all other

sentiments of her son, who continued the artful conversation, saying--

"Very handsome house that of the Claverings. Furniture, I should say,

got up regardless of expense. Magnificent display of plate, ma'am." The

lady assented to all these propositions.

"Very nice people the Claverings."

"H'm!" said Lady Agnes.

"I know what you mean. Lady C. ain't distangy exactly, but she is very

good-natured."

"Oh, very," mamma said, who was herself one of the most good-natured of

women.

"And Sir Francis, he don't talk much before ladies; but after dinner he

comes out uncommon strong, ma'am--a highly agreeable, well-informed man.

When will you ask them to dinner? Look out for an early day, ma'am;" and

looking into Lady Agnes's pocket-book, he chose a day only a fortnight

hence (an age that fortnight seemed to the young gentleman), when the

Claverings were to be invited to Grosvenor-street.

The obedient Lady Agnes wrote the required invitation. She was

accustomed to do so without consulting her husband, who had his own

society and habits, and who left his wife to see her own friends alone.

Harry looked at the card; but there was an omission in the invitation

which did not please him.

"You have not asked Miss Whatdyecallem--Miss Emery, Lady Clavering's

daughter."

"Oh, that little creature!" Lady Agnes cried. "No! I think not, Harry."

"We must ask Miss Amory," Foker said. "I--I want to ask Pendennis;

and--and he's very sweet upon her. Don't you think she sings very well,

ma'am?"

"I thought her rather forward, and didn't listen to her singing. She

only sang at you and Mr. Pendennis, it seemed to me. But I will ask her

if you wish, Harry," and so Miss Amory's name was written on the card

with her mother's.

This piece of diplomacy being triumphantly executed Harry embraced his

fond parent with the utmost affection, and retired to his own apartments

where he stretched himself on his ottoman, and lay brooding silently,

sighing for the day which was to bring the fair Miss Amory under his

paternal roof, and devising a hundred wild schemes for meeting her.

On his return from making the grand tour, Mr. Foker, Junior, had

brought with him a polyglot valet, who took the place of Stoopid,

and condescended to wait at dinner, attired in shirt fronts of worked

muslin, with many gold studs and chains, upon his master and the elders

of the family. This man, who was of no particular country, and spoke

all languages indifferently ill, made himself useful to Mr. Harry in a

variety of ways,--read all the artless youth's correspondence, knew his

favourite haunts and the addresses of his acquaintance, and officiated

at the private dinners which the young gentleman gave. As Harry lay

upon his sofa after his interview with his mamma, robed in a wonderful

dressing-gown, and puffing his pipe in gloomy silence, Anatole, too,

must have remarked that something affected his master's spirits; though

he did not betray any ill-bred sympathy with Harry's agitation of mind.

When Harry began to dress himself in his out-of-door morning costume,

he was very hard indeed to please, and particularly severe and snappish

about his toilet: he tried, and cursed, pantaloons of many different

stripes, checks, and colours: all the boots were villainously varnished;

the shirts too "loud" in pattern. He scented his linen and person

with peculiar richness this day; and what must have been the valet's

astonishment, when, after some blushing and hesitation on Harry's part,

the young gentleman asked, "I say, Anatole, when I engaged you, didn't

you--hem--didn't you say that you could dress--hem--dress hair?"

The valet said, "Yes, he could."

"Cherchy alors une paire de tongs,--et--curly moi un peu," Mr. Foker

said, in an easy manner; and the valet, wondering whether his master

was in love or was going masquerading, went in search of the

articles,--first from the old butler who waited upon Mr. Foker, senior,

on whose bald pate the tongs would have scarcely found a hundred hairs

to seize, and finally of the lady who had the charge of the meek auburn

fronts of the Lady Agnes. And the tongs being got, Monsieur Anatole

twisted his young master's locks until he had made Harry's head as curly

as a negro's; after which the youth dressed himself with the utmost care

and splendour, and proceeded to sally out.

"At what dime sall I order de drag, sir, to be to Miss Calverley's door,

sir?" the attendant whispered as his master was going forth.

"Confound her!--Put the dinner off--I can't go!" said Foker. "No, hang

it--I must go. Poyntz and Rougemont, and ever so many more are coming.

The drag at Pelham Corner at six o'clock, Anatole."

The drag was not one of Mr. Foker's own equipages, but was hired from a

livery-stable for festive purposes; Foker, however, put his own carriage

into requisition that morning, and for what purpose does the kind reader

suppose? Why, to drive down to Lamb Court, Temple, taking Grosvenor

Place by the way (which lies in the exact direction of the Temple from

Grosvenor Street, as everybody knows), where he just had the pleasure

of peeping upwards at Miss Amory's pink window-curtains, having achieved

which satisfactory feat, he drove off to Pen's chambers. Why did he want

to see his dear friend Pen so much? Why did he yearn and long after him;

and did it seem necessary to Foker's very existence that he should see

Pen that morning, having parted with him in perfect health on the night

previous? Pen had lived two years in London, and Foker had not paid

half a dozen visits to his chambers. What sent him thither now in such a

hurry?

What?--If any young ladies read this page, I have only to inform them

that, when the same mishap befalls them, which now had for more than

twelve hours befallen Harry Foker, people will grow interesting to them

for whom they did not care sixpence on the day before; as on the other

hand persons of whom they fancied themselves fond will be found to have

become insipid and disagreeable. Then you dearest Eliza, or Maria of the

other day, to whom you wrote letters and sent locks of hair yards long,

will on a sudden be as indifferent to you as your stupidest relation

whilst, on the contrary, about his relations you will begin to feel such

a warm interest! such a loving desire to ingratiate yourself with his

mamma; such a liking for that dear kind old man his father! If He is in

the habit of visiting at any house, what advances you will make in order

to visit there too. If He has a married sister you will like to spend

long mornings with her. You will fatigue your servant by sending notes

to her, for which there will be the most pressing occasion, twice or

thrice in a day. You will cry if your mamma objects to your going too

often to see His family. The only one of them you will dislike, is

perhaps his younger brother, who is at home for the holidays, and who

will persist in staying in the room when you come to see your dear

new-found friend, his darling second sister. Something like this will

happen to you, young ladies, or, at any rate, let us hope it may. Yes,

you must go through the hot fits and the cold fits of that pretty fever.

Your mothers, if they would acknowledge it, have passed through it

before you were born, your dear papa being the object of the passion,

of course,--who could it be but he? And as you suffer it, so will your

brothers, in their way,--and after their kind. More selfish than you:

more eager and headstrong than you: they will rush on their destiny

when the doomed charmer makes her appearance. Or if they don't, and you

don't, Heaven help you! As the gambler said of his dice, to love and win

is the best thing, to love and lose is the next best. You don't die of

the complaint: or very few do. The generous wounded heart suffers and

survives it. And he is not a man, or she a woman, who is not conquered

by it, or who does not conquer it in his time.----Now, then, if you ask

why Henry Foker, Esquire, was in such a hurry to see Arthur Pendennis,

and felt such a sudden value and esteem for him, there is no difficulty

in saying it was because Pen had become really valuable in Mr. Foker's

eyes: because if Pen was not the rose, he yet had been near that

fragrant flower of love. Was not he in the habit of going to her house

in London? Did he not live near her in the country?--know all about the

enchantress? What, I wonder, would Lady Ann Milton, Mr. Foker's cousin

and pretendue, have said, if her ladyship had known all that was going

on in the bosom of that funny little gentleman?

Alas! when Foker reached Lamb Court, leaving his carriage for the

admiration of the little clerks who were lounging in the archway

that leads thence into Flag Court which leads into Upper Temple Lane,

Warrington was in the chambers but Pen was absent. Pen was gone to the

printing-office to see his proofs. "Would Foker have a pipe and should

the laundress go to the Cock and get him some beer?"--Warrington asked,

remarking with a pleased surprise the splendid toilet of this scented

and shiny-booted young aristocrat; but Foker had not the slightest wish

for beer or tobacco: he had very important business: he rushed away

to the Pall Mall Gazette office, still bent upon finding Pen. Pen had

quitted that pace. Foker wanted him that they might go together to call

upon Lady Clavering. Foker went away disconsolate, and whiled away an

hour or two vaguely at clubs: and when it was time to pay a visit, he

thought it would be but decent and polite to drive to Grosvenor Place

and leave a card upon Lady Clavering. He had not the courage to ask to

see her when the door was opened, he only delivered two cards, with Mr.

Henry Foker engraved upon them, to Jeames, in a speechless agony. Jeames

received the tickets bowing his powdered head. The varnished doors

closed upon him. The beloved object was as far as ever from him,

though so near. He thought he heard the tones of a piano and of a

syren singing, coming from the drawing-room and sweeping over the

balcony-shrubbery of geraniums. He would have liked to stop and listen,

but it might not be. "Drive to Tattersall's," he said to the groom, in

a voice smothered with emotion,--"And bring my pony round," he added, as

the man drove rapidly away.

As good luck would have it, that splendid barouche of Lady Clavering's,

which has been inadequately described in a former chapter, drove up to

her ladyship's door just as Foker mounted the pony which was in waiting

for him. He bestrode the fiery animal, and dodged about the arch of

the Green Park, keeping the carriage well in view, until he saw Lady

Clavering enter, and with her--whose could be that angel form, but the

enchantress's, clad in a sort of gossamer, with a pink bonnet and a

light-blue parasol,--but Miss Amory?

The carriage took its fair owners to Madame Rigodon's cap and lace shop,

to Mrs Wolsey's Berlin worsted shop,--who knows to what other resorts

of female commerce? Then it went and took ices at Hunter's, for Lady

Clavering was somewhat florid in her tastes and amusements, and not only

liked to go abroad in the most showy carriage in London, but that the

public should see her in it too. And so, in a white bonnet with a yellow

feather, she ate a large pink ice in the sunshine before Hunter's door,

till Foker on his pony, and the red jacket who accompanied him, were

almost tired of dodging.

Then at last she made her way into the Park, and the rapid Foker made

his dash forward. What to do? Just to get a nod of recognition from Miss

Amory and her mother; to cross them a half-dozen times in the drive; to

watch and ogle them from the other side of the ditch, where the horsemen

assemble when the band plays in Kensington Gardens. What is the use of

looking at a woman in a pink bonnet across a ditch? What is the earthly

good to be got out of a nod of the head? Strange that men will be

contented with such pleasures, or if not contented, at least that they

will be so eager in seeking them. Not one word did Harry, he so fluent

of conversation ordinarily, change with his charmer on that day. Mutely

he beheld her return to her carriage, and drive away among rather

ironical salutes from the young men in the Park. One said that the

Indian widow was making the paternal rupees spin rapidly; another said

that she ought to have burned herself alive, and left the money to her

daughter. This one asked who Clavering was?--and old Tom Eales, who knew

everybody, and never missed a day in the Park on his grey cob, kindly

said that Clavering had come into an estate over head and heels in

mortgage: that there were dev'lish ugly stories about him when he was

a young man, and that it was reported of him that he had a share in

a gambling-house, and had certainly shown the white feather in his

regiment. "He plays still; he is in a hell every night almost," Mr.

Eales added.

"I should think so, since his marriage," said a wag.

"He gives devilish good dinners," said Foker, striking up for the honour

of his host of yesterday.

"I daresay, and I daresay he doesn't ask Eales," the wag said. "I say,

Eales, do you dine at Clavering's,--at the Begum's?"

"I dine there?" said Mr. Eales, who would have dined with Beelzebub if

sure of a good cook, and when he came away, would have painted his host

blacker than fate had made him.

"You might, you know, although you do abuse him so," continued the wag.

"They say it's very pleasant. Clavering goes to sleep after dinner; the

Begum gets tipsy with cherry-brandy, and the young lady sings songs to

the young gentlemen. She sings well, don't she, Fo?"

"Slap up," said Fo. "I tell you what, Poyntz, she sings like a

whatdyecallum--you know what I mean--like a mermaid, you know, but

that's not their name."

"I never heard a mermaid sing," Mr. Poyntz, the wag, replied. "Whoever

heard a mermaid? Eales, you are an old fellow, did you?"

"Don't make a lark of me, hang it, Poyntz," said Foker, turning red,

and with tears almost in his eyes, "you know what I mean: it's those

what's-his-names--in Homer, you know. I never said I was a good

scholar."

"And nobody ever said it of you, my boy," Mr. Poyntz remarked, and Foker

striking spurs into his pony, cantered away down Rotten Row, his mind

agitated with various emotions, ambitions, mortifications. He was sorry

that he had not been good at his books in early life--that he might

have cut out all those chaps who were about her, and who talked the

languages, and wrote poetry, and painted pictures in her album, and--and

that--"What am I," thought little Foker, "compared to her? She's all

soul, she is, and can write poetry or compose music, as easy as I could

drink a glass of beer. Beer?--damme, that's all I'm fit for, is beer. I

am a poor, ignorant little beggar, good for nothing but Foker's Entire.

I misspent my youth, and used to get the chaps to do my exercises. And

what's the consequences now? Oh, Harry Foker, what a confounded little

fool you have been!"

As he made this dreary soliloquy, he had cantered out of Rotten Row into

the Park, and there was on the point of riding down a large old roomy

family carriage, of which he took no heed, when a cheery voice cried

out, "Harry, Harry!" and looking up, he beheld his aunt, the Lady

Rosherville, and two of her daughters, of whom the one who spoke was

Harry's betrothed, the Lady Ann.

He started back with a pale, scared look, as a truth about which he had

not thought during the whole day, came across him. There was his fate,

there, in the back seat of that carriage.

"What is the matter, Harry? why are you so pale? You have been raking

and smoking too much, you wicked boy," said Lady Ann.

Foker said, "How do, aunt," "How do, Ann," in a perturbed

manner--muttered something about a pressing engagement,--indeed he saw

by the Park clock that he must have been keeping his party in the drag

waiting for nearly an hour--and waved a good-bye. The little man and the

little pony were out of sight in an instant--the great carriage rolled

away. Nobody inside was very much interested about his coming or going;

the Countess being occupied with her spaniel, the Lady Lucy's thoughts

and eyes being turned upon a volume of sermons, and those of the Lady

Ann upon a new novel, which the sisters had just procured from the

library.

CHAPTER XLI. Carries the Reader both to Richmond and Greenwich

Poor Foker found the dinner at Richmond to be the most dreary

entertainment upon which ever mortal man wasted his guineas. "I wonder

how the deuce I could ever have liked these people," he thought in his

own mind. "Why, I can see the crow's-feet under Rougemont's eyes, and

the paint on her cheeks is laid on as thick as Clown's in a pantomime!

The way in which that Calverley talks slang, is quite disgusting. I hate

chaff in a woman. And old Colchicum! that old Col, coming down here

in his brougham, with his coronet on it, and sitting bodkin between

Mademoiselle Coralie and her mother! It's too bad. An English peer, and

a horse-rider of Franconi's!--It won't do; by Jove, it won't do. I ain't

proud; but it will not do!"

"Twopence-halfpenny for your thoughts, Fokey!" cried out Miss Rougemont,

taking her cigar from her truly vermilion lips, as she beheld the young

fellow lost in thought, seated at the head of his table, amidst melting

ices, and cut pineapples, and bottles full and empty, and cigar-ashes

scattered on fruit, and the ruins of a dessert which had no pleasure for

him.

"Does Foker ever think?" drawled out Mr. Poyntz. "Foker, here is a

considerable sum of money offered by a fair capitalist at this end

of the table for the present emanations of your valuable and acute

intellect, old boy!"

"What the deuce is that Poyntz a talking about?" Miss Calverley asked of

her neighbour. "I hate him. He's a drawlin', sneerin' beast."

"What a droll of a little man is that little Fokare, my lor',"

Mademoiselle Coralie said, in her own language, and with the rich twang

of that sunny Gascony in which her swarthy cheeks and bright black eyes

had got their fire. "What a droll of a man! He does not look to have

twenty years."

"I wish I were of his age," said the venerable Colchicum, with a sigh,

as he inclined his purple face towards a large goblet of claret.

"C'te Jeunesse. Peuh! je m'en fiche" said Madame Brack, Coralie's mamma,

taking a great pinch out of Lord Colchicum's delicate gold snuff-box.

"Je m'aime que les hommes faits, moi. Comme milor. Coralie! n'est-ce pas

que tu n'aimes que les hommes faits, ma bichette?"

My lord said, with a grin, "You flatter me, Madame Brack."

"Taisez-vous, Maman, vous n'etes qu'une bete," Coralie cried, with a

shrug of her robust shoulders; upon which, my lord said that she did

not flatter at any rate; and pocketed his snuff-box, not desirous that

Madame Brack's dubious fingers should plunge too frequently into his

Mackabaw.

There is no need to give a prolonged detail of the animated conversation

which ensued during the rest of the banquet; a conversation which would

not much edify the reader. And it is scarcely necessary to say, that all

ladies of the corps de dance are not like Miss Calverley, any more than

that all peers resemble that illustrious member of their order, the late

lamented Viscount Colchicum. But there have been such in our memories

who have loved the society of riotous youth better than the company

of men of their own age and rank, and have given the young ones the

precious benefit of their experience and example; and there have been

very respectable men too who have not objected so much to the kind of

entertainment as to the publicity of it. I am sure, for instance, that

our friend Major Pendennis would have made no sort of objection to join

the a party of pleasure, provided that it were en petit comite, and that

such men as my Lord Steyne and my Lord Colchicum were of the society.

"Give the young men their pleasures," this worthy guardian said to Pen

more than once. "I'm not one of your strait-laced moralists, but an old

man of the world, begad; and I know that as long as it lasts young men

will be young men." And there were some young men to whom this estimable

philosopher accorded about seventy years as the proper period for sowing

their wild oats: but they were men of fashion.

Mr. Foker drove his lovely guests home to Brompton in the drag that

night; but he was quite thoughtful and gloomy during the whole of the

little journey from Richmond; neither listening to the jokes of the

friends behind him and on the box by his side nor enlivening them as was

his wont, by his own facetious sallies. And when the ladies whom he

had conveyed alighted at the door of their house, and asked their

accomplished coachman whether he would not step in and take something

to drink, he declined with so melancholy an air, that they supposed

that the Governor and he had had a difference or that some calamity had

befallen him; and he did not tell these people what the cause of his

grief was, but left Mesdames Rougemont and Calverley, unheeding the

cries of the latter, who hung over her balcony like Jezebel, and called

out to him to ask him to give another party soon.

He sent the drag home under the guidance of one of the grooms, and went

on foot himself; his hands in his pockets, plunged in thought. The stars

and moon shining tranquilly overhead, looked down upon Mr. Foker that

night, as he in his turn sentimentally regarded them. And he went and

gazed upwards at the house in Grosvenor Place, and at the windows which

he supposed to be those of the beloved object; and he moaned and he

sighed in a way piteous and surprising to witness, which Policeman

X did, who informed Sir Francis Clavering's people, as they took the

refreshment of beer on the coach-box at the neighbouring public-house,

after bringing home their lady from the French play, that there had been

another chap hanging about the premises that evening--a little chap,

dressed like a swell.

And now with that perspicuity and ingenuity and enterprise which only

belongs to a certain passion, Mr. Foker began to dodge Miss Amory

through London, and to appear wherever he could meet her. If Lady

Clavering went to the French play, where her ladyship had a box, Mr.

Foker, whose knowledge of the language, as we have heard, was not

conspicuous, appeared in a stall. He found out where her engagements

were (it is possible that Anatole, his man, was acquainted with Sir

Francis Clavering's gentleman, and so got a sight of her ladyship's

engagement-book), and at many of these evening parties Mr. Foker

made his appearance--to the surprise of the world, and of his mother

especially, whom he ordered to apply for cards to these parties, for

which until now he had shown a supreme contempt. He told the pleased and

unsuspicious lady that he went to parties because it was right for him

to see the world: he told her that he went to the French play because

he wanted to perfect himself in the language, and there was no such good

lesson as a comedy or vaudeville,--and when one night the astonished

Lady Agnes saw him stand up and dance, and complimented him upon his

elegance and activity, the mendacious little rogue asserted that he had

learned to dance in Paris, whereas Anatole knew that his young master

used to go off privily to an academy in Brewer Street, and study there

for some hours in the morning. The casino of our modern days was not

invented, or was in its infancy as yet; and gentlemen of Mr. Foker's

time had not the facilities of acquiring the science of dancing which

are enjoyed by our present youth.

Old Pendennis seldom missed going to church. He considered it to be his

duty as a gentleman to patronise the institution of public worship and

that it was quite a correct thing to be seen at church of a Sunday. One

day it chanced that he and Arthur went thither together: the latter, who

was now in high favour, had been to breakfast with his uncle, from whose

lodging they walked across the park to a church not far from Belgrave

Square. There was a charity sermon at Saint James's, as the Major knew

by the bills posted on the pillars of his parish church, which probably

caused him, for he was a thrifty man, to forsake it for that day:

besides he had other views for himself and Pen. "We will go to church,

sir, across the Park; and then, begad, we will go to the Claverings'

house and ask them for lunch in a friendly way. Lady Clavering likes to

be asked for lunch, and is uncommonly kind, and monstrous hospitable."

"I met them at dinner last week, at Lady Agnes Foker's, sir," Pen said,

"and the Begum was very kind indeed. So she was in the country: so she

is everywhere. But I share your opinion about Miss Amory; one of your

opinions, that is, uncle, for you were changing the last time we spoke

about her."

"And what do you think of her now?" the elder said.

"I think her the most confounded little flirt in London," Pen answered,

laughing "She made a tremendous assault upon Harry Foker, who sat next

to her; and to whom she gave all the talk, though I took her down."

"Bah! Henry Foker is engaged to his cousin all the world knows it: not

a bad coup of Lady Rosherville's, that. I should say, that the young man

at his father's death, and old Foker's life's devilish bad: you know he

had a fit at Arthur's, last year: I should say, that young Foker won't

have less than fourteen thousand a year from the brewery, besides

Logwood and Norfolk property. I've no pride about me, Pen. I like a man

of birth certainly, but dammy, I like a brewery which brings in a man

fourteen thousand a year; hey, Pen? Ha, ha, that's the sort of man for

me. And I recommend you now that you are lanced in the world, to stick

to fellows of that sort, to fellows who have a stake in the country,

begad."

"Foker sticks to me, sir," Arthur answered. "He has been at our chambers

several times lately. He has asked me to dinner. We are almost as great

friends, as we used to be in our youth: and his talk is about Blanche

Amory from morning till night. I'm sure he's sweet upon her."

"I'm sure he is engaged to his cousin, and that they will keep the young

man to his bargain," said the Major. "The marriages in these families

are affairs of state. Lady Agnes was made to marry old Foker by the late

Lord, although she was notoriously partial to her cousin who was

killed at Albuera afterwards, and who saved her life out of the lake at

Drummington. I remember Lady Agnes, sir, an exceedingly fine woman. But

what did she do?--of course she married her father's man. Why, Mr. Foker

sate for Drummington till the Reform Bill, and paid dev'lish well for

his seat, too. And you may depend upon this, sir, that Foker senior, who

is a parvenu, and loves a great man, as all parvenus do, has ambitious

views for his son as well as himself, and that your friend Harry must

do as his father bids him. Lord bless you! I've known a hundred cases

of love in young men and women: hey, Master Arthur, do you take me? They

kick, sir, they resist, they make a deuce of a riot and that sort of

thing, but they end by listening to reason, begad."

"Blanche is a dangerous girl, sir," Pen said. "I was smitten with her

myself once, and very far gone, too," he added; "but that is years ago."

"Were you? How far did it go? Did she return it?" asked the Major,

looking hard at Pen.

Pen, with a laugh, said "that at one time he did think he was pretty

well in Miss Amory's good graces. But my mother did not like her, and

the affair went off." Pen did not think it fit to tell his uncle all the

particulars of that courtship which had passed between himself and the

young lady.

"A man might go farther and fare worse, Arthur," the Major said, still

looking queerly at his nephew.

"Her birth, sir; her father was the mate of a ship, they say: and she

has not money enough," objected Pen, in a dandified manner. "What's ten

thousand pound and a girl bred up like her?"

"You use my own words, and it is all very well. But, I tell you in

confidence, Pen,--in strict honour, mind,--that it's my belief she has

a devilish deal more than ten thousand pound: and from what I saw of

her the other day, and--and have heard of her--I should say she was a

devilish accomplished, clever girl: and would make a good wife with a

sensible husband."

"How do you know about her money?" Pen asked, smiling. "You seem to have

information about everybody, and to know about all the town."

"I do know a few things, sir, and I don't tell all I know. Mark that,"

the uncle replied. "And as for that charming Miss Amory,--for charming,

begad! she is,--if I saw her Mrs. Arthur Pendennis, I should neither

be sorry nor surprised, begad! and if you object to ten thousand pound,

what would you say, sir, to thirty, or forty, or fifty?" and the Major

looked still more knowingly, and still harder at Pen.

"Well, sir," he said to his godfather and namesake, "make her Mrs.

Arthur Pendennis. You can do it as well as I."

"Psha! you are laughing at me, sir," the other replied rather peevishly,

"and you ought not to laugh so near a church gate. Here we are at St.

Benedict's. They say Mr. Oriel is a beautiful preacher."

Indeed, the bells were tolling, the people were trooping into the

handsome church, the carriages of the inhabitants of the lordly quarter

poured forth their pretty loads of devotees, in whose company Pen and

his uncle, ending their edifying conversation, entered the fane. I do

not know whether other people carry their worldly affairs to the church

door. Arthur, who, from habitual reverence and feeling, was always more

than respectful in a place of worship, thought of the incongruity of

their talk, perhaps; whilst the old gentleman at his side was utterly

unconscious of any such contrast. His hat was brushed: his wig was

trim: his neckcloth was perfectly tied. He looked at every soul in the

congregation, it is true: the bald heads and the bonnets, the flowers

and the feathers: but so demurely that he hardly lifted up his eyes from

his book--from his book which he could not read without glasses. As

for Pen's gravity, it was sorely put to the test when, upon looking by

chance towards the seats where the servants were collected, he spied

out, by the side of a demure gentleman in plush, Henry Foker, Esquire,

who had discovered this place of devotion. Following the direction of

Harry's eye, which strayed a good deal from his book, Pen found that

it alighted upon a yellow bonnet and a pink one: and that these bonnets

were on the heads of Lady Clavering and Blanche Amory. If Pen's uncle

is not the only man who has talked about his worldly affairs up to

the church door, is poor Harry Foker the only one who has brought his

worldly love into the aisle?

When the congregation issued forth at the conclusion of the service,

Foker was out amongst the first, but Pen came up with him presently, as

he was hankering about the entrance, which he was unwilling to leave,

until my lady's barouche, with the bewigged coachman, had borne away its

mistress and her daughter from their devotions.

When the two ladies came out, they found together the Pendennises, uncle

and nephew, and Harry Foker, Esquire, sucking the crook of his

stick, standing there in the sunshine. To see and to ask to eat were

simultaneous with the good-natured Begum, and she invited the three

gentlemen to luncheon straightway.

Blanche was, too, particularly gracious. "O! do come," she said to

Arthur, "if you are not too great a man. I want so to talk to you

about--but we mustn't say what, here, you know. What would Mr.

Oriel say?" And the young devotee jumped into the carriage after her

mamma.--"I've read every word of it. It's adorable," she added, still

addressing herself to Pen.

"I know who is," said Mr. Arthur, making rather a pert bow.

"What's the row about?" asked Mr. Foker, rather puzzled.

"I suppose Miss Clavering means 'Walter Lorraine,'" said the Major,

looking knowing, and nodding at Pen.

"I suppose so, sir. There was a famous review in the Pall Mall this

morning. It was Warrington's doing though, and I must not be too proud."

"A review in Pall Mall?--Walter Lorraine? What the doose do you mean?"

Foker asked. "Walter Lorraine died of the measles, poor little beggar,

when we were at Grey Friars. I remember his mother coming up."

"You are not a literary man, Foker," Pen said, laughing, and hooking his

arm into his friend's. "You must know I have been writing a novel, and

some of the papers have spoken very well of it. Perhaps you don't read

the Sunday Papers?"

"I read Bell's Life regular, old boy," Mr Foker answered: at which Pen

laughed again, and the three gentlemen proceeded in great good-humour to

Lady Clavering's house.

The subject of the novel was resumed after luncheon by Miss Amory, who

indeed loved poets and men of letters if she loved anything, and was

sincerely an artist in feeling. "Some of the passages in the book made

me cry, positively they did," she said.

Pen said, with some fatuity, "I am happy to think I have a part of vos

larmes, Miss Blanche,"--and the Major (who had not read more than six

pages of Pen's book) put on his sanctified look, saying, "Yes, there

are some passages quite affecting, mons'ous affecting:" and,--"Oh, if

it makes you cry,"--Lady Amory declared she would not read it, "that she

wouldn't."

"Don't, mamma," Blanche said, with a French shrug of her shoulders;

and then she fell into a rhapsody about the book, about the snatches of

poetry interspersed in it about the two heroines, Leonora and Neaera;

about the two heroes, Walter Lorraine and his rival the young Duke--"and

what good company you introduce us to," said the young lady archly "quel

ton! How much of your life have you passed at court, and are you a prime

minister's son, Mr. Arthur?"

Pen began to laugh--"It is as cheap for a novelist to create a Duke as

to make a Baronet," he said. "Shall I tell you a secret, Miss Amory? I

promoted all my characters at the request of the publisher. The young

Duke was only a young Baron when the novel was first written; his false

friend, the Viscount, was a simple commoner and so on with all the

characters of the story."

"What a wicked, satirical, pert young man you have become! Comme vous

voila forme!" said the young lady. "How different from Arthur Pendennis

of the country! Ah! I think I like Arthur Pendennis of the country best,

though!" and she gave him the full benefit of her eyes,--both of the

fond appealing glance into his own, and of the modest look downwards

towards the carpet, which showed off her dark eyelids and long fringed

lashes.

Pen of course protested that he had not changed in the least, to which

the young lady replied by a tender sigh; and thinking that she had done

quite enough to make Arthur happy or miserable (as the case might be),

she proceeded to cajole his companion, Mr. Harry Foker, who during the

literary conversation had sate silently imbibing the head of his cane,

and wishing that he was a clever chap like that Pen.

If the Major thought that by telling Miss Amory of Mr. Foker's

engagement to his cousin, Lady Ann Milton (which information the old

gentleman neatly conveyed to the girl as he sate by her side at luncheon

below-stairs),--if, we say, the Major thought that the knowledge of

this fact would prevent Blanche from paying any further attention to the

young heir of Foker's Entire, he was entirely mistaken. She became only

the more gracious to Foker: she praised him, and everything belonging

to him; she praised his mamma; she praised the pony which he rode in

the Park; she praised the lovely breloques or gimcracks which the young

gentleman wore at his watch-chain, and that dear little darling of a

cane, and those dear little delicious monkeys' heads with ruby eyes,

which ornamented Harry's shirt, and formed the buttons of his waistcoat.

And then, having praised and coaxed the weak youth until he blushed and

tingled with pleasure, and until Pen thought she really had gone quite

far enough, she took another theme.

"I am afraid Mr. Foker is a very sad young man," she said, turning round

to Pen.

"He does not look so," Pen answered with a sneer.

"I mean we have heard sad stories about him. Haven't we, mamma? What was

Mr. Poyntz saying here, the other day, about that party at Richmond? O

you naughty creature!" But here, seeing that Harry's countenance assumed

a great expression of alarm, while Pen's wore a look of amusement, she

turned to the latter and said, "I believe you are just as bad: I believe

you would have liked to have been there,--wouldn't you? I know you

would: yes--and so should I."

"Lor, Blanche!" mamma cried.

"Well, I would. I never saw an actress in my life. I would give anything

to know one; for I adore talent. And I adore Richmond, that I do; and I

adore Greenwich, and I say, I should like to go there."

"Why should not we three bachelors," the Major here broke out,

gallantly, and to his nephew's special surprise, "beg these ladies to

honour us with their company at Greenwich? Is Lady Clavering to go on

for ever being hospitable to us, and may we make no return? Speak for

yourselves, young men,--eh, begad! Here is my nephew, with his pockets

full of money--his pockets full, begad! and Mr. Henry Foker, who, as I

have heard say, is pretty well to do in the world,--how is your lovely

cousin, Lady Ann, Mr. Foker?--here are these two young ones,--and they

allow an old fellow like me to speak. Lady Clavering, will you do me the

favour to be my guest? and Miss Blanche shall be Arthur's, if she will

be so good."

"Oh, delightful!" cried Blanche.

"I like a bit of fun too," said Lady Clavering; and we will take some

day when Sir Francis----"

"When Sir Francis dines out,--yes, mamma," the daughter said, "it will

be charming."

And a charming day it was. The dinner was ordered at Greenwich,

and Foker, though he did not invite Miss Amory, had some delicious

opportunities of conversation with her during the repast, and afterwards

on the balcony of their room at the hotel, and again during the drive

home in her ladyship's barouche. Pen came down with his uncle, in Sir

Hugh Trumpington's brougham, which the Major borrowed for the occasion.

"I am an old soldier, begad," he said, "and I learned in early life to

make myself comfortable."

And, being an old soldier, he allowed the two young men to pay for the

dinner between them, and all the way home in the brougham he rallied

Pen, about Miss Amory's evident partiality for him: praised her good

looks, spirits, and wit: and again told Pen in the strictest confidence,

that she would be a devilish deal richer than people thought.

CHAPTER XLII. Contains a novel Incident

Some account has been given, in a former part of this story, how Mr.

Pen, during his residence at home, after his defeat at Oxbridge, had

occupied himself with various literary compositions, and amongst other

works, had written the greater part of a novel. This book, written under

the influence of his youthful embarrassments, amatory and pecuniary, was

of a very fierce, gloomy, and passionate sort,--the Byronic despair,

the Wertherian despondency, the mocking bitterness of Mephistopheles of

Faust, were all reproduced and developed in the character of the hero;

for our youth had just been learning the German language, and imitated,

as almost all clever lads do, his favourite poets and writers. Passages

in the volumes once so loved, and now read so seldom, still bear the

mark of the pencil with which he noted them in those days. Tears fell

upon the leaf of the book, perhaps, or blistered the pages of his

manuscript as the passionate young man dashed his thoughts down. If he

took up the books afterwards he had no ability or wish to sprinkle the

leaves with that early dew of former times: his pencil was no longer

eager to score its marks of approval: but as he looked over the pages of

his manuscript, he remembered what had been overflowing feelings which

had caused him to blot it, and the pain which had inspired the line. If

the secret history of books could be written, and the author's private

thoughts and meanings noted down alongside of his story, how many

insipid volumes would become interesting, and dull tales excite the

reader! Many a bitter smile passed over Pen's face as he read his novel,

and recalled the time and feelings which gave it birth. How pompous some

of the grand passages appeared; and how weak were others in which he

thought he had expressed his full heart! This page was imitated from a

then favourite author, as he could now clearly see and confess, though

he had believed himself to be writing originally then. As he mused over

certain lines he recollected the place and hour where he wrote them:

the ghost of the dead feeling came back as he mused, and he blushed to

review the faint image. And what meant those blots on the page? As you

come in the desert to a ground where camels' hoofs are marked in the

clay, and traces of withered herbage are yet visible, you know that

water was there once; so the place in Pen's mind was no longer green,

and the fons lacrymarum was dried up.

He used this simile one morning to Warrington, as the latter sate over

his pipe and book, and Pen, with much gesticulation according to his

wont when excited, and with a bitter laugh, thumped his manuscript down

on the table, making the tea-things rattle, and, the blue milk dance

in the jug. On the previous night he had taken the manuscript out of

a long-neglected chest, containing old shooting jackets, old Oxbridge

scribbling-books, his old surplice, and battered cap and gown, and other

memorials of youth, school, and home. He read in the volume in bed until

he fell asleep, for the commencement of the tale was somewhat dull, and

he had come home tired from a London evening party.

"By Jove!" said Pen, thumping down his papers, "when I think that these

were written but very few years ago, I am ashamed of my memory. I

wrote this when I believed myself be eternally in love with that little

coquette, Miss Amory. I used to carry down verses to her, and put them

into the hollow of a tree, and dedicate them 'Amori.'"

"That was a sweet little play upon words," Warrington remarked, with a

puff "Amory--Amori. It showed proof of scholarship. Let us hear a bit of

the rubbish." And he stretched over from his easy-chair, and caught

hold of Pen's manuscript with the fire-tongs, which he was just using in

order to put a coal into his pipe. Thus, in possession of the volume,

he began to read out from the 'Leaves from the Life-book of Walter

Lorraine.'

"'False as thou art beautiful! heartless as thou art fair! mockery of

Passion!' Walter cried, addressing Leonora; 'what evil spirit hath sent

thee to torture me so? O Leonora.----'"

"Cut that part," cried out Pen, making a dash at the book, which,

however, his comrade would not release. "Well! don't read it out at any

rate. That's about my other flame, my first--Lady Mirabel that is now.

I saw her last night at Lady Whiston's. She asked me to a party at her

house, and said that, as old friends, we ought to meet oftener. She has

been seeing me any time these two years in town, and never thought

of inviting me before; but seeing Wenham talking to me, and Monsieur

Dubois, the French literary man, who had a dozen orders on, and might

have passed for a Marshal of France, she condescended to invite me. The

Claverings are to be there on the same evening. Won't it be exciting to

meet one's two flames at the same table?"

"Two flames!--two heaps of burnt-out cinders," Warrington said. "Are

both the beauties in this book?"

"Both, or something like them," Pen said. "Leonora, who marries the

Duke, is the Fotheringay. I drew the Duke from Magnus Charters, with

whom I was at Oxford; it's a little like him; and Miss Amory is Neaera.

By gad, that first woman! I thought of her as I walked home from Lady

Whiston's in the moonlight; and the whole early scenes came back to me

as if they had been yesterday. And when I got home, I pulled out the

story which I wrote about her and the other three years ago: do you

know, outrageous as it is, it has some good stuff in it, and if Bungay

won't publish it, I think Bacon will."

"That's the way of poets," said Warrington. "They fall in love, jilt, or

are jilted; they suffer and they cry out that they suffer more than any

other mortals: and when they have experienced feelings enough they note

them down in a book, and take the book to market. All poets are humbugs,

all literary men are humbugs; directly a man begins to sell his feelings

for money he's a humbug. If a poet gets a pain in his side from too good

a dinner, he bellows Ai Ai louder than Prometheus."

"I suppose a poet has a greater sensibility than another man," said Pen,

with some spirit. "That is what makes him a poet. I suppose that he

sees and feels more keenly: it is that which makes him speak, of what he

feels and sees. You speak eagerly enough in your leading articles when

you espy a false argument in an opponent, or detect a quack in the

House. Paley, who does not care for anything else in the world, will

talk for an hour about a question of law. Give another the privilege

which you take yourself, and the free use of his faculty, and let him

be what nature has made him. Why should not a man sell his sentimental

thoughts as well as you your political ideas, or Paley his legal

knowledge? Each alike is a matter of experience and practice. It is not

money which causes you to perceive a fallacy, or Paley to argue a point;

but a natural or acquired aptitude for that kind of truth: and a poet

sets down his thoughts and experiences upon paper as a painter does

a landscape or a face upon canvas, to the best of his ability, and

according to his particular gift. If ever I think I have the stuff in

me to write an epic, by Jove I will try If I only feel that I am good

enough to crack a joke or tell a story, I will do that."

"Not a bad speech, young one," Warrington said, "but that does not

prevent all poets from being humbugs."

"What--Homer, Aeschylus, Shakspeare and all?"

"Their names are not to be breathed in the same sense with you pigmies,"

Mr. Warrington said: "there are men and men, sir."

"Well, Shakspeare was a man who wrote for money, just as you and I do,"

Pen answered, at which Warrington confounded his impudence, and resumed

his pipe and his manuscript.

There was not the slightest doubt then that this document contained

a great deal of Pen's personal experiences, and that 'Leaves from the

Life-book of Walter Lorraine' would never have been written but for

Arthur Pendennis's own private griefs, passions, and follies. As we have

become acquainted with these in the first volume of his biography, it

will not be necessary to make large extracts from the novel of 'Walter

Lorraine,' in which the young gentleman had depicted such of them as

he thought were likely to interest the reader, or were suitable for the

purpose of his story.

Now, though he had kept it in his box for nearly half of the period

during which, according to the Horatian maxim, a work of art ought to

lie ripening (a maxim, the truth of which may, by the way, be questioned

altogether), Mr. Pen had not buried his novel for this time, in order

that the work might improve, but because he did not know where else to

bestow it, or had no particular desire to see it. A man who thinks of

putting away a composition for ten years before he shall give it to the

world, or exercise his own maturer judgment upon it, had best be very

sure of the original strength and durability of the work; otherwise on

withdrawing it from its crypt he may find, that like small wine it has

lost what flavour it once had, and is only tasteless when opened. There

are works of all tastes and smacks, the small and the strong, those

that improve by age, and those that won't bear keeping at all, but are

pleasant at the first draught, when they refresh and sparkle.

Now Pen had never any notion, even in the time of his youthful

inexperience and fervour of imagination, that the story he was writing

was a masterpiece of composition, or that he was the equal of the

great authors whom he admired; and when he now reviewed his little

performance, he was keenly enough alive to its faults, and pretty modest

regarding its merits. It was not very good, he thought; but it was as

good as most books of the kind that had the run of circulating libraries

and the career of the season. He had critically examined more than one

fashionable novel by the authors of the day then popular, and he thought

that his intellect was as good as theirs and that he could write the

English language as well as those ladies or gentlemen; and as he now

ran over his early performance, he was pleased to find here and there

passages exhibiting both fancy and vigour, and traits, if not of genius,

of genuine passion and feeling. This, too, was Warrington's verdict,

when that severe critic, after half an hour's perusal of the manuscript,

and the consumption of a couple of pipes of tobacco, laid Pen's book

down, yawning portentously. "I can't read any more of that balderdash

now," he said; "but it seems to me there is some good stuff in it, Pen,

my boy. There's a certain greenness and freshness in it which I like

somehow. The bloom disappears off the face of poetry after you begin to

shave. You can't get up that naturalness and artless rosy tint in after

days. Your cheeks are pale, and have got faded by exposure to evening

parties, and you are obliged to take curling-irons, and macassar, and

the deuce-knows-what to your whiskers; they curl ambrosially, and you

are very grand and genteel, and so forth; but, ah! Pen, the spring-time

was the best."

"What the deuce have my whiskers to do with the subject in hand?" Pen

said (who, perhaps, may have been nettled by Warrington's allusion to

those ornaments, which, to say the truth, the young man coaxed, and

curled, and oiled, and perfumed, and petted, in rather an absurd

manner). "Do you think we can do anything with 'Walter Lorraine'? Shall

we take him to the publishers, or make an auto-da-fe of him?"

"I don't see what is the good of incremation," Warrington said, "though

I have a great mind to put him into the fire, to punish your atrocious

humbug and hypocrisy. Shall I burn him indeed? You have much too great a

value for him to hurt a hair of his head."

"Have I? Here goes," said Pen, and 'Walter Lorraine' went off the table,

and was flung on to the coals. But the fire having done its duty of

boiling the young man's breakfast-kettle, had given up work for the

day, and had gone out, as Pen knew very well; Warrington with a scornful

mile, once more took up the manuscript with the tongs from out of the

harmless cinders.

"Oh, Pen, what a humbug you are!" Warrington said; "and what is worst of

all, sir, a clumsy humbug. I saw you look to see that the fire was out

before you sent 'Walter Lorraine' behind the bars. No, we won't burn

him: we will carry him to the Egyptians, and sell him. We will exchange

him away for money, yea, for silver and gold, and for beef and for

liquors, and for tobacco and for raiment. This youth will fetch some

price in the market; for he is a comely lad, though not over strong; but

we will fatten him up and give him the bath, and curl his hair, and we

will sell him for a hundred piasters to Bacon or to Bungay. The rubbish

is saleable enough, sir; and my advice to you is this: the next time you

go home for a holiday, take 'Walter Lorraine' in your carpet-bag--give

him a more modern air, prune away, though sparingly, some of the green

passages, and add a little comedy, and cheerfulness, and satire, and

that sort of thing, and then we'll take him to market, and sell him. The

book is not a wonder of wonders, but it will do very well."

"Do you think so, Warrington?" said Pen, delighted, for this was great

praise from his cynical friend.

"You silly young fool! I think it's uncommonly clever," Warrington said

in a kind voice. "So do you, sir." And with the manuscript which he held

in his hand he playfully struck Pen on the cheek. That part of Pen's

countenance turned as red as it had ever done in the earliest days

of his blushes: he grasped the other's hand and said, "Thank you,

Warrington," with all his might: and then he retired to his own room

with his book, and passed the greater part of the day upon his bed

re-reading it; and he did as Warrington had advised, and altered not a

little, and added a great deal, until at length he had fashioned

'Walter Lorraine' pretty much into the shape in which, as the respected

novel-reader knows, it subsequently appeared.

Whilst he was at work upon this performance, the good-natured Warrington

artfully inspired the two gentlemen who "read" for Messrs. Bacon and

Bungay with the greatest curiosity regarding 'Walter Lorraine,' and

pointed out the peculiar merits of its distinguished author. It was at

the period when the novel, called 'The Fashionable,' was in vogue among

us; and Warrington did not fail to point out, as before, how Pen was

a man of the very first fashion himself, and received at the houses of

some of the greatest personages in the land. The simple and kind-hearted

Percy Popjoy was brought to bear upon Mrs. Bungay, whom he informed

that his friend Pendennis was occupied upon a work of the most exciting

nature; a work that the whole town would run after, full of wit, genius,

satire, pathos, and every conceivable good quality. We have said before,

that Bungay knew no more about novels than he did about Hebrew or

Algebra, and neither read nor understood any of the books which he

published and paid for; but he took his opinions from his professional

advisers and from Mrs. B., and, evidently with a view to a commercial

transaction, asked Pendennis and Warrington to dinner again.

Bacon, when he found that Bungay was about to treat, of course, began

to be anxious and curious, and desired to outbid his rival. Was anything

settled between Mr. Pendennis and the odious house "over the way"

about the new book? Mr. Hack, the confidential reader, was told to make

inquiries, and see if any thing was to be done, and the result of the

inquiries of that diplomatist was, that one morning, Bacon himself

toiled up the staircase of Lamb Court and to the door on which the names

of Mr. Warrington, and Mr. Pendennis, were painted.

For a gentleman of fashion as poor Pen was represented to be, it must be

confessed, that the apartments he and his friend occupied were not very

suitable. The ragged carpet had grown only more ragged during the two

years of joint occupancy: a constant odour of tobacco perfumed the

sitting-room: Bacon tumbled over the laundress's buckets in the passage

through which he had to pass; Warrington's shooting-jacket was as

tattered at the elbows as usual; and the chair which Bacon was requested

to take on entering, broke down with the publisher. Warrington burst out

laughing, said that Bacon had got the game chair, and bawled out to Pen

to fetch a sound one from his bedroom. And seeing the publisher looking

round the dingy room with an air of profound pity and wonder, asked him

whether he didn't think the apartments were elegant, and if he would

like, for Mrs. Bacon's drawing-room, any of the articles of furniture?

Mr. Warrington's character as a humourist was known to Mr. Bacon: "I

never can make that chap out," the publisher was heard to say, "or tell

whether he is in earnest or only chaffing."

It is very possible that Mr. Bacon would have set the two gentlemen

down as impostors altogether, but that there chanced to be on the

breakfast-table certain cards of invitation which the post of the

morning had brought in for Pen, and which happened to come from some

very exalted personage of the beau-monde, into which our young man

had his introduction. Looking down upon these, Bacon saw that the

Marchioness of Steyne would be at home to Mr. Arthur Pendennis upon a

given day, and that another lady of distinction proposed to have dancing

at her house upon a certain future evening. Warrington saw the admiring

publisher eyeing these documents. "Ah," said he, with an air of

simplicity, "Pendennis is one of the most affable young men I ever knew,

Mr. Bacon. Here is a young fellow that dines with all the men in London,

and yet he'll take his mutton-chop with you and me quite contentedly.

There's nothing like the affability of the old English gentleman."

"Oh no, nothing," said Mr. Bacon.

"And you wonder why he should go on living up three pair of stairs with

me, don't you now? Well, it is a queer taste. But we are fond of each

other; and as I can't afford to live in a great house, he comes and

stays in these rickety old chambers with me. He's a man that can afford

to live anywhere."

"I fancy it don't cost him much here," thought Mr. Bacon, and the object

of these praises presently entered the room from his adjacent sleeping

apartment.

Then Mr. Bacon began to speak upon the subject of his visit; said he

heard that Mr. Pendennis had a manuscript novel; professed himself

anxious to have a sight of that work, and had no doubt that they could

come to terms respecting it. What would be his price for it? would he

give Bacon the refusal of it? he would find our house a liberal house,

and so forth. The delighted Pen assumed an air of indifference, and said

that he was already in treaty with Bungay, and could give no definite

answer. This piqued the other into such liberal, though vague offers,

that Pen began to fancy Eldorado was opening to him, and that his

fortune was made from that day.

I shall not mention what was the sum of money which Mr. Arthur

Pendennis finally received for the first edition of his novel of 'Walter

Lorraine,' lest other young literary aspirants should expect to be as

lucky as he was, and unprofessional persons forsake their own callings,

whatever they may be, for the sake of supplying the world with novels,

whereof there is already a sufficiency. Let no young people be misled

and rush fatally into romance-writing: for one book which succeeds let

them remember the many that fail, I do not say deservedly or otherwise,

and wholesomely abstain or if they venture, at least let them do so

at their own peril. As for those who have already written novels, this

warning is not addressed, of course, to them. Let them take their wares

to market; let them apply to Bacon and Bungay, and all the publishers

in the Row, or the metropolis, and may they be happy in their ventures.

This world is so wide, and the tastes of mankind happily so various,

that there is always a chance for every man, and he may win the prize by

his genius or by his good fortune. But what is the chance of success or

failure; of obtaining popularity, or of holding it when achieved? One

man goes over the ice, which bears him, and a score who follow flounder

in. In fine, Mr. Pendennis's was an exceptional case, and applies to

himself only and I assert solemnly, and will to the last maintain, that

it is one thing to write a novel, and another to get money for it.

By merit, then, or good fortune, or the skilful playing off of Bungay

against Bacon which Warrington performed (and which an amateur novelist

is quite welcome to try upon any two publishers in the trade), Pen's

novel was actually sold for a certain sum of money to one of the two

eminent patrons of letters whom we have introduced to our readers. The

sum was so considerable that Pen thought of opening an account at a

banker's, or of keeping a cab and horse, or of descending into the first

floor of Lamb Court into newly furnished apartments, or of migrating to

the fashionable end of the town.

Major Pendennis advised the latter move strongly; he opened his eyes

with wonder when he heard of the good luck that had befallen Pen;

and which the latter, as soon as it occurred, hastened eagerly to

communicate to his uncle. The Major was almost angry that Pen should

have earned so much money. "Who the doose reads this kind of thing?" he

thought to himself when he heard of the bargain which Pen had made. "I

never read your novels and rubbish. Except Paul de Kock, who certainly

makes me laugh, I don't think I've looked into a book of the sort these

thirty years. Gad! Pen's a lucky fellow. I should think he might write

one of these in a month now,--say a month,--that's twelve in a year.

Dammy, he may go on spinning this nonsense for the next four to five

years, and make a fortune. In the meantime I should wish him to live

properly, take respectable apartments, and keep a brougham." And on this

simple calculation it was that the Major counselled Pen.

Arthur, laughing, told Warrington what his uncle's advice had been but

he luckily had a much more reasonable counsellor than the old gentleman

in the person of his friend, and in his own conscience, which said to

him, "Be grateful for this piece of good fortune; don't plunge into any

extravagancies. Pay back Laura!" And he wrote a letter to her, in which

he told her his thanks and his regard; and enclosed to her such an

instalment of his debt as nearly wiped it off. The widow and Laura

herself might well be affected by the letter. It was written with

genuine tenderness and modesty; and old Dr. Portman when he read a

passage in the letter, in which Pen, with an honest heart full of

gratitude, humbly thanked Heaven for his present prosperity, and

for sending him such dear and kind friends to support him in his ill

fortune,--when Doctor Portman read this portion of the letter, his voice

faltered, and his eyes twinkled behind his spectacles, and when he had

quite finished reading the same, and had taken his glasses off his

nose, and had folded up the paper and given it back to the widow, I

am constrained to say, that after holding Mrs. Pendennis's hand for a

minute, the Doctor drew that lady towards him and fairly kissed her:

at which salute, of course, Helen burst out crying on the Doctor's

shoulder, for her heart was too full to give any other reply: and the

Doctor blushing at great deal after his feat, led the lady, with a bow,

to the sofa, on which he seated himself by her; and he mumbled out, in

a low voice, some words of a Great Poet whom he loved very much, and

who describes how in the days of his prosperity he had made "the widow's

heart to sing for joy."

"The letter does the boy very great honour, very great honour, my dear,"

he said, patting it as it lay on Helen's knee--"and I think we have all

reason to be thankful for it--very thankful. I need not tell you in what

quarter, my dear, for you are a sainted woman: yes, Laura, my love, your

mother is a sainted woman. And Mrs. Pendennis, ma'am, I shall order a

copy of the book for myself, and another at the Book Club."

We may be sure that the widow and Laura walked out to meet the mail

which brought them their copy of Pen's precious novel, as soon as that

work was printed and ready for delivery to the public and that they read

it to each other: and that they also read it privately and separately,

for when the widow came out of her room in her dressing-gown at one

o'clock in the morning with volume two, which she had finished, she

found Laura devouring volume three in bed. Laura did not say much

about the book, but Helen pronounced that it was a happy mixture of

Shakspeare, and Byron, and Walter Scott, and was quite certain that her

son was the greatest genius, as he was the best son, in the world.

Did Laura not think about the book and the author, although she said so

little? At least she thought about Arthur Pendennis. Kind as his tone

was, it vexed her. She did not like his eagerness to repay that money.

She would rather that her brother had taken her gift as she intended it:

and was pained that there should be money calculations between them.

His letters from London, written with the good-natured wish to amuse

his mother, were full of descriptions of the famous people and the

entertainments and magnificence of the great city. Everybody was

flattering him and spoiling him, she was sure. Was he not looking to

some great marriage, with that cunning uncle for a Mentor (between whom

and Laura there was always an antipathy), that inveterate worldling,

whose whole thoughts were bent upon pleasure and rank and fortune? He

never alluded to--to old times, when he spoke of her. He had forgotten

them and her, perhaps had he not forgotten other things and people?

These thoughts may have passed in Miss Laura's mind, though she did not,

she could not, confide them to Helen. She had one more secret, too, from

that lady, which she could not divulge, perhaps because she knew how the

widow would have rejoiced to know it. This regarded an event which had

occurred during that visit to Lady Rockminster, which Laura had paid in

the last Christmas holidays: when Pen was at home with his mother, and

when Mr. Pynsent, supposed to be so cold and so ambitious, had formally

offered his hand to Miss Bell. No one except herself and her admirer

knew of this proposal: or that Pynsent had been rejected by her, and

probably the reasons she gave to the mortified young man himself were

not those which actuated her refusal, or those which she chose to

acknowledge to herself. "I never," she told Pynsent, "can accept such an

offer as that which you make me, which you own is unknown to your family

as I am sure it would be unwelcome to them. The difference of rank

between us is too great. You are very kind to me here--too good and

kind, dear Mr. Pynsent--but I am little better than a dependant."

"A dependant! who ever so thought of you? You are the equal of all the

world," Pynsent broke out.

"I am a dependant at home, too," Laura said, sweetly, "and indeed I would

not be otherwise. Left early a poor orphan, I have found the kindest and

tenderest of mothers, and I have vowed never to leave her--never.

Pray do not speak of this again--here, under your relative's roof, or

elsewhere. It is impossible."

"If Lady Rockminster asks you herself, will you listen to her?" Pynsent

cried eagerly.

"No," Laura said. "I beg you never to speak of this any more. I must go

away if you do"--and with this she left him.

Pynsent never asked for Lady Rockminster's intercession; he knew how

vain it was to look for that: and he never spoke again on that subject

to Laura or to any person.

When at length the famous novel appeared it not only met with applause

from more impartial critics than Mrs. Pendennis, but, luckily for Pen

it suited the taste of the public, and obtained a quick and considerable

popularity before two months were over, Pen had the satisfaction and

surprise of seeing the second edition of 'Walter Lorraine' advertised in

the newspapers; and enjoyed the pleasure of reading and sending home

the critiques of various literary journals and reviewers upon his book.

Their censure did not much affect him; for the good-natured young man

was disposed to accept with considerable humility the dispraises of

others. Nor did their praise elate him over much; for, like most honest

persons he had his own opinion about his own performance, and when a

critic praised him in the wrong place he was rather hurt than pleased by

the compliment. But if a review of his work was very laudatory, it was a

great pleasure to him to send it home to his mother at Fairoaks, and to

think of the joy which it would give there. There are some natures, and

perhaps, as we have said, Pendennis's was one, which are improved

and softened by prosperity and kindness, as there are men of other

dispositions, who become arrogant and graceless under good fortune.

Happy he, who can endure one or the other with modesty and good-humour!

Lucky he who has been educated to bear his fate, whatsoever it may be,

by an early example of uprightness, and a childish training in honour!

CHAPTER XLIII. Alsatia

Bred up, like a bailiff or a shabby attorney, about the purlieus of

the Inns of Court, Shepherd's Inn is always to be found in the close

neighbourhood of Lincoln's-Inn Fields, and the Temple. Some where behind

the black gables and smutty chimney-stacks of Wych Street, Holywell

Street, Chancery Lane, the quadrangle lies, hidden from the outer world;

and it is approached by curious passages and ambiguous smoky alleys,

on which the sun has forgotten to shine. Slop-sellers, brandy-ball and

hard-bake vendors, purveyors of theatrical prints for youth, dealers in

dingy furniture and bedding suggestive of anything but sleep, line

the narrow walls and dark casements with their wares. The doors are

many-belled: and crowds of dirty children form endless groups about the

steps: or around the shell-fish dealers' trays in these courts; whereof

the damp pavements resound with pattens, and are drabbled with a

never-failing mud. Ballad-singers come and chant here, in deadly

guttural tones, satirical songs against the Whig administration, against

the bishops and dignified clergy, against the German relatives of an

august royal family: Punch sets up his theatre, sure of an audience, and

occasionally of a halfpenny from the swarming occupants of the houses:

women scream after their children for loitering in the gutter, or, worse

still, against the husband who comes reeling from the gin-shop;--there

is a ceaseless din and life in these courts out of which you pass into

the tranquil, old-fashioned quadrangle of Shepherd's Inn. In a mangy

little grass-plat in the centre rises up the statue of Shepherd,

defended by iron railings from the assaults of boys. The hall of the

Inn, on which the founder's arms are painted, occupies one side of the

square, the tall and ancient chambers are carried round other two sides,

and over the central archway, which leads into Oldcastle Street, and so

into the great London thoroughfare.

The Inn may have been occupied by lawyers once: but the laity have long

since been admitted into its precincts, and I do not know that any of

the principal legal firms have their chambers here. The offices of

the Polwheedle and Tredyddlum Copper Mines occupy one set of the

ground-floor chambers; the Registry of Patent Inventions and Union of

Genius and Capital Company, another;--the only gentleman whose

name figures here, and in the "Law List," is Mr. Campion, who wears

mustachios, and who comes in his cab twice or thrice in a week; and

whose West End offices are in Curzon Street, Mayfair, where Mrs. Campion

entertains the nobility and gentry to whom her husband lends money.

There, and on his glazed cards, he is Mr. Somerset Campion; here he is

Campion and Co.; and the same tuft which ornaments his chin, sprouts

from the under lip of the rest of the firm. It is splendid to see his

cab-horse harness blazing with heraldic bearings, as the vehicle stops

at the door leading to his chambers: The horse flings froth off his

nostrils as he chafes and tosses under the shining bit. The reins and

the breeches of the groom are glittering white,--the lustre of that

equipage makes a sunshine in that shady place.

Our old friend, Captain Costigan, has examined Campion's cab and horse

many an afternoon, as he trailed about the court in his carpet slippers

and dressing-gown, with his old hat cocked over his eye. He suns himself

there after his breakfast when the day is suitable; and goes and pays

a visit to the porter's lodge, where he pats the heads of the children,

and talks to Mrs. Bolton about the thayatres and me daughther Leedy

Mirabel. Mrs. Bolton was herself in the profession once, and danced at

the Wells in early days as the thirteenth of Mr. Serle's forty pupils.

Costigan lives in the third floor at No. 4, in the rooms which were Mr.

Podmore's, and whose name is still on the door--(somebody else's name,

by the way, is on almost all the doors in Shepherd's Inn). When Charley

Podmore (the pleasing tenor singer, T.R.D.L., and at the Back Kitchen

Concert Rooms) married, and went to live at Lambeth, he ceded his

chambers to Mr. Bows and Captain Costigan, who occupy them in common

now, and you may often hear the tones of Mr. Bows's piano of fine days

when the windows are open, acid when he is practising for amusement, or

for the instruction of a theatrical pupil, of whom he has one or two.

Fanny Bolton is one, the porteress's daughter, who has heard tell of her

mother's theatrical glories, which she longs to emulate. She has a good

voice and a pretty face and figure for the stage; and she prepares the

rooms and makes the beds and breakfasts for Messrs. Costigan and Bows,

in return for which the latter instructs her in music and singing.

But for his unfortunate propensity to liquor (and in that excess she

supposes that all men of fashion indulge), she thinks the Captain the

finest gentleman in the world, and believes in all the versions of all

his stories, and she is very fond of Mr. Bows too, and very grateful to

him, and this shy queer old gentleman has a fatherly fondness for her

too, for in truth his heart is full of kindness, and he is never easy

unless he loves somebody.

Costigan has had the carriages of visitors of distinction before his

humble door in Shepherd's Inn: and to hear him talk of a morning (for

his evening song is of a much more melancholy nature) you would fancy

that Sir Charles and Lady Mirabel were in the constant habit of calling

at his chambers, and bringing with them the select nobility to visit the

"old man, the honest old half-pay Captain, poor old Jack Costigan," as

Cos calls himself.

The truth is, that Lady Mirabel has left her husband's card (which

has been stuck in the little looking-glass over the mantelpiece of the

sitting-room at No. 4, for these many months past), and has come in

person to see her father, but not of late days. A kind person, disposed

to discharge her duties gravely, upon her marriage with Sir Charles she

settled a little pension upon her father, who occasionally was admitted

to the table of his daughter and son-in-law. At first poor Cos's

behaviour "in the hoight of poloit societee," as he denominated Lady

Mirabel's drawing-room table, was harmless, if it was absurd. As he

clothed his person in his best attire, so he selected the longest and

richest words in his vocabulary to deck his conversation, and adopted a

solemnity of demeanour which struck with astonishment all those persons

in whose company he happened to be.--"Was your Leedyship in the Pork to

dee?" he would demand of his daughter. "I looked for your equipage

in veen:--the poor old man was not gratified by the soight of his

daughther's choriot. Sir Chorlus, I saw your neem at the Levee; many's

the Levee at the Castle at Dublin that poor old Jack Costigan has

attended in his time. Did the Juke look pretty well? Bedad, I'll call

at Apsley House and lave me cyard upon 'um. I thank ye, James, a little

dthrop more champeane." Indeed, he was magnificent in his courtesy

to all, and addressed his observations not only to the master and the

guests, but to the domestics who waited at the table, and who had some

difficulty in maintaining their professional gravity while they waited

on Captain Costigan.

On the first two or three visits to his son-in-law, Costigan maintained

a strict sobriety, content to make up for his lost time when he got

to the Back Kitchen, where he bragged about his son-in-law's dart and

burgundee, until his own utterance began to fail him, over his sixth

tumbler of whisky-punch. But with familiarity his caution vanished, and

poor Cos lamentably disgraced himself at Sir Charles Mirabel's table,

by premature inebriation. A carriage was called for him: the hospitable

door was shut upon him. Often and sadly did he speak to his friends at

the Kitchen of his resemblance to King Lear in the plee--of his having

a thankless choild, bedad--of his being a pore worn-out lonely old

man, dthriven to dthrinking by ingratitude, and seeking to dthrown his

sorrows in punch.

It is painful to be obliged to record the weaknesses of fathers, but it

must be furthermore told of Costigan, that when his credit was exhausted

and his money gone, he would not unfrequently beg money from his

daughter, and made statements to her not altogether consistent with

strict truth. On one day a bailiff was about to lead him to prison, he

wrote, "unless the--to you insignificant--sum of three pound five can

be forthcoming to liberate a poor man's grey hairs from gaol." And

the good-natured Lady Mirabel despatched the money necessary for her

father's liberation, with a caution to him to be more economical for the

future. On a second occasion the Captain met with a frightful accident,

and broke a plate-glass window in the Strand, for which the proprietor

of the shop held him liable. The money was forthcoming on this time too,

to repair her papa's disaster, and was carried down by Lady Mirabel's

servant to the slipshod messenger and aide-de-camp of the Captain, who

brought the letter announcing his mishap. If the servant had followed

the Captain's aide-de-camp who carried the remittance, he would have

seen that gentleman, a person of Costigan's country too (for have we not

said, that however poor an Irish gentleman is, he always has a poorer

Irish gentleman to run on his errands and transact his pecuniary

affairs?), call a cab from the nearest stand, and rattle down to the

Roscius Head, Harlequin Yard, Drury Lane, where the Captain was indeed

in pawn, and for several glasses containing rum-and-water, or other

spirituous refreshment, of which he and his staff had partaken. On a

third melancholy occasion he wrote that he was attacked by illness, and

wanted money to pay the physician whom he was compelled to call in; and

this time Lady Mirabel, alarmed about her father's safety, and perhaps

reproaching herself that she had of late lost sight of her father,

called for her carriage and drove to Shepherd's Inn, at the gate of

which she alighted, whence she found the way to her father's chambers,

"No. 4, third floor, name of Podmore over the door," the porteress said,

with many curtsies, pointing towards the door of the house, into which

the affectionate daughter entered and mounted the dingy stair. Alas! the

door, surmounted by the name of Podmore, was opened to her by poor Cos

in his shirt-sleeves, and prepared with the gridiron to receive the

mutton-chops which Mrs. Bolton had gone to purchase.

Also, it was not pleasant for Sir Charles Mirabel to have letters

constantly addressed to him at Brookes's, with the information that

Captain Costigan was in the hall, waiting for an answer; or when he went

to play his rubber at the Travellers', to be obliged to shoot out of

his brougham and run up the steps rapidly, lest his father-in-law should

seize upon him; and to think that while he read his paper or played his

whist, the Captain was walking on the opposite side of Pall Mall, with

that dreadful cocked hat, and the eye beneath it fixed steadily upon

the windows of the club. Sir Charles was a weak man; he was old, and had

many infirmities: he cried about his father-in-law to his wife, whom he

adored with senile infatuation: he said he must go abroad,--he must go

and live in the country--he should die or have another fit if he saw

that man again--he knew he should. And it was only by paying a second

visit to Captain Costigan, and representing to him, that if he plagued

Sir Charles by letters or addressed him in the street, or made any

further applications for loans, his allowance would be withdrawn

altogether, that Lady Mirabel was enabled to keep her papa in order, and

to restore tranquillity to her husband. And on occasion of this visit,

she sternly rebuked Bows for not keeping a better watch over the

Captain; desired that he should not be allowed to drink in that shameful

way; and that the people at the horrid taverns which he frequented

should be told, upon no account to give him credit. "Papa's conduct

is bringing me to the grave," she said (though she looked perfectly

healthy), "and you, as an old man, Mr. Bows, and one that pretended to

have a regard for us, ought to be ashamed of abetting him in it." Those

were the thanks which honest Bows got for his friendship and his life's

devotion. And I do not suppose that the old philosopher was much worse

off than many other men, or had greater reason to grumble.

On the second floor of the next house to Bows's, in Shepherd's Inn, at

No. 3, live two other acquaintances of ours: Colonel Altamont, agent to

the Nawaub of Lucknow, and Captain Chevalier Edward Strong. No name at

all is over their door. The Captain does not choose to let all the world

know where he lives and his cards bear the address of a Jermyn

Street hotel; and as for the Ambassador Plenipotentiary of the Indian

potentate, he is not an envoy accredited to the Courts of St. James's

or Leadenhall Street but is here on a confidential mission quite

independent of the East India Company or the Board of Control. "In

fact," Strong says, "Colonel Altamont's object being financial, and to

effectuate a sale of some of the principal diamonds and rubies of the

Lucknow crown, his wish is not to report himself at the India House or

in Cannon Row, but rather to negotiate with private capitalists--with

whom he has had important transactions both in this country and on the

Continent."

We have said that these anonymous chambers of Strong's had been very

comfortably furnished since the arrival of Sir Francis Clavering in

London, and the Chevalier might boast with reason to the friends who

visited him, that few retired Captains were more snugly quartered than

he, in his crib in Shepherd's Inn. There were three rooms below: the

office where Strong transacted his business--whatever that might be--and

where still remained the desk and railings of the departed officials who

had preceded him, and the Chevalier's own bedroom and sitting-room; and

a private stair led out of the office to two upper apartments, the one

occupied by Colonel Altamont, and the other serving as the kitchen of

the establishment, and the bedroom of Mr. Grady, the attendant. These

rooms were on a level with the apartments of our friends Bows and

Costigan next door at No. 4; and by reaching over the communicating

leads, Grady could command the mignonette-box which bloomed in Bows's

window.

From Grady's kitchen casement often came odours still more fragrant. The

three old soldiers who formed the garrison of No. 3 were all skilled

in the culinary art. Grady was great at an Irish stew; the Colonel

was famous for pillaus and curries; and as for Strong he could cook

anything. He made French dishes and Spanish dishes, stews, fricassees,

and omelettes, to perfection; nor was there any man in England more

hospitable than he when his purse was full or his credit was good. At

those happy periods, he could give a friend, as he said, a good dinner,

a good glass of wine, and a good song afterwards; and poor Cos often

heard with envy the roar of Strong's choruses, and the musical clinking

of the glasses, as he sate in his own room, so far removed and yet so

near to those festivities. It was not expedient to invite Mr. Costigan

always: his practice of inebriation was lamentable; and he bored

Strong's guests with his stories when sober, and with his maudlin tears

when drunk.

A strange and motley set they were, these friends of the Chevalier;

and though Major Pendennis would not much have relished their company,

Arthur and Warrington liked it not a little, and Pen thought it as

amusing as the society of the finest gentlemen in the finest houses

which he had the honour to frequent. There was a history about every

man of the set: they seemed all to have had their tides of luck and bad

fortune. Most of them had wonderful schemes and speculations in their

pockets, and plenty for making rapid and extraordinary fortunes. Jack

Holt had been in Don Carlos's army, when Ned Strong had fought on the

other side; and was now organising a little scheme for smuggling tobacco

into London, which must bring thirty thousand a year to any man who

would advance fifteen hundred, just to bribe the last officer of the

Excise who held out, and had wind of the scheme. Tom Diver, who had been

in the Mexican navy, knew of a specie-ship which had been sunk in the

first year of the war, with three hundred and eighty thousand dollars on

board, and a hundred and eighty thousand pounds in bars and doubloons.

"Give me eighteen hundred pounds," Tom said, "and I'm off tomorrow. I

take out four men, and a diving-bell with me; and I return in ten

months to take my seat in Parliament, by Jove! and to buy back my family

estate." Keightley, the manager of the Tredyddlum and Polwheedle Copper

Mines (which were as yet under water), besides singing as good a second

as any professional man, and besides the Tredyddlum Office, had a Smyrna

Sponge Company, and a little quicksilver operation in view, which

would set him straight with the world yet. Filby had been everything

a corporal of dragoons, a field-preacher, and missionary-agent for

converting the Irish; an actor at a Greenwich fair-booth, in front of

which his father's attorney found him when the old gentleman died and

left him that famous property, from which he got no rents now, and of

which nobody exactly knew the situation. Added to these was Sir Francis

Clavering, Bart., who liked their society, though he did not much add to

its amusements by his convivial powers. But he was made much of by the

company now, on account of his wealth and position in the world. He told

his little story and sang his little song or two with great affability;

and he had had his own history, too, before his accession to good

fortune; and had seen the inside of more prisons than one, and written

his name on many a stamped paper.

When Altamont first returned from Paris, and after he had communicated

with Sir Francis Clavering from the hotel at which he had taken up his

quarters (and which he had reached in a very denuded state, considering

the wealth of diamonds and rubies with which this honest man was

entrusted), Strong was sent to his patron by the Baronet; paid his

little bill at the inn, and invited him to come and sleep for a night

or two at the chambers, where he subsequently took up his residence. To

negotiate with this man was very well, but to have such a person settled

in his rooms, and to be constantly burthened with such society, did not

suit the Chevalier's taste much; and he grumbled not a little to his

principal.

"I wish you would put this bear into somebody else's cage," he said to

Clavering. "The fellow's no gentleman. I don't like walking with him. He

dresses himself like a nigger on a holiday. I took him to the play the

other night; and, by Jove, sir, he abused the actor who was doing the

part of villain in the play, and swore at him so, that the people in the

boxes wanted to turn him out. The after-piece was the 'Brigand,' where

Wallack comes in wounded, you know, and dies. When he died, Altamont

began to cry like a child, and said it was a d----d shame, and cried and

swore so, that there was another row, and everybody laughing. Then I had

to take him away, because he wanted to take his coat off to one fellow

who laughed at him; and bellowed to him to stand up like a man.--Who is

he? Where the deuce does he come from? You had best tell me the

whole story. Frank; you must one day. You and he have robbed a church

together, that's my belief. You had better get it off your mind at once,

Clavering, and tell me what this Altamont is, and what hold he has over

you."

"Hang him! I wish he was dead!" was the Baronet's only reply; and his

countenance became so gloomy, that Strong did not think fit to question

his patron any further at that time; but resolved, if need were, to try

and discover for himself what was the secret tie between Altamont and

Clavering.

CHAPTER XLIV. In which the Colonel narrates some of his Adventures

Early in the forenoon of the day after the dinner in Grosvenor Place,

at which Colonel Altamont had chosen to appear, the Colonel emerged

from his chamber in the upper story at Shepherd's Inn, and entered into

Strong's sitting-room, where the Chevalier sate in his easy-chair with

the newspaper and his cigar. He was a man who made his tent comfortable

wherever he pitched it, and long before Altamont's arrival, had done

justice to a copious breakfast of fried eggs and broiled rashers, which

Mr. Grady had prepared secundum artem. Good-humoured and talkative, he

preferred any company rather than none; and though he had not the least

liking for his fellow-lodger, and would not have grieved to hear that

the accident had befallen him which Sir Francis Clavering desired so

fervently, yet kept on fair terms with him. He had seen Altamont to bed

with great friendliness on the night previous, and taken away his candle

for fear of accidents; and finding a spirit-bottle empty, upon which he

had counted for his nocturnal refreshment, had drunk a glass of water

with perfect contentment over his pipe, before he turned into his own

crib and to sleep. That enjoyment never failed him: he had always an

easy temper, a faultless digestion, and a rosy cheek; and whether he was

going into action the next morning or to prison (and both had been his

lot), in the camp or the Fleet, the worthy Captain snored healthfully

through the night, and woke with a good heart and appetite, for the

struggles or difficulties or pleasures of the day.

The first act of Colonel Altamont was to bellow to Grady for a pint

of pale ale, the which he first poured into a pewter flagon, whence he

transferred it to his own lips. He put down the tankard empty, drew a

great breath, wiped his mouth in his dressing-gown (the difference of

the colour of his beard from his dyed whiskers had long struck Captain

Strong, who had seen too that his hair was fair under his black wig,

but made no remarks upon these circumstances)--the Colonel drew a

great breath, and professed himself immensely refreshed by his draught.

"Nothing like that beer," he remarked, "when the coppers are hot. Many a

day I've drunk a dozen of Bass at Calcutta, and--and----"

"And at Lucknow, I suppose," Strong said with a laugh. "I got the

beer for you on purpose: knew you'd want it after last night." And the

Colonel began to talk about his adventures of the preceding evening.

"I cannot help myself," the Colonel said, beating his head with his big

hand. "I'm a madman when I get the liquor on board me; and ain't fit

to be trusted with a spirit-bottle. When I once begin I can't stop till

I've emptied it; and when I've swallowed it, Lord knows what I say or

what I don't say. I dined at home here quite quiet. Grady gave me just

my two tumblers, and I intended to pass the evening at the Black and Red

as sober as a parson. Why did you leave that confounded sample-bottle of

Hollands out of the cupboard, Strong? Grady must go out too, and leave

me the kettle a-boiling for tea. It was of no use, I couldn't keep away

from it. Washed it all down, sir, by Jove. And it's my belief I had some

more, too, afterwards at that infernal little thieves' den."

"What, were you there too?" Strong asked, "and before you came to

Grosvenor Place? That was beginning betimes."

"Early hours to be drunk and cleared out before nine o'clock, eh? But

so it was. Yes, like a great big fool, I must go there; and found the

fellows dining, Blackland and young Moss, and two or three more of the

thieves. If we'd gone to Rouge et Noir, I must have won. But we didn't

try the black and red. No, hang 'em, they know'd I'd have beat 'em at

that--I must have beat 'em--I can't help beating 'em, I tell you. But

they was too cunnin for me. That rascal Blackland got the bones out, and

we played hazard on the dining-table. And I dropped all the money I had

from you in the morning, be hanged to my luck. It was that that set me

wild, and I suppose I must have been very hot about the head, for I went

off thinking to get some more money from Clavering, I recollect; and

then--and then I don't much remember what happened till I woke this

morning, and heard old Bows at No. 4 playing on his pianner."

Strong mused for a while as he lighted his cigar with a coal, "I should

like to know how you always draw money from Clavering, Colonel," he

said.

The Colonel burst out with a laugh--"Ha, ha! he owes it me," he said.

"I don't know that that's a reason with Frank for paying," Strong

answered. "He owes plenty besides you."

"Well, he gives it me because he is so fond of me," the other said with

the same grinning sneer. "He loves me like a brother; you know he does,

Captain.--No?--He don't?--Well, perhaps he don't; and if you ask me no

questions, perhaps I'll tell you no lies, Captain Strong--put that in

your pipe and smoke it, my boy."

"But I'll give up that confounded brandy-bottle," the Colonel continued,

after a pause. "I must give it up, or it'll be the ruin of me."

"It makes you say queer things," said the Captain, looking Altamont hard

in the face. "Remember what you said last night, at Clavering's table."

"Say? What did I say?" asked the other hastily. "Did I split anything?

Dammy, Strong, did I split anything?"

"Ask me no questions, and I will tell you no lies," the Chevalier

replied on his part. Strong thought of the words Mr. Altamont had used,

and his abrupt departure from the Baronet's dining-table and house as

soon as he recognised Major Pendennis, or Captain Beak, as he called

the Major. But Strong resolved to seek an explanation of these words

otherwise than from Colonel Altamont, and did not choose to recall them

to the other's memory. "No," he said then, "you didn't split as you

call it, Colonel; it was only a trap of mine to see if I could make you

speak; but you didn't say a word that anybody could comprehend--you were

too far gone for that."

So much the better, Altamont thought; and heaved a great sigh, as if

relieved. Strong remarked the emotion, but took no notice, and the other

being in a communicative mood, went on speaking.

"Yes, I own to my faults," continued the Colonel. "There is some things

I can't, do what I will, resist: a bottle of brandy, a box of dice, and

a beautiful woman. No man of pluck and spirit, no man as was worth his

salt ever could, as I know of. There's hardly p'raps a country in the

world in which them three ain't got me into trouble."

"Indeed?" said Strong.

"Yes, from the age of fifteen, when I ran away from home, and went

cabin-boy on board an Indiaman, till now, when I'm fifty year old,

pretty nigh, them women have always been my ruin. Why, it was one of

'em, and with such black eyes and jewels on her neck, and Battens and

ermine like a duchess, I tell you--it was one of 'em at Paris that swept

off the best part of the thousand pound as I went off with. Didn't I

ever tell you of it? Well, I don't mind. At first I was very cautious

and having such a lot of money kept it close and lived like a

gentleman--Colonel Altamont, Meurice's hotel, and that sort of

thing--never played, except at the public tables, and won more than I

lost. Well, sir, there was a chap that I saw at the hotel and the Palace

Royal too, a regular swell fellow, with white kid gloves and a tuft to

his chin, Bloundell-Bloundell his name was, as I made acquaintance with

somehow, and he asked me to dinner, and took me to Madame the Countess

de Foljambe's soirees--such a woman, Strong!--such an eye! such a hand

at the pianner. Lor bless you, she'd sit down and sing to you, and gaze

at you, until she warbled your soul out of your body a'most. She

asked me to go to her evening parties every Toosday; and didn't I take

opera-boxes and give her dinners at the restauranteur's, that's all?

But I had a run of luck at the tables, and it was not in the dinners and

opera-boxes that poor Clavering's money went. No, be hanged to it, it

was swept off in another way. One night, at the Countess's, there

was several of us at supper--Mr. Bloundell-Bloundell, the Honourable

Deuceace, the Marky de la Tour de Force--all tip-top nobs, sir, and the

height of fashion, when we had supper, and champagne you may be sure

in plenty, and then some of that confounded brandy. I would have it--I

would it go on at it--the Countess mixed the tumblers of punch for me,

and we had cards as well as grog after supper, and I played and drank

until I don't know what I did. I was like I was last night. I was taken

away and put to bed somehow, and never woke until the next day, to

a roaring headache, and to see my servant, who said the Honourable

Deuceace wanted to see me, and was waiting in the sitting-room. 'How are

you, Colonel?' says he, a coming into my bedroom. 'How long did you stay

last night after I went away? The play was getting too high for me, and

I'd lost enough to you for one night.'"

"'To me,' says I, 'how's that, my dear feller? (for though he was an

Earl's son, we was as familiar as you and me). How's that, my dear

feller?' says I, and he tells me, that he had borrowed thirty louis of

me at vingt-et-un, that he gave me an I.O.U. for it the night before,

which I put into my pocket-book before he left the room. I takes out my

card-case--it was the Countess as worked it for me--and there was the

I.O.U. sure enough, and he paid me thirty louis in gold down upon the

table at my bedside. So I said he was a gentleman, and asked him if he

would like to take anything, when my servant should get it for him; but

the Honourable Deuceace don't drink of a morning, and he went away to

some business which he said he had.

"Presently there's another ring at my outer door; and this time it's

Bloundell-Bloundell and the Marky that comes in. 'Bong jour, Marky,'

says I. 'Good morning--no headache?' says he. So I said I had one;

and how I must have been uncommon queer the night afore; but they both

declared I didn't show no signs of having had too much, but took my

liquor as grave as a judge.

"'So,' says the Marky, 'Deuceace has been with you; we met him in the

Palais Royal as we were coming from breakfast. Has he settled with you?

Get it while you can: he's a slippery card; and as he won three ponies

of Bloundell, I recommend you to get your money while he has some.'

"'He has paid me,' says I; 'but I knew no more than the dead that he

owed me anything, and don't remember a bit about lending him thirty

louis.'

"The Marky and Bloundell looks and smiles at each other at this; and

Bloundell says, 'Colonel, you are a queer feller. No man could have

supposed, from your manners, that you had tasted anything stronger

than tea all night, and yet you forget things in the morning. Come,

come,--tell that to the marines, my friend,--we won't have it at any

price.'

"'En efet,' says the Marky, twiddling his little black mustachios in

the chimney-glass, and making a lunge or two as he used to do at the

fencing-school. (He was a wonder at the fencing-school, and I've seen

him knock down the image fourteen times running, at Lepage's.) 'Let us

speak of affairs. Colonel, you understand that affairs of honour are

best settled at once: perhaps it won't be inconvenient to you to arrange

our little matters of last night.'

"'What little matters?' says I. 'Do you owe me any money, Marky?'

"'Bah!' says he; 'do not let us have any more jesting. I have your note

of hand for three hundred and forty louis. La voia!' says he, taking out

a paper from his pocket-book.

"'And mine for two hundred and ten,' says Bloundell-Bloundell, and he

pulls out his bit of paper.

"I was in such a rage of wonder at this, that I sprang out of bed, and

wrapped my dressing-gown round me. 'Are you come here to make a fool

of me?' says I. 'I don't owe you two hundred, or two thousand, or two

louis; and I won't pay you a farthing. Do you suppose you can catch me

with your notes of hand? I laugh at 'em and at you; and I believe you to

be a couple----.'

"'A couple of what?' says Mr. Bloundell. 'You, of course, are aware that

we are a couple of men of honour, Colonel Altamont, and not come here to

trifle or to listen to abuse from you. You will either pay us or we

will expose you as a cheat, and chastise you as a cheat, too,' says

Bloundell.

"'Oui, parbleu,' says the Marky,--but I didn't mind him, for I could

have thrown the little fellow out of the window; but it was different

with Bloundell,--he was a large man, that weighs three stone more than

me, and stands six inches higher, and I think he could have done for me.

"'Monsieur will pay, or Monsieur will give me the reason why. I believe

you're little better than a polisson, Colonel Altamont,'--that was the

phrase he used--Altamont said with a grin--and I got plenty more of

this language from the two fellows, and was in the thick of the row with

them, when another of our party came in. This was a friend of mine--a

gent I had met at Boulogne, and had taken to the Countess's myself.

And as he hadn't played at all on the previous night, and had actually

warned me against Bloundell and the others, I told the story to him, and

so did the other two.

"'I am very sorry,' says he. 'You would go on playing: the Countess

entreated you to discontinue. These gentlemen offered repeatedly to

stop. It was you that insisted on the large stakes, not they.' In fact

he charged dead against me: and when the two others went away, he told

me how the Marky would shoot me as sure as my name was--was what it is.

'I left the Countess crying, too,' said he. 'She hates these two men;

she has warned you repeatedly against them'( which she actually had

done, and often told me never to play with them), 'and now, Colonel,

I have left her in hysterics almost, lest there should be any quarrel

between you, and that confounded Marky should put a bullet through your

head. Its my belief,' says my friend, 'that that woman is distractedly

in love with you.'

"'Do you think so?' says I; upon which my friend told me how she had

actually gone down on her knees to him and 'Save Colonel Altamont!'

"As soon as I was dressed, I went and called upon that lovely woman.

She gave a shriek and pretty near fainted when she saw me. She called me

Ferdinand,--I'm blest if she didn't."

"I thought your name was Jack," said Strong, with a laugh; at which the

Colonel blushed very much behind his dyed whiskers.

"A man may have more names than one, mayn't he, Strong?" Altamont asked.

"When I'm with a lady, I like to take a good one. She called me by my

Christian name. She cried fit to break your heart. I can't stand seeing

a woman cry--never could--not whilst I'm fond of her. She said she could

bear not to think of my losing so much money in her house. Wouldn't I

take her diamonds and necklaces, and pay part?

"I swore I wouldn't touch a farthing's worth of her jewellery, which

perhaps I did not think was worth a great deal,--but what can a woman do

more than give you her all? That's the sort I like, and I know there's

plenty of 'em. And I told her to be easy about the money, for I would

not pay one single farthing.

"'Then they'll shoot you,' says she; 'they'll kill my Ferdinand.'"

"They'll kill my Jack wouldn't have sounded well in French," Strong

said, laughing.

"Never mind about names," said the other, sulkily; "a man of honour may

take any name he chooses, I suppose."

"Well, go on with your story," said Strong. "She said they would kill

you."

"'No,' says I, 'they won't: for I will not let that scamp of a Marquis

send me out of the world; and if he lays a hand on me, I'll brain him,

Marquis as he is.'

"At this the Countess shrank back from me as if I had said something

very shocking. 'Do I understand Colonel Altamont aright?' says she: 'and

that a British officer refuses to meet any person who provokes him to

the field of honour?'

"'Field of honour be hanged, Countess,' says I. 'You would not have me

be a target for that little scoundrel's pistol practice.'

"'Colonel Altamont,' says the Countess, 'I thought you were a man

of honour--I thought, I--but no matter. Good-bye, sir.'--And she

was sweeping out of the room, her voice regular choking in her

pocket-handkerchief.

"'Countess!' says I, rushing after her and seizing her hand.

"'Leave me, Monsieur le Colonel,' says she, shaking me off, 'my father

was a General of the Grand Army. A soldier should know how to pay all

his debts of honour.'

"What could I do? Everybody was against me. Caroline said I had lost

the money: though I didn't remember a syllable about the business. I had

taken Deuceace's money too; but then it was because he offered it to me

you know, and that's a different thing. Every one of these chaps was a

man of fashion and honour; and the Marky and the Countess of the first

families in France. And, by Jove, sir, rather than offend her, I paid

the money up five hundred and sixty gold Napoleons, by Jove: besides

three hundred which I lost when I had my revenge.

"And I can't tell you at this minute whether I was done or not,"

concluded the Colonel, musing. "Sometimes I think I was: but then

Caroline was so fond of me. That woman would never have seen me done:

never, I'm sure she wouldn't: at least, if she would, I'm deceived in

woman."

Any further revelations of his past life which Altamont might have

been disposed to confide to his honest comrade the Chevalier, were

interrupted by a knocking at the outer door of their chambers; which,

when opened by Grady the servant, admitted no less a person than Sir

Francis Clavering into the presence of the two worthies.

"The Governor, by Jove," cried Strong, regarding the arrival of his

patron with surprise. "What's brought you here?" growled Altamont,

looking sternly from under his heavy eyebrows at the Baronet. "It's

no good, I warrant." And indeed, good very seldom brought Sir Francis

Clavering into that or any other place.

Whenever he came into Shepherd's Inn it was money that brought the

unlucky baronet into those precincts; and there was commonly a gentleman

of the money-dealing world in waiting for him at Strong's chambers, or

at Campion's below; and a question of bills to negotiate or to renew.

Claverng was a man who had never looked his debts fairly in the face,

familiar as he had been with them all his life; as long as he could

renew a bill, his mind was easy regarding it; and he would sign almost

anything for to-morrow, provided to-day could be left unmolested. He

was a man whom scarcely any amount of fortune could have benefited

permanently, and who was made to be ruined to cheat small tradesmen, to

be the victim of astuter sharpers: to be niggardly and reckless, and as

destitute of honesty as the people who cheated him, and a dupe, chiefly

because he was too mean to be a successful knave. He had told more lies

in his time, and undergone more baseness of stratagem in order to

stave off a small debt, or to swindle a poor creditor, than would have

sufficed to make a fortune for a braver rogue. He was abject and a

shuffler in the very height of his prosperity. Had he been a Crown

Prince--he could not have been more weak, useless, dissolute or

ungrateful. He could not move through life except leaning on the arm

of somebody: and yet he never had an agent but he mistrusted him; and

marred any plans which might be arranged for his benefit, and secretly

acting against the people whom he employed. Strong knew Clavering and

judged him quite correctly. It was not as friends that this pair met:

but the Chevalier worked for his principal, as he would when in the army

have pursued a harassing march, or undergone his part in the danger

and privations of a siege; because it was his duty, and because he

had agreed to it. "What is it he wants?" thought the officers of the

Shepherd's Inn garrison when the Baronet came among them.

His pale face expressed extreme anger and irritation. "So sir," he said,

addressing Altamont, "you've been at your old tricks."

"Which of 'um?" asked Altamont, with a sneer.

"You have been at the Rouge et Noir: you were there last night," cried

the Baronet.

"How do you know,--were you there?" the other said. "I was at the Club

but it wasn't on the colours I played,--ask the Captain,--I've been

telling him of it. It was with the bones. It was at hazard, Sir Francis,

upon my word and honour it was;" and he looked at the Baronet with a

knowing humorous mock humility, which only seemed to make the other more

angry.

"What the deuce do I care, sir, how a man like you loses his money,

and whether it is at hazard or roulette?" screamed the Baronet, with

a multiplicity of oaths, and at the top of his voice. "What I will

not have, sir, is that you should use my name, or couple it with

yours.--Damn him, Strong, why don't you keep him in better order? I tell

you he has gone and used my name again, sir,--drawn a bill upon me, and

lost the money on the table--I can't stand it--I won't stand it. Flesh

and blood won't bear it--Do you know how much I have paid for you, sir?"

"This was only a very little 'un, Sir Francis--only fifteen pound,

Captain Strong, they wouldn't stand another: and it oughtn't to anger

you, Governor. Why, it's so trifling I did not even mention it to

Strong,--did I now, Captain? I protest it had quite slipped my memory,

and all on account of that confounded liquor I took."

"Liquor or no liquor, sir, it is no business of mine. I don't care what

you drink, or where you drink it--only it shan't be in my house. And I

will not have you breaking into my house of a night, and a fellow like

you intruding himself on my company: how dared you show yourself in

Grosvenor Place last night, sir,--and--and what do you suppose my

friends must think of me when they see a man of your sort walking into

my dining-room uninvited, and drunk, and calling for liquor as if you

were the master of the house?"

"They'll think you know some very queer sort of people, I dare say,"

Altamont said with impenetrable good-humour. "Look here, Baronet, I

apologise; on my honour I do, and ain't an apology enough between two

gentlemen? It was a strong measure I own, walking into your cuddy,

and calling for drink as if I was the Captain: but I had had too much

before, you see, that's why I wanted some more; nothing can be more

simple--and it was because they wouldn't give me no more money upon your

name at the Black and Red, that I thought I would come down and speak

to you about it. To refuse me was nothing: but to refuse a bill drawn

on you that have been such a friend to the shop, and are a baronet and

a member of parliament, and a gentleman and no mistake--Damme, its

ungrateful."

"By heavens, if ever you do it again--if ever you dare show to yourself

in my house; or give my name at a gambling-house or at any other house,

by Jove--at any other house--or give any reference at all to me, or

speak to me in the street, by God, or anywhere else until I speak to

you--I disclaim you altogether--I won't give you another shilling."

"Governor, don't be provoking," Altamont said surlily. "Don't talk to me

about daring to do this thing or t'other, or when my dander is up it's

the very thing to urge me on. I oughtn't to have come last night, I know

I oughtn't: but I told you I was drunk, and that ought to be sufficient

between gentleman and gentleman."

"You a gentleman! dammy, sir," said the Baronet, "how dares a fellow

like you to call himself a gentleman?"

"I ain't a baronet, I know," growled the other; "and I've forgotten how

to be a gentleman almost now, but--but I was one, once, and my father

was one, and I'll not have this sort of talk from you, Sir F. Clavering,

that's flat. I want to go abroad again. Why don't you come down with the

money, and let me go? Why the devil are you to be rolling in riches, and

me to have none? Why should have a house and a table covered with

plate, and me be in a garret here in this beggarly Shepherd's Inn? We're

partners, ain't we? I'd as good a right to be rich as you have, haven't

I? Tell the story to Strong here, if you like; and ask him to be umpire

between us. I don't mind letting my secret out to a man that won't

split. Look here, Strong--perhaps you guess the story already--the fact

is, me and the Governor----"

"D----, hold your tongue," shrieked out the Baronet in a fury. "You

shall have the money as soon as I can get it. I ain't made of money. I'm

so pressed and badgered, I don't know where to turn. I shall go mad;

by Jove, I shall. I wish I was dead, for I'm the most miserable brute

alive. I say, Mr. Altamont, don't mind me. When I'm out of health--and

I'm devilish bilious this morning--hang me, I abuse everybody, and don't

know what I say. Excuse me if I've offended you. I--I'll try and get

that little business done. Strong shall try. Upon my word he shall. And

I say, Strong, my boy, I want to speak to you. Come into the office for

a minute."

Almost all Clavering's assaults ended in this ignominious way, and in

a shameful retreat. Altamont sneered after the Baronet as he left the

room, and entered into the office, to talk privately with his factotum.

"What is the matter now?" the latter asked of him. "It's the old story,

I suppose."

"D---- it, yes," the Baronet said. "I dropped two hundred in ready money

at the Little Coventry last night, and gave a cheque for three hundred

more. On her ladyship's bankers, too, for to-morrow; and I must meet

it, for there'll be the deuce to pay else. The last time she paid my

play-debts, I swore I would not touch a dice-box again, and she'll keep

her word, Strong, and dissolve partnership, if I go on. I wish I had

three hundred a year, and was away. At a German watering-place you

can do devilish well with three hundred a year. But my habits are so

d-----reckless: I wish I was in the Serpentine. I wish I was dead, by

Gad I wish I was. I wish I had never touched those confounded bones. I

had such a run of luck last night, with five for the main, and seven to

five all night, until those ruffians wanted to pay me with Altamont's

bill upon me. The luck turned from that minute. Never held the box again

for three mains, and came away cleared out, leaving that infernal cheque

behind me. How shall I pay it? Blackland won't hold it over. Hulker and

Bullock will write about it directly to her ladyship. By Jove, Ned, I'm

the most miserable brute in all England."

It was necessary for Ned to devise some plan to console the Baronet

under this pressure of grief; and no doubt he found the means of

procuring a loan for his patron, for he was closeted at Mr. Campion's

offices that day for some time. Altamont had once more a guinea or two

in his pocket, with a promise of a further settlement; and the Baronet

had no need to wish himself dead for the next two or three months at

least. And Strong, putting together what he had learned from the Colonel

and Sir Francis, began to form in his own mind a pretty accurate opinion

as to the nature of the tie which bound the two men together.

CHAPTER XLV. A Chapter of Conversations

Every day, after the entertainment at Grosvenor Place and Greenwich,

of which we have seen Major Pendennis partake, the worthy gentleman's

friendship and cordiality for the Clavering family seemed to increase.

His calls were frequent; his attentions to the lady of the house

unremitting. An old man about town, he had the good fortune to be

received in many houses, at which a lady of Lady Clavering's distinction

ought to be seen. Would her ladyship not like to be present at the grand

entertainment at Gaunt House? There was to be a very pretty breakfast

ball at Viscount Marrowfat's, at Fulham. Everybody was to be there

(including august personages of the highest rank), and there was to be

a Watteau quadrille, in which Miss Amory would surely look charming. To

these and other amusements the obsequious old gentleman kindly offered

to conduct Lady Clavering, and was also ready to make himself useful to

the Baronet in any way agreeable to the latter.

In spite of his present station and fortune, the world persisted in

looking rather coldly upon Clavering, and strange suspicious rumours

followed him about. He was blackballed at two clubs in succession.

In the House of Commons, he only conversed with a few of the most

disreputable members of that famous body, having a happy knack of

choosing bad society, and adapting himself naturally to it, as other

people do to the company of their betters. The name all the senators

with whom Clavering consorted, would be invidious. We may mention only

a few. There was Captain Raff, the honourable member for Epsom, who

retired after the last Goodwood races, having accepted, as Mr. Hotspur,

the whip of the party, said, a mission to the Levant; there was

Hustingson, the patriotic member for Islington, whose voice is never

heard now denunciating corruption, since his appointment to the

Governorship of Coventry Island; there was Bob Freeny, of the

Booterstown Freenys, who is a dead shot, and of whom we therefore wish

to speak with every respect; and of all these gentlemen, with whom in

the course of his professional duty Mr. Hotspur had to confer, there was

none for whom he had a more thorough contempt and dislike than for Sir

Francis Clavering, the representative of an ancient race, who had sat

for their own borough of Clavering time out of mind in the House. "If

that man is wanted for a division," Hotspur said, "ten to one he is to

be found in a hell. He was educated in the Fleet, and he has not heard

the end of Newgate yet, take my word for it. He'll muddle away the

Begum's fortune at thimble-rig, be caught picking pockets, and finish on

board the hulks." And if the high-born Hotspur, with such an opinion

of Clavering, could yet from professional reasons be civil to him,

why should not Major Pendennis also have reasons of his own for being

attentive to this unlucky gentleman?

"He has a very good cellar and a very good cook," the Major said; "as

long as he is silent he is not offensive, and he very seldom speaks. If

he chooses to frequent gambling-tables, and lose his money to blacklegs,

what matters to me? Don't look too curiously into any man's affairs,

Pen, my boy; every fellow has some cupboard in his house, begad, which

he would not like you and me to peep into. Why should we try, when the

rest of the house is open to us? And a devilish good house, too, as you

and I know. And if the man of the family is not all one could wish, the

women are excellent. The Begum is not over-refined, but as kind a woman

as ever lived, and devilish clever too; and as for the little Blanche,

you know my opinion about her, you rogue; you know my belief is that she

is sweet on you, and would have you for the asking. But you are growing

such a great man, that I suppose you won't be content under a Duke's

daughter--Hey, sir? I recommend you to ask one of them, and try."

Perhaps Pen was somewhat intoxicated by his success in the world; and it

may also have entered into the young man's mind (his uncle's perpetual

hints serving not a little to encourage the notion) that Miss Amory was

tolerably well disposed to renew the little flirtation which had been

carried on in the early days of both of them, by the banks of the rural

Brawl. But he was little disposed to marriage, he said, at that

moment, and, adopting some of his uncle's worldly tone, spoke rather

contemptuously of the institution, and in favour of a bachelor life.

"You are very happy, sir," said he, "and you get on very well alone, and

so do I. With a wife at my side, I should lose my place in society; and

I don't, for my part, much fancy retiring into the country with a Mrs.

Pendennis; or taking my wife into lodgings to be waited upon by the

servant-of-all-work. The period of my little illusions is over. You

cured me of my first love who, certainly was a fool, and would have had

a fool for her husband, and a very sulky discontented husband too if

she had taken me. We young fellows live fast, sir; and I feel as old at

five-and-twenty as many of the old fo--the old bachelors--whom I see

in the bow-window at Bays's. Don't look offended, I only mean that I

am blase about love matters, and that I could no more fan myself into a

flame for Miss Amory now, than I could adore Lady Mirabel over again. I

wish I could; I rather like old Mirabel for his infatuation about her,

and think his passion is the most respectable part of his life."

"Sir Charles Mirabel was always a theatrical man, sir," the Major said,

annoyed that his nephew should speak flippantly of any person of Sir

Charles's rank and station. "He has been occupied with theatricals

since his early days. He acted at Carlton House when he was Page to the

Prince; he has been mixed up with that sort of thing: he could afford

to marry whom he chooses; and Lady Mirabel is a most respectable woman,

received everywhere--everywhere, mind. The Duchess of Connaught receives

her, Lady Rockminster receives her--it doesn't become young fellows to

speak lightly of people in that station. There's not a more respectable

woman in England than Lady Mirabel:--and the old fogies, as you call

them, at Bays's, are some of the first gentlemen in England, of whom you

youngsters had best learn a little manners, and a little breeding, and

a little modesty." And the Major began to think that Pen was growing

exceedingly pert and conceited, and that the world made a great deal too

much of him.

The Major's anger amused Pen. He studied his uncle's peculiarities with

a constant relish, and was always in a good humour with his worldly old

Mentor. "I am a youngster of fifteen years' standing, sir," he said,

adroitly, "and if you think that we are disrespectful, you should see

those of the present generation. A protege of yours came to breakfast

with me the other day. You told me to ask him, and I did it to please

you. We had a day's sights together, and dined at the club, and went to

the play. He said the wine at the Polyanthus was not so good as Ellis's

wine at Richmond, smoked Warrington's cavendish after breakfast, and

when I gave him a sovereign as a farewell token, said he had plenty of

them, but would take it to show he wasn't proud."

"Did he?--did you ask young Clavering?" cried the Major, appeased at

once--"fine boy, rather wild, but a fine boy--parents like that sort of

attention, and you can't do better than pay it to our worthy friends of

Grosvenor Place. And so you took him to the play and tipped him? That

was right, sir, that was right:" with which Mentor quitted Telemachus,

thinking that the young men were not so very bad, and that he should

make something of that fellow yet.

As Blaster Clavering grew into years and stature, he became too strong

for the authority of his fond parents and governess; and rather governed

them than permitted himself to be led by their orders. With his papa

he was silent and sulky, seldom making his appearance, however, in the

neighbourhood of that gentleman; with his mamma be roared and fought

when any contest between them arose as to the gratification of his

appetite, or other wish of his heart; and in his disputes with his

governess over his book, he kicked that quiet creature's shins so

fiercely, that she was entirely overmastered and subdued by him. And

he would have so treated his sister Blanche, too, and did on one or

two occasions attempt to prevail over her; but she showed an immense

resolution and spirit on her part, and boxed his ears so soundly, that

he forbore from molesting Miss Amory, as he did the governess and his

mamma, and his mamma's maid.

At length, when the family came to London, Sir Francis gave forth

his opinion, that "the little beggar had best be sent to school."

Accordingly the young son and heir of the house of Clavering was

despatched to the Rev. Otto Rose's establishment at Twickenham,

where young noblemen and gentlemen were received preparatory to their

introduction to the great English public schools.

It is not our intention to follow Master Clavering in his scholastic

career; the paths to the Temple of Learning were made more easy to him

than they were to some of us of earlier generations. He advanced towards

that fane in a carriage-and-four, so to speak, and might halt and take

refreshment almost whenever he pleased. He wore varnished boots from

the earliest period of youth, and had cambric handkerchiefs and

lemon-coloured kid gloves, of the smallest size ever manufactured by

Privat. They dressed regularly at Mr. Rose's to come down to dinner; the

young gentlemen had shawl dressing-gowns, fires in their bedrooms, horse

and carriage exercise occasionally, and oil for their hair. Corporal

punishment was altogether dispensed with by the Principal, who thought

that moral discipline was entirely sufficient to lead youth; and the

boys were so rapidly advanced in many branches of learning, that they

acquired the art of drinking spirits and smoking cigars, even before

they were old enough to enter a public school. Young Frank Clavering

stole his father's Havannahs, and conveyed them to school, or smoked

them in the stables, at a surprisingly early period of life, and at ten

years old drank his champagne almost as stoutly as any whiskered cornet

of dragoons could do.

When this interesting youth came home for his vacations Major Pendennis

was as laboriously civil and gracious to him as he was to the rest of

the family; although the boy had rather a contempt for old Wigsby, as

the Major was denominated, mimicked him behind his back, as the polite

Major bowed and smirked with Lady Clavering or Miss Amory; and drew

rude caricatures, such as are designed by ingenious youths, in which

the Major's wig, his nose, his tie, etc., were represented with artless

exaggeration. Untiring in his efforts to be agreeable, the Major wished

that Pen, too, should take particular notice of this child; incited

Arthur to invite him to his chambers, to give him a dinner at the club,

to take him to Madame Tussaud's, the Tower, the play, and so forth, and

to tip him, as the phrase is, at the end of the day's pleastres. Arthur,

who was good-natured and fond of children, went through all these

ceremonies one day; had the boy to breakfast at the Temple, where

he made the most contemptuous remarks regarding the furniture, the

crockery, and the tattered state of Warrington's dressing-gown; and

smoked a short pipe, and recounted the history of a fight between Tuffy

and Long Biggings, at Rose's, greatly to the edification of the two

gentlemen his hosts.

As the Major rightly predicted, Lady Clavering was very grateful for

Arthur's attention to the boy; more grateful than the lad himself,

who took attentions as a matter of course, and very likely had more

sovereigns in his pocket than poor Pen, who generously gave him one of

his own slender stock of those coins.

The Major, with the sharp eyes with which Nature endowed him, and with

the glasses of age and experience, watched this boy, and surveyed his

position in the family without seeming to be rudely curious about

their affairs. But, as a country neighbour, one who had many family

obligations to the Claverings, an old man of the world, he took occasion

to find out what Lady Clavering's means were, how her capital was

disposed, and what the boy was to inherit. And setting himself to

work,--for what purposes will appear, no doubt, ulteriorly,--he soon had

got a pretty accurate knowledge of Lady Clavering's affairs and fortune,

and of the prospects of her daughter and son. The daughter was to have

but a slender provision; the bulk of the property was, as before has

been said, to go to the son,--his father did not care for him or anybody

else,--his mother was dotingly fond of him as the child of her latter

days,--his sister disliked him. Such may be stated in round numbers, to

be the result of the information which Major Pendennis got. "Ah! my dear

madam," he would say, patting the head of the boy, "this boy may wear

a baron's coronet on his head on some future coronation, if matters are

but managed rightly, and if Sir Francis Clavering would but play his

cards well."

At this the widow Amory heaved a deep sigh. "He plays only much of his

cards, Major, I'm afraid," she said. The Major owned that he knew as

much; did not disguise that he had heard of Sir Francis Clavering's

unfortunate propensity to play; pitied Lady Clavering sincerely; but

spoke with such genuine sentiment and sense, that her ladyship, glad to

find a person of experience to whom she could confide her grief and her

condition, talked about them pretty unreservedly to Major Pendennis, and

was eager to have his advice and consolation. Major Pendennis became

the Begum's confidante and house-friend, and as a mother, a wife, and a

capitalist, she consulted him.

He gave her to understand (showing at the same time a great deal

of respectful sympathy) that he was acquainted with some of the

circumstances of her first unfortunate marriage, and with even the

person of her late husband, whom he remembered in Calcutta--when she was

living in seclusion with her father. The poor lady, with tears of shame

more than of grief in her eyes, told her version of her story. Going

back a child to India after two years at a European school, she had met

Amory, and foolishly married him. "Oh, you don't know how miserable that

man, made me," she said, "or what a life I passed betwixt him and my

father. Before I saw him I had never seen a man except my father's

clerks and native servants. You know we didn't go into society in India

on account of----" ("I know," said Major Pendennis, with a bow) "I was

a wild romantic child, my head was full of novels which I'd read at

school--I listened to his wild stories and adventures, for he was a

daring fellow, and I thought he talked beautifully of those calm nights

on the passage out, when he used to----. Well, I married him, and I was

wretched from that day--wretched with my father, whose character you

know, Major Pendennis, and I won't speak of: but he wasn't a good man,

sir,--neither to my poor mother, nor to me, except that he left me his

money,--nor to no one else that I ever heard of: and he didn't do many

kind actions in his lifetime, I'm afraid. And as for Amory, he was

almost worse; he was a spendthrift when my father was close: he drank

dreadfully, and was furious when in that way. He wasn't in any way a

good or a faithful husband to me, Major Pendennis, and if he'd died in

the gaol before this trial, instead of afterwards he would have saved

me a deal of shame and of unhappiness since, sir." Lady Clavering added:

"For perhaps I should not have married at all if I had not been so

anxious to change his horrid name, and I have not been happy in my

second husband, as I suppose you know, sir. Ah, Major Pendennis, I've

got money to be sure, and I'm a lady, and people fancy I'm very happy,

but I ain't. We all have our cares, and griefs, and troubles: and many's

the day that I sit down to one of my grand dinners with an aching heart,

and many a night do I lay awake on my fine bed a great deal more unhappy

than the maid that makes for it. I'm not a happy woman, Major, for all

the world says; and envies the Begum her diamonds, and carriages, and

the great company that comes to my house. I'm not happy in my husband;

I'm not in my daughter. She ain't a good girl like that dear Laura Bell

at Fairoaks. She's cost me many a tear though you don't see 'em; and she

sneers at her mother because I haven't had learning and that. How should

I? I was brought up amongst natives till I was twelve, and went back to

India when I was fourteen. Ah, Major, I should have been a good woman if

I had had a good husband. And now I must go upstairs and wipe my eyes,

for they're red with cryin. And Lady Rockminster's a comin, and we're

goin to ave a drive in the Park. And when Lady Rockminster made

her appearance, there was not a trace of tears or vexation on Lady

Clavering's face, but she was full of spirits, and bounced out with

her blunders and talk, and murdered the king's English with the utmost

liveliness and good-humour.

"Begad, she is not such a bad woman!" the Major thought within himself.

"She is not refined, certainly, and calls 'Apollo' 'Apoller;' but she

has some heart, and I like that sort of thing, and a devilish deal of

money, too. Three stars in India Stock to her name, begad! which that

young cub is to have--is he?" And he thought how he should like to see a

little of the money transferred to Miss Blanche, and, better still, one

of those stars shining in the name of Mr. Arthur Pendennis.

Still bent upon pursuing his schemes, whatsoever they might be, the

old negotiator took the privilege of his intimacy and age, to talk in

a kindly and fatherly manner to Miss Blanche, when he found occasion to

see her alone. He came in so frequently at luncheon-time, and became

so familiar with the ladies, that they did not even hesitate to quarrel

before him; and Lady Clavering, whose tongue was loud, and temper

brusque, had many a battle with the Sylphide in the family friend's

presence. Blanche's wit seldom failed to have the mastery in these

encounters, and the keen barbs of her arrows drove her adversary

discomfited away. "I am an old fellow," the Major said; "I have nothing

to do in life. I have my eyes open. I keep good counsel. I am the friend

of both of you; and if you choose to quarrel before me, why, I shan't

tell any one. But you are two good people, and I intend to make it up

between you. I have between lots of people--husbands and wives, fathers

and sons, daughters and mammas, before this. I like it; I've nothing

else to do."

One day, then, the old diplomatist entered Lady Clavering's

drawing-room, just as the latter quitted it, evidently in a high state

of indignation, and ran past him up the stairs to her own apartments.

"She couldn't speak to him now," she said; "she was a great deal too

angry with that--that--that little, wicked"--anger choked the rest of

the words, or prevented their utterance until Lady Clavering had passed

out of hearing.

"My dear, good Miss Amory," the Major said, entering the drawing-room,

"I see what is happening. You and mamma have been disagreeing. Mothers

and daughters disagree in the best families. It was but last week that

I healed up a quarrel between Lady Clapperton and her daughter Lady

Claudia. Lady Lear and her eldest daughter have not spoken for fourteen

years. Kinder and more worthy people than these I never knew in the

whole course of my life; for everybody but each other admirable. But

they can't live together: they oughtn't to live together: and I wish,

my dear creature, with all my soul, that I could see you with an

establishment of your own--for there is no woman in London who could

conduct one better--with your own establishment, making your own home

happy."

"I am not very happy in this one," said the Sylphide; "and the stupidity

of mamma is enough to provoke a saint."

"Precisely so; you are not suited to one another. Your mother committed

one fault in early life--or was it Nature, my dear, in your case?--she

ought not to have educated you. You ought not to have been bred up to

become the refined and intellectual being you are, surrounded, as I

own you are, by those who have not your genius or your refinement. Your

place would be to lead in the most brilliant circles, not to follow, and

take a second place in any society. I have watched you, Miss Amory: you

are ambitious; and your proper sphere is command. You ought to shine;

and you never can in this house, I know it. I hope I shall see you in

another and a happier one, some day, and the mistress of it."

The Sylphide shrugged her lily shoulders with a look of scorn. "Where is

the Prince, and where is the palace, Major Pendennis?" she said. "I am

ready. But there is no romance in the world now, no real affection."

"No, indeed," said the Major, with the most sentimental and simple air

which he could muster.

"Not that I know anything about it," said Blanche, casting her eyes down

"except what I have read in novels."

"Of course not," Major Pendennis cried; "how should you, my dear young

lady? and novels ain't true, as you remark admirably, and there is no

romance left in the world. Begad, I wish I was a young fellow like my

nephew."

"And what," continued Miss Amory, musing, "what are the men whom we see

about at the balls every night--dancing guardsmen, penniless treasury

clerks--boobies! If I had my brother's fortune, I might have such an

establishment as you promise me--but with my name, and with my little

means, what am I to look to! A country parson, or a barrister in a

street near Russell Square, or a captain in a dragoon regiment, who will

take lodgings for me, and come home from the mess tipsy and smelling of

smoke like Sir Francis Clavering. That is how we girls are destined to

end life. O Major Pendennis, I am sick of London, and of balls, and of

young dandies with their chin-tips, and of the insolent great ladies

who know us one day and cut us the next--and of the world altogether. I

should like to leave it and to go into a convent, that I should. I shall

never find anybody to understand me. And I live here as much alone in

my family and in the world, as if I were in a cell locked up for ever.

I wish there were Sisters of Charity here, and that I could be one and

catch the plague, and die of it--I wish to quit the world. I am not

very old: but I am tired, I have suffered so much--I've been so

disillusionated--I'm weary, I'm weary--O that the Angel of Death would

come and beckon me away!"

This speech may be interpreted as follows. A few nights since a great

lady, Lady Flamingo, had cut Miss Amory and Lady Clavering. She was

quite mad because she could not get an invitation to Lady Drum's ball:

it was the end of the season and nobody had proposed to her: she had

made no sensation at all, she who was so much cleverer than any girl of

the year, and of the young ladies forming her special circle. Dora who

had but five thousand pounds, Flora who had nothing, and Leonora who

had red hair, were going to be married, and nobody had come for Blanche

Amory!

"You judge wisely about the world, and about your position, my dear Miss

Blanche," the Major said. "The Prince don't marry nowadays, as you say:

unless the Princess has a doosid deal of money in the funds, or is a

lady of his own rank.--The young folks of the great families marry

into the great families: if they haven't fortune they have each other's

shoulders, to push on in the world, which is pretty nearly as good.--A

girl with your fortune can scarcely hope for a great match: but a girl

with your genius and your admirable tact and fine manners, with a clever

husband by her side, may make any place for herself in the world.--We

are grown doosid republican. Talent ranks with birth and wealth now,

begad: and a clever man with a clever wife, may take any place they

please."

Miss Amory did not of course in the least understand what Major

Pendennis meant.--Perhaps she thought over circumstances in her mind and

asked herself, could he be a negotiator for a former suitor of hers, and

could he mean Pen? No, it was impossible--He had been civil, but nothing

more.--So she said laughing, "Who is the clever man, and when will you

bring him to me, Major Pendennis? I am dying to see him."

At this moment a servant threw open the door, and announced Mr. Henry

Foker: at which name, and at the appearance of our friend, both the lady

and the gentleman burst out laughing.

"That is not the man," Major Pendennis said. "He is engaged to his

cousin, Lord Gravesend's daughter.--Good-bye, my dear Miss Amory."

\* \* \* \* \*

Was Pen growing worldly, and should a man not get the experience of the

world and lay it to his account? "He felt, for his part," as he said,

"that he was growing very old very soon." "How this town forms and

changes us," he said once to Warrington. Each had come in from his

night's amusement; and Pen was smoking his pipe, and recounting, as his

habit was, to his friend the observations and adventures of the evening

just past. "How I am changed," he said, "from the simpleton boy at

Fairoaks, who was fit to break his heart about his first love! Lady

Mirabel had a reception to-night, and was as grave and collected as if

she had been born a Duchess, and had never seen a trap-door in her

life. She gave me the honour of a conversation, and patronised me about

'Walter Lorraine,' quite kindly."

"What condescension!" broke in Warrington.

"Wasn't it?" Pen said, simply--at which the other burst out laughing

according to his wont. "Is it possible," he said, "that anybody should

think of patronising the eminent author of 'Walter Lorraine?'"

"You laugh at both of us," Pen said, blushing a little--"I was coming

to that myself. She told me that she had not read the book (as indeed

I believe she never read a book in her life), but that Lady Rockminster

had, and that the Duchess of Connaught pronounced it to be very clever.

In that case, I said, I should die happy, for that to please those

two ladies was in fact the great aim of my existence, and having their

approbation, of course I need look for no other. Lady Mirabel looked

at me solemnly out of her fine eyes, and said, 'Oh, indeed,' as if she

understood me, and then she asked me whether I went to the Duchess's

Thursdays, and when I said No, hoped she should see me there, and that

I must try and get there, everybody went there--everybody who was in

society: and then we talked of the new ambassador from Timbuctoo, and

how he was better than the old one; and how Lady Mary Billington was

going to marry a clergyman quite below her in rank; and how Lord and

Lady Ringdove had fallen out three months after their marriage about

Tom Pouter of the Blues, Lady Ringdove's cousin--and so forth. From

the gravity of that woman you would have fancied she had been born in a

palace, and lived all the seasons of her life in Belgrave Square."

"And you, I suppose you took your part in the conversation pretty well,

as the descendant of the Earl your father, and the heir of Fairoaks

Castle?" Warrington said. "Yes, I remember reading of the festivities

which occurred when you came of age. The Countess gave a brilliant tea

soiree to the neighbouring nobility; and the tenantry were regaled in

the kitchen with a leg of mutton and a quart of ale. The remains of

the banquet were distributed amongst the poor of the village, and the

entrance to the park was illuminated until old John put the candle out

on retiring to rest at his usual hour."

"My mother is not a countess," said Pen, "though she has very good blood

in her veins too--but commoner as she is, I have never met a peeress

who was more than her peer, Mr. George; and if you will come to Fairoaks

Castle you shall judge for yourself of her and of my cousin too. They

are not so witty as the London women, but they certainly are as well

bred. The thoughts of women in the country are turned to other objects

than those which occupy your London ladies. In the country a woman has

her household and her poor, her long calm days and long calm evenings."

"Devilish long," Warrington said, "and a great deal too calm; I've tried

'em."

"The monotony of that existence must be to a certain degree

melancholy--like the tune of a long ballad; and its harmony grave and

gentle, sad and tender: it would be unendurable else. The loneliness

of women in the country makes them of necessity soft and sentimental.

Leading a life of calm duty, constant routine, mystic reverie,--a sort

of nuns at large--too much gaiety or laughter would jar upon their

almost sacred quiet, and would be as out of place there as in a church."

"Where you go to sleep over the sermon," Warrington said.

"You are a professed misogynist, and hate the sex because, I suspect,

you know very little about them," Mr. Pen continued, with an air of

considerable self-complacency. "If you dislike the women in the country

for being too slow, surely the London woman ought to be fast enough for

you. The pace of London life is enormous: how do people last at it, I

wonder,--male and female? Take a woman of the world: follow her course

through the season; one asks how she can survive it? or if she tumbles

into a sleep at the end of August, and lies torpid until the spring?

She goes into the world every night, and sits watching her marriageable

daughters dancing till long after dawn. She has a nursery of little

ones, very likely, at home, to whom she administers example and

affection; having an eye likewise to bread-and-milk, catechism, music

and French, and roast leg of mutton at one o'clock; she has to call

upon ladies of her own station, either domestically or in her

public character, in which she sits upon Charity Committees, or Ball

Committees, or Emigration Committees, or Queen's College Committees, and

discharges I don't know what more duties of British stateswomanship.

She very likely keeps a poor-visiting list; has conversations with the

clergyman about soup or flannel, or proper religious teaching for the

parish; and (if she lives in certain districts) probably attends early

church. She has the newspapers to read, and, at least, must know what

her husband's party is about, so as to be able to talk to her neighbour

at dinner; and it is a fact that she reads every new book that comes

out; for she can talk, and very smartly and well, about them all, and

you see them all upon her drawing-room table. She has the cares of her

household besides--to make both ends meet; to make the girls' milliner's

bills appear not too dreadful to the father and paymaster of the family;

to snip off, in secret, a little extra article of expenditure here

and there, and convey it, in the shape of a bank-note, to the boys

at college or at sea; to check the encroachments of tradesmen and

housekeepers' financial fallacies; to keep upper and lower servants from

jangling with one another, and the household in order. Add to this, that

she has a secret taste for some art or science, models in clay, makes

experiments in chemistry, or plays in private on the violoncello,--and

I say, without exaggeration, many London ladies are doing this,--and you

have a character before you such as our ancestors never heard of, and

such as belongs entirely to our era and period of civilisation. Ye gods!

how rapidly we live and grow! In nine months, Mr. Paxton grows you a

pineapple as large as a portmanteau, whereas a little one, no bigger

than a Dutch cheese, took three years to attain his majority in

old times; and as the race of pineapples so is the race of man.

Hoiaper--what's the Greek for a pineapple, Warrington?"

"Stop, for mercy's sake, stop with the English and before you come to

the Greek," Warrington cried out, laughing. "I never heard you make such

a long speech, or was aware that you had penetrated so deeply into the

female mysteries. Who taught you all this, and into whose boudoirs

and nurseries have you been peeping, whilst I was smoking my pipe, and

reading my book, lying on my straw bed?"

"You are on the bank; old boy, content to watch the waves tossing in

the winds, and the struggles of others at sea," Pen said. "I am in

the stream now, and by Jove I like it. How rapidly we go down it, hey?

Strong and feeble, old and young--the metal pitchers and the earthen

pitchers--the pretty little china boat swims gaily till the big bruised

brazen one bumps him and sends him down--eh, vogue la galere!--you see

a man sink in the race, and say good-bye to him--look, he has only

dived under the other fellow's legs, and comes up shaking his pole, and

striking out ever so far ahead. Eh, vogue la galere, I say. It's good

sport, Warrington--not winning merely, but playing."

"Well, go in and win, young 'un. I'll sit and mark the game," Warrington

said, surveying the ardent young fellow with an almost fatherly

pleasure. "A generous fellow plays for the play, a sordid one for the

stake; an old fogy sits by and smokes the pipe of tranquillity, while

Jack and Tom are pummelling each other in the ring."

"Why don't you come in, George, and have a turn with the gloves? You are

big enough and strong enough," Pen said. "Dear old boy, you are worth

ten of me."

"You are not quite as tall as Goliath, certainly," the other answered,

with a laugh that was rough and yet tender. "As for me, I am disabled.

I had a fatal hit in early life. I will tell you about it some day. You

may, too, meet with your master. Don't be too eager, or too confident,

or too worldly, my boy."

Was Pendennis becoming worldly, or only seeing the worldly, or both? and

is a man very wrong for being after all only a man? Which is the

most reasonable, and does his duty best: he who stands aloof from

the struggle of life, calmly contemplating, or he who descends to the

ground, and takes his part in the contest? "That philosopher," Pen said,

"had held a great place amongst the leaders of the world, and enjoyed

to the full what it had to give of rank and riches, renown and pleasure,

who came, weary-hearted, out of it, and said that all was vanity and

vexation of spirit. Many a teacher of those whom we reverence, and who

steps out of his carriage up to his carved cathedral place, shakes his

lawn ruffles over the velvet cushions, and cries out, that the whole

struggle is an accursed one, and the works of the world are evil. Many

a conscience-stricken mystic flies from it altogether, and shuts himself

out from it within convent walls (real or spiritual), whence he can only

look up to the sky, and contemplate the heaven out of which there is no

rest, and no good.

"But the earth, where our feet are, is the work of the same Power as the

immeasurable blue yonder, in which the future lies into which we would

peer. Who ordered toil as the condition of life, ordered weariness,

ordered sickness, ordered poverty, failure, success--to this man a

foremost place, to the other a nameless struggle with the crowd--to that

a shameful fall, or paralysed limb, or sudden accident--to each some

work upon the ground he stands on, until he is laid beneath it." While

they were talking, the dawn came shining through the windows of the

room, and Pen threw them open to receive the fresh morning air. "Look,

George," said he; "look and see the sun rise: he sees the labourer on

his way a-field; the work-girl plying her poor needle; the lawyer at his

desk, perhaps; the beauty smiling asleep upon her pillow of down; or the

jaded reveller reeling to bed; or the fevered patient tossing on it; or

the doctor watching by it, over the throes of the mother for the child

that is to be born into the world;--to be born and to take his part

in the suffering and struggling, the tears and laughter, the crime,

remorse, love, folly, sorrow, rest."

CHAPTER XLVI. Miss Amory's Partners

The noble Henry Foker, of whom we have lost sight for a few pages,

has been in the meanwhile occupied, as we might suppose a man of his

constancy would be, in the pursuit and indulgence of his all-absorbing

passion of love.

I wish that a few of my youthful readers who are inclined to that

amusement would take the trouble to calculate the time which is spent

in the pursuit, when they would find it to be one of the most costly

occupations in which a man can possibly indulge. What don't you

sacrifice to it, indeed, young gentlemen and young ladies of

ill-regulated minds? Many hours of your precious sleep in the first

place, in which you lie tossing and thinking about the adored object,

whence you come down late to breakfast, when noon is advancing and all

the family is long since away to its daily occupations. Then when you at

length get to these occupations you pay no attention to them, and engage

in them with no ardour--all your thoughts and powers of mind being fixed

elsewhere. Then the day's work being slurred over, you neglect your

friends and relatives, your natural companions and usual associates in

life, that you may go and have a glance at the dear personage, or a look

up at her windows, or a peep at her carriage in the Park. Then at night

the artless blandishments of home bore you; mamma's conversation palls

upon you; the dishes which that good soul prepares for the dinner of

her favourite are sent away untasted,--the whole meal of life, indeed,

except one particular plat, has no relish. Life, business, family ties,

home, all things useful and dear once, become intolerable, and you are

never easy except when you are in pursuit of your flame.

Such I believe to be not unfrequently the state of mind amongst

ill-regulated young gentlemen, and such indeed was Mr. H. Foker's

condition, who, having been bred up to indulge in every propensity

towards which he was inclined, abandoned himself to this one with his

usual selfish enthusiasm. Nor because he had given his friend Arthur

Pendennis a great deal of good advice on a former occasion, need men of

the world wonder that Mr. Foker became passion's slave in his turn. Who

among us has not given a plenty of the very best advice to his friends?

Who has not preached, and who has practised? To be sure, you, madam,

are perhaps a perfect being, and never had a wrong thought in the whole

course of your frigid and irreproachable existence: or sir, you are a

great deal too strong-minded to allow any foolish passion to interfere

with your equanimity in chambers or your attendance on 'Change; you are

so strong that you don't want any sympathy. We don't give you any, then;

we keep ours for the humble and weak, that struggle and stumble and get

up again, and so march with the rest of mortals. What need have you of

a hand who never fall? Your serene virtue is never shaded by passion,

or ruffled by temptation, or darkened by remorse; compassion would be

impertinence for such an angel: but then with such a one companionship

becomes intolerable; you are, from the elevation of your very virtue

and high attributes, of necessity lonely; we can't reach up and talk

familiarly with such potentatess good-bye, then; our way lies with

humble folks, and not with serene highnesses like you; and we give

notice that there are no perfect characters in this history, except,

perhaps, one little one, and that one is not perfect either, for she

never knows to this day that she is perfect, and with a deplorable

misapprehension and perverseness of humility, believes herself to be as

great a sinner as need be.

This young person does not happen to be in London at the present period

of our story, and it is by no means for the like of her that Mr. Henry

Foker's mind is agitated. But what matters a few failings? Need we be

angels, male or female, in order to be worshipped as such? Let us admire

the diversity of the tastes of mankind; and the oldest, the ugliest, the

stupidest and most pompous, the silliest and most vapid, the greatest

criminal, tyrant booby, Bluebeard, Catherine Hayes, George Barnwell,

amongst us, we need never despair. I have read of the passion of a

transported pickpocket for a female convict (each of them advanced in

age, being repulsive in person, ignorant, quarrelsome, and given to

drink), that was as magnificent as the loves of Cleopatra and Antony,

or Lancelot and Guinever. The passion which Count Borulawski, the Polish

dwarf, inspired in the bosom of the most beautiful Baroness at the Court

of Dresden, is a matter with which we are all of us acquainted: the

flame which burned in the heart of young Cornet Tozer but the other day,

and caused him to run off and espouse Mrs. Battersby, who was old enough

to be his mamma,--all these instances are told in the page of history or

the newspaper column. Are we to be ashamed or pleased to think that our

hearts are formed so that the biggest and highest-placed Ajax among

us may some day find himself prostrate before the pattens of his

kitchen-maid; as that there is no poverty or shame or crime, which will

not be supported, hugged even with delight, and cherished more closely

than virtue would be, by the perverse fidelity and admirable constant

folly of a woman?

So then Henry Foker, Esquire, longed after his love, and cursed the fate

which separated him from her. When Lord Gravesend's family retired to

the country (his lordship leaving his proxy with the venerable Lord

Bagwig), Harry still remained lingering on in London, certainly not much

to the sorrow of Lady Ann, to whom he was affianced, and who did not in

the least miss him. Wherever Miss Clavering went, this infatuated young

fellow continued to follow her; and being aware that his engagement to

his cousin was known in the world, he was forced to make a mystery of

his passion, and confine it to his own breast, so that it was so pent in

there and pressed down, that it is a wonder he did not explode some day

with the stormy secret, and perish collapsed after the outburst.

There had been a grand entertainment at Gaunt House on one beautiful

evening in June, and the next day's journals contained almost two

columns of the names of the most closely printed nobility and gentry who

had been honoured with invitations to the ball. Among the guests

were Sir Francis and Lady Clavering and Miss Amory, for whom the

indefatigable Major Pendennis had procured an invitation, and our two

young friends Arthur and Harry. Each exerted himself, and danced a great

deal with Miss Blanche. As for the worthy Major, he assumed the charge

of Lady Clavering, and took care to introduce her to that department of

the mansion where her ladyship specially distinguished herself, namely,

the refreshment-room, where, amongst pictures of Titian and Giorgione,

and regal portraits of Vandyke and Reynolds, and enormous salvers of

gold and silver, and pyramids of large flowers, and constellations of

wax candles--in a manner perfectly regardless of expense, in a word--a

supper was going on all night. Of how many creams, jellies, salads,

peaches, white soups, grapes, pates, galantines, cups of tea, champagne,

and so forth, Lady Clavering partook, it does not become us to say. How

much the Major suffered as he followed the honest woman about,

calling to the solemn male attendants and lovely servant-maids, and

administering to Lady Clavering's various wants with admirable patience,

nobody knows;--he never confessed. He never allowed his agony to appear

on his countenance in the least; but with a constant kindness brought

plate after plate to the Begum.

Mr. Wagg counted up all the dishes of which Lady Clavering partook

as long as he could count (but as he partook very freely himself of

champagne during the evening, his powers of calculation were not to

be trusted at the close of the entertainment), and he recommended Mr.

Honeyman, Lady Steyne's medical man, to look carefully after the Begum,

and to call and get news of her ladyship the next day.

Sir Francis Clavering made his appearance, and skulked for a while about

the magnificent rooms; but the company and the splendour which he met

there were not to the Baronet's taste, and after tossing off a

tumbler of wine or two at the buffet, he quitted Gaunt House for the

neighbourhood of Jermyn Street, where his friends Loder, Punter, little

Moss Abramns, and Captain Skewball were assembled at the familiar green

table. In the rattle of the box, and of their agreeable conversation,

Sir Francis's spirits rose to their accustomed point of feeble hilarity.

Mr. Pynsent, who had asked Miss Amory to dance, came up on one occasion

to claim her hand, but scowls of recognition having already passed

between him and Mr. Arthur Pendennis in the dancing-room, Arthur

suddenly rose up and claimed Miss Amory as his partner for the present

dance, on which Mr. Pynsent, biting his lips and scowling yet more

savagely, withdrew with a profound bow, saying that he gave up his

claim. There are some men who are always falling in one's way in life.

Pynsent and Pen had this view of each other; and each regarded other

accordingly.

"What a confounded conceited provincial fool that is!" thought the one.

"Because he has written a twopenny novel, his absurd head is turned, and

a kicking would take his conceit out of him."

"What an impertinent idiot that man is!" remarked the other to his

partner. "His soul is in Downing Street; his neckcloth is foolscap; his

hair is sand; his legs are rulers; his vitals are tape and sealing-wax;

he was a prig in his cradle; and never laughed since he was born, except

three times at the same joke of his chief. I have the same liking for

that man, Miss Amory, I have for that cold boiled veal." Upon which

Blanche of course remarked, that Mr. Pendennis was wicked, mechant,

perfectly abominable, and wondered what he would say when her back was

turned.

"Say!--Say that you have the most beautiful figure, and the slimmest

waist in the world, Blanche--Miss Amory, I mean. I beg your pardon.

Another turn; this music would make an alderman dance."

"And you have left off tumbling when you waltz now?" Blanche asked,

archly looking up at her partner's face.

"One falls and one gets up again in life, Blanche; you know I used to

call you so in old times, and it is the prettiest name in the world.

Besides, I have practised since then."

"And with a great number of partners, I'm afraid," Blanche said, with a

little sham sigh, and a shrug of the shoulders. And so in truth Mr. Pen

had practised a good deal in this life; and had undoubtedly arrived at

being able to dance better.

If Pendennis was impertinent in his talk, Foker, on the other hand,

so bland and communicative on most occasions, was entirely mum and

melancholy when he danced with Miss Amory. To clasp her slender waist

was a rapture, to whirl round the room with her was a delirium; but to

speak to her, what could he say that was worthy of her? What pearl of

conversation could he bring that was fit for the acceptance of such a

Queen of love and wit as Blanche? It was she who made the talk when she

was in the company of this love-stricken partner. It was she who asked

him bow that dear little pony was, and looked at him and thanked him

with such a tender kindness and regret, and refused the dear little pony

with such a delicate sigh when he offered it. "I have nobody to ride

with in London," she said. "Mamma is timid, and her figure is not pretty

on horseback. Sir Francis never goes out with me. He loves me like--like

a stepdaughter. Oh, how delightful it must be to have a father--a

father, Mr. Foker!"

"Oh, uncommon," said Mr. Harry, who enjoyed that blessing very calmly,

upon which, and forgetting the sentimental air which she had just before

assumed, Blanche's grey eyes gazed at Foker with such an arch twinkle

that both of them burst out laughing, and Harry enraptured and at his

ease began to entertain her with a variety of innocent prattle--good

kind simple Foker talk, flavoured with many expressions by no means to

be discovered in dictionaries, and relating to the personal history

of himself or horses, or other things dear and important to him, or

to persons in the ballroom then passing before them, and about whose

appearance or character Mr. Harry spoke with artless freedom, and a

considerable dash of humour.

And it was Blanche who, when the conversation flagged, and the youth's

modesty came rushing back and overpowering him, knew how to reanimate

her companion: asked him questions about Logwood, and whether it was a

pretty place? Whether he was a hunting man, and whether he liked

women to hunt? (in which case she was prepared to say that she adored

hunting)--but Mr. Foker expressing his opinion against sporting

females, and pointing out Lady Bullfinch, who happened to pass by, as

a horse-godmother, whom he had seen at cover with a cigar in her face,

Blanche too expressed her detestation of the sports of the field, and

said it would make her shudder to think of a dear sweet little fox

being killed, on which Foker laughed and waltzed with renewed vigour and

grace.

And at the end of the waltz,--the last waltz they had on that

night,--Blanche asked him about Drummington, and whether it was a fine

house. His cousins, she had heard, were very accomplished: Lord Erith

she had met, and which of his cousins was his favourite? Was it not Lady

Ann? Yes, she was sure it was she; sure by his looks and his blushes.

She was tired of dancing; it was getting very late; she must go to

mamma;--and, without another word, she sprang away from Harry Foker's

arm, and seized upon Pen's, who was swaggering about the dancing-room,

and again said, "Mamma, mamma!--take me to mamma, dear, Mr. Pendennis!"

transfixing Harry with a Parthian shot, as she fled from him.

My Lord Steyne, with garter and ribbon, with a bald head and shining

eyes, and a collar of red whiskers round his face, always looked grand

upon an occasion of state; and made a great effect upon Lady Clavering,

when he introduced himself to her at the request of the obsequious Major

Pendennis. With his own white and royal hand, he handed to her ladyship

a glass of wine, said he had heard of her charming daughter, and begged

to be presented to her; and, at this very juncture, Mr. Arthur Pendennis

came up with the young lady on his arm.

The peer made a profound bow, and Blanche the deepest curtesy that ever

was seen. His lordship gave Mr. Arthur Pendennis his hand to shake;

said he had read his book, which was very wicked and clever; asked

Miss Blanche if she had read it,--at which Pen blushed and winced. Why,

Blanche was one of the heroines of the novel. Blanche, in black ringlets

and a little altered, was the Neaera of 'Walter Lorraine.'

Blanche had read it: the language of the eyes expressed her admiration

and rapture at the performance. This little play being achieved, the

Marquis of Steyne made other two profound bows to Lady Clavering and

her daughter, and passed on to some other of his guests at the splendid

entertainment.

Mamma and daughter were loud in their expressions of admiration of the

noble Marquis so soon as his broad back was turned upon them. "He

said they make a very nice couple," whispered major Pendennis to Lady

Clavering. Did he now, really? Mamma thought they would; Mamma was so

flustered with the honour which had just been shown to her, and with

other intoxicating events of the evening, that her good-humour knew no

bounds. She laughed, she winked, and nodded knowingly at Pen; she

tapped him on the arm with her fan; she tapped Blanche; she tapped the

Major;--her contentment was boundless, and her method of showing her joy

equally expansive.

As the party went down the great staircase of Gaunt House, the morning

had risen stark and clear over the black trees of the square; the skies

were tinged with pink; and the cheeks of some of the people at the

ball,--ah, how ghastly they looked! That admirable and devoted Major

above all,--who had been for hours by Lady Clavering's side, ministering

to her and feeding her body with everything that was nice, and her ear

with everything that was sweet and flattering,--oh! what an object he

was! The rings round his eyes were of the colour of bistre; those

orbs themselves were like the plovers' eggs whereof Lady Clavering and

Blanche had each tasted; the wrinkles in his old face were furrowed

in deep gashes; and a silver stubble, like an elderly morning dew was

glittering on his chin, and alongside the dyed whiskers now limp and out

of curl.

There he stood, with admirable patience, enduring, uncomplainingly, a

silent agony; knowing that people could see the state of his face

(for could he not himself perceive the condition of others, males and

females, of his own age?)--longing to go to rest for hours past; aware

that suppers disagreed with him, and yet having eaten a little so as

to keep his friend, Lady Clavering, in good-humour; with twinges

of rheumatism in the back and knees; with weary feet burning in his

varnished boots,--so tired, oh, so tired and longing for bed! If a man,

struggling with hardship and bravely overcoming it, is an object of

admiration for the gods, that Power in whose chapels the old Major was

a faithful worshipper must have looked upwards approvingly upon the

constancy of Pendennis's martyrdom. There are sufferers in that cause as

in the other: the negroes in the service of Mumbo Jumbo tattoo and drill

themselves with burning skewers with great fortitude; and we read that

the priests in the service of Baal gashed themselves and bled freely.

You who can smash the idols, do so with a good courage; but do not be

too fierce with the idolaters,--they worship the best thing they know.

The Pendennises, the elder and the younger, waited with Lady Clavering

and her daughter until her ladyship's carriage was announced, when

the elder's martyrdom may be said to have come to an end, for the

good-natured Begum insisted upon leaving him at his door in Bury Street;

so he took the back seat of the carriage after a feeble bow or two, and

speech of thanks, polite to the last, and resolute in doing his duty.

The Begum waved her dumpy little hand by way of farewell to Arthur and

Foker, and Blanche smiled languidly out upon the young men, thinking

whether she looked very wan and green under her rose-coloured hood, and

whether it was the mirrors at Gaunt House, or the fatigue and fever of

her own eyes, which made her fancy herself so pale.

Arthur, perhaps, saw quite well how yellow Blanche looked, but did

not attribute that peculiarity of her complexion to the effect of the

looking-glasses, or to any error in his sight or her own. Our young man

of the world could use his eyes very keenly, and could see Blanche's

face pretty much as nature had made it. But for poor Foker it had a

radiance which dazzled and blinded him: he could see no more faults in

it than in the sun, which was now flaring over the house-tops.

Amongst other wicked London habits which Pen had acquired, the moralist

will remark that he had got to keep very bad hours; and often was going

to bed at the time when sober country-people were thinking of leaving

it. Men get used to one hour as to another. Editors of newspapers,

Covent Garden market-people, night cabmen and coffee-sellers,

chimney-sweeps, and gentlemen and ladies of fashion who frequent balls,

are often quite lively at three or four o'clock of a morning, when

ordinary mortals are snoring. We have shown in the last chapter how Pen

was in a brisk condition of mind at this period, inclined to smoke his

cigar at ease, and to speak freely.

Foker and Pen walked away from Gaunt House, then, indulging in both the

above amusements: or rather Pen talked, and Foker looked as if he wanted

to say something. Pen was sarcastic and dandified when he had been in

the company of great folks; he could not help imitating some of their

airs and tones, and having a most lively imagination, mistook himself

for a person of importance very easily. He rattled away, and attacked

this person and that; sneered at Lady John Turnbull's bad French, which

her ladyship will introduce into all conversations in spite of the

sneers of everybody; at Mrs. Slack Roper's extraordinary costume and

sham jewels; at the old dandies and the young ones;--at whom didn't he

sneer and laugh?

"You fire at everybody, Pen--you're grown awful, that you are," Foker

said. "Now you've pulled about Blondel's yellow wig, and Colchicum's

black one, why don't you have a shy at a brown one, hay? you know whose

I mean. It got into Lady Clavering's carriage."

"Under my uncle's hat? My uncle is a martyr, Foker, my boy. My uncle has

been doing excruciating duties all night. He likes to go to bed rather

early. He has a dreadful headache if he sits up and touches supper. He

always has the gout if he walks or stands much at a ball. He has been

sitting up, and standing up, and supping. He has gone home to the gout

and the headache, and for my sake. Shall I make fun of the old boy? no,

not for Venice!"

"How do you mean that he has been doing it for your sake?" Foker asked,

looking rather alarmed.

"Boy! canst thou keep a secret if I impart it to thee?" Pen cried out,

in high spirits. "Art thou of good counsel? Wilt thou swear? Wilt thou

be mum, or wilt thou preach? Wilt thou be silent and hear, or wilt

thou speak and die?" And as he spoke, flinging himself into an absurd

theatrical attitude, the men in the cabstand in Piccadilly wondered and

grinned at the antics of the two young swells.

"What the doose are you driving at?" Foker asked, looking very much

agitated.

Pen, however, did not remark this agitation much, but continued in the

same bantering and excited vein. "Henry, friend of my youth," he said,

"and witness of my early follies, though dull at thy books, yet thou art

not altogether deprived of sense,--nay, blush not, Henrico, thou hast a

good portion of that, and of courage and kindness too, at the service of

thy friends. Were I in a strait of poverty, I would come to my Foker's

purse. Were I in grief, I would discharge my grief upon his sympathising

bosom----"

"Gammon, Pen--go on," Foker said.

"I would, Henrico, upon thy studs, and upon thy cambric worked by the

hands of beauty, to adorn the breast of valour! Know then, friend of

my boyhood's days, that Arthur Pendennis of the Upper Temple,

student-at-law, feels that he is growing lonely and old Care is

furrowing his temples, and Baldness is busy with his crown. Shall we

stop and have a drop of coffee at this stall, it looks very hot and

nice? Look how that cabman is blowing at his saucer. No, you won't?

Aristocrat! I resume my tale. I am getting on in life. I have got

devilish little money. I want some. I am thinking of getting some, and

settling in life. I'm thinking of settling. I'm thinking of marrying,

old boy. I'm thinking of becoming a moral man; a steady port and

sherry character: with a good reputation in my quartier, and a moderate

establishment of two maids and a man--with an occasional brougham

to drive out Mrs. Pendennis, and a house near the Parks for the

accommodation of the children. Ha! what sayest thou? Answer thy friend,

thou worthy child of beer. Speak, I adjure thee by all thy vats.

"But you ain't got any money, Pen," said the other, still looking

alarmed.

"I ain't? No, but she ave. I tell thee there is gold in store for

me--not what you call money, nursed in the lap of luxury, and cradled

on grains, and drinking in wealth from a thousand mash-tubs. What do you

know about money? What is poverty to you, is splendour to the hardy son

of the humble apothecary. You can't live without an establishment,

and your houses in town and country. A snug little house somewhere off

Belgravia, a brougham for my wife, a decent cook, and a fair bottle of

wine for my friends at home sometimes; these simple necessaries suffice

for me, my Foker." And here Pendennis began to look more serious.

Without bantering further, Pen continued, "I've rather serious thoughts

of settling and marrying. No man can get on in the world without some

money at his back. You must have a certain stake to begin with, before

you can go in and play the great game. Who knows that I'm not going to

try, old fellow? Worse men than I have won at it. And as I have not got

enough capital from my fathers, I must get some by my wife--that's all."

They were walking down Grosvenor Street, as they talked, or rather as

Pen talked, in the selfish fulness of his heart; and Mr. Pen must have

been too much occupied with his own affairs to remark the concern

and agitation of his neighbour, for he continued: "We are no longer

children, you know, you and I, Harry. Bah! the time of our romance

has passed away. We don't marry for passion, but for prudence and for

establishment. What do you take your cousin for? Because she is a nice

girl, and an Earl's daughter, and the old folks wish it, and that sort

of thing."

"And you, Pendennis," asked Foker, "you ain't very fond of the

girl--you're going to marry?"

Pen shrugged his shoulders. "Comme ca," said he; "I like her well

enough. She's pretty enough; she's clever enough. I think she'll do very

well. And she has got money enough--that's the great point. Psha! you

know who she is, don't you? I thought you were sweet on her yourself one

night when we dined with her mamma. It's little Amory."

"I--I thought so," Foker said; "and has she accepted you!"

"Not quite," Arthur replied, with a confident smile, which seemed to

say, I have but to ask, and she comes to me that instant.

"Oh, not quite," said Foker; and he broke out with such a dreadful

laugh, that Pen, for the first time, turned his thoughts from himself

towards his companion, and was struck by the other's ghastly pale face.

"My dear fellow, Fo! what's the matter? You're ill," Pen said, in a tone

of real concern.

"You think it was the champagne at Gaunt House, don't you? It ain't

that. Come in; let me talk to you for a minute. I'll tell you what it

is. D----it, let me tell somebody," Foker said.

They were at Mr. Foker's door by this time, and, opening it, Harry

walked with his friend into his apartments, which were situated in the

back part of the house, and behind the family dining-room where the

elder Foker received his guests, surrounded by pictures of himself, his

wife, his infant son on a donkey, and the late Earl of Gravesend in his

robes as a Peer. Foker and Pen passed by this chamber, now closed with

death-like shutters, and entered into the young man's own quarters.

Dusky streams of sunbeams were playing into that room, and lighting up

poor Harry's gallery of dancing-girls and opera nymphs with flickering

illuminations.

"Look here! I can't help telling you, Pen," he said. "Ever since the

night we dined there, I'm so fond of that girl, that I think I shall

die if I don't get her. I feel as if I should go mad sometimes. I can't

stand it, Pen. I couldn't bear to hear you talking about her, just now,

about marrying her only because she's money. Ah, Pen! that ain't the

question in marrying. I'd bet anything it ain't. Talking about money

and such a girl as that, it's--it's--what-d'ye-call-'em--you know what

I mean--I ain't good at talking--sacrilege, then. If she'd have me, I'd

take and sweep a crossing, that I would!"

"Poor Fo! I don't think that would tempt her," Pen said, eyeing his

friend with a great deal of real good-nature and pity. "She is not a

girl for love and a cottage."

"She ought to be a duchess, I know that very well, and I know she

wouldn't take me unless I could make her a great place in the world--for

I ain't good for anything myself much--I ain't clever and that sort

of thing," Foker said sadly. "If I had all the diamonds that all the

duchesses and marchionesses had on to-night, wouldn't I put 'em in her

lap? But what's the use of talking? I'm booked for another race. It's

that kills me, Pen. I can't get out of it; though I die, I can't get out

of it. And though my cousin's a nice girl, and I like her very well, and

that, yet I hadn't seen this one when our Governors settled that matter

between us. And when you talked, just now, about her doing very well,

and about her having money enough for both of you, I thought to myself

it isn't money or mere liking a girl, that ought to be enough to make a

fellow marry. He may marry, and find he likes somebody else better.

All the money in the world won't make you happy then. Look at me; I've

plenty of money, or shall have out of the mash-tubs, as you call 'em. My

Governor thought he'd made it all right for me in settling my marriage

with my cousin. I tell you it won't do; and when Lady Ann has got her

husband, it won't be happy for either of us, and she'll have the most

miserable beggar in town."

"Poor old fellow!" Pen said, with rather a cheap magnanimity, "I wish I

could help you. I had no idea of this, and that you were so wild about

the girl. Do you think she would have you without your money? No. Do

you think your father would agree to break off your engagement with your

cousin? You know him very well, and that he would cast you off rather

than do so."

The unhappy Foker only groaned a reply, flinging himself prostrate on a

sofa, face forwards, his head in his hands.

"As for my affair," Pen went on, "my dear fellow, if I had thought

matters were so critical with you, at least I would not have pained

you by choosing you as my confidant. And my business is not serious, at

least not as yet. I have not spoken a word about it to Miss Amory. Very

likely she would not have me if I asked her. Only I have had a great

deal of talk about it with my uncle, who says that the match might be

an eligible one for me. I'm ambitious and I'm poor. And it appears Lady

Clavering will give her a good deal of money, and Sir Francis might be

got to never mind the rest. Nothing is settled, Harry. They are going

out of town directly. I promise you I won't ask her before she goes.

There's no hurry: there's time for everybody. But, suppose you got her,

Foker. Remember what you said about marriages just now, and the misery

of a man who doesn't care for his wife; and what sort of a wife would

you have who didn't care for her husband?"

"But she would care for me," said Foker, from his sofa--"that is, I

think she would. Last night only, as we were dancing, she said----"

"What did she say?" Pen cried, starting up in great wrath. But he

saw his own meaning more clearly than Foker, and broke off with a

laugh--"Well, never mind what she said, Harry. Miss Amory is a clever

girl, and says numbers of civil things--to you--to me, perhaps--and who

the deuce knows to whom besides? Nothing's settled, old boy. At least,

my heart won't break if I don't get her. Win her if you can, and I wish

you joy of her. Good-bye! Don't think about what I said to you. I was

excited, and confoundedly thirsty in those hot rooms, and didn't, I

suppose, put enough Seltzer-water into the champagne. Good night! I'll

keep your counsel too. 'Mum' is the word between us; and 'let there be a

fair fight, and let the best man win,' as Peter Crawley says."

So saying, Mr. Arthur Pendennis, giving a very queer and rather

dangerous look at his companion, shook him by the hand, with something

of that sort of cordiality which befitted his just repeated simile of

the boxing-match, and which Mr. Bendigo displays when he shakes hands

with Mr. Gaunt before they fight each other for the champion's belt and

two hundred pounds a side. Foker returned his friend's salute with an

imploring look, and a piteous squeeze of the hand, sank back on his

cushions again, and Pen, putting on his hat, strode forth into the air,

and almost over the body of the matutinal housemaid, who was rubbing the

steps at the door.

"And so he wants her too, does be?" thought Pen as he marched along--and

noted within himself with a fatal keenness of perception and almost an

infernal mischief, that the very pains and tortures which that honest

heart of Foker's was suffering gave a zest and an impetus to his own

pursuit of Blanche: if pursuit might be called which had been no pursuit

as yet, but mere sport and idle dallying. "She said something to him,

did she? perhaps she gave him the fellow flower to this;" and he took

out of his coat and twiddled in his thumb and finger a poor little

shrivelled crumpled bud that had faded and blackened with the heat and

flare of the night--"I wonder to how many more she has given her artless

tokens of affection--the little flirt"--and he flung his into the

gutter, where the water may have refreshed it, and where any amateur of

rosebuds may have picked it up. And then bethinking him that the day was

quite bright, and that the passers-by by might be staring at his beard

and white neckcloth, our modest young gentleman took a cab and drove to

the Temple.

Ah! is this the boy that prayed at his mother's knee but a few years

since, and for whom very likely at this hour of morning she is praying?

Is this jaded and selfish worldling the lad who, a short while back, was

ready to fling away his worldly all, his hope, his ambition, his chance

of life, for his love? This is the man you are proud of, old Pendennis.

You boast of having formed him: and of having reasoned him out of his

absurd romance and folly--and groaning in your bed over your pains and

rheumatisms, satisfy yourself still by thinking, that, at last, that lad

will do something to better himself in life, and that the Pendennises

will take a good place in the world. And is he the only one, who in his

progress through this dark life goes wilfully or fatally astray, whilst

the natural truth and love which should illumine him grow dim in the

poisoned air, and suffice to light him no more?

When Pen was gone away, poor Harry Foker got up from the sofa, and

taking out from his waistcoat--the splendidly buttoned, but the

gorgeously embroidered, the work of his mamma--a little white rosebud,

he drew from his dressing-case, also the maternal present, a pair of

scissors, with which he nipped carefully the stalk of the flower, and

placing it in a glass of water opposite his bed, he sought refuge there

from care and bitter remembrances.

It is to be presumed that Miss Blanche Amory had more than one rose in

her bouquet, and why should not the kind young creature give out of her

superfluity, and make as many partners as possible happy?

CHAPTER XLVII. Monseigneur s'amuse

The exertions of that last night at Gaunt House had proved almost too

much for Major Pendennis; and as soon as he could move his weary old

body with safety, he transported himself groaning to Buxton, and sought

relief in the healing waters of that place. Parliament broke up. Sir

Francis Clavering and family left town, and the affairs which we have

just mentioned to the reader were not advanced, in the brief interval

of a few days or weeks which have occurred between this and the last

chapter. The town was, however, emptied since then.

The season was now come to a conclusion: Pen's neighbours, the lawyers,

were gone upon circuit: and his more fashionable friends had taken their

passports for the Continent, or had fled for health or excitement to

the Scotch moors. Scarce a man was to be seen in the bow-windows of

the Clubs, or on the solitary Pall Mall pavement. The red jackets had

disappeared from before the Palace-gate: the tradesmen of St. James's

were abroad taking their pleasure: the tailors had grown mustachios and

were gone up the Rhine: the bootmakers were at Ems or Baden, blushing

when they met their customers at those places of recreation, or punting

beside their creditors at the gambling-tables: the clergymen of St.

James's only preached to half a congregation, in which there was not a

single sinner of distinction: the band in Kensington Gardens had shut up

their instruments of brass and trumpets of silver: only two or three old

flies and chaises crawled by the banks of the Serpentine; and Clarence

Bulbul, who was retained in town by his arduous duties as a Treasury

clerk, when he took his afternoon ride in Rotten Row, compared its

loneliness to the vastness of the Arabian desert and himself to a

Bedouin wending his way through that dusty solitude. Warrington stowed

away a quantity of Cavendish tobacco in his carpet-bag, and betook

himself, as his custom was in the vacation, to his brother's house in

Norfolk. Pen was left alone in chambers for a while, for this man of

fashion could not quit the metropolis when he chose always: and was at

present detained by the affairs of his newspaper, the Pall Mall Gazette,

of, which he acted as the editor and charge d'affaires during the

temporary absence of the chief, Captain Shandon, who was with his family

at the salutary watering-place of Boulogne-sur-Mer.

Although, as we have seen, Mr. Pen had pronounced himself for years past

to be a man perfectly blase and wearied of life, yet the truth is that

he was an exceedingly healthy young fellow still: with a fine appetite,

which he satisfied with the greatest relish and satisfaction at least

once a day; and a constant desire for society, which showed him to be

anything but misanthropical. If he could not get a good dinner he sate

down to a bad one with perfect contentment; if he could not procure

the company of witty or great or beautiful persons, he put up with

any society that came to hand; and was perfectly satisfied in a

tavern-parlour or on board a Greenwich steamboat, or in a jaunt to

Hampstead with Mr. Finucane, his colleague at the Pall Mall Gazette;

or in a visit to the summer theatres across the river; or to the Royal

Gardens of Vauxhall, where he was on terms of friendship with the great

Simpson, and where he shook the principal comic singer of the lovely

equestrian of the arena by the hand. And while he could watch the

grimaces or the graces of these with a satiric humour that was not

deprived of sympathy, he could look on with an eye of kindness at the

lookers-on too; at the roystering youth bent upon enjoyment, and here

taking it: at the honest parents, with their delighted children laughing

and clapping their hands at the show: at the poor outcasts, whose

laughter was less innocent though perhaps louder, and who brought their

shame and their youth here, to dance and be merry till the dawn at

least; and to get bread and drown care. Of this sympathy with all

conditions of men Arthur often boasted: said he was pleased to possess

it: and that he hoped thus to the last he should retain it. As another

man has an ardour for art or music, or natural science, Mr. Pen said

that anthropology was his favourite pursuit; and had his eyes always

eagerly open to its infinite varieties and beauties: contemplating

with an unfailing delight all specimens of it in all places to which

he resorted, whether it was the coquetting of a wrinkled dowager in

a ballroom, or a high-bred young beauty blushing in her prime there;

whether it was a hulking guardsman coaxing a servant-girl in the

Park--or innocent little Tommy that was feeding the ducks whilst the

nurse listened. And indeed a man whose heart is pretty clean, can

indulge in this pursuit with an enjoyment that never ceases, and is only

perhaps the more keen because it is secret and has a touch of sadness in

it: because he is of his mood and humour lonely, and apart although not

alone.

Yes, Pen used to brag and talk in his impetuous way to Warrington. "I

was in love so fiercely in my youth, that I have burned out that flame

for ever, I think, and if ever I marry, it will be a marriage of reason

that I will make, with a well-bred, good-tempered, good-looking person

who has a little money, and so forth, that will cushion our carriage in

its course through life. As for romance, it is all done; I have spent

that out, and am old before my time--I'm proud of it."

"Stuff!" growled the other, "you fancied you were getting bald the other

day, and bragged about it as you do about everything. But you began to

use the bear's-grease pot directly the hairdresser told you; and are

scented like a barber ever since."

"You are Diogenes," the other answered, "and you want every man to live

in a tub like yourself. Violets smell better than stale tobacco, you

grizzly old cynic." But Mr. Pen was blushing whilst he made this reply

to his unromantical friend, and indeed cared a great deal more about

himself still than such a philosopher perhaps should have done. Indeed,

considering that he was careless about the world, Mr. Pen ornamented his

person with no small pains in order to make himself agreeable to it, and

for a weary pilgrim as he was, wore very tight boots and bright varnish.

It was in this dull season of the year, then, of a shining Friday night

in autumn, that Mr. Pendennis, having completed at his newspaper office

a brilliant leading article--such as Captain Shandon himself might have

written, had the Captain been in good-humour, and inclined to work,

which he never would do except under compulsion--that Mr. Arthur

Pendennis having written his article, and reviewed it approvingly as

it lay before him in its wet proof-sheet at the office of the paper,

bethought him that he would cross the water, and regale himself with

the fireworks and other amusements of Vauxhall. So he affably put in his

pocket the order which admitted "Editor of Pall Mall Gazette and friend"

to that place of recreation, and paid with the coin of the realm a

sufficient sum to enable him to cross Waterloo Bridge. The walk thence

to the Gardens was pleasant, the stars were shining in the skies above,

looking down upon the royal property, whence the rockets and Roman

candles had not yet ascended to outshine the stars.

Before you enter the enchanted ground, where twenty thousand additional

lamps are burned every night as usual, most of us have passed through

the black and dreary passage and wickets which hide the splendours of

Vauxhall from uninitiated men. In the walls of this passage are two

holes strongly illuminated, in the midst of which you see two

gentlemen at desks, where they will take either your money as a private

individual, or your order of admission if you are provided with

that passport to the Gardens. Pen went to exhibit his ticket at the

last-named orifice, where, however, a gentleman and two ladies were

already in parley before him.

The gentleman, whose hat was very much on one side, and who wore a short

and shabby cloak in an excessively smart manner, was crying out in a

voice which Pen at once recognised.

"Bedad, sir, if ye doubt me honour, will ye obleege me by stipping out

of that box, and----"

"Lor, Capting!" cried the elder lady.

"Don't bother me," said the man in the box.

"And ask Mr. Hodgen himself, who's in the gyardens, to let these leedies

pass. Don't be froightened, me dear madam, I'm not going to quarl with

this gintleman, at anyreet before leedies. Will ye go, sir, and desoire

Mr. Hodgen (whose orther I keem in with, and he's me most intemate

friend, and I know he's goan to sing the 'Body Snatcher' here

to-noight), with Captain Costigan's compliments, to stip out and let

in the leedies--for meself, sir, I've seen Vauxhall, and I scawrun any

interfayrance on moi account: but for these leedies, one of them has

never been there, and of should think ye'd harly take advantage of me

misfartune in losing the ticket, to deproive her of her pleasure."

"It ain't no use, Captain. I can't go about your business," the

check-taker said; on which the Captain swore an oath, and the elder lady

said, "Lor, ow provokin!"

As for the young one, she looked up at the Captain and said, "Never

mind, Captain Costigan, I'm sure I don't want to go at all. Come away,

mamma." And with this, although she did not want to go at all, her

feelings overcame her, and she began to cry.

"Me poor child!" the Captain said. "Can ye see that, sir, and will ye

not let this innocent creature in?"

"It ain't my business," cried the doorkeeper, peevishly, out of the

illuminated box. And at this minute Arthur came up, and recognising

Costigan, said, "Don't you know me, Captain? Pendennis!" And he took off

his hat and made a bow to the two ladies. "Me dear boy! Me dear friend!"

cried the Captain, extending towards Pendennis the grasp of friendship;

and he rapidly explained to the other what he called "a most unluckee

conthratong." He had an order for Vauxhall, admitting two, from Mr.

Hodgen, then within the Gardens, and singing (as he did at the Back

Kitchen and the nobility's concerts, the 'Body Snatcher,' the 'Death of

General Wolfe,' the 'Banner of Blood,' and other favourite melodies);

and, having this order for the admission of two persons, he thought that

it would admit three, and had come accordingly to the Gardens with

his friends. But, on his way, Captain Costigan had lost the paper of

admission--it was not forthcoming at all; and the leedies must go back

again, to the great disappointment of one of them, as Pendennis saw.

Arthur had a great deal of good-nature for everybody, and sympathised

with the misfortunes of all sorts of people: how could he refuse his

sympathy in such a case as this? He had seen the innocent face as it

looked up to the Captain, the appealing look of the girl, the piteous

quiver of the mouth, and the final outburst of tears. If it had been his

last guinea in the world, he must have paid it to have given the poor

little thing pleasure. She turned the sad imploring eyes away

directly they lighted upon a stranger, and began to wipe them with her

handkerchief. Arthur looked very handsome and kind as he stood before

the women, with his hat off, blushing, bowing, generous, a gentleman.

"Who are they?" he asked of himself. He thought he had seen the elder

lady before.

"If I can be of any service to you, Captain Costigan," the young man

said, "I hope you will command me; is there any difficulty about taking

these ladies into the garden? Will you kindly make use of my purse?

And--and I have a ticket myself which will admit two--I hope, ma'am, you

will permit me?"

The first impulse of the Prince of Fairoaks was to pay for the whole

party, and to make away with his newspaper order as poor Costigan had

done with his own ticket. But his instinct, and the appearance of the

two women, told him that they would be better pleased if he did not

give himself the airs of a grand seigneur, and he handed his purse to

Costigan, and laughingly pulled out his ticket with one hand, as

he offered the other to the elder of the ladies--ladies was not the

word--they had bonnets and shawls, and collars and ribbons, and the

youngest showed a pretty little foot and boot under her modest grey

gown, but his Highness of Fairoaks was courteous to every person who

wore a petticoat whatever its texture was, and the humbler the wearer,

only the more stately and polite in his demeanour.

"Fanny, take the gentleman's arm," the elder said; "Since you will be

so very kind--I've seen you often come in at our gate, sir, and go in to

Captain Strong's at No. 3."

Fanny made a little curtsey, and put her hand under Arthur's arm. It

had on a shabby little glove, but it was pretty and small. She was not a

child, but she was scarcely a woman as yet; her tears had dried up, and

her cheek mantled with youthful blushes, and her eyes glistened with

pleasure and gratitude, as she looked up into Arthur's kind face.

Arthur, in a protecting way, put his other hand upon the little one

resting on his arm. "Fanny's a very pretty little name," he said, "and

so you know me, do you?"

"We keep the lodge, sir, at Shepherd's Inn," Fanny said with a curtsey;

"and I've never been at Vauxhall, sir, and Papa didn't like me to

go--and--and--O--O--law, how beautiful!" She shrank back as she spoke,

starting with wonder and delight as she saw the Royal Gardens blaze

before her with a hundred million of lamps, with a splendour such as the

finest fairy tale, the finest pantomime she had ever witnessed at the

theatre, had never realised. Pen was pleased with her pleasure, and

pressed to his side the little hand which clung so kindly to him. "What

would I not give for a little of this pleasure?" said the blase young

man.

"Your purse, Pendennis, me dear boy," said the Captain's voice behind

him. "Will ye count it? it's all roight--no--ye thrust in old Jack

Costigan (he thrusts me, ye see, madam). Ye've been me preserver, Pen

(I've known um since choildhood, Mrs. Bolton; he's the proproietor of

Fairoaks Castle, and many's the cooper of clart I've dthrunk there with

the first nobilitee of his neetive countee),--Mr. Pendennis, ye've

been me preserver, and of thank ye; me daughtther will thank ye;--Mr.

Simpson, your humble servant sir."

If Pen was magnificent in his courtesy to the ladies, what was his

splendour in comparison to Captain Costigan's bowing here and there, and

crying bravo to the singers?

A man, descended like Costigan, from a long line of Hibernian kings,

chieftains, and other magnates and sheriffs of the county, had of course

too much dignity and self-respect to walk arrum-in-arrum (as the Captain

phrased it) with a lady who occasionally swept his room out, and cooked

his mutton-chops. In the course of their journey from Shepherd's Inn

to Vauxhall Gardens, Captain Costigan had walked by the side of the two

ladies, in a patronising and affable manner pointing out to them the

edifices worthy of note, and discoorsing, according to his wont, about

other cities and countries which he had visited, and the people of rank

and fashion with whom he had the honour of an acquaintance. Nor could it

be expected, nor, indeed, did Mrs. Bolton expect, that, arrived in the

Royal property, and strongly illuminated by the flare of the twenty

thousand additional lamps, the Captain could relax from his dignity, and

give an arm to a lady who was, in fact, little better than a housekeeper

or charwoman.

But Pen, on his part, had no such scruples. Miss Fanny Bolton did not

make his bed nor sweep his chambers; and he did not choose to let go

his pretty little partner. As for Fanny, her colour heightened, and

her bright eyes shone the brighter with pleasure, as she leaned for

protection on the arm of such a fine gentleman as Mr. Pen. And she

looked at numbers of other ladies in the place, and at scores of other

gentlemen under whose protection they were walking here and there; and

she thought that her gentleman was handsomer and grander-looking than

any other gent in the place. Of course there were votaries of pleasure

of all ranks there--rakish young surgeons, fast young clerks and

commercialists, occasional dandies of the Guard regiments, and the rest.

Old Lord Colchicum was there in attendance upon Mademoiselle Caracoline,

who had been riding in the ring; and who talked her native French very

loud, and used idiomatic expressions of exceeding strength as she walked

about, leaning on the arm of his lordship.

Colchicum was in attendance upon Mademoiselle Carandine, little Tom

Tufthunt was in attendance upon Lord Colchicum; and rather pleased, too,

with his position. When Don Juan scalles the wall, there's never a want

of a Leporello to hold the ladder. Tom Tufthunt was quite happy to act

as friend to the elderly viscount, and to carve the fowl, and to make

the salad at supper. When Pen and his young lady met the Viscount's

party, that noble poor only gave Arthur a passing leer of recognition

as his lordship's eyes passed from Pen's face under the bonnet of Pen's

companion. But Tom Tufthunt wagged his head very good-naturedly at Mr.

Arthur, and said, "How are you, old boy?" and looked extremely knowing

at the godfather of this history.

"That is the great rider at Astley's; I have seen her there," Miss

Bolton said, looking after Mademoiselle Caracoline; "and who is that old

man? is it not the gentleman in the ring!"

"That is Lord Viscount Colchicum, Miss Fanny," said Pen with an air

of protection. He meant no harm; he was pleased to patronise the young

girl, and he was not displeased that she should be so pretty, and that

she should be hanging upon his arm, and that yonder elderly Don Juan

should have seen her there.

Fanny was very pretty; her eyes were dark and brilliant, her teeth

were like little pearls; her mouth was almost as red as Mademoiselle

Caracoline's when the latter had put on her vermilion. And what a

difference there was between the one's voice and the other's, between

the girl's laugh and the woman's! It was only very lately, indeed,

that Fanny, when looking in the little glass over the Bows-Costigan

mantelpiece as she was dusting it had begun to suspect that she was a

beauty. But a year ago, she was a clumsy, gawky girl, at whom her

father sneered, and of whom the girls at the day-school (Miss Minifer's,

Newcastle Street, Strand; Miss M., the younger sister, took the leading

business at the Norwich circuit in 182--; and she herself had played for

two seasons with some credit T. R. E. O., T. R. S. W., until she fell

down a trap-door and broke her leg); the girls at Fanny's school, we

say, took no account of her, and thought her a dowdy little creature

as long as she remained under Miss Minifer's instruction. And it was

unremarked and almost unseen in the porter's dark lodge of Shepherd's

Inn, that this little flower bloomed into beauty.

So this young person hung upon Mr. Pen's arm, and they paced the gardens

together, Empty as London was, there were still some two millions of

people left lingering about it, and amongst them, one or two of the

acquaintances of Mr. Arthur Pendennis.

Amongst them, silent and alone, pale, with his hands in his pockets, and

a rueful nod of the head to Arthur as they met, passed Henry Foker, Esq.

Young Henry was trying to ease his mind by moving from place to place,

and from excitement to excitement. But he thought about Blanche as he

sauntered in the dark walks; he thought about Blanche as he looked at

the devices of the lamps. He consulted the fortune-teller about her,

and was disappointed when that gipsy told him that he was in love with a

dark lady who would make him happy; and at the concert, though Mr.

Momus sang his most stunning comic songs, and asked his most astonishing

riddles, never did a kind smile come to visit Foker's lips. In fact, he

never heard Mr. Momus at all.

Pen and Miss Bolton were hard by listening to the same concert, and the

latter remarked, and Pen laughed at Mr. Fokei's woebegone face.

Fanny asked what it was that made that odd-looking little man so dismal?

"I think he is crossed in love!" Pen, said. "Isn't that enough to make

any man dismal, Fanny?" And he looked down at her, splendidly protecting

her, like Egmont at Clara in Goethe's play, or Leicester at Amy in

Scott's novel.

"Crossed in love is he? poor gentleman," said Fanny with a sigh, and

her eyes turned round towards him with no little kindness and pity--but

Harry did not see the beautiful dark eyes.

"How dy do, Mr. Pendennis!"--a voice broke in here--it was that of a

young man in a large white coat with a red neckcloth, over which a dingy

shirt-collar was turned so as to exhibit a dubious neck--with a large

pin of bullion or other metal, and an imaginative waistcoat with

exceedingly fanciful glass buttons, and trousers that cried with a loud

voice, "Come look at me and see how cheap and tawdry I am; my master,

what a dirty buck!" and a little stick in one pocket of his coat, and a

lady in pink satin on the other arm--"How dy do--Forget me, I dare say?

Huxter,--Clavering."

"How do you do, Mr. Huxter," the Prince of Fairoaks said in his most

princely manner--"I hope you are very well."

"Pretty bobbish, thanky."--And Mr. Huxter wagged his head. "I say,

Pendennis, you've been coming it uncommon strong since we had the row

at Wapshot's, don't you remember. Great author, hay? Go about with the

swells. Saw your name in the Morning Post. I suppose you're too much

of a swell to come and have a bit of supper with an old

friend?--Charterhouse Lane to-morrow night,--some devilish good fellows

from Bartholomew's, and some stunning gin-punch. Here's my card." And

with this Mr. Huxter released his hand from the pocket where his cane

was, and pulling off the top of his card-case with his teeth produced

thence a visiting ticket, which he handed to Pen.

"You are exceedingly kind, I am sure," said Pen: "but I regret that I

have an engagement which will take me out of town to-morrow night." And

the Marquis of Fairoaks, wondering that such a creature as this could

have the audacity to give him a card, put Mr. Huxter's card into his

waistcoat pocket with a lofty courtesy. Possibly Mr. Samuel Huxter was

not aware that there was any great social difference between Mr. Arthur

Pendennis and himself. Mr. Huxter's father was a surgeon and apothecary

at Clavering just as Mr. Pendennis's papa had been a surgeon and

apothecary at Bath. But the impudence of some men is beyond all

calculation.

"Well, old fellow, never mind," said Mr. Huxter, who, always frank and

familiar, was from vinous excitement even more affable than usual. "If

ever you are passing, look up our place, I'm mostly at home Saturdays;

and there's generally a cheese cupboard. Ta, ta.--There's the bell for

the fireworks ringing. Come along, Mary." And he set off running with

the rest of the crowd in the direction of the fireworks.

So did Pen presently, when this agreeable youth was out of sight, begin

to run with his little companion; Mrs. Bolton following after them,

with Captain Costigan at her side. But the Captain was too majestic and

dignified in his movements to run for friend or enemy, and he pursued

his course with the usual jaunty swagger which distinguished his steps,

so that he and his companion were speedily distanced by Pen and Miss

Fanny.

Perhaps Arthur forgot, or perhaps he did not choose to remember, that

the elder couple had no money in their pockets, as had been proved by

their adventure at the entrance of the Gardens; howbeit, Pen paid a

couple of shillings for himself and his partner, and with her hanging

close on his arm, scaled the staircase which leads to the firework

gallery. The Captain and mamma might have followed them if they liked,

but Arthur and Fanny were too busy to look back. People were pushing and

squeezing there beside and behind them. One eager individual rushed by

Fanny, and elbowed her so, that she fell back with a little cry, upon

which, of course, Arthur caught her adroitly in his arms, and, just for

protection, kept her so defended, until they mounted the stair, and took

their places.

Poor Foker sate alone on one of the highest benches, his face

illuminated by the fireworks, or in their absence by the moon. Arthur

saw him, and laughed, but did not occupy himself about his friend much.

He was engaged with Fanny. How she wondered! how happy she was! how she

cried O, O, O, as the rockets soared into the air, and showered down

in azure, and emerald, and vermilion! As these wonders blazed and

disappeared before her, the little girl thrilled and trembled with

delight at Arthur's side--her hand was under his arm still, he felt it

pressing him as she looked up delighted.

"How beautiful they are, sir!" she cried.

"Don't call me sir, Fanny," Arthur said.

A quick blush rushed up into the girl's face. "What shall I call you?"

she said, in a low voice, sweet and tremulous. "What would you wish me

to say, sir?"

"Again, Fanny! Well, I forgot; it is best so, my dear," Pendennis said,

very kindly and gently. "I may call you Fanny?"

"Oh yes!" she said, and the little hand pressed his arm once more very

eagerly, and the girl clung to him so that he could feel her heart

beating on his shoulder.

"I may call you Fanny, because you are a young girl, and a good girl,

Fanny, and I am an old gentleman. But you mustn't call me anything

but sir, or Mr. Pendennis, if you like; for we live in very different

stations, Fanny; and don't think I speak unkindly; and--and why do you

take your hand away, Fanny? Are you afraid of me? Do you think I would

hurt you? Not for all the world, my dear little girl. And--and look how

beautiful the moon and stars are, and how calmly they shine when the

rockets have gone out, and the noisy wheels have done hissing and

blazing. When I came here to-night I did not think I should have had

such a pretty little companion to sit by my side, and see these fine

fireworks. You must know I live by myself, and work very hard. I write

in books and newspapers, Fanny; and I quite tired out, and was expected

to sit alone all night; and--don't cry, my dear, dear, little girl."

Here Pen broke out, rapidly putting an end to the calm oration which he

had begun to deliver; for the sight of a woman's tears always put his

nerves in a quiver, and he began forthwith to coax her and soothe

her, and to utter a hundred and twenty little ejaculations of pity and

sympathy, which need not be repeated here, because they would be absurd

in print. So would a mother's talk to a child be absurd in print;

so would a lover's to his bride. That sweet artless poetry bears no

translation; and is too subtle for grammarians' clumsy definitions. You

have but the same four letters to describe the salute which you perform

on your grandmother's forehead, and that which you bestow on the sacred

cheek of your mistress; but the same four letters, and not one of them a

labial. Do we mean to hint that r. Arthur Pendennis made any use of the

monosyllable in question? Not so. In the first place, it was dark: the

fireworks were over, and nobody could see him; secondly, he was not a

man to have this kind of secret, and tell it; thirdly and lastly, let

the honest fellow who has kissed a pretty girl, say what would have been

his own conduct in such a delicate juncture?

Well, the truth is, that however you may suspect him, and whatever you

would have done under the circumstances, or Mr. Pen would have liked

to do, he behaved honestly, and like a man. "I will not play with this

little girl's heart," he said within himself, "and forget my own or

her honour. She seems to have a great deal of dangerous and rather

contagious sensibility, and I am very glad the fireworks are over, and

that I can take her back to her mother. Come along, Fanny; mind the

steps, and lean on me. Don't stumble, you heedless little thing; this is

the way, and there is your mamma at the door."

And there, indeed, Mrs. Bolton was, unquiet in spirit, and grasping her

umbrella. She seized Fanny with maternal fierceness and eagerness, and

uttered some rapid abuse to the girl in an undertone. The expression

in Captain Costigan's eye--standing behind the matron and winking

at Pendennis from under his hat--was, I am bound to say, indefinably

humorous.

It was so much so, that Pen could not refrain from bursting into a

laugh. "You should have taken my arm, Mrs. Bolton," he said, offering

it. "I am very glad to bring Miss Fanny back quite safe to you. We

thought you would have followed us up into the gallery. We enjoyed the

fireworks, didn't we?"

"Oh yes!" said Miss Fanny, with rather a demure look.

"And the bouquet was magnificent," said Pen. "And it is ten hours since

I had anything to eat, ladies; and I wish you would permit me to invite

you to supper."

"Dad," said Costigan, "I'd loike a snack to; only I forgawt me purse, or

I should have invoited these leedies to a collection."

Mrs. Bolton with considerable asperity said, She ad an eadache, and

would much rather go ome.

"A lobster salad is the best thing in the world for a headache," Pen

said gallantly, "and a glass of wine I'm sure will do you good. Come,

Mrs. Bolton, be kind to me and oblige me. I shan't have the heart to sup

without you, and upon my word I have had no dinner. Give me your arm:

give me the umbrella. Costigan, I'm sure you'll take care of Miss Fanny;

and I shall think Mrs. Bolton angry with me, unless she will favour

me with her society. And we will all sup quietly, and go back in a cab

together."

The cab, the lobster salad, the frank and good-humoured look of

Pendennis, as he smilingly invited the worthy matron, subdued her

suspicions and her anger. Since he would be so obliging, she thought she

could take a little bit of lobster, and so they all marched away to a

box; and Costigan called for a waither with such a loud and belligerent

voice, as caused one of those officials instantly to run to him.

The carte was examined on the wall, and Fanny was asked to choose her

favourite dish; upon which the young creature said she was fond of

lobster, too, but also owned to a partiality for raspberry tart. This

delicacy was provided by Pen, and a bottle of the most frisky champagne

was moreover ordered for the delight of the ladies. Little Fanny drank

this;--what other sweet intoxication had she not drunk in the course of

the night?

When the supper, which was very brisk and gay, was over, and Captain

Costigan and Mrs. Bolton had partaken of some of the rack-punch that is

so fragrant at Vauxhall, the bill was called and discharged by Pen with

great generosity,--"loike a foin young English gentleman of th' olden

toime, be Jove," Costigan enthusiastically remarked. And as, when they

went out of the box, he stepped forward and gave Mrs. Bolton his arm,

Fanny fell to Pen's lot, and the young people walked away in high

good-humour together, in the wake of their seniors.

The champagne and the rack-punch, though taken in moderation by all

persons, except perhaps poor Cos, who lurched ever so little in his

gait, had set them in high spirits and good-humour, so that Fanny began

to skip and move her brisk little feet in time to the band, which was

playing waltzes and galops for the dancers. As they came up to the

dancing, the music and Fanny's feet seemed to go quicker together--she

seemed to spring, as if naturally, from the ground, and as if she

required repression to keep her there.

"Shouldn't you like a turn?" said the Prince of Fairoaks. "What fun it

would be! Mrs. Bolton, ma'am, do let me take her once round." Upon which

Mr. Costigan said, "Off wid you!" and Mrs. Bolton not refusing (indeed,

she was an old war-horse, and would have liked, at the trumpet's sound,

to have entered the arena herself), Fanny's shawl was off her back in a

minute, and she and Arthur were whirling round in a waltz in the midst

of a great deal of queer, but exceedingly joyful company.

Pen had no mishap this time with little Fanny, as he had with Miss

Blanche in old days,--at least, there was no mishap of his making. The

pair danced away with great agility and contentment,--first a waltz,

then a galop, then a waltz again, until, in the second waltz, they were

bumped by another couple who had joined the Terpsichorean choir. This

was Mr. Huxter and his pink satin young friend, of whom we have already

had a glimpse.

Mr. Huxter very probably had been also partaking of supper, for he was

even more excited now than at the time when he had previously claimed

Pen's acquaintance; and, having run against Arthur and his partner,

and nearly knocked them down, this amiable gentleman of course began

to abuse the people whom he had injured, and broke out into a volley of

slang against the unoffending couple. "Now then, stoopid! Don't keep the

ground if you can't dance, old Slow Coach!" the young surgeon roared out

(using, at the same time, other expressions far more emphatic), and was

joined in his abuse by the shrill language and laughter of his partner;

to the interruption of the ball, the terror of poor little Fanny, and

the immense indignation of Pen.

Arthur was furious; and not so angry at the quarrel as at the shame

attending it. A battle with a fellow like that! A row in a public

garden, and with a porter's daughter on his arm! What a position for

Arthur Pendennis! He drew poor little Fanny hastily away from the

dancers to her mother, and wished that lady, and Costigan, and poor

Fanny underground, rather than there, in his companionship, and under

his protection.

When Huxter commenced his attack, that free-spoken young gentleman had

not seen who was his opponent; and directly he was aware that it was

Arthur whom he had insulted, he began to make apologies. "Hold your

stoopid tongue, Mary," he said to his partner. "It's an old friend and

crony at home. I beg pardon, Pendennis; wasn't aware it was you, old

boy." Mr. Huxter had been one of the boys of the Clavering School, who

had been present at a combat which has been mentioned in the early part

of this story, when young Pen knocked down the biggest champion of the

academy, and Huxter knew that it was dangerous to quarrel with Arthur.

His apologies were as odious to the other as his abuse had been. Pen

stopped his tipsy remonstrance, by telling him to hold his tongue, and

desiring him not to use his (Pendennis's) name in that place or any

other; and he walked out of the gardens with a titter behind him from

the crowd, every one of whom he would have liked to massacre for having

been witness to the degrading broil. He walked out of the gardens, quite

forgetting poor little Fanny, who came trembling behind him with her

mother and the stately Costigan.

He was brought back to himself by a word from the Captain, who touched

him on the shoulder just as they were passing the inner gate.

"There's no ray-admittance except ye pay again," the Captain said.

"Hadn't I better go back and take the fellow your message?"

Pen burst out laughing. "Take him a message! Do you think I would fight

with such a fellow as that?" he asked.

"No, no! Don't, don't?" cried out little Fanny. "How can you be so

wicked, Captain Costigan?" The Captain muttered something about honour,

and winked knowingly at Pen, but Arthur said gallantly, "No, Fanny,

don't be frightened. It was my fault to have danced in such a place,--I

beg your padon to have asked you to dance there." And he gave her his

arm once more, and called a cab, and put his three friends into it.

He was about to pay the driver, and to take another carriage for

himself, when little Fanny, still alarmed, put her little hand out, and

caught him by the coat, and implored him and besought him to come in.

"Will nothing satisfy you," said Pen, in great good-humour, "that I am

not going back to fight him? Well, I will come home with you. Drive

to Shepherd's Inn, cab." The cab drove to its destination. Arthur was

immensely pleased by the girl's solicitude about him: her tender terrors

quite made him forget his previous annoyance.

Pen put the ladies into their lodge, having shaken hands kindly with

both of them; and the Captain again whispered to him that he would

see um in the morning if he was inclined, and take his message to that

"scounthrel." But the Captain was in his usual condition when he made

the proposal; and Pen was perfectly sure that neither he nor Mr. Huxter,

when they awoke, would remember anything about the dispute.

CHAPTYER XLVIII. A Visit of Politeness

Costigan never roused Pen from his slumbers; there was no hostile

message from Mr. Huxter to disturb him; and when Pen woke, it was with

a brisker and more lively feeling than ordinarily attends that moment in

the day of the tired and blase London man. A City man wakes up to care

and consols, and the thoughts of 'Change and the counting-house take

possession of him as soon as sleep flies from under his night-cap; a

lawyer rouses himself with the early morning to think of the case that

will take him all his day to work upon, and the inevitable attorney

to whom he has promised his papers ere night. Which of us has not his

anxiety instantly present when his eyes are opened, to it and to the

world, after his night's sleep? Kind strengthener that enables us

to face the day's task with renewed heart! Beautiful ordinance of

Providence that creates rest as it awards labour!

Mr. Pendennis's labour, or rather his disposition, was of that sort that

his daily occupations did not much interest him, for the excitement of

literary composition pretty soon subsides with the hired labourer, and

the delight of seeing one's-self in print only extends to the first two

or three appearances in the magazine or newspaper page. Pegasus put

into harness, and obliged to run a stage every day, is as prosaic as

any other hack, and won't work without his whip or his feed of corn.

So, indeed, Mr. Arthur performed his work at the Pall Mall Gazette (and

since his success as a novelist with an increased salary), but without

the least enthusiasm, doing his best or pretty nearly, and sometimes

writing ill and sometimes well. He was a literary hack, naturally fast

in pace, and brilliant in action.

Neither did society, or that portion which he saw, excite or amuse him

over much. In spite of his brag and boast to the contrary, he was too

young as yet for women's society, which probably can only be had in

perfection when a man has ceased to think about his own person, and has

given up all designs of being a conqueror of ladies; he was too young

to be admitted as an equal amongst men who had made their mark in the

world, and of whose conversation he could scarcely as yet expect to be

more than a listener. And he was too old for the men of pleasure of his

own age; too much a man of pleasure for the men of business; destinied

in a word to be a good deal alone. Fate awards this lot of solitude to

many a man; and many like it from taste, as many without difficulty bear

it. Pendennis, in reality, suffered it very equanimously; but in words,

and according to his wont, grumbled over it not a little.

"What a nice little artless creature that was," Mr. Pen thought at the

very instant of waking after the Vauxhall affair; "what a pretty natural

manner she has; how much pleasanter than the minauderies of the young

ladies in the ballrooms" (and here he recalled to himself some instances

of what he could not help seeing was the artful simplicity of Miss

Blanche, and some of the stupid graces of other young ladies in the

polite world); "who could have thought that such a pretty rose could

grow in a porter's lodge, or bloom in that dismal old flower-pot of

a Shepherd's Inn? So she learns to sing from old Bows? If her singing

voice is as sweet as her speaking voice, it must be pretty. I like those

low voilees voices. 'What would you like me to call you?' indeed, poor

little Fanny! It went to my heart to adopt the grand air with her and

tell her to call me, 'Sir.' But we'll have no nonsense of that sort--no

Faust and Margaret business for me. That old Bows! So he teaches her to

sing, does he? He's a dear old fellow, old Bows: a gentleman in those

old clothes: a philosopher, and with a kind heart, too. How good he was

to me in the Fotheringay business. He, too, has had his griefs and his

sorrows. I must cultivate old Bows. A man ought to see people of all

sorts. I am getting tired of genteel society. Besides, there's nobody

in town. Yes, I'll go and see Bows, and Costigan too; what a rich

character! begad, I'll study him, and put him into a book." In this way

our young anthropologist talked with himself, and as Saturday was the

holiday of the week, the Pall Mall Gazette making its appearance upon

that day, and the contributors to that journal having no further calls

upon their brains or ink-bottles, Mr. Pendennis determined he would take

advantage of his leisure, and pay a visit to Shepherd's Inn--of course

to see old Bows.

The truth is, that if Arthur had been the most determined roue and

artful Lovelace who ever set about deceiving a young girl, he could

hardly have adopted better means for fascinating and overcoming poor

little Fanny Bolton than those which he had employed on the previous

night. His dandified protecting air, his conceit, generosity, and

good-humour, the very sense of good and honesty which had enabled him

to check the tremulous advances of the young creature, and not to take

advantage of that little fluttering sensibility,--his faults and his

virtues at once contributed to make her admire him; and if we could peep

into Fanny's bed (which she shared in a cupboard, along with those

two little sisters to whom we have seen Mr. Costigan administering

gingerbread and apples), we should find the poor little maid tossing

upon her mattress, to the great disturbance of its other two occupants,

and thinking over all the delights and events of that delightful,

eventful night, and all the words, looks, and actions of Arthur, its

splendid hero. Many novels had Fanny read, in secret and at home, in

three volumes and in numbers. Periodical literature had not reached

the height which it has attained subsequently, and the girls of Fanny's

generation were not enabled to purchase sixteen pages of excitement for

a penny, rich with histories of crime, murder, oppressed virtue, and the

heartless seductions of the aristocracy; but she had had the benefit

of the circulating library which, in conjunction with her school and a

small brandy-ball and millinery business, Miss Minifer kept,--and Arthur

appeared to her at once as the type and realisation of all the heroes of

all those darling greasy volumes which the young girl had devoured. Mr.

Pen, we have seen, was rather a dandy about shirts and haberdashery in

general. Fanny had looked with delight at the fineness of his linen,

at the brilliancy of his shirt-studs, at his elegant cambric

pocket-handkerchief and white gloves, and at the jetty brightness of his

charming boots. The Prince had appeared and subjugated the poor little

handmaid. His image traversed constantly her restless slumbers; the tone

of his voice, the blue light of his eyes, the generous look, half

love, half pity,--the manly protecting smile, the frank, winning

laughter,--all these were repeated in the girl's fond memory. She felt

still his arm encircling her, and saw him smiling so grand as he filled

up that delicious glass of champagne. And then she thought of the girls,

her friends, who used to sneer at her--of Emma Baker, who was so proud,

forsooth, because she was engaged to a cheesemonger, in a white apron,

near Clare Market; and of Betsy Rodgers, who make such a to-do about her

young man--an attorney's clerk, indeed, that went about with a bag!

So that, at about two o'clock in the afternoon--the Bolton family having

concluded their dinner (and Mr. B., who besides his place of porter of

the Inn, was in the employ of Messrs. Tressler, the eminent undertakers

of the Strand, being absent in the country with the Countess of

Estrich's hearse), when a gentleman in a white hat and white trousers

made his appearance under the Inn archway, and stopped at the porter's

wicket, Fanny was not in the least surprised, only delightful, only

happy, and blushing beyond all measure. She knew it could be no other

than He. She knew He'd come. There he was; there was His Royal Highness

beaming upon her from the gate. She called to her mother, who was busy

in the upper apartment, "Mamma, mamma," and ran to the wicket at once,

and opened it, pushing aside the other children. How she blushed as she

gave her hand to him! How affably he took off his white hat as he came

in; the children staring up at him! He asked Mrs. Bolton if she had

slept well, after the fatigues of the night, and hoped she had no

headache; and he said that as he was going that way, he could not pass

the door without asking news of his little partner.

Mrs. Bolton was perhaps rather shy and suspicious about these advances;

but Mr. Pen's good-humour was inexhaustible, he could not see that he

was unwelcome. He looked about the premises for a seat, and none being

disengaged, for a dish-cover was on one, a workbox on the other, and so

forth, he took one of the children's chairs, and perched himself upon

that uncomfortable eminence. At this, the children began laughing, the

child Fanny louder than all--at least, she was more amused than any of

them, and amazed at His Royal Highness's condescension. He to sit down

in that chair--that little child's chair!--Many and many a time after,

she regarded it: haven't we almost all, such furniture in our rooms,

that our fancy peoples with dear figures, that our memory fills with

sweet smiling faces, which may never look on us more?

So Pen sate down and talked away with great volubility to Mrs. Bolton.

He asked about the undertaking business, and how many mutes went down

with Lady Estrich's remains; and about the Inn, and who lived there. He

seemed very much interested about Mr. Campion's cab and horse, and had

met that gentleman in society. He thought he should like shares in the

Polwheedle and Tredyddlum; did Mrs. Bolton do for those chambers? Were

there any chambers to let in the Inn? It was better than the Temple: he

should like to come to live in Shepherd's Inn. As for Captain Strong,

and--Colonel Altamont--was his name? he was deeply interested in them

too. The Captain was an old friend at home. He had dined with him at

chambers here, before the Colonel came to live with him. What sort of

man was the Colonel? Wasn't he a stout man, with a large quantity of

jewellery, and a wig and large black whiskers--very black (here Pen

was immensely waggish, and caused hysteric giggles of delight from the

ladies)--very black indeed; in fact, blue black; that is to say, a rich

greenish purple? That was the man; he had met him, too, at Sir Fr---- in

Society.

"Oh, we know," said the ladies, "Sir F---- is Sir F. Clavering he's

often here: two or three times a week with the Captain. My little boy

has been out for bill-stamps for him. O Lor! I beg pardon, I shouldn't

have mentioned no secrets," Mrs. Bolton blurted out, being talked

perfectly into good-nature by this time. "But we know you to be a

gentleman, Mr. Pendennis, for I'm sure you have shown that you can

beayve as such. Hasn't Mr. Pendennis, Fanny?"

Fanny loved her mother for that speech. She cast up her dark eyes to the

low ceiling and said, "Oh, that he has, I'm sure, Ma," with a voice full

of feeling.

Pen was rather curious about the bill-stamps, and concerning the

transactions in Strong's chambers. And he asked, when Altamont came and

joined the Chevalier, whether he too was out for bill-stamps, who he

was, whether he saw many people, and so forth. These questions, put

with considerable adroitness by Pen who was interested about Sir Francis

Clavering's doings from private motives of his own, were artlessly

answered by Mrs. Bolton, and to the utmost of her knowledge and ability,

which, in truth, were not very great.

These questions answered, and Pen being at a loss for more, luckily

recollected his privilege as a member of the Press, and asked the ladies

whether they would like any orders for the play? The play was their

delight, as it is almost always the delight of every theatrical person.

When Bolton was away professionally (it appeared that of late the porter

of Shepherd's Inn had taken a serious turn, drank a good deal, and

otherwise made himself unpleasant to the ladies of his family), they

would like of all things to slip out and go to the theatre--little

Barney, their son, keeping the lodge; and Mr. Pendennis's most generous

and most genteel compliment of orders was received with boundless

gratitude by both mother and daughter.

Fanny clapped her hands with pleasure: her faced beamed with it. She

looked and nodded, and laughed at har mamma, who nodded and laughed in

her turn. Mrs. Bolton was not superannuated for pleasure yet, or by

any means too old for admiration, she thought. And very likely

Mr. Pendennis, in his conversation with her, had insinuated some

compliments, or shaped his talk so as to please her. At first against

Pen, and suspicious of him, she was his partisan now, and almost as

enthusiastic about him as her daughter. When two women get together to

like a man, they help each other on--each pushes the other

forward--and the second, out of sheer sympathy, becomes as eager as the

principal:--at least, so it is said by philosophers who have examined

this science.

So the offer of the play-tickets, and other pleasantries; put all

parties into perfect good-humour, except for one brief moment, when one

of the younger children, hearing the name of 'Astley's' pronounced, came

forward and stated that she should like very much to go, too; on which,

Fanny said, "Don't bother!" rather sharply; and Mamma said, "Git-long,

Betsy-Jane, do now, and play in the court:" so that the two little ones,

namely, Betsy-Jane and Ameliar--Ann, went away in their little innocent

pinafores, and disported in the courtyard on the smooth gravel, round

about the statue of Shepherd the Great.

And here, as they were playing, they very possibly communicated with an

old friend of theirs and dweller in the Inn; for while Pen was making

himself agreeable to the ladies at the lodge, who were laughing

delighted at his sallies, an old gentleman passed under the archway from

the Inn-square, and came and looked in at the door of the lodge.

He made a very blank and rueful face when he saw Mr. Arthur seated upon

a table, like Macheath in the play, in easy discourse with Mrs. Bolton

and her daughter.

"What! Mr. Bows? How d'you do, Bows?" cried out Pen, in a cheery, loud

voice. "I was coming to see you, and was asking your address of these

ladies."

"You were coming to see me, were you, sir?" Bows said, and came in

with a sad face, and shook hands with Arthur. "Plague on that old man!"

somebody thought in the room: and so, perhaps, some one else besides

her.

CHAPTER XLIX. In Shepherd's Inn

Our friend Pen said "How d'ye do, Mr. Bows," in a loud cheery voice on

perceiving that gentleman, and saluted him in a dashing off-hand manner,

yet you could have seen a blush upon Arthur's face (answered by Fanny,

whose cheek straightway threw out a similar fluttering red signal); and

after Bows and Arthur had shaken hands, and the former had ironically

accepted the other's assertion that he was about to pay Mr. Costigan's

chambers a visit, there was a gloomy and rather guilty silence in the

company, which Pen presently tried to dispel by making a great rattling

noise. The silence of course departed at Mr. Arthur's noise, but the

gloom remained and deepened, as the darkness does in a vault if you

light up a single taper in it. Pendennis tried to describe, in a jocular

manner, the transactions of the previous night, and attempted to give

an imitation of Costigan vainly expostulating with the check-taker at

Vauxhall. It was not a good imitation. What stranger can imitate that

perfection? Nobody laughed. Mrs. Bolton did not in the least understand

what part Mr. Pendennis was performing, and whether it was the

check-taker or the Captain he was taking off. Fanny wore an alarmed

face, and tried a timid giggle; old Mr. Bows looked as glum as when he

fiddled in the orchestra, or played a difficult piece upon the old piano

at the Back Kitchen. Pen felt that his story was a failure; his voice

sank and dwindled away dismally at the end of it--flickered, and went

out; and it was all dark again. You could hear the ticket-porter, who

lolls about Shepherd's Inn, as he passed on the flags under the archway:

the clink of his boot-heels was noted by everybody.

"You were coming to see me, sir," Mr. Bows said. "Won't you have the

kindness to walk up to my chambers with me? You do them a great honour,

I am sure. They are rather high up; but----"

"Oh! I live in a garret myself, and Shepherd's Inn is twice as cheerful

as Lamb Court," Mr. Pendennis broke in.

"I knew that you had third-floor apartments," Mr. Bows said; "and was

going to say--you will please not take my remark as discourteous--that

the air up three pair of stairs is wholesomer for gentlemen, than the

air of a porter's lodge."

"Sir!" said Pen, whose candle flamed up again in his wrath, and who was

disposed to be as quarrelsome as men are when they are in the wrong.

"Will you permit me to choose my society without----?

"You were so polite as to say that you were about to honour my umble

domicile with a visit," Mr. Bows said, with his sad voice. "Shall I show

you the way? Mr. Pendennis and I are old friends, Mrs. Bolton--very

old acquaintances; and at the earliest dawn of his life we crossed each

other."

The old man pointed towards the door with a trembling finger, and a hat

in the other hand, and in an attitude slightly theatrical; so were his

words when he spoke somewhat artificial, and chosen from the vocabulary

which he had heard all his life from the painted lips of the orators

before the stage-lamps. But he was not acting or masquerading, as Pen

knew very well, though he was disposed to pooh-pooh the old fellow's

melodramatic airs. "Come along, sir," he said, "as you are so very

pressing. Mrs. Bolton, I wish you a good day. Good-bye, Miss Fanny; I

shall always think of our night at Vauxhall with pleasure; and be sure

I will remember the theatre tickets." And he took her hand, pressed it,

was pressed by it, and was gone.

"What a nice young man, to be sure!" cried Mrs. Bolton.

"D'you think so, ma?" said Fanny.

"I was a-thinkin who he was like. When I was at the Wells with Mrs.

Serle," Mrs. Bolton continued, looking through the window-curtain after

Pen, as he went up the court with Bows, "there was a young gentleman

from the city, that used to come in a tilbry, in a white at, the very

image of him, only his whiskers was black, and Mr. P.'s is red."

"Law, ma! they are a most beautiful hawburn," Fanny said.

"He used to come for Emly Budd, who danced Columbine in 'Arleykin

Ornpipe, or the Battle of Navarino,' when Miss De la Bosky was took

ill--a pretty dancer, and a fine stage figure of a woman--and he was a

great sugar-baker in the city, with a country ouse at Omerton; and he

used to drive her in the tilbry down Goswell Street Road; and one day

they drove and was married at St. Bartholomew's Church, Smithfield,

where they ad their bands read quite private; and she now keeps

her carriage, and I sor her name in the paper as patroness of the

Manshing-House Ball for the Washywomen's Asylum. And look at Lady

Mirabel--capting Costigan's daughter--she was profeshnl, as all very

well know." Thus, and more to this purpose, Mrs. Bolton spoke, now

peeping through the window-curtain, now cleaning the mugs and plates,

and consigning them to their place in the corner cupboard; and finishing

her speech as she and Fanny shook out and folded up the dinner-cloth

between them, and restored it to its drawer in the table.

Although Costigan had once before been made pretty accurately to

understand what Pen's pecuniary means and expectations were, I suppose

Cos had forgotten the information acquired at Chatteris years ago, or

had been induced by his natural enthusiasm to exaggerate his friend's

income. He had described Fairoaks Park in the most glowing terms to

Mrs. Bolton, on the preceding evening, as he was walking about with her

during Pen's little escapade with Fanny, had dilated upon the enormous

wealth of Pen's famous uncle, the Major, and shown an intimate

acquaintance with Arthur's funded and landed property. Very likely Mrs.

Bolton, in her wisdom, had speculated upon these matters during the

night; and had had visions of Fanny driving in her carriage, like Mrs.

Bolton's old comrade, the dancer of Sadler's Wells.

In the last operation of table-cloth folding, these two foolish women,

of necessity, came close together; and as Fanny took the cloth and gave

it the last fold, her mother put her finger under the young girl's chin,

and kissed her. Again the red signal flew out, and fluttered on Fanny's

cheek. What did it mean? It was not alarm this time. It was pleasure

which caused the poor little Fanny to blush so. Poor little Fanny! What?

is love sin? that it is so pleasant at the beginning, and so bitter at

the end?

After the embrace, Mrs. Bolton thought proper to say that she was a-goin

out upon business, and that Fanny must keep the lodge; which Fanny,

after a very faint objection indeed, consented to do. So Mrs. Bolton

took her bonnet and market-basket, and departed; and the instant she was

gone, Fanny went and sae by the window which commanded Bows's door, and

never once took her eyes away from that quarter of Shepherd's Inn.

Betsy-Jane and Ameliar-Ann were buzzing in one corner of the place, and

making believe to read out of a picture-book, which one of them

held topsy-turvy. It was a grave and dreadful tract, of Mr. Bolton's

collection. Fanny did not hear her sisters prattling over it. She

noticed nothing but Bows's door.

At last she gave a little shake, and her eyes lighted up. He had come

out. He would pass the door again. But her poor little countenance fell

in an instant more. Pendennis, indeed, came out; but Bows followed after

him. They passed under the archway together. He only took off his hat,

and bowed as he looked in. He did not stop to speak.

In three or four minutes--Fanny did not know how long, but she looked

furiously at him when he came into the lodge--Bows returned alone, and

entered into the porter's room.

"Where's your Ma, dear?" he said to Fanny.

"I don't know," Fanny said, with an angry toss. "I don't follow Ma's

steps wherever she goes, I suppose, Mr. Bows."

"Am I my mother's keeper?" Bows said, with his usual melancholy

bitterness. "Come here, Betsy-Jane and Amelia-Ann; I've brought a cake

for the one who can read her letters best, and a cake for the other who

can read them the next best."

When the young ladies had undergone the examination through which Bows

put them, they were rewarded with their gingerbread medals, and went off

to discuss them in the court. Meanwhile Fanny took out some work, and

pretended to busy herself with it, her mind being in great excitement

and anger, as she plied her needle. Bows sate so that he could command

the entrance from the lodge to the street. But the person whom, perhaps,

he expected to see, never made his appearance again. And Mrs. Bolton

came in from market, and found Mr. Bows in place of the person whom she

had expected to see. The reader perhaps can guess what was his name?

The interview between Bows and his guest, when those two mounted to the

apartment occupied by the former in common with the descendant of the

Milesian kings, was not particularly satisfactory to either party. Pen

was sulky. If Bows had anything on his mind, he did not care to deliver

himself of his thoughts in the presence of Captain Costigan, who

remained in the apartment during the whole of Pen's visit; having

quitted his bedchamber, indeed, but a very few minutes before the

arrival of that gentleman. We have witnessed the deshahille of Major

Pendennis: will any man wish to be valet-de-chambre to our other hero,

Costigan? It would seem that the Captain, before issuing from his

bedroom, scented himself with otto-of-whisky. A rich odour of that

delicious perfume breathed from out him, as he held out the grasp of

cordiality to his visitor. The hand which performed that grasp shook

wofully: it was a wonder how it could hold the razor with which the poor

gentleman daily operated on his chin.

Bows's room was as neat, on the other hand, as his comrade's was

disorderly. His humble wardrobe hung behind a curtain. His books and

manuscript music were trimly arranged upon shelves. A lithographed

portrait of Miss Fotheringay, as Mrs. Haller, with the actress's

sprawling signature at the corner, hung faithfully over the old

gentleman's bed. Lady Mirabel wrote much better than Miss Fotheringay

had been able to do. Her Ladyship had laboured assiduously to acquire

the art of penmanship since her marriage; and, in a common note of

invitation or acceptance, acquitted herself very genteelly. Bows loved

the old handwriting best, though; the fair artist's earlier manner.

He had but one specimen of the new style, a note in reply to a song

composed and dedicated to Lady Mirabel, by her most humble servant

Robert Bows; and which document was treasured in his desk amongst his

other state papers. He was teaching Fanny Bolton now to sing and to

write, as he had taught Emily in former days. It was the nature of the

man to attach himself to something. When Emily was torn from him he took

a substitute: as a man looks out for a crutch when he loses a leg; or

lashes himself to a raft when he has suffered shipwreck. Latude had

given his heart to a woman, no doubt, before he grew to be so fond of a

mouse in the Bastille. There are people who in their youth have felt and

inspired an heroic passion, and end by being happy in the caresses,

or agitated by the illness of a poodle. But it was hard upon Bows, and

grating to his feelings as a man and a sentimentalist, that he should

find Pen again upon his track, and in pursuit of this little Fanny.

Meanwhile, Costigan had not the least idea but that his company was

perfectly welcome to Messrs. Pendennis and Bows, and that the visit

of the former was intended for himself. He expressed himself greatly

pleased with that mark of poloightness and promised, in his own mind,

that he would repay that obligation at least--which was not the only

debt which the Captain owed in life--by several visits to his young

friend. He entertained him affably with news of the day, or rather of

ten days previous; for Pen, in his quality of Journalist, remembered to

have seen some of the Captain's opinions in the Sporting and Theatrical

Newspaper, which was Costigan's oracle. He stated that Sir Charles and

Lady Mirabel were gone to Baden-Baden, and were most pressing in their

invitations that he should join them there. Pen replied with great

gravity, that he had heard that Baden was very pleasant, and the Grand

Duke exceedingly hospitable to English. Costigan answered, that the laws

of hospitalitee bekeam a Grand Juke; that he sariously would think about

visiting him; and made some remarks upon the splendid festivities at

Dublin Castle, when his Excellency the Earl of Portansherry held the

Viceraygal Coort there, and of which he, Costigan, had been a humble but

pleased spectator. And Pen--as he heard these oft-told well-remembered

legends--recollected the time when he had given a sort of credence to

them, and had a certain respect for the Captain. Emily and first love,

and the little room at Chatteris, and the kind talk with Bows on the

bridge, came back to him. He felt quite kindly disposed towards his two

old friends; and cordially shook the hands of both of them when he rose

to go away.

He had quite forgotten about little Fanny Bolton whilst the Captain was

talking, and Pen himself was absorbed in other selfish meditations. He

only remembered her again as Bows came hobbling down the stairs after

him, bent evidently upon following him out of Shepherd's Inn.

Mr. Bows's precaution was not a lucky one. The wrath of Mr. Arthur

Pendennis rose at the poor old fellow's feeble persecution. Confound

him, what does he mean by dogging me? thought Pen. And he burst out

laughing when he was in the Strand and by himself, as he thought of the

elder's stratagem. It was not an honest laugh, Arthur Pendennis. Perhaps

the thought struck Arthur himself, and he blushed at his own sense of

humour.

He went off to endeavour to banish the thoughts which occupied him,

whatever those thoughts might be, and tried various places of amusement

with but indifferent success. He struggled up the highest stairs of

the Panorama; but when he had arrived, panting at the height of the

eminence, Care had come up with him, and was bearing him company. He

went to the Club, and wrote a long letter home, exceedingly witty and

sarcastic, and in which, if he did not say a single word about Vauxhall

and Fanny Bolton, it was because he thought that subject, however

interesting to himself, would not be very interesting to his mother and

Laura. Nor could the novels or the library table fix his attention, nor

the grave and respectable Jawkins (the only man in town), who wished to

engage him in conversation; nor any of the amusements which he tried,

after flying from Jawkins. He passed a Comic Theatre on his way home,

and saw 'Stunning Farce,' 'Roars of Laughter,' 'Good Old English Fun and

Frolic,' placarded in vermilion letters on the gate. He went into the

pit, and saw the lovely Mrs. Leary, as usual, in a man's attire; and

that eminent buffo actor, Tom Horseman, dressed as a woman. Horseman's

travesty seemed to him a horrid and hideous degradation; Mrs. Leary's

glances and ankles had not the least effect. He laughed again, and

bitterly, to himself, as he thought of the effect which she had

produced upon him, on the first night of his arrival in London, a short

time--what a long long time ago!

CHAPTER L. Or near the Temple Garden

Fashion has long deserted the green and pretty Temple Garden, which in

Shakespeare makes York and Lancaster to pluck the innocent white and red

roses which became the badges of their bloody wars; and the learned and

pleasant writer of the Handbook of London tells us that "the commonest

and hardiest kind of rose has long ceased to put forth a bud" in that

smoky air. Not many of the present occupiers of the buildings round

about the quarter know or care, very likely, whether or not roses

grow there, or pass the old gate, except on their way to chambers. The

attorneys' clerks don't carry flowers in their bags, or posies under

their arms, as they run to the counsel's chambers--the few lawyers who

take constitutional walks think very little about York and Lancaster,

especially since the railroad business is over. Only antiquarians and

literary amateurs care to look at the gardens with much interest, and

fancy good Sir Roger de Coverley and Mr. Spectator with his short

face pacing up and down the road; or dear Oliver Goldsmith in the

summer-house, perhaps meditating about the next 'Citizen of the World,'

or the new suit that Mr. Filby, the tailor, is fashioning for him, or

the dunning letter that Mr. Newbery has sent. Treading heavily on the

gravel, and rolling majestically along in a snuff-coloured suit, and a

wig that sadly wants the barber's powder and irons, one sees the

Great Doctor step up to him (his Scotch lackey following at the

lexicographer's heels, a little the worse for port wine that they have

been taking at the Mitre), and Mr. Johnson asks Mr. Goldsmith to come

home and take a dish of tea with Miss Williams. Kind faith of Fancy! Sir

Roger and Mr. Spectator are as real to us now as the two doctors and the

boozy and faithful Scotchman. The poetical figures live in our memory

just as much as the real personages,--and as Mr. Arthur Pendennis was of

a romantic and literary turn, by no means addicted to the legal pursuits

common in the neighbourhood of the place, we may presume that he was

cherishing some such poetical reflections as these, when, upon the

evening after the events recorded in the last chapter, the young

gentleman chose the Temple Gardens as a place for exercise and

meditation.

On the Sunday evening the Temple is commonly calm. The chambers are for

the most part vacant: the great lawyers are giving grand dinner-parties

at their houses in the Belgravian or Tyburnian districts; the agreeable

young barristers are absent, attending those parties, and paying their

respects to Mr. Kewsy's excellent claret, or Mr. Justice Ermine's

accomplished daughters the uninvited are partaking of the economic joint

and the modest half-pint of wine at the Club, entertaining themselves,

and the rest of the company in the Club-room, with Circuit jokes and

points of wit and law. Nobody is in chambers at all, except poor Mr.

Cockle, who is ill, and whose laundress is making him gruel; or Mr.

Toodle, who is an amateur of the flute, and whom you may hear piping

solitary from his chambers in the second floor; or young Tiger, the

student, from whose open windows comes a great gush of cigar smoke, and

at whose door are a quantity of dishes and covers, bearing the insignia

of Dicks' or the Cock. But stop! Whither does Fancy lead us? It is

vacation time; and with the exception of Pendennis, nobody is in

Chambers at all.

Perhaps it was solitude, then, which drove Pen into the garden; for

although he had never before passed the gate, and had looked rather

carelessly at the pretty flower-beds, and the groups of pleased citizens

sauntering over the trim lawn and the broad gravel-walks by the river,

on this evening it happened, as we have said, that the young gentleman,

who had dined alone at a tavern in the neighbourhood of the Temple, took

a fancy, as he was returning home to his chambers, to take a little walk

in the gardens, and enjoy the fresh evening air, and the sight of the

shining Thames. After walking for a brief space, and looking at the

many peaceful and happy groups round about him, he grew tired of the

exercise, and betook himself to one of the summer-houses which flank

either end of the main walk, and there modestly seated himself. What

were his cogitations? The evening was delightfully bright and calm; the

sky was cloudless; the chimneys on the opposite bank were not smoking;

the wharfs warehouses looked rosy in the sunshine, and as clear as if

they, too, had washed for the holiday. The steamers rushed rapidly up

and down the stream, laden with holiday passengers. The bells of the

multitudinous city churches were ringing to evening prayers--such

peaceful Sabbath evenings as this Pen may have remembered in his early

days, as he paced, with his arm round his mother's waist, on the terrace

before the lawn at home. The sun was lighting up the little Brawl, too,

as well as the broad Thames, and sinking downwards majestically behind

the Clavering elms, and the tower of the familiar village church. Was

it thoughts of these, or the sunset merely, that caused the blush in the

young man's face? He beat time on the bench, to the chorus of the

bells without; flicked the dust off his shining boots with his

pocket-handkerchief, and starting up, stamped with his foot and said,

"No, by Jove, I'll go home." And with this resolution, which indicated

that some struggle as to the propriety of remaining where he was, or of

quitting the garden, had been going on in his mind, he stepped out of

the summer-house.

He nearly knocked down two little children, who did not indeed reach

much higher than his knee, and were trotting along the gravel-walk, with

their long blue shadows slanting towards the east.

One cried out "Oh!" the other began to laugh; and with a knowing little

infantile chuckle, said, "Missa Pendennis!" And Arthur, looking down,

saw his two little friends of the day before, Mesdemoiselles Ameliar-Ann

and Betsy-Jane. He blushed more than ever at seeing them, and seizing

the one whom he had nearly upset, jumped her up into the air, and kissed

her: at which sudden assault Ameliar-Ann began to cry in great alarm.

This cry brought up instantly two ladies in clean collars and new

ribbons, and grand shawls, namely: Mrs. Bolton in a rich scarlet

Caledonian Cashmere, and a black silk dress, and Miss F. Bolton with a

yellow scarf and a sweet sprigged muslin, and a parasol--quite the lady.

Fanny did not say one single word: though; her eyes flashed a welcome,

and shone as bright--as bright as the most blazing windows in Paper

Buildings. But Mrs. Bolton, after admonishing Betsy-Jane, said, "Lor

sir--how very odd that we should meet you year! I ope you ave your ealth

well, sir.--Ain't it odd, Fanny, that we should meet Mr. Pendennis?"

What do you mean by sniggering, Mesdames? When young Croesus has been

staying at a country-house, have you never, by any singular coincidence,

been walking with your Fanny in the shrubberies? Have you and your Fanny

never happened to be listening to the band of the Heavies at Brighton,

when young De Boots and Captain Padmore came clinking down the Pier?

Have you and your darling Frances never chanced to be visiting old widow

Wheezy at the cottage on the common, when the young curate has stepped

in with a tract adapted to the rheumatism? Do you suppose that, if

singular coincidences occur at the Hall, they don't also happen at the

Lodge?

It was a coincidence, no doubt: that was all. In the course of the

conversation on the day previous, Mr. Pendennis had merely said, in the

simplest way imaginable, and in reply to a question of Miss Bolton, that

although some of the courts were gloomy, parts of the Temple were very

cheerful and agreeable, especially the chambers looking on the river and

around the gardens, and that the gardens were a very pleasant walk on

Sunday evenings and frequented by a great number of people--and here, by

the merest chance, all our acquaintances met together, just like so many

people in genteel life. What could be more artless, good-natured, or

natural?

Pen looked very grave, pompous, and dandified. He was unusually smart

and brilliant in his costume. His white duck trousers and white hat,

his neckcloth of many colours, his light waistcoat, gold chains, and

shirt-studs, gave him the air of a prince of the blood at least. How

his splendour became his figure! Was anybody ever like him? some one

thought. He blushed--how his blushes became him! the same individual

said to herself. The children, on seeing him the day before, had been

so struck with him, that after he had gone away they had been playing

at him. And Ameliar-Ann, sticking her little chubby fingers into the

arm-holes of her pinafore, as Pen was wont to do with his waistcoat, had

said, "Now, Bessy-Jane, I'll be Missa Pendennis." Fanny had laughed

till she cried, and smothered her sister with kisses for that feat. How

happy, too, she was to see Arthur embracing the child!

If Arthur was red, Fanny, on the contrary, was very worn and pale.

Arthur remarked it, and asked kindly why she looked so fatigued.

"I was awake all night," said Fanny, and began to blush a little.

"I put out her candle, and hordered her to go to sleep and leave off

readin," interposed the fond mother.

"You were reading! And what was it that interested you so?" asked Pen,

amused.

"Oh, it's so beautiful!" said Fanny.

"What?"

"'Walter Lorraine,'" Fanny sighed out. "How I do hate that

Neaera--Neaera--I don't know the pronunciation. And I love Leonora, and

Walter, oh, how dear he is!"

How had Fanny discovered the novel of 'Walter Lorraine,' and that Pen

was the author? This little person remembered every single word which

Mr. Pendennis had spoken on the night previous, and how he wrote in

books and newspapers. What books? She was so eager to know, that she

had almost a mind to be civil to old Bows, who was suffering under

her displeasure since yesterday, but she determined first to make

application to Costigan. She began by coaxing the Captain and smiling

upon him in her most winning way, as she helped to arrange his dinner

and set his humble apartment in order. She was sure his linen wanted

mending (and indeed the Captain's linen-closet contained some curious

specimens of manufactured flax and cotton). She would mend his

shirts--all his shirts. What horrid holes--what funny holes! She put her

little face through one of them, and laughed at the old warrior in the

most winning manner. She would have made a funny little picture looking

through the holes. Then she daintily removed Costigan's dinner things,

tripping about the room as she had seen the dancers do at the play; and

she danced to the Captain's cupboard, and produced his whisky-bottle,

and mixed him a tumbler, and must taste a drop of it--a little drop; and

the Captain must sing her one of his songs, his dear songs, and teach

it to her. And when he had sung an Irish melody in his rich quavering

voice, fancying it was he who was fascinating the little siren, she put

her little question about Arthur Pendennis and his novel, and having

got an answer, cared for nothing more, but left the Captain at the piano

about to sing her another song, and the dinner-tray on the passage, and

the shirts on the chair, and ran downstairs quickening her pace as she

sped.

Captain Costigan, as he said, was not a litherary cyarkter, nor had he

as yet found time to peruse his young friend's ellygant perfaurumance,

though he intended to teak an early opporchunitee of purchasing a cawpee

of his work. But he knew the name of Pen's novel from the fact that

Messrs. Finucane, Bludyer, and other frequenters of the Back Kitchen,

spoke of Mr. Pendennis (and not all of them with great friendship; for

Bludyer called him a confounded coxcomb, and Hoolan wondered that Doolan

did not kick him etc.) by the sobriquet of Walter Lorraine,--and was

hence enabled to give Fanny the information which she required.

"And she went and ast for it at the libery," Mrs. Bolton said, "--several

liberies--and some ad it and it was bout, and some adn't it. And one of

the liberies as ad it wouldn't let er ave it without a sovering: and she

adn't one, and she came back a-cryin to me--didn't you, Fanny?--and I

gave her a sovering."

"And, oh, I was in such a fright lest any one should have come to the

libery and took it while I was away," Fanny said, her cheeks and eyes

glowing. "And, oh, I do like it so!"

Arthur was touched by this artless sympathy, immensely flattered and

moved by it. "Do you like it?" he said. "If you will come up to my

chambers I will--No, I will bring you one--no, I will send you one.

Good night. Thank you, Fanny. God bless you. I mustn't stay with you.

Good-bye, good-bye." And, pressing her hand once, and nodding to her

mother and the other children, he strode out of the gardens.

He quickened his pace as he went from them, and ran out of the gate

talking to himself. "Dear, dear little thing," he said,--"darling little

Fanny! You are worth them all. I wish to heaven Shandon was back. I'd go

home to my mother. I mustn't see her. I won't. I won't, so help me----"

As he was talking thus, and running, the passers-by turning to look at

him, he ran against a little old man, and perceived it was Mr. Bows.

"Your very umble servant, sir," said Mr. Bows, making a sarcastic bow,

and lifting his old hat from his forehead.

"I wish you a good day," Arthur answered sulkily. "Don't let me detain

you, or give you the trouble to follow me again. I am in a hurry, sir.

Good evening."

Bows thought Pen had some reason for hurrying to his rooms. "Where are

they?" exclaimed the old gentleman. "You know whom I mean. They're not

in your rooms, sir, are they? They told Bolton they were going to church

at the Temple, they weren't there. They are in your chambers: they

mustn't stay in your chambers, Mr. Pendennis."

"Damn it, sir!" cried out Pendennis, fiercely. "Come and see if they

are in my chambers: here's the court and the door--come in and see." And

Bows, taking off his hat and bowing first, followed the young man.

They were not in Pen's chambers, as we know. But when the gardens

were closed, the two women, who had r had but a melancholy evening's

amusement, walked away sadly with the children, and they entered into

Lamb Court, and stood under the lamp-post which cheerfully ornaments the

centre of that quadrangle, and looked up to the third floor of the house

where Pendennis's chambers were, and where they saw a light presently

kindled. Then this couple of fools went away, the children dragging

wearily after them, and returned to Mr. Bolton, who was immersed in

rum-and-water at his lodge in Shepherd's Inn.

Mr. Bows looked round the blank room which the young man occupied, and

which had received but very few ornaments or additions since the last

time we saw them. Warrington's old bookcase and battered library, Pen's

writing-table with its litter of papers, presented an aspect cheerless

enough. "Will you like to look in the bedrooms, Mr. Bows, and see if my

victims are there?" he said bitterly; "or whether I have made away with

the little girls, and hid them in the coal-hole?"

"Your word is sufficient, Mr. Pendennis," the other said in his sad

tone. "You say they are not here, and I know they are not. And I hope

they never have been here, and never will come."

"Upon my word, sir, you are very good, to choose my acquaintances for

me," Arthur said, in a haughty tone; "and to suppose that anybody would

be the worse for my society. I remember you, and owe you kindness from

old times, Mr. Bows; or I should speak more angrily than I do, about

a very intolerable sort of persecution to which you seem inclined to

subject me. You followed me out of your Inn yesterday, as if you wanted

to watch that I shouldn't steal something." Here Pen stammered and

turned red, directly he had said the words; he felt he had given the

other an opening, which Bows instantly took.

"I do think you came to steal something, as you say the words, sir,"

Bows said. "Do you mean to say that you came to pay a visit to poor old

Bows, the fiddler; or to Mrs. Bolton, at the porter's lodge? O fie! Such

a fine gentleman as Arthur Pendennis, Esquire, doesn't condescend

to walk up to my garret, or to sit in a laundress's kitchen, but for

reasons of his own. And my belief is that you came to steal a pretty

girl's heart away, and to ruin it, and to spurn it afterwards, Mr.

Arthur Pendennis. That's what the world makes of you young dandies, you

gentlemen of fashion, you high and mighty aristocrats that trample upon

the people. It's sport to you, but what is it to the poor, think you;

the toys of your pleasures, whom you play with and whom you fling into

the streets when you are tired? I know your order, sir. I know your

selfishness, and your arrogance, and your pride. What does it matter to

my lord, that the poor man's daughter is made miserable, and her family

brought to shame? You must have your pleasures, and the people of course

must pay for them. What are we made for, but for that? It's the way with

you all--the way with you all, sir."

Bows was speaking beside the question, and Pen had his advantage here,

which he was not sorry to take--not sorry to put off the debate from the

point upon which his adversary had first engaged it. Arthur broke out

with a sort of laugh, for which he asked Bows's pardon. "Yes, I am

an aristocrat," he said, "in a palace up three pair of stairs, with

a carpet nearly as handsome as yours, Mr. Bows. My life is passed in

grinding the people, is it?--in ruining virgins and robbing the poor? My

good sir, this is very well in a comedy, where Job Thornberry slaps his

breast, and asks my Lord how dare he trample on an honest man and poke

out an Englishman's fireside; but in real life, Mr. Bows, to a man who

has to work for his bread as much as you do--how can you talk about

aristocrats tyrannising over the people? Have I ever done you a wrong?

or assumed airs of superiority over you? Did you not have an early

regard for me--in days when we were both of us romantic young fellows,

Mr. Bows? Come, don't be angry with me now, and let us be as good

friends as we were before."

"Those days were very different," Mr. Bows answered; "and Mr. Arthur

Pendennis was an honest, impetuous young fellow then; rather selfish

and conceited, perhaps, but honest. He liked you then, because you were

ready to ruin yourself for a woman."

"And now, sir?" Arthur asked.

"And now times are changed, and you want a woman to ruin herself for

you," Bows answered. "I know this child, sir. I've always said this lot

was hanging over her. She has heated her little brain with novels, until

her whole thoughts are about love and lovers, and she scarcely sees that

she treads on a kitchen floor. I have taught the little thing. She is

full of many talents and winning ways, I grant you. I am fond of the

girl, sir. I'm a lonely old man; I lead a life that I don't like, among

boon companions, who make me melancholy. I have but this child that

I care for. Have pity upon me, and don't take her away from me, Mr.

Pendennis--don't take her away."

The old man's voice broke as he spoke. Its accents touched Pen, much

more than the menacing or sarcastic tone which Bows had commenced by

adopting.

"Indeed," said he, kindly, "you do me a wrong if you fancy I intend

one to poor little Fanny. I never saw her till Friday night. It was the

merest chance that our friend Costigan threw her into my way. I have no

intentions regarding her--that is----"

"That is, you know very well that she is a foolish girl, and her mother

a foolish woman,--that is, you meet her in the Temple Gardens, and

of course without previous concert,--that is, that when I found her

yesterday reading the book you've wrote, she scorned me," Bows said.

"What am I good for but to be laughed at? a deformed old fellow like

me; an old fiddler, that wears a threadbare coat, and gets his bread by

playing tunes at an ale-house? You are a fine gentleman, you are. You

wear scent in your handkerchief, and a ring on your finger. You go to

dine with great people. Who ever gives a crust to old Bows? And yet I

might have been as good a man as the best of you. I might have been

a man of genius, if I had had the chance; ay, and have lived with the

master-spirits of the land. But everything hads ailed with me. I'd

ambition once, and wrote plays, poems, music--nobody would give me a

hearing. I never loved a woman, but she laughed at me; and here I am in

my old age alone--alone! Don't take this girl from me, Mr. Pendennis, I

say again. Leave her with me a little longer. She was like a child to me

till yesterday. Why did you step in, and made her to mock my deformity

and old age?"

"I am guiltless of that, at least," Arthur said, with something of a

sigh. "Upon my word of honour, I wish I had never seen the girl. My

calling is not seduction, Mr. Bows. I did not imagine that I had made

an impression on poor Fanny, until--until to-night. And then, sir, I was

sorry, and was flying from my temptation, as you came upon me. And," he

added, with a glow upon his cheek, which, in the gathering darkness, his

companion could not see, and with an audible tremor in his voice, "I do

not mind telling you, sir, that on this Sabbath evening, as the church

bells were ringing, I thought of my own home, and of women angelically

pure and good, who dwell there; and I was running hither as I met you,

that I might avoid the danger which beset me, and ask strength of God

Almighty to do my duty."

After these words from Arthur a silence ensued, and when the

conversation was resumed by his guest, the latter spoke in a tone which

was much more gentle and friendly. And on taking farewell of Pen,

Bows asked leave to shake hands with him, and with a very warm and

affectionate greeting on both sides, apologised to Arthur for having

mistaken him, and paid him some compliments which caused the young man

to squeeze his old friend's hand heartily again. And as they parted at

Pen's door, Arthur said he had given a promise, and he hoped and trusted

that Mr. Bows might rely on it?

"Amen to that prayer," said Mr. Bows, and went slowly down the stair.

CHAPTER LI. The happy Village again

Early in this history, we have had occasion to speak of the little town

of Clavering, near which Pen's paternal home of Fairoaks stood, and of

some of the people who inhabite the place; and as the society there

was by no means amusing or pleasant, our reports concerning it were not

carried to any very great length. Mr. Samuel Huxter, the gentleman whose

acquaintance we lately made at Vauxhall, was one of the choice spirits

of the little town, when he visited it during his vacation, and

enlivened the tables of his friends there, by the wit of Bartholomew's

and the gossip of the fashionable London circles which he frequented.

Mr. Hobnell, the young gentleman whom Pen had thrashed in consequence

of the quarrel in the Fotheringay affair, was, whilst a pupil at the

Grammar School at Clavering, made very welcome at the tea-table of Mrs.

Huxter, Samuel's mother, and was free of the surgery, where he knew the

way to the tamarind-pots, and could scent his pocket-handkerchief with

rose-water. And it was at this period of his life that he formed an

attachment for Miss Sophy Huxter, whom, on his father's demise, he

married, and took home to his house of the Warren, at a few miles from

Clavering.

The family had possessed and cultivated an estate there for many

years, as yeomen and farmers. Mr. Hobnell's father pulled down the

old farmhouse; built a flaring new whitewashed mansion, with capacious

stables; and a piano in the drawing-room; kept a pack of harriers; and

assumed the title of Squire Hobnell. When he died, and his son reigned

in his stead, the family might be fairly considered to be established as

county gentry. And Sam Huxter, at London, did no great wrong in boasting

about his brother-in-law's place, his hounds, horses, and hospitality,

to his admiring comrades at Bartholomew's. Every year, at a time

commonly when Mrs. Hobnell could not leave the increasing duties of

her nursery, Hobnell came up to London for a lark, had rooms at

the Tavistock, and he and Sam indulged in the pleasures of the town

together. Ascot, the theatres, Vauxhall, and the convivial taverns in

the joyous neighbourhood of Covent Garden, were visited by the vivacious

squire, in company with his learned brother. When he was in London, as

he said, he liked to do as London does, and to "go it a bit," and when

he returned to the west, he took a new bonnet and shawl to Mrs. Hobnell,

and relinquished, for country sports and occupations during the next

eleven months, the elegant amusements of London life.

Sam Huxter kept up a correspondence with his relative, and supplied him

with choice news of the metropolis, in return for the baskets of hares,

partridges, and clouted cream which the squire and his good-natured wife

forwarded to Sam. A youth more brilliant and distinguished they did

not know. He was the life and soul of their house, when he made his

appearance in his native place. His songs, jokes, and fun kept the

Warren in a roar. He had saved their eldest darling's life, by taking

a fish-bone out of her throat: in fine, he was the delight of their

circle.

As ill-luck would have it, Pen again fell in with Mr. Huxter, only three

days after the rencontre at Vauxhall. Faithful to his vow, he had not

been to see little Fanny. He was trying to drive her from his mind by

occupation, or other mental excitement. He laboured, though not to much

profit, incessantly in his rooms; and, in his capacity of critic for

the Pall Mall Gazette, made woful and savage onslaught on a poem and a

romance which came before him for judgment. These authors slain, he

went to dine alone at the lonely club of the Polyanthus, where the vast

solitudes frightened him, and made him only the more moody. He had

been to more theatres for relaxation. The whole house was roaring with

laughter and applause, and he saw only an ignoble farce that made him

sad. It would have damped the spirits of the buffoon on the stage to

have seen Pen's dismal face. He hardly knew what was happening; the

scene and the drama passed before him like a dream or a fever. Then

he thought he would go to the Back Kitchen, his old haunt with

Warrington--he was not a bit sleepy yet. The day before he had walked

twenty miles in search after rest, over Hampstead Common and Hendon

lanes, and had got no sleep at night. He would go to the Back Kitchen.

It was a sort of comfort to him to think he should see Bows. Bows was

there, very calm, presiding at the old piano. Some tremendous comic

songs were sung, which made the room crack with laughter. How strange

they seemed to Pen! He could only see Bows. In an extinct volcano, such

as he boasted that his breast was, it was wonderful how he should feel

such a flame! Two days' indulgence had kindled it; two days' abstinence

had set it burning in fury. So, musing upon this, and drinking down one

glass after another, as ill luck would have it, Arthur's eyes lighted

upon Mr. Huxter, who had been to the theatre, like himself, and, with

two or three comrades, now entered the room. Huxter whispered to his

companions, greatly to Pen's annoyance. Arthur felt that the other was

talking about him. Huxter then worked through the room, followed by his

friends, and came and took a place opposite Pen, nodding familiarly to

him, and holding him out a dirty hand to shake.

Pen shook hands with his fellow-townsman. He thought he had been

needlessly savage to him on the last night when they had met. As for

Huxter, perfectly at good-humour with himself, and the world, it never

entered his mind that he could be disagreeable to anybody; and the

little dispute, or "chaff," as he styled it, of Vauxhall, was a trifle

which he did not in the least regard.

The disciple of Galen having called for "four stouts," with which he and

his party refreshed themselves, began to think what would be the most

amusing topic of conversation with Pen, and hit upon that precise one

which was most painful to our young gentleman.

"Jolly night at Vauxhall--wasn't it?" he said, and winked in a very

knowing way.

"I'm glad you liked it," poor Pen said, groaning in spirit.

"I was dev'lish cut--uncommon--been dining with some chaps at Greenwich.

That was a pretty bit of muslin hanging on your arm--who was she?" asked

the fascinating student.

The question was too much for Arthur. "Have I asked you any questions

about yourself, Mr. Huxter?" he said.

"I didn't mean any offence--beg pardon--hang it, you cut up quite

savage," said Pen's astonished interlocutor.

"Do you remember what took place between us the other night?" Pen asked,

with gathering wrath. "You forget? Very probably. You were tipsy, as you

observed just now, and very rude."

"Hang it, sir, I asked your pardon," Huxter said, looking red.

"You did certainly, and it was granted with all my heart. I am sure. But

if you recollect, I begged that you would have the goodness to omit me

from the list of your acquaintance for the future; and when we met in

public, that you would not take the trouble to recognise me. Will you

please to remember this, hereafter? and as the song is beginning, permit

me to leave you to the unrestrained enjoyment of the music."

He took his hat, and making a bow to the amazed Mr. Huxter left the

table, as Huxter's comrades, after a pause of wonder, set up such a roar

of laughter at Huxter, as called for the intervention of the president

of the room; who bawled out, "Silence, gentlemen; do have silence

for the Body Snatcher!" which popular song began as Pen left the

Back Kitchen. He flattered himself that he had commanded his temper

perfectly. He rather wished that Huxter had been pugnacious. He would

have liked to fight him or somebody. He went home. The day's work, the

dinner, the play, the whisky-and-water, the quarrel,--nothing soothed

him. He slept no better than on the previous night.

A few days afterwards, Mr. Sam Huxter wrote home a letter to Mr. Hobnell

in the country, of which Mr. Arthur Pendennis formed the principal

subject. Sam described Arthur's pursuits in London, and his confounded

insolence of behaviour to his old friends from home. He said he was an

abandoned criminal, a regular Don Juan, a fellow who, when he did come

into the country, ought to be kept out of honest people's houses. He had

seen him at Vauxhall, dancing with an innocent girl in the lower ranks

of life, of whom he was making a victim. He had found out from an Irish

gentleman (formerly in the army), who frequented a club of which he,

Huxter, was member, who the girl was, on whom this conceited humbug was

practising his infernal arts; and he thought he should warn her father,

etc. etc.,--the letter then touched on general news, conveyed the

writer's thanks for the last parcel and the rabbits, and hinted his

extreme readiness for further favours.

About once a year, as we have stated, there was occasion for a

christening at the Warren, and it happened that this ceremony took place

a day after Hobnell had received the letter of his brother-in-law in

town. The infant (a darling little girl) was christened Myra Lucretia,

after its two godmothers, Miss Portman and Mrs. Pybus of Clavering, and

as of course Hobnell had communicated Sam's letter to his wife, Mrs.

Hobnell imparted its horrid contents to her two gossips. A pretty story

it was, and prettily it was told throughout Clavering in the course of

that day.

Myra did not--she was too much shocked to do so--speak on the matter to

her mamma, but Mrs. Pybus had no such feelings of reserve. She talked

over the matter not only with Mrs. Portman, but with Mr. and the

Honourable Mrs. Simcoe, with Mrs. Glanders, her daughters being to that

end ordered out of the room, with Madame Fribsby, and, in a word, with

the whole of the Clavering society. Madame Fribsby looking furtively up

at her picture of the dragoon, and inwards into her own wounded memory,

said that men would be men, and as long as they were men would be

deceivers; and she pensively quoted some lines from Marmion, requesting

to know where deceiving lovers should rest? Mrs. Pybus had no words

of hatred, horror, contempt, strong enough for a villain who could be

capable of conduct so base. This was what came of early indulgence, and

insolence, and extravagance, and aristocratic airs (it is certain that

Pen had refused to drink tea with Mrs. Pybus), and attending the corrupt

and horrid parties in the dreadful modern Babylon! Mrs. Portman was

afraid that she must acknowledge that the mother's fatal partiality had

spoiled this boy, that his literary successes had turned his head, and

his horrid passions had made him forget the principles which Doctor

Portman had instilled into him in early life. Glanders, the atrocious

Captain of Dragoons, when informed of the occurrence by Mrs. Glanders,

whistled and made jocular allusions to it at dinner-time; on which Mrs.

Glanders called him a brute, and ordered the girls again out of the

room, as the horrid Captain burst out laughing. Mr. Simcoe was calm

under the intelligence; but rather pleased than otherwise; it only

served to confirm the opinion which he had always had of that wretched

young man: not that he knew anything about him--not that he had read one

line of his dangerous and poisonous works; Heaven forbid that he should:

but what could be expected from such a youth, and such frightful, such

lamentable, such deplorable want of seriousness? Pen formed the subject

for a second sermon at the Clavering chapel-of-ease: where the dangers

of London, and the crime of reading or writing novels, were pointed out

on a Sunday evening to a large and warm congregation. They did not

wait to hear whether he was guilty or not. They took his wickedness for

granted: and with these admirable moralists, it was who should fling the

stone at poor Pen.

The next day Mrs. Pendennis, alone and almost fainting with emotion and

fatigue, walked or rather ran to Dr. Portman's house to consult the good

Doctor. She had had an anonymous letter;--some Christian had thought

it his or her duty to stab the good soul who had never done mortal a

wrong--an anonymous letter with references to Scripture, pointing out

the doom of such sinners and a detailed account of Pen's crime. She was

in a state of terror and excitement pitiable to witness. Two or

three hours of this pain had aged her already. In her first moment

of agitation she had dropped the letter, and Laura had read it. Laura

blushed when she read it; her whole frame trembled, but it was with

anger. "The cowards," she said.--It isn't true.--No, mother, it isn't

true."

"It is true, and you've done it, Laura," cried out Helen fiercely. "Why

did you refuse him when he asked you? Why did you break my heart and

refuse him? It is you who led him into crime. It is you who flung him

into the arms of this--this woman.--Don't speak to me.--Don't answer me.

I will never forgive you, never. Martha, bring me my bonnet and shawl.

I'll go out. I won't have you come with me. Go away. Leave me, cruel

girl; why have you brought this shame on me?" And bidding her daughter

and her servants keep away from her, she ran down the road to Clavering.

Doctor Portman, glancing over the letter, thought he knew the

handwriting, and, of course, was already acquainted with the charge made

against poor Pen. Against his own conscience, perhaps (for the worthy

Doctor, like most of us, had a considerable natural aptitude for

receiving any report unfavourable to his neighbours), he strove to

console Helen; he pointed out that the slander came from an anonymous

quarter, and therefore must be the work of a rascal; that the charge

might not be true--was not true, most likely--at least, that Pen must

be heard before he was condemned; that the son of such a mother was not

likely to commit such a crime, etc. etc.

Helen at once saw through his feint of objection and denial. "You think

he has done it," she said,--"you know you think he has done it. Oh, why

did I ever leave him, Doctor Portman, or suffer him away from me? But

he can't be dishonest--pray God, not dishonest--you don't think that,

do you? Remember his conduct about that other--person--how madly he

was attached to her. He was an honest boy then--he is now. And I thank

God--yes, I fall down on my knees and thank God he paid Laura. You said

he was good--you did yourself. And now--if this woman loves him--and you

know they must--if he has taken her from her home, or she tempted him,

which is most likely--why still, she must be his wife and my daughter.

And he must leave the dreadful world and come back to me--to his mother,

Doctor Portman. Let us go away and bring him back--yes--bring him

back--and there shall be joy for the--the sinner that repenteth. Let us

go now, directly, dear friend--this very----"

Helen could say no more. She fell back and fainted. She was carried to

a bed in the house of the pitying Doctor, and the surgeon was called to

attend her. She lay all night in an alarming state. Laura came to

her, or to the rectory rather; for she would not see Laura. And Doctor

Portman, still beseeching her to be tranquil, and growing bolder and

more confident of Arthur's innocence as he witnessed the terrible grief

of the poor mother, wrote a letter to Pen warning him of the rumours

that were against him and earnestly praying that he would break off

and repent of a connexion so fatal to his best interests and his soul's

welfare.

And Laura?--was her heart not wrung by the thought of Arthur's crime and

Helen's estrangement? Was it not a bitter blow for the innocent girl to

think that at one stroke she should lose all the love which she cared

for in the world?

CHAPTER LII. Which had very nearly been the last of the Story

Doctor Portman's letter was sent off to its destination in London, and

the worthy clergyman endeavoured to soothe down Mrs. Pendennis into some

state of composure until an answer should arrive, which the Doctor tried

to think, or at any rate persisted in saying, would be satisfactory as

regarded the morality of Mr. Pen. At least Helen's wisdom of moving upon

London and appearing in person to warn her son of his wickedness, was

impracticable for a day or two. The apothecary forbade her moving

even so far as Fairoaks for the first day, and it was not until the

subsequent morning that she found herself again back on her sofa at

home, with the faithful, though silent, Laura nursing at her side.

Unluckily for himself and all parties, Pen never read that homily which

Doctor Portman addressed to him, until many weeks after the epistle had

been composed; and day after day the widow waited for her son's reply

to the charges against him; her own illness increasing with every day's

delay. It was a hard task for Laura to bear the anxiety; to witness

her dearest friend's suffering; worst of all, to support Helen's

estrangement, and the pain caused to her by that averted affection. But

it was the custom of this young lady to the utmost of her power, and by

means of that gracious assistance which Heaven awarded to her pure and

constant prayers, to do her duty. And; as that duty was performed

quite noiselessly,--while the supplications, which endowed her with

the requisite strength for fulfilling it, also took place in her own

chamber, away from all mortal sight,--we, too, must be perforce silent

about these virtues of hers, which no more bear public talking about,

than a flower will bear to bloom in a ballroom. This only we will

say--that a good woman is the loveliest flower that blooms under heaven;

and that we look with love and wonder upon its silent grace, its pure

fragrance, its delicate bloom of beauty. Sweet and beautiful!--the

fairest and the most spotless!--is it not pity to see them bowed down or

devoured by Grief or Death inexorable--wasting in disease--pining with

long pain--or cut off by sudden fate in their prime? We may deserve

grief--but why should these be unhappy?--except that we know that Heaven

chastens those whom it loves best; being pleased, by repeated trials, to

make these pure spirits more pure.

So Pen never got the letter, although it was duly posted and faithfully

discharged by the postman into his letter-box in Lamb Court, and thence

carried by the laundress to his writing-table with the rest of his

lordship's correspondence; into which room, have we not seen a picture

of him, entering from his little bedroom adjoining, as Mrs. Flanagan,

his laundress, was in the act of drinking his gin?

Those kind readers who have watched Mr. Arthur's career hitherto, and

have made, as they naturally would do, observations upon the moral

character and peculiarities of their acquaintance, have probably

discovered by this time what was the prevailing fault in Mr. Pen's

disposition, and who was that greatest enemy, artfully indicated in the

title-page, with whom he had to contend. Not a few of us, my beloved

public, have the very same rascal to contend with: a scoundrel who takes

every opportunity of bringing us into mischief, of plunging us into

quarrels, of leading us into idleness and unprofitable company, and what

not. In a word, Pen's greatest enemy was himself: and as he had been

pampering, and coaxing, and indulging that individual all his life,

the rogue grew insolent, as all spoiled servants will be; and at

the slightest attempt to coerce him, or make him do that which was

unpleasant to him, became frantically rude and unruly. A person who is

used to making sacrifices--Laura, for instance, who had got such a habit

of giving up her own pleasure for others--can do the business quite

easily; but Pen, unaccustomed as he was to any sort of self-denial,

suffered woundily when called on to pay his share, and savagely grumbled

at being obliged to forgo anything he liked.

He had resolved in his mighty mind then that he would not see Fanny; and

he wouldn't. He tried to drive the thoughts of that fascinating

little person out of his head, by constant occupation, by exercise, by

dissipation and society. He worked then too much; he walked and rode too

much; he ate, drank, and smoked too much: nor could all the cigars and

the punch of which he partook drive little Fanny's image out of

his inflamed brain, and at the end of a week of this discipline and

self-denial our young gentleman was in bed with a fever. Let the reader

who has never had a fever in chambers pity the wretch who is bound to

undergo that calamity.

A committee of marriageable ladies, or of any Christian persons

interested in the propagation of the domestic virtues, should employ a

Cruikshank or a Leech, or some other kindly expositor of the follies

of the day, to make a series of designs representing the horrors of a

bachelor's life in chambers, and leading the beholder to think of better

things, and a more wholesome condition. What can be more uncomfortable

than the bachelor's lonely breakfast?--with the black kettle in the

dreary fire in midsummer; or, worse still, with the fire gone out

at Christmas, half an hour after the laundress has quitted the

sitting-room? Into this solitude the owner enters shivering, and has to

commence his day by hunting for coals and wood; and before he begins the

work of a student, has to discharge the duties of a housemaid, vice Mrs.

Flanagan, who is absent without leave. Or, again, what can form a finer

subject for the classical designer than the bachelor's shirt--that

garment which he wants to assume just at dinner-time, and which he finds

without any buttons to fasten it? Then there is the bachelor's return

to chambers, after a merry Christmas holiday, spent in a cosy

country-house, full of pretty faces, and kind welcomes and regrets.

He leaves his portmanteau at the barber's in the Court: he lights his

dismal old candle at the sputtering little lamp on the stair: he enters

the blank familiar room, where the only tokens to greet him, that show

any interest in his personal welfare, are the Christmas bills, which are

lying in wait for him, amiably spread out on his reading-table. Add to

these scenes an appalling picture of bachelor's illness, and the rents

in the Temple will begin to fall from the day of the publication of the

dismal diorama. To be well in chambers is melancholy, and lonely and

selfish enough; but to be ill in chambers--to pass long nights of pain

and watchfulness--to long for the morning and the laundress--to serve

yourself your own medicine by your own watch--to have no other companion

for long hours but your own sickening fancies and fevered thoughts: no

kind hand to give you drink if you are thirsty, or to smooth the hot

pillow that crumples under you,--this, indeed, is a fate so dismal

and tragic, that we shall not enlarge upon its horrors, and shall only

heartily pity those bachelors in the Temple, who brave it every day.

This lot befell Arthur Pendennis after the various excesses which we

have mentioned, and to which he had subjected his unfortunate brains.

One night he went to bed ill, and the next day awoke worse. His only

visitor that day, besides the laundress, was the Printer's Devil, from

the Pall Mall Gazette office, whom the writer endeavoured, as best he

could, to satisfy. His exertions to complete his work rendered his fever

the greater: he could only furnish a part of the quantity of "copy"

usually supplied by him; and Shandon being absent, and Warrington not

in London to give a help, the political and editorial columns of the

Gazette looked very blank indeed; nor did the sub-editor know how to

fill them.

Mr. Finucane rushed up to Pen's chambers, and found that gentleman so

exceedingly unwell, that the good-natured Irishman set to work to supply

his place, if possible, and produced a series of political and critical

compositions, such as no doubt greatly edified the readers of the

periodical in which he and Pen were concerned. Allusions to the

greatness of Ireland, and the genius and virtue of the inhabitants of

that injured country, flowed magnificently from Finucane's pen; and

Shandon, the Chief of the paper, who was enjoying himself placidly at

Boulogne-sur-Mer, looking over the columns of the journal, which was

forwarded to him, instantly recognised the hand of the great Sub-editor,

and said, laughing, as he flung over the paper to his wife, "Look here,

Mary, my dear, here is Jack at work again." Indeed, Jack was a warm

friend, and a gallant partisan, and when he had the pen in hand, seldom

let slip an opportunity of letting the world know that Rafferty was the

greatest painter in Europe, and wondering at the petty jealousy of

the Academy, which refused to make him an R.A.: of stating that it was

generally reported at the West End, that Mr. Rooney, M.P., was appointed

Governor of Barataria; or of introducing into the subject in hand,

whatever it might be, a compliment to the Round Towers, or the Giant's

Causeway. And besides doing Pen's work for him, to the best of his

ability, his kind-hearted comrade offered to forgo his Saturday's

and Sunday's holiday, and pass those days of holiday and rest as

nurse-tender to Arthur, who, however, insisted, that the other should

not forgo his pleasure, and thankfully assured him that he could bear

best his malady alone.

Taking his supper at the Back Kitchen on the Friday night, after having

achieved the work of the paper, Finucane informed Captain Costigan of

the illness of their young friend in the Temple; and remembering the

fact two days afterwards, the Captain went to Lamb Court and paid a

visit to the invalid on Sunday afternoon.

He found Mrs. Flanagan, the laundress, in tears in the sitting-room,

and got a bad report of the poor dear young gentleman within. Pen's

condition had so much alarmed her, that she was obliged to have recourse

to the stimulus of brandy to enable her to support the grief which

his illness occasioned. As she hung about his bed, and endeavoured to

minister to him, her attentions became intolerable to the invalid, and

he begged her peevishly not to come near him. Hence the laundress's

tears and redoubled grief, and renewed application to the bottle, which

she was accustomed to use as an anodyne. The Captain rated the

woman soundly for her intemperance, and pointed out to her the fatal

consequences which must ensue if she persisted in her imprudent courses.

Pen, who was by this time in a very fevered state, yet was greatly

pleased to receive Costigan's visit. He heard the ell-known voice in his

sitting-room, as he lay in the bedroom within, and called the Captain

eagerly to him, and thanked him for coming, and begged him to take a

chair and talk to him. The Captain felt the young man's pulse with

great gravity--(his own tremulous and clammy hand growing steady for the

instant while his finger pressed Arthur's throbbing vein)--the pulse

was beating very fiercely--Pen's face was haggard and hot--his eyes were

bloodshot and gloomy; his "bird," as the Captain pronounced the word,

afterwards giving a description of his condition, had not been shaved

for nearly a week. Pen made his visitor sit down, and, tossing and

turning in his comfortless bed, began to try and talk to the Captain in

a lively manner, about the Back Kitchen, about Vauxhall and when they

should go again, and about Fanny--how was little Fanny?

Indeed how was she? We know how she went home very sadly on the

previous Sunday evening, after she had seen Arthur light his lamp in his

chambers, whilst he was having his interview with Bows. Bows came back

to his own rooms presently, passing by the lodge door, and looking into

Mrs. Bolton's, according to his wont, as he passed, but with a

very melancholy face. She had another weary night that night. Her

restlessness wakened her little bedfellows more than once. She daren't

read more of 'Walter Lorraine:' Father was at home, and would suffer no

light. She kept the book under her pillow, and felt for it in the night.

She had only just got to sleep, when the children began to stir with the

morning, almost as early as the birds. Though she was very angry with

Bows, she went to his room at her accustomed hour in the day, and there

the good-hearted musician began to talk to her.

"I saw Mr. Pendennis last night, Fanny," he said.

"Did you? I thought you did," Fanny answered, looking fiercely at the

melancholy old gentleman.

"I've been fond of you ever since we came to live in this place," he

continued. "You were a child when I came; and you used to like me,

Fanny, until three or four days ago: until you saw this gentleman."

"And now, I suppose, you are going to say ill of him," said Fanny. "Do,

Mr. Bows--that will make me like you better."

"Indeed I shall do no such thing," Bows answered; "I think he is a very

good and honest young man."

"Indeed! you know that if you said a word against him, I would never

speak a word to you again--never!" cried Miss Fanny; and clenched her

little hand, and paced up and down the room. Bows noted, watched, and

followed the ardent little creature with admiration and gloomy sympathy.

Her cheeks flushed, her frame trembled; her eyes beamed love, anger,

defiance. "You would like to speak ill of him," she said; "but you

daren't--you know you daren't!"

"I knew him many years since," Bows continued, "when he was almost as

young as you are, and he had a romantic attachment for our friend the

Captain's daughter--Lady Mirabel that is now."

Fanny laughed. "I suppose there was other people, too, that had romantic

attachments for Miss Costigan," she said: "I don't want to hear about

'em."

"He wanted to marry her; but their ages were quite disproportionate: and

their rank in life. She would not have him because he had no money.

She acted very wisely in refusing him; for the two would have been very

unhappy, and she wasn't a fit person to go and live with his family, or

to make his home comfortable. Mr. Pendennis has his way to make in the

world, and must marry a lady of his own rank. A woman who loves a man

will not ruin his prospects, cause him to quarrel with his family, and

lead him into poverty and misery for her gratification. An honest girl

won't do that, for her own sake, or for the man's."

Fanny's emotion, which but now had been that of defiance and anger,

here turned to dismay and supplication. "What do I know about marrying,

Bows?" she said. "When was there any talk of it? What has there been

between this young gentleman and me that's to make people speak so

cruel? It was not my doing; nor Arthur's--Mr. Pendennis's--that I met

him at Vauxhall. It was the Captain took me and Ma there. We never

thought of nothing wrong, I'm sure. He came and rescued us, and he was

so very kind. Then he came to call and ask after us: and very, very good

it was of a such grand gentleman to be so polite to humble folks like

us! And yesterday Ma and me just went to walk in the Temple Gardens,

and--and"--here she broke out with that usual, unanswerable female

argument of tears--and cried, "Oh! I wish I was dead! I wish I was laid

in my grave; and had never, never seen him!"

"He said as much himself, Fanny," Bows said; and Fanny asked through her

sobs, Why, why should he wish he had never seen her? Had she ever

done him any harm? Oh, she would perish rather than do him any harm.

Whereupon the musician informed her of the conversation of the day

previous, showed her that Pen could not and must not think of her as a

wife fitting for him, and that she, as she valued her honest reputation,

must strive too to forget him. And Fanny, leaving the musician,

convinced, but still of the same mind, and promising that she would

avoid the danger which menaced her, went back to the porter's lodge, and

told her mother all. She talked of her love for Arthur, and bewailed, in

her artless manner, the inequality of their condition, that set barriers

between them. "There's the 'Lady of Lyons,'" Fanny said; "Oh, Ma! how

I did love Mr. Macready when I saw him do it; and Pauline, for being

faithful to poor Claude, and always thinking of him; and he coming back

to her, an officer, through all his dangers! And if everybody admires

Pauline--and I'm sure everybody does, for being so true to a poor

man--why should a gentleman be ashamed of loving a poor girl? Not that

Mr. Arthur loves me--Oh no, no! I ain't worthy of him; only a princess

is worthy of such a gentleman as him. Such a poet!--writing so

beautifully, and looking so grand! I am sure he's a nobleman, and of

ancient family, and kep' out of his estate. Perhaps his uncle has it.

Ah, if I might, oh, how I'd serve him, and work for him, and slave for

him, that I would. I wouldn't ask for more than that, Ma, just to be

allowed to see him of a morning; and sometimes he'd say 'How d'you,

Fanny?' or 'God bless you, Fanny!' as he said on Sunday. And I'd work,

and work; and I'd sit up all night, and read, and learn, and make myself

worthy of him. The Captain says his mother lives in the country, and is

a grand lady there. Oh, how I wish I might go and be her servant, Ma!

I can do plenty of things, and work very neat; and--and sometimes he'd

come home, and I should see him!"

The girl's head fell on her mother's shoulder, as she spoke, and she

gave way to a plentiful outpouring of girlish tears, to which the

matron, of course, joined her own. "You mustn't think no more of him,

Fanny," she said. "If he don't come to you, he's a horrid, wicked man."

"Don't call him so, Mother," Fanny replied. "He's the best of men, the

best and the kindest. Bows says he thinks he is unhappy at leaving poor

little Fanny. It wasn't his fault, was it, that we met?--and it ain't

his that I mustn't see him again. He says I mustn't--and I mustn't,

Mother. He'll forget me, but I shall never forget him. No! I'll pray

for him, and love him always--until I die--and I shall die, I know I

shall--and then my spirit will always go and be with him."

"You forget your poor mother, Fanny, and you'll break my heart by goin

on so," Mrs. Bolton said. "Perhaps you will see him. I'm sure you'll see

him. I'm sure he'll come to-day. If ever I saw a man in love, that man

is him. When Emily Budd's young man first came about her, he was

sent away by old Budd, a most respectable man, and violoncello in the

orchestra at the Wells; and his own family wouldn't hear of it neither.

But he came back. We all knew he would. Emily always said so; and he

married her; and this one will come back too; and you mark a mother's

words, and see if he don't, dear."

At this point of the conversation Mr. Bolton entered the lodge for his

evening meal. At the father's appearance, the talk between mother and

daughter ceased instantly. Mrs. Bolton caressed and cajoled the surly

undertaker's aide-de-camp, and said, "Lor, Mr. B. who'd have thought to

see you away from the Club of a Saturday night. Fanny, dear, get your pa

some supper. What will you have, B.? The poor gurl's got a gathering

in her eye, or somethink in it--I was lookin at it just now as you came

in." And she squeezed her daughter's hand as a signal of prudence and

secrecy; and Fanny's tears were dried up likewise; and by that wondrous

hypocrisy and power of disguise which women practise, and with which

weapons of defence nature endows them, the traces of her emotion

disappeared; and she went and took her work, and sate in the corner so

demure and quiet, that the careless male parent never suspected that

anything ailed her.

Thus, as if fate seemed determined to inflame and increase the poor

child's malady and passion, all circumstances and all parties round

about her urged it on. Her mother encouraged and applauded it; and the

very words which Bows used in endeavouring to repress her flame only

augmented this unlucky fever. Pen was not wicked and a seducer: Pen was

high-minded in wishing to avoid her. Pen loved her: the good and the

great, the magnificent youth, with the chains of gold and the scented

auburn hair! And so he did: or so he would have loved her five years

back perhaps, before the world had hardened the ardent and reckless

boy--before he was ashamed of a foolish and imprudent passion, and

strangled it as poor women do their illicit children, not on account of

the crime, but of the shame, and from dread that the finger of the world

should point to them.

What respectable person in the world will not say he was quite right

to avoid a marriage with an ill-educated person of low degree, whose

relations a gentleman could not well acknowledge, and whose manners

would not become her new station?--and what philosopher would not tell

him that the best thing to do with these little passions if they spring

up, is to get rid of them, and let them pass over and cure them: that no

man dies about a woman or vice versa: and that one or the other

having found the impossibility of gratifying his or her desire in the

particular instance, must make the best of matters, forget each other,

look out elsewhere, and choose again? And yet, perhaps, there may be

something said on the other side. Perhaps Bows was right in admiring

that passion of Pen's, blind and unreasoning as it was, that made him

ready to stake his all for his love; perhaps if self-sacrifice is a

laudable virtue, mere worldly self-sacrifice is not very much to be

praised;--in fine, let this be a reserved point to be settled by the

individual moralist who chooses to debate it.

So much is certain, that with the experience of the world which Mr. Pen

now had, he would have laughed at and scouted the idea of marrying a

penniless girl out of a kitchen. And this point being fixed in his mind,

he was but doing his duty as an honest man, in crushing any unlucky

fondness which he might feel towards poor little Fanny.

So she waited and waited in hopes that Arthur would come. She waited for

a whole week, and it was at the end of that time that the poor little

creature heard from Costigan of the illness under which Arthur was

suffering.

It chanced on that very evening after Costigan had visited Pen, that

Arthur's uncle the excellent Major arrived in town from Buxton, where

his health had been mended, and sent his valet Morgan to make inquiries

for Arthur, and to request that gentleman to breakfast with the Major

the next morning. The Major was merely passing through London on his way

to the Marquis of Steyne's house of Stillbrook, where he was engaged to

shoot partridges.

Morgan came back to his master with a very long face. He had seen Mr.

Arthur; Mr. Arthur was very bad indeed; Mr. Arthur was in bed with a

fever. A doctor ought to be sent to him; and Morgan thought his case

most alarming.

Gracious goodness! this was sad news indeed. He had hoped that Arthur

could come down to Stillbrook: he had arranged that he should go, and

procured an invitation for his nephew from Lord Steyne. He must

go himself; he couldn't throw Lord Steyne over: the fever might be

catching: it might be measles: he had never himself had the measles;

they were dangerous when contracted at his age. Was anybody with Mr.

Arthur?

Morgan said there was somebody a-nussing of Mr. Arthur.

The Major then asked, had his nephew taken any advice? Morgan said he

had asked that question, and had been told that Mr. Pendennis had had no

doctor.

Morgan's master was sincerely vexed at hearing of Arthur's calamity. He

would have gone to him, but what good could it do Arthur that he, the

Major, should catch a fever? His own ailments rendered it absolutely

impossible that he should attend to anybody but himself. But the young

man must have advice--the best advice; and Morgan was straightway

despatched with a note from Major Pendennis to his friend Doctor

Goodenough, who by good luck happened to be in London and at home, and

who quitted his dinner instantly, and whose carriage was in half an hour

in Upper Temple Lane, near Pen's chambers.

The Major had asked the kind-hearted physician to bring him news of his

nephew at the Club where he himself was dining, and in the course of the

night the Doctor made his appearance. The affair was very serious: the

patient was in a high fever: he had had Pen bled instantly: and would

see him the first thing in the morning. The Major went disconsolate

to bed with this unfortunate news. When Goodenough came to see him

according to his promise the next day, the Doctor had to listen for a

quarter of an hour to an account of the Major's own maladies, before the

latter had leisure to hear about Arthur.

He had had a very bad night--his--his nurse said: at one hour he had

been delirious. It might end badly: his mother had better be sent for

immediately. The Major wrote the letter to Mrs. Pendennis with

the greatest alacrity, and at the same time with the most polite

precautions. As for going himself to the lad, in his state it was

impossible. "Could I be of any use to him, my dear Doctor?" he asked.

The Doctor, with a peculiar laugh, said, No: he didn't think the Major

could be of any use: that his own precious health required the most

delicate treatment, and that he had best go into the country and stay:

that he himself would take care to see the patient twice a day, and do

all in his power for him.

The Major declared upon his honour, that if he could be of any use he

would rush to Pen's chambers. As it was, Morgan should go and see that

everything was right. The Doctor must write to him by every post to

Stillbrook: it was but forty miles distant from London, and if anything

happened he would come up at any sacrifice.

Major Pendennis transacted his benevolence by deputy and by post. "What

else could he do," as he said? "Gad, you know, in these cases, it's best

not disturbing a fellow. If a poor fellow goes to the bad, why, Gad, you

know he's disposed of. But in order to get well (and in this, my dear

Doctor, I'm sure that you will agree with me), the best way is to keep

him quiet--perfectly quiet."

Thus it was the old gentleman tried to satisfy his conscience and he

went his way that day to Stillbrook by railway (for railways have

sprung up in the course of this narrative, though they have not quite

penetrated into Pen's country yet), and made his appearance in his usual

trim order and curly wig, at the dinner-table of the Marquis of Steyne.

But we must do the Major the justice to say, that he was very unhappy

and gloomy in demeanour. Wagg and Wenham rallied him about his low

spirits; asked whether he was crossed in love? and otherwise diverted

themselves at his expense. He lost his money at whist after dinner, and

actually trumped his partner's highest spade. And the thoughts of the

suffering boy, of whom he was proud, and whom he loved after his manner,

kept the old fellow awake half through the night, and made him feverish

and uneasy.

On the morrow he received a note in a handwriting which he did not know:

it was that of Mr. Bows, indeed, saying that Mr. Arthur Pendennis had

had a tolerable night; and that as Dr. Goodenough had stated that the

Major desired to be informed of his nephew's health, he, R. B., had sent

him the news per rail.

The next day he was going out shooting, about noon, with some of the

gentlemen staying at Lord Steyne's house; and the company, waiting for

the carriages, were assembled on the terrace in front of the house, when

a fly drove up from the neighbouring station, and a grey-headed, rather

shabby old gentleman jumped out, and asked for Major Pendennis. It

was Mr. Bows. He took the Major aside and spoke to him; most of the

gentlemen round about saw that something serious had happened, from the

alarmed look of the Major's face.

Wagg said, "It's a bailiff come down to nab the Major," but nobody

laughed at the pleasantry.

"Hullo! What's the matter, Pendennis?" cried Lord Steyne, with his

strident voice;--"anything wrong?"

"It's--it's--my boy that's dead," said the Major, and burst into a

sob--the old man was quite overcome.

"Not dead, my Lord; but very ill when I left London," Mr. Bows said, in

a low voice.

A britzka came up at this moment as the three men were speaking.

The Peer looked at his watch. "You've twenty minutes to catch the

mail-train. Jump in, Pendennis; and drive like h---, sir, do you hear?"

The carriage drove off swiftly with Pendennis and his companions, and

let us trust that the oath will be pardoned to the Marquis of Steyne.

The Major drove rapidly from the station to the Temple, and found a

travelling carriage already before him, and blocking up the narrow

Temple Lane. Two ladies got out of it, and were asking their way of the

porters; the Major looked by chance at the panel of the carriage, and

saw the worn-out crest of the Eagle looking at the Sun, and the motto,

"Nec tenui penna," painted beneath. It was his brother's old carriage,

built many, many years ago. It was Helen and Laura that were asking

their way to Pen's room.

He ran up to them; hastily clasped his sister's arm and kissed her

hand; and the three entered into Lamb Court, and mounted the long gloomy

stair.

They knocked very gently at the door, on which Arthur's name was

written, and it was opened by Fanny Bolton.

CHAPTER LIII. A critical Chapter

As Fanny saw the two ladies and the anxious countenance of the eider,

who regarded her with a look of inscrutable alarm and terror, the

poor girl at once knew that Pen's mother was before her; there was a

resemblance between the widow's haggard eyes and Arthur's as he tossed

in his bed in fever. Fanny looked wistfully at Mrs. Pendennis and at

Laura afterwards; there was no more expression in the latter's face than

if it had been a mass of stone. Hard-heartedness and gloom dwelt on the

figures of both the new-comers; neither showed any the faintest gleam

of mercy or sympathy for Fanny. She looked desperately from them to the

Major behind them. Old Pendennis dropped his eyelids, looking up ever so

stealthily from under them at Arthur's poor little nurse.

"I--I wrote to you yesterday, if you please, ma'am," Fanny said,

trembling in every limb as she spoke; and as pale as Laura, whose sad

menacing face looked over Mrs. Pendennis's shoulder.

"Did you, madam?" Mrs. Pendennis said. "I suppose I may now relieve you

from nursing my son. I am his mother, you understand."

"Yes, ma'am. I--this is the way to his--Oh, wait a minute," cried out

Fanny. "I must prepare you for his----"

The widow, whose face had been hopelessly cruel and ruthless, here

started back with a gasp and a little cry, which she speedily stifled.

"He's been so since yesterday," Fanny said, trembling very much, and

with chattering teeth.

A horrid shriek of laughter came out of Pen's room, whereof the door was

open; and, after several shouts, the poor wretch began to sing a college

drinking-song, and then to hurray and to shout as if he was in the midst

of a wine-party, and to thump with his fist against the wainscot. He was

quite delirious.

"He does not know me, ma'am," Fanny said.

"Indeed. Perhaps he will know his mother; let me pass, if you please,

and go in to him." And the widow hastily pushed by little Fanny, and

through the dark passage which led into Pen's sitting-room. Laura sailed

by Fanny, too, without a word; and Major Pendennis followed them. Fanny

sat down on a bench in the passage, and cried, and prayed as well as she

could. She would have died for him; and they hated her. They had not a

word of thanks or kindness for her, the fine ladies. She sate there in

the passage, she did not know how long. They never came out to speak to

her. She sate there until Doctor Goodenough came to pay his second visit

that day; he found the poor little thing at the door.

"What, nurse? How's your patient?" asked the good-natured Doctor. "Has

he had any rest?"

"Go and ask them. They're inside," Fanny answered.

"Who? his mother?"

Fanny nodded her head and didn't speak.

"You must go to bed yourself, my poor little maid," said the Doctor.

"You will be ill, too, if you don't."

"Oh, mayn't I come and see him: mayn't I come and see him! I--I--love

him so," the little girl said; and as she spoke she fell down on her

knees and clasped hold of the Doctor's hand in such an agony that to see

her melted the kind physician's heart, and caused a mist to come over

his spectacles.

"Pooh, pooh! Nonsense! Nurse, has he taken his draught? Has he had any

rest? Of course you must come and see him. So must I."

"They'll let me sit here, won't they, sir? I'll never make no noise.

I only ask to stop here," Fanny said. On which the Doctor called her a

stupid little thing; put her down upon the bench where Pen's printer's

devil used to sit so many hours; tapped her pale cheek with his finger,

and bustled into the farther room.

Mrs. Pendennis was ensconced pale and solemn in a great chair by Pen's

bedside. Her watch was on the bed-table by Pen's medicines. Her bonnet

and cloaks were laid in the window. She had her Bible in her lap,

without which she never travelled. Her first movement, after seeing

her son, had been to take Fanny's shawl and bonnet which were on his

drawers, and bring them out and drop them down upon his study-table.

She had closed the door upon Major Pendennis, and Laura too; and taken

possession of her son.

She had had a great doubt and terror lest Arthur should not know her;

but that pang was spared to her in part at least. Pen knew his mother

quite well, and familiarly smiled and nodded at her. When she came in,

he instantly fancied that they were at home at Fairoaks; and began to

talk and chatter and laugh in a rambling wild way. Laura could hear him

outside. His laughter shot shafts of poison into her heart. It was true,

then. He had been guilty--and with that creature!--an intrigue with a

servant-maid, and she had loved him--and he was dying most likely raving

and unrepentant. The Major now and then hummed out a word of remark or

consolation, which Laura scarce heard.

A dismal sitting it was for all parties; and when Goodenough appeared,

he came like an angel into the room.

It is not only for the sick man, it is for the sick man's friends that

the Doctor comes. His presence is often as good for them as for the

patient, and they long for him yet more eagerly. How we have all watched

after him! what an emotion the thrill of his carriage-wheels in the

street, and at length at the door, has made us feel! how we hang upon

his words, and what a comfort we get from a smile or two, if he can

vouchsafe that sunshine to lighten our darkness! Who hasn't seen the

mother prying into his face, to know if there is hope for the sick

infant that cannot speak, and that lies yonder, its little frame

battling with fever? Ah how she looks into his eyes! What thanks if

there is light there; what grief and pain if he casts them down, and

dares not say "hope!" Or it is the house-father who is stricken. The

terrified wife looks on, while the Physician feels his patient's wrist,

smothering her agonies, as the children have been called upon to stay

their plays and their talk. Over the patient in the fever, the wife

expectant, the children unconscious, the Doctor stands as if he were

Fate, the dispenser of life and death: he must let the patient off this

time: the woman prays so for his respite! One can fancy how awful the

responsibility must be to a conscientious man: how cruel the feeling

that he has given the wrong remedy, or that it might have been possible

to do better: how harassing the sympathy with survivors, if the case is

unfortunate--how immense the delight of victory!

Having passed through a hasty ceremony of introduction to the

new-comers, of whose arrival he had been made aware by the heartbroken

little nurse in waiting without, the Doctor proceeded to examine the

patient, about whose condition of high fever there could be no

mistake, and on whom he thought it necessary to exercise the strongest

antiphlogistic remedies in his power. He consoled the unfortunate mother

as best he might; and giving her the most comfortable assurances on

which he could venture, that there was no reason to despair yet, that

everything might still be hoped from his youth, the strength of his

constitution, and so forth; and having done his utmost to allay the

horrors of the alarmed matron, he took the elder Pendennis aside into

the vacant room (Warrington's bedroom), for the purpose of holding a

little consultation.

The case was very critical. The fever, if not stopped, might and would

carry off the young fellow: he must be bled forthwith: the mother must

be informed of this necessity. Why was that other young lady brought

with her? She was out of place in a sick-room.

"And there was another woman still, be hanged to it!" the Major said,

"the--the little person who opened the door." His sister-in-law had

brought the poor little devil's bonnet and shawl out, flung them upon

the study-table. Did Goodenough know anything about the--the little

person? "I just caught a glimpse of her as we passed in," the Major

said, "and begad she was uncommonly nice-looking." The Doctor looked

queer: the Doctor smiled--in the very gravest moments, with life and

death pending, such strange contrasts and occasions of humour will

arise, and such smiles will pass, to satirise the gloom, as it were, and

to make it more gloomy!

"I have it," at last he said, re-entering the study; and he wrote a

couple of notes hastily at the table there, and sealed one of them.

Then, taking up poor Fanny's shawl and bonnet, and the notes, he went

out in the passage to that poor little messenger, and said, "Quick,

nurse; you must carry this to the surgeon, and bid him come instantly;

and then go to my house, and ask for my servant Harbottle, and tell him

to get this prescription prepared, and wait until I--until it is ready.

It may take a little in preparation."

So poor Fanny trudged away with her two notes, and found the apothecary,

who lived in the Strand hard by, and who came straightway, his lancet

in his pocket, to operate on his patient; and then Fanny made for the

Doctor's house, in Hanover Square.

The Doctor was at home again before the prescription was made up, which

took Harbottle, his servant, such a long time in compounding; and,

during the remainder of Arthur's illness, poor Fanny never made her

appearance in the quality of nurse at his chambers any more. But for

that day and the next, a little figure might be seen lurking about

Pen's staircase,--a sad, sad little face looked at and interrogated the

apothecary, and the apothecary's boy, and the laundress, and the kind

physician himself, as they passed out of the chambers of the sick man.

And on the third day, the kind Doctor's chariot stopped at Shepherd's

Inn, and the good, and honest, and benevolent man went into the porter's

lodge, and tended a little patient whom he had there, for the best

remedy he found was on the day when he was enabled to tell Fanny Bolton

that the crisis was over, and that there was at length every hope for

Arthur Pendennis.

J. Costigan, Esquire, late of Her Majesty's service, saw the Doctor's

carriage, and criticised its horses and appointments. "Green liveries,

bedad!" the General said, "and as foin a pair of high-stepping bee

horses as ever a gentleman need sit behoind, let alone a docthor.

There's no ind to the proide and ar'gance of them docthors,

nowadays--not but that is a good one, and a scoientific cyarkter, and

a roight good fellow, bedad; and he's brought the poor little girl well

troo her faver, Bows, me boy;" and so pleased was Mr. Costigan with the

Doctor's behaviour and skill, that, whenever he met Dr. Goodenough's

carriage in future, he made a point of saluting it and the physician

inside, in as courteous and magnificent a manner, as if Dr. Goodenough

had been the Lord Liftenant himself, and Captain Costigan had been in

his glory in Phaynix Park.

The widow's gratitude to the physician knew no bounds--or scarcely any

bounds, at least. The kind gentleman laughed at the idea of taking a

fee from a literary man, or the widow of a brother practitioner; and she

determined when she got to Fairoaks that she would send Goodenough the

silver-gilt vase, the jewel of the house, and the glory of the late John

Pendennis, preserved in green baize, and presented to him at Bath, by

the Lady Elizabeth Firebrace, on the recovery of her son, the late Sir

Anthony Firebrace, from the scarlet fever. Hippocrates, Hygeia, King

Bladud, and a wreath of serpents surmount the cup to this day; which was

executed in their finest manner by Messrs. Abednego, of Milsom Street;

and the inscription was by Mr. Birch, tutor to the young baronet.

This priceless gem of art the widow determined to devote to Goodenough,

the preserver of her son; and there was scarcely any other favour which

her gratitude would not have conferred upon him, except one, which he

desired most, and which was that she should think a little charitably

and kindly of poor Fanny, of whose artless, sad story he had got

something during his interviews with her, and of whom he was induced to

think very kindly,--not being disposed, indeed, to give much credit to

Pen for his conduct in the affair, or not knowing what that conduct

had been. He knew enough, however, to be aware that the poor infatuated

little girl was without stain as yet; that while she had been in Pen's

room it was to see the last of him, as she thought, and that Arthur was

scarcely aware of her presence; and that she suffered under the deepest

and most pitiful grief, at the idea of losing him, dead or living.

But on the one or two occasions when Goodenough alluded to Fanny, the

widow's countenance, always soft and gentle, assumed an expression so

cruel and inexorable, that the Doctor saw it was in vain to ask her for

justice or pity, and he broke off all entreaties, and ceased making

any further allusions regarding his little client. There is a complaint

which neither poppy, nor mandragora, nor all the drowsy syrups of

the East could allay, in the men in his time, as we are informed by

a popular poet of the days of Elizabeth; and which, when exhibited

in women, no medical discoveries or practice subsequent--neither

homoeopathy, nor hydropathy, nor mesmerism, nor Dr. Simpson, nor Dr.

Locock can cure, and that is--we won't call it jealousy, but rather

gently denominate rivalry and emulation in ladies.

Some of those mischievous and prosaic people who carp and calculate at

every detail of the romancer, and want to know, for instance, how, when

the characters in the 'Critic' are at a dead lock with their daggers

at each other's throats, they are to be got out of that murderous

complication of circumstances, may be induced to ask how it was possible

in a set of chambers in the Temple, consisting of three rooms, two

cupboards, a passage, and a coal-box, Arthur a sick gentleman, Helen his

mother, Laura her adopted daughter, Martha their country attendant, Mrs.

Wheezer a nurse from St. Bartholomew's Hospital, Mrs. Flanagan an Irish

laundress, Major Pendennis a retired military officer, Morgan his

valet, Pidgeon Mr. Arthur Pendennis's boy, and others could be

accommodated--the answer is given at once, that almost everybody in the

Temple was out of town, and that there was scarcely a single occupant

of Pen's house in Lamb Court except those who were occupied round the

sick-bed of the sick gentleman, about whose fever we have not given a

lengthy account, neither enlarge we very much upon the more cheerful

theme of his recovery.

Everybody we have said was out of town, and of course such a fashionable

man as young Mr. Sibwright, who occupied chambers on the second floor

in Pen's staircase, could not be supposed to remain in London. Mrs.

Flanagan, Mr. Pendennis's laundress was acquainted with Mrs. Rouncy who

did for Mr. Sibwright; and that gentleman's bedroom was got ready for

Miss Bell, or Mrs. Pendennis, when the latter should be inclined

to leave her son's sick-room, to try and seek for a little rest for

herself.

If that young buck and flower of Baker Street, Percy Sibwright, could

have known who was the occupant of his bedroom, how proud he would have

been of that apartment:--what poems he would have written about Laura!

(several of his things have appeared in the annuals, and in manuscript

in the nobility's albums)--he was a Camford man and very nearly got the

English Prize Poem, it was said--Sibwright, however, was absent and his

bed given up to Miss Bell. It was the prettiest little brass bed in the

world, with chintz curtains lined with pink--he had a mignonette-box in

his bedroom window, and the mere sight of his little exhibition of shiny

boots, arranged in trim rows over his wardrobe, was a gratification to

the beholder. He had a museum of scent, pomatum, and bear's-grease pots,

quite curious to examine, too; and a choice selection of portraits

of females, almost always in sadness and generally in disguise or

deshabille, glittered round the neat walls of his elegant little bower

of repose. Medora with dishevelled hair was consoling herself over her

banjo for the absence of her Conrad--the Princesse Fleur de Marie (of

Rudolstein and the Mysteres de Paris) was sadly ogling out of the bars

of her convent cage, in which, poor prisoned bird, she was moulting

away,--Dorothea of Don Quixote was washing her eternal feet:--in fine,

it was such an elegant gallery as became a gallant lover of the sex.

And in Sibwright's sitting-room, while there was quite an infantine

law library clad in skins of fresh new-born calf, there was a tolerably

large collection of classical books which he could not read, and of

English and French works of poetry and fiction which he read a great

deal too much. His invitation cards of the past season still decorated

his looking-glass: and scarce anything told of the lawyer but the

wig-box beside the Venus upon the middle shelf of the bookcase, on which

the name of P. Sibwright, Esquire, was gilded.

With Sibwright in chambers was Mr. Bangham. Mr. Bangham was a sporting

man married to a rich widow. Mr. Bangham had no practice--did not

come to chambers thrice in a term: went a circuit for those mysterious

reasons which make men go circuit,--and his room served as a great

convenience to Sibwright when that young gentleman gave his little

dinners. It must be confessed that these two gentlemen have nothing

to do with our history, will never appear in it again probably, but we

cannot help glancing through their doors as they happen to be open to

us, and as we pass to Pen's rooms; as in the pursuit of our own business

in life through the Strand, at the Club, nay at church itself, we cannot

help peeping at the shops on the way, or at our neighbour's dinner, or

at the faces under the bonnets in the next pew.

Very many years after the circumstances about which we are at present

occupied, Laura, with a blush and a laugh showing much humour, owned

to having read a French novel once much in vogue, and when her husband

asked her, wondering where on earth she could have got such a volume,

she owned that it was in the Temple, when she lived in Mr. Percy

Sibwright's chambers.

"And, also, I never confessed," she said, "on that same occasion, what

I must now own to: that I opened the japanned box, and took out that

strange-looking wig inside it, and put it on and looked at myself in the

glass in it."

Suppose Percy Sibwright had come in at such a moment as that? What

would he have said,--the enraptured rogue? What would have been all the

pictures of disguised beauties in his room compared to that living one?

Ah, we are speaking of old times, when Sibwright was a bachelor and

before he got a county court,--when people were young--when most people

were young. Other people are young now; but we no more.

When Miss Laura played this prank with the wig, you can't suppose that

Pen could have been very ill upstairs; otherwise, though she had grown

to care for him ever so little, common sense of feeling and decorum

would have prevented her from performing any tricks or trying any

disguises.

But all sorts of events had occurred in the course of the last few

days which had contributed to increase or account for her gaiety, and a

little colony of the reader's old friends and acquaintances was by this

time established in Lamb Court, Temple, and round Pen's sick-bed there.

First, Martha, Mrs. Pendennis's servant, had arrived from Fairoaks,

being summoned thence by the Major who justly thought her presence would

be comfortable and useful to her mistress and her young master, for

neither of whom the constant neighbourhood of Mrs. Flanagan (who during

Pen's illness required more spirituous consolation than ever to support

her) could be pleasant. Martha then made her appearance in due season

to wait upon Mr. Pendennis, nor did that lady go once to bed until the

faithful servant had reached her, when, with a heart full of maternal

thankfulness she went and lay down upon Warrington's straw mattress, and

among his mathematical books as has been already described.

It is true that ere that day a great and delightful alteration in Pen's

condition had taken place. The fever, subjugated by Dr. Goodenough's

blisters, potions, and lancet, had left the young man, or only returned

at intervals of feeble intermittence; his wandering senses had settled

in his weakened brain: he had had time to kiss and bless his mother

for coming to him, and calling for Laura and his uncle (who were both

affected according to their different natures by his wan appearance, his

lean shrunken hands, his hollow eyes and voice, his thin bearded face)

to press their hands and thank them affectionately; and after this

greeting, and after they had been turned out of the room by his

affectionate nurse, he had sunk into a fine sleep which had lasted for

about sixteen hours, at the end of which period he awoke calling out

that he was very hungry. If it is hard to be ill and to loathe food, oh,

how pleasant to be getting well and to be feeling hungry--how hungry!

Alas, the joys of convalescence become feebler with increasing years, as

other joys do--and then--and then comes that illness when one does not

convalesce at all.

On the day of this happy event, too, came another arrival in Lamb Court.

This was introduced into the Pen-Warring sitting-room by large puffs of

tobacco smoke--the puffs of were followed by an individual with a cigar

in his mouth, and a carpet-bag under his arm--this was Warrington who

had run back from Norfolk, when Mr. Bows thoughtfully wrote to inform

him of his friend's calamity. But he had been from home when Bows's

letter had reached his brother's house--the Eastern Counties did not

then boast of a railway (for we beg the reader to understand that we

only commit anachronisms when we choose and when by a daring violation

of those natural laws some great ethical truth is to be advanced)--in

fine, Warrington only appeared with the rest of the good luck upon the

lucky day after Pen's convalescence may have been said to have begun.

His surprise was, after all, not very great when he found the chambers

of his sick friend occupied, and his old acquaintance the Major seated

demurely in an easy-chair (Warrington had let himself into the rooms

with his own passkey), listening, or pretending to listen, to a young

lady who was reading to him a play of Shakspeare in a low sweet voice.

The lady stopped and started, and laid down her book, at the apparition

of the tall traveller with the cigar and the carpet-bag. He blushed, he

flung the cigar into the passage: he took off his hat, and dropped that

too, and going up to the Major, seized that old gentleman's hand, and

asked questions about Arthur.

The Major answered in a tremulous, though cheery voice--it was curious

how emotion seemed to olden him--and returning Warrington's pressure

with a shaking hand, told him the news of Arthur's happy crisis, of his

mother's arrival--with her young charge--with Miss----.

"You need not tell me her name," Mr. Warrington said with great

animation, for he was affected and elated with the thought of his

friend's recovery--"you need not tell me your name. I knew at once it

was Laura." And he held out his hand and took hers. Immense kindness and

tenderness gleamed from under his rough eyebrows, and shook his voice as

he gazed at her and spoke to her. "And this is Laura!" his looks seemed

to say. "And this is Warrington!" the generous girl's heart beat back.

"Arthur's hero--the brave and the kind--he has come hundreds of miles to

succour him, when he heard of his friend's misfortune!"

"Thank you, Mr. Warrington," was all that Laura said, however; and as

she returned the pressure of his kind hand, she blushed so, that she was

glad the lamp was behind her to conceal her flushing face.

As these two were standing in this attitude, the door of Pen's

bedchamber was opened stealthily as his mother was wont to open it, and

Warrington saw another lady, who first looked at him, and then turning

round towards the bed, said, "Hsh!" and put up her hand.

It was to Pen Helen was turning, and giving caution. He called out

with a feeble, tremulous, but cheery voice, "Come in, Stunner--come in,

Warrington. I knew it was you--by the--by the smoke, old boy," he said,

as holding his worn hand out, and with tears at once of weakness and

pleasure in his eyes, he greeted his friend.

"I--I beg pardon, ma'am, for smoking," Warrington said, who now almost

for the first time blushed for his wicked propensity.

Helen only said, "God bless you, Mr. Warrington." She was so happy, she

would have liked to kiss George. Then, and after the friends had had a

brief, very brief interview, the delighted and inexorable mother, giving

her hand to Warrington, sent him out of the room, too, back to Laura and

the Major, who had not resumed their play of Cymbeline where they had

left it off at the arrival of the rightful owner of Pen's chambers.

CHAPTER LIV. Convalescence

Our duty now is to record a fact concerning Pendennis, which, however

shameful and disgraceful, when told regarding the chief personage and

godfather of a novel, must, nevertheless, be made known to the public

who reads his veritable memoirs. Having gone to bed ill with fever, and

suffering to a certain degree under the passion of love, after he

had gone through his physical malady, and had been bled and had been

blistered, and had had his head shaved, and had been treated and

medicamented as the doctor ordained:--it is a fact, that, when he

rallied up from his bodily ailment, his mental malady had likewise

quitted him, and he was no more in love with Fanny Bolton than you or I,

who are much too wise, or too moral, to allow our hearts to go gadding

after porters' daughters.

He laughed at himself as he lay on his pillow, thinking of this second

cure which had been effected upon him. He did not care the least about

Fanny now: he wondered how he ever should have cared: and according to

his custom made an autopsy of that dead passion, and anatomised his own

defunct sensation for his poor little nurse. What could have made him

so hot and eager about her but a few weeks back? Not her wit, not her

breeding, not her beauty--there were hundreds of women better-looking

than she. It was out of himself that the passion had gone: it did not

reside in her. She was the same; but the eyes which saw were changed;

and, alas, that it should be so! were not particularly eager to see her

any more. He felt very well disposed towards the little thing, and so

forth, but as for violent personal regard, such as he had but a few

weeks ago, it had fled under the influence of the pill and lancet, which

had destroyed the fever in his frame. And an immense source of comfort

and gratitude it was to Pendennis (though there was something selfish

in that feeling, as in most others of our young man), that he had been

enabled to resist temptation at the time when the danger was greatest,

and had no particular cause of self-reproach as he remembered his

conduct towards the young girl. As from a precipice down which he might

have fallen, so from the fever from which he had recovered, he reviewed

the Fanny Bolton snare, now that he had escaped out of it, but I'm

not sure that he was not ashamed of the very satisfaction which he

experienced. It is pleasant, perhaps, but it is humiliating to own that

you love no more.

Meanwhile the kind smiles and tender watchfulness of the mother at

his bedside, filled the young man with peace and security. To see that

health was returning, was all the unwearied nurse demanded: to execute

any caprice or order of her patient's, her chiefest joy and reward.

He felt himself environed by her love, and thought himself almost as

grateful for it as he had been when weak and helpless in childhood.

Some misty notions regarding the first part of his illness, and that

Fanny had nursed him, Pen may have had, but they were so dim that he

could not realise them with accuracy, or distinguish them from what he

knew to be delusions which had occurred and were remembered during

the delirium of his fever. So as he had not thought proper on former

occasions to make any allusions about Fanny Bolton to his mother, of

course he could not now confide to her his sentiments regarding Fanny,

or make this worthy lady a confidante. It was on both sides an unlucky

precaution and want of confidence; and a word or two in time might have

spared the good lady, and those connected with her, a deal of pain and

anguish.

Seeing Miss Bolton installed as nurse and tender to Pen, I am sorry to

say Mrs. Pendennis had put the worst construction on the fact of the

intimacy of these two unlucky young persons, and had settled in her own

mind that the accusations against Arthur were true. Why not have stopped

to inquire?--There are stories to a man's disadvantage that the women

who are fondest of him are always the most eager to believe. Isn't a

man's wife often the first to be jealous of him? Poor Pen got a good

stock of this suspicious kind of love from the nurse who was now

watching over him; and the kind and pure creature thought that her boy

had gone through a malady much more awful and debasing than the mere

physical fever, and was stained by crime as well as weakened by illness.

The consciousness of this she had to bear perforce silently, and to try

to put a mask of cheerfulness and confidence over her doubt and despair

and inward horror.

When Captain Shandon, at Boulogne, read the next number of the Pall Mall

Gazette, it was to remark to Mrs. Shandon that Jack Finucane's hand was

no longer visible in the leading articles, and that Mr. Warrington must

be at work there again. "I know the crack of his whip in a hundred, and

the cut which the fellow's thong leaves. There's Jack Bludyer, goes to

work like a butcher, and mangles a subject. Mr. Warrington finished a

man, and lays his cuts neat and regular, straight down the back, and

drawing blood every line;" at which dreadful metaphor, Mrs. Shandon

said, "Law, Charles, how can you talk so! I always thought Mr.

Warrington very high, but a kind gentleman; and I'm sure he was most

kind to the children." Upon which Shandon said, "yes; he's kind to the

children; but he's savage to the men; and to be sure, my dear, you don't

understand a word about what I'm saying; and it's best you shouldn't;

for it's little good comes out of writing for newspapers; and it's

better here, living easy at Boulogne, where the wine's plenty, and the

brandy costs but two francs a bottle. Mix us another tumbler, Mary, my

dear; we'll go back into harness soon. 'Cras ingens iterabimus aequor'

bad luck to it."

In a word, Warrington went to work with all his might, in place of his

prostrate friend, and did Pen's portion of the Pall Mall Gazette "with a

vengeance," as the saying is. He wrote occasional articles and

literary criticisms; he attended theatres and musical performances, and

discoursed about them with his usual savage energy. His hand was too

strong for such small subjects, and it pleased him to tell Arthur's

mother, and uncle, and Laura, that there was no hand in all the band

of penmen more graceful and light, more pleasant and more elegant, than

Arthur's. "The people in this country, ma'am, don't understand what

style is, or they would see the merits of our young one," he said to

Mrs. Pendennis. "I call him ours, ma'am, for I bred him; and I am as

proud of him as you are; and, bating a little wilfulness, and a little

selfishness, and a little dandification, I don't know a more honest,

or loyal, or gentle creature. His pen is wicked sometimes, but he is as

kind as a young lady--as Miss Laura here--and I believe he would not do

any living mortal harm."

At this, Helen, though she heaved a deep, deep sigh, and Laura, though

she, too, was sadly wounded, nevertheless were most thankful for

Warrington's good opinion of Arthur, and loved him for being so attached

to their Pen. And Major Pendennis was loud in his praises of Mr.

Warrington,--more loud and enthusiastic than it was the Major's wont to

be. "He is a gentleman, my dear creature," he said to Helen, "every inch

a gentleman, my good madam--the Suffolk Warringtons--Charles the

First's baronets:--what could he be but a gentleman, come out of that

family?--father,--Sir Miles Warrington; ran away with--beg your pardon,

Miss Bell. Sir Miles was a very well known man in London, and a friend

of the Prince of Wales, This gentleman is a man of the greatest talents,

the very highest accomplishments,--sure to get on, if he had a motive to

put his energies to work."

Laura blushed for herself whilst the Major was talking and praising

Arthur's hero. As she looked at Warrington's manly face, and dark,

melancholy eyes, this young person had been speculating about him, and

had settled in her mind that he must have been the victim of an unhappy

attachment; and as she caught herself so speculating, why, Miss Bell

blushed.

Warrington got chambers hard by,--Grenier's chambers in Flag Court; and

having executed Pen's task with great energy in the morning, his delight

and pleasure of an afternoon was to come and sit with the sick man's

company in the sunny autumn evenings; and he had the honour more than

once of giving Miss Bell his arm for a walk in the Temple Gardens; to

take which pastime, when the frank Laura asked of Helen permission,

the Major eagerly said, "Yes, yes, begad--of course you go out with

him--it's like the country, you know; everybody goes out with everybody

in the Gardens, and there are beadles, you know, and that sort of

thing--everybody walks in the Temple Gardens." If the great arbiter of

morals did not object, why should simple Helen? She was glad that her

girl should have such fresh air as the river could give, and to see

her return with heightened colour and spirits from these harmless

excursions.

Laura and Helen had come, you must know, to a little explanation.

When the news arrived of Pen's alarming illness, Laura insisted upon

accompanying the terrified mother to London, would not hear of the

refusal which the still angry Helen gave her, and, when refused a second

time yet more sternly, and when it seemed that the poor lost lad's life

was despaired of, and when it was known that his conduct was such as to

render all thoughts of union hopeless, Laura had, with many tears, told

her mother a secret with which every observant person who reads this

story was acquainted already. Now she never could marry him, was she to

be denied the consolation of owning how fondly, how truly, how entirely

she had loved him? The mingling tears of the woman appeased the agony of

their grief somewhat; and the sorrows and terrors of their journey were

at least in so far mitigated that they shared them together.

What could Fanny expect when suddenly brought up for sentence before a

couple of such judges? Nothing but swift condemnation, awful punishment,

merciless dismissal! Women are cruel critics in cases such as that in

which poor Fanny was implicated; and we like them to be so; for, besides

the guard which a man places round his own harem, and the defences which

a woman has in her heart, her faith, and honour, hasn't she all her own

friends of her own sex to keep watch that she does not go astray, and to

tear her to pieces if she is found erring? When our Mahmouds or Selims

of Baker Street or Belgrave Square visit their Fatimas with condign

punishment, their mothers sew up Fatima's sack for her, and her sisters

and sisters-in-law see her well under water. And this present writer

does not say nay. He protests most solemnly he is a Turk, too. He wears

a turban and a beard like another, and is all for the sack practice,

Bismillah! But O you spotless, who have the right of capital punishment

vested in you, at least be very cautious that you make away with the

proper (if so she may be called) person. Be very sure of the fact before

you order the barge out: and don't pop your subject into the Bosphorus,

until you are quite certain that she deserves it. This is all I would

urge in poor Fatima's behalf--absolutely all--not a word more, by the

beard of the Prophet. If she's guilty, down with her--heave over the

sack, away with it into the Golden Horn bubble and squeak, and justice

being done, give way, men, and let us pull back to supper.

So the Major did not in any way object to Warrington's continued

promenades with Miss Laura, but, like a benevolent old gentleman,

encouraged in every way the intimacy of that couple. Were there any

exhibitions in town? he was for Warrington conducting her to them.

If Warrington had proposed to take her to Vauxhall itself, this most

complaisant of men would have seen no harm,--nor would Helen, if

Pendennis the elder had so ruled it,--nor would there have been any

harm between two persons whose honour was entirely spotless,--between

Warrington, who saw in intimacy a pure, and high-minded, and artless

woman for the first time in his life,--and Laura, who too for the

first time was thrown into the constant society of a gentleman of great

natural parts and powers of pleasing; who possessed varied acquirements,

enthusiasm, simplicity, humour, and that freshness of mind which his

simple life and habits gave him, and which contrasted so much with

Pen's dandy indifference of manner and faded sneer. In Warrington's very

uncouthness there was a refinement, which the other's finery lacked. In

his energy, his respect, his desire to please, his hearty laughter,

or simple confiding pathos, what a difference to Sultan Pen's yawning

sovereignty and languid acceptance of homage! What had made Pen at home

such a dandy and such a despot? The women had spoiled him, as we like

them and as they like to do. They had cloyed him with obedience, and

surfeited him with sweet respect and submission, until he grew weary

of the slaves who waited upon him, and their caresses and cajoleries

excited him no more. Abroad, he was brisk and lively, and eager and

impassioned enough--most men are so constituted and so nurtured.--Does

this, like the former sentence, run a chance of being misinterpreted,

and does any one dare to suppose that the writer would incite the women

to revolt? Nevert, by the whiskers of the Prophet again, he says. He

wears a beard, and he likes his women to be slaves. What man doesn't?

What man would be henpecked, I say? We will cut off all the heads in

Christendom or Turkeydom rather than that.

Well, then, Arthur being so languid, and indifferent, and careless about

the favours bestowed upon him, how came it that Laura should have such a

love and rapturous regard for him, that a mere inadequate expression

of it should have kept the girl talking all the way from Fairoaks to

London, as she and Helen travelled in the post-chaise? As soon as Helen

had finished one story about the dear fellow, and narrated, with a

hundred sobs and ejaculations, and looks up to heaven, some thrilling

incidents which occurred about the period when the hero was breeched,

Laura began another equally interesting and equally ornamented with

tears, and told how heroically he had a tooth out or wouldn't have it

out, or how daringly he robbed a bird's nest or how magnanimously he

spared it; or how he gave a shilling to the old woman on the common, or

went without his bread-and-butter for the beggar-boy who came into the

yard--and so on One to another the sobbing women sang laments upon their

hero, who, my worthy reader has long since perceived, is no more a hero

than one of us. Being as he was, why should a sensible girl be so fond

of him?

This point has been argued before in a previous unfortunate sentence

(which lately drew down all the wrath of Ireland upon the writer's

head), and which said that the greatest rascal-cut-throats have had

somebody to be fond of them, and if those monsters, why not ordinary

mortals? And with whom shall a young lady fall in love but with the

person she sees? She is not supposed to lose her heart in a dream, like

a Princess in the Arabian Nights; or to plight her young affections

to the portrait of a gentleman in the Exhibition, or a sketch in the

Illustrated London News. You have an instinct within you which inclines

you to attach yourself to some one: you meet Somebody: you hear Somebody

constantly praised: you walk, or ride, or waltz, or talk or sit in

the same pew at church with Somebody: you meet again, and again,

and--"Marriages are made in Heave," your dear mamma says, pinning your

orange-flowers wreath on, with her blessed eyes dimmed with tears--and

there is a wedding breakfast, and you take off your white satin and

retire to your coach-and-four, and you and he are a happy pair.--Or, the

affair is broken off, and then, poor wounded heart! why, then you meet

Somebody Else, and twine your young affections round number two. It is

your nature so to do. Do you suppose it is all for the man's sake that

you love, and not a bit for your own? Do you suppose you would drink if

you were not thirsty, or eat if you were not hungry?

So then Laura liked Pen because she saw scarcely anybody else at

Fairoaks except Doctor Portman and Captain Glanders, and because his

mother constantly praised her Arthur, and because he was gentlemanlike,

tolerably good-looking and witty, and because, above all, it was of her

nature to like somebody. And having once received this image into her

heart, she there tenderly nursed it and clasped it--she there, in his

long absences and her constant solitudes, silently brooded over it

and fondled it--and when after this she came to London, and had an

opportunity of becoming rather intimate with Mr. George Warrington,

what on earth was to prevent her from thinking him a most odd, original,

agreeable, and pleasing person?

A long time afterwards, when these days were over, and Fate in its

own way had disposed of the various persons now assembled in the dingy

building in Lamb Court, perhaps some of them looked back and thought how

happy the time was, and how pleasant had been their evening talks

and little walks and simple recreations round the sofa of Pen the

convalescent. The Major had a favourable opinion of September in London

from that time forward, and declared at his clubs and in society that

the dead season in town was often pleasant, doosid pleasant, begad. He

used to go home to his lodgings in Bury Street of a night, wondering

that it was already so late, and that the evening had passed away so

quickly. He made his appearance at the Temple pretty constantly in

the afternoon, and tugged up the long black staircase with quite a

benevolent activity and perseverance. And he made interest with the chef

at Bays's (that renowned cook, the superintendence of whose work upon

Gastronomy compelled the gifted author to stay in the metropolis), to

prepare little jellies, delicate clear soups, aspics, and other trifles

good for invalids, which Morgan the valet constantly brought down to the

little Lamb Court colony. And the permission to drink a glass or two of

pure sherry being accorded to Pen by Doctor Goodenough, the Major

told with almost tears in his eyes how his noble friend the Marquis of

Steyne, passing through London on his way to the Continent, had ordered

any quantity of his precious, his priceless Amontillado, that had been

a present from King Ferdinand to the noble Marquis, to be placed at the

disposal of Mr. Arthur Pendennis. The widow and Laura tasted it with

respect (though they didn't in the least like the bitter flavour) but

the invalid was greatly invigorated by it, and Warrington pronounced

it superlatively good, and proposed the Major's health in a mock speech

after dinner on the first day when the wine was served, and that of Lord

Steyne and the aristocracy in general.

Major Pendennis returned thanks with the utmost gravity and in a speech

in which he used the words, 'the present occasion,' at least the proper

number of times. Pen cheered with his feeble voice from his armchair.

Warrington taught Miss Laura to cry "Hear! hear!" and tapped the table

with his knuckles. Pidgeon the attendant grinned, and honest Doctor

Goodenough found the party so merrily engaged, when he came in to pay

his faithful gratuitous visit.

Warrington knew Sibwright, who lived below and that gallant gentleman,

in reply to a letter informing him of the use to which his apartment had

been put, wrote back the most polite and flowery letter of acquiescence

He placed his chambers at the service of their fair occupants, his

bed at their disposal, his carpets at their feet. Everybody was kindly

disposed towards the sick man and his family. His heart (and his

mother's too, as we may fancy) melted within him at the thought of so

much good-feeling and good-nature. Let Pen's biographer be pardoned

for alluding to a time not far distant when a somewhat similar mishap

brought him a providential friend, a kind physician, and a thousand

proofs of a most touching and surprising kindness and sympathy.

There was a piano in Mr. Sibwright's chamber (indeed, this gentleman, a

lover of all the arts, performed himself--and excellently ill too--upon

the instrument; and had had a song dedicated to him, the words by

himself, the air by his devoted friend Leopoldo Twankidillo), and at

this music-box, as Mr. Warrington called it, Laura, at first with a

great deal of tremor and blushing (which became her very much), played

and sang, sometimes of an evening, simple airs, and old songs of home.

Her voice was a rich contralto, and Warrington, who scarcely knew one

tune from another and who had but one tune or bray in his repertoire,--a

most discordant imitation of 'God save the King'--sat rapt in delight

listening to these songs. He could follow their rhythm if not their

harmony; and he could watch, with a constant and daily growing

enthusiasm, the pure and tender and generous creature who made the

music.

I wonder how that poor pale little girl in the black bonnet, who used to

stand at the lamp-post in Lamb Court sometimes of an evening, looking

up to the open windows from which the music came, liked to hear it? When

Pen's bedtime came the songs were hushed. Lights appeared in the upper

room: his room, whither the widow used to conduct him; and then the

Major and Mr. Warrington, and sometimes Miss Laura, would have a game at

ecarte or backgammon; or she would sit by working a pair of slippers in

worsted--a pair of gentleman's slippers--they might have been for Arthur

or for George or for Major Pendennis: one of those three would have

given anything for the slippers.

Whilst such business as this was going on within, a rather shabby old

gentleman would come and lead away the pale girl in the black bonnet,

who had no right to be abroad in the night air; and the Temple porters,

the few laundresses, and other amateurs who had been listening to the

concert, would also disappear.

Just before ten o'clock there was another musical performance, namely

that of the chimes of St. Clement's clock in the Strand, which played

the clear cheerful notes of a psalm, before it proceeded to ring its

ten fatal strokes. As they were ringing, Laura began to fold up the

slippers; Martha from Fairoaks appeared with a bed-candle, and a

constant smile on her face; the Major said, "God bless my soul, is it

so late?" Warrington and he left their unfinished game, and got up and

shook hands with Miss Bell. Martha from Fairoaks lighted them out of the

passage and down the stair, and, as they descended, they could hear

her bolting and locking "the sporting door" after them, upon her young

mistress and herself. If there had been any danger, grinning Martha

said she would have got down "that thar hooky soord which hung up in

gantleman's room,"--meaning the Damascus scimitar with the names of the

prophet engraved on the blade and the red velvet scabbard, which Percy

Sibwright, Esquire, brought back from his tour in the Levant, along with

an Albanian dress, and which he wore with such elegant effect at Lady

Mullingar's fancy ball, Gloucester Square, Hyde Park. It entangled

itself in Miss Kewsey's train, who appeared in the dress in which she,

with her mamma, had been presented to their sovereign (the latter by the

L--d Ch-nc-ll-r's lady), and led to events which have nothing to do with

this history. Is not Miss Kewsey now Mrs. Sibwright? Has Sibwright not

got a county court?--Good night, Laura and Fairoaks Martha. Sleep well

and wake happy, pure and gentle lady.

Sometimes after these evenings Warrington would walk a little way with

Major Pendennis--just a little way just as far as the Temple gate--as

the Strand--as Charing Cross--as the Club--he was not going into the

Club? Well, as far as Bury Street, where he would laughingly shake hands

on the Major's own door-step. They had been talking about Laura all the

way. It was wonderful how enthusiastic the Major, who, as we know, used

to dislike her, had grown to be regarding the young lady--"Dev'lish

fine girl, begad. Dev'lish well-mannered girl--my sister-in-law has the

manners of a duchess and would bring up any girl well. Miss Bell's a

little countryfied. But the smell of the hawthorn is pleasant, demmy.

How she blushes! Your London girls would give many a guinea for a

bouquet like that--natural flowers, begad! And she's a little money

too--nothing to speak of--but a pooty little bit of money." In all which

opinions no doubt Mr. Warrington agreed; and though he laughed as

he shook hands with the Major, his face fell as he left his veteran

companion; and he strode back to chambers, and smoked pipe after pipe

long into the night, and wrote article upon article, more and more

savage, in lieu of friend Pen disabled.

Well, it was a happy time for almost all parties concerned. Pen mended

daily. Sleeping and eating were his constant occupations. His appetite

was something frightful. He was ashamed of exhibiting it before Laura,

and almost before his mother who laughed and applauded him. As the roast

chicken of his dinner went away he eyed the departing friend with sad

longing, and began to long for jelly, or tea, or what not. He was like

an ogre in devouring. The Doctor cried stop, but Pen would not. Nature

called out to him more loudly than the Doctor, and that kind and

friendly physician handed him over with a very good grace to the other

healer.

And here let us speak very tenderly and in the strictest confidence

of an event which befell him, and to which he never liked an allusion.

During his delirium the ruthless Goodenough ordered ice to be put to his

head, and all his lovely hair to be cut. It was done in the time of--of

the other nurse, who left every single hair of course in a paper for the

widow to count and treasure up. She never believed but that the girl

had taken away some of it, but then women are so suspicious upon these

matters.

When this direful loss was made visible to Major Pendennis as of course

it was the first time the elder saw the poor young man's shorn pate, and

when Pen was quite out of danger, and gaining daily vigour, the Major,

with something like blushes and a queer wink of his eyes, said he knew

of a--a person--a coiffeur, in fact--a good man, whom he would send down

to the Temple, and who would--a--apply--a--a temporary remedy to that

misfortune.

Laura looked at Warrington with the archest sparkle in her

eyes--Warrington fairly burst out into a boohoo of laughter: even the

widow was obliged to laugh: and the Major erubescent confounded the

impudence of the young folks, and said when he had his hair cut he would

keep a lock of it for Miss Laura.

Warrington voted that Pen should wear a barrister's wig. There was

Sibwright's down below, which would become him hugely. Pen said "Stuff,"

and seemed as confused as his uncle; and the end was that a gentleman

from Burlington Arcade waited next day upon Mr. Pendennis, and had a

private interview with him in his bedroom; and a week afterwards the

same individual appeared with a box under his arm, and an ineffable grin

of politeness on his face, and announced that he had brought 'ome Mr.

Pendennis's 'ead of 'air.

It must have been a grand but melancholy sight to see Pen in the

recesses of his apartment, sadly contemplating his ravaged beauty, and

the artificial means of hiding its ruin. He appeared at length in the

'ead of 'air; but Warrington laughed so, that Pen grew sulky, and went

back for his velvet cap, a neat turban which the fondest of mammas had

worked for him. Then Mr. Warrington and Miss Bell got some flowers off

the ladies' bonnets and made a wreath, with which they decorated the wig

and brought it out in procession, and did homage before it. In fact they

indulged in a hundred sports, jularities, waggeries, and petits jeux

innocens: so that the second and third floors of Number 6 Lamb Court,

Temple, rang with more cheerfulness and laughter than had been known in

those precincts for many a long day.

At last, after about ten days of this life, one evening when the little

spy of the court came out to take her usual post of observation at the

lamp, there was no music from the second-floor window, there were no

lights in the third-story chambers, the windows of each were open, and

the occupants were gone. Mrs. Flanagan, the laundress, told Fanny what

had happened. The ladies and all the party had gone to Richmond for

change of air. The antique travelling chariot was brought out again and

cushioned with many pillows for Pen and his mother; and Miss Laura went

in the most affable manner in the omnibus under the guardianship of Mr.

George Warrington. He came back and took possession of his old bed that

night in the vacant and cheerless chambers, and to his old books and his

old pipes, but not perhaps to his old sleep.

The widow had left a jar full of flowers upon his table, prettily

arranged, and when he entered they filled the solitary room with odour.

They were memorials of the kind, gentle souls who had gone away, and who

had decorated for a little while that lonely cheerless place. He had

had the happiest days of his whole life George felt--he knew it now

they were just gone: he went and took up the flowers and put his face

to them, and smelt them--perhaps kissed them. As he put them down, he

rubbed his rough hand across his eyes with a bitter word and laugh. He

would have given his whole life and soul to win that prize which Arthur

rejected. Did she want fame? he would have won it for her:--devotion?--a

great heart full of pent-up tenderness and manly love and gentleness was

there for her, if she might take it. But it might not be. Fate had ruled

otherwise. "Even if I could, she would not have me," George thought.

"What has an ugly, rough old fellow like me, to make any woman like him?

I'm getting old, and I've made no mark in life. I've neither good looks,

nor youth, nor money, nor reputation. A man must be able to do something

besides stare at her and offer on his knees his smooth devotion, to make

a woman like him. What can I do? Lots of young fellows have passed me in

the race--what they call the prizes of life didn't seem to me worth the

trouble of the struggle. But for her. If she had been mine and liked a

diamond--ah! shouldn't she have worn it! Psha, what a fool I am to brag

of what I would have done! We are the slaves of destiny. Our lots are

shaped for us, and mine is ordained long ago. Come, let us have a pipe,

and put the smell of these flowers out of court, poor little silent

flowers! you'll be dead to-morrow. What business had you to show your

red cheeks in this dingy place?"

By his bedside George found a new Bible which the widow had placed

there, with a note inside saying that she had not seen the book amongst

his collection in a room where she had spent a number of hours, and

where God had vouchsafed to her prayers the life of her son, and that

she gave to Arthur's friend the best thing she could, and besought him

to read in the volume sometimes, and to keep it as a token of a grateful

mother's regard and affection. Poor George mournfully kissed the book as

he had done the flowers; and the morning found him still reading in its

awful pages, in which so many stricken hearts, in which so many tender

and faithful souls, have found comfort under calamity, and refuge and

hope in affliction.

CHAPTER LV. Fanny's Occupation's gone

Good Helen, ever since her son's illness, had taken, as we have seen,

entire possession of the young man, of his drawers and closets and all

which they contained: whether shirts that wanted buttons, or stockings

that required mending, or, must it be owned? letters that lay amongst

those articles of raiment, and which of course it was necessary that

somebody should answer during Arthur's weakened and incapable condition.

Perhaps Mrs. Pendennis was laudably desirous to have some explanations

about the dreadful Fanny Bolton mystery, regarding which she had never

breathed a word to her son, though it was present in her mind always,

and occasioned her inexpressible anxiety and disquiet. She had caused

the brass knocker to be screwed off the inner door of the chambers,

where upon the postman's startling double rap would, as she justly

argued, disturb the rest of her patient, and she did not allow him to

see any letter which arrived, whether from bootmakers who importuned

him, or hatters who had a heavy account to make up against next

Saturday, and would be very much obliged if Mr. Arthur Pendennis would

have the kindness to settle, etc. Of these documents, Pen, who was

always freehanded and careless, of course had his share, and though no

great one, one quite enough to alarm his scrupulous and conscientious

mother. She had some savings; Pen's magnificent self-denial, and her own

economy, amounting from her great simplicity and avoidance of show to

parsimony almost, had enabled her to put by a little sum of money, a

part of which she delightedly consecrated to the paying off the

young gentleman's obligations. At this price, many a worthy youth and

respected reader would hand over his correspondence to his parents; and

perhaps there is no greater test of a man's regularity and easiness of

conscience, than his readiness to face the postman. Blessed is he who is

made happy by the sound of the rat-tat! The good are eager for it: but

the naughty tremble at the sound thereof. So it was very kind of Mrs.

Pendennis doubly to spare Pen the trouble of hearing or answering

letters during his illness.

There could have been nothing in the young man's chest of drawers and

wardrobes which could be considered as inculpating him in any way,

nor any satisfactory documents regarding the Fanny Bolton affair found

there, for the widow had to ask her brother-in-law if he knew anything

about the odious transaction, and the dreadful intrigue about which

her son was engaged. When they were at Richmond one day, and Pen with

Warrington had taken a seat on a bench on the terrace, the widow kept

Major Pendennis in consultation, and laid her terrors and perplexities

before him, such of them at least (for as is the wont of men and women,

she did not make quite a clean confession, and I suppose no spendthrift

asked for a schedule of his debts, no lady of fashion asked by her

husband for her dressmaker's bills, ever sent in the whole of them

yet)--such, we say, of her perplexities, at least, as she chose to

confide to her Director for the time being.

When, then, she asked the Major what course she ought to pursue,

about this dreadful--this horrid affair, and whether he knew anything

regarding it? the old gentleman puckered up his face, so that you could

not tell whether he was smiling or not; gave the widow one queer look

with his little eyes; cast them down to the carpet again, and said, "My

dear, good creature, I don't know anything about it; and I don't wish to

know anything about it; and, as you ask me my opinion, I think you had

best know nothing about it too. Young men will be young men; begad, and,

my good ma'am, if you think our boy is a Jo----"

"Pray, spare me this," Helen broke in, looking very stately.

"My dear creature, I did not commence the conversation, permit me to

say," the Major said, bowing very blandly.

"I can't bear to hear such a sin--such a dreadful sin--spoken of in such

a way," the widow said, with tears of annoyance starting from her eyes.

"I can't bear to think that my boy should commit such a crime. I wish he

had died, almost, before he had done it. I don't know how I survive it

myself; for it is breaking my heart, Major Pendennis, to think that his

father's son--my child--whom I remember so good--oh, so good, and full

of honour!--should be fallen so dreadfully low, as to--as to----"

"As to flirt with a little grisette, my dear creature?" said the

Major. "Egad, if all the mothers in England were to break their

hearts because--Nay, nay; upon my word and honour, now, don't agitate

yourself--don't cry. I can't bear to see a woman's tears--I never

could--never. But how do we know that anything serious has happened? Has

Arthur said anything?"

"His silence confirms it," sobbed Mrs. Pendennis, behind her

pocket-handkerchief.

"Not at all. There are subjects, my dear, about which a young fellow

cannot surely talk to his mamma," insinuated the brother-in-law.

"She has written to him," cried the lady, behind the cambric.

"What, before he was ill? Nothing more likely."

"No, since," the mourner with the batiste mask gasped out; "not before;

that is, I don't think so--that is, I----"

"Only since; and you have--yes, I understand. I suppose when he was too

ill to read his own correspondence, you took charge of it, did you?"

"I am the most unhappy mother in the world," cried out the unfortunate

Helen.

"The most unhappy mother in the world, because your son is a man and

not a hermit! Have a care, my dear sister. If you have suppressed any

letters to him, you may have done yourself a great injury; and, if I

know anything of Arthur's spirit, may cause a difference between him and

you, which you'll rue all your life--a difference that's a dev'lish deal

more important, my good madam, than the little--little--trumpery cause

which originated it."

"There was only one letter," broke out Helen,--"only a very little

one--only a few words. Here it is--Oh--how can you, how can you speak

so?"

When the good soul said "only a very little one," the Major could not

speak at all, so inclined was he to laugh, in spite of the agonies of

the poor soul before him, and for whom he had a hearty pity and liking

too. But each was looking at the matter with his or her peculiar eyes

and views of morals, and the Major's morals, as the reader knows, were

not those of an ascetic.

"I recommend you," he gravely continued, "if you can, to seal it

up--those letters ain't unfrequently sealed with wafers--and to put it

amongst Pen's other letters, and let him have them when he calls for

them Or if we'll can't seal it, we mistook it for a bill."

"I can't tell my son a lie," said the widow. It had been put silently

into the letter-box two days previous to their departure from the

Temple, and had been brought to Mrs. Pendennis by Martha. She had never

seen Fanny's handwriting, of course; but when the letter was put into

her hands she knew the author at once. She had been on the watch for

that letter every day since Pen had been ill. She had opened some of his

other letters because she wanted to get at that one. She had the horrid

paper poisoning her bag at that moment. She took it out and offered it

to her brother-in-law.

"Arther Pendennis, Esq.," he read in a timid little sprawling

handwriting, and with a sneer on his face. "No, my dear, I won't

read any more. But you who have read it may tell me what the letter

contains--only prayers for his health in bad spelling, you say--and a

desire to see him? Well--there's no harm in that. And as you ask me--"

Here the Major began to look a little queer for his own part, and put on

his demure look--"as you ask me, my dear, for information, why, I don't

mind telling you that--ah--that--Morgan, my man, has made some inquiries

regarding this affair, and that--my friend Doctor Goodenough also

looked into it--and it appears that this person was greatly smitten with

Arthur; that he paid for her and took her to Vauxhall Gardens, as Morgan

heard from an old acquaintance of Pen's and ours, an Irish gentleman,

who was very nearly once having the honour of being the--from an

Irishman, in fact;--that the girl's father, a violent man of intoxicated

habits, has beaten her mother, who persists in declaring her daughter's

entire innocence to her husband on the one hand, while on the other she

told Goodenough, that Arthur has acted like a brute to her child. And so

you see the story remains in a mystery. Will you have it cleared up? I

have but to ask Pen, and he will tell me at once--he is as honourable a

man as ever lived."

"Honourable!" said the widow with bitter scorn. "Oh, brother, what is

this you call honour? If my boy has been guilty, he must marry her. I

would go down on my knees and pray him to do so."

"Good God! are you mad?" screamed out the Major; and remembering former

passages in Arthur's history and Helen's, the truth came across his

mind that, were Helen to make this prayer to her son, he would marry the

girl: he was wild enough and obstinate enough to commit any folly when

a woman he loved was in the case. "My dear sister, have you lost your

senses?" he continued (after an agitated pause, during which the above

dreary reflection crossed him); and in a softened tone, "What right have

we to suppose that anything has passed between this girl and him? Let's

see the letter. Her heart is breaking; pray, pray, write to me--home

unhappy--unkind father--your nurse--poor little Fanny--spelt, as you

say, in a manner to outrage all sense of decorum. But, good heavens! my

dear, what is there in this? only that the little devil is making love

to him still. Why, she didn't come into his chambers until he was so

delirious that he didn't know her. What-d'you-call-'em, Flanagan,

the laundress, told Morgan, my man, so. She came in company of an old

fellow, an old Mr. Bows, who came most kindly down to Stillbrook and

brought me away--by the way, I left him in the cab, and never paid

the fare; and dev'lish kind it was of him. No, there's nothing in the

story."

"Do you think so? Thank Heaven--thank God!" Helen cried. "I'll take the

letter to Arthur and ask him now. Look at him there. He's on the terrace

with Mr. Warrington. They are talking to some children. My boy was

always fond of children. He's innocent, thank God--thank God! Let me go

to him."

Old Pendennis had his own opinion. When he briskly took the not guilty

side of the case, but a moment before, very likely the old gentleman

had a different view from that which he chose to advocate, and judged of

Arthur by what he himself would have done. If she goes to Arthur, and he

speaks the truth, as the rascal will, it spoils all, he thought. And he

tried one more effort.

"My dear, good soul," he said, taking Helen's hand and kissing it, "as

your son has not acquainted you with this affair, think if you have

any right to examine it. As you believe him to be a man of honour, what

right have you to doubt his honour in this instance? Who is his accuser?

An anonymous scoundrel who has brought no specific charge against him.

If there were any such, wouldn't the girl's parents have come forward?

He is not called upon to rebut, nor you to entertain an anonymous

accusation; and as for believing him guilty because a girl of that rank

happened to be in his rooms acting as nurse to him, begad you might

as well insist upon his marrying that dem'd old Irish gin-drinking

laundress, Mrs. Flanagan."

The widow burst out laughing through her tears--the victory was gained

by the old general.

"Marry Mrs. Flanagan, by Ged," he continued, tapping her slender hand.

"No. The boy has told you nothing about it, and you know nothing about

it. The boy is innocent--of course. And what, my good soul, is the

course for us to pursue? Suppose he is attached to this girl--don't look

sad again, it's merely a supposition--and begad a young fellow may

have an attachment, mayn't he?--Directly he gets well he will be at her

again."

"He must come home! We must go off directly to Fairoaks," the widow

cried out.

"My good creature, he'll bore himself to death at Fairoaks. He'll have

nothing to do but to think about his passion there. There's no place in

the world for making a little passion into a big one, and where a fellow

feeds on his own thoughts, like a dem'd lonely country-house where

there's nothing to do. We must occupy him: amuse him: we must take

him abroad: he's never been abroad except to Paris for a lark. We must

travel a little. He must have a nurse with him, to take great care of

him, for Goodenough says he had a dev'lish narrow squeak of it (don't

look frightened), and so you must come and watch: and I suppose you'll

take Miss Bell, and I should like to ask Warrington to come.

Arthur's dev'lish fond of Warrington. He can't do without Warrington.

Warrington's family is one of the oldest in England, and he is one of

the best young fellows I ever met in my life. I like him exceedingly."

"Does Mr. Warrington know anything about this--this affair?" asked

Helen. "He had been away, I know, for two months before it happened; Pen

wrote me so."

"Not a word--I--I've asked him about it. I've pumped him. He never heard

of the transaction, never; I pledge you my word," cried out the Major,

in some alarm. "And, my dear, I think you had much best not talk to him

about it--much best not--of course not: the subject is most delicate and

painful."

The simple widow took her brother's hand and pressed it. "Thank you,

brother," she said. "You have been very, very kind to me. You have given

me a great deal of comfort. I'll go to my room, and think of what you

have said. This illness and these--these emotions--have agitated me a

great deal; and I'm not very strong, you know. But I'll go and thank God

that my boy is innocent. He is innocent. Isn't he, sir?"

"Yes, my dearest creature, yes," said the old fellow, kissing her

affectionately, and quite overcome by her tenderness. He looked after

her as she retreated, with a fondness which was rendered more piquant,

as it were, by the mixture of a certain scorn which accompanied it.

"Innocent!" he said; "I'd swear, till I was black in the face, he was

innocent, rather than give that good soul pain."

Having achieved this victory, the fatigued and happy warrior laid

himself down on the sofa, and put his yellow silk pocket-handkerchief

over his face, and indulged in a snug little nap, of which the dreams,

no doubt, were very pleasant, as he snored with refreshing regularity.

The young men sate, meanwhile, dawdling away the sunshiny hours on the

terrace, very happy, and Pen, at least, very talkative. He was narrating

to Warrington a plan for a new novel, and a new tragedy. Warrington

laughed at the idea of his writing a tragedy? By Jove, he would show

that he could; and he began to spout some of the lines of his play.

The little solo on the wind instrument which the Major was performing

was interrupted by the entrance of Miss Bell. She had been on a visit

to her old friend, Lady Rockminster, who had taken a summer villa in the

neighbourhood; and who, hearing of Arthur's illness, and his mother's

arrival at Richmond, had visited the latter; and, for the benefit of the

former, whom she didn't like, had been prodigal of grapes, partridges,

and other attentions. For Laura the old lady had a great fondness, and

longed that she should come and stay with her; but Laura could not leave

her mother at this juncture. Worn out by constant watching over

Arthur's health, Helen's own had suffered very considerably; and Doctor

Goodenough had had reason to prescribe for her as well as for his

younger patient.

Old Pendennis started up on the entrance of the young lady. His slumbers

were easily broken. He made her a gallant speech--he had been full of

gallantry towards her of late. Where had she been gathering those roses

which she wore on her cheeks? How happy he was to be disturbed out of

his dreams by such a charming reality! Laura had plenty of humour and

honesty; and these two caused her to have on her side something very

like a contempt for the old gentleman. It delighted her to draw out his

worldlinesses, and to make the old habitue of clubs and drawing-rooms

tell his twaddling tales about great folks, and expound his views of

morals.

Not in this instance, however, was she disposed to be satirical. She had

been to drive with Lady Rockminster in the Park, she said; and she had

brought home game for Pen, and flowers for mamma. She looked very grave

about mamma. She had just been with Mrs. Pendennis. Helen was very much

worn, and she feared she was very, very ill. Her large eyes filled with

tender marks of the sympathy which she felt in her beloved friend's

condition. She was alarmed about her. Could not that good--that dear Dr.

Goodenough cure her?

"Arthur's illness, and other mental anxiety," the Major slowly said,

"had, no doubt, shaken Helen." A burning blush upon the girl's face

showed that she understood the old man's allusion. But she looked him

full in the face and made no reply. "He might have spared me that," she

thought. "What is he aiming at in recalling that shame to me?"

That he had an aim in view is very possible. The old diplomatist seldom

spoke without some such end. Doctor Goodenough had talked to him, he

said, about their dear friend's health, and she wanted rest and change

of scene--yes, change of scene. Painful circumstances which had occurred

must be forgotten and never alluded to; he begged pardon for even

hinting at them to Miss Bell--he never should do so again--nor, he was

sure, would she. Everything must be done to soothe and comfort their

friend, and his proposal was that they should go abroad for the autumn

to a watering-place in the Rhine neighbourhood, where Helen might rally

her exhausted spirits, and Arthur try and become a new man. Of course,

Laura would not forsake her mother?

Of course not. It was about Helen, and Helen only--that is, about

Arthur too for her sake, that Laura was anxious. She would go abroad or

anywhere with Helen.

And Helen having thought the matter over for an hour in her room, had by

that time grown to be as anxious for the tour as any schoolboy, who has

been reading a book of voyages, is eager to go to sea. Whither should

they go? the farther the better--to some place so remote that even

recollection could not follow them thither: so delightful that Pen

should never want to leave it--anywhere so that he could be happy. She

opened her desk with trembling fingers and took out her banker's book,

and counted up her little savings. If more was wanted, she had the

diamond cross. She would borrow from Laura again. "Let us go--let us

go," she thought; "directly he can bear the journey let us go away.

Come, kind Doctor Goodenough--come quick, and give us leave to quit

England."

The good Doctor drove over to dine with them that very day. "If you

agitate yourself so," he said to her, "and if your heart beats so,

and if you persist in being so anxious about a young gentleman who is

getting well as fast as he can, we shall have you laid up, and Miss

Laura to watch you; and then it will be her turn to be ill, and I should

like to know how the deuce a doctor is to live who is obliged to come

and attend you all for nothing? Mrs. Goodenough is already jealous

of you, and says, with perfect justice, that I fall in love with my

patients. And you must please to get out of the country as soon as ever

you can, that I may have a little peace in my family."

When the plan of going abroad was proposed, it was received by that

gentleman with the greatest alacrity and enthusiasm. He longed to be off

at once. He let his mustachios grow from that very moment, in order, I

suppose, that he might get his mouth into training for a perfect French

and German pronunciation; and he was seriously disquieted in his mind

because the mustachios, when they came, were of a decidedly red colour.

He had looked forward to an autumn at Fairoaks; and perhaps the idea of

passing two or three months there did not amuse the young man. "There

is not a soul to speak to in the place," he said to Warrington. "I can't

stand old Portman's sermons, and pompous after-dinner conversation. I

know all old Glanders's stories about the Peninsular war. The Claverings

are the only Christian people in the neighbourhood, and they are not to

be at home before Christmas, my uncle says: besides, Warrington, I want

to get out of the country. Whilst you were away, confound it, I had a

temptation, from which I am very thankful to have escaped, and which I

count that even my illness came very luckily to put an end to." And here

he narrated to his friend the circumstances of the Vauxhall affair, with

which the reader is already acquainted.

Warrington looked very grave when he heard this story. Putting the moral

delinquency out of the question, he was extremely glad for Arthur's

sake that the latter had escaped from a danger which might have made

his whole life wretched; "which certainly," said Warrington, "would have

occasioned the wretchedness and ruin of the other party. And your mother

and--and your friends--what a pain it would have been to them!" urged

Pen's companion, little knowing what grief and annoyance these good

people had already suffered.

"Not a word to my mother!" Pen cried out, in a state of great alarm.

"She would never get over it. An esclandre of that sort would kill her,

I do believe. And," he added, with a knowing air, and as if, like a

young rascal of a Lovelace, he had been engaged in what are called

affaires de coeur, all his life; "the best way, when a danger of that

sort menaces, is not to face it, but to turn one's back on it and run."

"And were you very much smitten?" Warrington asked.

"Hm!" said Lovelace. "She dropped her h's, but she was a dear little

girl."

O Clarissas of this life, O you poor little ignorant vain foolish

maidens! if you did but know the way in which the Lovelaces speak of

you: if you could but hear Jack talking to Tom across the coffee-room

of a Club; or see Ned taking your poor little letters out of his

cigar-case, and handing them over to Charley, and Billy, and Harry

across the messroom table, you would not be so eager to write, or so

ready to listen! There's a sort of crime which is not complete unless

the lucky rogue boasts of it afterwards; and the man who betrays your

honour in the first place, is pretty sure, remember that, to betray your

secret too.

"It's hard to fight, and it's easy to fall," said Warring gloomily. "And

as you say, Pendennis, when a danger like this is imminent, the best way

is to turn your back on it and run."

After this little discourse upon a subject about which Pen would have

talked a great deal more eloquently a month back, the conversation

reverted to the plans for going abroad, and Arthur eagerly pressed his

friend to be of the party. Warrington was a part of the family--a part

of the cure. Arthur said he should not have half the pleasure without

Warrington.

But George said no, he couldn't go. He must stop at home and take Pen's

place. The other remarked that that was needless, for Shandon was now

come back to London, and Arthur was entitled to a holiday.

"Don't press me," Warrington said, "I can't go. I've particular

engagements. I'm best at home. I've not got the money to travel, that's

the long and short of it--for travelling costs money, you know."

This little obstacle seemed fatal to Pen. He mentioned it to his mother:

Mrs. Pendennis was very sorry; Mr. Warrington had been exceedingly kind;

but she supposed he knew best about his affairs. And then, no doubt, she

reproached herself, for selfishness in wishing to carry the boy off and

have him to herself altogether.

"What is this I hear from Pen, my dear Mr. Warrington?" the Major asked

one day, when the pair were alone and after Warrington's objection had

been stated to him. "Not go with us? We can't hear of such a thing--Pen

won't get well without you. I promise you, I'm not going to be his

nurse. He must have somebody with him that's stronger and gayer and

better able to amuse him than a rheumatic old fogy like me. I shall

go to Carlsbad very likely, when I've seen you people settle down.

Travelling costs nothing nowadays--or so little! And--and, pray,

Warrington, remember that I was your father's very old friend, and if

you and your brother are not on such terms as to--to enable you to--to

anticipate your younger brother's allowance, I beg you to make me your

banker, for hasn't Pen been getting into your debt these three weeks

past, during which you have been doing what he informs me is his work,

with such exemplary talent and genius, begad?"

Still, in spite of this kind offer and unheard-of generosity on the part

of the Major, George Warrington refused, and said he would stay at home.

But it was with a faltering voice and an irresolute accent which showed

how much he would like to go, though his tongue persisted in saying nay.

But the Major's persevering benevolence was not to be baulked in this

way. At the tea-table that evening, Helen happening to be absent from

the room for the moment, looking for Pen who had gone to roost, old

Pendennis returned to the charge and rated Warrington for refusing

to join in their excursion. "Isn't it ungallant, Miss Bell?" he said,

turning to that young lady. "Isn't it unfriendly? Here we have been the

happiest party in the world, and this odious selfish creature breaks it

up!"

Miss Bell's long eyelashes looked down towards her teacup: and

Warrington blushed hugely but did not speak. Neither did Miss Bell

speak: but when he blushed she blushed too.

"You ask him to come, my dear," said the benevolent old gentleman, "and

then perhaps he will listen to you----"

"Why should Mr. Warrington listen to me?" asked the young lady, putting

the query to her teaspoon seemingly and not to the Major.

"Ask him; you have not asked him," said Pen's artless uncle.

"I should be very glad, indeed, if Mr. Warrington would come," remarked

Laura to the teaspoon.

"Would you?" said George.

She looked up and said, "Yes." Their eyes met. "I will go anywhere you

ask me, or do anything," said George, lowly, and forcing out the words

as if they gave him pain.

Old Pendennis was delighted; the affectionate old creature clapped his

hands and cried "Bravo! bravo! It's a bargain--a bargain, begad! Shake

hands on it, young people!" And Laura, with a look full of tender

brightness, put out her hand to Warrington. He took hers; his face

indicated a strange agitation. He seemed to be about to speak, when from

Pen's neighbouring room Helen entered, looking at them as the candle

which she held lighted her pale frightened face.

Laura blushed more red than ever and withdrew her hand.

"What is it?" Helen asked.

"It's a bargain we have been making, my dear creature," said the Major

in his most caressing voice. "We have just bound over Mr. Warrington in

a promise to come abroad with us."

"Indeed!" Helen said.

CHAPTER LVI. In which Fanny engages a new Medical Man

Could Helen have suspected that, with Pen's returning strength, his

unhappy partiality for little Fanny would also reawaken? Though she

never spoke a word regarding that young person, after her conversation

with the Major, and though, to all appearances, she utterly ignored

Fanny's existence, yet Mrs. Pendennis kept a particularly close watch

upon all Master Arthur's actions; on the plea of ill-health would

scarcely let him out of her sight; and was especially anxious that he

should be spared the trouble of all correspondence for the present at

least. Very likely Arthur looked at his own letters with some tremor;

very likely, as he received them at the family table, feeling his

mother's watch upon him (though the good soul's eye seemed fixed upon

her teacup or her book), he expected daily to see a little handwriting,

which he would have known, though he had never seen it yet, and his

heart beat as he received the letters to his address. Was he more

pleased or annoyed, that, day after day, his expectations were not

realised; and was his mind relieved, that there came no letter from

Fanny? Though, no doubt, in these matters, when Lovelace is tired of

Clarissa (or the contrary) it is best for both parties to break at once,

and each, after the failure of the attempt at union, to go his own way,

and pursue his course through life solitary; yet our self-love, or our

pity, or our sense of decency, does not like that sudden bankruptcy.

Before we announce to the world that our firm of Lovelace and Co. can't

meet its engagements, we try to make compromises: we have mournful

meetings of partners: we delay the putting up of the shutters, and the

dreary announcement of the failure. It must come: but we pawn our jewels

to keep things going a little longer. On the whole, I dare say, Pen was

rather annoyed that he had no remonstrances from Fanny. What! could she

part from him, and never so much as once look round? could she sink, and

never once hold a little hand out, or cry, "Help, Arthur?" Well, well:

they don't all go down who venture on that voyage. Some few drown when

the vessel founders; but most are only ducked, and scramble to shore.

And the reader's experience of A. Pendennis, Esquire, of the Upper

Temple, will enable him to state whether that gentleman belonged to the

class of persons who were likely to sink or to swim.

Though Pen was as yet too weak to walk half a mile; and might not, on

account of his precious health, be trusted to take a drive in a carriage

by himself, and without a nurse in attendance; yet Helen could not keep

watch over Mr. Warrington too, and had no authority to prevent that

gentleman from going to London if business called him thither. Indeed,

if he had gone and stayed, perhaps the widow, from reasons of her own,

would have been glad; but she checked these selfish wishes as soon

as she ascertained or owned them; and, remembering Warrington's great

regard and services, and constant friendship for her boy, received him

as a member of her family almost, with her usual melancholy kindness

and submissive acquiescence. Yet somehow, one morning when his affairs

called him to town, she divined what Warrington's errand was, and that

he was gone to London to get news about Fanny for Pen.

Indeed, Arthur had had some talk with his friend, and told him more

at large what his adventures had been with Fanny (adventures which the

reader knows already), and what were his feelings respecting her. He was

very thankful that he had escaped the great danger, to which Warrington

said Amen heartily: that he had no great fault wherewith to reproach

himself in regard of his behaviour to her, but that if they parted, as

they must, he would be glad to say a God bless her, and to hope that

she would remember him kindly. In his discourse with Warrington he

spoke upon these matters with so much gravity, and so much emotion, that

George, who had pronounced himself most strongly for the separation too,

began to fear that his friend was not so well cured as he boasted of

being; and that, if the two were to come together again, all the danger

and the temptation might have to be fought once more. And with what

result? "It is hard to struggle, Arthur, and it is easy to fall,"

Warrington said: "and the best courage for us poor wretches is to fly

from danger. I would not have been what I am now, had I practised what I

preach.

"And what did you practise, George?" Pen asked, eagerly. "I knew there

was something. Tell us about it, Warrington."

"There was something that can't be mended, and that shattered my whole

fortunes early," Warrington answered. "I said I would tell you about it

some day, Pen: and will, but not now. Take the moral without the fable

now, Pen, my boy; and if you want to see a man whose whole life has been

wrecked, by an unlucky rock against which he struck as a boy--here he

is, Arthur: and so I warn you."

We have shown how Mr. Huxter, in writing home to his Clavering friends,

mentioned that there was a fashionable club in London of which he was

an attendant, and that he was there in the habit of meeting an Irish

officer of distinction, who, amongst other news, had given that

intelligence regarding Pendennis, which the young surgeon had

transmitted to Clavering. This club was no other than the Back Kitchen,

where the disciple of Saint Bartholomew was accustomed to meet the

General, the peculiarities of whose brogue, appearance, disposition, and

general conversation, greatly diverted many young gentlemen who used

the Back Kitchen as a place of nightly entertainment and refreshment.

Huxter, who had a fine natural genius for mimicking everything, whether

it was a favourite tragic or comic actor, or a cock on a dunghill, a

corkscrew going into a bottle and a cork issuing thence, or an Irish

officer of genteel connexions who offered himself as an object of

imitation with only too much readiness, talked his talk, and twanged his

poor old long bow whenever drink, a hearer, and an opportunity occurred,

studied our friend the General with peculiar gusto, and drew the

honest fellow out many a night. A bait, consisting of sixpennyworth of

brandy-and-water, the worthy old man was sure to swallow: and under the

influence of this liquor, who was more happy than he to tell his stories

of his daughter's triumphs and his own, in love, war, drink, and polite

society? Thus Huxter was enabled to present to his friends many pictures

of Costigan: of Costigan fighting a jewel in the Phaynix--of Costigan

and his interview with the Juke of York--of Costigan at his sonunlaw's

teeble, surrounded by the nobilitee of his countree--of Costigan,

when crying drunk, at which time he was in the habit of confidentially

lamenting his daughter's ingratichewd, and stating that his grey hairs

were hastening to a praymachure greeve. And thus our friend was the

means of bringing a number of young fellows to the Back Kitchen, who

consumed the landlord's liquors whilst they relished the General's

peculiarities, so that mine host pardoned many of the latter's foibles,

in consideration of the good which they brought to his house. Not the

highest position in life was this--certainly, or one which, if we had a

reverence for an old man, we would be anxious that he should occupy: but

of this aged buffoon it may be mentioned that he had no particular idea

that his condition of life was not a high one, and that in his whiskied

blood there was not a black drop, nor in his muddled brains a bitter

feeling, against any mortal being. Even his child, his cruel Emily, he

would have taken to his heart and forgiven with tears; and what more can

one say of the Christian charity of a man than that he is actually ready

to forgive those who have done him every kindness, and with whom he is

wrong in a dispute!

There was some idea amongst the young men who frequented the Back

Kitchen, and made themselves merry with the society of Captain Costigan,

that the Captain made a mystery regarding his lodgings for fear of duns,

or from a desire of privacy, and lived in some wonderful place. Nor

would the landlord of the premises, when questioned upon this subject,

answer any inquiries; his maxim being that he only knew gentlemen who

frequented that room, in that room; that when they quitted that room,

having paid their scores as gentlemen, and behaved as gentlemen, his

communication with them ceased; and that, as a gentleman himself,

he thought it was only impertinent curiosity to ask where any other

gentleman lived. Costigan, in his most intoxicated and confidential

moments, also evaded any replies to questions or hints addressed to him

on this subject: there was no particular secret about it, as we have

seen, who have had more than once the honour of entering his apartments,

but in the vicissitudes of a long life he had been pretty often in the

habit of residing in houses where privacy was necessary to his comfort,

and where the appearance of some visitors would have brought him

anything but pleasure. Hence all sorts of legends were formed by wags or

credulous persons respecting his place of abode. It was stated that he

slept habitually in a watch-box in the city: in a cab at a mews, where a

cab-proprietor gave him a shelter: in the Duke of York's Column etc,

the wildest of these theories being put abroad by the facetious and

imaginative Huxter. For Huxey, when not silenced by the company of

"swells," and when in the society of his own friends, was a very

different fellow to the youth whom we have seen cowed by Pen's

impertinent airs, and, adored by his family at home, was the life and

soul of the circle whom he met, either round the festive board or the

dissecting table. On one brilliant September morning, as Huxter was

regaling himself with a cup of coffee at a stall in Covent Garden,

having spent a delicious night dancing at Vauxhall, he spied the General

reeling down Henrietta Street, with a crowd of hooting blackguard boys

at his heels, who had left their beds under the arches of the river

betimes, and were prowling about already for breakfast, and the strange

livelihood of the day. The poor old General was not in that condition

when the sneers and jokes of these young beggars had much effect upon

him: the cabmen and watermen at the cabstand knew him and passed their

comments upon him: the policemen gazed after him and warned the boys off

him, with looks of scorn and pity; what did the scorn and pity of men,

the jokes of ribald children, matter to the General? He reeled along the

street with glazed eyes, having just sense enough to know whither he was

bound, and to pursue his accustomed beat homewards. He went to bed not

knowing how he had reached it, as often as any man in London. He woke

and found himself there, and asked no questions, and he was tacking

about on this daily though perilous voyage, when, from his station

at the coffee-stall, Huxter spied him. To note his friend, to pay his

twopence (indeed, he had but eightpence left, or he would have had a cab

from Vauxhall to take him home), was with the eager Huxter the work of

an instant--Costigan dived down the alleys by Drury Lane Theatre,

where gin-shops, oyster-shops, and theatrical wardrobes abound, the

proprietors of which were now asleep behind their shutters, as the

pink morning lighted up their chimneys; and through these courts Huxter

followed the General, until he reached Oldcastle Street, in which is the

gate of Shepherd's Inn.

Here, just as he was within sight of home, a luckless slice of

orange-peel came between the General's heel and the pavement, and caused

the poor old fellow to fall backwards.

Huxter ran up to him instantly, and after a pause, during which the

veteran, giddy with his fall and his previous whisky, gathered, as he

best might, his dizzy brains together, the young surgeon lifted up the

limping General, and very kindly and good-naturedly offered to conduct

him to his home. For some time, and in reply to the queries which the

student of medicine put to him, the muzzy General refused to say where

his lodgings were and declared that they were hard by, and that he could

reach them without difficulty; and he disengaged himself from Huxter's

arm, and made a rush as if to get to his own home unattended: but he

reeled and lurched so, that the young surgeon insisted upon accompanying

him, and, with many soothing expressions and cheering and consolatory

phrases, succeeded in getting the General's dirty old hand under what

he called his own fin, and led the old fellow, moaning piteously, across

the street. He stopped when he came to the ancient gate, ornamented with

the armorial bearings of the venerable Shepherd. "Here 'tis," said he,

drawing up at the portal, and he made a successful pull at the gate

bell, which presently brought out old Mr. Bolton, the porter, scowling

fiercely, and grumbling as he was used to do every morning when it

became his turn to let in that early bird.

Costigan tried to hold Bolton for a moment in genteel conversation, but

the other surlily would not. "Don't bother me," said he; "go to your

hown bed Capting, and don't keep honest men out of theirs." So the

Captain tacked across the square and reached his own staircase, up which

he stumbled with the worthy Huxter at his heels. Costigan had a key of

his own, which Huxter inserted into the keyhole for him, so that there

was no need to call up little Mr. Bows from the sleep into which the old

musician had not long since fallen, and Huxter having aided to disrobe

his tipsy patient, and ascertained that no bones were broken, helped him

to bed and applied compresses an water to one of his knees and shins,

which, with the pair of trousers which encased them, Costigan had

severely torn in his fall. At the General's age, and with his habit of

body, such wounds as he had inflicted on himself are slow to heal: a

good deal of inflammation ensued, and the old fellow lay ill for some

days, suffering both pain and fever.

Mr. Huxter undertook the case of his interesting patient with great

confidence and alacrity, and conducted it with becoming skill. He

visited his friend day after day, and consoled him with lively rattle

and conversation for the absence of the society which Costigan needed,

and of which he was an ornament; and he gave special instructions to the

invalid's nurse about the quantity of whisky which the patient was to

take--instructions which, as the poor old fellow could not for many days

get out of his bed or sofa himself, he could not by any means infringe.

Bows, Mrs. Bolton, and our little friend Fanny, when able to do so,

officiated at the General's bedside, and the old warrior was made as

comfortable as possible under his calamity.

Thus Huxter, whose affable manners and social turn made him

quickly intimate with persons in whose society he fell, and whose

over-refinement did not lead them to repulse the familiarities of this

young gentleman, became pretty soon intimate in Shepherd's Inn, both

with our acquaintances in the garrets and those in the porter's lodge.

He thought he had seen Fanny somewhere: he felt certain that he had: but

it is no wonder that he should not accurately remember her, for the poor

little thing never chose to tell him where she had met him: he himself

had seen her at a period, when his own views both of persons and of

right and wrong were clouded by the excitement of drinking and dancing,

and also little Fanny was very much changed and worn by the fever and

agitation, and passion and despair, which the past three weeks had

poured upon the head of that little victim. Borne down was the head now,

and very pale and wan the face; and many and many a time the sad eyes

had looked into the postman's, as he came to the Inn, and the sickened

heart had sunk as he passed away. When Mr. Costigan's accident occurred,

Fanny was rather glad to have an opportunity of being useful and doing

something kind--something that would make her forget her own little

sorrows perhaps: she felt she bore them better whilst she did her duty,

though I dare say many a tear dropped into the old Irishman's gruel. Ah,

me! stir the gruel well, and have courage, little Fanny! If everybody

who has suffered from your complaint were to die of it straightway, what

a fine year the undertakers would have!

Whether from compassion for his only patient, or delight in his society,

Mr. Huxter found now occasion to visit Costigan two or three times in

the day at least, and if any of the members of the porter's lodge family

were not in attendance on the General, the young doctor was sure to have

some particular directions to address to those at their own place of

habitation. He was a kind fellow; he made or purchased toys for the

children; he brought them apples and brandy-balls; he brought a mask and

frightened them with it, and caused a smile upon the face of pale Fanny.

He called Mrs. Bolton Mrs. B., and was very intimate, familiar, and

facetious with that lady, quite different from that "aughty, artless

beast," as Mrs. Bolton now denominated a certain young gentleman of our

acquaintance, and whom she now vowed she never could abear.

It was from this lady, who was very free in her conversation, that

Huxter presently learnt what was the illness which was evidently preying

upon little Fan, and what had been Pen's behaviour regarding her.

Mrs. Bolton's account of the transaction was not, it may be imagined,

entirely an impartial narrative. One would have thought from her story

that the young gentleman had employed a course of the most persevering

and flagitious artifices to win the girl's heart, had broken the most

solemn promises made to her and was a wretch to be hated and chastised

by every champion of woman. Huxter, in his present frame of mind

respecting Arthur, and suffering under the latter's contumely, was

ready, of course, to take all for granted that was said in the disfavour

of this unfortunate convalescent. But why did he not write home to

Clavering, as he had done previously, giving an account of Pen's

misconduct, and of the particulars regarding it, which had now come to

his knowledge? He soon, in a letter to his brother-in-law, announced

that that nice young man, Mr. Pendennis, had escaped narrowly from a

fever, and that no doubt all Clavering, where he was so popular, would

be pleased at his recovery; and he mentioned that he had an interesting

case of compound fracture, an officer of distinction, which kept him

in town; but as for Fanny Bolton, he made no more mention of her in his

letters--no more than Pen himself had made mention of her. O you mothers

at home, how much do you think you know about your lads? How much do you

think you know?

But with Bows, there was no reason why Huxter should not speak his mind,

and so, a very short time after his conversation with Mrs. Bolton, Mr.

Sam talked to the musician about his early acquaintance with Pendennis;

described him as a confounded conceited blackguard, and expressed a

determination to punch his impudent head as soon as ever he should be

well enough to stand up like a man.

Then it was that Bows on his part spoke and told his version of the

story, whereof Arthur and little Fan were the hero and heroine; how they

had met by no contrivance of the former, but by a blunder of the

old Irishman, now in bed with a broken shin--how Pen had acted with

manliness and self-control in the business--how Mrs Bolton was an idiot;

and he related the conversation which he, Bows, had had with Pen, and

the sentiments uttered by the young man. Perhaps Bow's story caused some

twinges of conscience in the breast of Pen's accuser, and that gentleman

frankly owned that he had been wrong with regard to Arthur, and withdrew

his project for punching Mr. Pendennis's head.

But the cessation of his hostility for Pen did not diminish Huxter's

attentions to Fanny, which unlucky Mr Bows marked with his usual

jealousy and bitterness of spirit, "I have but to like anybody" the old

fellow thought, "and somebody is sure to come and be preferred to me. It

has been the same ill-luck with me since I was a lad, until now that I

am sixty years old. What can such a man as I am expect better than to be

laughed at? It is for the young to succeed, and to be happy, and not for

old fools like me. I've played a second fiddle through life," he said,

with a bitter laugh; "how can I suppose the luck is to change after it

has gone against me so long?" This was the selfish way in which Bows

looked at the state of affairs: though few persons would have thought

there was any cause for his jealousy, who looked at the pale and

grief-stricken countenance of the hapless little girl, its object.

Fanny received Huxter's good-natured efforts at consolation and kind

attentions kindly. She laughed now and again at his jokes and games with

her little sisters, but relapsed quickly into a dejection which ought to

have satisfied Mr. Bows that the new-comer had no place in her heart as

yet, had jealous Mr. Bows been enabled to see with clear eyes.

But Bows did not. Fanny attributed Pen's silence somehow to Bows's

interference. Fanny hated him. Fanny treated Bows with constant cruelty

and injustice. She turned from him when he spoke--she loathed his

attempts at consolation. A hard life had Mr. Bows, and a cruel return

for his regard.

When Warrington came to Shepherd's Inn as Pen's ambassador, it was for

Mr. Bows's apartments he inquired (no doubt upon a previous agreement

with the principal for whom he acted in this delicate negotiation), and

he did not so much as catch a glimpse of Miss Fanny when he stopped at

the Inn-gate and made his inquiry. Warrington was, of course, directed

to the musician's chambers, and found him tending the patient there,

from whose chamber he came out to wait upon his guest. We have said that

they had been previously known to one another, and the pair shook hands

with sufficient cordiality. After a little preliminary talk, Warrington

said that he had come from his friend Arthur Pendennis, and from his

family, to thank Bows for his attention at the commencement of Pen's

illness, and for his kindness in hastening into the country to fetch the

Major.

Bows replied that it was but his duty: he had never thought to have

seen the young gentleman alive again when he went in search of Pen's

relatives, and he was very glad of Mr. Pendennis's recovery, and that

he had his friends with him. "Lucky are they who have friends, Mr.

Warrington," said the musician. "I might be up in this garret and nobody

would care for me, or mind whether I was alive or dead."

"What! not the General, Mr. Bows?" Warrington asked.

"The General likes his whisky-bottle more than anything in life," the

other answered; "we live together from habit and convenience; and he

cares for me no more than you do. What is it you want to ask me, Mr.

Warrington? You ain't come to visit me, I know very well. Nobody comes

to visit me. It is about Fanny, the porter's daughter, you are come--I

see that--very well. Is Mr. Pendennis, now he has got well, anxious

to see her again? Does his lordship the Sultan propose to throw his

'andkerchief to her? She has been very ill, sir, ever since the day when

Mrs. Pendennis turned her out of doors--kind of a lady, wasn't it?

The poor girl and myself found the young gentleman raving in a fever,

knowing nobody, with nobody to tend him but his drunken laundress--she

watched day and night by him. I set off to fetch his uncle. Mamma comes

and turns Fanny to the right-about. Uncle comes and leaves me to pay the

cab. Carry my compliments to the ladies and gentleman, and say we are

both very thankful, very. Why, a countess couldn't have behaved better,

and for an apothecary's lady, as I'm given to understand Mrs. Pendennis

was--I'm sure her behaviour is most uncommon aristocratic and genteel.

She ought to have a double-gilt pestle and mortar to her coach."

It was from Mr. Huxter that Bows had learned Pen's parentage, no doubt,

and if he took Pen's part against the young surgeon, and Fanny's against

Mr. Pendennis, it was because the old gentleman was in so savage a mood,

that his humour was to contradict everybody.

Warrington was curious, and not ill pleased at the musician's taunts and

irascibility. "I never heard of these transactions," he said, "or got

but a very imperfect account of them from Major Pendennis. What was a

lady to do? I think (I have never spoken with her on the subject) she

had some notion that the young woman and my friend Pen were on--on

terms of--of an intimacy which Mrs. Pendennis could not, of course,

recognise----"

"Oh, of course not, sir. Speak out, sir; say what you mean at once,

that the young gentleman of the Temple had made a victim of the girl of

Shepherd's Inn, eh? And so she was turned to be out of doors--or brayed

alive in the double-gilt pestle and mortar, by Jove! No, Mr. Warrington,

there was no such thing: there was no victimising, or if there was,

Mr. Arthur was the victim, not the girl. He is an honest fellow, he is,

though he is conceited, and a puppy sometimes. He can feel like a man,

and run away from temptation like a man. I own it, though I suffer by

it, I own it. He has a heart, he has: but the girl hasn't, sir. That

girl will do anything to win a man, and fling him away without a pang,

sir. If she's flung away herself, sir, she'll feel it and cry. She had a

fever when Mrs. Pendennis turned her out of doors; and she made love to

the Doctor, Doctor Goodenough, who came to cure her. Now she has taken

on with another chap--another sawbones, ha, ha! d---- it, sir, she likes

the pestle and mortar, and hangs round the pill-boxes, she's so fond

of 'em, and she has got a fellow from Saint Bartholomew's, who grins

through a horse-collar for her sisters, and charms away her melancholy.

Go and see, sir: very likely he's in the lodge now. If you want news

about Miss Fanny, you must ask at the Doctor's shop, sir, not of an old

fiddler like me--Good-bye, sir. There's my patient calling."

And a voice was heard from the Captain's bedroom, a well-known voice,

which said, "I'd loike a dthrop of dthrink, Bows, I'm thirstee." And

not sorry, perhaps, to hear that such was the state of things, and that

Pen's forsaken was consoling herself, Warrington took his leave of the

irascible musician.

As luck would have it, he passed the lodge door just as Mr. Huxter was

in the act of frightening the children with the mask whereof we have

spoken, and Fanny was smiling languidly at his farces. Warrington

laughed bitterly. "Are all women like that?" he thought. "I think

there's one that's not," he added, with a sigh.

At Piccadilly, waiting for the Richmond omnibus, George fell in with

Major Pendennis, bound in the same direction, and he told the old

gentleman of what he had seen and heard respecting Fanny.

Major Pendennis was highly delighted: and as might be expected of such

a philosopher, made precisely the same observation as that which had

escaped from Warrington. "All women are the same," he said. "La petite

se console. Daymy, when I used to read 'Telemaque' at school, Calypso ne

pouvait se consoler,--you know the rest, Warrington,--I used to say

it was absard. Absard, by Gad, and so it is. And so she's got a new

soupirant, has she, the little porteress? Dayvlish nice little girl. How

mad Pen will be--eh, Warrington? But we must break it to him gently, or

he'll be in such a rage that he will be going after her again. We must

menager the young fellow."

"I think Mrs. Pendennis ought to know that Pen acted very well in the

business. She evidently thinks him guilty, and according to Mr. Bows,

Arthur behaved like a good fellow," Warrington said.

"My dear Warrington," said the Major, with a look of some alarm, "in

Mrs. Pendennis's agitated state of health and that sort of thing, the

best way, I think, is not to say a single word about the subject--or,

stay, leave it to me: and I'll talk to her--break it to her gently,

you know, and that sort of thing. I give you my word I will. And so

Calypso's consoled, is she," And he sniggered over this gratifying

truth, happy in the corner of the omnibus during the rest of the

journey.

Pen was very anxious to hear from his envoy what had been the result of

the latter's mission; and as soon as the two young men could be alone,

the ambassador spoke in reply to Arthur's eager queries.

"You remember your poem, Pen, of Ariadne in Naxos," Warrington said;

"devilish bad poetry it was, to be sure."

"Apres?" asked Pen, in a great state of excitement.

"When Theseus left Ariadne, do you remember what happened to her, young

fellow?"

"It's a lie, it's a lie! You don't mean that!" cried out Pen, starting

up, his face turning red.

"Sit down, stoopid," Warrington said, and with two fingers pushed Pen

back into his seat again. "It's better for you as it is, young one," he

said sadly, in reply to the savage flush in Arthur's face.

CHAPTER LVII. Foreign Ground

Worthy Major Pendennis fulfilled his promise to Warrington so far as to

satisfy his own conscience, and in so far to ease poor Helen with regard

to her son, as to make her understand that all connexion between Arthur

and the odious little gatekeeper was at an end, and that she need

have no further anxiety with respect to an imprudent attachment or a

degrading marriage on Pen's part. And that young fellow's mind was also

relieved (after he had recovered the shock to his vanity) by thinking

that Miss Fanny was not going to die of love for him, and that no

unpleasant consequences were to be apprehended from the luckless and

brief connexion.

So the whole party were free to carry into effect their projected

Continental trip, and Arthur Pendennis, rentier, voyageant avec Madame

Pendennis and Mademoiselle Bell, and George Warrington, particulier, age

de 32 ans, taille 6 pieds (Anglais), figure ordinaire, cheveux noirs,

barbe idem, etc., procured passports from the consul of H.M. the King of

the Belgians at Dover, and passed over from that port to Ostend, whence

the party took their way leisurely, visiting Bruges and Ghent on their

way to Brussels and the Rhine. It is not our purpose to describe this

oft-travelled tour, or Laura's delight at the tranquil and ancient

cities which she saw for the first time, or Helen's wonder and interest

at the Beguine convents which they visited, or the almost terror with

which she saw the black-veiled nuns with outstretched arms kneeling

before the illuminated altars, and beheld the strange pomps and

ceremonials of the Catholic worship. Barefooted friars in the streets;

crowned images of Saints and Virgins in the churches before which people

were bowing down and worshipping, in direct defiance, as she held,

of the written law; priests in gorgeous robes, or lurking in dark

confessionals; theatres opened, and people dancing on Sundays,--all

these new sights and manners shocked and bewildered the simple country

lady; and when the young men after their evening drive or walk returned

to the widow and her adopted daughter, they found their books of

devotion on the table, and at their entrance Laura would commonly cease

reading some of the psalms or the sacred pages which, of all others,

Helen loved. The late events connected with her son had cruelly shaken

her; Laura watched with intense, though hidden anxiety, every movement

of her dearest friend; and poor Pen was most constant and affectionate

in waiting upon his mother, whose wounded bosom yearned with love

towards him, though there was a secret between them, and an anguish or

rage almost on the mother's part, to think that she was dispossessed

somehow of her son's heart, or that there were recesses in it which she

must not or dared not enter. She sickened as she thought of the sacred

days of boyhood when it had not been so--when her Arthur's heart had

no secrets, and she was his all in all: when he poured his hopes and

pleasures, his childish griefs, vanities, triumphs into her willing

and tender embrace; when her home was his nest still; and before fate,

selfishness, nature, had driven him forth on wayward wings--to range his

own flight--to sing his own song--and to seek his own home and his own

mate. Watching this devouring care and racking disappointment in her

friend, Laura once said to Helen, "If Pen had loved me as you wished,

I should have gained him, but I should have lost you, mamma, I know I

should; and I like you to love me best. Men do not know what it is to

love as we do, I think,"--and Helen, sighing, agreed to this portion of

the young lady's speech, though she protested against the former part.

For my part I suppose Miss Laura was right in both statements, and

with regard to the latter assertion especially, that it is an old and

received truism--love is an hour with us: it is all night and all

day with a woman. Damon has taxes, sermon, parade, tailors' bills,

parliamentary duties, and the deuce knows what to think of; Delia has

to think about Damon--Damon is the oak (or the post) and stands up, and

Delia is the ivy or the honeysuckle whose arms twine about him. Is it

not so, Delia? Is it not your nature to creep about his feet and kiss

them, to twine round his trunk and hang there; and Damon's to stand like

a British man with his hands in his breeches pocket, while the pretty

fond parasite clings round him?

Old Pendennis had only accompanied our friends to the water's edge,

and left them on board the boat, giving the chief charge of the little

expedition to Warrington. He himself was bound on a brief visit to the

house of a great man, a friend of his, after which sojourn he proposed

to join his sister-in-law at the German watering-place, whither the

party was bound. The Major himself thought that his long attentions to

his sick family had earned for him a little relaxation--and though the

best of the partridges were thinned off, the pheasants were still to

be shot at Stillbrook, where the noble owner still was; old Pendennis

betook himself to that hospitable mansion and disported there with

great comfort to himself. A royal Duke, some foreigners of note, some

illustrious statesmen, and some pleasant people visited it: it did the

old fellow's heart good to see his name in the Morning Post amongst

the list of the distinguished company which the Marquis of Steyne was

entertaining at his country-house at Stillbrook. He was a very useful

and pleasant personage in a country-house. He entertained the young

men with queer little anecdotes and grivoises stories on their

shooting-parties or in their smoking-room, where they laughed at him and

with him. He was obsequious with the ladies of a morning, in the

rooms dedicated to them. He walked the new arrivals about the park and

gardens, and showed them the carte du pays, and where there was the best

view of the mansion, and where the most favourable point to look at the

lake: he showed, where the timber was to be felled, and where the old

road went before the new bridge was built, and the hill cut down; and

where the place in the wood was where old Lord Lynx discovered Sir

Phelim O'Neal on his knees before her ladyship, etc. etc.; he called

the lodge-keepers and gardeners by their names; he knew the number of

domestics that sat down in the housekeeper's room, and how many dined

in the servants'-hall; he had a word for everybody, and about everybody,

and a little against everybody. He was invaluable in a country-house, in

a word: and richly merited and enjoyed his vacation after his labours.

And perhaps whilst he was thus deservedly enjoying himself with his

country friends, the Major was not ill pleased at transferring to

Warrington the command of the family expedition to the Continent, and

thus perforce keeping him in the service of the ladies,--a servitude

which George was only too willing to undergo, for his friend's sake, and

for that of a society which he found daily more delightful. Warrington

was a good German scholar, and was willing to give Miss Laura lessons in

the language, who was very glad to improve herself, though Pen, for his

part, was too weak or lazy now to resume his German studies. Warrington

acted as courier and interpreter; Warrington saw the baggage in and out

of ships, inns and carriages, managed the money matters, and put the

little troop into marching order. Warrington found out where the English

church was, and, if Mrs. Pendennis and Miss Laura were inclined to go

thither, walked with great decorum along with them. Warrington walked

by Mrs. Pendennis's donkey, when that lady went out on her evening

excursions; or took carriages for her; or got 'Galignani' for her; or

devised comfortable seats under the lime-trees for her, when the guests

paraded after dinner, and the Kursaal band at the bath, where our tired

friends stopped, performed their pleasant music under the trees. Many

a fine whiskered Prussian or French dandy, come to the bath for the

'Trente-et-quarante,' cast glances of longing towards the pretty

fresh-coloured English girl who accompanied the pale widow, and would

have longed to take a turn with her at the galop or the waltz. But

Laura did not appear in the ballroom, except once or twice, when Pen

vouchsafed to walk with her; and as for Warrington, that rough diamond

had not had the polish of a dancing-master, and he did not know how to

waltz,--though he would have liked to learn, if he could have had such a

partner as Laura.--Such a partner! psha, what had a stiff bachelor to do

with partners and waltzing? what was he about, dancing attendance here?

drinking in sweet pleasure at a risk he knows not of what after-sadness,

and regret, and lonely longing? But yet he stayed on. You would have

said he was the widow's son, to watch his constant care and watchfulness

of her; or that he was an adventurer, and wanted to marry her fortune,

or, at any rate, that he wanted some very great treasure or benefit

from her,--and very likely he did,--for ours, as the reader has possibly

already discovered, is a Selfish Story, and almost every person,

according to his nature, more or less generous than George, and

according to the way of the world as it seems to us, is occupied about

Number One. So Warrington selfishly devoted himself to Helen, who

selfishly devoted herself to Pen, who selfishly devoted himself to

himself at this present period, having no other personage or object

to occupy him, except, indeed, his mother's health, which gave him a

serious and real disquiet; but though they, sate together, they did not

talk much, and the cloud was always between them.

Every day Laura looked for Warrington, and received him with more frank

and eager welcome. He found himself talking to her as he didn't

know himself that he could talk. He found himself performing acts of

gallantry which astounded him after the performance: he found himself

looking blankly in the glass at the crow's feet round his eyes, and at

some streaks of white in his hair, and some intrusive silver bristles in

his grim, blue beard. He found himself looking at the young bucks at the

bath--at the bland, tight-waisted Germans--at the capering Frenchmen,

with their lacquered mustachios and trim varnished boots--at the English

dandies, Pen amongst them, with their calm domineering air, and insolent

languor: and envied each one of these some excellence or quality of

youth, or good looks, which he possessed, and of which Warrington felt

the need. And every night, as the night came, he quitted the little

circle with greater reluctance; and, retiring to his own lodging in

their neighbourhood, felt himself the more lonely and unhappy. The widow

could not help seeing his attachment. She understood, now, why Major

Pendennis (always a tacit enemy of her darling project) had been so

eager that Warrington should be of their party. Laura frankly owned

her great, her enthusiastic, regard for him: and Arthur would make no

movement. Arthur did not choose to see what was going on; or did not

care to prevent, or actually encouraged, it. She remembered his often

having said that he could not understand how a man proposed to a woman

twice. She was in torture--at secret feud with her son, of all objects

in the world the dearest to her--in doubt, which she dared not express

to herself, about Laura--averse to Warrington, the good and generous. No

wonder that the healing waters of Rosenbad did not do her good, or that

Doctor von Glauber, the bath physician, when he came to visit her, found

that the poor lady made no progress to recovery. Meanwhile Pen got

well rapidly; slept with immense perseverance twelve hours out of the

twenty-four; ate huge meals; and, at the end of a couple of months, had

almost got back the bodily strength and weight which he had possessed

before his illness.

After they had passed some fifteen days at their place of rest and

refreshment, a letter came from Major Pendennis announcing his speedy

arrival at Rosenbad, and, soon after the letter, the Major himself made

his appearance accompanied by Morgan his faithful valet, without whom

the old gentleman could not move. When the Major travelled he wore a

jaunty and juvenile travelling costume; to see his back still you

would have taken him for one of the young fellows whose slim waist and

youthful appearance Warrington was beginning to envy. It was not until

the worthy man began to move, that the observer remarked that Time had

weakened his ancient knees, and had unkindly interfered to impede

the action of the natty little varnished boots in which the gay old

traveller still pinched his toes. There were magnates both of our own

country and of foreign nations present that autumn at Rosenbad. The

elder Pendennis read over the strangers' list with great gratification

on the night of his arrival, was pleased to find several of his

acquaintances among the great folks, and would have the honour of

presenting his nephew to a German Grand Duchess, a Russian Princess, and

an English Marquis, before many days were over: nor was Pen by any means

averse to making the acquaintance of these great personages, having a

liking for polite life, and all the splendours and amenities belonging

to it. That very evening the resolute old gentleman, leaning on his

nephew's arm, made his appearance in the halls of the Kursaal, and lost

or won a napoleon or two at the table of 'Trente-et-quarante.' He did

not play to lose, he said, or to win, but he did as other folks did,

and betted his napoleon and took his luck as it came. He pointed out the

Russians and Spaniards gambling for heaps of gold, and denounced their

eagerness as something sordid and barbarous; an English gentleman should

play where the fashion is play, but should not elate or depress himself

at the sport; and he told how he had seen his friend the Marquis of

Steyne, when Lord Gaunt, lose eighteen thousand at a sitting, and break

the bank three nights running at Paris, without ever showing the least

emotion at his defeat or victory. "And that's what I call being an

English gentleman, Pen, my dear boy," the old gentleman said, warming as

he prattled about his recollections--"what I call the great manner

only remains with us and with a few families in France." And as Russian

Princesses passed him, whose reputation had long ceased to be doubtful,

and damaged English ladies, who are constantly seen in company of

their faithful attendant for the time being in these gay haunts of

dissipation, the old Major, with eager garrulity and mischievous relish,

told his nephew wonderful particulars regarding the lives of these

heroines; and diverted the young man with a thousand scandals. Egad,

he felt himself quite young again, he remarked to Pen, as, rouged

and grinning, her enormous chasseur behind her bearing her shawl,

the Princess Obstropski smiled and recognised and accosted him. He

remembered her in '14 when she was an actress of the Paris Boulevard,

and the Emperor Alexander's aide-de-camp Obstropski (a man of great

talents, who knew a good deal about the Emperor Paul's death, and was a

devil to play) married her. He most courteously and respectfully asked

leave to call upon the Princess, and to present to her his nephew, Mr.

Arthur Pendennis; and he pointed out to the latter a half-dozen of

other personages whose names were as famous, and whose histories were

as satisfying. What would poor Helen have thought, could she have heard

those tales, or known to what kind of people her brother-in-law was

presenting her son? Only once, leaning on Arthur's arm, she had passed

through the room where the green tables were prepared for play, and the

croaking croupiers were calling out their fatal words of Rouge gagne and

Couleur perd. She had shrunk terrified out of the pandemonium, imploring

Pen, extorting from him a promise, on his word of honour, that he would

never play at those tables; and the scene which so frightened the simple

widow, only amused the worldly old veteran, and made him young again!

He could breathe the air cheerfully which stifled her. Her right was not

his right: his food was her poison. Human creatures are constituted thus

differently, and with this variety the marvellous world is peopled. To

the credit of Mr. Pen, let it be said, that he kept honestly the promise

made to his mother, and stoutly told his uncle of his intention to abide

by it.

When the Major arrived, his presence somehow cast a damp upon at least

three of the persons of our little party--upon Laura who had anything

but respect for him; upon Warrington, whose manner towards him showed

an involuntary haughtiness and contempt; and upon the timid and alarmed

widow, who dreaded lest he should interfere with her darling, though

almost desperate, projects for her boy. And, indeed, the Major, unknown

to himself, was the bearer of tidings which were to bring about a

catastrophe in the affairs of all our friends.

Pen with his two ladies had apartments in the town of Rosenbad; honest

Warrington had lodgings hard by; the Major, on arrival at Rosenbad, had,

as befitted his dignity, taken his quarters at one of the great hotels,

at the Roman Emperor or the Four Seasons, where two or three hundred

gamblers, pleasure-seekers, or invalids, sate down and over-ate

themselves daily at the enormous table-d'hote. To this hotel Pen went on

the morning after the Major's arrival, dutifully to pay his respects

to his uncle, and found the latter's sitting-room duly prepared and

arranged by Mr. Morgan, with the Major's hats brushed, and his coats

laid out: his despatch-boxes and umbrella-cases, his guidebooks,

passports, maps, and other elaborate necessaries of the English

traveller, all as trim and ready as they could be in their master's own

room in Jermyn Street. Everything was ready, from the medicine-bottle

fresh filled from the pharmacien's, down to the old fellow's

prayer-book, without which he never travelled, for he made a point of

appearing at the English church at every place which he honoured with a

stay "Everybody did it," he said; "every English gentleman did it,"

and this pious man would as soon have thought of not calling upon the

English ambassador in a Continental town, as of not showing himself at

the national place of worship.

The old gentleman had been to take one of the baths for which Rosenbad

is famous, and which everybody takes, and his after-bath toilet was

not yet completed when Pen arrived. The elder called out to Arthur in

a cheery voice from the inner apartment, in which he and Morgan were

engaged, and the valet presently came in, bearing a little packet to

Pen's address--Mr. Arthur's letters and papers, Morgan said, which he

had brought from Mr. Arthur's chambers in London, and which consisted

chiefly of numbers of the Pall Mall Gazette, which our friend Mr.

Finucane thought his collaborateur would like to see. The papers were

tied together: the letters in an envelope, addressed to Pen, in the

last-named gentleman's handwriting.

Amongst the letters there was a little note addressed, as a former

letter we have heard of had been, to "Arther Pendennis, Esquire," which

Arthur opened with a start and a blush, and read with a very keen pang

of interest, and sorrow, and regard. She had come to Arthur's house,

Fanny Bolton said--and found that he was gone--gone away to Germany

without ever leaving a word for her--or answer to her last letter, in

which she prayed but for one word of kindness--or the books which he had

promised her in happier times, before he was ill, and which she should

like to keep in remembrance of him. She said she would not reproach

those who had found her at his bedside when he was in the fever, and

knew nobody, and who had turned the poor girl away without a word. She

thought she should have died, she said, of that, but Doctor Goodenough

had kindly tended her, and kept her life, when, perhaps, the keeping

of it was of no good, and she forgave everybody and as for Arthur, she

would pray for him for ever. And when he was so ill, and they cut off

his hair, she had made so free as to keep one little lock for herself,

and that she owned. And might she still keep it, or would his mamma

order that that should be gave up too? She was willing to obey him in

all things, and couldn't but remember that once he was so kind, oh! so

good and kind! to his poor Fanny.

When Major Pendennis, fresh and smirking from his toilet, came out of

his bedroom to his sitting-room, he found Arthur, with this note before

him, and an expression of savage anger on his face, which surprised

the elder gentleman. "What news from London, my boy?" he rather faintly

asked; "are the duns at you that you look so glum?"

"Do you know anything about this letter, sir?" Arthur asked.

"What letter, my good sir?" said the other dryly, at once perceiving

what had happened.

"You know what I mean--about, about Miss--about Fanny Bolton--the poor

dear little girl," Arthur broke out. "When she was in my room? Was she

there when I was delirious--I fancied she was--was she? Who sent her out

of my chambers? who intercepted her letters to me? Who dared to do it?

Did you do it, uncle?"

"It's not my practice to tamper with gentlemen's letters, or to answer

damned impertinent questions," Major Pendennis cried out, in a great

tremor of emotion and indignation. "There was a girl in your rooms when

I came up at great personal inconvenience, daymy--and to meet with a

return of this kind for my affection to you, is not pleasant, by Gad,

sir--not at all pleasant."

"That's not the question, sir," Arthur said hotly--"and I beg your

pardon, uncle. You were, you always have been, most kind to me: but I

say again, did you say anything harsh to this poor girl? Did you send

her away from me?"

"I never spoke a word to the girl," the uncle said, "and I never sent

her away from you, and know no more about her, and wish to know no more

about her, than about the man in the moon."

"Then it's my mother that did it," Arthur broke out. "Did my mother send

that poor child away?"

"I repeat I know nothing about it, sir," the elder said testily. "Let's

change the subject, if you please."

"I'll never forgive the person who did it," said Arthur, bouncing up and

seizing his hat.

The Major cried out, "Stop, Arthur, for God's sake, stop;" but before he

had uttered his sentence Arthur had rushed out of the room, and at the

next minute the Major saw him striding rapidly down the street that led

towards his home.

"Get breakfast!" said the old fellow to Morgan, and he wagged his head

and sighed as he looked out of the window. "Poor Helen--poor soul!

There'll be a row. I knew there would: and begad all the fat's in the

fire."

When Pen reached home he only found Warrington in the ladies'

drawing-room, waiting their arrival in order to conduct them to the room

where the little English colony at Rosenbad held their Sunday church.

Helen and Laura had not appeared as yet; the former was ailing, and her

daughter was with her. Pen's wrath was so great that he could not defer

expressing it. He flung Fanny's letter across the table to his friend.

"Look there, Warrington," he said; "she tended me in my illness, she

rescued me out of the jaws of death, and this is the way they have

treated the dear little creature. They have kept her letters from me;

they have treated me like a child, and her like a dog, poor thing! My

mother has done this."

"If she has, you must remember it is your mother," Warrington

interposed.

"It only makes the crime the greater, because it is she who has done

it," Pen answered. "She ought to have been the poor girl's defender, not

her enemy: she ought to go down on her knees and ask pardon of her. I

ought! I will! I am shocked at the cruelty which has been shown her.

What? She gave me her all, and this is her return! She sacrifices

everything for me, and they spurn her."

"Hush!" said Warrington, "they can hear you from the next room."

"Hear? let them hear!" Pen cried out, only so much the louder. "Those

may overhear my talk who intercept my letters. I say this poor girl has

been shamefully used, and I will do my best to right her; I will."

The door of the neighbouring room opened, and Laura came forth with a

pale and stern face. She looked at Pen with glances from which beamed

pride, defiance, aversion. "Arthur, your mother is very ill," she said;

"it is a pity that you should speak so loud as to disturb her."

"It is a pity that I should have been obliged to speak at all," Pen

answered. "And I have more to say before I have done."

"I should think what you have to say will hardly be fit for me to hear,"

Laura said, haughtily.

"You are welcome to hear it or not, as you like," said Mr. Pen. "I shall

go in now and speak to my mother."

Laura came rapidly forward, so that she should not be overheard by her

friend within. "Not now, sir," she said to Pen. "You may kill her if you

do. Your conduct has gone far enough to make her wretched."

"What conduct?" cried out Pen, in a fury. "Who dares impugn it?

Who dares meddle with me? Is it you who are the instigator of this

persecution?"

"I said before it was a subject of which it did not become me to hear

or to speak," Laura said. "But as for mamma, if she had acted otherwise

than she did with regard to--to the person about whom you seem to take

such an interest, it would have been I that must have quitted your

house, and not that--that person."

"By heavens! this is too much," Pen cried out, with a violent

execration.

"Perhaps that is what you wished," Laura said, tossing her head up. "No

more of this, if you please; I am not accustomed to hear such subjects

spoken of in such language," and with a stately curtsey the young

lady passed to her room, looking her adversary full in the face as she

retreated and closed the door upon him.

Pen was bewildered with wonder, perplexity, fury, at this monstrous and

unreasonable persecution. He burst out into a loud and bitter laugh as

Laura quitted him, and with sneers and revilings, as a man who jeers

under an operation, ridiculed at once his own pain and his persecutor's

anger. The laugh, which was one of bitter humour, and no unmanly or

unkindly expression of suffering under most cruel and unmerited torture,

was heard in the next apartment, as some of his unlucky previous

expressions had been, and, like them, entirely misinterpreted by the

hearers. It struck like a dagger into the wounded and tender heart of

Helen; it pierced Laura, and inflamed the high-spirited girl with scorn

and anger. "And it was to this hardened libertine," she thought--"to

this boaster of low intrigues, that I had given my heart away." "He

breaks the most sacred laws," thought Helen. "He prefers the creature of

his passion to his own mother; and when he is upbraided, he laughs, and

glories in his crime. 'She gave me her all,' I heard him say it,"

argued the poor widow, "and he boasts of it, and laughs, and breaks his

mother's heart." The emotion, the shame, the grief, the mortification

almost killed her. She felt she should die of his unkindness.

Warrington thought of Laura's speech--"Perhaps that is what you wished."

"She loves Pen still," he said. "It was jealousy made her speak."--"Come

away, Pen. Come away, and let us go to church and get calm. You must

explain this matter to your mother. She does not appear to know the

truth: nor do you quite, my good fellow. Come away, and let us talk

about it." And again he muttered to himself, "'Perhaps that is what you

wished.' Yes, she loves him. Why shouldn't she love him? Whom else would

I have her love? What can she be to me but the dearest and the fairest

and the best of women?"

So, leaving the women similarly engaged within, the two gentlemen walked

away, each occupied with his own thought, and silent for a considerable

space. "I must set this matter right," thought honest George "as she

loves him still--I must set his mind right about the other woman." And

with this charitable thought, the good fellow began to tell more at

large what Bows had said to him regarding Miss Bolton's behaviour and

fickleness, and he described how the girl was no better than a little

light-minded flirt; and, perhaps, he exaggerated the good-humour and

contentedness which he had himself, as he thought, witnessed in her

behaviour in the scene with Mr. Huxter.

Now, all Bows's statements had been coloured by an insane jealousy and

rage on that old man's part; and instead of allaying Pen's renascent

desire to see his little conquest again, Warrington's accounts inflamed

and angered Pendennis, and made him more anxious than before to set

himself right, as he persisted in phrasing it, with Fanny. They arrived

at the church door presently; but scarce one word of the service, and

not a syllable of Mr. Shamble's sermon, did either of them comprehend,

probably--so much was each engaged with his own private speculations.

The Major came up to them after the service, with his well-brushed hat

and wig, and his jauntiest, most cheerful air. He complimented them upon

being seen at church; again he said that every comme-il faut person made

a point of attending the English service abroad; and he walked back with

the young men, prattling to them in garrulous good-humour, and making

bows to his acquaintances as they passed; and thinking innocently that

Pen and George were both highly delighted by his anecdotes, which they

suffered to run on in a scornful and silent acquiescence.

At the time of Mr. Shamble's sermon (an erratic Anglican divine, hired

for the season at places of English resort, and addicted to debts,

drinking, and even to roulette, it was said), Pen, chafing under the

persecution which his womankind inflicted upon him, had been meditating

a great act of revolt and of justice, as he had worked himself up to

believe; and Warrington on his part had been thinking that a crisis

in his affairs had likewise come, and that it was necessary for him to

break away from a connexion which every day made more and more wretched

and dear to him. Yes, the time was come. He took those fatal words,

"Perhaps that is what you wished," as a text for a gloomy homily, which

he preached to himself, in the dark pew of his own heart, whilst Mr.

Shamble was feebly giving utterance to his sermon.

CHAPTER LVIII. "Fairoaks to let"

Our poor widow (with the assistance of her faithful Martha of Fairoaks,

who laughed and wondered at the German ways, and superintend the affairs

of the simple household) had made a little feast in honour of Major

Pendennis's arrival, of which, however, only the Major and his two

younger friends partook, for Helen sent to say that she was too unwell

to dine at their table, and Laura bore her company. The Major talked for

the party, and did not perceive, or choose to perceive, what a gloom

and silence pervaded the other two sharers of the modest dinner. It was

evening before Helen and Laura came into the sitting-room to join the

company there. She came in leaning on Laura, with her back to the waning

light, so that Arthur could not see how pallid and woe-stricken her face

was, and as she went up to Pen, whom she had not seen during the day,

and placed her fond arms on his shoulders and kissed him tenderly, Laura

left her, and moved away to another part of the room. Pen remarked that

his mother's voice and her whole frame trembled, her hand was clammy

cold as she put it up to his forehead, piteously embracing him. The

spectacle of her misery only added, somehow, to the wrath and testiness

of the young man. He scarcely returned the kiss which the suffering lady

gave him: and the countenance with which he met the appeal of her look

was hard and cruel. "She persecutes me," he thought within himself,

"and she comes to me with the air of a martyr!" "You look very ill, my

child," she said. "I don't like to see you look in that way." And she

tottered to a sofa, still holding one of his passive hands in her thin

cold clinging fingers.

"I have had much to annoy me, mother," Pen said, with a throbbing

breast: and as he spoke Helen's heart began to beat so, that she sate

almost dead and speechless with terror.

Warrington, Laura, and Major Pendennis, all remained breathless, aware

that the storm was about to break.

"I have had letters from London," Arthur continued, "and one that has

given me more pain than I ever had in my life. It tells me that

former letters of mine have been intercepted and purloined away from

me;--that--that a young creature who has shown the greatest love and

care for me, has been most cruelly used by--by you, mother."

"For God's sake stop," cried out Warrington. "She's ill--don't you see

she is ill?"

"Let him go on," said the widow, faintly.

"Let him go on and kill her," said Laura, rushing up to her mother's

side. "Speak on, sir, and see her die."

"It is you who are cruel," cried Pen, more exasperated and more savage,

because his own heart, naturally soft and weak, revolted indignantly at

the injustice of the very suffering which was laid at his door. "It is

you that are cruel, who attribute all this pain to me: it is you who are

cruel with your wicked reproaches, your wicked doubts of me, your wicked

persecutions of those who love me,--yes, those who love me, and who

brave everything for me, and whom you despise and trample upon because

they are of lower degree than you. Shall I tell you what I will

do,--what I am resolved to do, now that I know what your conduct has

been?--I will go back to this poor girl whom you turned out of my doors,

and ask her to come back and share my home with me. I'll defy the pride

which persecutes her, and the pitiless suspicion which insults her and

me."

"Do you mean, Pen, that you----" here the widow, with eager eyes and

outstretched hands, was breaking out, but Laura stopped her: "Silence,

hush, dear mother," she cried, and the widow hushed. Savagely as Pen

spoke, she was only too eager to hear what more he had to say. "Go on,

Arthur, go on, Arthur," was all she said, almost swooning away as she

spoke.

"By Gad, I say he shan't go on, or I won't hear him, by Gad," the Major

said, trembling too in his wrath. "If you choose, sir, after all we've

done for you, after all I've done for you myself, to insult your

mother and disgrace your name, by allying yourself with a low-born

kitchen-girl, go and do it, by Gad,--but let us, ma'am, have no more to

do with him. I wash my hands of you, sir,--I wash my hands of you. I'm

an old fellow,--I ain't long for this world. I come of as ancient and

honourable a family as any in England, by Gad, and I did hope, before I

went off the hooks, by Gad, that the fellow that I'd liked, and brought

up, and nursed through life, by Jove, would do something to show me that

our name--yes, the name of Pendennis, by Gad, was left undishonoured

behind us, but if he won't, dammy, I say, amen. By G--, both my father

and my brother Jack were the proudest men in England, and I never

would have thought that there would come this disgrace to my

name,--never--and--and I'm ashamed that it's Arthur Pendennis." The old

fellow's voice here broke off into a sob: it was the second time that

Arthur had brought tears from those wrinkled lids.

The sound of his breaking voice stayed Pen's anger instantly, and he

stopped pacing the room, as he had been doing until that moment. Laura

was by Helen's sofa; and Warrington had remained hitherto an almost

silent, but not uninterested spectator of the family storm. As the

parties were talking, it had grown almost dark; and after the lull which

succeeded the passionate outbreak of the Major, George's deep voice, as

it here broke trembling into the twilight room, was heard with no small

emotion by all.

"Will you let me tell you something about myself, my kind friends?" he

said,--"you have been so good to me, ma'am, you have been so kind to me,

Laura--I hope I may call you so sometimes--my dear Pen and I have been

such friends that I have long wanted to tell you my story such as it

is, and would have told it to you earlier but that it is a sad one and

contains another's secret. However, it may do good for Arthur to know

it--it is that every one here should. It will divert you from thinking

about a subject, which, out of a fatal misconception, has caused a great

deal of pain to all of you. May I please tell you, Mrs. Pendennis?"

"Pray speak," was all Helen said; and indeed she was not much heeding;

her mind was full of another idea with which Pen's words had supplied

her, and she was in a terror of hope that what he had hinted might be as

she wished.

George filled himself a bumper of wine and emptied it, and began to

speak. "You all of you know how you see me," he said, "a man without a

desire to make an advance in the world: careless about reputation; and

living in a garret and from hand to mouth, though I have friends and a

name, and I daresay capabilities of my own, that would serve me if I had

a mind. But mind I have none. I shall die in that garret most likely,

and alone. I nailed myself to that doom in early life. Shall I tell

you what it was that interested me about Arthur years ago, and made me

inclined towards him when first I saw him? The men from our college at

Oxbridge brought up accounts of that early affair with the Chatteris

actress, about whom Pen has talked to me since; and who, but for the

Major's generalship, might have been your daughter-in-law, ma'am. I

can't see Pen in the dark, but he blushes, I'm sure; and I dare say Miss

Bell does; and my friend Major Pendennis, I dare say, laughs as he ought

to do--for he won. What would have been Arthur's lot now had he been

tied at nineteen to an illiterate woman older than himself, with no

qualities in common between them to make one a companion for the other,

no equality, no confidence, and no love speedily? What could he have

been but most miserable? And when he spoke just now and threatened a

similar union, be sure it was but a threat occasioned by anger, which

you must give me leave to say, ma'am, was very natural on his part,

for after a generous and manly conduct--let me say who know the

circumstances well--most generous and manly and self-denying (which is

rare with him),--he has met from some friends of his with a most unkind

suspicion, and has had to complain of the unfair treatment of another

innocent person, towards whom he and you all are under much obligation."

The widow was going to get up here, and Warrington, seeing her attempt

to rise, said, "Do I tire you, ma'am?"

"Oh no--go on--go on," said Helen, delighted, and he continued.

"I liked him, you see, because of that early history of his, which had

come to my ears in college gossip, and because I like a man, if you will

pardon me for saying so, Miss Laura, who shows that he can have a great

unreasonable attachment for a woman. That was why we became friends--and

are all friends here--for always, aren't we?" he added, in a lower

voice, leaning over to her, "and Pen has been a great comfort and

companion to a lonely and unfortunate man.

"I am not complaining of my lot, you see; for no man's is what he would

have it; and up in my garret, where you left the flowers, and with

my old books and my pipe for a wife, I am pretty contented, and only

occasionally envy other men, whose careers in life are more brilliant,

or who can solace their ill fortune by what Fate and my own fault has

deprived me of--the affection of a woman or a child." Here there came a

sigh from somewhere near Warrington in the dark, and a hand was held

out in his direction, which, however, was instantly, withdrawn, for the

prudery of our females is such, that before all expression of feeling,

or natural kindness and regard, a woman is 'taught to think of herself

and the proprieties, and to be ready to blush at the very slightest

notice;' and checking, as, of course, it ought, this spontaneous motion,

modesty drew up again, kindly friendship shrank back ashamed of itself,

and Warrington resumed his history. "My fate is such as I made it, and

not lucky for me or for others involved in it.

"I, too, had an adventure before I went to college; and there was no

one to save me as Major Pendennis saved Pen. Pardon me, Miss Laura, if

I tell this story before you. It is as well that you all of you should

hear my confession. Before I went to college, as a boy of eighteen, I

was at a private tutor's, and there, like Arthur, I became attached, or

fancied I was attached, to a woman of a much lower degree and a greater

age than my own. You shrink from me----"

"No, I don't," Laura said, and here the hand went out resolutely,

and laid itself in Warrington's. She had divined his story from some

previous hints let fall by him, and his first words at its commencement.

"She was a yeoman's daughter in the neighbourhood," Warrington said,

with rather a faltering voice, "and I fancied--what all young men fancy.

Her parents knew who my father was, and encouraged me, with all sorts of

coarse artifices and scoundrel flatteries, which I see now, about their

house. To do her justice, I own she never cared for me, but was forced

into what happened by the threats and compulsion of her family. Would to

God that I had not been deceived: but in these matters we are deceived

because we wish to be so, and I thought I loved that poor woman.

"What could come of such a marriage? I found, before long, that I was

married to a boor. She could not comprehend one subject that interested

me. Her dulness palled upon me till I grew to loathe it. And after some

time of a wretched, furtive union--I must tell you all--I found letters

somewhere (and such letters they were!) which showed me that her heart,

such as it was, had never been mine, but had always belonged to a person

of her own degree.

"At my father's death, I paid what debts I had contracted at college,

and settled every shilling which remained to me in an annuity upon--upon

those who bore my name, on condition that they should hide themselves

away, and not assume it. They have kept that condition, as they would

break it, for more money. If I had earned fame or reputation, that woman

would have come to claim it: if I had made a name for myself those who

no right to it would have borne it; and I entered life at twenty, God

help me--hopeless and ruined beyond remission. I was the boyish victim

of vulgar cheats, and, perhaps, it is only of late I have found out how

hard--ah, how hard--it is to forgive them. I told you the moral before,

Pen; and now I have told you the fable. Beware how you marry out of

your degree. I was made for a better lot than this, I think: but God has

awarded me this one--and so, you see, it is for me to look on, and see

others successful and others happy, with a heart that shall be as little

bitter as possible."

"By Gad, sir," cried the Major, in high good-humour, "I intended you to

marry Miss Laura here."

"And, by Gad, Master Shallow, I owe you a thousand pound," Warrington

said.

"How d'ye mean a thousand? it was only a pony, sir," replied the Major

simply, at which the other laughed.

As for Helen, she was so delighted, that she started up, and said, "God

bless you--God for ever bless you, Mr. Warrington;" and kissed both his

hands, and ran up to Pen, and fell into his arms.

"Yes, dearest mother," he said as he held her to him, and with a noble

tenderness and emotion, embraced and forgave her. "I am innocent, and my

dear, dear mother has done me a wrong."

"Oh yes, my child, I have wronged you, thank God, I have wronged you!"

Helen whispered. "Come away, Arthur--not here--I want to ask my child to

forgive me--and--and my God, to forgive me; and to bless you, and love

you, my son."

He led her, tottering, into her room, and closed the door, as the three

touched spectators of the reconciliation looked on in pleased silence.

Ever after, ever after, the tender accents of that voice faltering

sweetly at his ear--the look of the sacred eyes beaming with

an affection unutterable--the quiver of the fond lips smiling

mournfully--were remembered by the young man. And at his best moments,

and at his hours of trial and grief, and at his times of success or

well-doing, the mother's face looked down upon him, and blessed him with

its gaze of pity and purity, as he saw it in that night when she yet

lingered with him; and when she seemed, ere she quite left him, an

angel, transfigured and glorified with love--for which love, as for the

greatest of the bounties and wonders of God's provision for us, let us

kneel and thank Our Father.

The moon had risen by this time; Arthur recollected well afterwards how

it lighted up his mother's sweet pale face. Their talk, or his rather,

for she scarcely could speak, was more tender and confidential than

it had been for years before. He was the frank and generous boy of her

early days and love. He told her the story, the mistake regarding which

had caused her so much pain--his struggles to fly from temptation, and

his thankfulness that he had been able to overcome it. He never would

do the girl wrong, never; or wound his own honour or his mother's

pure heart. The threat that he would return was uttered in a moment of

exasperation, of which he repented. He never would see her again. But

his mother said yes he should; and it was she who had been proud and

culpable--and she would like to give Fanny Bolton something--and she

begged her dear boy's pardon for opening the letter--and she would write

to the young girl, if,--if she had time. Poor thing! was it not natural

that she should love her Arthur? And again she kissed him, and she

blessed him.

As they were talking the clock struck nine, and Helen reminded him how,

when he was a little boy, she used to go up to his bedroom at that hour,

and hear him say Our Father. And once more, oh, once more, the young man

fell down at his mother's sacred knees, and sobbed out the prayer which

the Divine Tenderness uttered for us, and which has been echoed by

twenty ages since by millions of sinful and humbled men. And as he spoke

the last words of the supplication, the mother's head fell down on her

boy's, and her arms closed round him, and together they repeated the

words "for ever and ever" and "Amen."

A little time after, it might have been a quarter of an hour, Laura

heard Arthur's voice call from within, "Laura! Laura!" She rushed into

the room instantly and found the young man still on his knees, and

holding his mother's hand. Helen's head had sunk back and was quite

pale in the room. Pen looked round, scared with a ghastly terror. "Help,

Laura, help!" he said, "she's fainted--she's----"

Laura screamed, and fell by the side of Helen. The shriek brought

Warrington and Major Pendennis and the servants to the room. The

sainted woman was dead. The last emotion of her soul here was joy to be

henceforth unchequered and eternal. The tender heart beat no more; it

was to have no more pangs, no more doubts, no more griefs and trials.

Its last throb was love; and Helen's last breath was a benediction.

The melancholy party bent their way speedily homewards, and Helen was

laid by her husband's side at Clavering, in the old church where she had

prayed so often. For a while Laura went to stay with Dr. Portman, who

read the service over his dear departed sister, amidst his own sobs and

those of the little congregation which assembled round Helen's tomb.

There were not many who cared for her, or who spoke of her when gone.

Scarcely more than of a nun in a cloister did people know of that pious

and gentle lady. A few words among the cottagers whom her bounty was

accustomed to relieve, a little talk from house to house at Clavering,

where this lady told how their neighbour died of a complaint in the

heart; whilst that speculated upon the amount of a property which the

widow had left; and a third wondered whether Arthur would let Fairoaks

or live in it, and expected that he would not be long getting through

his property,--this was all, and except with one or two who cherished

her, the kind soul was forgotten by the next market-day. Would you

desire that grief for you should last for a few more weeks? and does

after-life seem less solitary, provided that our names, when we "go down

into silence," are echoing on this side of the grave yet for a little

while, and human voices are still talking about us? She was gone, the

pure soul, whom only two or three loved and knew. The great blank she

left was in Laura's heart, to whom her love had been everything, and

who had now but to worship her memory. "I am glad that she gave me

her blessing before she went away," Warrington said to Pen; and as for

Arthur, with a humble acknowledgment and wonder at so much affection, he

hardly dared to ask of Heaven to make him worthy of it, though he felt

that a saint there was interceding for him.

All the lady's affairs were found in perfect order, and her little

property ready for transmission to her son, in trust for whom she

held it. Papers in her desk showed that she had long been aware of the

complaint, one of the heart, under which she laboured, and knew that it

would suddenly remove her: and a prayer was found in her handwriting,

asking that her end might be, as it was, in the arms of her son.

Laura and Arthur talked over her sayings, all of which the former most

fondly remembered, to the young man's shame somewhat, who thought how

much greater her love had been for Helen than his own. He referred

himself entirely to Laura to know what Helen would have wished should be

done; what poor persons she would have liked to relieve; what legacies

or remembrances she would have wished to transmit. They packed up the

vase which Helen in her gratitude had destined to Dr. Goodenough, and

duly sent it to the kind Doctor; a silver coffee-pot, which she used,

was sent off to Portman: a diamond ring, with her hair, was given with

affectionate greeting to Warrington.

It must have been a hard day for poor Laura when she went over to

Fairoaks first and to the little room which she had occupied, and which

was hers no more, and to the widow's own blank chamber in which those

two had passed so many beloved hours. There, of course, were the clothes

in the wardrobe, the cushion on which she prayed, the chair at the

toilette: the glass that was no more to reflect her dear sad face. After

she had been here a while Pen knocked and led her downstairs to the

parlour again, and made her drink a little wine, and said, "God bless

you," as she touched the glass. "Nothing shall ever be changed in your

room," he said--"it is always your room--it is always my sister's room.

Shall it not be so, Laura?" and Laura said, "Yes!"

Among the widow's papers was found a packet, marked by the widow,

"Letters from Laura's father," and which Arthur gave to her. They were

the letters which had passed between the cousins in the early days

before the marriage of either of them. The ink was faded in which they

were written: the tears dried out that both perhaps had shed over them:

the grief healed now whose bitterness they chronicled: the friends

doubtless united whose parting on earth had caused to both pangs so

cruel. And Laura learned fully now for the first time what the tie was

which had bound her so tenderly to Helen: how faithfully her more than

mother had cherished her father's memory, how truly she had loved him,

how meekly resigned him.

One legacy of his mother's Pen remembered, of which Laura could have no

cognisance. It was that wish of Helen's to make some present to Fanny

Bolton; and Pen wrote to her, putting his letter under an envelope to

Mr. Bows, and requesting that gentleman to read it before he delivered

it to Fanny. "Dear Fanny," Pen said, "I have to acknowledge two letters

from you, one of which was delayed in my illness" (Pen found the first

letter in his mother's desk after her decease and the reading it gave

him a strange pang), "and to thank you, my kind nurse and friend, who

watched me so tenderly during my fever. And I have to tell you that the

last words of my dear mother who is no more, were words of goodwill and

gratitude to you for nursing me: and she said she would have written to

you, had she had time--that she would like to ask your pardon if she had

harshly treated you--and that she would beg you to show your forgiveness

by accepting some token of friendship and regard from her." Pen

concluded by saying that his friend, George Warrington, Esq., of Lamb

Court, Temple, was trustee of a little sum of money, of which the

interest would be paid to her until she became of age, or changed her

name, which would always be affectionately remembered by her grateful

friend, A. Pendennis. The sum was in truth but small, although enough to

make a little heiress of Fanny Bolton, whose parents were appeased, and

whose father said Mr. P. had acted quite as the gentleman--though Bows

growled out that that to plaster a wounded heart with a banknote was an

easy kind of sympathy; and poor Fanny felt only too clearly that Pen's

letter was one of farewell.

"Sending hundred-pound notes to porters' daughters is all dev'lish

well," old Major Pendennis said to his nephew (whom, as thee proprietor

of Fairoaks and the head of the family, he now treated with marked

deference and civility), "and as there was a little ready money at the

bank, and your poor mother wished it, there's perhaps no harm done. But,

my good lad, I'd have you to remember that you've not above five hundred

a year, though, thanks to me the world gives you credit for being a

doosid deal better off; and, on my knees, I beg you, my boy, don't break

into your capital: Stick to it, sir; don't speculate with it, sir; keep

your land, and don't borrow on it. Tatham tells me that the Chatteris

branch of the railway may--will almost certainly pass through Chatteris,

and of it can be brought on this side of the Brawl, sir, and through

your fields, they'll be worth a dev'lish deal of money, and your five

hundred a year will jump up to eight or nine. Whatever it is, keep it,

I implore you keep it. And I say, Pen, I think you should give up living

in those dirty chambers in the Temple and let a decent lodging. And I

should have a man, sir, to wait upon me; and a horse or two in town in

the season. All this will pretty well swallow up your income, and I know

you must live close. But remember you have a certain place in society,

and you can't afford to cut a poor figure in the world. What are you

going to do in the winter? You don't intend to stay down here, or, I

suppose, to go on writing for that--what-d'ye-call-'em--that newspaper?"

"Warrington and I are going abroad again, sir, for a little, and then we

shall see what is to be done," Arthur replied.

"And you'll let Fairoaks, of course? Good school in the neighbourhood;

cheap country: dev'lish nice place for East India Colonels, or families

wanting to retire. I'll speak about it at the club; there are lots of

fellows at the club want a place of that sort."

"I hope Laura will live in it for the winter, at least, and will make

it her home," Arthur replied: at which the Major pish'd and psha'd, and

said that there ought to be convents, begad, for English ladies,

and wished that Miss Bell had not been there to interfere with the

arrangements of the family, and that she would mope herself to death

alone in that place.

Indeed, it would have been a very dismal abode for poor Laura, who was

not too happy either in Dr. Portman's household, and in the town where

too many things reminded her of the dear parent whom she had lost. But

old Lady Rockminster, who adored her young friend Laura, as soon as

she read in the paper of her loss, and of her presence in the country,

rushed over from Baymouth, where the old lady was staying, and insisted

that Laura should remain six months, twelve months, all her life with

her; and to her ladyship's house, Martha from Fairoaks, as femme de

chambre, accompanied her young mistress.

Pen and Warrington saw her depart. It was difficult to say which of the

young men seemed to regard her the most tenderly. "Your cousin is pert

and rather vulgar, my dear, but he seems to have a good heart," little

Lady Rockminster said, who said her say about everybody--"but I like

Bluebeard best. Tell me, is he touche au coeur?"

"Mr. Warrington has been long--engaged," Laura said, dropping her eyes.

"Nonsense, child! And good heavens, my dear! that's a pretty diamond

cross. What do you mean by wearing it in the morning?"

"Arthur--my brother, gave it me just now. It was--it was----"

She could not finish the sentence. The carriage passed over the bridge,

and by the dear, dear gate of Fairoaks--home no more.

CHAPTER LIX. Old Friends

It chanced at that great English festival, at which all London takes a

holiday upon Epsom Downs, that a great number of the personages to whom

we have been introduced in the course of this history, were assembled to

see the Derby. In a comfortable open carriage, which had been brought

to the ground by a pair of horses, might be seen Mrs. Bungay, of

Paternoster Row, attired like Solomon in all his glory, and having by

her side modest Mrs. Shandon, for whom, since the commencement of

their acquaintance, the worthy publisher's lady had maintained a steady

friendship. Bungay, having recreated himself with a copious luncheon,

was madly shying at the sticks hard by, till the perspiration ran off

his bald pate. Shandon was shambling about among the drinking tenants

and gipsies: Finucane constant in attendance on the two ladies, to

whom gentlemen of their acquaintance, and connected with the publishing

house, came up to pay a visit.

Among others, Mr. Archer came up to make her his bow, and told Mrs.

Bungay who was on the course. Yonder was the Prime Minister: his

lordship had just told him to back Borax for the race; but Archer

thought Munmeer the better horse. He pointed out countless dukes and

grandees to the delighted Mrs. Bungay. "Look yonder in the Grand Stand,"

he said. "There sits the Chinese Ambassador with the Mandarins of his

suite, Fou-choo-foo brought me over letters of introduction from the

Governor-General of India, my most intimate friend, and I was for some

time very kind to him, and he had his chopsticks laid for him at my

table whenever he chose to come and dine. But he brought his own cook

with him, and--would you believe it, Mrs. Bungay?--one day, when I

was out, and the Ambassador was with Mrs. Archer in our garden eating

gooseberries, of which the Chinese are passionately fond, the beast of

a cook, seeing my wife's dear little Blenheim spaniel (that we had from

the Duke of Marlborough himself, whose ancestor's life Mrs. Archer's

great-great-grandfather saved at the battle of Malplaquet), seized upon

the poor little devil, cut his throat, and skinned him, and served him

up stuffed with forced-meat in the second course."

"Law!" said Mrs. Bungay.

"You may fancy my wife's agony when she knew what had happened! The cook

came screaming upstairs, and told us that she had found poor Fido's skin

in the area, just after we had all of us tasted of the dish! She never

would speak to the Ambassador again--never; and, upon my word, he has

never been to dine with us since. The Lord Mayor, who did me the honour

to dine, liked the dish very much; and, eaten with green peas, it tastes

rather like duck."

"You don't say so, now!" cried the astonished publisher's lady.

"Fact, upon my word. Look at that lady in blue, seated by the

Ambassador: that is Lady Flamingo, and they say she is going to be

married to him, and return to Pekin with his Excellency. She is getting

her feet squeezed down on purpose. But she'll only cripple herself, and

will never be able to do it--never. My wife has the smallest foot in

England, and wears shoes for a six-years-old child; but what is that to

a Chinese lady's foot, Mrs. Bungay?"

"Who is that carriage as Mr. Pendennis is with, Mr. Archer?" Mrs. Bungay

presently asked. "He and Mr. Warrington was here jest now. He's 'aughty

in his manners, that Mr. Pendennis, and well he may be, for I'm told he

keeps tip-top company. 'As he 'ad a large fortune left him, Mr. Archer?

He's in black still, I see."

"Eighteen hundred a year in land, and twenty-two thousand five hundred

in the Three-and-a-half per Cents; that's about it," said Mr. Archer.

"Law! why, you know everything, Mr. A.!" cried the lady of Paternoster

Row.

"I happen to know, because I was called in about poor Mrs. Pendennis's

will," Mr. Archer replied. "Pendennis's uncle, the Major, seldom does

anything without me; and as he is likely to be extravagant we've tied

up the property, so that he can't make ducks and drakes with it.--How do

you do, my lord?--Do you know that gentleman, ladies? You have read his

speeches in the House; it is Lord Rochester."

"Lord Fiddlestick," cried out Finucane, from the box. "Sure it's Tom

Staples, of the Morning Advertiser, Archer."

"Is it?" Archer said, simply. "Well I'm very short-sighted, and upon

my word I thought it was Rochester. That gentleman with the double

opera-glass (another nod) is Lord John; and the tall man with him, don't

you know him? is Sir James."

"You know 'em because you see 'em in the House," growled Finucane.

"I know them because they are kind enough to allow me to call them

my most intimate friends," Archer continued. "Look at the Duke of

Hampshire; what a pattern of a fine old English gentleman! He never

misses 'the Derby.' 'Archer,' he said to me only yesterday, 'I have been

at sixty-five Derbies! appeared on the field for the first time on a

piebald pony when I was seven years old, with my father, the Prince of

Wales, and Colonel Hanger; and only missing two races--one when I had

the measles at Eton, and one in the Waterloo year, when I was with my

friend Wellington in Flanders."

"And who is that yellow carriage, with the pink and yellow parasols,

that Mr. Pendennis is talking to, and ever so many gentlemen?" asked

Mrs. Bungay.

"That is Lady Clavering, of Clavering Park, next estate to my friend

Pendennis. That is the young son and heir upon the box; he's awfully

tipsy, the little scamp! and the young lady is Miss Amory, Lady

Clavering's daughter by a first marriage, and uncommonly sweet upon

my friend Pendennis; but I've reason to think he has his heart fixed

elsewhere. You have heard of young Mr. Foker--the great brewer, Foker,

you know--he was going to hang himself in consequence of a fatal passion

for Miss Amory who refused him, but was cut down just in time by his

valet, and is now abroad, under a keeper."

"How happy that young fellow is!" sighed Mrs. Bungay. "Who'd have

thought when he came so quiet and demure to dine with us, three or four

years ago, he would turn out such a grand character! Why, I saw his name

at Court the other day, and presented by the Marquis of Steyne and all;

and in every party of the nobility his name's down as sure as a gun."

"I introduced him a good deal when he first came up to town," Mr. Archer

said, "and his uncle, Major Pendennis, did the rest. Hallo! There's

Cobden here, of all men in the world! I must go and speak to him.

Good-bye, Mrs. Bungay. Good morning, Mrs. Shandon."

An hour previous to this time, and at a different part of the course,

there might have been seen an old stage-coach, on the battered roof of

which a crowd of shabby raffs were stamping and hallooing, as the great

event of the day--the Derby race--rushed over the greensward, and by the

shouting millions of people assembled to view that magnificent scene.

This was Wheeler's (the Harlequin's Head) drag, which had brought down

a company of choice spirits from Bow Street, with a slap-up luncheon in

the boot. As the whirling race flashed by, each of the choice spirits

bellowed out the name of the horse or the colours which he thought or

he hoped might be foremost. "The Cornet!" "It's Muffineer!" "It's blue

sleeves!" "Yallow cap! yallow cap! yallow cap!" and so forth, yelled the

gentlemen sportsmen during that delicious and thrilling minute before

the contest was decided; and as the fluttering signal blew out, showing

the number of the famous horse Podasokus as winner of the race, one of

the gentlemen on the Harlequin's Head drag sprang up off the roof, as if

he was a pigeon and about to fly away to London or York with the news.

But his elation did not lift him many inches from his standing-place, to

which he came down again on the instant, causing the boards of the crazy

old coach-roof to crack with the weight of his joy. "Hurray, hurray!"

he bawled out, "Podasokus is the horse! Supper for ten, Wheeler, my boy.

Ask you all round of course, and damn the expense."

And the gentlemen on the carriage, the shabby swaggerers, the dubious

bucks, said, "Thank you--congratulate you, Colonel; sup with you with

pleasure:" and whispered to one another, "The Colonel stands to win

fifteen hundred, and he got the odds from a good man, too."

And each of the shabby bucks and dusky dandies began to eye his

neighbour with suspicion, lest that neighbour, taking his advantage,

should get the Colonel into a lonely place and borrow money of him.

And the winner on Podasokus could not be alone during the whole of that

afternoon, so closely did his friends watch him and each other.

At another part of the course you might have seen a vehicle certainly

more modest, if not more shabby than that battered coach which had

brought down the choice spirits from the Harlequin's Head; this was

cab No. 2002, which had conveyed a gentleman and two ladies from the

cabstand in the Strand: whereof one of the ladies, as she sate on the

box of the cab enjoying with her mamma and their companion a repast of

lobster salad and bitter ale, looked so fresh and pretty that many of

the splendid young dandies who were strolling about the course, and

enjoying themselves at the noble diversion of Sticks, and talking to

the beautifully dressed ladies in the beautiful carriages, on the

hill, forsook these fascinations to have a glance at the smiling and

rosy-cheeked lass on the cab. The blushes of youth and good-humour

mantled on the girl's cheeks, and played over that fair countenance

like the pretty shining cloudlets on the serene sky overhead; the

elder lady's cheek was red too; but that was a permanent mottled

rose, deepening only as it received free draughts of pale ale and

brandy-and-water, until her face emulated the rich shell of the lobster

which she devoured.

The gentleman who escorted these two ladies was most active in

attendance upon them: here on the course, as he had been during the

previous journey. During the whole of that animated and delightful drive

from London, his jokes had never ceased. He spoke up undauntedly to the

most awful drags full of the biggest and most solemn guardsmen; as to

the humblest donkey-chaise in which Bob the dustman was driving Molly

to the race. He had fired astonishing volleys of what is called "chaff"

into endless windows as he passed; into lines of grinning girls'

schools; into little regiments of shouting urchins hurraying behind the

railings of their Classical and Commercial Academies; into casements

whence smiling maid-servants, and nurses tossing babies, or demure old

maiden ladies with dissenting countenances, were looking. And the pretty

girl in the straw bonnet with pink ribbon, and her mamma the devourer

of lobsters, had both agreed that when he was in "spirits" there was

nothing like that Mr. Sam. He had crammed the cab with trophies won

from the bankrupt proprietors of the Sticks hard by, and with countless

pincushions, wooden apples, backy-boxes, Jack-in-the-boxes, and little

soldiers. He had brought up a gipsy with a tawny child in her arms to

tell the fortunes of the ladies: and the only cloud which momentarily

obscured the sunshine of that happy party, was when the teller of fate

informed the young lady that had had reason to beware of a fair man,

who was false to her: that she had had a bad illness, and that she would

find that a man would prove true.

The girl looked very much abashed at this news: her mother and the young

man interchanged signs of wonder and intelligence. Perhaps the conjurer

had used the same words to a hundred different carriages on that day.

Making his way solitary amongst the crowd and the carriages, and noting,

according to his wont, the various circumstances and characters which

the animated scene presented, a young friend of ours came suddenly upon

cab 2002, and the little group of persons assembled on the outside

of the vehicle. As he caught sight of the young lady on the box,

she started and turned pale: her mother became redder than ever: the

heretofore gay and triumphant Mr. Sam immediately assumed a fierce and

suspicious look, and his eyes turned savagely from Fanny Bolton (whom

the reader, no doubt, has recognised in the young lady of the cab) to

Arthur Pendennis, advancing to meet her.

Arthur, too, looked dark and suspicious on perceiving Mr. Samuel Huxter

in company with his old acquaintances: his suspicion was that of alarmed

morality, and, I dare say, highly creditable to Mr. Arthur: like the

suspicion of Mrs. Lynx, when she sees Mr. Brown and Mrs. Jones talking

together, or when she remarks Mrs. Lamb twice or thrice in a handsome

opera-box. There may be no harm in the conversation of Mr. B. and Mr.

J.: and Mrs. Lamb's opera-box (though she notoriously can't afford one)

may be honestly come by: but yet a moralist like Mrs. Lynx has a right

to the little precautionary fright: and Arthur was no doubt justified in

adopting that severe demeanour of his.

Fanny's heart began to patter violently: Huxter's fists, plunged into

the pockets of his paletot, clenched themselves involuntarily and armed

themselves, as it were, in ambush: Mrs. Bolton began to talk with all

her might, and with a wonderful volubility: and Lor! she was so 'apply

to see Mr. Pendennis, and how well he was a-lookin', and we'd been

talking' about Mr. P. only jest before; hadn't we, Fanny? and if this

was the famous Epsom races that they talked so much about, she didn't

care, for her part, if she never saw them again. And how was Major

Pendennis, and that kind Mr. Warrington, who brought Mr. P.'s great

kindness to Fanny? and she never would forget it, never: and Mr.

Warrington was so tall, he almost broke his 'ead up against their lodge

door. You recollect Mr. Warrington a-knocking' of his head--don't you,

Fanny?

Whilst Mrs. Bolton was so discoursing, I wonder how many thousands

of thoughts passed through Fanny's mind, and what dear times, sad

struggles, lonely griefs, and subsequent shamefaced consolations were

recalled to her? What pangs had the poor little thing, as she thought

how much she had loved him, and that she loved him no more? There he

stood, about whom she was going to die ten months since, dandified,

supercilious, with a black crape to his white hat, and jet buttons in

his shirt-front and a pink in his coat, that some one else had probably

given him: with the tightest lavender-coloured gloves sewn with black

and the smallest of canes. And Mr. Huxter wore no gloves, and great

Blucher boots, and smelt very much of tobacco certainly; and looked, oh,

it must be owned, he looked as if a bucket of water would do him a great

deal of good! All these thoughts, and a myriad of others, rushed through

Fanny's mind as her mamma was delivering herself of her speech, and as

the girl, from under her eyes, surveyed Pendennis--surveyed him entirely

from head to foot, the circle on his white forehead that his hat left

when he lifted it (his beautiful, beautiful hair had grown again), the

trinkets at his watch-chain, the ring on his hand under his glove, the

neat shining boot, so, so unlike Sam's high-low!--and after her hand had

given a little twittering pressure to the lavender-coloured kid grasp

which was held out to it, and after her mother had delivered herself of

her speech, all Fanny could find to say was, "This is Mr. Samuel Huxter

whom you knew formerly, I believe, sir; Mr. Samuel, you know you knew

Mr. Pendennis formerly--and--and, will you take a little refreshment?"

These little words, tremulous and uncoloured as they were, yet were

understood by Pendennis in such a manner as to take a great load of

suspicion from off his mind--of remorse, perhaps, from his heart. The

frown on the countenance of the Prince of Fairoaks disappeared, and a

good-natured smile and a knowing twinkle of the eyes illuminated his

highness's countenance. "I am very thirsty," he said, "and I will be

glad to drink your health, Fanny; and I hope Mr. Huxter will pardon me

for having been very rude to him the last time we met, and when I was

so ill and out of spirits, that indeed I scarcely knew what I said." And

herewith the lavender-coloured Dexter kid-glove was handed out, in token

of amity, to Huxter.

The dirty fist in the young surgeon's pocket was obliged to undoable

itself, and come out of its ambush disarmed. The poor fellow himself

felt, as he laid it in Pen's hand, how hot his own was, and how

black--it left black marks on Pen's gloves; he saw them,--he would

have liked to have clenched it again and dashed it into the other's

good-humoured face; and have seen, there upon that round, with Fanny,

with all England looking on, which was the best man--he Sam Huxter of

Bartholomew's, or that grinning dandy.

Pen with ineffable good-humour took a glass--he didn't mind what it

was--he was content to drink after the ladies; and he filled it with

frothing lukewarm beer, which he pronounced to be delicious, and which

he drank cordially to the health of the party.

As he was drinking and talking on in an engaging manner, a young lady

in a shot dove-coloured dress, with a white parasol lined with pink,

and the prettiest dove-coloured boots that ever stepped, passed by Pen,

leaning on the arm of a stalwart gentleman with a military moustache.

The young lady clenched her little fist, and gave a mischievous

side-look as she passed Pen. He of the mustachios burst out into a

jolly laugh. He had taken off his hat to the ladies of cab No. 2002. You

should have seen Fanny Bolton's eyes watching after the dove-coloured

young lady. Immediately Huxter perceived the direction which they took,

they ceased looking after the dove-coloured nymph, and they turned

and looked into Sam Huxter's orbs with the most artless good-humoured

expression.

"What a beautiful creature!" Fanny said. "What a lovely dress! Did you

remark, Mr. Sam, such little, little hands?"

"It was Capting Strong," said Mrs. Bolton: "and who was the young woman,

I wonder?"

"A neighbour of mine in the country--Miss 'Amory,'" Arthur said,--"Lady

Clavering's daughter. You've seen Sir Francis often in Shepherd's Inn,

Mrs. Bolton."

As he spoke, Fanny built up a perfect romance in three volumes

love--faithlessness--splendid marriage at St. George's, Hanover

Square--broken-hearted maid--and Sam Huxter was not the hero of that

story--poor Sam, who by this time had got out an exceedingly rank Cuba

cigar, and was smoking it under Fanny's little nose.

After that confounded prig Pendennis joined and left the party, the

sun was less bright to Sam Huxter, the sky less blue--the Sticks had no

attraction for him--the bitter beer hot and undrinkable--the world was

changed. He had a quantity of peas and a tin pea-shooter in the pocket

of the cab for amusement on the homeward route. He didn't take them out,

and forgot their existence until some other wag, on their return from

the races, fired a volley into Sam's sad face; upon which salute, after

a few oaths indicative of surprise, he burst into a savage and sardonic

laugh.

But Fanny was charming all the way home. She coaxed, and snuggled, and

smiled. She laughed pretty laughs; she admired everything; she took out

the darling little Jack-in-the-boxes, and was so obliged to Sam.

And when they got home, and Mr. Huxter, still with darkness on his

countenance, was taking a frigid leave of her--she burst into tears, and

said he was a naughty unkind thing.

Upon which, with a burst of emotion almost as emphatic as hers, the

young surgeon held the girl in his arms--swore that she was an angel,

and that he was a jealous brute; owned that he was unworthy of her, and

that he had no right to hate Pendennis; and asked her, implored her, to

say once more that she----

That she what?--The end of the question and Fanny's answer were

pronounced by lips that were so near each other, that no bystander could

hear the words. Mrs. Bolton only said, "Come, come, Mr. H.--no nonsense,

if you please; and I think you've acted like a wicked wretch, and been

most uncommon cruel to Fanny, that I do."

When Arthur left No. 2002, he went to pay his respects to the carriage

to which, and to the side of her mamma, the dove-coloured author of Mes

Larmes had by this time returned. Indefatigable old Major Pendennis was

in waiting upon Lady Clavering, and had occupied the back seat in her

carriage; the box being in possession of young Hopeful, under the care

of Captain Strong.

A number of dandies, and men of a certain fashion--of military bucks, of

young rakes of the public offices, of those who may be styled men's men

rather than ladies'--had come about the carriage during its station on

the hill--and had exchanged a word or two with Lady Clavering, and

a little talk (a little "chaff," some of the most elegant of the

men styled their conversation) with Miss Amory. They had offered her

sportive bets, and exchanged with her all sorts of free-talk and knowing

innuendoes. They pointed out to her who was on the course: and the "who"

was not always the person a young lady should know.

When Pen came up to Lady Clavering's carriage, he had to push his way

through a crowd of these young bucks who were paying their court to Miss

Amory, in order to arrive as near that young lady, who beckoned him by

many pretty signals to her side.

"Je lay vue," she said; "Elle a de bien beaux yeux; vous etes un

monster!"

"Why monster?" said Pen, with a laugh; "Hone suit qui mal y peens.

My young friend, yonder, is as well protected as any young lady in

Christendom. She has her mamma on one side, her pretend on the other.

Could any harm happen to a girl between those two?"

"One does not know what may or may not arrive," said Miss Blanche, in

French, "when a girl has the mind, and when she is pursued by a wicked

monster like you. Figure to yourself, Major, that I come to find

Monsieur, your nephew, near to a cab, by two ladies, and a man, oh, such

a man! and who ate lobsters, and who laughed, who laughed!"

"It did not strike me that the man laughed," Pen said, "And as for

lobsters, I thought he would have liked to eat me after the lobsters.

He shook hands with me, and gripped me so, that he bruised my glove

black-and-blue. He is a young surgeon. He comes from Clavering. Don't

you remember the gilt pestle and mortar in High Street?"

"If he attends you when you are sick," continued Miss Amory, "he will

kill you. He will serve you right; for you are a monster."

The perpetual recurrence to the word "monster" jarred upon Pen. "She

speaks about these matters a great deal too lightly," he thought. "If I

had been a monster, as she calls it, she would have received me just

the same. This is not the way in which an English lady should speak or

think. Laura would not speak in that way, thank God;" and as he thought

so, his own countenance fell.

"Of what are you thinking? Are you going to bouder me at present?"

Blanche asked. "Major, scold your mechant nephew. He does not amuse me

at all. He is as bete as Captain Crackenbury."

"What are you saying about me, Miss Amory?" said the guardsman, with a

grin. "If it's anything good, say it in English, for I don't understand

French when it's spoke so devilish quick."

"It ain't anything good, Crack," said Crackenbury's fellow, Captain

Clinker. "Let's come away, and don't spoil sport. They say Pendennis is

sweet upon her."

"I'm told he's a devilish clever fellow," sighed Crackenbury. "Lady

Violet Lebas says he's a devilish clever fellow. He wrote a work, or

a poem, or something; and he writes those devilish clever things in

the--in the papers, you know. Dammy, I wish I was a clever fellow,

Clinker."

"That's past wishing for, Crack, my boy," the other said. "I can't write

a good book, but I think I can make a pretty good one on the Derby. What

a flat Clavering is! And the Begum! I like that old Begum. She's

worth ten of her daughter. How pleased the old girl was at winning the

lottery!"

"Clavering's safe to pay up, ain't he?" asked Captain Crackenbury.

"I hope so," said his friend; and they disappeared, to enjoy themselves

among the Sticks.

Before the end of the day's amusements, many more gentlemen of Lady

Clavering's acquaintance came up to her carriage, and chatted with

the party which it contained. The worthy lady was in high spirits and

good-humour, laughing and talking according to her wont, and offering

refreshments to all her friends, until her ample baskets and bottles

were emptied, and her servants and postillions were in such a royal

state of excitement as servants and postillions commonly are upon the

Derby day.

The Major remarked that some of the visitors to the carriage appeared

to look with rather queer and meaning glances towards its owner. "How

easily she takes it!" one man whispered to another. "The Begum's made

of money," the friend replied. "How easily she takes what?" thought old

Pendennis. "Has anybody lost any money?" Lady Clavering said she was

happy in the morning because Sir Francis had promised her not to bet.

Mr. Welbore, the country neighbour of the Claverings, was passing the

carriage, when he was called back by the Begum, who rallied him for

wishing to cut her. "Why didn't he come before? Why didn't he come

to lunch?" Her ladyship was in great delight, she told him--she told

everybody, that she had won five pounds in a lottery. As she conveyed

this piece of intelligence to him, Mr. Welbore looked so particularly

knowing, and withal melancholy, that a dismal apprehension seized

upon Major Pendennis. "He would go and look after the horses and those

rascals of postillions, who were so long in coming round." When he came

back to the carriage, his usually benign and smirking countenance

was obscured by some sorrow. "What is the matter with you now?" the

good-natured Begum asked. The Major pretended a headache from the

fatigue and sunshine of the day. The carriage wheeled off the course and

took its way Londonwards, not the least brilliant equipage in that vast

and picturesque procession. The tipsy drivers dashed gallantly over the

turf, amidst the admiration of foot-passengers, the ironical cheers of

the little donkey-carriages and spring vans, and the loud objurgations

of horse-and-chaise men, with whom the reckless post-boys came in

contact. The jolly Begum looked the picture of good-humour as she

reclined on her splendid cushions; the lovely Sylphide smiled with

languid elegance. Many an honest holiday-maker with his family wadded

into a tax-cart, many a cheap dandy working his way home on his weary

hack, admired that brilliant turn-out, and thought, no doubt, how happy

those "swells" must be. Strong sat on the box still, with a lordly voice

calling to the post-boys and the crowd. Master Frank had been put inside

of the carriage and was asleep there by the side of the Major, dozing

away the effects of the constant luncheon and champagne of which he had

freely partaken.

The Major was revolving in his mind meanwhile the news the receipt of

which had made him so grave. "If Sir Francis Clavering goes on in this

way," Pendennis the elder thought, "this little tipsy rascal will be as

bankrupt as his father and grandfather before him. The Begum's fortune

can't stand such drains upon it: no fortune can stand them: she has paid

his debts half a dozen times already. A few years more of the turf, and

a few coups like this, will ruin her."

"Don't you think we could get up races at Clavering, mamma?" Miss Amory

asked. "Yes, we must have them there again. There were races there in

the old times, the good old times. It's a national amusement, you know:

and we could have a Clavering ball: and we might have dances for the

tenantry, and rustic sports in the park--Oh, it would be charming."

"Capital fun," said mamma. "Wouldn't it, Major?"

"The turf is a very expensive amusement, my dear lady," Major Pendennis

answered, with such a rueful face, that the Begum rallied him, and asked

laughingly whether he had lost money on the race?

After a slumber of about an hour and a half, the heir of the house began

to exhibit symptoms of wakefulness, stretching his youthful arms over

the Major's face, and kicking his sister's knees as she sate opposite

to him. When the amiable youth was quite restored to consciousness, he

began a sprightly conversation.

"I say, Ma," he said, "I've gone and done it this time, I have."

"What have you gone and done, Franky dear?" asked Mamma.

"How much is seventeen half-crowns? Two pound and half-a crown, ain't

it? I drew Borax in our lottery, but I bought Podasokus and Man-milliner

of Leggat minor for two open tarts and a bottle of ginger-beer."

"You little wicked gambling creature, how dare you begin so soon?" cried

Miss Amory.

"Hold your tongue, if you please. Who ever asked your leave, miss?" the

brother said. "And I say, Ma----"

"Well, Franky dear?"

"You'll tip me all the same, you know, when I go back----" and here he

broke out into a laugh. "I say, Ma, shall I tell you something?"

The Begum expressed her desire to hear this something, and her son and

heir continued:

"When me and Strong was down at the grand stand after the race, and I

was talking to Leggat minor, who was there with his governor, I saw Pa

look as savage as a bear. And I say, Ma, Leggat minor told me that

he heard his governor say that Pa had lost seven thousand backing the

favourite. I'll never back the favourite when I'm of age. No, no--hang

me if I do: leave me alone, Strong, will you?"

"Captain Strong! Captain Strong! is this true?" cried out the

unfortunate Begum. "Has Sir Francis been betting again? He promised me

he wouldn't. He gave me his word of honour he wouldn't."

Strong, from his place on the box, had overheard the end of young

Clavering's communication, and was trying in vain to stop his unlucky

tongue.

"I'm afraid it's true, ma'am," he said, turning round, "I deplore the

loss as much as you can. He promised me as he promised you; but the play

is too strong for him! he can't refrain from it."

Lady Clavering at this sad news burst into a fit of tears. She deplored

her wretched fate as the most miserable of women, she declared she would

separate, and pay no more debts for the ungrateful man. She narrated

with tearful volubility a score of stories only too authentic, which

showed how her husband had deceived, and how constantly she had

befriended him: and in this melancholy condition, whilst young Hopeful

was thinking about the two guineas which he himself had won; and the

Major revolving, in his darkened mind, whether certain plans which he

had been forming had better not be abandoned; the splendid carriage

drove up at length to the Begum's house in Grosvenor Place; the idlers

and boys lingering about the place to witness, according to public wont,

the close of the Derby Day, cheering the carriage as it drew up, and

envying the happy folks who descended from it.

"And it's for the son of this man that I am made a beggar!" Blanche

said, quivering with anger, as she walked upstairs leaning on the

Major's arm--"for this cheat--for this blackleg--for this liar--for this

robber of women."

"Calm yourself, my dear Miss Blanche," the old gentleman said; "I pray

calm yourself. You have been hardly treated, most unjustly. But remember

that you have always a friend in me, and trust to an old fellow who will

try and serve you."

And the young lady, and the heir of the hopeful house of Clavering,

having retired to their beds, the remaining three of the Epsom party

remained for some time in deep consultation.

CHAPTER LX. Explanations

Almost a year, as the reader will perceive, has passed since an event

described a few pages back. Arthur's black coat is about to be exchanged

for a blue one. His person has undergone other more pleasing and

remarkable changes. His wig has been laid aside, and his hair, though

somewhat thinner, has returned to public view. And he has had the honour

of appearing at Court in the uniform of a Cornet of the Clavering troop

of the ----shire Yeomanry Cavalry, being presented to the Sovereign by

the Marquis of Steyne.

This was a measure strongly and pathetically urged by Arthur's uncle.

The Major would not hear of a year passing before this ceremony of

gentlemanhood was gone through. The old gentleman thought that

his nephew should belong to some rather more select Club than

the Megatherium; and has announced everywhere in the world his

disappointment that the young man's property has turned out not by any

means as well as he could have hoped, and is under fifteen hundred a

year.

That is the amount at which Pendennis's property is set down in

the world--where his publishers begin to respect him much more than

formerly, and where even mammas are by no means uncivil to him. For if

the pretty daughters are, naturally, to marry people of very different

expectations--at any rate, he will be eligible for the plain ones: and

if the brilliant and fascinating Myra is to hook an Earl, poor little

Beatrice, who has one shoulder higher than the other, must hang on to

some boor through life, and why should not Mr. Pendennis be her support?

In the very first winter after the accession to his mother's fortune,

Mrs. Hawxby in a country-house caused her Beatrice to learn billiards

from Mr. Pendennis and would be driven by nobody but him in the pony

carriage, because he was literary and her Beatrice was literary too,

and declared that the young man, under the instigation of his horrid old

uncle, had behaved most infamously in trifling with Beatrice's feelings.

The truth is the old gentleman, who knew Mrs. Hawxby's character, and

how desperately that lady would practise upon unwary young men, had come

to the country-house in question and carried Arthur out of the danger

of her immediate claws, though not out of the reach of her tongue. The

elder Pendennis would have had his nephew pass a part of the Christmas

at Clavering, whither the family had returned; but Arthur had not the

heart for that. Clavering was too near poor old Fairoaks; and that was

too full of sad recollections for the young man.

We have lost sight of the Claverings, too, until their reappearance

upon the Epsom race-ground, and must give a brief account of them in the

interval. During the past year, the world has not treated any member

of the Clavering family very kindly; Lady Clavering, one of the

best-natured women that ever enjoyed a good dinner, or made a slip in

grammar, has had her appetite and good-nature sadly tried by constant

family grievances, and disputes such as make the efforts of the best

French cook unpalatable, and the most delicately-stuffed sofa-cushion

hard to lie on. "I'd rather have a turnip, Strong, for dessert, than

that pineapple, and all them Muscatel grapes, from Clavering," says poor

Lady Clavering, looking at her dinner-table, and confiding her grief to

her faithful friend, "if I could but have a little quiet to eat it with.

Oh, how much happier I was when I was a widow and before all this money

fell in to me!"

The Clavering family had indeed made a false start in life, and had got

neither conduct, nor position, nor thanks for the hospitalities which

they administered, nor a return of kindness from the people whom they

entertained. The success of their first London season was doubtful; and

their failure afterwards notorious. "Human patience was not great

enough to put up with Sir Francis Clavering," people said. "He was too

hopelessly low, dull, and disreputable. You could not say what, but

there was a taint about the house and its entourages. Who was the Begum,

with her money, and without her h's, and where did she come from? What

an extraordinary little piece of conceit the daughter was, with her

Gallicised graces and daring affectations, not fit for well-bred English

girls to associate with! What strange people were those they assembled

round about them! Sir Francis Clavering was a gambler, living

notoriously in the society of blacklegs and profligates. Hely Clinker,

who was in his regiment, said that he not only cheated at cards, but

showed the white feather. What could Lady Rockminster have meant by

taking her up? After the first season, indeed, Lady Rockminster, who had

taken up Lady Clavering, put her down; the great ladies would not take

their daughters to her parties; the young men who attended them behaved

with the most odious freedom and scornful familiarity; and poor Lady

Clavering herself avowed that she was obliged to take what she called

'the canal' into her parlour, because the tip-tops wouldn't come."

She had not the slightest ill-will towards "the canal," the poor dear

lady, or any pride about herself, or idea, that she was better than her

neighbour; but she had taken implicitly the orders which on her entry

into the world her social godmother had given her: she had been willing

to know whom they knew, and ask whom they asked. The "canal," in fact,

was much pleasanter than what is called "society;" but, as we said

before, that to leave a mistress is easy, while, on the contrary, to be

left by her is cruel: so you may give up society without any great pang,

or anything but a sensation of relief at the parting; but severe are the

mortifications and pains you have if society gives up you.

One young man of fashion we have mentioned, who at least it might have

been expected would have been found faithful amongst the faithless, and

Harry Foker, Esq., was indeed that young man. But he had not managed

matters with prudence, and the unhappy passion at first confided to Pen

became notorious and ridiculous to the town, was carried to the ears of

his weak and fond mother; and finally brought under the cognisance of

the bald-headed and inflexible Foker senior.

When Mr. Foker learned this disagreeable news, there took place between

him and his son a violent and painful scene, which ended in the poor

little gentleman's banishment from England for a year, with a positive

order to return at the expiration of that time and complete his marriage

with his cousin, or to retire into private life and three hundred a year

altogether, and never see parent or brewery more. Mr. Henry Foker went

away then, carrying with him that grief and care which passes free at

the strictest Custom-houses, and which proverbially accompanies the

exile; and with this crape over his eyes, even the Parisian Boulevard

looked melancholy to him, and the sky of Italy black.

To Sir Francis Clavering, that year was a most unfortunate one. The

events described in the last chapter came to complete the ruin of the

year. It was that year of grace in which, as our sporting readers may

remember, Lord Harrowhill's horse (he was a classical young nobleman,

and named his stud out of the Iliad)--when Podasokus won the Derby, to

the dismay of the knowing ones, who pronounced the winning horse's name

in various extraordinary ways, and who backed Borax, who was nowhere in

the race. Sir Francis Clavering, who was intimate with some of the

most rascally characters of the turf, and, of course, had "valuable

information," had laid heavy odds against the winning horse, and backed

the favourite freely, and the result of his dealings was, as his son

correctly stated to poor Lady Clavering, a loss of seven thousand

pounds.

Indeed, it was a cruel blow upon the lady, who had discharged her

husband's debts many times over; who had received as many times his

oaths and promises of amendment; who had paid his money-lenders and

horse-dealers; who had furnished his town and country houses, and who

was called upon now instantly to meet this enormous sum, the penalty of

her cowardly husband's extravagance.

It has been described in former pages how the elder Pendennis had become

the adviser of the Clavering family, and, in his quality of intimate

friend of the house, had gone over every room of ii, and even seen that

ugly closet which we all of us have, and in which, according to the

proverb, the family skeleton is locked up. About the Baronet's pecuniary

matters, if the Major did not know, it was because Clavering himself did

not know them, and hid them from himself and others in such a hopeless

entanglement of lies that it was impossible for adviser or attorney or

principal to get an accurate knowledge of his affairs. But, concerning

Lady Clavering, the Major was much better informed; and when the unlucky

mishap of the Derby arose, he took upon himself to become completely and

thoroughly acquainted with all her means, whatsoever they were; and was

now accurately informed of the vast and repeated sacrifices which the

widow Amory had made in behalf of her present husband.

He did not conceal--and he had won no small favour from Miss Blanche by

avowing it--his opinion, that Lady Clavering's daughter had been hardly

treated at the expense of her son, by her second marriage: and in his

conversations with Lady Clavering had fairly hinted that he thought

Miss Blanche ought to have a better provision. We have said that he had

already given the widow to understand that he knew all the particulars

of her early and unfortunate history, having been in India at the time

when--when the painful circumstances occurred which had ended in her

parting from her first husband. He could tell her where to find the

Calcutta newspaper which contained the account of Amory's trial, and

he showed, and the Begum was not a little grateful to him for his

forbearance, how, being aware all along of this mishap which had

befallen her, he had kept all knowledge of it to himself, and been

constantly the friend of her family.

"Interested motives, my dear Lady Clavering," he said, "of course I may

have had. We all have interested motives, and mine, I don't conceal from

you, was to make a marriage between my nephew and your daughter." To

which Lady Clavering, perhaps with some surprise that the Major should

choose her family for a union with his own, said she was quite willing

to consent.

But frankly he said, "My dear lady, my boy has but five hundred a year,

and a wife with ten thousand pounds to her fortune would scarcely better

him. We could do better for him than that, permit me to say, and he is

a shrewd, cautious young fellow who has sown his wild oats now--who has

very good parts and plenty of ambition--and whose object in marrying is

to better himself. If you and Sir Francis chose--and Sir Francis, take

my word for it, will refuse you nothing--you could put Arthur in a way

to advance very considerably in the world, and show the stuff which he

has in him. Of what use is that seat in Parliament to Clavering, who

scarcely ever shows his face in the House, or speaks a word there? I'm

told by gentlemen who heard my boy at Oxbridge, that he was famous as

an orator, begad!--and once put his foot into the stirrup and mount him,

I've no doubt he won't be the last of the field, ma'am. I've tested

the chap, and know him pretty well, I think. He is much too lazy, and

careless, and flighty a fellow, to make a jog-trot journey, and arrive,

as your lawyers do, at the end of their lives! but give him a start and

good friends, and an opportunity, and take my word for it, he'll make

himself a name that his sons shall be proud of. I don't see any way for

a fellow like him to parvenir, but by making a prudent marriage--not

with a beggarly heiress--to sit down for life upon a miserable fifteen

hundred a year--but with somebody whom he can help, and who can help him

forward in the world, and whom he can give a good name and a station in

the country, begad, in return for the advantages which she brings him.

It would be better for you to have a distinguished son-in-law, than to

keep your husband on in Parliament, who's of no good to himself or to

anybody else there, and that's, I say, why I've been interested about

you, and offer you what I think a good bargain for both."

"You know I look upon Arthur as one of the family almost now," said the

good-natured Begum; "he comes and goes when he likes; and the more

I think of his dear mother, the more I see there's few people so

good--none so good to me. And I'm sure I cried when I heard of her

death, and would have gone into mourning for her myself, only black

don't become me. And I know who his mother wanted him to marry--Laura,

I mean--whom old Lady Rockminster has taken such a fancy to, and,

no wonder. She's a better girl than my girl. I know both. And my

Betsy--Blanche, I mean--ain't been a comfort to me, Major. It's Laura

Pen ought to marry.

"Marry on five hundred a year! My dear good soul, you are mad!" Major

Pendennis said. "Think over what I have said to you. Do nothing in your

affairs with that unhappy husband of yours without consulting me; and

remember that old Pendennis is always your friend."

For some time previous, Pen's uncle had held similar language to Miss

Amory. He had pointed out to her the convenience of the match which he

had at heart, and was bound to say, that mutual convenience was of all

things the very best in the world to marry upon--the only thing. "Look

at your love-marriages, my dear young creature. The love-match people

are the most notorious of all for quarrelling afterwards; and a girl who

runs away with Jack to Gretna Green, constantly runs away with Tom to

Switzerland afterwards. The great point in marriage is for people to

agree to be useful to one another. The lady brings the means, and the

gentleman avails himself of them. My boy's wife brings the horse, and

begad Pen goes in and wins the plate. That's what I call a sensible

union. A couple like that have something to talk to each other about

when they come together. If you had Cupid himself to talk to--if Blanche

and Pen were Cupid and Psyche, begad--they'd begin to yawn after a few

evenings, if they had nothing but sentiment to speak on."

As for Miss Amory, she was contented enough with Pen as long as there

was nobody better. And how many other young ladies are like her?--and

how many love-marriages carry on well to the last?--and how sentimental

firms do not finish in bankruptcy?--and how many heroic passions don't

dwindle down into despicable indifference, or end in shameful defeat?

These views of life and philosophy the Major was constantly, according

to his custom, inculcating to Pen, whose mind was such that he could

see the right on both sides of many questions, and, comprehending the

sentimental life which was quite out of the reach of the honest Major's

intelligence, could understand the practical life too, and accommodate

himself, or think he could accommodate himself, to it. So it came to

pass that during the spring succeeding his mother's death he became a

good deal under the influence of his uncle's advice, and domesticated

in Lady Clavering's house; and in a measure was accepted by Miss Amory

without being a suitor, and was received without being engaged. The

young people were extremely familiar, without being particularly

sentimental, and met and parted with each other in perfect good-humour.

"And I," thought Pendennis, "am the fellow who eight years ago had a

Grand passion, and last year was raging in a fever about Briseis!"

Yes, it was the same Pendennis, and time had brought to him, as to the

rest of us, its ordinary consequences, consolations, developments.

We alter very little. When we talk of this man or that woman being no

longer the same person whom we remember in youth, and remark (of course

to deplore) changes in our friends, we don't, perhaps, calculate that

circumstance only brings out the latent defect or quality, and does not

create it. The selfish languor and indifference of to-day's possession

is the consequence of the selfish ardour of yesterday's pursuit: the

scorn and weariness which cries vanitas vanitatum is but the lassitude

of the sick appetite palled with pleasure: the insolence of the

successful parvenu is only the necessary continuance of the career of

the needy struggler: our mental changes are like our grey hairs or our

wrinkles--but the fulfilment of the plan of mortal growth and decay:

that which is snow-white now was glossy black once; that which is

sluggish obesity to-day was boisterous rosy health a few years back;

that calm weariness, benevolent, resigned, and disappointed, was

ambition, fierce and violent, but a few years since, and has only

settled into submissive repose after many a battle and defeat. Lucky he

who can bear his failure so generously, and give up his broken sword

to Fate the Conqueror with a manly and humble heart! Are you not

awestricken, you, friendly reader, who, taking the page up for

a moment's light reading, lay it down, perchance, for a graver

reflection,--to think how you, who have consummated your success or

your disaster, may be holding marked station, or a hopeless and nameless

place, in the crowd--who have passed through how many struggles of

defeat, success, crime, remorse, to yourself only known!--who may have

loved and grown cold, wept and laughed again, how often!--to think how

you are the same, You, whom in childhood you remember, before the voyage

of life began? It has been prosperous, and you are riding into port, the

people huzzaing and the guns saluting,--and the lucky captain bows from

the ship's side, and there is a care under the star on his breast which

nobody knows of: or you are wrecked, and lashed, hopeless, to a solitary

spar out at sea:--the sinking man and the successful one are thinking

each about home, very likely, and remembering the time when they were

children; alone on the hopeless spar, drowning out of sight; alone in

the midst of the crowd applauding you.

CHAPTER LXI. Conversations

Our good-natured Begum was at first so much enraged at this last

instance of her husband's duplicity and folly, that she refused to give

Sir Francis Clavering any aid in order to meet his debts of honour,

and declared that she would separate from him, and leave him to the

consequences of his incorrigible weakness and waste. After that fatal

day's transactions at the Derby, the unlucky gambler was in such a

condition of mind that he was disposed to avoid everybody; alike his

turf-associates with whom he had made the debts which he trembled lest

he should not have the means of paying, and his wife, his long-suffering

banker, on whom he reasonably doubted whether he should be allowed any

longer to draw. When Lady Clavering asked the next morning whether Sir

Francis was in the house, she received answer that he had not returned

that night, but had sent a messenger to his valet, ordering him to

forward clothes and letters by the bearer. Strong knew that he should

have a visit or a message from him in the course of that or the

subsequent day, and accordingly got a note beseeching him to call upon

his distracted friend F. C. at Short Hotel, Blackfriars, and ask for Mr.

Francis there. For the Baronet was a gentleman of that peculiarity

of mind that he would rather tell a lie than not, and always began a

contest with fortune by running away and hiding himself. The Boots of

Mr. Short's establishment, who carried Clavering's message to Grosvenor

Place, and brought back his carpet-bag, was instantly aware who was the

owner of the bag, and he imparted his information to the footman who

was laying the breakfast-table, who carried down the news to the

servants'-hall, who took it to Mrs. Bonner, my lady's housekeeper and

confidential maid, who carried it to my lady. And thus every single

person in the Grosvenor Place establishment knew that Sir Francis was

in hiding, under the name of Francis, at an inn in the Blackfriars Road.

And Sir Francis's coachman told the news to other gentlemen's coachmen,

who carried it to their masters, and to the neighbouring Tattersall's,

where very gloomy anticipations were formed that Sir Francis Clavering

was about to make a tour in the Levant.

In the course of that day the number of letters addressed to Sir Francis

Clavering, Bart., which found their way to his hall-table, was quite

remarkable. The French cook sent in his account to my lady; the

tradesmen who supplied her ladyship's table, and Messrs. Finer and

Gimcrack, the mercers and ornamental dealers, and Madame Crinoline, the

eminent milliner, also forwarded their little bills to her ladyship,

in company with Miss Amory's private, and by no means inconsiderable,

account at each establishment.

In the afternoon of the day after the Derby, when Strong (after a

colloquy with his principal at Short's Hotel, whom he found crying and

drinking Curacoa) called to transact business according to his custom at

Grosvenor Place, he found all these suspicious documents ranged in the

Baronet's study; and began to open them and examine them with a rueful

countenance.

Mrs. Bonner, my lady's maid and housekeeper, came down upon him whilst

engaged in this occupation. Mrs. Bonner, a part of the family and as

necessary to her mistress as the Chevalier was to Sir Francis, was

of course on Lady Clavering's side in the dispute between her and her

husband, and as by duty bound even more angry than her ladyship herself.

"She won't pay, if she takes my advice," Mrs. Bonner said. "You'll

please to go back to Sir Francis, Captain--and he lurking about in a low

public-house and don't dare to face his wife like a man!--and say that

we won't pay his debts no longer. We made a man of him, we took him out

of gaol (and other folks too perhaps), we've paid his debts over and

over again--we set him up in Parliament and gave him a house in town and

country, and where he don't dare show his face, the shabby sneak! We've

given him the horse he rides and the dinner he eats and the very clothes

he has on his back; and we will give him no more. Our fortune, such as

is left of it, is left to ourselves, and we won't waste any more of it

on this ungrateful man. We'll give him enough to live upon and leave

him, that's what we'll do: and that's what you may tell him from Susan

Bonner."

Susan Bonner's mistress hearing of Strong's arrival sent for him at this

juncture, and the Chevalier went up to her ladyship not without hopes

that he should find her more tractable than her factotum Mrs. Bonner.

Many a time before had he pleaded his client's cause with Lady Clavering

and caused her good-nature to relent. He tried again once more. He

painted in dismal colours the situation in which he had found Sir

Francis: and would not answer for any consequences which might ensue if

he could not find means of meeting his engagements.

"Kill hisself," laughed Mrs. Bonner, "kill hisself, will he? Dying's

the best thing he could do." Strong vowed that he had found him with the

razors on the table; but at this, in her turn, Lady Clavering laughed

bitterly. "He'll do himself no harm, as long as there's a shilling left

of which he can rob a poor woman. His life's quite safe, Captain: you

may depend upon that. Ah! it was a bad day that ever I set eyes on him."

"He's worse than the first man," cried out my lady's aide-de-camp.

"He was a man, he was--a wild devil, but he had the courage of a

man--whereas this fellow--what's the use of my lady paying his bills,

and selling her diamonds, and forgiving him? He'll be as bad again

next year. The very next chance he has he'll be a-cheating of her,

and robbing of her; and her money will go to keep a pack of rogues and

swindlers--I don't mean you, Captain--you've been a good friend to us

enough, bating we wish we'd never set eyes on you."

The Chevalier saw from the words which Mrs. Bonner had let slip

regarding the diamonds, that the kind Begum was disposed to relent once

more at least, and that there were hopes still for his principal.

"Upon my word, ma'am," he said, with a real feeling of sympathy for Lady

Clavering's troubles, and admiration for her untiring good-nature, and

with a show of enthusiasm which advanced not a little his graceless

patron's cause--"anything you say against Clavering, or Mrs. Bonner here

cries out against me, is no better than we deserve, both of us, and it

was an unlucky day for you when you saw either. He has behaved cruelly

to you and if you were not the most generous and forgiving woman in the

world, I know there would be no chance for him. But you can't let the

father of your son be a disgraced man, and send little Frank into the

world with such a stain upon him. Tie him down; bind him by any promises

you like: I vouch for him that he will subscribe them."

"And break 'em," said Mrs. Bonner.

"And keep 'em this time," cried out Strong. "He must keep them. If you

could have seen how he wept, ma'am! 'Oh, Strong,' he said to me, 'it's

not for myself I feel now: it's for my boy--it's for the best woman in

England, whom I have treated basely--I know I have.' He didn't intend to

bet upon this race, ma'am--indeed he didn't. He was cheated into it: all

the ring was taken in. He thought he might make the bet quite safely,

without the least risk. And it will be a lesson to him for all his life

long. To see a man cry--oh, it's dreadful."

"He don't think much of making my dear missus cry," said Mrs.

Bonner--"poor dear soul!--look if he does, Captain."

\* \* \* \* \* \*

"If you've the soul of a man, Clavering," Strong said to his principal,

when he recounted this scene to him, "you'll keep your promise this

time: and, so help me Heaven! if you break word with her, I'll turn

against you, and tell all."

"What all?" cried Mr. Francis, to whom his ambassador brought the

news back at Short's Hotel, where Strong found the Baronet crying and

drinking curacoa.

"Psha! Do you suppose I am a fool?" burst out Strong. "Do you suppose I

could have lived so long in the world, Frank Clavering, without having

my eyes about me? You know I have but to speak and you are a beggar

to-morrow. And I am not the only man who knows your secret."

"Who else does?" gasped Clavering.

"Old Pendennis does, or I am very much mistaken. He recognised the man

the first night he saw him, when he came drunk into your house."

"He knows it, does he?" shrieked out Clavering. "Damn him--kill him."

"You'd like to kill us all, wouldn't you, old boy?" said Strong, with a

sneer, puffing his cigar.

The Baronet dashed his weak hand against his forehead; perhaps the other

had interpreted his wish rightly. "Oh, Strong!" he cried, "if I dared,

I'd put an end to myself, for I'm the d-----est miserable dog in all

England. It's that that makes me so wild and reckless. It's that which

makes me take to drink" (and he drank, with a trembling hand, a bumper

of his fortifier--the curacoa), "and to live about with these thieves. I

know they're thieves, every one of 'em, d----d thieves. And--and how

can I help it?--and I didn't know it, you know--and, by Gad, I'm

innocent--and until I saw the d----d scoundrel first, I knew no more

about it than the dead--and I'll fly, and I'll go abroad out of the

reach of the confounded hells, and I'll bury myself in a forest, by Gad!

and hang myself up to a tree--and, oh--I'm the most miserable beggar in

all England!" And so with more tears, shrieks, and curses, the impotent

wretch vented his grief and deplored his unhappy fate; and, in the midst

of groans and despair and blasphemy, vowed his miserable repentance.

The honoured proverb which declares that to be an ill wind which blows

good to nobody, was verified in the case of Sir Francis Clavering, and

another of the occupants of Mr. Strong's chambers in Shepherd's Inn. The

man was "good," by a lucky hap, with whom Colonel Altamont made his

bet; and on the settling day of the Derby--as Captain Clinker, who

was appointed to settle Sir Francis Clavering's book for him (for Lady

Clavering by the advice of Major Pendennis, would not allow the Baronet

to liquidate his own money transactions), paid over the notes to the

Baronet's many creditors--Colonel Altamont had the satisfaction of

receiving the odds of thirty to one in fifties, which he had taken

against the winning horse of the day.

Numbers of the Colonel's friends were present on the occasion to

congratulate him on his luck--all Altamont's own set, and the gents

who met in the private parlour of the convivial Wheeler, my host of

the Harlequin's Head, came to witness their comrade's good fortune, and

would have liked, with a generous sympathy for success, to share in it.

"Now was the time," Tom Driver had suggested to the Colonel, "to have

up the specie ship that was sunk in the Gulf of Mexico, with the

three hundred and eighty thousand dollars on board, besides bars and

doubloons." "The Tredyddlums were very low--to be bought for an old

song--never was such an opportunity for buying shares," Mr. Keightley

insinuated; and Jack Holt pressed forward his tobacco-smuggling scheme,

the audacity of which pleased the Colonel more than any other of the

speculations proposed to him. Then of the Harlequin's Head boys: there

was Jack Rackstraw, who knew of a pair of horses which the Colonel must

buy; Tom Fleet, whose satirical paper, The Swell, wanted but two hundred

pounds of capital to be worth a thousand a year to any man--"with such

a power and influence, Colonel, you rogue, and the entree of the

green-rooms in London," Tom urged; whilst little Moss Abiams entreated

the Colonel not to listen to these absurd fellows with their humbugging

speculations, but to invest his money in some good bills which Moss

could get for him, and which would return him fifty per cent as safe as

the Bank of England.

Each and all of these worthies came round the Colonel with their various

blandishments; but he had courage enough to resist them, and to button

up his notes in the pocket of his coat, and go home to Strong, and

"sport" the outer door of the chambers. Honest Strong had given his

fellow-lodger good advice about all his acquaintances; and though, when

pressed, he did not mind frankly taking twenty pounds himself out of the

Colonel's winnings, Strong was a great deal too upright to let others

cheat him.

He was not a bad fellow when in good fortune, this Altamont. He ordered

a smart livery for Grady, and made poor old Costigan shed tears of

quickly dried gratitude by giving him a five-pound note after a snug

dinner at the Back Kitchen, and he bought a green shawl for Mrs. Bolton,

and a yellow one for Fanny: the most brilliant "sacrifices" of a Regent

Street haberdasher's window. And a short time after this, upon her

birthday, which happened in the month of June, Miss Amory received from

"a friend" a parcel containing an enormous brass inlaid writing-desk,

in which there was a set of amethysts, the most hideous eyes ever looked

upon,--a musical snuff-box, and two Keepsakes of the year before last,

and accompanied with a couple of gown pieces of the most astounding

colours, the receipt of which goods made the Sylphide laugh and wonder

immoderately. Now it is a fact that Colonel Altamont had made a purchase

of cigars and French silks from some duffers in Fleet Street about

this period; and he was found by Strong in the open Auction Room in

Cheapside, having invested some money in two desks, several pairs of

richly-plated candlesticks, a dinner epergne, and a bagatelle-board. The

dinner epergne remained at chambers, and figured at the banquets there,

which the Colonel gave pretty freely. It seemed beautiful in his eyes,

until Jack Holt said it looked as if it had been taken "in a bill." And

Jack Holt certainly knew.

The dinners were pretty frequent at chambers, and Sir Francis Clavering

condescended to partake of them constantly. His own house was shut up:

the successor of Mirobolant, who had sent in his bills so prematurely,

was dismissed by the indignant Lady Clavering: the luxuriance of the

establishment was greatly pruned and reduced. One of the large footmen

was cashiered, upon which the other gave warning, not liking to serve

without his mate, or in a family where on'y one footman was kep'.

General and severe economical reforms were practised by the Begum in

her whole household, in consequence of the extravagance of which her

graceless husband had been guilty. The Major, as her ladyship's friend;

Strong, on the part of poor Clavering; her ladyship's lawyer, and

the honest Begum herself, executed these reforms with promptitude and

severity. After paying the Baronet's debts, the settlement of which

occasioned considerable public scandal, and caused the Baronet to sink

even lower in the world's estimation than he had been before, Lady

Clavering quitted London for Tunbridge Wells in high dudgeon, refusing

to see her reprobate husband, whom nobody pitied. Clavering remained

in London patiently, by no means anxious to meet his wife's just

indignation, and sneaked in and out of the House of Commons, whence he

and Captain Raff and Mr. Marker would go to have a game at billiards

and a cigar or showed in the sporting public-houses; or might be seen

lurking about Lincoln's Inn and his lawyers', where the principals kept

him for hours waiting, and the clerks winked at each other, as he sate

in their office. No wonder that he relished the dinners at Shepherd's

Inn, and was perfectly resigned there: resigned? he was so happy nowhere

else; he was wretched amongst his equals, who scorned him--but here he

was the chief guest at the table, where they continually addressed

him with "Yes, Sir Francis" and "No, Sir Francis," where he told his

wretched jokes, and where he quavered his dreary little French song,

after Strong had sung his Jovial chorus, and honest Costigan had

piped his Irish ditties. Such a jolly menage as Strong's, with Grady's

Irish-stew, and the Chevalier's brew of punch after dinner, would have

been welcome to many a better man than Clavering, the solitude of whose

great house at home frightened him, where he was attended only by the

old woman who kept the house, and his valet who sneered at him.

"Yes, dammit," said he to his friends in Shepherd's Inn, "that fellow of

mine, I must turn him away, only I owe him two years' wages, curse him,

and can't ask my lady. He brings me my tea cold of a morning, with a

dem'd leaden teaspoon, and he says my lady's sent all the plate to the

banker's because it ain't safe.--Now ain't it hard that she won't trust

me with a single teaspoon; ain't it ungentlemanlike, Altamont? You know

my lady's of low birth--that is--I beg your pardon--hem--that is,

it's most cruel of her not to show more confidence in me. And the very

servants begin to laugh--the damn scoundrels! I break every bone in

their great hulking bodies, curse 'em, I will.--They don't answer

my bell: and--and my man was at Vauxhall last night with one of my

dress-shirts and my velvet waistcoat on, I know it was mine--the

confounded impudent blackguard--and he went on dancing before my eyes

confound him! I'm sure he'll live to be hanged--he deserves to be

hanged--all those infernal rascals of valets."

He was very kind to Altamont now: he listened to the Colonel's loud

stories when Altamont described how--when he was working his way home

once from New Zealand, where he had been on a whaling expedition--he and

his comrades had been obliged to slink on board at night, to escape from

their wives, by Jove--and how the poor devils put out in their canoes

when they saw the ship under sail, and paddled madly after her: how he

had been lost in the bush once for three months in New South Wales, when

he was there once on a trading speculation: how he had seen Boney at

Saint Helena, and been presented to him with the rest of the officers

of the Indiaman of which he was a mate--to all these tales (and over his

cups Altamont told many of them; and, it must be owned, lied and bragged

a great deal) Sir Francis now listened with great attention; making a

point of drinking wine with Altamont at dinner and of treating him with

every distinction.

"Leave him alone, I know what he's a-coming to," Altamont said, laughing

to Strong, who remonstrated with him, "and leave me alone; I know what

I'm a-telling, very well. I was officer on board an Indiaman, so I was;

I traded to New South Wales, so I did, in a ship of my own, and lost

her. I became officer to the Nawaub, so I did; only me and my royal

master have had a difference, Strong--that's it. Who's the better or

the worse for what I tell? or knows anything about me? The other chap is

dead--shot in the bush, and his body reckonised at Sydney. If I thought

anybody would split, do you think I wouldn't wring his neck? I've done

as good before now, Strong--I told you how I did for the overseer before

I took leave--but in fair fight, I mean--in fair fight; or, rayther, he

had the best of it. He had his gun and bay'net, and I had only an axe.

Fifty of 'em saw it--ay, and cheered me when I did it--and I'd do it

again,--him, wouldn't I? I ain't afraid of anybody; and I'd have the

life of the man who split upon me. That's my maxim, and pass me the

liquor.--You wouldn't turn on a man. I know you. You're an honest

feller, and will stand by a feller, and have looked death in the

face like a man. But as for that lily-livered sneak--that poor lyin'

swindlin' cringin' cur of a Clavering--who stands in my shoes--stands

in my shoes, hang him! I'll make him pull my boots off and clean 'em, I

will. Ha, ha!" Here he burst out into a wild laugh, at which Strong

got up and put away the brandy-bottle. The other still laughed

good-humouredly. "You're right, old boy," he said; "you always keep

your head cool, you do--and when I begin to talk too much--I say, when I

begin to pitch, I authorise you, and order you, and command you, to put

away the rum-bottle."

"Take my counsel, Altamont," Strong said, gravely, "and mind how you

deal with that man. Don't make it too much his interest to get rid of

you; or who knows what he may do?"

The event for which, with cynical enjoyment, Altamont had been on the

look-out, came very speedily. One day, Strong being absent upon an

errand for his principal, Sir Francis made his appearance in the

chambers, and found the envoy of the Nawaub alone. He abused the world

in general for being heartless and unkind to him: he abused his wife for

being ungenerous to him; he abused Strong for being ungrateful--hundreds

of pounds had he given Ned Strong--been his friend for life and kept

him out of gaol, by Jove,--and now Ned was taking her ladyship's side

against him and abetting her in her infernal unkind treatment of him.

"They've entered into a conspiracy to keep me penniless, Altamont," the

Baronet said: "they don't give me as much pocket money as Frank has at

school."

"Why don't you go down to Richmond and borrow of him, Clavering?"

Altamont broke out with a savage laugh. "He wouldn't see his poor old

beggar of a father without pocket-money, would he?"

"I tell you, I've been obliged to humiliate myself cruelly" Clavering

said. "Look here, sir--look here, at these pawn-tickets! Fancy a Member

of Parliament and an old English Baronet, by Gad! obliged to put

a drawing-room clock and a buhl inkstand up the spout; and a gold

duck's-head paper-holder, that I dare say cost my wife five pound, for

which they'd only give me fifteen-and-six! Oh, it's a humiliating

thing, sir, poverty to a man of my habits; and it's made me shed tears,

sir,--tears; and that d----d valet of mine--curse him, I wish he was

hanged!--he had the confounded impudence to threaten to tell my lady: as

the things in my own house weren't my own, to sell or to keep, or fling

out of window if I chose--by Gad! the confounded scoundrel.

"Cry a little; don't mind cryin' before me--it'll relieve you

Clavering," the other said. "Why, I say, old feller, what a happy feller

I once thought you, and what a miserable son of a gun you really are!"

"It's a shame that they treat me so, ain't it?" Clavering went on,--for,

though ordinarily silent and apathetic, about his own griefs the Baronet

could whine for an hour at a time. "And--and, by Gad, sir, I haven't got

the money to pay the very cab that's waiting for me at the door; and the

porteress, that Mrs. Bolton, lent me three shillin's, and I don't like

to ask her for any more: and I asked that d----d old Costigan, the

confounded old penniless Irish miscreant, and he hadn't got a shillin',

the beggar; and Campion's out of town, or else he'd do a little bill for

me, I know he would."

"I thought you swore on your honour to your wife that you wouldn't put

your name to paper," said Mr. Altamont, puffing at his cigar.

"Why does she leave me without pocket-money, then? Damme, I must have

money," cried out the Baronet. "Oh, Am----, oh, Altamont, I'm the most

miserable beggar alive."

"You'd like a chap to lend you a twenty-pound note, wouldn't you now?"

the other asked.

"If you would, I'd be grateful to you for ever--for ever, my dearest

friend," cried Clavering.

"How much would you give? Will you give a fifty-pound bill, at six

months, for half down and half in plate?" asked Altamont.

"Yes, I would, so help me----, and pay it on the day," screamed

Clavering. "I'll make it payable at my banker's: I'll do anything you

like."

"Well, I was only chaffing you. I'll give you twenty pound."

"You said a pony," interposed Clavering; "my dear fellow, you said a

pony, and I'll be eternally obliged to you; and I'll not take it as a

gift--only as a loan, and pay you back in six months. I take my oath, I

will."

"Well--well--there's the money, Sir Francis Clavering. I ain't a bad

fellow. When I've money in my pocket, dammy, I spend it like a man.

Here's five-and-twenty for you. Don't be losing it at the hells now.

Don't be making a fool of yourself. Go down to Clavering Park, and it'll

keep you ever so long. You needn't 'ave butchers' meat: there's pigs,

I dare say, on the premises: and you can shoot rabbits for dinner, you

know, every day till the game comes in. Besides, the neighbours will ask

you about to dinner, you know, sometimes: for you are a Baronet, though

you have outrun the constable. And you've got this comfort, that I'm off

your shoulders for a good bit to come--p'raps this two years--if I don't

play; and I don't intend to touch the confounded black and red: and by

that time my lady, as you call her--Jimmy, I used to say--will have

come round again; and you'll be ready for me, you know, and come down

handsomely to yours truly."

At this juncture of their conversation Strong returned, nor did the

Baronet care much about prolonging the talk, having got the money:

and he made his way from Shepherd's Inn, and went home and bullied

his servant in a manner so unusually brisk and insolent that the man

concluded his master must have pawned some more of the house furniture,

or, at any rate, have come into possession of some ready money.

\* \* \* \* \* \*

"And yet I've looked over the house, Morgan, and I don't thin he

has took any more of the things," Sir Francis's valet said to Major

Pendennis's man, as they met at their Club soon after. "My lady locked

up a'most all the bejews afore she went away, and he couldn't take

away the picters and looking-glasses in a cab and he wouldn't spout

the fenders and fire-irons--he ain't so bad as that. But he's got money

somehow. He's so dam'd imperent when he have. A few nights ago I sor

him at Vauxhall, where I was a-polkin with Lady Hemly Babewood's gals--a

wery pleasant room that is, and an uncommon good lot in it, hall except

the 'ousekeeper, and she's methodisticle--I was a-polkin--you're too old

a cove to polk, Mr. Morgan--and 'ere's your 'ealth--and I 'appened to

'ave on some of Clavering's abberdashery, and he sor it too: and he

didn't dare so much as speak a word."

"How about the house in St. John's Wood?" Mr. Morgan asked.

"Execution in it.--Sold up heverythin: ponies, and pianna, and brougham,

and all. Mrs. Montague were hoff to Boulogne,--non est inwentus, Mr.

Morgan. It's my belief she put the execution in herself: and was tired

of him."

"Play much?" asked Morgan.

"Not since the smash. When your Governor, and the lawyers, and my lady

and him had that tremendous scene: he went down on his knees, my lady

told Mrs. Bonner, as told me,--and swear as he never more would touch

a card or a dice, or put his name to a bit of paper; and my lady was

a-goin' to give him the notes down to pay his liabilities after the

race: only your Governor said (which he wrote it on a piece of paper,

and passed it across the table to the lawyer and my lady) that some one

else had better book up for him, for he'd have kep' some of the money.

He's a sly old cove, your Gov'nor."

The expression of "old cove," thus flippantly applied by the younger

gentleman to himself and his master, displeased Mr. Morgan exceedingly.

On the first occasion, when Mr. Lightfoot used the obnoxious expression,

his comrade's anger was only indicated by a silent frown; but on the

second offence, Morgan, who was smoking his cigar elegantly, and holding

it on the tip of his penknife, withdrew the cigar from his lips, and

took his young friend to task.

"Don't call Major Pendennis an old cove, if you'll 'ave the goodness,

Lightfoot, and don't call me an old cove, nether. Such words ain't used

in society; and we have lived in the fust society, both at 'ome and

foring. We've been intimate with the fust statesmen of Europe. When we

go abroad we dine with Prince Metternitch and Louy Philup reg'lar. We

go here to the best houses, the tip-tops, I tell you. We ride with Lord

John and the noble Whycount at the edd of Foring Affairs. We dine with

the Hearl of Burgrave, and are consulted by the Marquis of Steyne in

everythink. We ought to know a thing or two, Mr. Lightfoot. You're a

young man, I'm an old cove, as you say. We've both seen the world, and

we both know that it ain't money, nor bein' a Baronet, nor 'avin' a town

and country 'ouse, nor a paltry five or six thousand a year."

"It's ten, Mr. Morgan," cried Mr. Lightfoot, with great animation.

"It may have been, sir," Morgan said, with calm severity; "it may have

been, Mr. Lightfoot, but it ain't six now, nor five, sir. It's been

doosedly dipped and cut into, sir, by the confounded extravygance of

your master, with his helbow shakin', and his bill discountin', and his

cottage in the Regency Park, and his many wickednesses. He's a bad un,

Mr. Lightfoot,--a bad lot, sir, and that you know. And it ain't

money, sir--not such money as that, at any rate, come from a Calcuttar

attorney, and I dussay wrung out of the pore starving blacks--that

will give a pusson position in society, as you know very well. We've no

money, but we go everywhere; there's not a housekeeper's room, sir, in

this town of any consiquince, where James Morgan ain't welcome. And it

was me who got you into this Club, Lightfoot, as you very well know,

though I am an old cove, and they would have blackballed you without me

as sure as your name is Frederic."

"I know they would, Mr. Morgan," said the other, with much humility.

"Well, then, don't call me an old cove, sir. It ain't gentlemanlike,

Frederic Lightfoot, which I knew you when you was a cab-boy, and when

your father was in trouble, and got you the place you have now when the

Frenchman went away. And if you think, sir, that because you're making

up to Mrs. Bonner, who may have saved her two thousand pound--and I dare

say she has in five-and-twenty years as she have lived confidential maid

to Lady Clavering--yet, sir, you must remember who put you into that

service; and who knows what you were before, sir, and it don't become

you, Frederic Lightfoot, to call me an old cove."

"I beg your pardon, Mr. Morgan--I can't do more than make an

apology--will you have a glass, sir, and let me drink your 'ealth?"

"You know I don't take sperrits. Lightfoot," replied Morgan, appeased.

"And so you and Mrs. Bonner is going to put up together, are you?"

"She's old, but two thousand pound's a good bit, you see, Mr Morgan. And

we'll get the 'Clavering Arms' for a very little; and that'll be no bad

thing when the railroad runs through Clavering. And when we are there, I

hope you'll come and see us, Mr. Morgan."

"It's a stoopid place, and no society," said Mr. Morgan. "I know it

well. In Mrs Pendennis's time we used to go down, reg'lar, and the hair

refreshed me after the London racket."

"The railroad will improve Mr. Arthur's property," remarked Lightfoot.

"What's about the figure of it, should you say, sir?"

"Under fifteen hundred, sir," answered Morgan; at which the other, who

knew the extent of poor Arthur's acres, thrust his tongue in his cheek,

but remained wisely silent.

"Is his man any good, Mr. Morgan?" Lightfoot resumed.

"Pidgeon ain't used to society as yet; but he's young and has good

talents, and has read a good deal, and I dessay he will do very well,"

replied Morgan. "He wouldn't quite do for this kind of thing, Lightfoot,

for he ain't seen the world yet."

When the pint of sherry for which Mr. Lightfoot called, upon Mr.

Morgan's announcement that he eclined to drink spirits, had been

discussed by the two gentlemen, who held the wine up to the light,

and smacked their lips, and winked their eyes at it, and rallied the

landlord as to the vintage, in the most approved manner of connoisseurs,

Morgan's ruffled equanimity was quite restored, and he was prepared to

treat his young friend with perfect good-humour.

"What d'you think about Miss Amory, Lightfoot--tell us in confidence,

now--Do you think we should do well--you understand--if we make Miss A.

into Mrs. A. P., comprendy vous?"

"She and her Ma's always quarrellin'," said Mr. Lightfoot. "Bonner

is more than a match for the old lady, and treats Sir Francis like

that--like this year spill, which I fling into the grate. But she

daren't say a word to Miss Amory. No more dare none of us. When a

visitor comes in, she smiles and languishes, you'd think that butter

wouldn't melt in her mouth: and the minute he is gone, very likely, she

flares up like a little demon, and says things fit to send you wild. If

Mr. Arthur comes, it's 'Do let's sing that there delightful Song!' or,

'Come and write me them pooty verses in this halbum!' and very likely

she's been a-rilin' her mother, or sticking pins into her maid, a minute

before. She do stick pins into her and pinch her. Mary Hann showed me

one of her arms quite black and blue; and I recklect Mrs. Bonner, who's

as jealous of me as a old cat, boxed her ears for showing me. And then

you should see Miss at luncheon, when there's nobody but the family! She

makes b'leave she never heats, and my! you should only jest see her. She

has Mary Hann to bring her up plum-cakes and creams into her bedroom;

and the cook's the only man in the house she's civil to. Bonner says,

how, the second season in London, Mr. Soppington was a-goin' to propose

for her, and actially came one day, and sor her fling a book into the

fire, and scold her mother so, that he went down softly by the back

droring-room door, which he came in by; and next thing we heard of

him was, he was married to Miss Rider. Oh, she's a devil, that little

Blanche, and that's my candig apinium, Mr. Morgan."

"Apinion, not apinium, Lightfoot, my good fellow," Mr. Morgan said, with

parental kindness, and then asked of his own bosom with a sigh, why the

deuce does my Governor want Master Arthur to marry such a girl as this?

and the tete-a-tete of the two gentlemen was broken up by the entry

of other gentlemen, members of the Club--when fashionable town-talk,

politics, cribbage, and other amusements ensued, and the conversation

became general.

The Gentleman's Club was held in the parlour of the Wheel of Fortune

public-house, in a snug little by-lane, leading out of one of the great

streets of Mayfair, and frequented by some of the most select gentlemen

about town. Their masters' affairs, debts, intrigues, adventures; their

ladies' good and bad qualities and quarrels with their husbands; all the

family secrets were here discussed with perfect freedom and confidence,

and here, when about to enter into a new situation, a gentleman was

enabled to get every requisite information regarding the family of

which he proposed to become a member. Liveries it may be imagined

were excluded from this select precinct; and the powdered heads of the

largest metropolitan footmen might bow down in vain entreating admission

into the Gentleman's Club. These outcast giants in plush took their beer

in an outer apartment of the Wheel of Fortune, and could no more get an

entry into the Clubroom than a Pall Mall tradesman or a Lincoln's Inn

attorney could get admission into Bays's or Spratt's. And it is because

the conversation which we have permitted to overhear here, in some

measure explains the characters and bearings of our story, that we have

ventured to introduce the reader into a society so exclusive.

CHAPTER LXII. The Way of the World

A short time after the piece of good fortune which befell Colonel

Altamont at Epsom, that gentleman put into execution his projected

foreign tour, and the chronicler of the polite world who goes down to

London Bridge for the purpose of taking leave of the people of fashion

who quit this country, announced that among the company on board the

Soho to Antwerp last Saturday, were "Sir Robert, Lady, and the Misses

Hodge; Mr. Serjeant Kewsy, and Mrs. and Miss Kewsy; Colonel Altamont,

Major Coddy, etc." The Colonel travelled in state, and as became

a gentleman: he appeared in a rich travelling costume; he drank

brandy-and-water freely during the passage, and was not sick, as some of

the other passengers were; and he was attended by his body-servant;

the faithful Irish legionary who had been for some time in waiting upon

himself and Captain Strong in their chambers of Shepherd's Inn.

The Chevalier partook of a copious dinner at Blackwall with his

departing friend the Colonel, and one or two others, who drank many

healths to Altamont at that liberal gentleman's expense. "Strong, old

boy," the Chevalier's worthy chum said, "if you want a little money,

now's your time. I'm your man. You're a good feller, and have been a

good feller to me, and a twenty-pound note, more or less, will make

no odds to me," But Strong said, No, he didn't want any money; he was

flush, quite flush--"that is, not flush enough to pay you back your last

loan, Altamont, but quite able to carry on for some time to come," and

so, with a not uncordial greeting between them, the two parted. Had the

possession of money really made Altamont more honest and amiable than he

had hitherto been, or only caused him to seem more amiable in Strong's

eyes? Perhaps he really was better, and money improved him. Perhaps it

was the beauty of wealth Strong saw and respected. But he argued within

himself, "This poor devil, this unlucky outcast of a returned convict,

is ten times as good a fellow as my friend Sir Francis Clavering, Bart.

He has pluck and honesty in his way. He will stick to a friend, and face

an enemy. The other never had courage to do either. And what is it that

has put the poor devil under a cloud? He was only a little wild, and

signed his father-in-law's name. Many a man has done worse, and come to

no wrong, and holds his head up. Clavering does. No, he don't hold his

head up: he never did in his best days." And Strong, perhaps, repented

him of the falsehood which he had told to the free-handed Colonel,

that he was not in want of money; but it was a falsehood on the side of

honesty, and the Chevalier could not bring down his stomach to borrow

a second time from his outlawed friend. Besides, he could get on.

Clavering had promised him some: not that Clavering's promises were much

to be believed, but the Chevalier was of a hopeful turn, and trusted in

many chances of catching his patron, and waylaying some of those stray

remittances and supplies, in the procuring of which for his principal

lay Mr. Strong's chief business.

He had grumbled about Altamont's companionship in the Shepherd's Inn

chambers; but he found those lodgings more glum now without his partner

than with him. The solitary life was not agreeable to his social soul;

and he had got into extravagant and luxurious habits, too, having a

servant at his command to run his errands, to arrange his toilets, and

to cook his meal. It was rather a grand and touching sight now to see

the portly and handsome gentleman painting his own boots, and broiling

his own mutton chop. It has been before stated that the Chevalier had

a wife, a Spanish lady of Vittoria, who had gone back to her friends,

after a few months' union with the Captain, whose head she broke with

a dish. He began to think whether he should not go back and see his

Juanita. The Chevalier was growing melancholy after the departure of his

friend the Colonel; or, to use his own picturesque expression, was "down

on his luck." These moments of depression and intervals of ill fortune

occur constantly in the lives of heroes; Marius at Minturme, Charles

Edward in the Highlands, Napoleon before Elba. What great man has not

been called upon to face evil fortune?

From Clavering no supplies were to be had for some time, the

five-and-twenty pounds or the "pony," which the exemplary Baronet had

received from Mr. Altamont, had fled out of Clavering's keeping as

swiftly as many previous ponies. He had been down the river with a

choice party of sporting gents, who dodged the police and landed in

Essex, where they put up Billy Bluck to fight Dick the cabman whom the

Baronet backed, and who had it all his own way for thirteen rounds,

when, by an unlucky blow in the windpipe, Billy killed him. "It's always

my luck, Strong," Sir Francis said; "the betting was three to one on the

cabman, and I thought myself as sure of thirty pound, as if I had it in

my pocket. And dammy, I owe my man Lightfoot fourteen pound now which

he's lent and paid for me: and he duns me--the confounded impudent

blackguard: and I wish to Heaven I knew any way of getting a bill done,

or of screwing a little out of my lady! I'll give you half, Ned, upon

my soul and honour, I'll give you half if you can get anybody to do us a

little fifty."

But Ned said sternly that he had given his word of honour, as a

gentleman, that he would be no party to any future bill transactions in

which her husband might engage (who had given his word of honour too),

and the Chevalier said that he, at least, would keep his word, and would

black his own boots all his life rather than break his promise. And what

is more, he vowed he would advise Lady Clavering that Sir Francis was

about to break his faith towards her upon the very first hint which he

could get that such was Clavering's intention.

Upon this information Sir Francis Clavering, according to his custom,

cried and cursed very volubly. He spoke of death as his only resource.

He besought and implored his dear Strong, his best friend, his dear old

Ned, not to throw him over: and when he quitted his dearest Ned, as he

went down the stairs of Shepherd's Inn, swore and blasphemed at Ned as

the most infernal villain, and traitor, and blackguard, and coward under

the sun, and wished Ned was in his grave, and in a worse place, only he

would like the confounded ruffian to live, until Frank Clavering had had

his revenge out of him.

In Strong's chambers the Baronet met a gentleman whose visits were

now, as it has been shown, very frequent in Shepherd's Inn, Mr. Samuel

Huxter, of Clavering. That young fellow, who had poached the walnuts in

Clavering Park in his youth, and had seen the Baronet drive through the

street at home with four horses, and prance up to church with powdered

footmen, had an immense respect for his Member, and a prodigious delight

in making his acquaintance. He introduced himself with much blushing

and trepidation, as a Clavering man--son of Mr. Huxter, of the

market-place--father attended Sir Francis's keeper, Coxwood, when

his gun burst and took off three fingers--proud to make Sir Francis's

acquaintance. All of which introduction Sir Francis received

affably. And honest Huxter talked about Sir Francis to the chaps at

Bartholomew's: and told Fanny, in the lodge, that, after all, there was

nothing like a thoroughbred un, a regular good old English gentleman,

one of the olden time! To which Fanny replied, that she thought Sir

Francis was an ojous creature--she didn't know why--but she couldn't

abear him--she was sure he was wicked, and low, and mean--she knew he

was; and when Sam to this replied that Sir Francis was very affable, and

had borrowed half a sov' of him quite kindly, Fanny burst into a

laugh, pulled Sam's long hair (which was not yet of irreproachable

cleanliness), patted his chin, and called him a stoopid, stoopid, old

foolish stoopid, and said that Sir Francis was always borrering money of

everybody, and that Mar had actially refused him twice, and had had to

wait three months to get seven shillings which he had borrowed of 'er.

"Don't say 'er but her, borrer but borrow, actially but actually,

Fanny," Mr. Huxter replied--not to a fault in her argument, but to

grammatical errors in her statement.

"Well then, her, and borrow, and hactually--there then, you stoopid,"

said the other; and the scholar made such a pretty face that the grammar

master was quickly appeased, and would have willingly given her a

hundred more lessons on the spot at the price which he took for that

one.

Of course Mrs. Bolton was by, and I suppose that Fanny and Dr. Sam were

on exceedingly familiar and confidential terms by this time, and that

time had brought to the former certain consolations, and soothed certain

regrets, which are deucedly bitter when they occur, but which are, no

more than tooth-pulling, or any other pang, eternal.

As you sit, surrounded by respect and affection; happy, honoured, and

flattered in your old age; your foibles gently indulged; your least

words kindly cherished; your garrulous old stories received for the

hundredth time with dutiful forbearance, and never-failing hypocritical

smiles; the women of your house constant in their flatteries; the

young men hushed and attentive when you begin to speak; the servants

awestricken; the tenants cap in hand, and ready to act in the place

of your worship's horses when your honour takes a drive--it has often

struck you, O thoughtful Dives! that this respect, and these glories,

are for the main part transferred, with your fee-simple, to your

successor--that the servants will bow, and the tenants shout, for your

son as for you; that the butler will fetch him the wine (improved by a

little keeping) that's now in your cellar; and that, when your night is

come, and the light of your life is gone down, as sure as the morning

rises after you and without you, the sun of prosperity and flattery

shines on your heir. Men come and bask in the halo of consols and

acres that beams round about him: the reverence is transferred with

the estate; of which, with all its advantages, pleasures, respect, and

good-will, he in turn becomes the life-tenant. How long do you wish or

expect that your people will regret you? How much time does a man devote

to grief before he begins to enjoy? A great man must keep his heir at

his feast like a living memento mori. If he holds very much by life, the

presence of the other must be a constant sting and warning. "Make ready

to go," says the successor to your honour; "I am waiting: and I could

hold it as well as you."

What has this reference to the possible reader, to do with any of the

characters of this history? Do we wish to apologise for Pen because he

has got a white hat, and because his mourning for his mother is fainter?

All the lapse of years, all the career of fortune, all the events of

life, however strongly they may move or eagerly excite him, never can

remove that sainted image from his heart, or banish that blessed love

from its sanctuary. If he yields to wrong, the dear eyes will look sadly

upon him when he dares to meet them; if he does well, endures pain, or

conquers temptation, the ever present love will greet him, he knows,

with approval and pity; if he falls, plead for him; if he suffers, cheer

him;--be with him and accompany him always until death is past; and

sorrow and sin are no more. Is this mere dreaming, or, on the part of an

idle story-teller, useless moralising? May not the man of the world take

his moment, too, to be grave and thoughtful? Ask of your own hearts and

memories, brother and sister, if we do not live in the dead; and (to

speak reverently) prove God by love?

Of these matters Pen and Warrington often spoke in many a solemn and

friendly converse in after days; and Pendennis's mother was worshipped

in his memory, and canonised there, as such a saint ought to be. Lucky

he in life who knows a few such women! A kind provision of Heaven

it was, that sent us such; and gave us to admire that touching and

wonderful spectacle of innocence, and love, and beauty.

But as it is certain that if, in the course of these sentimental

conversations, any outer stranger, Major Pendennis for instance, had

walked into Pen's chambers, Arthur and Warrington would have stopped

their talk, and chosen another subject, and discoursed about the Opera,

or the last debate in Parliament, or Miss Jones's marriage with Captain

Smith, or what not,--so, let us imagine that the public steps in at this

juncture, and stops the confidential talk between author and reader,

and begs us to resume our remarks about this world, with which both are

certainly better acquainted than with that other one into which we have

just been peeping.

On coming into his property, Arthur Pendennis at first comported himself

with a modesty and equanimity which obtained his friend Warrington's

praises, though Arthur's uncle was a little inclined to quarrel with

his nephew's meanness of spirit, for not assuming greater state and

pretensions now that he had entered on the enjoyment of his kingdom.

He would have had Arthur installed in handsome quarters, and riding

on showy park hacks, or in well-built cabriolets, every day. "I am

too absent," Arthur said, with a laugh, "to drive a cab in London; the

omnibus would cut me in two, or I should send my horse's head into the

ladies' carriage-windows; and you wouldn't have me driven about by my

servant like an apothecary, uncle?" No, Major Pendennis would on

no account have his nephew appear like an apothecary; the august

representative of the house of Pendennis must not so demean himself. And

when Arthur, pursuing his banter, said, "And yet, I dare say, sir, my

father was proud enough when he first set up his gig," the old Major

hemmed and ha'd, and his wrinkled face reddened with a blush as he

answered, "You know what Buonaparte said, sir, 'Il faut laver son linge

sale en famille.' There is no need, sir, for you to brag that your

father was a--a medical man. He came of a most ancient but fallen house,

and was obliged to reconstruct the family fortunes as many a man of good

family has done before him. You are like the fellow in Sterne, sir--the

Marquis who came to demand his sword again. Your father got back

yours for you. You are a man of landed estate, by Gad, sir, and a

gentleman--never forget you are a gentleman."

Then Arthur slily turned on his uncle the argument which he had heard

the old gentleman often use regarding himself. "In the society which I

have the honour of frequenting through your introduction, who cares to

ask about my paltry means or my humble gentility, uncle?" he asked. "It

would be absurd of me to attempt to compete with the great folks; and

all that they can ask from us is, that we should have a decent address

and good manners."

"But for all that, sir, I should belong to a better Club or two," the

uncle answered: "I should give an occasional dinner, and select my

society well; and I should come out of that horrible garret in the

Temple, sir." And so Arthur compromised by descending to the second

floor in Lamb Court: Warrington still occupying his old quarters,

and the two friends being determined not to part one from the other.

Cultivate kindly, reader, those friendships of your youth: it is only in

that generous time that they are formed. How different the intimacies of

after days are, and how much weaker the grasp of your own hand after it

has been shaken about in twenty years' commerce with the world, and

has squeezed and dropped a thousand equally careless palms! As you can

seldom fashion your tongue to speak a new language after twenty, the

heart refuses to receive friendship pretty soon: it gets too hard to

yield to the impression.

So Pen had many acquaintances, and being of a jovial and easy turn, got

more daily: but no friend like Warrington; and the two men continued to

live almost as much in common as the Knights of the Temple, riding upon

one horse (for Pen's was at Warrington's service), and having their

chambers and their servitor in common.

Mr. Warrington had made the acquaintance of Pen's friends of Grosvenor

Place during their last unlucky season in London, and had expressed

himself no better satisfied with Sir Francis and Lady Clavering and

her ladyship's daughter than was the public in general. "The world is

right," George said, "about those people. The young men laugh and talk

freely before those ladies, and about them. The girl sees people whom

she has no right to know, and talks to men with whom no girl should

have an intimacy. Did you see those two reprobates leaning over Lady

Clavering's carriage in the Park the other day, and leering under Miss

Blanche's bonnet? No good mother would let her daughter know those men,

or admit them within her doors."

"The Begum is the most innocent and good-natured soul alive," interposed

Pen. "She never heard any harm of Captain Blackball, or read that trial

in which Charley Lovelace figures. Do you suppose that honest ladies

read and remember the Chronique Scandaleuse as well as you, you old

grumbler?"

"Would you like Laura Bell to know those fellows?" Warrington asked,

his face turning rather red. "Would you let any woman you loved be

contaminated by their company? I have no doubt that the poor Begum is

ignorant of their histories. It seems to me she is ignorant of a great

number of better things. It seems to me that your honest Begum is not

a lady, Pen. It is not her fault, doubtless, that she has not had the

education, or learned the refinements of a lady."

"She is as moral as Lady Portsea, who has all the world at her balls,

and as refined as Mrs. Bull, who breaks the King's English, and has half

a dozen dukes at her table," Pen answered, rather sulkily. "Why should

you and I be more squeamish than the rest of the world? Why are we to

visit the sins of her father on this harmless kind creature? She never

did anything but kindness to you or any mortal soul. As far as she knows

she does her best. She does not set up to be more than she is. She gives

you the best dinners she can buy, and the best company she can get. She

pays the debts of that scamp of a husband of hers. She spoils her boy

like the most virtuous mother in England. Her opinion about literary

matters, to be sure, is not much; and I daresay she never read a line of

Wordsworth, or heard of Tennyson in her life."

"No more has Mrs. Flanagan the laundress," growled out Pen's Mentor; "no

more has Betty the housemaid; and I have no word of blame against them.

But a high-souled man doesn't make friends of these. A gentleman doesn't

choose these for his companions, or bitterly rues it afterwards if

he do. Are you, who are setting up to be a man of the world and a

philosopher, to tell me that the aim of life is to guttle three courses

and dine off silver? Do you dare to own to yourself that your ambition

in life is good claret, and that you'll dine with any, provided you

get a stalled ox to feed on? You call me a Cynic--why, what a monstrous

Cynicism it is, which you and the rest of you men of the world admit!

I'd rather live upon raw turnips and sleep in a hollow tree, or turn

backwoodsman or savage, than degrade myself to this civilisation, and

own that a French cook was the thing in life best worth living for."

"Because you like a raw beefsteak and a pipe afterwards," broke out Pen,

"you give yourself airs of superiority over people whose tastes are more

dainty, and are not ashamed of the world they live in. Who goes about

professing particular admiration, or esteem, or friendship, or gratitude

even, for the people one meets every day? If A. asks me to his house,

and gives me his best, I take his good things for what they are worth

and no more. I do not profess to pay him back in friendship, but in the

conventional money of society. When we part, we part without any grief.

When we meet, we are tolerably glad to see one another. If I were only

to live with my friends, your black muzzle, old George, is the only face

I should see."

"You are your uncle's pupil," said Warrington, rather sadly; "and you

speak like a worldling."

"And why not?" asked Pendennis; "why not acknowledge the world I stand

upon, and submit to the conditions of the society which we live in

and live by? I am older than you, George, in spite of your grizzled

whiskers, and have seen much more of the world than you have in your

garret here, shut up with your books and your reveries and your ideas of

one-and-twenty. I say, I take the world as it is, and being of it, will

not be ashamed of it. If the time is out of joint, have I any calling or

strength to set it right?"

"Indeed, I don't think you have much of either," growled Pen's

interlocutor.

"If I doubt whether I am better than my neighbour," Arthur continued,

"if I concede that I am no better,--I also doubt whether he is better

than I. I see men who begin with ideas of universal reform, and who,

before their beards are grown, propound their loud plans for the

regeneration of mankind, give up their schemes after a few years of

bootless talking and vainglorious attempts to lead their fellows; and

after they have found that men will no longer bear them, as indeed

they never were in the least worthy to be heard, sink quietly into the

ranks-and-file,--acknowledging their aims impracticable, or thankful

that they were never put into practice. The fiercest reformers grow

calm, and are faire to put up with things as they are: the loudest

Radical orators become dumb, quiescent placemen: the most fervent

Liberals when out of power, become humdrum Conservatives or downright

tyrants or despots in office. Look at the Thiers, look at Guizot, in

opposition and in place! Look at the Whigs appealing to the country, and

the Whigs in power! Would you say that the conduct of these men is an

act of treason, as the Radicals bawl,--who would give way in their turn,

were their turn ever to come? No, only that they submit to circumstances

which are stronger than they,--march as the world marches towards

reform, but at the world's pace (and the movements of the vast body

of mankind must needs be slow), forgo this scheme as impracticable, on

account of opposition,--that as immature, because against the sense of

the majority,--are forced to calculate drawbacks and difficulties, as

well as to think of reforms and advances,--and compelled finally to

submit, and to wait, and to compromise."

"The Right Honourable Arthur Pendennis could not speak better, or be

more satisfied with himself, if he was First Lord of the Treasury and

Chancellor of the Exchequer," Warrington said.

"Self-satisfied? Why self-satisfied?" continued Pen. "It seems to

me that my scepticism is more respectful and more modest than the

revolutionary ardour of other folks. Many a patriot of eighteen, many a

Spouting-Club orator, would turn the Bishops out of the House of Lords

to-morrow, and throw the Lords out after the Bishops, and throw the

Throne into the Thames after the Peers and the Bench. Is that man more

modest than I, who takes these institutions as I find them, and waits

for time and truth to develop, or fortify, or (if you like) destroy

them? A college tutor, or a nobleman's toady, who appears one fine day

as my right reverend lord, in a silk apron and a shovel-hat, and assumes

benedictory airs over me, is still the same man we remember at Oxbridge,

when he was truckling to the tufts, and bullying the poor undergraduates

in the lecture-room. An hereditary legislator, who passes his time with

jockeys and black-legs and ballet-girls, and who is called to rule

over me and his other betters because his grandfather made a lucky

speculation in the funds, or found a coal or tin mine on his property,

or because his stupid ancestor happened to be in command of ten thousand

men as brave as himself, who overcame twelve thousand Frenchmen, or

fifty thousand Indians--such a man, I say, inspires me with no more

respect than the bitterest democrat can feel towards him. But, such as

he is, he is a part of the old society to which we belong and I submit

to his lordship with acquiescence; and he takes his place above the best

of us at all dinner-parties, and there bides his time. I don't want

to chop his head off with a guillotine, or to fling mud at him in the

streets. When they call such a man a disgrace to his order; and such

another, who is good and gentle, refined and generous, who employs his

great means in promoting every kindness and charity, and art and grace

of life, in the kindest and most gracious manner, an ornament to his

rank--the question as to the use and propriety of the order is not in

the least affected one way or other. There it is, extant among us, a

part of our habits, the creed of many of us, the growth of centuries,

the symbol of a most complicated tradition--there stand my lord the

bishop and my lord the hereditary legislator--what the French call

transactions both of them,--representing in their present shape

mail-clad barons and double-sworded chiefs (from whom their lordships

the hereditaries, for the most part, don't descend), and priests,

professing to hold an absolute truth and a divinely inherited power,

the which truth absolute our ancestors burned at the stake, and denied

there; the which divine transmissible power still exists in print--to

be believed, or not, pretty much at choice; and of these, I say, I

acquiesce that they exist, and no more. If you say that these schemes,

devised before printing was known, or steam was born; when thought was

an infant, scared and whipped; and truth under its guardians was gagged,

and swathed, and blindfolded, and not allowed to lift its voice, or to

look out or to walk under the sun; before men were permitted to meet, or

to trade, or to speak with each other--if any one says (as some faithful

souls do) that these schemes are for ever, and having been changed

and modified constantly are to be subject to no further development or

decay, I laugh, and let the man speak. But I would have toleration for

these, as I would ask it for my own opinions; and if they are to die,

I would rather they had a decent and natural than an abrupt and violent

death."

"You would have sacrificed to Jove," Warrington said, "had you lived in

the time of the Christian persecutions."

"Perhaps I would," said Pen, with some sadness. "Perhaps I am a

coward,--perhaps my faith is unsteady; but this is my own reserve.

What I argue here is that I will not persecute. Make a faith or a dogma

absolute, and persecution becomes a logical consequence; and Dominic

burns a Jew, or Calvin an Arian, or Nero a Christian, or Elizabeth or

Mary a Papist or Protestant; or their father both or either, according

to his humour; and acting without any pangs of remorse,--but, on the

contrary, notions of duty fulfilled. Make dogma absolute, and to inflict

or to suffer death becomes easy and necessary; and Mahomet's soldiers

shouting, 'Paradise! Paradise!' and dying on the Christian spears, are

not more or less praiseworthy than the same men slaughtering a townful

of Jews, or cutting off the heads of all prisoners who would not

acknowledge that there was but one Prophet of God."

"A little while since, young one," Warrington said, who had been

listening to his friend's confessions neither without sympathy nor

scorn, for his mood led him to indulge in both, "you asked me why I

remained out of the strife of the world, and looked on at the great

labour of my neighbour without taking any part in the struggle? Why,

what a mere dilettante you own yourself to be, in this confession of

general scepticism, and what a listless spectator yourself! You are

six-and-twenty years old; and as blase as a rake of sixty. You neither

hope much nor care much, nor believe much. You doubt about other men

as much as about yourself. Were it made of such pococuranti as you, the

world would be intolerable; and I had rather live in a wilderness of

monkeys, and listen to their chatter, than in a company of men who

denied everything."

"Were the world composed of Saint Bernards or Saint Dominies, it would

be equally odious," said Pen, "and at the end of a few scores of years

would cease to exist altogether. Would you have every man with his head

shaved, and every woman in a cloister,--carrying out to the full the

ascetic principle? Would you have conventicle hymns twanging from every

lane in every city in the world? Would you have all the birds of the

forest sing one note and fly with one feather? You call me a sceptic

because I acknowledge what is; and in acknowledging that, be it linnet

or lark, or priest or parson, be it, I mean, any single one of the

infinite varieties of the creatures of God (whose very name I would be

understood to pronounce with reverence, and never to approach but with

distant awe), I say that the study and acknowledgment of that variety

amongst men especially increases our respect and wonder for the Creator,

Commander, and Ordainer of all these minds, so different and yet so

united,--meeting in a common adoration, and offering up, each

according to his degree and means of approaching the Divine centre, his

acknowledgment of praise and worship, each singing (to recur to the bird

simile) his natural song."

"And so, Arthur, the hymn of a saint, or the ode of a poet, or the chant

of a Newgate thief, are all pretty much the same in your philosophy,"

said George.

"Even that sneer could be answered were it to the point," Pendennis

replied; "but it is not; and it could be replied to you, that even to

the wretched outcry of the thief on the tree, the wisest and the best of

all teachers we know of, the untiring Comforter and Consoler, promised a

pitiful hearing and a certain hope. Hymns of saints! odes of poets! who

are we to measure the chances and opportunities, the means of doing, or

even judging, right and wrong, awarded to men; and to establish the rule

for meting out their punishments and rewards? We are as insolent and

unthinking in judging of men's morals as of their intellects. We admire

this man as being a great philosopher, and set down the other as a

dullard, not knowing either, or the amount of truth in either, or being

certain of the truth anywhere. We sing Te Deum for this hero who has

won a battle, and De Profundis for that other one who has broken out of

prison, and has been caught afterwards by the policeman. Our measure

of rewards and punishments is most partial and incomplete, absurdly

inadequate, utterly worldly, and we wish to continue it into the next

world. Into that next and awful world we strive to pursue men, and send

after them our impotent party verdicts of condemnation or acquittal. We

set up our paltry little rods to measure Heaven immeasurable, as if, in

comparison to that, Newton's mind or Pascal's or Shakspeare's was any

loftier than mine; as if the ray which travels from the sun would reach

me sooner than the man who blacks my boots. Measured by that altitude,

the tallest and the smallest among us are so alike diminutive and

pitifully base, that I say we should take no count of the calculation,

and it is a meanness to reckon the difference."

"Your figure fails there, Arthur," said the other, better pleased;

"if even by common arithmetic we can multiply as we can reduce almost

infinitely, the Great Reckoner must take count of all; and the small is

not small, or the great great, to his infinity."

"I don't call those calculations in question," Arthur said; "I only say

that yours are incomplete and premature; false in consequence, and, by

every operation, multiplying into wider error. I do not condemn the men

who murdered Socrates and damned Galileo. I say that they damned Galileo

and murdered Socrates."

"And yet but a moment since you admitted the propriety of acquiescence

in the present, and, I suppose, all other tyrannies?"

"No: but that if an opponent menaces me, of whom and without cost of

blood and violence I can get rid, I would rather wait him out, and

starve him out, than fight him out. Fabius fought Hannibal sceptically.

Who was his Roman coadjutor, whom we read of in Plutarch when we

were boys, who scoffed at the other's procrastination and doubted his

courage, and engaged the enemy and was beaten for his pains?"

In these speculations and confessions of Arthur, the reader may

perhaps see allusions to questions which, no doubt, have occupied

and discomposed himself, and which he has answered by very different

solutions to those come to by our friend. We are not pledging ourselves

for the correctness of his opinions, which readers will please to

consider are delivered dramatically, the writer being no more answerable

for them, than for the sentiments uttered by any other character of

the story: our endeavour is merely to follow out, in its progress, the

development of the mind of a worldly and selfish, but not ungenerous or

unkind or truth-avoiding man. And it will be seen that the lamentable

stage to which his logic at present has brought him, is one of general

scepticism and sneering acquiescence in the world as it is; or if you

like so to call it, a belief qualified with scorn in all things extant.

The tastes and habits of such a man prevent him from being a boisterous

demagogue, and his love of truth and dislike of cant keep him from

advancing crude propositions, such as many loud reformers are constantly

ready with; much more of uttering downright falsehoods in arguing

questions or abusing opponents, which he would die or starve rather than

use. It was not in our friend's nature to be able to utter certain lies;

nor was he strong enough to protest against others, except with a

polite sneer; his maxim being, that he owed obedience to all Acts of

Parliament, as long as they were not repealed.

And to what does this easy and sceptical life lead a man? Friend Arthur

was a Sadducee, and the Baptist might be in the Wilderness shouting

to the poor, who were listening with all their might and faith to the

preacher's awful accents and denunciations of wrath or woe or salvation;

and our friend the Sadducee would turn his sleek mule with a shrug and a

smile from the crowd, and go home to the shade of his terrace, and

muse over preacher and audience, and turn to his roll of Plato, or his

pleasant Greek songbook babbling of honey and Hybla, and nymphs and

fountains and love. To what, we say, does this scepticism lead? It leads

a man to a shameful loneliness and selfishness, so to speak--the more

shameful, because it is so good-humoured and conscienceless and serene.

Conscience! What is conscience? Why accept remorse? What is public or

private faith? Mythuses alike enveloped in enormous tradition. If seeing

and acknowledging the lies of the world, Arthur, as see them you can

with only too fatal a clearness, you submit to them without any protest

further than a laugh: if, plunged yourself in easy sensuality, you allow

the whole wretched world to pass groaning by you unmoved: if the fight

for the truth is taking place, and all men of honour are on the ground

armed on the one side or the other, and you alone are to lie on your

balcony and smoke your pipe out of the noise and the danger, you had

better have died, or never have been at all, than such a sensual coward.

"The truth, friend!" Arthur said, imperturbably; "where is the truth?

Show it me. That is the question between us. I see it on both sides. I

see it on the Conservative side of the house, and amongst the Radicals,

and even on the ministerial benches. I see it in this man, who worships

by Act of Parliament, and is rewarded with a silk apron and five

thousand a year; in that man, who, driven fatally by the remorseless

logic of his creed, gives up everything, friends, fame, dearest ties,

closest vanities, the respect of an army of churchmen, the recognised

position of a leader, and passes over, truth-impelled, to the enemy, in

whose ranks he will serve henceforth as a nameless private soldier:--I

see the truth in that man, as I do in his brother, whose logic drives

him to quite a different conclusion, and who, after having passed a life

in vain endeavours to reconcile an irreconcilable book, flings it at

last down in despair, and declares, with tearful eyes, and hands up to

heaven, his revolt and recantation. If the truth is with all these, why

should I take side with any one of them? Some are called upon to

preach: let them preach. Of these preachers there are somewhat too many,

methinks, who fancy they have the gift. But we cannot all be parsons in

church, that is clear. Some must sit silent and listen, or go to sleep

mayhap. Have we not all our duties? The head charity-boy blows the

bellows; the master canes the other boys in the organ-loft; the clerk

sings out Amen from the desk; and the beadle with the staff opens the

door for his Reverence, who rustles in silk up to the cushion. I won't

cane the boys, nay, or say Amen always, or act as the church's champion

and warrior, in the shape of the beadle with the staff; but I will take

off my hat in the place, and say my prayers there too, and shake hands

with the clergyman as he steps on the grass outside. Don't I know that

his being there is a compromise, and that he stands before me an Act

of Parliament? That the church he occupies was built for other worship?

That the Methodist chapel is next door; and that Bunyan the tinker is

bawling out the tidings of damnation on the common hard by? Yes, I am a

Sadducee; and I take things as I find them, and the world, and the Acts

of Parliament of the world, as they are; and as I intend to take a wife,

if I find one--not to be madly in love and prostrate at her feet like

a fool--not to worship her as an angel, or to expect to find her

as such--but to be good-natured to her, and courteous, expecting

good-nature and pleasant society from her in turn. And so, George,

if ever you hear of my marrying, depend on it, it won't be a romantic

attachment on my side: and if you hear of any good place under

Government, I have no particular scruples that I know of, which would

prevent me from accepting your offer."

"O Pen, you scoundrel! I know what you mean," here Warrington broke

out. "This is the meaning of your scepticism, of your quietism, of your

atheism, my poor fellow. You're going to sell yourself, and Heaven help

you! You are going to make a bargain which will degrade you and make you

miserable for life, and there's no use talking of it. If you are once

bent on it, the devil won't prevent you."

"On the contrary, he's on my side, isn't he, George?" said Pen with a

laugh. "What good cigars these are! Come down and have a little dinner

at the Club; the chef's in town, and he'll cook a good one for me. No,

you won't? Don't be sulky, old boy, I'm going down to--to the country

to-morrow."

CHAPTER LXIII. Which accounts perhaps for Chapter LXI. The information

regarding the affairs of the Clavering family, which Major Pendennis

had acquired through Strong, and by his own personal interference as the

friend of the house, was such as almost made the old gentleman pause in

any plans which he might have once entertained for his nephew's benefit.

To bestow upon Arthur a wife with two such fathers-in-law, as the two

worthies whom the guileless and unfortunate Lady Clavering had drawn in

her marriage ventures, was to benefit no man. And though the one, in a

manner, neutralised the other, and the appearance of Amory or Altamont

in public would be the signal for his instantaneous withdrawal and

condign punishment,--for the fugitive convict had cut down the officer

in charge of him,--and a rope would be inevitably his end; if he came

again under British authorities; yet, no guardian would like to secure

for his ward a wife, whose parent was to be got rid of in such a way;

and the old gentleman's notion always had been that Altamont, with the

gallows before his eyes, would assuredly avoid recognition; while, at

the same time, by holding the threat of his discovery over Clavering,

the latter, who would lose everything by Amory's appearance, would be a

slave in the hands of the person who knew so fatal a secret.

But if the Begum paid Clavering's debts many times more, her wealth

would be expended altogether upon this irreclaimable reprobate; and her

heirs, whoever they might be, would succeed but to an emptied treasury;

and Miss Amory, instead of bringing her husband a good income and a seat

in Parliament, would bring to that individual her person only, and her

pedigree with that lamentable note of sus. per coll. at the name of the

last male of her line.

There was, however, to the old schemer revolving these things in his

mind, another course yet open; the which will appear to the reader who

may take the trouble to peruse a conversation, which presently ensued,

between Major Pendennis and the honourable Baronet, the Member for

Clavering.

When a man, under pecuniary difficulties, disappears from among his

usual friends and equals,--dives out of sight, as it were, from the

flock of birds in which he is accustomed to sail, it is wonderful at

what strange and distant nooks he comes up again for breath. I have

known a Pall Mall lounger and Rotten Row buck, of no inconsiderable

fashion, vanish from amongst his comrades of the Clubs and the Park, and

be discovered, very happy and affable, at an eighteenpenny ordinary

in Billingsgate: another gentleman, of great learning and wit, when

outrunning the constable (were I to say he was a literary man, some

critics would vow that I intended to insult the literary profession),

once sent me his address at a little public-house called the "Fox under

the Hill," down a most darksome and cavernous archway in the Strand.

Such a man, under such misfortunes, may have a house, but he is never

in his house; and has an address where letters may be left; but only

simpletons go with the hopes of seeing him.--Only a few of the faithful

know where he is to be found, and have the clue to his hiding-place.

So, after the disputes with his wife, and the misfortunes consequent

thereon, to find Sir Francis Clavering at home was impossible. "Ever

since I hast him for my book, which is fourteen pound, he don't come

home till three o'clock, and purtends to be asleep when I bring his

water of a mornin', and dodges hout when I'm downstairs," Mr. Lightfoot

remarked to his friend Morgan; and announced that he should go down to

my Lady, and be butler there, and marry his old woman. In like manner,

after his altercations with Strong, the Baronet did not come near

him, and fled to other haunts, out of the reach of the Chevalier's

reproaches;--out of the reach of conscience, if possible, which many

of us try to dodge and leave behind us by changes of scene and other

fugitive stratagems.

So, though the elder Pendennis, having his own ulterior object, was bent

upon seeing Pen's country neighbour and representative in Parliament,

it took the Major no inconsiderable trouble and time before he could get

him into such a confidential state and conversation, as were necessary

for the ends which the Major had in view. For since the Major had been

called in as family friend, and had cognisance of Clavering's affairs,

conjugal and pecuniary, the Baronet avoided him: as he always avoided

all his lawyers and agents when there was an account to be rendered, or

an affair of business to be discussed between them; and never kept any

appointment but when its object was the raising of money. Thus, previous

to catching this most shy and timorous bird, the Major made more

than one futile attempt to hold him;--on one day it was a most

innocent-looking invitation to dinner at Greenwich, to meet a few

friends; the Baronet accepted, suspected something, and did not come;

leaving the Major (who indeed proposed to represent in himself the body

of friends) to eat his whitebait alone:--on another occasion the

Major wrote and asked for ten minutes' talk, and the Baronet instantly

acknowledged the note, and made the appointment at four o'clock the next

day at Bays's precisely (he carefully underlined the "precisely"); but

though four o'clock came, as in the course of time and destiny it could

not do otherwise, no Clavering made his appearance. Indeed, if he had

borrowed twenty pounds of Pendennis, he could not have been more timid,

or desirous of avoiding the Major; and the latter found that it was one

thing to seek a man, and another to find him.

Before the close of that day in which Strong's patron had given the

Chevalier the benefit of so many blessings before his face and curses

behind his back, Sir Francis Clavering, who had pledged his word and his

oath to his wife's advisers to draw or accept no more bills of exchange,

and to be content with the allowance which his victimised wife still

awarded him, had managed to sign his respectable name to a piece of

stamped paper, which the Baronet's friend, Mr. Moss Abrams, had carried

off, promising to have the bill "done" by a party with whose intimacy

Mr. Abrams was favoured. And it chanced that Strong heard of this

transaction at the place where the writings had been drawn,--in the

back-parlour, namely, of Mr. Santiago's cigar-shop, where the Chevalier

was constantly in the habit of spending an hour in the evening.

"He is at his old work again," Mr. Santiago told his customer. "He and

Moss Abrams were in my parlour. Moss sent out my boy for a stamp. It

must have been a bill for fifty pound. I heard the Baronet tell Moss

to date it two months back. He will pretend that it is an old bill, and

that he forgot it when he came to a settlement with his wife the other

day. I dare say they will give him some more money now he is clear." A

man who has the habit of putting his unlucky name to "promises to pay"

at six months, has the satisfaction of knowing, too, that his affairs

are known and canvassed, and his signature handed round among the very

worst knaves and rogues of London.

Mr. Santiago's shop was close by St. James's Street and Bury Street,

where we have had the honour of visiting our friend Major Pendennis in

his lodgings. The Major was walking daintily towards his apartment, as

Strong, burning with wrath and redolent of Havanna, strode along the

same pavement opposite to him.

"Confound these young men: how they poison everything with their smoke,"

thought the Major. "Here comes a fellow with mustachios and a cigar.

Every fellow who smokes and wears mustachios is a low fellow. Oh! it's

Mr. Strong.--I hope you are well, Mr. Strong?" and the old gentleman,

making a dignified bow to the Chevalier, was about to pass into his

house; directing towards the lock of the door, with trembling hand, the

polished door-key.

We have said that, at the long and weary disputes and conferences

regarding the payment of Sir Francis Clavering's last debts, Strong and

Pendennis had both been present as friends and advisers of the Baronet's

unlucky family. Strong stopped and held out his hand to his brother

negotiator, and old Pendennis put out towards him a couple of ungracious

fingers.

"What is your good news?" said Major Pendennis, patronising the other

still further, and condescending to address to him an observation; for

old Pendennis had kept such good company all his life, that he vaguely

imagined he honoured common men by speaking to them. "Still in town, Mr.

Strong? I hope I see you well."

"My news is bad news, sir," Strong answered; "it concerns our friends at

Tunbridge Wells, and I should like to talk to you about it. Clavering is

at his old tricks again, Major Pendennis."

"Indeed! Pray do me the favour to come into my lodging," cried the Major

with awakened interest; and the pair entered and took possession of his

drawing-room. Here seated, Strong unburthened himself of his indignation

to the Major, and spoke at large of Clavering's recklessness and

treachery. "No promises will bind him, sir," he said. "You remember when

we met, sir, with my lady's lawyer, how he wouldn't be satisfied with

giving his honour, but wanted to take his oath on his knees to his wife,

and rang the bell for a Bible, and swore perdition on his soul if he

ever would give another bill. He has been signing one this very day,

sir: and will sign as many more as you please for ready money: and

will deceive anybody, his wife or his child, or his old friend, who has

backed him a hundred times. Why, there's a bill of his and mine will be

due next week."

"I thought we had paid all."

"Not that one," Strong said, blushing. "He asked me not to mention it,

and--and--I had half the money for that, Major; And they will be down

on me. But I don't care for it; I'm used to it. It's Lady Clavering that

riles me. It's a shame that that good-natured woman, who has paid him

out of gaol a score of times, should be ruined by his heartlessness. A

parcel of bill-stealers boxers, any rascals, get his money; and he don't

scruple to throw an honest fellow over. Would you believe it, sir, he

took money of Altamont--you know whom I mean."

"Indeed? of that singular man, who I think came tipsy once to Sir

Francis's house?" Major Pendennis said, with impenetrable countenance.

"Who is Altamont, Mr. Strong?"

"I am sure I don't know, if you don't know," the Chevalier answered,

with a look of surprise and suspicion.

"To tell you frankly," said the Major, "I have my suspicions--I

suppose--mind, I only suppose--that in our friend Clavering's a

life--who, between you and me, Captain Strong, we must own about as

loose a fish as any in my acquaintance--there are, no doubt, some queer

secrets and stories which he would not like to have known: none of us

would. And very likely this fellow, who calls himself Altamont, knows

some story against Clavering, and has some hold on him, and gets money

out of him on the strength of his information. I know some of the best

men of the best families in England who are paying through the nose in

that way. But their private affairs are no business of mine, Mr. Strong;

and it is not to be supposed that because I go and dine with a man, I

pry into his secrets, or am answerable for all his past life. And so

with our friend Clavering, I am most interested for his wife's sake, and

her daughter's, who is a most charming creature: and when her ladyship

asked me, I looked into her affairs, and tried to set them straight; and

shall do so again, you understand, to the best of my humble power and

ability, if I can make myself useful. And if I am called upon--you

understand, if I am called upon--and--by the way, this Mr. Altamont, Mr.

Strong? How is this Mr. Altamont? I believe you are acquainted with him.

Is he in town?"

"I don't know that I am called upon to know where he is, Major

Pendennis," said Strong, rising and taking up his hat in dudgeon, for

the Major's patronising manner and impertinence of caution offended the

honest gentleman not a little.

Pendennis's manner altered at once from a tone of hauteur to one of

knowing good-humour. "Ah, Captain Strong, you are cautious too, I see;

and quite right, my good sir, quite right. We don't know what ears walls

may have, sir, or to whom we may be talking; and as a man of the world,

and an old soldier,--an old and distinguished soldier, I have been told,

Captain Strong,--you know very well that there is no use in throwing

away your fire; you may have your ideas, and I may put two and two

together and have mine. But there are things which don't concern him

that many a man had better not know, eh, Captain? and which I, for one,

won't know until I have reason for knowing them: and that I believe is

your maxim too. With regard to our friend the Baronet, I think with you,

it would be most advisable that he should be checked in his imprudent

courses; and most strongly reprehend any man's departure from his word,

or any conduct of his which can give any pain to his family, or cause

them annoyance in any way. That is my full and frank opinion, and I am

sure it is yours."

"Certainly," said Mr. Strong, drily.

"I am delighted to hear it; delighted that an old brother soldier should

agree with me so fully. And I am exceedingly glad of the lucky meeting

which has procured me the good fortune of your visit. Good evening.

Thank you. Morgan, show the door to Captain Strong."

And Strong, preceded by Morgan, took his leave of Major Pendennis; the

Chevalier not a little puzzled at the old fellow's prudence; and the

valet, to say the truth, to the full as much perplexed at his master's

reticence. For Mr. Morgan, in his capacity of accomplished valet, moved

here and there in a house as silent as a shadow; and, as it so happened,

during the latter part of his master's conversation with his visitor,

had been standing very close to the door, and had overheard not a little

of the talk between the two gentlemen, and a great deal more than he

could understand.

"Who is that Altamont? know anything about him and Strong?" Mr. Morgan

asked of Mr. Lightfoot, on the next convenient occasion when they met at

the Club.

"Strong's his man of business, draws the Governor's bills, and indosses

'em, and does his odd jobs and that; and I suppose Altamont's in it

too," Mr. Lightfoot replied. "That kite-flying, you know, Mr. M., always

takes two or three on 'em to set the paper going. Altamont put the pot

on at the Derby, and won a good bit of money. I wish the Governor could

get some somewhere, and I could get my book paid up."

"Do you think my Lady would pay his debts again?" Morgan asked. "Find

out that for me, Lightfoot, and I'll make it worth your while, my boy."

\* \* \* \* \* \*

Major Pendennis had often said with a laugh, that his vale Morgan was

a much richer man than himself: and, indeed, by long course of careful

speculation, this wary and silent attendant had been amassing a

considerable sum of money, during the year which he had passed in the

Major's service, where he had made the acquaintance of many other

valets of distinction, from whom he had learned the affairs of their

principals. When Mr. Arthur came into his property, but not until then,

Morgan had surprised the young gentleman, by saying that he had a little

sum of money, some fifty or a hundred pound, which he wanted to lay out

to advantage; perhaps the gentlemen in the Temple, knowing about affairs

and business and that, could help a poor fellow to a good investment?

Morgan would be very much obliged to Mr. Arthur, most grateful and

obliged indeed, if Arthur could tell him of one. When Arthur laughingly

replied, that he knew nothing about money matters, and knew no earthly

way of helping Morgan, the latter, with the utmost simplicity, was very

grateful, very grateful indeed, to Mr. Arthur, and if Mr. Arthur should

want a little money before his rents was paid, perhaps he would kindly

remember that his uncle's old and faithful servant had some as he would

like to put out: and be most proud if he could be useful anyways to any

of the family.

The Prince of Fairoaks, who was tolerably prudent and had no need of

ready money, would as soon have thought of borrowing from his uncle's

servant as of stealing the valet's pocket-handkerchief, and was on the

point of making some haughty reply to Morgan's offer, but was checked by

the humour of the transaction. Morgan a capitalist! Morgan offering to

lend to him--The joke was excellent. On the other hand, the man might be

quite innocent, and the proposal of money a simple offer of good-will.

So Arthur withheld the sarcasm that was rising to his lips, and

contented himself by declining Mr. Morgan's kind proposal. He mentioned

the matter to his uncle, however, and congratulated the latter on having

such a treasure in his service.

It was then that the Major said that he believed Morgan had been getting

devilish rich for a devilish long time; in fact, he had bought the house

in Bury Street, in which his master was a lodger and had actually made

a considerable sum of money, from his acquaintance with the Clavering

family and his knowledge obtained through his master that the Begum

would pay all her husband's debts, by buying up as many of the Baronet's

acceptances as he could raise money to purchase. Of these transactions

the Major, however, knew no more than most gentlemen do of their

servants, who live with us all our days and are strangers to us, so

strong custom is, and so pitiless the distinction between class and

class.

"So he offered to lend you money, did he?" the elder Pendennis remarked

to his nephew. "He's a dev'lish sly fellow, and a dev'lish rich fellow;

and there's many a nobleman would like to have such a valet in his

service, and borrow from him too. And he ain't a bit changed, Monsieur

Morgan. He does his work just as well as ever--he's always ready to my

bell--steals about the room like a cat--he's so dev'lishly attached to

me, Morgan!"

On the day of Strong's visit, the Major bethought him of Pen's story,

and that Morgan might help him, and rallied the valet regarding his

wealth with that free and insolent way which so high-placed a gentleman

might be disposed to adopt towards so unfortunate a creature.

"I hear that you have got some money to invest, Morgan," said the Major.

"It's Mr. Arthur has been telling, hang him," thought the valet.

"I'm glad my place is such a good one."

"Thank you, sir--I've no reason to complain of my place, nor of my

master," replied Morgan, demurely.

"You're a good fellow: and I believe you are attached to me; and I'm

glad you get on well. And I hope you'll be prudent, and not be taking a

public-house or that kind of thing."

A public-house, thought Morgan--me in a public-house!--the old

fool!--Dammy, if I was ten years younger I'd set in Parlyment before I

died, that I would.--"No, thank you kindly, sir. I don't think of the

public line, sir. And I've got my little savings pretty well put out,

sir."

"You do a little in the discounting way, eh, Morgan?"

"Yes, sir, a very little--I--I beg your pardon, sir--might I be so free

as to ask a question----"

"Speak on, my good fellow," the elder said, graciously.

"About Sir Francis Clavering's paper, sir? Do you think he's any longer

any good, sir? Will my Lady pay on 'em, any more, sir?"

"What, you've done something in that business already?"

"Yes, sir, a little," replied Morgan, dropping down his eyes. "And I

don't mind owning, sir, and I hope I may take the liberty of saying,

sir, that a little more would make me very comfortable if it turned out

as well as the last."

"Why, how much have you netted by him, in Gad's name?" asked the Major.

"I've done a good bit, sir, at it: that I own, sir. Having some

information, and made acquaintance with the fam'ly through your

kindness, I put on the pot, sir."

"You did what?"

"I laid my money on, sir--I got all I could, and borrowed, and bought

Sir Francis's bills; many of 'em had his name, and the gentleman's as is

just gone out, Edward Strong, Esquire, sir: and of course I know of the

blow-hup and shindy as is took place in Grosvenor Place, sir: and as I

may as well make my money as another, I'd be very much obleeged to you

if you'd tell me whether my Lady will come down any more."

Although Major Pendennis was as much surprised at this intelligence

regarding his servant, as if he had heard that Morgan was a disguised

Marquis, about to throw off his mask and assume his seat in the House

of Peers; and although he was of course indignant at the audacity of

the fellow who had dared to grow rich under his nose, and without

his cognisance; yet he had a natural admiration for every man who

represented money and success, and found himself respecting Morgan, and

being rather afraid of that worthy, as the truth began to dawn upon him.

"Well, Morgan," said he, "I mustn't ask how rich you are; and the

richer the better for your sake, I'm sure. And if I could give you

any information that could serve you, I would speedily help you. But

frankly, if Lady Clavering asks me whether she shall pay any more of Sir

Francis's debts, I shall advise and I hope she won't, though I fear she

will--and that is all I know. And so you are aware that Sir Francis is

beginning again in his--eh--reckless and imprudent course?"

"At his old games, sir--can't prevent that gentleman. He will do it."

"Mr. Strong was saying that a Mr. Moss Abrams was the holder of one of

Sir Francis Clavering's notes. Do you know anything of this Mr. Abrams;

or the amount of the bill?"

"Don't know the bill, know Abrams quite well, sir."

"I wish you would find out about it for me. And I wish you would find

out where I can see Sir Francis Clavering, Morgan."

And Morgan said, "Thank you, sir, yes, sir, I will, sir;" and retired

from the room, as he had entered it, with his usual stealthy respect and

quiet humility; leaving the Major to muse and wonder over what he had

just heard.

The next morning the valet informed Major Pendennis that he had seen Mr.

Abrams; what was the amount of the bill that gentleman was desirous to

negotiate; and that the Baronet would be sure to be in the back-parlour

of the Wheel of Fortune Tavern that day at one o'clock.

To this appointment Sir Francis Clavering was punctual, and as at one

o'clock he sate in the parlour of the tavern in question, surrounded by

spittoons, Windsor chairs, cheerful prints of boxers, trotting horses,

and pedestrians, and the lingering of last night's tobacco fumes--as the

descendant of an ancient line sate in this delectable place accommodated

with an old copy of Bell's Life in London, much blotted with beer, the

polite Major Pendennis walked into the apartment.

"So it's you, old boy?" asked the Baronet, thinking that Mr. Moss Abrams

had arrived with the money.

"How do you do, Sir Francis Clavering? I wanted to see you, and followed

you here," said the Major, at sight of whom the other's countenance

fell.

Now that he had his opponent before him, the Major was determined to

make a brisk and sudden attack upon him, and went into action at once.

"I know," he continued, "who is the exceedingly disreputable person for

whom you took me, Clavering; and the errand which brought you here."

"It ain't your business, is it?" asked the Baronet, with a sulky

and deprecatory look. "Why are you following me about and taking the

command, and meddling in my affairs, Major Pendennis? I've never done

you any harm, have I? I've never had your money. And I don't choose to

be dodged about in this way, and domineered over. I don't choose it, and

I won't have it. If Lady Clavering has any proposal to make to me, let

it be done in the regular way, and through the lawyers. I'd rather not

have you."

"I am not come from Lady Clavering," the Major said, "but of my own

accord, to try and remonstrate with you, Clavering, and see if you can

be kept from ruin. It is but a month ago that you swore on your honour,

and wanted to get a Bible to strengthen the oath, that you would accept

no more bills, but content yourself with the allowance which Lady

Clavering gives you. All your debts were paid with that proviso, and you

have broken it; this Mr. Abrams has a bill of yours for sixty pounds."

"It's an old bill. I take my solemn oath it's an old bill," shrieked out

the Baronet.

"You drew it yesterday, and you dated it three months back purposely.

By Gad, Clavering, you sicken me with lies, I can't help telling you

so. I've no patience with you, by Gad. You cheat everybody, yourself

included. I've seen a deal of the world, but I never met your equal at

humbugging. It's my belief you had rather lie than not."

"Have you come here, you old--old beast, to tempt me to--to pitch

into you, and--and knock your old head off?" said the Baronet, with a

poisonous look of hatred at the Major.

"What, sir?" shouted out the old Major, rising to his feet and clasping

his cane, and looking so fiercely, that the Baronet's tone instantly

changed towards him.

"No, no," said Clavering, piteously, "I beg your pardon. I didn't mean

to be angry, or say anything unkind, only you're so damned harsh to me,

Major Pendennis. What is it you want of me? Why have you been hunting

me so? Do you want money out of me too? By Jove, you know I've not got

a shilling,"--and so Clavering, according to his custom, passed from a

curse into a whimper.

Major Pendennis saw, from the other's tone, that Clavering knew his

secret was in the Major's hands.

"I've no errand from anybody, or no design upon you," Pendennis said,

"but an endeavour, if it's not too late, to save you and your family

from utter ruin, through the infernal recklessness of your courses. I

knew your secret----"

"I didn't know it when I married her; upon my oath I didn't know it till

the d----d scoundrel came back and told me himself; and it's the misery

about that which makes me so reckless, Pendennis; indeed it is," the

Baronet cried, clasping his hands.

"I knew your secret from the very first day when I saw Amory come

drunk into your dining-room in Grosvenor Place. I never forget faces.

I remember that fellow in Sydney a convict, and he remembers me. I know

his trial, the date of his marriage, and of his reported death in the

bush. I could swear to him. And I know that you are no more married to

Lady Clavering than I am. I've kept your secret well enough, for I've

not told a single soul that I know it,--not your wife, not yourself till

now."

"Poor Lady C., it would cut her up dreadfully," whimpered Sir Francis;

"and it wasn't my fault, Major; you know it wasn't."

"Rather than allow you to go on ruining her as you do; I will tell her,

Clavering, and tell all the world too; that is what I swear I will do,

unless I can come to some terms with you, and put some curb on your

infernal folly. By play, debt, and extravagance of all kind, you've

got through half your wife's fortune, and that of her legitimate heirs,

mind--her legitimate heirs. Here it must stop. You can't live together.

You're not fit to live in a great house like Clavering; and before

three years' more were over would not leave a shilling to carry on. I've

settled what must be done. You shall have six hundred a year; you shall

go abroad and live on that. You must give up Parliament, and get on as

well as you can. If you refuse, I give you my word I'll make the

real state of things known to-morrow; I'll swear to Amory, who, when

identified, will go back to the country from whence he came, and will

rid the widow of you and himself together. And so that boy of yours

loses at once all title to old Spell's property, and it goes to your

wife's daughter. Ain't I making myself pretty clearly understood?"

"You wouldn't be so cruel to that poor boy, would you, Pendennis?" asked

the father, pleading piteously; "hang it, think about him. He's a nice

boy: though he's dev'lish wild, I own he's dev'lish wild."

"It's you who are cruel to him," said the old moralist. "Why, sir,

you'll ruin him yourself inevitably in three years."

"Yes, but perhaps I won't have such dev'lish bad luck, you know;--the

luck must turn: and I'll reform, by Gad, I'll reform. And if you were

to split on me, it would cut up my wife so; you know it would, most

infernally."

"To be parted from you," said the old Major, with a sneer; "you know she

won't live with you again."

"But why can't Lady C. live abroad, or at Bath, or at Tunbridge, or at

the doose, and I go on here?" Clavering continued. "I like being here

better than abroad, and I like being in Parliament. It's dev'lish

convenient being in Parliament. There's very few seats like mine left;

and if I gave it to 'em, I should not wonder the ministry would give

me an island to govern, or some dev'lish good thing; for you know I'm

a gentleman of dev'lish good family, and have a handle to my name,

and--and that sort of thing, Major Pendennis. Eh, don't you see? Don't

you think they'd give me something dev'lish good if I was to play my

cards well? And then, you know, I'd save money, and be kept out of the

way of the confounded hells and rouge et noir--and--and so I'd rather

not give up Parliament, please." For at one instant to hate and defy

a man, at the next to weep before him, and at the next to be perfectly

confidential and friendly with him, was not an unusual process with our

versatile-minded Baronet.

"As for your seat in Parliament," the Major said, with something of a

blush on his cheek, and a certain tremor, which the other did not see,

"you must part with that, Sir Francis Clavering, to--to me."

"What! are you going into the House, Major Pendennis?"

"No--not I; but my nephew, Arthur, is a very clever fellow and would

make a figure there: and when Clavering had two members, his father

might very likely have been one; and--and should like Arthur to be

there," the Major said.

"Dammy, does he know it, too?" cried out Clavering.

"Nobody knows anything out of this room," Pendennis answered; and if you

do this favour for me, I hold my tongue. "If not, I'm a man of my word,

and will do what I have said."

"I say, Major," said Sir Francis, with a peculiarly humble smile

"You--You couldn't get me my first quarter in advance, could you, like

the best of fellows? You can do anything with Lady Clavering; and, upon

my oath, I'll take up that bill of Abrams'. The little dam scoundrel,

I know he'll do me in the business--he always does; and if you could do

this for me, we'd see, Major."

"And I think your best plan would be to go down in September to

Clavering to shoot, and take my nephew with you, and introduce him.

Yes, that will be the best time. And we will try and manage about the

advance." (Arthur may lend him that, thought old Pendennis. Confound

him, a seat in Parliament is worth a hundred and fifty pounds.) "And,

Clavering, you understand, of course, my nephew knows nothing about this

business. You have a mind to retire: he is a Clavering man and a good

representative for the borough; you introduce him, and your people vote

for him--you see."

"When can you get me the hundred and fifty, Major? When shall I come and

see you? Will you be at home this evening or to-morrow morning? Will you

have anything here? They've got some dev'lish good bitters in the bar. I

often have a glass of bitters, it sets one up so."

The old Major would take no refreshment; but rose and took his leave of

the Baronet, who walked with him to the door of the Wheel of Fortune,

and then strolled into the bar, where he took a glass of gin and bitters

with the landlady there: and a gentleman connected with the ring (who

boarded at the Wheel of F.) coming in, he and Sir Francis Clavering and

the landlord talked about the fights and the news of the sporting world

in general; and at length Mr. Moss Abrams arrived with the proceeds of

the Baronet's bill, from which his own handsome commission was deducted,

and out of the remainder Sir Francis "stood" a dinner at Greenwich to

his distinguished friend, and passed the evening gaily at Vauxhall.

Meanwhile Major Pendennis, calling a cab in Piccadilly, drove to Lamb

Court, Temple, where he speedily was closeted with his nephew in deep

conversation.

After their talk they parted on very good terms, and it was in

consequence of that unreported conversation, whereof the reader

nevertheless can pretty well guess the bearing, that Arthur expressed

himself as we have heard in the colloquy with Warrington, which is

reported in the last chapter.

When a man is tempted to do a tempting thing, he can find a hundred

ingenious reasons for gratifying his liking; and Arthur thought very

much that he would like to be in Parliament, and that he would like to

distinguish himself there, and that he need not care much what side he

took, as there was falsehood and truth on every side. And on this and

on other matters he thought he would compromise with his conscience, and

that Sadduceeism was a very convenient and good-humoured profession of

faith.

CHAPTER LXIV. Phyllis and Corydon

On a picturesque common in the neighbourhood of Tunbridge Wells, Lady

Clavering had found a pretty villa, whither she retired after her

conjugal disputes at the end of that unlucky London season. Miss Amory,

of course, accompanied her mother, and Master Clavering came home for

the holidays, with whom Blanche's chief occupation was to fight and

quarrel. But this was only a home pastime, and the young schoolboy was

not fond of home sports. He found cricket, and horses, and plenty of

friends at Tunbridge. The good-natured Begum's house was filled with a

constant society of young gentlemen of thirteen, who ate and drank much

too copiously of tarts and champagne, who rode races on the lawn, and

frightened the fond mother, who smoked and made themselves sick, and the

dining-room unbearable to Miss Blanche. She did not like the society of

young gentlemen of thirteen.

As for that fair young creature, any change as long as it was change was

pleasant to her; and for a week or two she would have liked poverty and

a cottage, and bread-and-cheese; and, for a night, perhaps, a dungeon

and bread-and-water, and so the move to Tunbridge was by no means

unwelcome to her. She wandered in the woods, and sketched trees and

farmhouses; she read French novels habitually; she drove into Tunbridge

Wells pretty often, and to any play, or ball, or conjurer, or musician

who might happen to appear in the place; she slept a great deal; she

quarrelled with Mamma and Frank during the morning; she found the little

village school and attended it, and first fondled the girls and thwarted

the mistress, then scolded the girls and laughed at the teacher; she was

constant at church, of course. It was a pretty little church, of immense

antiquity--a little Anglo-Norman bijou, built the day before yesterday,

and decorated with all sorts of painted windows, carved saints' heads,

gilt scripture texts, and open pews. Blanche began forthwith to work a

most correct high-church altar-cover for the church. She passed for a

saint with the clergyman for a while, whom she quite took in, and

whom she coaxed, and wheedled, and fondled so artfully, that poor Mrs.

Smirke, who at first was charmed with her, then bore with her, then

would hardly speak to her, was almost mad with jealousy. Mrs. Smirke was

the wife of our old friend Smirke, Pen's tutor and poor Helen's suitor.

He had consoled himself for her refusal with a young lady from Clapham

whom his mamma provided. When the latter died, our friend's views became

every day more and more pronounced. He cut off his coat collar, and let

his hair grow over his back. He rigorously gave up the curl which he

used to sport on his forehead, and the tie of his neckcloth, of which he

was rather proud. He went without any tie at all. He went without dinner

on Fridays. He read the Roman Hours, and intimated that he was ready

to receive confessions in the vestry. The most harmless creature in the

world, he was denounced as a black and most dangerous Jesuit and Papist,

by Muffin of the Dissenting chapel, and Mr. Simeon Knight at the old

church. Mr. Smirke had built his chapel-of-ease with the money left him

by his mother at Clapham. Lord! lord! what would she have said to hear a

table called an altar! to see candlesticks on it! to get letters

signed on the Feast of Saint So-and-so, or the Vigil of Saint

What-do-you-call-'em! All these things did the boy of Clapham practise;

his faithful wife following him. But when Blanche had a conference of

near two hours in the vestry with Mr. Smirke, Belinda paced up and down

on the grass, where there were only two little grave-stones as yet; she

wished that she had a third there: only, only he would offer very likely

to that creature, who had infatuated him in a fortnight. No, she would

retire; she would go into a convent, and profess and leave him. Such

bad thoughts had Smirke's wife and his neighbours regarding him; these,

thinking him in direct correspondence with the Bishop of Rome; that,

bewailing errors to her even more odious and fatal; and yet our friend

meant no earthly harm. The post-office never brought him any letters

from the Pope; he thought Blanche, to be sure, at first, the most pious,

gifted, right-thinking, fascinating person he had ever met; and her

manner of singing the Chants delighted him--but after a while he began

to grow rather tired of Miss Amory, her ways and graces grew stale

somehow; then he was doubtful about Miss Amory; then she made a

disturbance in his school, lost her temper, and rapped the children's

fingers. Blanche inspired this admiration and satiety, somehow, in many

men. She tried to please them, and flung out all her graces at

once; came down to them with all her jewels on, all her smiles, and

cajoleries, and coaxings, and ogles. Then she grew tired of them and of

trying to please them, and never having cared about them, dropped them:

and the men grew tired of her, and dropped her too. It was a happy night

for Belinda when Blanche went away; and her husband, with rather a

blush and a sigh, said "he had been deceived in her; he had thought her

endowed with many precious gifts, he feared they were mere tinsel; he

thought she had been a right-thinking person, he feared she had merely

made religion an amusement--she certainly had quite lost her temper to

the schoolmistress, and beat Polly Rucker's knuckles cruelly." Belinda

flew to his arms, there was no question about the grave or the veil

any more. He tenderly embraced her on the forehead. "There is none like

thee, my Belinda," he said, throwing his fine eyes up to the ceiling,

"precious among women!" As for Blanche, from the instant she lost sight

of him and Belinda, she never thought or cared about either any more.

But when Arthur went down to pass a few days at Tunbridge Wells with the

Begum, this stage of indifference had not arrived on Miss Blanche's part

or on that of the simple clergyman. Smirke believed her to be an angel

and wonder of a woman. Such a perfection he had never seen, and sate

listening to her music in the summer evenings, open-mouthed, rapt in

wonder, tea-less, and bread-and-butter-less. Fascinating as he had

heard the music of the opera to be--he had never but once attended

an exhibition of that nature (which he mentioned with a blush and a

sigh--it was on that day when he had accompanied Helen and her son to

the play at Chatteris)--he could not conceive anything more delicious,

more celestial, he had almost said, than Miss Amory's music. She was a

most gifted being: she had a precious soul: she had the most remarkable

talents--to all outward seeming, the most heavenly disposition, etc.

etc. It was in this way that, being then at the height of his own fever

and bewitchment for Blanche, Smirke discoursed to Arthur about her.

The meeting between the two old acquaintances had been very cordial.

Arthur loved anybody who loved his mother; Smirke could speak on that

theme with genuine feeling and emotion. They had a hundred things to

tell each other of what had occurred in their lives. "Arthur would

perceive," Smirke said, "that his--his views on Church matters had

developed themselves since their acquaintance." Mrs. Smirke, a most

exemplary person, seconded them with all her endeavours. He had built

this little church on his mother's demise, who had left him provided

with a sufficiency of worldly means. Though in the cloister himself,

he had heard of Arthur's reputation. He spoke in the kindest and most

saddened tone; he held his eyelids down, and bowed his fair head on

one side. Arthur was immensely amused with him; with his airs; with his

follies and simplicity; with his blank stock and long hair; with his

real goodness, kindness, friendliness of feeling. And his praises of

Blanche pleased and surprised our friend not a little, and made him

regard her with eyes of particular favour.

The truth is, Blanche was very glad to see Arthur; as one is glad to

see an agreeable man in the country, who brings down the last news

and stories from the great city; who can talk better than most

country-folks, at least can talk that darling London jargon, so dear and

indispensable to London people, so little understood by persons out of

the world. The first day Pen came down, he kept Blanche laughing for

hours after dinner. She sang her songs with redoubled spirit. She did

not scold her mother; she fondled and kissed her, to the honest Begum's

surprise. When it came to be bedtime, she said, "Deja!" with the

prettiest air of regret possible; and was really quite sorry to go to

bed, and squeezed Arthur's hand quite fondly. He on his side gave her

pretty palm a very cordial pressure. Our young gentleman was of that

turn, that eyes very moderately bright dazzled him.

"She is very much improved," thought Pen, looking out into the night,

"very much. I suppose the Begum won't mind my smoking with the window

open. She's a jolly good old woman, and Blanche is immensely improved. I

liked her manner with her mother tonight. I liked her laughing way

with that stupid young cub of a boy, whom they oughtn't to allow to get

tipsy. She sang those little verses very prettily; they were devilish

pretty verses too, though I say it who shouldn't say it." And he hummed

a tune which Blanche had put to some verses of his own. "Ah! what a

fine night! How jolly a cigar is at night! How pretty that little Saxon

church looks in the moonlight! I wonder what old Warrington's doing?

Yes, she's a dayvlish nice little thing, as my uncle says."

"Oh, heavenly!" Here broke out a voice from a clematis-covered casement

near--a girl's voice: it was the voice of the author of 'Mes Larmes.'

Pen burst into a laugh. "Don't tell about my smoking," he said, leaning

out of his own window.

"Oh! go on! I adore it," cried the lady of 'Mes Larmes.' "Heavenly

night! heavenly, heavenly moon! but I must shut my window, and not talk

to you on account of les moeurs. How droll they are, les moeurs! Adieu."

And Pen began to sing the Goodnight to Don Basilio.

The next day they were walking in the fields together, laughing and

chattering--the gayest pair of friends. They talked about the days of

their youth, and Blanche was prettily sentimental. They talked about

Laura, dearest Laura--Blanche had loved her as a sister: was she happy

with that odd Lady Rockminster? Wouldn't she come and stay with them

at Tunbridge? Oh, what walks they would take together! What songs

they would sing--the old, old songs! Laura's voice was splendid. Did

Arthur--she must call him Arthur--remember the songs they sang in

the happy old days, now he was grown such a great man, and had such a

succes? etc. etc.

And the day after, which was enlivened with a happy ramble through the

woods to Penshurst, and a sight of that pleasant park and hall, came

that conversation with the curate which we have narrated, and which made

our young friend think more and more.

"Is she all this perfection?" he asked himself. "Has she become serious

and religious? Does she tend schools, and visit the poor? Is she kind

to her mother and brother? Yes, I am sure of that, I have seen her." And

walking with his old tutor over his little parish, and going to visit

his school, it was with inexpressible delight that Pen found Blanche

seated instructing the children, and fancied to himself how patient

she must be, how good-natured, how ingenuous, how really simple in her

tastes, and unspoiled by the world.

"And do you really like the country?" he asked her, as they walked

together.

"I should like never to see that odious city again. O Arthur--that is,

Mr.--well, Arthur, then--one's good thoughts grow up in these sweet

woods and calm solitudes, like those flowers which won't bloom in

London, you know. The gardener comes and changes our balconies once a

week. I don't think I shall bear to look London in the face again--its

odious, smoky, brazen face! But, heigho!"

"Why that sigh, Blanche?"

"Never mind why."

"Yes, I do mind why. Tell me, tell me everything."

"I wish you hadn't come down;" and a second edition of 'Mes Soupirs'

came out.

"You don't want me, Blanche?"

"I don't want you to go away. I don't think this house will be very

happy without you, and that's why I wish that you never had come."

'Mes Soupirs' were here laid aside, and 'Mes Larmes' had begun.

Ah! What answer is given to those in the eyes of a young woman? What is

the method employed for drying them? What took place? O ringdoves and

roses, O dews and wildflowers, O waving greenwoods and balmy airs of

summer! Here were two battered London rakes, taking themselves in for

a moment, and fancying that they were in love with each other, like

Phillis and Corydon!

When one thinks of country houses and country walks, one wonders that

any man is left unmarried.

CHAPTER LXV. Temptation

Easy and frank-spoken as Pendennis commonly was with Warrington, how

came it that Arthur did not inform the friend and depository of all his

secrets, of the little circumstances which had taken place at the villa

near Tunbridge Wells? He talked about the discovery of his old tutor

Smirke, freely enough, and of his wife, and of his Anglo-Norman church,

and of his departure from Clapha to Rome; but, when asked about Blanche,

his answers were evasive or general: he said she was a good-natured

clever little thing, that rightly guided she make no such bad wife after

all, but that he had for the moment no intention of marriage, that his

days of romance were over, that he was contented with his present lot,

and so forth.

In the meantime there came occasionally to Lamb Court, Temple, pretty

little satin envelopes, superscribed in the neatest handwriting, and

sealed with one of those admirable ciphers, which, if Warrington had

been curious enough to watch his friend's letters, or indeed if the

cipher had been decipherable, would have shown George that Mr. Arthur

was in correspondence with a young lady whose initials were B. A.

To these pretty little compositions Mr. Pen replied in his best and

gallantest manner; with jokes, with news of the town, with points

of wit, nay, with pretty little verses very likely, in reply to the

versicles of the Muse of 'Mes Larmes.' Blanche we know rhymes with

"branch," and "stanch," and "launch," and no doubt a gentleman of Pen's

ingenuity would not forgo these advantages of position, and would ring

the pretty little changes upon these pleasing notes. Indeed we believe

that those love-verses of Mr. Pen's, which had such a pleasing success

in the 'Roseleaves,' that charming Annual edited by Lady Violet Lebas,

and illustrated by portraits of the female nobility by the famous artist

Pinkney, were composed at this period of our hero's life; and were first

addressed to Blanche per post, before they figured in print, cornets as

it were to Pinkney's pictorial garland.

"Verses are all very well," the elder Pendennis said, who found Pen

scratching down one of these artless effusions at the Club as he was

waiting for his dinner; "and letter-writing if mamma allows it,

and between such old country friends of course there may be a

correspondence, and that sort of thing--but mind, Pen, and don't commit

yourself, my boy. For who knows what the doose may happen? The best way

is to make your letters safe. I never wrote a letter in all my life that

would commit me, and demmy, sir, I have had some experience of women."

And the worthy gentleman, growing more garrulous and confidential with

his nephew as he grew older, told many affecting instances of the

evil results consequent upon this want of caution to many persons in

"Society;"--how from using too ardent expressions in some poetical notes

to the widow Naylor, young Spoony had subjected himself to a visit of

remonstrance from the widow's brother, Colonel Flint; and thus had been

forced into a marriage with a woman old enough to be his mother: how

when Louisa Salter had at length succeeded in securing young Sir John

Bird, Hopwood, of the Blues, produced some letters which Miss S. had

written to him, and caused a withdrawal on Bird's part, who afterwards

was united to Miss Stickney, of Lyme Regis, etc. The Major, if he had

not reading, had plenty of observation, and could back his wise saws

with a multitude of modern instances, which he had acquired in a long

and careful perusal of the great book of the world.

Pen laughed at the examples, and blushing a little at his uncle's

remonstrances, said that he would bear them in mind and be cautious.

He blushed, perhaps, because he had borne them in mind; because he was

cautious: because in his letters to Miss Blanche he had from instinct,

or honesty perhaps, refrained from any avowals which might compromise

him. "Don't you remember the lesson I had, sir, in Lady Mirabel's--Miss

Fotheringay's affair? I am not to be caught again, uncle," Arthur said

with mock frankness and humility. Old Pendennis congratulated himself

and his nephew heartily on the latter's prudence and progress, and was

pleased at the position which Arthur was taking as a man of the world.

No doubt, if Warrington had been consulted, his opinion would have been

different: and he would have told Pen that the boy's foolish letters

were better than the man's adroit compliments and slippery gallantries;

that to win the woman he loves, only a knave or a coward advances under

cover, with subterfuges, and a retreat secured behind him: but Pen spoke

not on this matter to Mr. Warrington, knowing pretty well that he was

guilty, and what his friend's verdict would be.

Colonel Altamont had not been for many weeks absent on his foreign tour,

Sir Francis Clavering having retired meanwhile into the country pursuant

to his agreement with Major Pendennis, when the ills of fate began to

fall rather suddenly and heavily upon the sole remaining partner of the

little firm of Shepherd's Inn. When Strong, at parting with Altamont,

refused the loan proffered by the latter in the fulness of his purse and

the generosity of his heart, he made such a sacrifice to conscience and

delicacy as caused him many an after twinge and pang; he and felt--it

was not very many hours in his life he had experienced the feeling--that

in this juncture of his affairs he had been too delicate and too

scrupulous. Why should a fellow in want refuse a kind offer kindly made?

Why should a thirsty man decline a pitcher of water from a friendly

hand, because it was a little soiled? Strong's conscience smote him for

refusing what the other had fairly come by, and generously proffered:

and he thought ruefully, now it was too late, that Altamont's cash

would have been as well in his pocket as in that of the gambling--house

proprietor at Baden or Ems, with whom his Excellency would infallibly

leave his Derby winnings. It was whispered among the tradesmen,

bill-discounters, and others who had commercial dealings with Captain

Strong, that he and the Baronet had parted company, and that the

Captain's "paper" was henceforth of no value. The tradesmen, who had put

a wonderful confidence in him hitherto,--for who could resist Strong's

jolly face and frank and honest demeanour?--now began to pour in

their bills with a cowardly mistrust and unanimity. The knocks at the

Shepherd's Inn chambers door were constant, and tailors, bootmakers,

pastrycooks who had furnished dinners, in their own persons, or by the

boys their representatives, held levees on Strong's stairs. To these

were added one or two persons of a less clamorous but far more sly and

dangerous sort,--the young clerks of lawyers, namely, who lurked about

the Inn, or concerted with Mr. Campion's young man in the chambers hard

by, having in their dismal pocketbooks copies of writs to be served on

Edward Strong, requiring him to appear on an early day next term before

our Sovereign Lady the Queen, and answer to, etc. etc.

From this invasion of creditors, poor Strong, who had not a guinea

in his pocket, had, of course, no refuge but that of the Englishman's

castle, into which he retired, shutting the outer and inner door upon

the enemy, and not quitting his stronghold until after nightfall.

Against this outer barrier the foe used to come and knock and curse in

vain, whilst the Chevalier peeped at them from behind the little curtain

which he had put over the orifice of his letter-box; and had the dismal

satisfaction of seeing the faces of furious clerk and fiery dun, as they

dashed up against the door and retreated from it. But as they could not

be always at his gate, or sleep on his staircase, the enemies of the

Chevalier sometimes left him free.

Strong, when so pressed by his commercial antagonists, was not quite

alone in his defence against them, but had secured for himself an ally

or two. His friends were instructed to communicate with him by a system

of private signals: and they thus kept the garrison from starving by

bringing in necessary supplies, and kept up Strong's heart and prevented

him from surrendering by visiting him and cheering him in his retreat.

Two of Ned's most faithful allies were Huxter and Miss Fanny Bolton:

when hostile visitors were prowling about the Inn, Fanny's little

sisters were taught a particular cry or jodel, which they innocently

whooped in the court: when Fanny and Huxter came up to visit Strong,

they archly sang this same note at his door; when that barrier was

straightway opened, the honest garrison came out smiling, the provisions

and the pot of porter were brought in, and in the society of his

faithful friends the beleaguered one passed a comfortable night. There

are some men who could not live under this excitement, but Strong was a

brave man, as we have said, who had seen service and never lost heart in

peril.

But besides allies, our general had secured for himself, under

difficulties, that still more necessary aid, a retreat. It has been

mentioned in a former part of this history, how Messrs. Costigan and

Bows lived in the house next door to Captain Strong, and that the window

of one of their rooms was not very far off the kitchen-window which was

situated in the upper story of Strong's chambers. A leaden water-pipe

and gutter served for the two; and Strong, looking out from his kitchen

one day, saw that he could spring with great ease up to the sill of his

neighbour's window, and clamber up the pipe which communicated from one

to the other. He had laughingly shown this refuge to his chum, Altamont;

and they had agreed that it would be as well not to mention the

circumstance to Captain Costigan, whose duns were numerous, and who

would be constantly flying down the pipe into their apartments if this

way of escape were shown to him.

But now that the evil days were come, Strong made use of the passage,

and one afternoon burst in upon Bows and Costigan with his jolly face,

and explained that the enemy was in waiting on his staircase, and that

he had taken this means of giving them the slip. So while Mr. Marks's

aides-de-camp were in waiting in the passage of No. 3, Strong walked

down the steps of No. 4, dined at the Albion, went to the play, and

returned home at midnight, to the astonishment of Mrs. Bolton and Fanny,

who had not seen him quit his chambers and could not conceive how he

could have passed the line of sentries.

Strong bore this siege for some weeks with admirable spirit and

resolution, and as only such an old and brave soldier would, for the

pains and privations which he had to endure were enough to depress any

man of ordinary courage; and what vexed and riled him (to use his own

expression) was the infernal indifference and cowardly ingratitude of

Clavering, to whom he wrote letter after letter, which the Baronet never

acknowledged by a single word, or by the smallest remittance, though a

five-pound note, as Strong said, at that time would have been a fortune

to him.

But better days were in store for the Chevalier, and in the midst of his

despondency and perplexities there came to him a most welcome aid. "Yes,

if it hadn't been for this good fellow here," said Strong,--"for a good

fellow you are, Altamont, my boy, and hang me if I don't stand by you as

long as I live,--I think, Pendennis, it would have been all up with Ned

Strong. I was the fifth week of my being kept a prisoner, for I couldn't

be always risking my neck across that water-pipe, and taking my walks

abroad through poor old Cos's window, and my spirit was quite broken,

sir--dammy, quite beat, and I was thinking of putting an end to myself,

and should have done it in another week, when who should drop down from

heaven but Altamont!"

"Heaven ain't exactly the place, Ned," said Altamont. "I came from

Baden-Baden," said he, "and I'd had a deuced lucky month there, that's

all."

"Well, sir, he took up Marks's bill, and he paid the other fellows

that were upon me, like a man, sir, that he did," said Strong,

enthusiastically.

"And I shall be very happy to stand a bottle of claret for this company,

and as many more as the company chooses," said Mr. Altamont, with a

blush. "Hallo! waiter, bring us a magnum of the right sort, do you hear?

And we'll drink our healths all round, sir--and may every good fellow

like Strong find another good fellow to stand by him at a pinch. That's

my sentiment, Mr. Pendennis, though I don't like your name."

"No! And why?" asked Arthur.

Strong pressed the Colonel's foot under the table here; and Altamont,

rather excited, filled up another bumper, nodded to Pen, drank off his

wine, and said, "He was a gentleman, and that was sufficient, and they

were all gentlemen."

The meeting between these "all gentlemen" took place at Richmond,

whither Pendennis had gone to dinner, and where he found the Chevalier

and his friend at table in the coffee-room. Both of the latter were

exceedingly hilarious, talkative, and excited by wine; and Strong, who

was an admirable story-teller, told the story of his own siege, and

adventures, and escapes with great liveliness and humour, and described

the talk of the sheriff's officers at his door, the pretty little

signals of Fanny, the grotesque exclamations of Costigan when the

Chevalier burst in at his window, and his final rescue by Altamont, in a

most graphic manner, and so as greatly to interest his hearers.

"As for me, it's nothing," Altamont said. "When a ship's paid off, a

chap spends his money, you know. And it's the fellers at the black and

red at Baden-Baden that did it. I won a good bit of money there, and

intend to win a good bit more, don't I, Strong? I'm going to take him

with me. I've got a system. I'll make his fortune, I tell you. I'll make

your fortune, if you like--dammy, everybody's fortune. But what I'll do,

and no mistake, boys, I promise you. I'll put in for that little Fanny.

Dammy, sir, what do you think she did? She had two pound, and I'm blest

if she didn't go and lend it to Ned Strong! Didn't she, Ned? Let's drink

her health."

"With all my heart," said Arthur, and pledged this toast with the

greatest cordiality.

Mr. Altamont then began, with the greatest volubility, at great length,

to describe his system. He said that it was infallible, if played with

coolness; that he had it from a chap at Baden, who had lost by it, it

was true, but because he had not enough capital; if he could have stood

one more turn of the wheel, he would have had all his money back; that

he and several more chaps were going to make a bank, and try it; and

that he would put every shilling he was worth into it, and had come back

to the country for the express purpose of fetching away his money, and

Captain Strong; that Strong should play for him; that he could trust

Strong and his temper much better than he could his own; and much better

than Bloundell-Bloundell or the Italian that "stood in." As he emptied

his bottle, the Colonel described at full length all his plans and

prospects to Pen, who was interested in listening to his story, and the

confessions of his daring and lawless good-humour.

"I met that queer fellow Altamont the other day," Pen said to his uncle,

a day or two afterwards.

"Altamont? What Altamont? There's Lord Westport's son," said the Major.

"No, no; the fellow who came tipsy into Clavering's dining-room one day

when we were there," said the nephew, laughing, "he said he did not like

the name of Pendennis, though he did me the honour to think that I was a

good fellow."

"I don't know any man of the name of Altamont, I give you my honour,"

said the impenetrable Major; "and as for your acquaintance, I think the

less you have to do with him the better, Arthur."

Arthur laughed again. "He is going to quit the country, and make his

fortune by a gambling system. He and my amiable college acquaintance,

Bloundell, are partners, and the Colonel takes out Strong with him

as aide-de-camp. What is it that binds the Chevalier and Clavering, I

wonder?"

"I should think, mind you, Pen, I should think, but of course I have

only the idea, that there has been something in Clavering's previous

life which gives these fellows and some others a certain power over him;

and if there should be no such a secret, which affair of ours, my boy,

dammy, I say, it ought to be a lesson to a man to keep himself straight

in life, and not to give any man a chance over him."

"Why, I think you have some means of persuasion over Clavering, uncle,

or why should he give me that seat in Parlament?"

"Clavering thinks he ain't fit for Parliament," the Major answered. "No

more he is. What's to prevent him from putting you or anybody else into

his place if he likes? Do you think that vernment or the Opposition

would make any bones about accepting the seat if he offered it to

them! Why should you be more squeamish than the first men, and the

most honourable men, and men of the highest birth and position in the

country, begad?" The Major had an answer of this kind to most of Pen's

objections, and Pen accepted his uncle's replies, not so much because

he believed them, but because he wished to believe them. We do a

thing--which of us has not?--not because "everybody does it," but

because we like it; and our acquiescence, alas! proves not that

everybody is right, but that we and the rest of the world are poor

creatures alike.

At his next visit to Tunbridge, Mr. Pen did not forget to amuse Miss

Blanche with the history which he had learned at Richmond of the

Chevalier's imprisonment, and of Altamont's gallant rescue. And after he

had told his tale in his usual satirical way, he mentioned with praise

and emotion little Fanny's generous behaviour to the Chevalier, and

Altamont's enthusiasm in her behalf.

Miss Blanche was somewhat jealous, and a good deal piqued and curious

about Fanny. Among the many confidential little communications which

Arthur made to Miss Amory in the course of their delightful rural drives

and their sweet evening walks, it may be supposed that our hero would

not forget a story so interesting to himself and so likely to be

interesting to her, as that of the passion and cure of the poor little

Ariadne of Shepherd's Inn. His own part in that drama he described, to

do him justice, with becoming modesty; the moral which he wished to draw

from the tale being one in accordance with his usual satirical mood,

viz., that women get over their first loves quite as easily as men do

(for the fair Blanche, in their intimes conversations, did not cease to

twit Mr. Pen about his notorious failure in his own virgin attachment to

the Fotheringay), and, number one being withdrawn, transfer themselves

to number two without much difficulty. And poor little Fanny was offered

up in sacrifice as an instance to prove this theory. What griefs she had

endured and surmounted, what bitter pangs of hopeless attachment she had

gone through, what time it had taken to heal those wounds of the tender

little bleeding heart, Mr. Pen did not know, or perhaps did not choose

to know; for he was at once modest and doubtful about his capabilities

as a conqueror of hearts, and averse to believe that he had executed any

dangerous ravages on that particular one, though his own instance and

argument told against himself in this case; for if, as he said, Miss

Fanny was by this time in love with her surgical adorer, who had neither

good looks, nor good manners, nor wit, nor anything but ardour and

fidelity to recommend him, must she not in her first sickness of the

love-complaint have had a serious attack, and suffered keenly for a

man who had certainly a number of the showy qualities which Mr. Huxter

wanted?

"You wicked odious creature," Miss Blanche said, "I believe that you are

enraged with Fanny for being so impudent as to forget you, and that you

are actually jealous of Mr. Huxter." Perhaps Miss Amory was right, as

the blush which came in spite of himself and tingled upon Pendennis's

cheek (one of those blows with which a man's vanity is constantly

slapping his face) proved to Pen that he was angry to think he had

been superseded by such a rival. By such a fellow as that! without any

conceivable good quality! O Mr. Pendennis! (although this remark does

not apply to such a smart fellow as you) if Nature had not made that

provision for each sex in the credulity of the other, which sees good

qualities where none exist, good looks in donkeys' ears, wit in their

numskulls, and music in their bray, there would not have been near so

much marrying and giving in marriage as now obtains, and as is necessary

for the due propagation and continuance of the noble race to which we

belong.

"Jealous or not," Pen said, "and, Blanche, I don't say no, I should

have liked Fanny to have come to a better end than that. I don't like

histories that end in that cynical way; and when we arrive at the

conclusion of the story of a pretty girl's passion, to find such a

figure as Huxter's at the last page of the tale. Is a life a compromise,

my lady fair, and the end of the battle of love an ignoble surrender?

Is the search for the Cupid which my poor little Psyche pursued in the

darkness--the god of her soul's longing--the god of the blooming cheek

and rainbow pinions,--to result in Huxter smelling of tobacco and

gallypots? I wish, though I don't see it in life, that people could

be like Jenny and Jessamy, or my Lord and Lady Clementina in the

story-books and fashionable novels, and at once under the ceremony, and,

as it were, at the parson's benediction, become perfectly handsome and

good and happy ever after."

"And don't you intend to be good and happy, pray, Monsieur le

Misanthrope--and are you very discontented with your lot--and will your

marriage be a compromise"--(asked the author of 'Mes Larmes,' with a

charming moue)--"and is your Psyche an odious vulgar wretch? You wicked

satirical creature, I can't abide you! You take the hearts of young

things, play with them, and fling them away with scorn. You ask for love

and trample on it. You--you make me cry, that you do, Arthur, and--and

don't--and I won't be consoled in that way--and I think Fanny was quite

right in leaving such a heartless creature."

"Again, I don't say no," said Pen, looking very gloomily at Blanche, and

not offering by any means to repeat the attempt at consolation, which

had elicited that sweet monosyllable "don't" from the young lady. "I

don't think I have much of what people call heart; but I don't profess

it. I made my venture when I was eighteen, and lighted my lamp and

went in search of Cupid. And what was my discovery of love?--a vulgar

dancing-woman! I failed, as everybody does, almost everybody; only it is

luckier to fail before marriage than after."

"Merci du choix, Monsieur," said the Sylphide, making a curtsey.

"Look, my little Blanche," said Pen, taking her hand, and with his voice

of sad good-humour; "at least I stoop to no flatteries."

"Quite the contrary," said Miss Blanche.

"And tell you no foolish lies, as vulgar men do. Why should you and I,

with our experience, ape romance and dissemble passion? I do not believe

Miss Blanche Amory to be peerless among the beautiful, nor the greatest

poetess, nor the most surpassing musician, any more than I believe you

to be the tallest woman in the whole world--like the giantess whose

picture we saw as we rode through the fair yesterday. But if I don't set

you up as a heroine, neither do I offer you your very humble servant

as a hero. But I think you are--well, there, I think you are very

sufficiently good-looking."

"Merci," Miss Blanche said, with another curtsey.

"I think you sing charmingly. I'm sure you're clever. I hope and believe

that you are good-natured, and that you will be companionable."

"And so, provided I bring you a certain sum of money and a seat

in Parliament, you condescend to fling to me your royal

pocket-handkerchief," said Blanche. "Que d'honneur! We used to call your

Highness the Prince of Fairoaks. What an honour to think that I am to

be elevated to the throne, and to bring the seat in Parliament as

backsheesh to the sultan! I am glad I am clever, and that I can play and

sing to your liking; my songs will amuse my lord's leisure."

"And if thieves are about the house," said Pen, grimly pursuing the

simile, "forty besetting thieves in the shape of lurking cares and

enemies in ambush and passions in arms, my Morgiana will dance round

me with a tambourine, and kill all my rogues and thieves with a smile.

Won't she?" But Pen looked as if he did not believe that she would. "Ah,

Blanche," he continued after a pause, "don't be angry; don't be hurt at

my truth-telling.--Don't you see that I always take you at your word?

You say you will be a slave and dance--I say, dance. You say, 'I take

you with what you bring:' I say, 'I take you with what you bring.' To

the necessary deceits and hypocrisies of our life, why add any that are

useless and unnecessary? If I offer myself to you because I think we

have a fair chance of being happy together, and because by your help I

may get for both of us a good place and a not undistinguished name, why

ask me to feign raptures and counterfeit romance, in which neither of

us believe? Do you want me to come wooing in a Prince Prettyman's dress

from the masquerade warehouse, and to pay you compliments like Sir

Charles Grandison? Do you want me to make you verses as in the days when

we were--when we were children? I will if you like, and sell them

to Bacon and Bungay afterwards. Shall I feed my pretty princess with

bonbons?"

"Mais j'adore les bonbons, moi," said the little Sylphide, with a queer

piteous look.

"I can buy a hatful at Fortnum and Mason's for a guinea. And it shall

have its bonbons, its pooty little sugar-plums, that it shall," Pen

said with a bitter smile. "Nay, my dear, nay, my dearest little Blanche,

don't cry. Dry the pretty eyes, I can't bear that;" and he proceeded to

offer that consolation which the circumstance required, and which the

tears, the genuine tears of vexation, which now sprang from the angry

eyes of the author of 'Mes Larmes' demanded.

The scornful and sarcastic tone of Pendennis quite frightened and

overcame the girl. "I--I don't want your consolation. I--I never

was--so--spoken to before--by any of my--my--by anybody"--she sobbed

out, with much simplicity.

"Anybody!" shouted out Pen, with a savage burst of laughter, and

Blanche blushed one of the most genuine blushes which her cheek had ever

exhibited, and she cried out, "O Arthur, vous etes un homme terrible!"

She felt bewildered, frightened, oppressed, the worldly little flirt who

had been playing at love for the last dozen years of her life, and yet

not displeased at meeting a master.

"Tell me, Arthur," she said, after a pause in this strange love-making.

"Why does Sir Francis Clavering give up his seat in Parliament?"

"Au fait, why does he give it to me?" asked Arthur, now blushing in his

turn.

"You always mock me, sir," she said. "If it is good to be in Parliament,

why does Sir Francis go out?"

"My uncle has talked him over. He always said that you were not

sufficiently provided for. In the--the family disputes, when your

mamma paid his debts so liberally, it was stipulated, I suppose, that

you--that is, that I--that is, upon my word, I don't know why he goes

out of Parliament," Pen said, with rather a forced laugh. "You see,

Blanche, that you and I are two good little children, and that this

marriage has been arranged for us by our mammas and uncles, and that we

must be obedient, like a good little boy and girl."

So, when Pen went to London, he sent Blanche a box of bonbons, each

sugar-plum of which was wrapped up in ready-made French verses, of the

most tender kind; and, besides, despatched to her some poems of his own

manufacture, quite as artless and authentic; and it was no wonder that

he did not tell Warrington what his conversations with Miss Amory

had been, of so delicate a sentiment were they, and of a nature so

necessarily private.

And if, like many a worse and better man, Arthur Pendennis, the widow's

son, was meditating an apostasy, and going to sell himself to--we all

know whom,--at least the renegade did not pretend to be a believer in

the creed to which he was ready to swear. And if every woman and man in

this kingdom, who has sold her or himself for money or position, as Mr.

Pendennis was about to do, would but purchase a copy of his memoirs,

what tons of volumes Messrs. Bradbury and Evans would sell!

CHAPTER LXVI. In which Pen begins his Canvass

Melancholy as the great house at Clavering Park had been in the days

before his marriage, when its bankrupt proprietor was a refugee in

foreign lands, it was not much more cheerful now when Sir Francis

Clavering came to inhabit it. The greater part of the mansion was shut

up, and the Baronet only occupied a few of the rooms on the ground

floor, where his housekeeper and her assistant from the lodge-gate

waited upon the luckless gentleman in his forced retreat, and cooked

a part of the game which he spent the dreary mornings in shooting.

Lightfoot, his man, had passed over to my Lady's service; and, as Pen

was informed in a letter from Mr. Smirke, who performed the ceremony,

had executed his prudent intention of marrying Mrs. Bonner, my Lady's

woman, who, in her mature years, was stricken with the charms of the

youth, and endowed him with her savings and her mature person.

To be landlord and landlady of the Clavering Arms was the ambition

of both of them; and it was agreed that they were to remain in Lady

Clavering's service until quarter-day arrived, when they were to take

possession of their hotel. Pen graciously promised that he would give

his election dinner there, when the Baronet should vacate his seat in

the young man's favour; and, as it had been agreed by his uncle, to

whom Clavering seemed to be able to refuse nothing, Arthur came down in

September on a visit to Clavering Park, the owner of which was very glad

to have a companion who would relieve his loneliness, and perhaps would

lend him a little ready money.

Pen furnished his host with these desirable supplies a couple of days

after he had made his appearance at Clavering: and no sooner were

these small funds in Sir Francis's pocket, than the latter found he

had business at Chatteris and at the neighbouring watering-places, of

which------shire boasts many, and went off to see to his affairs, which

were transacted, as might be supposed, at the county race-grounds and

billiard-rooms. Arthur could live alone well enough, having many mental

resources and amusements which did not require other persons' company:

he could walk with the gamekeeper of a morning, and for the evenings

there was a plenty of books and occupation for a literary genius like

Mr. Arthur, who required but a cigar and a sheet of paper or two to make

the night pass away pleasantly. In truth, in two or three days he had

found the society of Sir Francis Clavering perfectly intolerable; and

it was with a mischievous eagerness and satisfaction that he offered

Clavering the little pecuniary aid which the latter according to his

custom solicited, and supplied him with the means of taking flight from

his own house.

Besides, our ingenious friend had to ingratiate himself with the

townspeople of Clavering, and with the voters of the borough which he

hoped to represent; and he set himself to this task with only the more

eagerness, remembering how unpopular he had before been in Clavering,

and determined to vanquish the odium which he had inspired amongst the

simple people there. His sense of humour made him delight in this task.

Naturally rather reserved and silent in public, he became on a sudden as

frank, easy, and jovial as Captain Strong. He laughed with everybody who

would exchange a laugh with him, shook hands right and left, with what

may be certainly called a dexterous cordiality; made his appearance at

the market-day and the farmers' ordinary; and, in fine, acted like a

consummate hypocrite, and as gentlemen of the highest birth and most

spotless integrity act when they wish to make themselves agreeable to

their constituents, and have some end to gain of the country-folks. How

is it that we allow ourselves not to be deceived, but to be ingratiated

so readily by a glib tongue, a ready laugh, and a frank manner? We know,

for the most part, that it is false coin, and we take it we know that it

is flattery, which it costs nothing to distribute to everybody, and

we had rather have it than be without it. Friend Pen went about

at Clavering, laboriously simple and adroitly pleased, and quite a

different being from the scornful and rather sulky young dandy whom the

inhabitants remembered ten years ago.

The Rectory was shut up. Doctor Portman was gone, with his gout and his

family, to Harrogate,--an event which Pen deplored very much in a letter

to the Doctor, in which, in a few kind and simple words, he expressed

his regret at not seeing his old friend, whose advice he wanted and

whose aid he might require some day: but Pen consoled himself for the

Doctor's absence by making acquaintance with Mr. Simcoe, the opposition

preacher, and with the two partners of the cloth-factory at Chatteris,

and with the Independent preacher there, all of whom he met at Clavering

Athenaeum, which the Liberal party had set up in accordance with

the advanced spirit of the age, and perhaps in opposition to the

aristocratic old reading-room, into which the Edinburgh Review had

once scarcely got an admission, and where no tradesmen were allowed an

entrance. He propitiated the younger partner of the cloth-factory, by

asking him to dine in a friendly way at the Park; he complimented the

Honourable Mrs. Simcoe with hares and partridges from the same quarter,

and a request to read her husband's last sermon; and being a little

unwell one day, the rascal took advantage of the circumstance to show

his tongue to Mr. Huxter, who sent him medicines and called the next

morning. How delighted old Pendennis would have been with his pupil!

Pen himself was amused with the sport in which he was engaged, and his

success inspired him with a wicked good-humour.

And yet, as he walked out of Clavering of a night, after "presiding"

at a meeting of the Athenaeum, or working through an evening with

Mrs. Simcoe, who, with her husband, was awed by the young Londoner's

reputation, and had heard of his social successes; as he passed over the

old familiar bridge of the rushing Brawl, and heard that well-remembered

sound of waters beneath, and saw his own cottage of Fairoaks among the

trees, their darkling outlines clear against the starlit sky, different

thoughts no doubt came to the young man's mind, and awakened pangs of

grief and shame there. There still used to be a light in the windows of

the room which he remembered so well, and in which the Saint who loved

him had passed so many hours of care and yearning and prayer. He turned

away his gaze from the faint light which seemed to pursue him with its

wan reproachful gaze, as though it was his mother's spirit watching

and warning. How clear the night was! How keen the stars shone! how

ceaseless the rush of the flowing waters! the old home trees whispered,

and waved gently their dark heads and branches over the cottage roof.

Yonder, in the faint starlight glimmer, was the terrace where, as a boy,

he walked of summer evenings, ardent and trustful, unspotted, untried,

ignorant of doubts or passions; sheltered as yet from the world's

contamination in the pure and anxious bosom of love. The clock of

the near town tolling midnight, with a clang, disturbs our wanderer's

reverie, and sends him onwards towards his night's resting-place,

through the lodge into Clavering avenue, and under the dark arcades of

the rustling limes.

When he sees the cottage the next time, it is smiling in sunset; those

bedroom windows are open where the light was burning the night before;

and Pen's tenant, Captain Stokes, of the Bombay Artillery (whose mother,

old Mrs. Stokes, lives in Clavering), receives his landlord's visit with

great cordiality: shows him over the grounds and the new pond he has

made in the back-garden from the stables; talks to him confidentially

about the roof and chimneys, and begs Mr. Pendennis to name a day when

he will do himself and Mrs. Stokes the pleasure to, etc. Pen, who has

been a fortnight in the country, excuses himself for not having called

sooner upon the Captain by frankly owning that he had not the heart to

do it. "I understand you, sir," the Captain says; and Mrs. Stokes, who

had slipped away at the ring of the bell (how odd it seemed to Pen

to ring the bell!), comes down in her best gown, surrounded by her

children. The young ones clamb about Stokes: the boy jumps into an

arm-chair. It was Pen's father's arm-chair; and Arthur remembers the

days when he would as soon have thought of mounting the king's throne as

of seating himself in that arm-chair. He asks if Miss Stokes--she is the

very image of her mamma--if she can play? He should like to hear a tune

on that piano. She plays. He hears the notes of the old piano once more,

enfeebled by age, but he does not listen to the player. He is listening

to Laura singing as in the days of their youth, and sees his mother

bending and beating time over the shoulder of the girl.

The dinner at Fairoaks given in Pen's honour by his tenant, and at which

old Mrs. Stokes, Captain Glanders, Squire Hobnel and the clergyman and

his lady from Tinckleton, were present, was very stupid and melancholy

for Pen, until the waiter from Clavering (who aided the captain's

stable-boy and Mrs. Stokes's butler) whom Pen remembered as a street

boy, and who was now indeed barber in that place, dropped a plate over

Pen's shoulder, on which Mr. Hobnell (who also employed him) remarked,

"I suppose, Hodson, your hands are slippery with bear's-grease. He's

always dropping the crockery about, that Hodson is--haw, haw!" On which

Hodson blushed, and looked so disconcerted, that Pen burst out laughing;

and good-humour and hilarity were the order of the evening. For the

second course, there was a hare and partridges top and bottom, and

when after the withdrawal of the servants Pen said to the Vicar of

Tinckleton, "I think, Mr. Stooks, you should have asked Hodson to

cut the hare," the joke was taken instantly by the clergyman, who was

followed in the course of a few minutes by Captains Stokes and Glanders,

and by Mr. Hobnell, who arrived rather late, but with an immense guffaw.

\* \* \* \* \* \*

While Mr. Pen was engaged in the country in the above schemes, it

happened that the lady of his choice, if not of his affections, came up

to London from the Tunbridge villa bound upon shopping expeditions or

important business, and in company of old Mrs. Bonner, her mother's

maid, who had lived and quarrelled with Blanche many times since she was

an infant, and who now being about to quit Lady Clavering's service for

the hymeneal state, was anxious like a good soul to bestow some token of

respectful kindness upon her old and young mistress before she quitted

them altogether, to take her post as the wife of Lightfoot, and landlady

of the Clavering Arms.

The honest woman took the benefit of Miss Amory's taste to make the

purchase which she intended to offer her ladyship; and, requested the

fair Blanche to choose something for herself that should be to her

liking, and remind her of her old nurse who had attended her through

many a wakeful night, and eventful teething, and childish fever, and who

loved her like a child of her own a'most. These purchases were made, and

as the nurse insisted on buying an immense Bible for Blanche, the young

lady suggested that Bonner should purchase a large Johnson's Dictionary

for her mamma. Each of the two women might certainly profit by the

present made to her.

Then Mrs. Bonner invested money in some bargains in linen-drapery,

which might be useful at the Clavering Arms, and bought a red and yellow

neck-handkerchief, which Blanche could see at once was intended for Mr.

Lightfoot. Younger than herself by at least five-and-twenty years,

Mrs. Bonner regarded that youth with a fondness at once parental and

conjugal, and loved to lavish ornaments on his person, which already

glittered with pins, rings, shirt-studs, and chains and seals, purchased

at the good creature's expense.

It was in the Strand that Mrs. Bonner made her purchases, aided by Miss

Blanche, who liked the fun very well; and when the old lady had bought

everything that she desired, and was leaving the shop, Blanche, with a

smiling face, and a sweet bow to one of the shopmen, said, "Pray, sir,

will you have the kindness to show us the way to Shepherd's Inn?"

Shepherd's Inn was but a few score of yards off, Old Castle Street was

close by, the elegant young shopman pointed out the turning which the

young lady was to take, and she and her companion walked off together.

"Shepherd's Inn! what can you want in Shepherd's Inn, Miss Blanche?"

Bonner inquired. "Mr. Strong lives there. Do you want to go and see the

Captain?"

"I should like to see the Captain very well. I like the Captain; but it

is not him I want. I want to see a dear little good girl, who was very

kind to--to Mr. Arthur when he was so ill last year, and saved his life

almost; and I want to thank her and ask her if she would like anything.

I looked out several of my dresses on purpose this morning, Bonner!"

and she looked at Bonner as if she had a right to admiration, and had

performed an act of remarkable virtue. Blanche, indeed, was very fond

of sugar-plums; she would have fed the poor upon them, when she had had

enough, and given a country girl a ball-dress, when she had worn it and

was tired of it.

"Pretty girl--pretty young woman!" mumbled Mrs. Bonner. "I know I want

no pretty young women to come about Lightfoot," and in imagination she

peopled the Clavering Arms with a harem of the most hideous chambermaids

and barmaids.

Blanche, with pink and blue, and feathers, and flowers, and trinkets

(that wondrous invention, a chatelaine, was not extant yet, or she would

have had one, we may be sure), and a shot-silk dress, and a wonderful

mantle, and a charming parasol, presented a vision of elegance and

beauty such as bewildered the eyes of Mrs. Bolton, who was scrubbing the

lodge-floor of Shepherd's Inn and caused Betsy-Jane and Ameliar-Ann to

look with delight.

Blanche looked on them with a smile of ineffable sweetness and

protection; like Rowena going to see Rebecca; like Marie Antoinette

visiting the poor in the famine; like the Marchioness of Carabas

alighting from her carriage-and-four at a pauper-tenant's door, and

taking from John No II. the packet of Epsom salts for the

invalid's benefit, carrying it with her own imperial hand into the

sick-room--Blanche felt a queen stepping down from her throne to visit a

subject, and enjoyed all the bland consciousness of doing a good action.

"My good woman! I want to see Fanny--Fanny Bolton; is she here?"

Mrs. Bolton had a sudden suspicion, from the splendour of Blanche's

appearance, that it must be a play-actor, or something worse.

"What do you want with Fanny, pray?" she asked.

"I am Lady Clavering's daughter--you have heard of Sir Francis

Clavering? And I wish very much indeed to see Fanny Bolton."

"Pray step in, miss.--Betsy-Jane, where's Fanny?"

Betsy-Jane said Fanny had gone into No. 3 staircase, on which Mrs.

Bolton said she was probably in Strong's rooms, and bade the child go

and see if she was there.

"In Captain Strong's rooms! oh, let us go to Captain Strong's rooms,"

cried out Miss Blanche. "I know him very well. You dearest little girl,

show us the way to Captain Strong!" cried out Miss Blanche, for the

floor reeked with the recent scrubbing, and the goddess did not like the

smell of brown-soap.

And as they passed up the stairs, a gentleman by the name of Costigan,

who happened to be swaggering about the court, and gave a very knowing

look with his "oi" under Blanche's bonnet, remarked to himself, "That's

a devilish foine gyurll, bedad, goan up to Sthrong and Altamont: they're

always having foine gyurlls up their stairs."

"Hallo--hwhat's that?" he presently said, looking up at the windows:

from which some piercing shrieks issued.

At the sound of the voice of a distressed female the intrepid Cos rushed

up the stairs as fast as his old legs would carry him, being nearly

overthrown by Strong's servant, who was descending the stair. Cos found

the outer door of Strong's chambers opened, and began to thunder at

the knocker. After many and fierce knocks, the inner door was partially

unclosed, and Strong's head appeared.

"It's oi, me boy. Hwhat's that noise, Sthrong?" asked Costigan.

"Go to the d----!" was the only answer, and the door was shut on Cos's

venerable red nose: and he went downstairs muttering threats at the

indignity offered to him, and vowing that he would have satisfaction.

In the meanwhile the reader, more lucky than Captain Costigan, will

have the privilege of being made acquainted with the secret which was

withheld from that officer.

It has been said of how generous a disposition Mr. Altamont was, and

when he was well supplied with funds how liberally he spent them. Of

a hospitable turn, he had no greater pleasure than drinking in company

with other people; so that there was no man more welcome at Greenwich

and Richmond than the Emissary of the Nawaub of Lucknow.

Now it chanced that on the day when Blanche and Mrs. Bonner ascended the

staircase to Strong's room in Shepherd's Inn, the Colonel had invited

Miss Delaval of the ------ Theatre Royal, and her mother, Mrs. Hodge, to

a little party down the river, and it had been agreed that they were

to meet at Chambers, and thence walk down to a port in the neighbouring

Strand to take water. So that when Mrs. Bonner and Mes Larmes came to

the door, where Grady, Altamont's servant, was standing, the domestic

said, "Walk in, ladies," with the utmost affability, and led them into

the room, which was arranged as if they had been expected there. Indeed,

two bouquets of flowers, bought at Covent Garden that morning, and

instances of the tender gallantry of Altamont, were awaiting his guests

upon the table. Blanche smelt at the bouquet, and put her pretty little

dainty nose into it, and tripped about the room, and looked behind the

curtains, and at the books and prints, and at the plan of Clavering

estate hanging up on the wall; and had asked the servant for Captain

Strong, and had almost forgotten his existence and the errand about

which she had come, namely, to visit Fanny Bolton; so pleased was she

with the new adventure, and the odd, strange, delightful, droll little

idea of being in a bachelor's chambers in a queer old place in the city!

Grady meanwhile, with a pair of ample varnished boots, had disappeared

into his master's room. Blanche had hardly the leisure to remark how big

the boots were, and how unlike Mr. Strong's.

"The women's come," said Grady, helping his master to the boots.

"Did you ask 'em if they would take a glass of anything?" asked

Altamont.

Grady came out--"He says, will you take anything to drink?" the domestic

asked of them; at which Blanche, amused with the artless question, broke

out into a pretty little laugh, and asked of Mrs. Bonner, "Shall we take

anything to drink?"

"Well, you may take it or lave it," said Mr. Grady, who thought his

offer slighted, and did not like the contemptuous manners of the

new-comers, and so left them.

"Will we take anything to drink?" Blanche asked again: and again began

to laugh.

"Grady," bawled out a voice from the chamber within:--a voice that made

Mrs. Bonner start.

Grady did not answer: his song was heard from afar off, from the

kitchen, his upper room, where Grady was singing at his work.

"Grady, my coat!" again roared the voice from within.

"Why, that is not Mr. Strong's voice," said the Sylphide, still half

laughing. "Grady my coat!--Bonner, who is Grady my coat? We ought to go

away."

Bonner still looked quite puzzled at the sound of the voice which she

had heard.

The bedroom door here opened and the individual who had called out

"Grady, my coat," appeared without the garment in question.

He nodded to the women, and walked across the room. "I beg your pardon,

ladies. Grady, bring my coat down, sir! Well, my dears, it's a fine day,

and we'll have a jolly lark at----"

He said no more; for here Mrs. Bonner, who had been looking at him

with scared eyes, suddenly shrieked out, "Amory! Amory!" and fell back

screaming and fainting in her chair.

The man, so apostrophised, looked at the woman an instant, and, rushing

up to Blanche, seized her and kissed her. "Yes, Betsy," he said, "by

G--it is me. Mary Bonner knew me. What a fine gal we've grown! But it's

a secret, mind. I'm dead, though I'm your father. Your poor mother

don't know it. What a pretty gal we've grown! Kiss me--kiss me close, my

Betsy? D---- it, I love you: I'm your old father."

Betsy or Blanche looked quite bewildered, and began to scream too--once,

twice, thrice; and it was her piercing shrieks which Captain Costigan

heard as he walked the court below.

At the sound of these shrieks the perplexed parent clasped his hands

(his wristbands were open, and on one brawny arm you could see letters

tattooed in blue), and, rushing to his apartment, came back with an

eau-de-Cologne bottle from his grand silver dressing-case, with the

fragrant contents of which he began liberally to sprinkle Bonner and

Blanche.

The screams of these women brought the other occupants of the chambers

into the room: Grady from his kitchen, and Strong from his apartment in

the upper story. The latter at once saw from the aspect of the two women

what had occurred.

"Grady, go and wait in the court," he said, "and if anybody comes--you

understand me."

"Is it the play-actress and her mother?" said Grady.

"Yes--confound you--say that there's nobody in chambers, and the party's

off for to-day."

"Shall I say that, sir? and after I bought them bokays?" asked Grady of

his master.

"Yes," said Amory, with a stamp of his foot; and Strong going to the

door, too, reached it just in time to prevent the entrance of Captain

Costigan, who had mounted the stair.

The ladies from the theatre did not have their treat to Greenwich, nor

did Blanche pay her visit to Fanny Bolton on that day. And Cos, who took

occasion majestically to inquire of Grady what the mischief was, and

who was crying?--had for answer that 'twas a woman, another of them, and

that they were, in Grady's opinion, the cause of 'most all the mischief

in the world.

CHAPTER LXVII. In which Pen begins to doubt about his Election

Whilst Pen, in his own county, was thus carrying on his selfish plans

and parliamentary schemes, news came to him that Lady Rockminster had

arrived at Baymouth, and had brought with her our friend Laura. At the

announcement that Laura his sister was near him, Pen felt rather guilty.

His wish was to stand higher in her esteem, perhaps; than in that of any

other person in the world. She was his mother's legacy to him. He was to

be her patron and protector in some sort. How would she brave the news

which he had to tell her; and how should he explain the plans which he

was meditating? He felt as if neither he nor Blanche could bear Laura's

dazzling glance of calm scrutiny, and as if he would not dare to

disclose his worldly hopes and ambitions to that spotless judge. At her

arrival at Baymouth, he wrote a letter thither which contained a great

number of fine phrases and protests of affection, and a great deal of

easy satire and raillery; in the midst of all which Mr. Pen could not

help feeling that he was in panic, and that he was acting like a rogue

and hypocrite.

How was it that a simple country girl should be the object of fear and

trembling to such an accomplished gentleman as Mr. Pen? His worldly

tactics and diplomacy, his satire and knowledge of the world, could

not bear the test of her purity, he felt somehow. And he had to own to

himself that his affairs were in such a position, that he could not tell

the truth to that honest soul. As he rode from Clavering to Baymouth he

felt as guilty as a schoolboy who doesn't know his lesson and is about

to face the awful master. For is not truth the master always, and does

she not have the power and hold the book?

Under the charge of her kind, though somewhat wayward and absolute

patroness, Lady Rockminster, Laura had seen somewhat of the world in

the last year, had gathered some accomplishments, and profited by the

lessons of society. Many a girl who had been accustomed to that too

great tenderness in which Laura's early life had been passed, would have

been unfitted for the changed existence which she now had to lead. Helen

worshipped her two children, and thought, as home-bred women will, that

all the world was made for them, or to be considered after them. She

tended Laura with a watchfulness of affection which never left her. If

she had a headache, the widow was as alarmed as if there had never been

an aching head before in the world. She slept and woke, read and moved

under her mother's fond superintendence, which was now withdrawn from

her, along with the tender creature whose anxious heart would beat no

more. And painful moments of grief and depression no doubt Laura had,

when she stood in the great careless world alone. Nobody heeded her

griefs or her solitude. She was not quite the equal, in social rank, of

the lady whose companion she was, or of the friends and relatives of

the imperious, but kind old dowager. Some very likely bore her no

goodwill--some, perhaps, slighted her: it might have been that servants

were occasionally rude; their mistress certainly was often. Laura not

seldom found herself in family meetings, the confidence and familiarity

of which she felt were interrupted by her intrusion; and her

sensitiveness of course was wounded at the idea that she should give

or feel this annoyance. How many governesses are there in the world,

thought cheerful Laura,--how many ladies, whose necessities make

them slaves and companions by profession! What bad tempers and coarse

unkindness have not these to encounter? How infinitely better my lot is

with these really kind and affectionate people than that of thousands of

unprotected girls! It was with this cordial spirit that our young lady

adapted herself to her new position; and went in advance of her fortune

with a trustful smile.

Did you ever know a person who met Fortune in that way, whom the

goddess did not regard kindly? Are not even bad people won by a constant

cheerfulness and a pure and affectionate heart? When the babes in the

wood, in the ballad, looked up fondly and trustfully at those notorious

rogues whom their uncle had set to make away with the little folks,

we all know how one of the rascals relented, and made away with the

other--not having the heart to be unkind to so much innocence and

beauty. Oh, happy they who have that virgin loving trust and sweet

smiling confidence in the world, and fear no evil because they think

none! Miss Laura Bell was one of these fortunate persons; and besides

the gentle widow's little cross, which, as we have seen, Pen gave her,

had such a sparkling and brilliant kohinoor in her bosom, as is even

more precious than that famous jewel; for it not only fetches a price,

and is retained, by its owner in another world where diamonds are

stated to be of no value, but here, too, is of inestimable worth to its

possessor; is a talisman against evil, and lightens up the darkness of

life, like Cogia Hassan's famous stone.

So that before Miss Bell had been a year in Lady Rockminster's house,

there was not a single person in it whose love she had not won by the

use of this talisman. From the old lady to the lowest dependent of her

bounty, Laura had secured the goodwill and kindness of everybody. With a

mistress of such a temper, my Lady's woman (who had endured her mistress

for forty years, and had been clawed and scolded and jibed every day and

night in that space of time) could not be expected to have a good temper

of her own; and was at first angry against Miss Laura, as she had been

against her Ladyship's fifteen preceding companions. But when Laura was

ill at Paris, this old woman nursed her in spite of her mistress, who

was afraid of catching the fever, and absolutely fought for her medicine

with Martha from Fairoaks, now advanced to be Miss Laura's own maid. As

she was recovering, Grandjean the chef wanted to kill her by the numbers

of delicacies which he dressed for her, and wept when she ate her first

slice of chicken. The Swiss major-domo of the house celebrated Miss

Bell's praises in almost every European language, which he spoke with

indifferent incorrectness; the coachman was happy to drive her out;

the page cried when he heard she was ill; and Calverley and Coldstream

(those two footmen, so large, so calm ordinarily, and so difficult

to move) broke out into extraordinary hilarity at the news of her

convalescence, and intoxicated the page at a wine-shop, to fete Laura's

recovery. Even Lady Diana Pynsent (our former acquaintance Mr. Pynsent

had married by this time), Lady Diana, who had had a considerable

dislike to Laura for some time, was so enthusiastic as to say that she

thought Miss Bell was a very agreeable person, and that grandmamma had

found a great trouvaille in her. All this goodwill and kindness Laura

had acquired, not by any arts, not by any flattery, but by the simple

force of good-nature, and by the blessed gift of pleasing and being

pleased.

On the one or two occasions when he had seen Lady Rockminster, the old

lady, who did not admire him, had been very pitiless and abrupt with our

young friend, and perhaps Pen expected when he came to Baymouth to find

Laura installed in her house in the quality of humble companion, and

treated no better than himself. When she heard of his arrival she came

running downstairs, and I am not sure that she did not embrace him in

the presence of Calverley and Coldstream: not that those gentlemen ever

told: if the fractus orbis had come to a smash, if Laura, instead of

kissing Pen, had taken her scissors and snipped off his head--Calverley

and Coldstream would have looked on impavidly, without allowing a grain

of powder to be disturbed by the calamity.

Laura had so much improved in health and looks that Pen could not

but admire her. The frank and kind eyes which met his, beamed with

good-health; the cheek which he kissed blushed with beauty. As he looked

at her, artless and graceful, pure and candid, he thought he had never

seen her so beautiful. Why should he remark her beauty now so much, and

remark too to himself that he had not remarked it sooner? He took her

fair trustful hand and kissed it fondly: he looked in her bright clear

eyes, and read in them that kindling welcome which he was always sure to

find there. He was affected and touched by the tender tone and the pure

sparkling glance; their innocence smote him somehow and moved him.

"How good you are to me, Laura--sister!" said Pen; "I don't deserve that

you should--that you should be so kind to me."

"Mamma left you to me," she said, stooping down and brushing his

forehead with her lips hastily. "You know you were to come to me when

you were in trouble, or to tell me when you were very happy: that was

our compact, Arthur, last year, before we parted. Are you very happy

now, or are you in trouble--which is it?" and she looked at him with

an arch glance of kindness. "Do you like going into Parliament! Do you

intend to distinguish yourself there? How I shall tremble for your first

speech!"

"Do you know about the Parliament plan, then?" Pen asked.

"Know?--all the world knows! I have heard it talked about many times.

Lady Rockminster's doctor talked about it to-day. I daresay it will be

in the Chatteris paper to-morrow. It is all over the county that Sir

Francis Clavering, of Clavering, is going to retire, in behalf of Mr.

Arthur Pendennis, of Fairoaks; and that the young and beautiful Miss

Blanche Amory is----"

"What! that too?" asked Pendennis.

"That, too, dear Arthur. Tout se sait, as somebody would say, whom I

intend to be very fond of; and who I am sure is very clever and pretty.

I have had a letter from Blanche. The kindest of letters. She speaks so

warmly of you, Arthur! I hope--I know she feels what she writes.--When

is it to be, Arthur? Why did you not tell me? I may come and live with

you then, mayn't I?"

"My home is yours, dear Laura, and everything I have," Pen said. "If

I did not tell you, it was because--because--I do not know: nothing is

decided as yet. No words have passed between us. But you think Blanche

could be happy with me--don't you? Not a romantic fondness, you know.

I have no heart, I think; I've told her so: only a sober-sided

attachment:--and want my wife on one side of the fire and my sister on

the other,--Parliament in the session and Fairoaks in the holidays, and

my Laura never to leave me until somebody who has a right comes to take

her away."

Somebody who has a right--somebody with a right! Why did Pen, as he

looked at the girl and slowly uttered the words, begin to feel angry

and jealous of the invisible somebody with the right to take her away?

Anxious, but a minute ago, how she would take the news regarding his

probable arrangements with Blanche, Pen was hurt somehow that she

received the intelligence so easily, and took his happiness for granted.

"Until somebody comes," Laura said, with a laugh, "I will stay at home

and be aunt Laura, and take care of the children when Blanche is in the

world. I have arranged it all. I am an excellent housekeeper. Do you

know I have been to market at Paris with Mrs. Beck, and have taken

some lessons from M. Grandjean? And I have had some lessons in Paris in

singing too, with the money which you sent me, you kind boy: and I can

sing much better now: and I have learned to dance, though not so well as

Blanche; and when you become a minister of state, Blanche shall present

me:" and with this, and with a provoking good-humour, she performed for

him the last Parisian curtsey.

Lady Rockminster came in whilst this curtsey was being performed, and

gave to Arthur one finger to shake; which he took, and over which he

bowed as well as he could, which, in truth, was very clumsily.

"So you are going to be married, sir," said the old lady.

"Scold him, Lady Rockminster, for not telling us," Laura said, going

away: which, in truth, the old lady began instantly to do. "So you

are going to marry, and to go into Parliament in place of that

good-for-nothing Sir Francis Clavering. I wanted him to give my grandson

his seat--why did he not give my grandson his seat? I hope you are to

have a great deal of money with Miss Amory. I wouldn't take her without

a great deal."

"Sir Francis Clavering is tired of Parliament," Pen said, wincing,

"and--and I rather wish to attempt that career. The rest of the story is

at least premature."

"I wonder, when you had Laura at home, you could take up with such an

affected little creature as that," the old lady continued.

"I am very sorry Miss Amory does not please your ladyship," said Pen,

smiling.

"You mean--that it is no affair of mine, and that I am not going to

marry her. Well, I'm not, and I'm very glad I am not--a little odious

thing--when I think that a man could prefer her to my Laura, I've no

patience with him, and so I tell you, Mr. Arthur Pendennis."

"I am very glad you see Laura with such favourable eyes," Pen said.

"You are very glad, and you are very sorry. What does it matter, sir,

whether you are very glad or very sorry? A young man who prefers Miss

Amory to Miss Bell has no business to be sorry or glad. A young man

who takes up with such a crooked lump of affectation as that little

Amory,--for she is crooked, I tell you she is,--after seeing my Laura,

has no right to hold up his head again. Where is your friend Bluebeard?

The tall young man, I mean,--Warrington, isn't his name? Why does he not

come down, and marry Laura? What do the young men mean by not marrying

such a girl as that? They all marry for money now. You are all selfish

and cowards. We ran away with each other, and made foolish matches in my

time. I have no patience with the young men! When I was at Paris in the

winter, I asked all the three attaches at the Embassy why they did not

fall in love with Miss Bell? They laughed--they said they wanted money.

You are all selfish--you are all cowards."

"I hope before you offered Miss Bell to the attaches," said Pen, with

some heat, "you did her the favour to consult her?"

"Miss Bell has only a little money. Miss Bell must marry soon. Somebody

must make a match for her, sir; and a girl can't offer herself," said

the old dowager, with great state. "Laura, my dear, I've been telling

your cousin that all the young men are selfish; and that there is not a

pennyworth of romance left among them. He is as bad as the rest."

"Have you been asking Arthur why he won't marry me?" said Laura, with a

kindling smile, coming back and taking her cousin's hand. (She had been

away, perhaps, to hide some traces of emotion, which she did not wish

others to see.) "He is going to marry somebody else; and I intend to be

very fond of her, and to go and live with them, provided he then does

not ask every bachelor who comes to his house, why he does not marry

me?"

The terrors of Pen's conscience being thus appeased, and his examination

before Laura over without any reproaches on the part of the latter,

Pen began to find that his duty and inclination led him constantly to

Baymouth, where Lady Rockminster informed him that a place was always

reserved for him at her table. "And I recommend you to come often," the

old lady said, "for Grandjean is an excellent cook, and to be with Laura

and me will do your manners good. It is easy to see that you are always

thinking about yourself. Don't blush and stammer--almost all young men

are always thinking about themselves. My sons and grandsons always were

until I cured them. Come here, and let us teach you to behave properly;

you will not have to carve, that is done at the side-table. Hecker will

give you as much wine as is good for you; and on days when you are very

good and amusing you shall have some champagne. Hecker, mind what I

say. Mr. Pendennis is Miss Laura's brother; and you will make him

comfortable, and see that he does not have too much wine, or disturb

me whilst I am taking my nap after dinner. You are selfish: I intend

to cure you of being selfish. You will dine here when you have no other

engagements; and if it rains you had better put up at the hotel." As

long as the good lady could order everybody round about her, she was not

hard to please; and all the slaves and subjects of her little dowager

court trembled before her, but loved her.

She did not receive a very numerous or brilliant society. The doctor, of

course, was admitted as a constant and faithful visitor; the vicar and

his curate; and on public days the vicar's wife and daughters, and some

of the season visitors at Baymouth, were received at the old lady's

entertainments: but generally the company was a small one, and Mr.

Arthur drank his wine by himself, when Lady Rockminster retired to take

her doze, and to be played and sung to sleep by Laura after dinner.

"If my music can give her a nap," said the good-natured girl, "ought I

not to be very glad that it can do so much good? Lady Rockminster sleeps

very little of nights: and I used to read to her until I fell ill at

Paris, since when she will not hear of my sitting up."

"Why did you not write to me when you were ill?" asked Pen, with a

blush.

"What good could you do me? I had Martha to nurse me and the doctor

every day. You are too busy to write to women or to think about them.

You have your books and your newspapers, and your politics and your

railroads to occupy you. I wrote when I was well."

And Pen looked at her, and blushed again, as he remembered that,

during all the time of her illness, he had never written to her and had

scarcely thought about her.

In consequence of his relationship, Pen was free to walk and ride with

his cousin constantly, and in the course of those walks and rides,

could appreciate the sweet frankness of her disposition, and the truth,

simplicity, and kindliness of her fair and spotless heart. In their

mother's lifetime, she had never spoken so openly or so cordially as

now. The desire of poor Helen to make an union between her two children,

had caused a reserve on Laura's part towards Pen; for which, under the

altered circumstances of Arthur's life, there was now no necessity.

He was engaged to another woman; and Laura became his sister at

once,--hiding, or banishing from herself, any doubts which she might

have as to his choice; striving to look cheerfully forward, and hope for

his prosperity; promising herself to do all that affection might do to

make her mother's darling happy.

Their talk was often about the departed mother. And it was from a

thousand stories which Laura told him that Arthur was made aware how

constant and absorbing that silent maternal devotion had been; which had

accompanied him present and absent through life, and had only ended with

the fond widow's last breath. One day the people in Clavering saw a lad

in charge of a couple of horses at the churchyard-gate: and it was told

over the place that Pen and Laura had visited Helen's grave together.

Since Arthur had come down into the country, he had been there once or

twice: but the sight of the sacred stone had brought no consolation to

him. A guilty man doing a guilty deed: a mere speculator, content to lay

down his faith and honour for a fortune and a worldly career; and owning

that his life was but a contemptible surrender--what right had he in the

holy place? what booted it to him in the world he lived in, that others

were no better than himself? Arthur and Laura rode by the gates of

Fairoaks; and he shook hands with his tenant's children, playing on the

lawn and the terrace--Laura looked steadily at the cottage wall, at the

creeper on the porch and the magnolia growing up to her window. "Mr.

Pendennis rode by to-day," one of the boys told his mother, "with

a lady, and he stopped and talked to us, and he asked for a bit of

honeysuckle off the porch, and gave it the lady. I couldn't see if she

was pretty; she had her veil down. She was riding one of Cramp's horses,

out of Baymouth."

As they rode over the downs between home and Baymouth, Pen did not

speak much, though they rode very close together. He was thinking what

a mockery life was, and how men refuse happiness when they may have it;

or, having it, kick it down; or barter it, with their eyes open, for a

little worthless money or beggarly honour. And then the thought came,

what does it matter for the little space? The lives of the best and

purest of us are consumed in a vain desire, and end in a disappointment:

as the dear soul's who sleeps in her grave yonder. She had her selfish

ambition, as much as Caesar had; and died, baulked of her life's

longing. The stone covers over our hopes and our memories. Our place

knows us not. "Other people's children are playing on the grass," he

broke out, in a hard voice, "where you and I used to play, Laura. And

you see how the magnolia we planted has grown up since our time. I have

been round to one or two of the cottages where my mother used to visit.

It is scarcely more than a year that she is gone, and the people whom

she used to benefit care no more for her death than for Queen Anne's. We

are all selfish: the world is selfish: there are but a few exceptions,

like you, my dear, to shine like good deeds in a naughty world, and make

the blackness more dismal."

"I wish you would not speak in that way, Arthur," said Laura, looking

down and bending her head to the honeysuckle on her breast. "When you

told the little boy to give me this, you were not selfish."

"A pretty sacrifice I made to get it for you!" said the sneerer.

"But your heart was kind and full of love when you did so. One cannot

ask for more than love and kindness; and if you think humbly of yourself

Arthur, the love and kindness are--diminished--are they? I often thought

our dearest mother spoiled you at home, by worshipping you; and that if

you are--I hate the word--what you say, her too great fondness helped

to make you so. And as for the world, when men go out into it, I suppose

they cannot be otherwise than selfish. You have to fight for yourself,

and to get on for yourself, and to make a name for yourself. Mamma and

your uncle both encouraged you in this ambition. If it is a vain thing,

why pursue it? I suppose such a clever man as you intend to do a great

deal of good to the country, by going into Parliament, or you would not

wish to be there. What are you going to do when you are in the House of

Commons?"

"Women don't understand about politics, my dear," Pen said sneering at

himself as he spoke.

"But why don't you make us understand? I could never tell about Mr.

Pynsent why he should like to be there so much. He is not a clever

man----"

"He certainly is not a genius, Pynsent," said Pen.

"Lady Diana says that he attends Committees all day; that then again he

is at the House all night; that he always votes as he is told; that he

never speaks; that he will never get on beyond a subordinate place; and

as his grandmother tells him, he is choked with red-tape. Are you going

to follow the same career; Arthur? What is there in it so brilliant that

you should be so eager for it? I would rather that you should stop

at home, and write books--good books, kind books, with gentle kind

thoughts, such as you have, dear Arthur, and such as might do people

good to read. And if you do not win fame, what then? You own it is

vanity, and you can live very happily without it. I must not pretend to

advise; but I take you at your own word about the world; and as you own

it is wicked, and that it tires you, ask you why you don't leave it?"

"And what would you have me do?" asked Arthur.

"I would have you bring your wife to Fairoaks to live there, and study,

and do good round about you. I would like to see your own children

playing on the lawn, Arthur, and that we might pray in our mother's

church again once more, dear brother. If the world is a temptation, are

we not told to pray that we may not be led into it?"

"Do you think Blanche would make a good wife for a petty country

gentleman? Do you think I should become the character very well, Laura?"

Pen asked. "Remember temptation walks about the hedgerows as well as the

city streets: and idleness is the greatest tempter of all."

"What does--does Mr. Warrington say?" said Laura, as a blush mounted up

to her cheek, and of which Pen saw the fervour, though Laura's veil fell

over her face to hide it.

Pen rode on by Laura's side silently for a while. George's name so

mentioned brought back the past to him, and the thoughts which he had

once had regarding George and Laura. Why should the recurrence of the

thought agitate him, now that he knew the union was impossible? Why

should he be curious to know if, during the months of their intimacy,

Laura had felt a regard for Warrington? From that day until the present

time George had never alluded to his story, and Arthur remembered now

that since then George had scarcely ever mentioned Laura's name.

At last he cane close to her. "Tell me something, Laura," he said.

She put back her veil and looked at him. "What is it, Arthur?" she

asked--though from the tremor of her voice she guessed very well.

"Tell me--but for George's misfortune--I never knew him speak of it

before or since that day--would you--would you have given him--what you

refused me?"

"Yes, Pen," she said, bursting into tears.

"He deserved you better than I did," poor Arthur groaned forth, with an

indescribable pang at his heart. "I am but a selfish wretch, and George

is better, nobler, truer, than I am. God bless him!"

"Yes, Pen," said Laura, reaching out her hand to her cousin, and he put

his arm round her, and for a moment she sobbed on his shoulder.

The gentle girl had had her secret, and told it. In the widow's last

journey from Fairoaks, when hastening with her mother to Arthur's

sick-bed, Laura had made a different confession; and it was only when

Warrington told his own story, and described the hopeless condition of

his life, that she discovered how much her feelings had changed,

and with what tender sympathy, with what great respect, delight, and

admiration she had grown to regard her cousin's friend. Until she knew

that some plans she might have dreamed of were impossible, and that

Warrington, reading in her heart, perhaps, had told his melancholy story

to warn her, she had not asked herself whether it was possible that

her affections could change; and had been shocked and seared by the

discovery of the truth. How should she have told it to Helen, and

confessed her shame? Poor Laura felt guilty before her friend, with

the secret which she dared not confide to her; felt as if she had been

ungrateful for Helen's love and regard; felt as if she had been wickedly

faithless to Pen in withdrawing that love from him which he did not even

care to accept; humbled even and repentant before Warrington, lest she

should have encouraged him by undue sympathy, or shown the preference

which she began to feel.

The catastrophe which broke up Laura's home, and the grief and anguish

which she felt for her mother's death, gave her little leisure for

thoughts more selfish; and by the time she rallied from that grief the

minor one was also almost cured. It was but for a moment that she had

indulged a hope about Warrington. Her admiration and respect for him

remained as strong as ever. But the tender feeling with which she knew

she had regarded him, was schooled into such calmness, that it may be

said to have been dead and passed away. The pang which it left behind

was one of humility and remorse. "Oh, how wicked and proud I was about

Arthur," she thought, "how self-confident and unforgiving! I never

forgave from my heart this poor girl, who was fond of him, or him

for encouraging her love; and I have been more guilty than she, poor,

little, artless creature! I, professing to love one man, could listen to

another only too eagerly; and would not pardon the change of feelings in

Arthur, whilst I myself was changing and unfaithful:" And so humiliating

herself, and acknowledging her weakness, the poor girl sought for

strength and refuge in the manner in which she had been accustomed to

look for them.

She had done no wrong: but there are some folks who suffer for a fault

ever so trifling as much as others whose stout consciences can walk

under crimes of almost any weight; and poor Laura chose to fancy that

she had acted in this delicate juncture of her life as a very great

criminal. She determined that she had done Pen a great injury by

withdrawing that love which, privately in her mother's hearing, she had

bestowed upon him; that she had been ungrateful to her dead benefactress

by ever allowing herself to think of another or of violating her

promise; and that, considering her own enormous crimes, she ought to

be very gentle in judging those of others, whose temptations were much

greater, very likely, and whose motives she could not understand.

A year back Laura would have been indignant at the idea that Arthur

should marry Blanche: and her high spirit would have risen, as she

thought that from worldly motives he should stoop to one so unworthy.

Now when the news was brought to her of such a chance (the intelligence

was given to her by old Lady Rockminster, whose speeches were as direct

and rapid as a slap on the face), the humbled girl winced a little at

the blow, but bore it meekly, and with a desperate acquiescence. "He has

a right to marry, he knows a great deal more of the world than I do,"

she argued with herself. "Blanche may not be so light-minded as she

seemed, and who am I to be her judge? I daresay it is very good that

Arthur should go into Parliament and distinguish himself, and my duty

is to do everything that lies in my power to aid him and Blanche, and to

make his home happy. I daresay I shall live with them. If I am godmother

to one of their children, I will leave her my three thousand pounds!"

And forthwith she began to think what she could give Blanche out of her

small treasures, and how best to conciliate her affection. She wrote her

forthwith a kind letter, in which, of course, no mention was made of the

plans in contemplation, but in which Laura recalled old times, and spoke

her goodwill, and in reply to this she received an eager answer from

Blanche: in which not a word about marriage was said, to be sure, but

Mr. Pendennis was mentioned two or three times in the letter, and they

were to be henceforth, dearest Laura, and dearest Blanche, and loving

sisters, and so forth.

When Pen and Laura reached home, after Laura's confession (Pen's noble

acknowledgment of his own inferiority and generous expression of love

for Warrington, causing the girl's heart to throb, and rendering doubly

keen those tears which she sobbed on his shoulder), a little slim letter

was awaiting Miss Bell in the hall, which she trembled rather guiltily

as she unsealed, and which Pen blushed as he recognised: for he saw

instantly that it was from Blanche.

Laura opened it hastily, and cast her eyes quickly over it, as Pen kept

his fixed on her, blushing.

"She dates from London," Laura said. "She has been with old Bonner, Lady

Clavering's maid. Bonner is going to marry Lightfoot the butler. Where

do you think Blanche has been?" she cried out eagerly.

"To Paris, to Scotland, to the Casino?"

"To Shepherd's Inn, to see Fanny; but Fanny wasn't there, and Blanche is

going to leave a present for her. Isn't it kind of her and thoughtful?"

And she handed the letter to Pen, who read--

"'I saw Madame Mere, who was scrubbing the room, and looked at me with

very scrubby looks; but la belle Fanny was not au logis; and as I heard

that she was in Captain Strong's apartments, Bonner and I mounted au

troisieme to see this famous beauty. Another disappointment--only the

Chevalier Strong and a friend of his in the room: so we came away after

all without seeing the enchanting Fanny.

"'Je t'envoie mille et mille baisers. When will that horrid canvassing

be over? Sleeves are worn, etc. etc. etc.'"

After dinner the doctor was reading the Times. "A young gentleman I

attended when he was here some eight or nine years ago, has come into a

fine fortune," the doctor said. "I see here announced the death of John

Henry Foker, Esq., of Logwood Hall, at Pau, in the Pyrenees, on the 15th

ult."

CHAPTER LXVIII. In which the Major is bidden to Stand and Deliver

Any gentleman who has frequented the Wheel of Fortune public-house,

where it may be remembered that Mr. James Morgan's Club was held, and

where Sir Francis Clavering had an interview with Major Pendennis,

is aware that there are three rooms for guests upon the ground floor,

besides the bar where the landlady sits. One is a parlour frequented by

the public at large; to another room gentlemen in livery resort; and

the third apartment, on the door of which "Private" is painted, is that

hired by the Club of "The Confidentials," of which Messrs Morgan and

Lightfoot were members.

The noiseless Morgan had listened to the conversation between Strong and

Major Pendennis at the latter's own lodgings, and had carried away from

it matter for much private speculation; and a desire of knowledge

had led him to follow his master when the Major came to the Wheel of

Fortune, and to take his place quietly in the Confidential room, whilst

Pendennis and Clavering had their discourse in the parlour. There was

a particular corner in the Confidential room from which you could hear

almost all that passed in the next apartment; and as the conversation

between the two gentlemen there was rather angry, and carried on in a

high key, Morgan had the benefit of overhearing almost the whole of

it and what he heard, strengthened the conclusions which his mind had

previously formed.

"He knew Altamont at once, did he, when he saw him in Sydney? Clavering

ain't no more married to my Lady than I am! Altamont's the man:

Altamont's a convict; young Harthur comes into Parlyment, and the

Gov'nor promises not to split. By Jove, what a sly old rogue it is, that

old Gov'nor! No wonder he's anxious to make the match between Blanche

and Harthur: why, she'll have a hundred thousand if she's a penny, and

bring her man a seat in Parlyment into the bargain." Nobody saw, but a

physiognomist would have liked to behold, the expression of Mr. Morgan's

countenance, when this astounding intelligence was made clear to him.

"But for my hage, and the confounded preudices of society," he said,

surveying himself in the glass, "dammy, James Morgan, you might marry

her yourself." But if he could not marry Miss Blanche and her fortune,

Morgan thought he could mend his own by the possession of this

information, and that it might be productive of benefit to him from very

many sources. Of all the persons whom the secret affected, the greater

number would not like to have it known. For instance, Sir Francis

Clavering, whose fortune it involved, would wish to keep it quiet;

Colonel Altamont, whose neck it implicated, would naturally be desirous

to hush it: and that young hupstart beast, Mr. Harthur, who was for

getting' into Parlyment on the strenth of it, and was as proud as if

he was a duke with half a millium a year (such, we grieve to say, was

Morgan's opinion of his employer's nephew), would pay anythink sooner

than let the world know that he was married to a convick's daughter, and

had got his seat in Parlyment by trafficking with this secret. As for

Lady C., Morgan thought, if she's tired of Clavering, and wants to get

rid of him, she'll pay: if she's frightened about her son, and fond

of the little beggar, she'll pay all the same: and Miss Blanche will

certainly come down handsome to the man who will put her into her

rights, which she was unjustly defrauded of them, and no mistake.

"Dammy," concluded the valet, reflecting upon this wonderful hand which

luck had given him to play, "with such cards as these, James Morgan, you

are a made man. It may be a reg'lar enewity to me. Every one of 'em must

susscribe. And with what I've made already, I may cut business, give

my old Gov'nor warning, turn gentleman, and have a servant of my own,

begad." Entertaining himself with calculations such as these, that were

not a little likely to perturb a man's spirit, Mr. Morgan showed a very

great degree of self-command by appearing and being calm, and by not

allowing his future prospects in any way to interfere with his present

duties.

One of the persons whom the story chiefly concerned, Colonel Altamont,

was absent from London when Morgan was thus made acquainted with his

history. The valet knew of Sir Francis Clavering's Shepherd's Inn haunt,

and walked thither an hour or two after the Baronet and Pendennis

had had their conversation together. But that bird was flown; Colonel

Altamont had received his Derby winnings, and was gone to the Continent.

The fact of his absence was exceedingly vexatious to Mr. Morgan. "He'll

drop all that money at the gambling-shops on the Rhind," thought Morgan,

"and I might have had a good bit of it. It's confounded annoying to

think he's gone and couldn't have waited a few days longer." Hope,

triumphant or deferred, ambition or disappointment, victory or patient

ambush, Morgan bore all alike, with similar equable countenance. Until

the proper day came, the Major's boots were varnished and his hair was

curled, his early cup of tea was brought to his bedside, his oaths,

rebukes, and senile satire borne, with silent, obsequious fidelity. Who

would think, to see him waiting upon his master, packing and shouldering

his trunks, and occasionally assisting at table, at the country-houses

where he might be staying, that Morgan was richer than his employer, and

knew his secrets and other people's? In the profession Mr. Morgan was

greatly respected and admired, and his reputation for wealth and wisdom

got him much renown at most supper-tables: the younger gentlemen voted

him stoopid, a feller of no idears, and a fogey, in a word: but not one

of them would not say amen to the heartfelt prayer which some of the

most serious-minded among the gentlemen uttered, "When I die may I cut

up as well as Morgan Pendennis!"

As became a man of fashion, Major Pendennis spent the autumn passing

from house to house of such country friends as were at home to receive

him; and if the Duke happened to be abroad, the Marquis in Scotland,

condescending to sojourn with Sir John or the plain Squire. To say the

truth, the old gentleman's reputation was somewhat on the wane: many of

the men of his time had died out, and the occupants of their halls and

the present wearers of their titles knew not Major Pendennis: and little

cared for his traditions of "the wild Prince and Poins," and of the

heroes of fashion passed away. It must have struck the good man with

melancholy as he walked by many a London door, to think how seldom it

was now opened for him, and how often he used to knock at it--to what

banquets and welcome he used to pass through it--a score of years back.

He began to own that he was no longer of the present age, and dimly to

apprehend that the young men laughed at him. Such melancholy musings

must come across many a Pall Mall philosopher. The men, thinks he,

are not such as they used to be in his time: the old grand manner and

courtly grace of life are gone: what is Castlewood House and the present

Castlewood, compared to the magnificence of the old mansion and owner?

The late lord came to London with four postchaises and sixteen horses:

all the North Road hurried out to look at his cavalcade: the people in

London streets even stopped as his procession passed them. The present

lord travels with five bagmen in a railway carriage, and sneaks away

from the station, smoking a cigar in a brougham. The late lord in autumn

filled Castlewood with company, who drank claret till midnight: the

present man buries himself in a hut on a Scotch mountain, and passes

November in two or three closets in an entresol at Paris, where his

amusements are a dinner at a cafe and a box at a little theatre. What a

contrast there is between his Lady Lorraine, the Regent's Lady Lorraine,

and her little ladyship of the present era! He figures to himself the

first, beautiful, gorgeous, magnificent in diamonds and velvets,

daring in rouge, the wits of the world (the old wits, the old polished

gentlemen--not the canaille of to-day with their language of the

cabstand, and their coats smelling of smoke) bowing at her feet; and

then thinks of to-day's Lady Lorraine--a little woman in a black silk

gown, like a governess, who talks astronomy, and labouring classes,

and emigration, and the deuce knows what, and lurks to church at eight

o'clock in the morning. Abbots-Lorraine, that used to be the noblest

house in the county, is turned into a monastery--a regular La Trappe.

They don't drink two glasses of wine after dinner, and every other man

at table is a country curate, with a white neckcloth, whose talk is

about Polly Higson's progress at school, or widow Watkins's lumbago.

"And the other young men, those lounging guardsmen and great lazy

dandies--sprawling over sofas and billiard-tables, and stealing off to

smoke pipes in each other's bedrooms, caring for nothing, reverencing

nothing, not even an old gentleman who has known their fathers and their

betters, not even a pretty woman--what a difference there is between

these men, who poison the very turnips and stubble-fields with their

tobacco, and the gentlemen of our time!" thinks the Major; "the breed

is gone--there's no use for 'em; they're replaced by a parcel of damned

cotton--spinners and utilitarians, and young sprigs of parsons with

their hair combed down their barks. I'm getting old: they're getting

past me: they laugh at us old boys," thought old Pendennis. And he was

not far wrong; the times and manners which he admired were pretty nearly

gone--the gay young men "larked" him irreverently, whilst the serious

youth had a grave pity and wonder at him; which would have been even

more painful to bear, had the old gentleman been aware of its extent.

But he was rather simple: his examination of moral questions had never

been very deep; it had never struck him perhaps, until very lately, that

he was otherwise than a most respectable and rather fortunate man. Is

there no old age but his without reverence? Did youthful folly never

jeer at other bald pates? For the past two or three years, he had begun

to perceive that his day was well-nigh over, and that the men of the new

time had begun to reign.

After a rather unsuccessful autumn season, then, during which he was

faithfully followed by Mr. Morgan, his nephew Arthur being engaged, as

we have seen, at Clavering, it happened that Major Pendennis came back

for a while to London, at the dismal end of October, when the fogs and

the lawyers come to town. Who has not looked with interest at those

loaded cabs, piled boxes, and crowded children, rattling through the

streets on the dun October evenings; stopping at the dark houses,

where they discharge nurse and infant, girls, matron and father, whose

holidays are over? Yesterday it was France and sunshine, or Broadstairs

and liberty; to-day comes work and a yellow fog; and, ye gods! what a

heap of bills there lies in Master's study! And the clerk has brought

the lawyer's papers from Chambers; and in half an hour the literary man

knows that the printer's boy will be in the passage; and Mr. Smith

with that little account (that particular little account) has called

presentient of your arrival, and has left word that he will call

to-morrow morning at ten. Who amongst us has not said Good-bye to his

holiday; returned to dun London, and his fate; surveyed his labours

and liabilities laid out before him, and been aware of that inevitable

little account to settle? Smith and his little account in the morning,

symbolise duty, difficulty, struggle, which you will meet, let us hope,

friend, with a manly and honest heart.--And you think of him, as the

children are slumbering once more in their own beds, and the watchful

housewife tenderly pretends to sleep.

Old Pendennis had no special labours or bills to encounter on the

morrow, as he had no affection at home to soothe him. He had always

money in his desk sufficient for his wants; and being by nature and

habit tolerably indifferent to the wants of other people, these latter

were not likely to disturb him. But a gentleman may be out of temper

though he does not owe a shilling and though he may be ever so selfish,

he must occasionally feel dispirited and lonely. He had had two or three

twinges of gout in the country-house where he had been staying: the

birds were wild and shy, and the walking over the ploughed fields had

fatigued him deucedly: the young men had laughed at him, and he had been

peevish at table once or twice: he had not been able to get his whist

of an evening: and, in fine, was glad to come away. In all his dealings

with Morgan, his valet, he had been exceedingly sulky and discontented.

He had sworn at him and abused him for many days past. He had scalded

his mouth with bad soup at Swindon. He had left his umbrella in the

railroad carriage: at which piece of forgetfulness, he was in such a

rage, that he cursed Morgan more freely than ever. Both, the chimneys

smoked furiously in his lodgings; and when he caused the windows to be

flung open, he swore so acrimoniously, that Morgan was inclined to fling

him out of window too, through that opened casement. The valet swore

after his master, as Pendennis went down the street on his way to the

Club.

Bays's was not at all pleasant. The house had been new painted, and

smelt of varnish and turpentine, and a large streak of white paint

inflicted itself on the back of the old boy's fur-collared surtout. The

dinner was not good: and the three most odious men in all London--old

Hawkshaw, whose cough and accompaniments are fit to make any man

uncomfortable; old Colonel Gripley, who seizes on all the newspapers;

and that irreclaimable old bore Jawkins, who would come and dine at the

next table to Pendennis, and describe to him every inn-bill which he had

paid in his foreign tour: each and all of these disagreeable personages

and incidents had contributed to make Major Pendennis miserable; and the

Club waiter trod on his toe as he brought him his coffee. Never alone

appear the Immortals. The Furies always hunt in company: they pursued

Pendennis from home to the Club, and from the Club home.

Whilst the Major was absent from his lodgings, Morgan had been seated

in the landlady's parlour, drinking freely of hot brandy-and-water, and

pouring out on Mrs. Brixham some of the abuse which he had received from

his master upstairs. Mrs. Brixham was Mr. Morgan's slave. He was his

landlady's landlord. He had bought the lease of the house which she

rented; he had got her name and her son's to acceptances, and a bill of

sale which made him master of the luckless widow's furniture. The young

Brixham was a clerk in an insurance office, and Morgan could put him

into what he called quod any day. Mrs. Brixham was a clergyman's widow,

and Mr. Morgan, after performing his duties on the first floor, had a

pleasure in making the old lady fetch him his bootjack and his slippers.

She was his slave. The little black profiles of her son and daughter;

the very picture of Tiddlecot Church, where she was married, and her

poor dear Brixham lived and died, was now Morgan's property, as it

hung there over the mantelpiece of his back-parlour. Morgan sate in the

widow's back-room, in the ex-curate's old horse-hair study-chair, making

Mrs. Brixham bring supper for him, and fill his glass again and again.

The liquor was bought with the poor woman's own coin, and hence Morgan

indulged in it only the more freely; and he had eaten his supper and was

drinking a third tumbler, when old Pendennis returned from the Club, and

went upstairs to his rooms. Mr. Morgan swore very savagely at him and

his bell, when he heard the latter, and finished his tumbler of brandy

before he went up to answer the summons.

He received the abuse consequent on this delay in silence, nor did the

Major condescend to read in the flushed face and glaring eyes of

the man, the anger under which he was labouring. The old gentleman's

foot-bath was at the fire; his gown and slippers awaiting him there.

Morgan knelt down to take his boots off with due subordination: and as

the Major abused him from above, kept up a growl of maledictions below

at his feet. Thus, when Pendennis was crying "Confound you, sir, mind

that strap--curse you, don't wrench my foot off," Morgan sotto voce

below was expressing a wish to strangle him, drown him, and punch his

head off.

The boots removed, it became necessary to divest Mr. Pendennis of his

coat: and for this purpose the valet had necessarily to approach very

near to his employer; so near that Pendennis could not but perceive

what Mr. Morgan's late occupation had been; to which he adverted in that

simple and forcible phraseology which men are sometimes in the habit of

using to their domestics; informing Morgan that he was a drunken beast,

and that he smelt of brandy.

At this the man broke out, losing patience, and flinging up all

subordination, "I'm drunk, am I? I'm a beast, am I? I'm d----d, am I?

you infernal old miscreant. Shall I wring your old head off, and

drownd yer in that pail of water? Do you think I'm a-goin' to bear your

confounded old harrogance, you old Wigsby! Chatter your old hivories at

me, do you, you grinning old baboon! Come on, if you are a man, and can

stand to a man. Ha! you coward, knives, knives!"

"If you advance a step, I'll send it into you," said the Major, seizing

up a knife that was on the table near him. "Go downstairs, you drunken

brute, and leave the house; send for your book and your wages in the

morning, and never let me see your insolent face again. This d----d

impertinence of yours has been growing for some months past. You have

been growing too rich. You are not fit for service. Get out of it, and

out of the house."

"And where would you wish me to go, pray, out of the 'ouse?" asked the

man, "and won't it be equal convenient to-morrow mornin'?--tootyfay mame

shose, sivvaplay, munseer?"

"Silence, you beast, and go!" cried out the Major.

Morgan began to laugh, with rather a sinister laugh. "Look yere,

Pendennis," he said, seating himself; "since I've been in this room

you've called me beast, brute, dog: and d----d me, haven't you? How do

you suppose one man likes that sort of talk from another? How many years

have I waited on you, and how many damns and cusses have you given me,

along with my wages? Do you think a man's a dog, that you can talk to

him in this way? If I choose to drink a little, why shouldn't I? I've

seen many a gentleman drunk form'ly, and peraps have the abit from them.

I ain't a-goin' to leave this house, old feller, and shall I tell you

why? The house is my house, every stick of furnitur' in it is mine,

excep' your old traps, and your shower-bath, and your wigbox. I've

bought the place, I tell you, with my own industry and perseverance.

I can show a hundred pound, where you can show a fifty, or your damned

supersellious nephew either. I've served you honourable, done everythink

for you these dozen years, and I'm a dog, am I? I'm a beast, am I?

That's the language for gentlemen, not for our rank. But I'll bear it no

more. I throw up your service; I'm tired on it; I've combed your old

wig and buckled your old girths and waistbands long enough, I tell you.

Don't look savage at me, I'm sitting in my own chair, in my own room,

a-telling the truth to you. I'll be your beast, and your brute, and your

dog, no more, Major Pendennis Alf Pay."

The fury of the old gentleman, met by the servant's abrupt revolt,

had been shocked and cooled by the concussion, as much as if a sudden

shower-bath or a pail of cold water had been flung upon him. That effect

produced, and his anger calmed, Morgan's speech had interested him, and

he rather respected his adversary, and his courage in facing him; as of

old days, in the fencing-room, he would have admired the opponent who

hit him.

"You are no longer my servant," the Major said, "and the house may be

yours; but the lodgings are mine, and you will have the goodness to

leave them. To-morrow morning, when we have settled our accounts, I

shall remove into other quarters. In the meantime, I desire to go to

bed, and have not the slightest wish for your further company."

"We'll have a settlement, don't you be afraid," Morgan said, getting up

from his chair. "I ain't done with you yet; nor with your family, nor

with the Clavering family, Major Pendennis; and that you shall know."

"Have the goodness to leave the room, sir--I'm tired," said the Major.

"Hah! you'll be more tired of me afore you've done," answered the man,

with a sneer, and walked out of the room; leaving the Major to compose

himself as best he might, after the agitation of this extraordinary

scene.

He sate and mused by his fireside over the past events, and the

confounded impudence and ingratitude of servants; and thought how he

should get a new man: how devilish unpleasant it was for a man of his

age, and with his habits, to part with a fellow to whom he had been

accustomed: how Morgan had a receipt for boot-varnish, which was

incomparably better and more comfortable to the feet than any he had

ever tried: how very well he made mutton-broth, and tended him when he

was unwell. "Gad, it's a hard thing to lose a fellow of that sort: but

he must go," thought the Major. "He has grown rich, and impudent since

he has grown rich. He was horribly tipsy and abusive to-night. We must

part, and I must go out of the lodgings. Dammy, I like the lodgings;

I'm used to 'em. It's very unpleasant, at my time of life, to change my

quarters." And so on, mused the old gentleman. The shower-bath had done

him good: the testiness was gone: the loss of the umbrella, the smell

of paint at the Club, were forgotten under the superior excitement.

"Confound the insolent villain!" thought the old gentleman. "He

understood my wants to a nicety: he was the best servant in England."

He thought about his servant as a man thinks of a horse that has carried

him long and well, and that has come down with him, and is safe no

longer. How the deuce to replace him? Where can he get such another

animal?

In these melancholy cogitations the Major, who had donned his own

dressing-gown and replaced his head of hair (a little grey had been

introduced into the coiffure of late by Mr. Truefitt, which had given

the Major's head the most artless and respectable appearance); in these

cogitations, we say, the Major, who had taken off his wig and put on his

night-handkerchief, sate absorbed by the fireside, when a feeble knock

came at his door, which was presently opened by the landlady of the

lodgings.

"God bless my soul, Mrs. Brixham!" cried out the Major, startled that

a lady should behold him in the simple appareil of his night-toilet.

"It--it's very late, Mrs. Brixham."

"I wish I might speak to you, sir," said the landlady, very piteously.

"About Morgan, I suppose? He has cooled himself at the pump. Can't take

him back, Mrs. Brixham. Impossible. I'd determined to part with him

before, when I heard of his dealings in the discount business--I suppose

you've heard of them, Mrs. Brixham? My servant's a capitalist, begad."

"Oh, sir," said Mrs. Brixham, "I know it to my cost. I borrowed from

him a little money five years ago; and though I have paid him many times

over, I am entirely in his power. I am ruined by him, sir. Everything I

had is his. He's a dreadful man."

"Eh, Mrs. Brixham? tout pis--dev'lish sorry for you, and that I must

quit your house after lodging here so long: there's no help for it. I

must go."

"He says we must all go, sir," sobbed out the luckless widow. "He came

downstairs from you just now--he had been drinking, and it always makes

him very wicked--and he said that you had insulted him, sir, and treated

him like a dog, and spoken to him unkindly; and he swore he would be

revenged, and--and I owe him a hundred and twenty pounds, sir--and he

has a bill of sale of all my furniture--and says he will turn me out of

my house, and send my poor George to prison. He has been the ruin of my

family, that man."

"Dev'lish sorry, Mrs. Brixham; pray take a chair. What can I do?"

"Could you not intercede with him for us? George will give half his

allowance; my daughter can send something. If you will but stay on, sir,

and pay a quarter's rent in advance----"

"My good madam, I would as soon give you a quarter in advance as not, if

I were going to stay in the lodgings. But I can't; and I can't afford

to fling away twenty pounds, my good madam. I'm a poor half-pay officer,

and want every shilling I have, begad. As far as a few pounds goes--say

five pounds--I don't say--and shall be most happy, and that sort of

thing: and I'll give it you in the morning with pleasure: but--but it's

getting late, and I have made a railroad journey."

"God's will be done, sir," said the poor woman, drying her tears. I must

bear my fate."

"And a dev'lish hard one it is, and most sincerely I pity you, Mrs.

Brixham. I--I'll say ten pounds, if you will permit me. Good night."

"Mr. Morgan, sir, when he came downstairs, and when--when I besought him

to have pity on me, and told him he had been the ruin of my family,

said something which I did not well understand--that he would ruin

every family in the house--that he knew something would bring you down

too--and that you should pay him for your--your insolence to him. I--I

must own to you, that I went down on my knees to him, sir; and he said,

with a dreadful oath against you, that he would have you on your knees."

"Me?--by Gad, that is too pleasant! Where is the confounded fellow?"

"He went away, sir. He said he should see you in the morning. Oh, pray

try and pacify him, and save me and my poor boy." And the widow went

away with this prayer, to pass her night as she might, and look for the

dreadful morrow.

The last words about himself excited Major Pendennis so much, that his

compassion for Mrs. Brixham's misfortunes was quite forgotten in the

consideration of his own case.

"Me on my knees?" thought he, as he got into bed: "confound his

impudence! Who ever saw me on my knees? What the devil does the fellow

know? Gad, I've not had an affair these twenty years. I defy him." And

the old compaigner turned round and slept pretty sound, being rather

excited and amused by the events of the day--the last day in Bury

Street, he was determined it should be. "For it's impossible to stay on

with a valet over me, and a bankrupt landlady. What good can I do this

poor devil of a woman? I'll give her twenty pound--there's Warrington's

twenty pound, which he has just paid--but what's the use? She'll want

more, and more, and more, and that cormorant Morgan will swallow all.

No, dammy, I can't afford to know poor people; and to-morrow I'll say

Good-bye--to Mrs. Brixham and Mr. Morgan."

CHAPTER LXIX. In which the Major neither yields his Money nor his Life

Early next morning Pendennis's shutters were opened by Morgan, who

appeared as usual, with a face perfectly grave and respectful, bearing

with him the old gentleman's clothes, cans of water, and elaborate

toilet requisites.

"It's you, is it?" said the old fellow from his bed. "I shan't take you

back again, you understand."

"I ave not the least wish to be took back agin, Major Pendennis," Mr.

Morgan said, with grave dignity, "nor to serve you nor hany man. But as

I wish you to be comftable as long as you stay in my house, I came up

to do what's nessary." And once more, and for the last time, Mr. James

Morgan laid out the silver dressing-case, and strapped the shining

razor.

These offices concluded, he addressed himself to the Major with an

indescribable solemnity, and said: "Thinkin' that you would most likely

be in want of a respectable pusson, until you suited yourself, I spoke

to a young man last night, who is 'ere."

"Indeed," said the warrior in the tent-bed.

"He ave lived in the fust famlies, and I can wouch for his

respectability."

"You are monstrous polite," grinned the old Major. And the truth is,

that after the occurrences of the previous evening, Morgan had gone out

to his own Club at the Wheel of Fortune, and there finding Frosch, a

courier and valet just returned from a foreign tour with young Lord

Cubley, and for the present disposable, had represented to Mr. Frosch,

that he, Morgan, had "a devil of a blow hup with his own Gov'nor, and

was goin' to retire from the business haltogether, and that if Frosch

wanted a tempory job, he might probbly have it by applying in Bury

Street."

"You are very polite," said the Major, "and your recommendation, I am

sure, will have every weight."

Morgan blushed; he felt his master was 'a-chaffin' of him.' "The man

have awaited on you before, sir," he said with great dignity. "Lord De

la Pole, sir, gave him to his nephew young Lord Cubley, and he have been

with him on his foring tour, and not wishing to go to Fitzurse Castle,

which Frosch's chest is delicate, and he cannot bear the cold in

Scotland, he is free to serve you or not, as you choose."

"I repeat, sir, that you are exceedingly polite," said the Major. Come

in, Frosch--you will do very well--Mr. Morgan, will you have the great

kindness to----"

"I shall show him what is nessary, sir, and what is customry for you to

wish to ave done. Will you please to take breakfast 'ere or at the Club,

Major Pendennis?"

"With your kind permission, I will breakfast here, and afterwards we

will make our little arrangements."

"If you please, sir."

"Will you now oblige me by leaving the room?"

Morgan withdrew; the excessive politeness of his ex-employer made him

almost as angry as the Major's bitterest words. And whilst the old

gentleman is making his mysterious toilet, we will also modestly retire.

After breakfast, Major Pendennis and his new aide-de-camp occupied

themselves in preparing for their departure. The establishment of the

old bachelor was not very complicated. He encumbered himself with no

useless wardrobe. A bible (his mother's), a road book, Pen's novel (calf

elegant), and the Duke of Wellington's Despatches, with a few prints,

maps, and portraits of that illustrious general, and of various

sovereigns and consorts of this country, and of the General under whom

Major Pendennis had served in India, formed his literary and artistical

collection: he was always ready to march at a few hours' notice, and

the cases in which he had brought his property into his lodgings some

fifteen years before, were still in the lofts amply sufficient to

receive all his goods. These, the young woman who did the work of the

house, and who was known by the name of Betty to her mistress, and

of "Slavey" to Mr. Morgan, brought down from their resting-place, and

obediently dusted and cleaned under the eyes of the terrible Morgan. His

demeanour was guarded and solemn; he had spoken no word as yet to Mrs.

Brixham respecting his threats of the past night, but he looked as if he

would execute them, and the poor widow tremblingly awaited her fate.

Old Pendennis, armed with his cane, superintended the package of his

goods and chattels, under the hands of Mr. Frosch, and the Slavey burned

such of his papers as he did not care to keep; flung open doors and

closets until they were all empty; and now all boxes and chests were

closed, except his desk, which was ready to receive the final accounts

of Mr. Morgan.

That individual now made his appearance, and brought his books. "As I

wish to speak to you in privick, peraps you will ave the kindness to

request Frosch to step downstairs," he said, on entering.

"Bring a couple of cabs, Frosch, if you please--and wait downstairs

until I ring for you," said the Major. Morgan saw Frosch downstairs,

watched him go along the street upon his errand, and produced his books

and accounts, which were simple and very easily settled.

"And now, sir," said he, having pocketed the cheque which his

ex-employer gave him, and signed his name to his book with a flourish,

"and now that accounts is closed between us, sir," he said, "I porpose

to speak to you as one man to another"--(Morgan liked the sound of his

own voice; and, as an individual, indulged in public speaking whenever

he could get an opportunity, at the Club, or the housekeeper's

room)--"and I must tell you, that I'm in possession of certing

infamation."

"And may I inquire of what nature, pray?" asked the Major.

"It's valuble information, Major Pendennis, as you know very well. I

know of a marriage as is no marriage--of a honourable Baronet as is no

more married than I am; and which his wife is married to somebody else,

as you know too, sir."

Pendennis at once understood all. "Ha! this accounts for your behaviour.

You have been listening at the door, sir, I suppose," said the Major,

looking very haughty; "I forgot to look at the keyhole when I went to

that public-house, or I might have suspected what sort of a person was

behind it."

"I may have my schemes as you may have yours, I suppose," answered

Morgan. "I may get my information, and I may act on that information,

and I may find that information valuble as anybody else may. A poor

servant may have a bit of luck as well as a gentleman, mayn't he? Don't

you be putting on your aughty looks, sir, and comin' the aristocrat over

me. That's all gammon with me. I'm an Englishman, I am, and as good as

you."

"To what the devil does this tend, sir? and how does the secret which

you have surprised concern me, I should like to know?" asked Major

Pendennis, with great majesty.

"How does it concern me, indeed! how grand we are! How does it concern

my nephew, I wonder? How does it concern my nephew's seat in Parlyment:

and to subornation of bigamy? How does it concern that? What, are you to

be the only man to have a secret, and to trade on it? Why shouldn't I go

halves, Major Pendennis? I've found it out too. Look here! I ain't goin'

to be unreasonable with you. Make it worth my while, and I'll keep the

thing close. Let Mr. Arthur take his seat, and his rich wife, if you

like; I don't want to marry her. But I will have my share, as sure as my

name's James Morgan. And if I don't----"

"And if you don't, sir--what?" Pendennis asked.

"If I don't, I split, and tell all. I smash Clavering, and have him

and his wife up for bigamy--so help me, I will! I smash young Hopeful's

marriage, and I show up you and him as makin' use of this secret, in

order to squeeze a seat in Parlyment out of Sir Francis, and a fortune

out of his wife."

"Mr. Pendennis knows no more of this business than the babe unborn,

sir," cried the Major, aghast. "No more than Lady Clavering, than Miss

Amory does."

"Tell that to the marines, Major," replied the valet; "that cock won't

fight with me."

"Do you doubt my word, you villain?"

"No bad language. I don't care one twopence'a'p'ny whether your word's

true or not. I tell you, I intend this to be a nice little annuity to

me, Major: for I have every one of you; and I ain't such a fool as to

let you go. I should say that you might make it five hundred a year to

me among you, easy. Pay me down the first quarter now and I'm as mum as

a mouse. Just give a note for one twenty-five. There's your cheque-book

on your desk."

"And there's this too, you villain," cried the old gentleman. In the

desk to which the valet pointed was a little double-barrelled

pistol, which had belonged to Pendennis's old patron; the Indian

commander-in-chief, and which had accompanied him in many a campaign.

"One more word, you scoundrel and I'll shoot you, like a mad dog.

Stop--by Jove, I'll do it now. You'll assault me, will you? You'll

strike at an old man, will you, you lying coward? Kneel down and say

your prayers, sir, for by the Lord you shall die."

The Major's face glared with rage at his adversary, who looked terrified

before him for a moment, and at the next, with a shriek of "Murder!"

sprang towards the open window, under which a policeman happened to be

on his beat. "Murder! Police!" bellowed Mr. Morgan.

To his surprise, Major Pendennis wheeled away the table and walked to

the other window, which was also open. He beckoned the policeman. "Come

up here, policeman," he said, and then went and placed himself against

the door.

"You miserable sneak," he said to Morgan; "the pistol hasn't been loaded

these fifteen years, as you would have known very well, if you had not

been such a coward. That policeman is coming, and I will have him up,

and have your trunks searched; I have reason to believe that you are a

thief, sir. I know you are. I'll swear to the things."

"You gave 'em to me--you gave 'em to me!" cried Morgan.

The Major laughed. "We'll see," he said; and the guilty valet

remembered some fine lawn-fronted shirts--a certain gold-headed cane--an

opera-glass, which he had forgotten to bring down, and of which he had

assumed the use along with certain articles of his master's clothes,

which the old dandy neither wore nor asked for.

Policeman X entered; followed by the seared Mrs. Brixham and her

maid-of-all-work, who had been at the door and found some difficulty in

closing it against the street amateurs, who wished to see the row. The

Major began instantly to speak.

"I have had occasion to discharge this drunken scoundrel," he said.

"Both last night and this morning he insulted and assaulted me. I am an

old man and took up a pistol. You see it is not loaded, and this coward

cried out before he was hurt. I am glad you are come. I was charging

him with taking my property, and desired to examine his trunks and his

room."

"The velvet cloak you ain't worn these three years, nor the weskits, and

I thought I might take the shirts, and I--I take my hoath I intended

to put back the hopera-glass," roared Morgan, writhing with rage and

terror.

"The man acknowledges that he is a thief," the Major said, calmly. "He

has been in my service for years, and I have treated him with every

kindness and confidence. We will go upstairs and examine his trunks."

In those trunks Mr. Morgan had things which he would fain keep from

public eyes. Mr. Morgan, the bill-discounter, gave goods as well as

money to his customers. He provided young spendthrifts with snuff boxes

and pins and jewels and pictures and cigars, and of a very doubtful

quality those cigars and jewels and pictures were. Their display at a

police-office, the discovery of his occult profession, and the exposure

of the Major's property, which he had appropriated, indeed, rather than

stolen,--would not have added to the reputation of Mr. Morgan. He looked

a piteous image of terror and discomfiture.

"He'll smash me, will he?" thought the Major. "I'll crush him now, and

finish with him."

But he paused. He looked at poor Mrs. Brixham's scared face; and he

thought for a moment to himself that the man brought to bay and in

prison might make disclosures which had best be kept secret, and that it

was best not to deal too fiercely with a desperate man.

"Stop," he said, "policeman. I'll speak with this man by himself."

"Do you give Mr. Morgan in charge?" said the policeman.

"I have brought no charge as yet," the Major said, with a significant

look at his man.

"Thank you, sir," whispered Morgan, very low.

"Go outside the door, and wait there, policeman, if you please.--Now,

Morgan, you have played one game with me, and you have not had the best

of it, my good man. No, begad, you've not had the best of it, though you

had the best hand; and you've got to pay, too, now, you scoundrel."

"Yes, sir," said the man.

"I've only found out, within the last week, the game which you have been

driving, you villain. Young De Boots, of the Blues, recognised you

as the man who came to barracks, and did business one-third in money,

one-third in eau-de-Cologne, and one-third in French prints, you

confounded demure old sinner! I didn't miss anything, or care a straw

what you'd taken, you booby; but I took the shot, and it hit--hit the

bull's-eye, begad. Dammy, six, I'm an old campaigner."

"What do you want with me, sir?"

"I'll tell you. Your bills, I suppose, you keep about you in that dem'd

great leather pocket-book, don't you? You'll burn Mrs. Brixham's bill?"

"Sir, I ain't a-goin' to part with my property," growled the man.

"You lent her sixty pounds five years ago. She and that poor devil of an

insurance clerk, her son, have paid you fifty pounds a year ever since;

and you have got a bill of sale of her furniture, and her note of hand

for a hundred and fifty pounds. She told me so last night. By Jove, sir,

you've bled that poor woman enough."

"I won't give it up," said Morgan; "If I do I'm----"

"Policeman!" cried the Major.

"You shall have the bill," said Morgan. "You're not going to take money

of me, and you a gentleman?"

"I shall want you directly," said the Major to X, who here entered, and

who again withdrew.

"No, my good sir," the old gentleman continued; "I have not any desire

to have further pecuniary transactions with you; but we will draw out a

little paper, which you will have the kindness to sign. No, stop!--you

shall write it: you have improved immensely in writing of late, and

have now a very good hand. You shall sit down and write, if you

please--there, at that table--so--let me see--we may as well have the

date. Write 'Bury Street, St. James's, October 21, 18--.'"

And Mr. Morgan wrote as he was instructed, and as the pitiless old Major

continued:--

"'I, James Morgan, having come in extreme poverty into the service of

Arthur Pendennis, Esquire, of Bury Street, St. James's, a Major in her

Majesty's service, acknowledge that I received liberal wages and board

wages from my employer, during fifteen years.'--You can't object to

that, I am sure," said the Major.

"During fifteen years," wrote Morgan.

"'In which time, by my own care and prudence,'" the dictator resumed,

"'I have managed to amass sufficient money to purchase the house in

which my master resides, and, besides, to effect other savings. Amongst

other persons from whom I have had money, I may mention my present

tenant, Mrs. Brixham, who, in consideration of sixty pounds advanced

by me five years since, has paid back to me the sum of two hundred and

fifty pounds sterling, besides giving me a note of hand for one hundred

and twenty pounds, which I restore to her at the desire of my late

master, Major Arthur Pendennis, and therewith free her furniture, of

which I had a bill of sale.'--Have you written?"

"I think if this pistol was loaded, I'd blow your brains out," said

Morgan.

"No, you wouldn't. You have too great a respect for your valuable

life, my good man," the Major answered. "Let us go on and begin a new

sentence.

"'And having, in return for my master's kindness, stolen his property

from him, which I acknowledge to be now upstairs in my trunks; and

having uttered falsehoods regarding his and other honourable families, I

do hereby, in consideration of his clemency to me, express my regret for

uttering these falsehoods, and for stealing his property; and declare

that I am not worthy of belief, and that I hope'--yes, begad--'that I

hope to amend for the future. Signed, James Morgan.'"

"I'm d----d if I sign it," said Morgan.

"My good man, it will happen to you, whether you sign or no, begad,"

said the old fellow, chuckling at his own wit "There, I shall not use

this, you understand, unless--unless I am compelled to do so. Mrs.

Brixham, and our friend the policeman, will witness it, I dare say,

without reading it: and I will give the old lady back her note of hand,

and say, which you will confirm, that she and you are quits. I see

there is Frosch come back with the cab for my trunks; I shall go to an

hotel.--You may come in now, policeman; Mr. Morgan and I have arranged

our little dispute. If Mrs. Brixham will sign this paper, and you,

policeman, will do so, I shall be very much obliged to you both. Mrs.

Brixham, you and your worthy landlord, Mr. Morgan, are quits. I wish you

joy of him. Let Frosch come and pack the rest of the things."

Frosch, aided by the Slavey, under the calm superintendence of Mr.

Morgan, carried Major Pendennis's boxes to the cabs in waiting; and

Mrs. Brixham, when her persecutor was not by, came and asked a Heaven's

blessing upon the Major, her preserver, and the best and quietest and

kindest of lodgers. And having given her a finger to shake, which the

humble lady received with a curtsey, and over which she was ready

to make a speech full of tears, the Major cut short that valedictory

oration, and walked out of the house to the hotel in Jermyn Street,

which was not many steps from Morgan's door.

That individual, looking forth from the parlour-window, discharged

anything but blessings at his parting guest; but the stout old boy could

afford not to be frightened at Mr. Morgan, and flung him a look of great

contempt and humour as he strutted away with his cane.

Major Pendennis had not quitted his house of Bury Street many hours, and

Mr. Morgan was enjoying his otium in a dignified manner, surveying

the evening fog, and smoking a cigar, on the door-steps, when Arthur

Pendennis, Esq., the hero of this history, made his appearance at the

well-known door.

"My uncle out, I suppose, Morgan?" he said to the functionary; knowing

full well that to smoke was treason, in the presence of the Major.

"Major Pendennis is hout, sir," said Morgan, with gravity, bowing, but

not touching the elegant cap which he wore. "Major Pendennis have left

this ouse to-day, sir, and I have no longer the honour of being in his

service, sir."

"Indeed, and where is he?"

"I believe he ave taken tempory lodgings at Cox's otel, in Jummin

Street," said Mr. Morgan; and added, after a pause, "Are you in town

for some time, pray, sir? Are you in Chambers? I should like to have

the honour of waiting on you there: and would be thankful if you would

favour me with a quarter of an hour."

"Do you want my uncle to take you back?" asked Arthur, insolent and

good-natured.

"I want no such thing; I'd see him----" The man glared at him for a

minute, but he stopped. "No, sir, thank you," he said in a softer

voice; "it's only with you that I wish to speak, on some business which

concerns you; and perhaps you would favour me by walking into my house."

"If it is but for a minute or two, I will listen to you, Morgan,"

said Arthur; and thought to himself, "I suppose the fellow wants me

to patronise him;" and he entered the house. A card was already in the

front windows, proclaiming that apartments were to be let; and having

introduced Mr. Pendennis into the dining-room, and offered him a chair,

Mr. Morgan took one himself, and proceeded to convey some information to

him, of which the reader has already had cognisance.

CHAPTER LXX. In which Pendennis counts his Eggs

Our friend had arrived in London on that day only, though but for a

brief visit; and having left some fellow-travellers at an hotel to which

he had convoyed them from the West, he hastened to the Chambers in Lamb

Court, which were basking in as much sun as chose to visit that dreary

but not altogether comfortless building. Freedom stands in lieu of

sunshine in chambers; and Templars grumble, but take their ease in their

Inn. Pen's domestic announced to him that Warrington was in Chambers

too, and, of course, Arthur ran up to his friend's room straightway,

and found it, as of old, perfumed with the pipe, and George once more at

work with his newspapers and reviews. The pair greeted each other with

the rough cordiality which young Englishmen use one to another: and

which carries a great deal of warmth and kindness under its rude

exterior. Warrington smiled and took his pipe out of his mouth, and

said, "Well, young one!" Pen advanced and held out his hand, and said,

"How are you, old boy?" And so this greeting passed between two friends

who had not seen each other for months. Alphonse and Frederic would

have rushed into each other's arms and shrieked Ce bon coeur! ce cher

Alphonse! over each other's shoulders. Max and Wilhelm would have

bestowed half a dozen kisses, scented with Havannah, upon each other's

mustachios. "Well, young one!" "How are you, old boy?" is what two

Britons say: after saving each other's lives, possibly, the day before.

To-morrow they will leave off shaking hands, and only wag their heads at

one another as they come to breakfast. Each has for the other the very

warmest confidence and regard: each would share his purse with the

other: and hearing him attacked would break out in the loudest and most

enthusiastic praise of his friend; but they part with a mere Good-bye,

they meet with a mere How-d'you-do? and they don't write to each other

in the interval. Curious, modesty, strange stoical decorum of English

friendship! "Yes, we are not demonstrative like those confounded

foreigners," says Hardman: who not only shows no friendship, but never

felt any all his life long.

"Been in Switzerland?" says Pen.

"Yes," says Warrington.

"Couldn't find a bit of tobacco fit to smoke till we came to Strasburg,

where I got some caporal." The man's mind is full, very likely, of the

great sights which he has seen, of the great emotions with which the

vast works of nature have inspired it. But his enthusiasm is too coy to

show itself, even to his closest friend, and he veils it with a cloud of

tobacco. He will speak more fully of confidential evenings, however,

and write ardently and frankly about that which he is shy of saying. The

thoughts and experience of his travel will come forth in his writings;

as the learning, which he never displays in talk, enriches his style

with pregnant allusion and brilliant illustration, colours his generous

eloquence, and points his wit.

The elder gives a rapid account of the places which he has visited in

his tour. He has seen Switzerland, North Italy, and the Tyrol--he has

come home by Vienna, and Dresden, and the Rhine. He speaks about these

places in a shy sulky voice, as if he had rather not mention them at

all, and as if the sight of them had rendered him very unhappy. The

outline of the elder man's tour thus gloomily sketched out, the

young one begins to speak. He has been in the country--very much

bored--canvassing uncommonly slow--he is here for a day or two, and

going on to--to the neighbourhood of Tunbridge Wells, to some friends

that will be uncommonly slow, too. How hard it is to make an Englishman

acknowledge that he is happy!

"And the seat in Parliament, Pen? Have you made it all right?" asks

Warrington.

"All right,--as soon as Parliament meets and a new writ can be issued,

Clavering retires, and I step into his shoes," says Pen.

"And under which king does Bezonian speak or die?" asked Warrington. "Do

we come out as Liberal Conservative, or as Government man, or on our own

hook?"

"Hem! There are no politics now; every man's politics, at least,

are pretty much the same. I have not got acres enough to make me a

Protectionist; nor could I be one, I think, if I had all the land in the

county. I shall go pretty much with Government, and in advance of them

upon some social questions which I have been getting up during the

vacation;--don't grin, you old cynic, I have been getting up the

Blue Books, and intend to come out rather strong on the Sanitary and

Colonisation questions."

"We reserve to ourselves the liberty of voting against Government,

though we are generally friendly. We are, however, friends of the people

avant tout. We give lectures at the Clavering Institute, and shake bands

with the intelligent mechanics. We think the franchise ought to be very

considerably enlarged; at the same time we are free to accept office

some day, when the House has listened to a few crack speeches from us,

and the Administration perceives our merit."

"I am not Moses," said Pen, with, as usual, somewhat of melancholy in

his voice. "I have no laws from Heaven to bring down to the people from

the mountain. I don't belong to the mountain at all, or set up to be a

leader and reformer of mankind. My faith is not strong enough for that;

nor my vanity, nor my hypocrisy, great enough. I will tell no lies,

George, that I promise you; and do no more than coincide in those which

are necessary and pass current, and can't be got in without recalling

the whole circulation. Give a man at least the advantage of his

sceptical turn. If I find a good thing to say in the House, I will say

it; a good measure, I will support it; a fair place, I will take it, and

be glad of my luck. But I would no more flatter a great man than a mob;

and now you know as much about my politics as I do. What call have I to

be a Whig? Whiggism is not a divine institution. Why not vote with the

Liberal Conservatives? They have done for the nation what the Whigs

would never have done without them. Who converted both?--the Radicals

and the country outside. I think the Morning Post is often right, and

Punch is often wrong. I don't profess a call, but take advantage of a

chance. Parlons d'autre chose."

"The next thing at your heart, after ambition is love, I suppose?"

Warrington said. "How have our young loves prospered? Are we going to

change our condition, and give up our chambers? Are you going to divorce

me, Arthur, and take unto yourself a wife?"

"I suppose so. She is very good-natured and lively. She sings, and

she don't mind smoking. She'll have a fair fortune--I don't know how

much--but my uncle augurs everything from the Begum's generosity, and

says that she will come down very handsomely. And I think Blanche is

dev'lish fond of me," said Arthur, with a sigh.

"That means that we accept her caresses and her money."

"Haven't we said before that life was a transaction?" Pendennis said. "I

don't pretend to break my heart about her. I have told her pretty fairly

what my feelings are--and--and have engaged myself to her. And since I

saw her last, and for the last two months especially, whilst I have been

in the country, I think she has been growing fonder and fonder of me;

and her letters to me, and especially to Laura, seem to show it. Mine

have been simple enough--no raptures, nor vows, you understand--but

looking upon the thing as an affaire faite; and not desirous to hasten

or defer the completion."

"And Laura? how is she?" Warrington asked frankly.

"Laura, George," said Pen, looking his friend hard in the face--"by

heaven, Laura is the best, and noblest, and dearest girl the sun ever

shone upon." His own voice fell as he spoke: it seemed as if he could

hardly utter the words: he stretched out his hand to his comrade, who

took it and nodded his head.

"Have you only found out that now, young un?" Warrington said after a

pause.

"Who has not learned things too late, George?" cried Arthur, in his

impetuous way, gathering words and emotion as he went on. "Whose life is

not a disappointment? Who carries his heart entire to the grave without

a mutilation? I never knew anybody who was happy quite: or who has not

had to ransom himself out of the hands of Fate with the payment of some

dearest treasure or other. Lucky if we are left alone afterwards, when

we have paid our fine, and if the tyrant visits us no more. Suppose I

have found out that I have lost the greatest prize in the world, now

that it can't be mine--that for years I had an angel under my tent, and

let her go?--am I the only one--ah, dear old boy, am I the only one? And

do you think my lot is easier to bear because I own that I deserve it?

She's gone from us. God's blessing be with her! She might have stayed,

and I lost her; it's like Undine: isn't it, George?"

"She was in this room once," said George.

He saw her there--he heard the sweet low voice--he saw the sweet smile

and eyes shining so kindly--the face remembered so fondly--thought of in

what night-watches--blest and loved always--gone now! A glass that had

held a nosegay--a bible with Helen's handwriting--were all that were

left him of that brief flower of his life. Say it is a dream: say it

passes: better the recollection of a dream than an aimless waking from a

blank stupor.

The two friends sate in silence a while, each occupied with his own

thoughts and aware of the other's. Pen broke it presently, by saying

that he must go and seek for his uncle, and report progress to the old

gentleman. The Major had written in a very bad humour; the Major was

getting old. "I should like to see you in Parliament, and snugly settled

with a comfortable house and an heir to the name before I make my bow.

Show me these," the Major wrote, "and then, let old Arthur Pendennis

make room for the younger fellows; he has walked the Pall Mall pave long

enough."

"There is a kindness about the old heathen," said Warrington. "He cares

for somebody besides himself, at least for some other part of himself

besides that which is buttoned into his own coat;--for you and your

race. He would like to see the progeny of the Pendennises multiplying

and increasing, and hopes that they may inherit the land. The old

patriarch blesses you from the Club window of Bays's, and is carried

off and buried under the flags of St. James's Church, in sight of

Piccadilly, and the cabstand, and the carriages going to the levee. It

is an edifying ending."

"The new blood I bring into the family," mused Pen, "is rather tainted.

If I had chosen, I think my father-in-law Amory would not have been the

progenitor I should have desired for my race; nor my grandfather-in-law

Snell; nor our Oriental ancestors. By the way, who was Amory? Amory was

lieutenant of an Indiaman. Blanche wrote some verses about him, about

the storm, the mountain wave, the seaman's grave, the gallant father,

and that sort of thing. Amory was drowned commanding a country ship

between Calcutta and Sydney; Amory and the Begum weren't happy together.

She has been unlucky in her selection of husbands, the good old lady,

for, between ourselves, a more despicable creature than Sir Francis

Clavering, of Clavering Park, Baronet, never----" "Never legislated for

his country," broke in Warrington; at which Pen blushed rather.

"By the way, at Baden," said Warrington, "I found our friend the

Chevalier Strong in great state, and wearing his orders. He told me that

he had quarrelled with Clavering, of whom he seemed to have almost as

bad an opinion as you have, and in fact, I think, though I will not

be certain, confided to me his opinion, that Clavering was an utter

scoundrel. That fellow Bloundell, who taught you card-playing at

Oxbridge, was with Strong; and time, I think, has brought out his

valuable qualities, and rendered him a more accomplished rascal than

he was during your undergraduateship. But the king of the place was the

famous Colonel Altamont, who was carrying all before him, giving flies

to the whole society, and breaking the bank, it was said."

"My uncle knows something about that fellow--Clavering knows something

about him. There's something louche regarding him. But come! I must

go to Bury Street, like a dutiful nephew." And, taking his hat, Pen

prepared to go.

"I will walk, too," said Warrington. And they descended the stairs,

stopping, however, at Pen's chambers, which, as the reader has been

informed, were now on the lower story.

Here Pen began sprinkling himself with eau-de-Cologne, and carefully

scenting his hair and whiskers with that odoriferous water.

"What is the matter? You've not been smoking. Is it my pipe that has

poisoned you?" growled Warrington.

"I am going to call upon some women," said Pen. "I'm--I'm going to dine

with 'em. They are passing through town, and are at an hotel in Jermyn

Street."

Warrington looked with good-natured interest at the young fellow

dandifying himself up to a pitch of completeness; and appearing at

length in a gorgeous shirt-front and neckcloth, fresh gloves, and

glistening boots. George had a pair of thick high-lows, and his old

shirt was torn about the breast, and ragged at the collar, where his

blue beard had worn it.

"Well, young un," said he, simply, "I like you to be a buck; somehow.

When I walk about with you, it is as if I had a rose in my button-hole.

And you are still affable. I don't think there is any young fellow in

the Temple turns out like you; and I don't believe you were ever ashamed

of walking with me yet."

"Don't laugh at me, George." said Pen.

"I say, Pen," continued the other, sadly, "if you write--if you write to

Laura, I wish you would say 'God bless her' from me."

Pen blushed; and then looked at Warrington; and then--and then burst

into an uncontrollable fit of laughing.

"I'm going to dine with her," he said. "I brought her and Lady

Rockminster up from the country to-day--made two days of it--slept last

night at Bath--I say, George, come and dine, too. I may ask any one I

please, and the old lady is constantly talking about you."

George refused. George had an article to write. George hesitated; and

oh, strange to say! at last he agreed to go. It was agreed that they

should go and call upon the ladies; and they marched away in high

spirits to the hotel in Jermyn Street. Once more the dear face shone

upon him; once more the sweet voice spoke to him, and the tender hand

pressed a welcome.

There still wanted half an hour to dinner. "You will go and see your

uncle now, Mr. Pendennis," old Lady Rockminster said. "You will not

bring him to dinner-no--his old stories are intolerable; and I want

to talk to Mr. Warrington; I daresay he will amuse us. I think we have

heard all your stories. We have been together for two whole days, and I

think we are getting tired of each other."

So, obeying her ladyship's orders, Arthur went downstairs and walked to

his uncle's lodgings.

CHAPTER LXXI. Fiat Justitia

The dinner was served when Arthur returned, and Lady Rockminster began

to scold him for arriving late. But Laura, looking at her cousin, saw

that his face was so pale and scared, that she interrupted her imperious

patroness; and asked, with tender alarm, what had happened? Was Arthur

ill?

Arthur drank a large bumper of sherry. "I have heard the most

extraordinary news; I will tell you afterwards," he said, looking at

the servants. He was very nervous and agitated during the dinner. "Don't

tramp and beat so with your feet under the table," Lady Rockminster

said. "You have trodden on Fido, and upset his saucer. You see Mr.

Warrington keeps his boots quiet."

At the dessert--it seemed as if the unlucky dinner would never be

over--Lady Rockminster said, "This dinner has been exceedingly stupid.

I suppose something has happened, and that you want to speak to Laura.

I will go and have my nap. I am not sure that I shall have any tea--no.

Good night, Mr. Warrington. You must come again, and when there is no

business to talk about." And the old lady, tossing up her head, walked

away from the room with great dignity.

George and the others had risen with her, and Warrington was about to go

away, and was saying "Good night" to Laura, who, of course, was looking

much alarmed about her cousin, when Arthur said, "Pray, stay, George.

You should hear my news too, and give me your counsel in this case. I

hardly know how to act in it."

"It's something about Blanche, Arthur," said Laura, her heart beating,

and her cheek blushing as she thought it had never blushed in her life.

"Yes--and the most extraordinary story," said Pen. "When I left you to

go to my uncle's lodgings, I found his servant, Morgan, who has been

with him so long, at the door, and he said that he and his master had

parted that morning; that my uncle had quitted the house, and had gone

to an hotel--this hotel. I asked for him when I came in; but he was

gone out to dinner. Morgan then said that he had something of a most

important nature to communicate to me, and begged me to step into the

house; his house it is now. It appears the scoundrel has saved a great

deal of money whilst in my uncle's service, and is now a capitalist and

a millionaire, for what I know. Well, I went into the house, and what do

you think he told me? This must be a secret between us all--at least if

we can keep it, now that it is in possession of that villain. Blanche's

father is not dead. He has come to life again. The marriage between

Clavering and the Begum is no marriage."

"And Blanche, I suppose, is her grandfather's heir," said Warrington.

"Perhaps: but the child of what a father! Amory is an escaped

convict--Clavering knows it; my uncle knows it--and it was with this

piece of information held over Clavering in terrorem that the wretched

old man got him to give up his borough to me."

"Blanche doesn't know it," said Laura, "nor poor Lady Clavering?"

"No," said Pen; "Blanche does not even know the history of her father.

She knew that he and her mother had separated, and had heard as a child,

from Bonner, her nurse, that Mr. Amory was drowned in New South Wales.

He was there as a convict, not as a ship's-captain, as the poor girl

thought. Lady Clavering has told me that they were not happy, and that

her husband was a bad character. She would tell me all, she said, some

day: and I remember her saying to me, with tears in her eyes, that it

was hard for a woman to be forced to own that she was glad to hear her

husband was dead: and that twice in her life she should have chosen so

badly. What is to be done now? The man can't show and claim his

wife: death is probably over him if he discovers himself: return

to transportation certainly. But the rascal has held the threat of

discovery over Clavering for some time past, and has extorted money from

him time after time."

"It is our friend Colonel Altamont, of course," said Warrington "I see

all now."

"If the rascal comes back," continued Arthur, "Morgan, who knows his

secret, will use it over him--and having it in his possession, proposes

to extort money from us all. The d----d rascal supposed I was cognisant

of it," said Pen, white with anger; "asked me if I would give him an

annuity to keep it quiet; threatened me, me, as if I was trafficking

with this wretched old Begum's misfortune, and would extort a seat in

Parliament out of that miserable Clavering. Good heavens! was my uncle

mad, to tamper in such a conspiracy? Fancy our mother's son, Laura,

trading on such a treason!"

"I can't fancy it, dear Arthur," said Laura, seizing Arthur's hand, and

kissing it.

"No!" broke out Warrington's deep voice, with a tremor; he surveyed the

two generous and loving young people with a pang of indescribable love

and pain. "No. Our boy can't meddle with such a wretched intrigue as

that. Arthur Pendennis can't marry a convict's daughter; and sit in

Parliament as member for the hulks. You must wash your hands of the

whole affair, Pen. You must break off. You must give no explanations

of why and wherefore, but state that family reasons render a match

impossible. It is better that those poor women should fancy you false

to your word than that they should know the truth. Besides, you can

get from that dog Clavering--I can fetch that for you easily enough an

acknowledgment that the reasons which you have given to him as the head

of the family are amply sufficient for breaking off the union. Don't you

think with me, Laura?" He scarcely dared to look her in the face as he

spoke. Any lingering hope that he might have--any feeble hold that he

might feel upon the last spar of his wrecked fortune, he knew he was

casting away; and he let the wave of his calamity close over him. Pen

had started up whilst he was speaking, looking eagerly at him. He turned

his head away. He saw Laura rise up also and go to Pen, and once more

take his hand and kiss it. "She thinks so too--God bless her!" said

George.

"Her father's shame is not Blanche's fault, dear Arthur, is it?" Laura

said, very pale, and speaking very quickly. "Suppose you had been

married, would you desert her because she had done no wrong? Are you not

pledged to her? Would you leave her because she is in misfortune? And if

she is unhappy, wouldn't you console her? Our mother would, had she been

here." And, as she spoke, the kind girl folded her arms round him, and

buried her face upon his heart.

"Our mother is an angel with God," Pen sobbed out. "And you are the

dearest and best of women--the dearest, the dearest and the best. Teach

me my duty. Pray for me that I may do it--pure heart. God bless you--God

bless you, my sister!"

"Amen," groaned out Warrington, with his head in his hands. "She is

right," he murmured to himself. "She can't do any wrong, I think--that

girl." Indeed, she looked and smiled like an angel. Many a day after he

saw that smile--saw her radiant face as she looked up at Pen--saw her

putting back her curls, blushing and smiling, and still looking fondly

towards him.

She leaned for a moment her little fair hand on the table, playing on

it. "And now, and now," she said, looking at the two gentlemen--

"And what now?" asked George.

"And now we will have some tea," said Miss Laura, with her smile.

But before this unromantic conclusion to a rather sentimental scene

could be suffered to take place, a servant brought word that Major

Pendennis had returned to the hotel, and was waiting to see his nephew.

Upon this announcement, Laura, not without some alarm, and an appealing

look to Pen, which said, "Behave yourself well--hold to the right, and

do your duty--be gentle, but firm with your uncle"--Laura, we say, with

these warnings written in her face, took leave of the two gentlemen, and

retreated to her dormitory. Warrington, who was not generally fond

of tea, yet grudged that expected cup very much. Why could not old

Pendennis have come in an hour later? Well, an hour sooner or later,

what matter? The hour strikes at last. The inevitable moment comes to

say Farewell, The hand is shaken, the door closed, and the friend gone;

and, the brief joy over, you are alone. "In which of those many windows

of the hotel does her light beam?" perhaps he asks himself as he passes

down the street. He strides away to the smoking-room of a neighbouring

Club, and, there applies himself to his usual solace of a cigar. Men are

brawling and talking loud about politics, opera-girls, horse-racing, the

atrocious tyranny of the committee:--bearing this sacred secret about

him, he enters into this brawl. Talk away, each louder than the other.

Rattle and crack jokes. Laugh and tell your wild stories. It is strange

to take one's place and part in the midst of the smoke and din, and

think every man here has his secret ego most likely, which is sitting

lonely and apart, away in the private chamber, from the loud game in

which the rest of us is joining!

Arthur, as he traversed the passages of the hotel, felt his anger

rousing up within him. He was indignant to think that yonder old

gentleman whom he was about to meet, should have made him such a

tool and puppet, and so compromised his honour and good name. The

old fellow's hand was very cold and shaky when Arthur took it. He was

coughing; he was grumbling over the fire; Frosch could not bring his

dressing-gown or arrange his papers as that d----d confounded impudent

scoundrel of a Morgan. The old gentleman bemoaned himself, and cursed

Morgan's ingratitude with peevish pathos.

"The confounded impudent scoundrel! He was drunk last night, and

challenged me to fight him, Pen; and, begad, at one time I was so

excited that I thought I should have driven a knife into him; and the

infernal rascal has made ten thousand pound, I believe--and deserves to

be hanged, and will be; but, curse him, I wish he could have lasted

out my time. He knew all my ways, and, dammy, when I rang the bell, the

confounded thief brought the thing I wanted--not like that stupid German

lout. And what sort of time have you had in the country? Been a good

deal with Lady Rockminster? You can't do better. She is one of the

old school--vieille ecole, bonne ecole, hey? Dammy, they don't make

gentlemen and ladies now; and in fifty years you'll hardly know one man

from another. But they'll last my time. I ain't long for this business:

I am getting very old, Pen, my boy; and, gad, I was thinking to-day, as

I was packing up my little library, there's a bible amongst the books

that belonged to my poor mother; I would like you to keep that, Pen. I

was thinking, sir, that you would most likely open the box when it was

your property, and the old fellow was laid under the sod, sir," and the

Major coughed and wagged his old head over the fire.

His age--his kindness, disarmed Pen's anger somewhat, and made Arthur

feel no little compunction for the deed which he was about to do. He

knew that the announcement which he was about to make would destroy the

darling hope of the old gentleman's life, and create in his breast a

woful anger and commotion.

"Hey--hey--I'm off, sir," nodded the Elder; "but I'd like to read

a speech of yours in the Times before I go--'Mr. Pendennis said,

Unaccustomed as I am to public speaking'--hey, sir? hey, Arthur? Begad,

you look dev'lish well and healthy, sir. I always said my brother Jack

would bring the family right. You must go down into the west, and buy

the old estate, sir. Nec tenui penna, hey? We'll rise again, sir--rise

again on the wing--and, begad, I shouldn't be surprised that you will be

a Baronet before you die."

His words smote Pen. "And it is I," he thought, "that am going to

fling down the poor old fellow's air-castle. Well, it must be. Here

goes.--I--I went into your lodgings at Bury Street, though I did not

find you," Pen slowly began--"and I talked with Morgan, uncle."

"Indeed!" The old gentleman's cheek began to flush involuntarily, and he

muttered, "The cat's out of the bag now, begad!"

"He told me a story, sir, which gave me the deepest surprise and pain,"

said Pen.

The Major tried to look unconcerned. "What--that story

about--about--What-d'-you-call-'em, hey?"

"About Miss Amory's father--about Lady Clavering's first husband, and

who he is, and what."

"Hem--a dev'lish awkward affair!" said the old man, rubbing his nose.

"I--I've been aware of that--eh--confounded circumstance for some time."

"I wish I had known it sooner, or not at all," said Arthur, gloomily.

"He is all safe," thought the Senior, greatly relieved. "Gad! I should

have liked to keep it from you altogether--and from those two poor

women, who are as innocent as unborn babes in the transaction."

"You are right. There is no reason why the two women should hear it;

and I shall never tell them--though that villain, Morgan, perhaps may,"

Arthur said, gloomily. "He seems disposed to trade upon his secret, and

has already proposed terms of ransom to me. I wish I had known of the

matter earlier, sir. It is not a very pleasant thought to me that I am

engaged to a convict's daughter."

"The very reason why I kept it from you--my dear boy. But Miss Amory is

not a convict's daughter, don't you see? Miss Amory is the daughter of

Lady Clavering, with fifty or sixty thousand pounds for a fortune; and

her father-in-law, a Baronet and country gentleman, of high reputation,

approves of the match, and gives up his seat in Parliament to his

son-in-law. What can be more simple?"

"Is it true, sir?"

"Begad, yes, it is true, of course it's true. Amory's dead. I tell

you he is dead. The first sign of life he shows, he is dead. He can't

appear. We have him at a deadlock, like the fellow in the play--the

'Critic,' hey?--dev'lish amusing play, that 'Critic.' Monstrous witty

man, Sheridan; and so was his son. By Gad, sir, when I was at the Cape,

I remember----"

The old gentleman's garrulity, and wish to conduct Arthur to the Cape,

perhaps arose from a desire to avoid the subject which was nearest his

nephew's heart; but Arthur broke out, interrupting him--"If you had told

me this tale sooner, I believe you would have spared me and yourself

a great deal of pain and disappointment; and I should not have found

myself tied to an engagement from which I can't, in honour, recede."

"No, begad, we've fixed you--and a man who's fixed to a seat in

Parliament, and a pretty girl, with a couple of thousand a year, is

fixed to no bad thing, let me tell you," said the old man.

"Great Heavens, sir!" said Arthur, "are you blind? Can't you see?"

"See what, young gentleman?" asked the other.

"See, that rather than trade upon this secret of Amory's," Arthur cried

out, "I would go and join my father-in-law at the hulks! See, that

rather than take a seat in Parliament as a bribe from Clavering for

silence, I would take the spoons off the table! See, that you have given

me a felon's daughter for a wife; doomed me to poverty and shame; cursed

my career when it might have been--when it might have been so different

but for you! Don't you see that we have been playing a guilty game, and

have been overreached;--that in offering to marry this poor girl,

for the sake of her money, and the advancement she would bring, I was

degrading myself, and prostituting my honour?"

"What in Heaven's name do you mean, sir?" cried the old man.

"I mean to say that there is a measure of baseness which I can't pass,"

Arthur said. "I have no other words for it, and am sorry if they hurt

you. I have felt, for months past, that my conduct in this affair has

been wicked, sordid, and worldly. I am rightly punished by the event,

and having sold myself for money and a seat in Parliament, by losing

both."

"How do you mean that you lose either?" shrieked the old gentleman. "Who

the devil's to take your fortune or your seat away from you? By G--,

Clavering shall give 'em to you. You shall have every shilling of eighty

thousand pounds."

"I'll keep my promise to Miss Amory, sir," said Arthur.

"And, begad, her parents shall keep theirs to you."

"Not so, please God," Arthur answered. "I have sinned, but, Heaven help

me, I will sin no more. I will let Clavering off from that bargain which

was made without my knowledge. I will take no money with Blanche but

that which was originally settled upon her; and I will try to make her

happy. You have done it. You have brought this on me, sir. But you knew

no better: and I forgive----"

"Arthur--in God's name--in your father's, who, by Heavens, was the

proudest man alive, and had the honour of the family always at heart--in

mine--for the sake of a poor broken-down old fellow, who has always been

dev'lish fond of you--don't fling this chance away--I pray you, I beg

you, I implore you, my dear, dear boy, don't fling this chance away.

It's the making of you. You're sure to get on. You'll be a Baronet; it's

three thousand a year: dammy, on my knees, there, I beg of you, don't do

this."

And the old man actually sank down on his knees, and, seizing one of

Arthur's hands, looked up piteously at him. It was cruel to remark the

shaking hands, the wrinkled and quivering face, the old eyes weeping and

winking, the broken voice. "Ah, sir," said Arthur, with a groan, "you

have brought pain enough on me, spare me this. You have wished me to

marry Blanche. I marry her. For God's sake, sir, rise! I can't bear it."

"You--you mean to say that you will take her as a beggar, and be one

yourself?" said the old gentleman, rising up and coughing violently.

"I look at her as a person to whom a great calamity has befallen, and

to whom I am promised. She cannot help the misfortune; and as she had my

word when she was prosperous, I shall not withdraw it now she is poor. I

will not take Clavering's seat, unless afterwards it should be given

of his free will. I will not have a shilling more than her original

fortune."

"Have the kindness to ring the bell," said the old gentleman. "I

have done my best, and said my say; and I'm a dev'lish old fellow.

And--and--it don't matter. And--and Shakspeare was right--and Cardinal

Wolsey--begad--'and had I but served my God as I've served you'--yes, on

my knees, by Jove, to my own nephew--I mightn't have been--Good night,

sir, you needn't trouble yourself to call again."

Arthur took his hand, which the old man left to him; it was quite

passive and clammy. He looked very much oldened; and it seemed as if the

contest and defeat had quite broken him.

On the next day he kept his bed, and refused to see his nephew.

CHAPTER LXXII. In which the Decks begin to clear

When, arrayed in his dressing-gown, Pen walked up, according to custom,

to Warrington's chambers next morning, to inform his friend of the issue

of the last night's interview with his uncle, and to ask, as usual, for

George's advice and opinion, Mrs. Flanagan, the laundress, was the only

person whom Arthur found in the dear old chambers. George had taken a

carpet-bag, and was gone. His address was to his brother's house, in

Suffolk. Packages addressed to the newspaper and review for which he

wrote lay on the table, awaiting delivery.

"I found him at the table, when I came, the dear gentleman!" Mrs.

Flanagan said, "writing at his papers, and one of the candles was burned

out; and hard as his bed is, he wasn't in it all night, sir."

Indeed, having sat at the Club until the brawl there became intolerable

to him, George had walked home, and had passed the night finishing some

work on which he was employed, and to the completion of which he bent

himself with all his might. The labour was done, and the night was worn

away somehow, and the tardy November dawn came and looked in on

the young man as he sate over his desk. In the next day's paper, or

quarter's review, many of us very likely admired the work of his genius,

the variety of his illustration, the fierce vigour of his satire, the

depth of his reason. There was no hint in his writing of the other

thoughts which occupied him, and always accompanied him in his work--a

tone more melancholy than was customary, a satire more bitter and

impatient than that which he afterwards showed, may have marked the

writings of this period of his life to the very few persons who knew his

style or his name. We have said before, could we know the man's feelings

as well as the author's thoughts--how interesting most books would

be!--more interesting than merry. I suppose harlequin's face behind his

mask is always grave, if not melancholy--certainly each man who lives

by the pen, and happens to read this, must remember, if he will, his own

experiences, and recall many solemn hours of solitude and labour. What a

constant care sate at the side of the desk and accompanied him! Fever

or sickness were lying possibly in the next room: a sick child might be

there, with a wife watching over it terrified and in prayer: or grief

might be bearing him down, and the cruel mist before the eyes rendering

the paper scarce visible as he wrote on it, and the inexorable necessity

drove on the pen. What man among us has not had nights and hours like

these? But to the manly heart--severe as these pangs are, they are

endurable: long as the night seems, the dawn comes at last, and the

wounds heal, and the fever abates, and rest comes, and you can afford to

look back on the past misery with feelings that are anything but bitter.

Two or three books for reference, fragments of torn-up manuscript,

drawers open, pens and inkstand, lines half visible on the

blotting-paper, a bit of sealing-wax twisted and bitten and broken into

sundry pieces--such relics as these were about the table, and Pen flung

himself down in George's empty chair--noting things according to his

wont, or in spite of himself. There was a gap in the bookcase (next to

the old College Plato, with the Boniface Arms), where Helen's bible used

to be. He has taken that with him, thought Pen. He knew why his friend

was gone. Dear, dear old George!

Pen rubbed his hand over his eyes. Oh, how much wiser, how much better,

how much nobler he is than I! he thought. Where was such a friend, or

such a brave heart? Where shall I ever hear such a frank voice, and kind

laughter? Where shall I ever see such a true gentleman? No wonder she

loved him. God bless him! What was I compared to him? What could she do

else but love him? To the end of our days we will be her brothers, as

fate wills that we can be no more. We'll be her knights, and wait on

her: and when we're old, we'll say how we loved her. Dear, dear old

George!

When Pen descended to his own chambers, his eye fell on the letter-box

of his outer door, which he had previously overlooked, and there was a

little note to A. P., Esq., in George's well-known handwriting, George

had put into Pen's box probably as he was going away.

"Dear Pen,--I shall be half-way home when you breakfast, and intend

to stay over Christmas, in Norfolk, or elsewhere.

"I have my own opinion of the issue of matters about which we talked

in J------ St. yesterday; and think my presence de trop.

"Vale. G. W."

"Give my very best regards and adieux to your cousin."

And so George was gone, and Mrs. Flanagan, the laundress, ruled over his

empty chambers.

Pen of course had to go and see his uncle on the day after their

colloquy, and not being admitted, he naturally went to Lady

Rockminster's apartments, where the old lady instantly asked for

Bluebeard, and insisted that he should come to dinner.

"Bluebeard is gone," Pen said, and he took out poor George's scrap of

paper, and handed it to Laura, who looked at it--did not look at Pen in

return, but passed the paper back to him, and walked away. Pen rushed

into an eloquent eulogium upon his dear old George to Lady Rockminster,

who was astonished at his enthusiasm. She had never heard him so warm

in praise of anybody; and told him with her usual frankness, that she

didn't think it had been in his nature to care so much about any other

person.

As Mr. Pendennis was passing in Waterloo Place, in one of his many walks

to the hotel where Laura lived, and whither duty to his uncle carried

Arthur every day, Arthur saw issuing from Messrs. Gimcrack's celebrated

shop an old friend, who was followed to his brougham by an obsequious

shopman bearing parcels. The gentleman was in the deepest mourning:

the brougham, the driver, and the horse were in mourning. Grief in easy

circumstances and supported by the comfortablest springs and cushions,

was typified in the equipage and the little gentleman, its proprietor.

"What, Foker! Hail, Foker!" cried out Pen--the reader, no doubt, has

likewise recognised Arthur's old schoolfellow--and he held out his hand

to the heir of the late lamented John Henry Foker, Esq., the master of

Logwood and other houses, the principal partner in the great brewery of

Foker and Co.: the greater portion of Foker's Entire.

A little hand, covered with a glove of the deepest ebony, and set off

by three inches of a snowy wristband, was put forth to meet Arthur's

salutation. The other little hand held a little morocco case,

containing, no doubt, something precious, of which Mr. Foker had just

become proprietor in Messrs. Gimcrack's shop. Pen's keen eyes and

satiric turn showed him at once upon what errand Mr. Foker had been

employed; and he thought of the heir in Horace pouring forth the

gathered wine of his father's vats; and that human nature is pretty much

the same in Regent Street as in the Via Sacra.

"Le Roi est mort. Vive le Roi!" said Arthur.

"Ah!" said the other. "Yes. Thank you--very much obliged. How do you do,

Pen?--very busy--good-bye!" and he jumped into the black brougham, and

sate like a little black Care behind the black coachman. He had blushed

on seeing Pen, and shown other signs of guilt and perturbation, which

Pen attributed to the novelty of his situation; and on which he began to

speculate in his usual sardonic manner.

"Yes: so wags the world," thought Pen. "The stone closes over Harry the

Fourth, and Harry the Fifth reigns in his stead. The old ministers at

the brewery come and kneel before him with their books; the draymen,

his subjects, fling up their red caps, and shout for him. What a grave

deference and sympathy the bankers and the lawyers show! There was too

great a stake at issue between those two that they should ever love each

other very cordially. As long as one man keeps another out of twenty

thousand a year, the younger must be always hankering after the crown,

and the wish must be the father to the thought of possession. Thank

Heaven, there was no thought of money between me and our dear mother,

Laura."

"There never could have been. You would have spurned it!" cried Laura.

"Why make yourself more selfish than you are, Pen; and allow your mind

to own for an instant that it would have entertained such--such dreadful

meanness? You make me blush for you, Arthur: you make me----" her eyes

finished this sentence, and she passed her handkerchief across them.

"There are some truths which women will never acknowledge," Pen said,

"and from which your modesty always turns away. I do not say that I ever

knew the feeling, only that I am glad I had not the temptation. Is there

any harm in that confession of weakness?"

"We are all taught to ask to be delivered from evil, Arthur," said

Laura, in a low voice. "I am glad if you were spared from that great

crime; and only sorry to think that you could by any possibility have

been led into it. But you never could; and you don't think you could.

Your acts are generous and kind: you disdain mean actions. You take

Blanche without money, and without a bribe. Yes, thanks be to Heaven,

dear brother. You could not have sold yourself away; I knew you could

not when it came to the day, and you did not. Praise be--be where praise

is due. Why does this horrid scepticism pursue you, my Arthur? Why doubt

and sneer at your own heart--at every one's? Oh, if you knew the pain

you give me--how I lie awake and think of those hard sentences, dear

brother, and wish them unspoken, unthought!"

"Do I cause you many thoughts and many tears, Laura?" asked Arthur.

The fulness of innocent love beamed from her in reply. A smile heavenly

pure, a glance of unutterable tenderness, sympathy, pity, shone in

her face--all which indications of love and purity Arthur beheld and

worshipped in her, as you would watch them in a child, as one fancies

one might regard them in an angel.

"I--I don't know what I have done," he said, simply, "to have merited

such regard from two such women. It is like undeserved praise, Laura--or

too much good fortune, which frightens one--or a great post, when a man

feels that he is not fit for it. Ah, sister, how weak and wicked we are;

how spotless, and full of love and truth, Heaven made you! I think for

some of you there has been no fall," he said, looking at the charming

girl with an almost paternal glance of admiration. "You can't help

having sweet thoughts, and doing good actions. Dear creature! they are

the flowers which you bear."

"And what else, sir?" asked Laura. "I see a sneer coming over your face.

What is it? Why does it come to drive all the good thoughts away?"

"A sneer, is there? I was thinking, my dear, that nature in making you

so good and loving did very well: but----"

"But what? What is that wicked but? and why are you always calling it

up?"

"But will come in spite of us. But is reflection. But is the sceptic's

familiar, with whom he has made a compact; and if he forgets it, and

indulges in happy day-dreams, or building of air-castles, or listens to

sweet music let us say, or to the bells ringing to church, But taps

at the door, and says, Master, I am here. You are my master; but I am

yours. Go where you will you can't travel without me. I will whisper

to you when you are on your knees at church. I will be at your marriage

pillow. I will sit down at your table with your children. I will be

behind your deathbed curtain. That is what But is," Pen said.

"Pen, you frighten me," cried Laura.

"Do you know what But came and said to me just now, when I was looking

at you? But said, If that girl had reason as well as love, she would

love you no more. If she knew you as you are--the sullied, selfish being

which you know--she must part from you, and could give you no love and

no sympathy. Didn't I say," he added fondly, "that some of you seem

exempt from the fall? Love you know; but the knowledge of evil is kept

from you."

"What is this you young folks are talking about?" asked Lady

Rockminster, who at this moment made her appearance in the room, having

performed, in the mystic retirement of her own apartments, and under the

hands of her attendant, those elaborate toilet-rites without which the

worthy old lady never presented herself to public view. "Mr. Pendennis,

you are always coming here."

"It is very pleasant to be here," Arthur said; "and we were talking,

when you came in, about my friend Foker, whom I met just now; and who,

as your ladyship knows, has succeeded to his father's kingdom."

"He has a very fine property, he has fifteen thousand a year. He is my

cousin. He is a very worthy young man. He must come and see me," said

Lady Rockminster, with a look at Laura.

"He has been engaged for many years past to his cousin, Lady----"

"Lady Ann is a foolish little chit," Lady Rockminster said, with much

dignity; "and I have no patience with her. She has outraged every

feeling of society. She has broken her father's heart, and thrown away

fifteen thousand a year."

"Thrown away? What has happened?" asked Pen.

"It will be the talk of the town in a day or two; and there is no need

why I should keep the secret any longer," said Lady Rockminster, who

had written and received a dozen letters on the subject. "I had a letter

yesterday from my daughter, who was staying at Drummington until all

the world was obliged to go away on account of the frightful catastrophe

which happened there. When Mr. Foker came home from Nice, and after the

funeral, Lady Ann went down on her knees to her father, said that

she never could marry her cousin, that she had contracted another

attachment, and that she must die rather than fulfil her contract. Poor

Lord Rosherville, who is dreadfully embarrassed, showed his daughter

what the state of his affairs was, and that it was necessary that the

arrangements should take place; and in fine, we all supposed that she

had listened to reason, and intended to comply with the desires of

her family. But what has happened?--last Thursday she went out

after breakfast with her maid, and was married in the very church

in Drummington Park to Mr. Hobson, her father's own chaplain and her

brother's tutor; a red-haired widower with two children. Poor dear

Rosherville is in a dreadful way: he wishes Henry Foker should marry

Alice or Barbara; but Alice is marked with the small-pox, and Barbara is

ten years older than he is. And, of course, now the young man is his own

master, he will think of choosing for himself. The blow on Lady Agnes is

very cruel. She is inconsolable. She has the house in Grosvenor Street

for her life, and her settlement, which was very handsome. Have you not

met her? Yes, she dined one day at Lady Clavering's--the first day I saw

you, and a very disagreeable young man I thought you were. But I have

formed you. We have formed him, haven't we, Laura? Where is Bluebeard?

let him come. That horrid Grindley, the dentist, will keep me in town

another week."

To the latter part of her ladyship's speech Arthur gave no ear. He was

thinking for whom could Foker be purchasing those trinkets which he was

carrying away from the jeweller's? Why did Harry seem anxious to avoid

him? Could he be still faithful to the attachment which had agitated him

so much, and sent him abroad eighteen months back? Psha! The bracelets

and presents were for some of Harry's old friends of the Opera or the

French theatre. Rumours from Naples and Paris, rumours such as are

borne to Club smoking-rooms, had announced that the young man had found

distractions; or, precluded from his virtuous attachment, the

poor fellow had flung himself back upon his old companions and

amusements--not the only man or woman whom society forces into evil, or

debars from good; not the only victim of the world's selfish and wicked

laws.

As a good thing when it is to be done cannot be done too quickly, Laura

was anxious that Pen's marriage intentions should be put into execution

as speedily as possible, and pressed on his arrangements with rather a

feverish anxiety. Why could she not wait? Pen could afford to do so with

perfect equanimity, but Laura would hear of no delay. She wrote to Pen:

she implored Pen: she used every means to urge expedition. It seemed as

if she could have no rest until Arthur's happiness was complete.

She offered herself to dearest Blanche to come and stay at Tunbridge

with her, when Lady Rockminster should go on her intended visit to the

reigning house of Rockminster; and although the old dowager scolded, and

ordered, and commanded, Laura was deaf and disobedient: she must go to

Tunbridge, she would go to Tunbridge: she who ordinarily had no will of

her own, and complied smilingly with anybody's whim and caprices, showed

the most selfish and obstinate determination in this instance. The

dowager lady must nurse herself in her rheumatism, she must read herself

to sleep, if she would not hear her maid, whose voice croaked, and who

made sad work of the sentimental passages in the novels--Laura must

go,--and be with her new sister. In another week, she proposed, with

many loves and regards to dear Lady Clavering, to pass some time with

dearest Blanche.

Dearest Blanche wrote instantly in reply to dearest Laura's No. 1,

to say with what extreme delight she should welcome her sister: how

charming it would be to practise their old duets together, to wander

o'er the grassy sward, and amidst the yellowing woods of Penshurst and

Southborough! Blanche counted the hours till she should embrace her

dearest friend.

Laura, No. 2, expressed her delight at dearest Blanche's affectionate

reply. She hoped that their friendship would never diminish; that the

confidence between them would grow in after years; that they should have

no secrets from each other; that the aim of the life of each would be to

make one person happy.

Blanche, No. 2, followed in two days. "How provoking! Their house was

very small, the two spare bedrooms were occupied by that horrid Mrs.

Planter and her daughter, who had thought proper to fall ill (she always

fell ill in country-houses), and she could not or would not be moved for

some days."

Laura, No. 3. "It was indeed very provoking. L. had hoped to hear one

of dearest B.'s dear songs on Friday; but she was the more consoled to

wait, because Lady R. was not very well, and liked to be nursed by her.

Poor Major Pendennis was very unwell, too, in the same hotel--too unwell

even to see Arthur, who was constant in his calls on his uncle. Arthur's

heart was full of tenderness and affection. She had known Arthur all her

life. She would answer"--yes, even in italics she would answer--"for his

kindness, his goodness, and his gentleness."

Blanche, No. 3. "What is this most surprising, most extraordinary letter

from A. P.? What does dearest Laura know about it? What has happened?

What, what mystery is enveloped under his frightful reserve?"

Blanche, No. 3, requires an explanation; and it cannot be better given

than in the surprising and mysterious letter of Arthur Pendennis.

CHAPTER LXXIII. Mr. and Mrs. Sam Huxter

"Dear Blanche," Arthur wrote, "you are always reading and dreaming

pretty dramas, and exciting romances in real life: are you now prepared

to enact a part of one? And not the pleasantest part, dear Blanche, that

in which the heroine takes possession of her father's palace and wealth,

and introducing her husband to the loyal retainers and faithful vassals,

greets her happy bridegroom with 'All of this is mine and thine,'--but

the other character, that of the luckless lady, who suddenly discovers

that she is not the Prince's wife, but Claude Melnotte's the beggar's:

that of Alnaschar's wife, who comes in just as her husband has

kicked over the tray of porcelain which was to be the making of his

fortune--But stay; Alnaschar, who kicked down the china, was not a

married man; he had cast his eye on the Vizier's daughter, and his hopes

of her went to the ground with the shattered bowls and tea-cups.

"Will you be the Vizier's daughter, and refuse and laugh to scorn

Alnaschar, or will you be the Lady of Lyons, and love the penniless

Claude Melnotte? I will act that part if you like. I will love you my

best in return. I will do my all to make your humble life happy: for

humble it will be: at least the odds are against any other conclusion;

we shall live and die in a poor prosy humdrum way. There will be no

stars and epaulettes for the hero of our story. I shall write one or two

more stories, which will presently be forgotten. I shall be called to

the Bar, and try to get on in my profession: perhaps some day, if I am

very lucky, and work very hard (which is absurd), I may get a colonial

appointment, and you may be an Indian Judge's lady. Meanwhile. I shall

buy back the Pall Mall Gazette; the publishers are tired of it since the

death of poor Shandon, and will sell it for a small sum. Warrington

will be my right hand, and write it up to a respectable sale. I will

introduce you to Mr. Finucane the sub-editor, and I know who in the

end will be Mrs. Finucane,--a very nice gentle creature, who has lived

sweetly through a sad life and we will jog on, I say, and look out

for better times, and earn our living decently. You shall have the

opera-boxes, and superintend the fashionable intelligence, and

break your little heart in the poet's corner. Shall we live over the

offices?--there are four very good rooms, a kitchen, and a garret for

Laura, in Catherine Street in the Strand; or would you like a house

in the Waterloo Road?--it would be very pleasant, only there is that

halfpenny toll at the Bridge. The boys may go to King's College, mayn't

they? Does all this read to you like a joke?

"Ah, dear Blanche, it is no joke, and I am sober and telling the truth.

Our fine day-dreams are gone. Our carriage has whirled out of sight like

Cinderella's: our house in Belgravia has been whisked away into the air

by a malevolent Genius, and I am no more a member of Parliament than I

am a Bishop on his bench in the House of Lords, or a Duke with a garter

at his knee. You know pretty well what my property is, and your own

little fortune: we may have enough with those two to live in decent

comfort; to take a cab sometimes when we go out to see our friends, and

not to deny ourselves an omnibus when we are tired. But that is all: is

that enough for you, my little dainty lady? I doubt sometimes whether

you can bear the life which I offer you--at least, it is fair that you

should know what it will be. If you say, 'Yes, Arthur, I will follow

your fate whatever it may be, and be a loyal and loving wife to aid and

cheer you'--come to me, dear Blanche, and may God help me so that I may

do my duty to you. If not, and you look to a higher station, I must not

bar Blanche's fortune--I will stand in the crowd, and see your ladyship

go to Court when you are presented, and you shall give me a smile from

your chariot window. I saw Lady Mirabel going to the drawing-room last

season: the happy husband at her side glittered with stars and cordons.

All the flowers in the garden bloomed in the coachman's bosom. Will

you have these and the chariot, or walk on foot and mend your husband's

stockings?

"I cannot tell you now--afterwards I might, should the day come when we

may have no secrets from one another--what has happened within the last

few hours which has changed all my prospects in life: but so it is, that

I have learned something which forces me to give up the plans which

I had formed, and many vain and ambitious hopes in which I had been

indulging. I have written and despatched a letter to Sir Francis

Clavering, saying that I cannot accept his seat in Parliament until

after my marriage; in like manner I cannot and will not accept any

larger fortune with you than that which has always belonged to you since

your grandfather's death, and the birth of your half-brother. Your

good mother is not in the least aware--I hope she never may be--of the

reasons which force me to this very strange decision. They arise from a

painful circumstance, which is attributable to none of our faults; but,

having once befallen, they are as fatal and irreparable as that shock

which overset honest Alnaschar's porcelain, and shattered all his hopes

beyond the power of mending. I write gaily enough, for there is no use

in bewailing such a hopeless mischance. We have not drawn the great

prize in the lottery, dear Blanche: but I shall be contented enough

without it, if you can be so; and I repeat, with all my heart, that I

will do my best to make you happy.

"And now, what news shall I give you? My uncle is very unwell, and takes

my refusal of the seat in Parliament in sad dudgeon: the scheme was

his, poor old gentleman, and he naturally bemoans its failure. But

Warrington, Laura, and I had a council of war: they know this awful

secret, and back me in my decision. You must love George as you love

what is generous and upright and noble; and as for Laura--she must be

our Sister, Blanche, our Saint, our good Angel. With two such friends

at home, what need we care for the world without; or who is member

for Clavering, or who is asked or not asked to the great balls of the

season?"

To this frank communication came back the letter from Blanche to Laura,

and one to Pen himself, which perhaps his own letter justified. "You are

spoiled by the world," Blanche wrote; "you do not love your poor Blanche

as she would be loved, or you would not offer thus lightly to take her

or to leave her, no, Arthur, you love me not--a man of the world, you

have given me your plighted troth, and are ready to redeem it; but that

entire affection, that love whole and abiding, where--where is that

vision of my youth? I am but a pastime of your life, and I would be its

all;--but a fleeting thought, and I would be your whole soul. I would

have our two hearts one; but ah, my Arthur, how lonely yours is! how

little you give me of it! You speak of our parting with a smile on

your lip; of our meeting, and you care not to hasten it! Is life but a

disillusion, then, and are the flowers of our garden faded away? I have

wept--I have prayed--I have passed sleepless hours--I have shed bitter,

bitter tears over your letter! To you I bring the gushing poesy of my

being--the yearnings of the soul that longs to be loved--that pines

for love, love, love, beyond all!--that flings itself at your feet,

and cries, Love me, Arthur! Your heart beats no quicker at the

kneeling appeal of my love!--your proud eye is dimmed by no tear of

sympathy!--you accept my soul's treasure as though 'twere dross! not the

pearls from the unfathomable deeps of affection! not the diamonds from

the caverns of the heart. You treat me like a slave, and bid me bow to

my master! Is this the guerdon of a free maiden--is this the price of

a life's passion? Ah me! when was it otherwise? when did love meet with

aught but disappointment? Could I hope (fond fool!) to be the exception

to the lot of my race; and lay my fevered brow on a heart that

comprehended my own? Foolish girl that I was! One by one, all the

flowers of my young life have faded away; and this, the last, the

sweetest, the dearest, the fondly, the madly loved, the wildly

cherished--where is it? But no more of this. Heed not my bleeding

heart.--Bless you, bless you always, Arthur!

"I will write more when I am more collected. My racking brain renders

thought almost impossible. I long to see Laura! She will come to us

directly we return from the country, will she not? And you, cold one!

"B."

The words of this letter were perfectly clear, and written in Blanche's

neatest hand upon her scented paper; and yet the meaning of the

composition not a little puzzled Pen. Did Blanche mean to accept or to

refuse his polite offer? Her phrases either meant that Pen did not love

her, and she declined him, or that she took him, and sacrificed herself

to him, cold as he was. He laughed sardonically over the letter, and

over the transaction which occasioned it. He laughed to think how

Fortune had jilted him, and how he deserved his slippery fortune. He

turned over and over the musky gilt-edged riddle. It amused his humour:

he enjoyed it as if it had been a funny story.

He was thus seated, twiddling the queer manuscript in his hand,

joking grimly to himself, when his servant came in with a card from a

gentleman, who wished to speak to him very particularly. And if Pen

had gone out into the passage, he would have seen, sucking his

stick, rolling his eyes, and showing great marks of anxiety, his old

acquaintance, Mr. Samuel Huxter.

"Mr. Huxter on particular business! Pray, beg Mr. Huxter to come in,"

said Pen, amused rather; and not the less so when poor Sam appeared

before him.

"Pray take a chair, Mr. Huxter," said Pen, in his most superb manner.

"In what way can I be of service to you?"

"I had rather not speak before the flunk--before the man, Mr.

Pendennis:" on which Mr. Arthur's attendant quitted the room.

"I'm in a fix," said Mr. Huxter, gloomily.

"Indeed."

"She sent me to you," continued the young surgeon.

"What, Fanny? Is she well? I was coming to see her, but I have had a

great deal of business since my return to London."

"I heard of you through my governor and Jack Hobnell," broke in Huxter.

"I wish you joy, Mr. Pendennis, both of the borough and the lady, sir.

Fanny wishes you joy, too," he added, with something of a blush.

"There's many a slip between the cup and the lip! Who knows what may

happen, Mr. Huxter, or who will sit in Parliament for Clavering next

session?"

"You can do anything with my governor," continued Mr. Huxter. "You got

him Clavering Park. The old boy was very much pleased, sir, at your

calling him in. Hobnell wrote me so. Do you think you could speak to the

governor for me, Mr. Pendennis?"

"And tell him what?"

"I've gone and done it, sir," said Huxter, with a particular look.

"You--you don't mean to say you have--you have done any wrong to that

dear little creature, sir?" said Pen, starting up in a great fury.

"I hope not," said Huxter, with a hangdog look: "but I've married her.

And I know there will be an awful shindy at home. It was agreed that I

should be taken into partnership when I had passed the College, and it

was to have been Huxter and Son. But I would have it, confound it. It's

all over now, and the old boy's wrote me that he's coming up to town for

drugs: he will be here to-morrow, and then it must all come out."

"And when did this event happen?" asked Pen, not over well pleased, most

likely, that a person who had once attracted some portion of his royal

good graces should have transferred her allegiance, and consoled herself

for his loss.

"Last Thursday was five weeks--it was two days after Miss Amory came to

Shepherd's Inn," Huxter answered.

Pen remembered that Blanche had written and mentioned her visit. "I was

called in," Huxter said. "I was in the Inn looking after old Cos's leg;

and about something else too, very likely: and I met Strong, who told

me there was a woman taken ill in Chambers, and went up to give her my

professional services. It was the old lady who attends Miss Amory--her

housekeeper, or some such thing. She was taken with strong hysterics:

I found her kicking and screaming like a good one--in Strong's chamber,

along with him and Colonel Altamont, and Miss Amory crying and as pale

as a sheet; and Altamont fuming about--a regular kick-up. They were two

hours in the Chambers; and the old woman went whooping off in a cab. She

was much worse than the young one. I called in Grosvenor Place next day

to see if I could be of any service, but they were gone without so much

as thanking me: and the day after I had business of my own to attend

to--a bad business too," said Mr. Huxter, gloomily. "But it's done, and

can't be undone; and we must make the best of it"

She has known the story for a month, thought Pen, with a sharp pang of

grief, and a gloomy sympathy--this accounts for her letter of to-day.

She will not implicate her father, or divulge his secret; she wishes to

let me off from the marriage--and finds a pretext--the generous girl!

"Do you know who Altamont is, sir?" asked Huxter, after the pause during

which Pen had been thinking of his own affairs. "Fanny and I have talked

him over, and we can't help fancying that it's Mrs. Lightfoot's first

husband come to life again, and she who has just married a second.

Perhaps Lightfoot won't be very sorry for it," sighed Huxter, looking

savagely at Arthur, for the demon of jealousy was still in possession

of his soul; and now, and more than ever since his marriage, the poor

fellow fancied that Fanny's heart belonged to his rival.

"Let us talk about your affairs," said Pen. "Show me how I can be of any

service to you, Huxter. Let me congratulate you on your marriage. I am

thankful that Fanny, who is so good, so fascinating, so kind a creature,

has found an honest man, and a gentleman who will make her happy. Show

me what I can do to help you."

"She thinks you can, sir," said Huxter, accepting Pen's proffered hand,

"and I'm very much obliged to you, I'm sure; and that you might talk

over my father, and break the business to him, and my mother, who always

has her back up about being a clergyman's daughter. Fanny ain't of a

good family, I know, and not up to us in breeding and that--but she's a

Huxter now."

"The wife takes the husband's rank, of course," said Pen.

"And with a little practice in society," continued Huxter, imbibing his

stick, "she'll be as good as any girl in Clavering. You should hear

her sing and play on the piano. Did you ever? Old Bows taught her. And

she'll do on the stage, if the governor was to throw me over; but

I'd rather not have her there. She can't help being a coquette, Mr.

Pendennis, she can't help it. Dammy, sir! I'll be bound to say, that two

or three of the Bartholomew chaps, that I've brought into my place, are

sitting with her now: even Jack Linton, that I took down as my best man,

is as bad as the rest, and she will go on singing and making eyes at

him. It's what Bows says, if there were twenty men in a room, and one

not taking notice of her, she wouldn't be satisfied until the twentieth

was at her elbow."

"You should have her mother with her," said Pen, laughing.

"She must keep the lodge. She can't see so much of her family as she

used. I can't, you know, sir, go on with that lot. Consider my rank in

life," said Huxter, putting a very dirty hand up to his chin.

"Au fait," said Mr. Pen, who was infinitely amused, and concerning whom

mutato nomine (and of course concerning nobody else in the world) the

fable might have been narrated.

As the two gentlemen were in the midst of this colloquy, another knock

came to Pen's door, and his servant presently announced Mr. Bows. The

old man followed slowly, his pale face blushing, and his hand trembling

somewhat as he took Pen's. He coughed, and wiped his face in his checked

cotton pocket-handkerchief, and sate down with his hands on his knees,

the sunshining on his bald head. Pen looked at the homely figure with no

small sympathy and kindness. This man, too, has had his griefs and his

wounds, Arthur thought. This man, too, has brought his genius and his

heart, and laid them at a woman's feet; where she spurned them. The

chance of life has gone against him, and the prize is with that creature

yonder. Fanny's bridegroom, thus mutely apostrophised, had winked

meanwhile with one eye at old Bows, and was driving holes in the floor

with the cane which he loved.

"So we have lost, Mr. Bows, and here is the lucky winner," Pen said,

looking hard at the old man.

"Here is the lucky winner, sir, as you say."

"I suppose you have come from my place?" asked Huxter, who, having

winked at Bows with one eye, now favoured Pen with a wink of

the other--a wink which seemed to say, "Infatuated old boy--you

understand--over head and ears in love with her poor old fool."

"Yes, I have been there ever since you went away. It was Mrs. Sam

who sent me after you: who said that she thought you might be doing

something stupid--something like yourself, Huxter."

"There's as big fools as I am," growled the young surgeon.

"A few, p'raps," said the old man; "not many, let us trust. Yes, she

sent me after you for fear you should offend Mr. Pendennis; and I

daresay because she thought you wouldn't give her message to him, and

beg him to go and see her; and she knew I would take her errand. Did he

tell you that, sir?"

Huxter blushed scarlet, and covered his confusion with an imprecation.

Pen laughed; the scene suited his bitter humour more and more.

"I have no doubt Mr. Huxter was going to tell me," Arthur said, "and

very much flattered I am sure I shall be to pay my respects to his

wife."

"It's in Charterhouse Lane, over the baker's, on the right hand side as

you go from St. John's Street," continued Bows, without any pity. "You

know Smithfield, Mr. Pendennis? St. John's Street leads into Smithfield.

Doctor Johnson has been down the street many a time with ragged shoes,

and a bundle of penny-a-lining for the Gent's Magazine. You literary

gents are better off now--eh? You ride in your cabs, and wear yellow kid

gloves now."

"I have known so many brave and good men fail, and so many quacks and

impostors succeed, that you mistake me if you think I am puffed up by my

own personal good luck, old friend," Arthur said, sadly. "Do you think

the prizes of life are carried by the most deserving? and set up that

mean test of prosperity for merit? You must feel that you are as good

as I. I have never questioned it. It is you that are peevish against the

freaks of fortune, and grudge the good luck that befalls others. It's

not the first time you have unjustly accused me, Bows."

"Perhaps you are not far wrong, sir," said the old fellow, wiping his

bald forehead. "I am thinking about myself and grumbling; most men do

when they get on that subject. Here's the fellow that's got the prize in

the lottery; here's the fortunate youth."

"I don't know what you are driving at," Huxter said, who had been much

puzzled as the above remarks passed between his two companions.

"Perhaps not," said Bows, drily. "Mrs. H. sent me here to look after

you, and to see that you brought that little message to Mr. Pendennis,

which you didn't, you see, and so she was right. Women always are; they

have always a reason for everything. Why, sir," he said, turning round

to Pen with a sneer, "she had a reason even for giving me that message.

I was sitting with her after you left us, very quiet and comfortable; I

was talking away, and she was mending your shirts, when your two young

friends, Jack Linton and Bob Blades, looked in from Bartholomew's; and

then it was she found out that she had this message to send. You needn't

hurry yourself, she don't want you back again; they'll stay these two

hours, I daresay."

Huxter arose with great perturbation at this news, and plunged his stick

into the pocket of his paletot, and seized his hat.

"You'll come and see us, sir, won't you?" he said to Pen. "You'll talk

over the governor, won't you, sir, if I can get out of this place and

down to Clavering?"

"You will promise to attend me gratis if ever I fall ill at Fairoaks,

will you, Huxter?" Pen said, good-naturedly. "I will do anything I

can for you. I will come and see Mrs. Huxter immediately, and we will

conspire together about what is to be done."

"I thought that would send him out, sir," Bows said, dropping into his

chair again as soon as the young surgeon had quitted the room. "And it's

all true, sir--every word of it. She wants you back again, and sends her

husband after you. She cajoles everybody, the little devil. She tries it

on you, on me, on poor Costigan, on the young chaps from Bartholomew's.

She's got a little court of 'em already. And if there's nobody there,

she practises on the old German baker in the shop, or coaxes the black

sweeper at the crossing."

"Is she fond of that fellow?" asked Pen.

"There is no accounting for likes and dislikes," Bows answered.

"Yes, she is fond of him; and having taken the thing into her head, she

would not rest until she married him. They had their banns published at

St. Clement's, and nobody heard it or knew any just cause or impediment.

And one day she slips out of the porter's lodge and has the business

done, and goes off to Gravesend with Lothario; and leaves a note for me

to go and explain all things to her Ma. Bless you! the old woman knew it

as well as I did, though she pretended ignorance. And so she goes, and

I'm alone again. I miss her, sir, tripping along that court, and coming

for her singing lesson; and I've no heart to look into the porter's

lodge now, which looks very empty without her, the little flirting

thing. And I go and sit and dangle about her lodgings, like an old fool.

She makes 'em very trim and nice, though; gets up all Huxter's shirts

and clothes: cooks his little dinner, and sings at her business like a

little lark. What's the use of being angry? I lent 'em three pound to go

on with: for they haven't got a shilling till the reconciliation, and Pa

comes down."

When Bows had taken his leave, Pen carried his letter from Blanche, and

the news which he had just received, to his usual adviser, Laura. It was

wonderful upon how many points Mr. Arthur, who generally followed his

own opinion, now wanted another person's counsel. He could hardly so

much as choose a waistcoat without referring to Miss Bell: if he wanted

to buy a horse he must have Miss Bell's opinion; all which marks of

deference tended greatly to the amusement of the shrewd old lady with

whom Miss Bell lived, and whose plans regarding her protegee we have

indicated.

Arthur produced Blanche's letter then to Laura, and asked her to

interpret it. Laura was very much agitated and puzzled by the contents

of the note.

"It seems to me," she said, "as if Blanche is acting very artfully."

"And wishes so to place matters that she may take me or leave me? Is it

not so?"

"It is, I am afraid, a kind of duplicity which does not augur well

for your future happiness; and is a bad reply to your own candour and

honesty, Arthur. Do you know, I think, I think--I scarcely like to say

what I think," said Laura with a deep blush; but of course the blushing

young lady yielded to her cousin's persuasion, and expressed what her

thoughts were. "It looks to me, Arthur, as if there might be--there

might be somebody else," said, Laura, with a repetition of the blush.

"And if there is," broke in Arthur, "and if I am free once again, will

the best and dearest of all women----"

"You are not free, dear brother," Laura said calmly. "You belong to

another; of whom I own it grieves me to think ill. But I can't do

otherwise. It is very odd that in this letter she does not urge you to

tell her the reason why you have broken arrangements which would have

been so advantageous to you; and avoids speaking on the subject. She

somehow seems to write as if she knows her father's secret."

Pen said, "Yes, she must know it;" and told the story, which he had just

heard from Huxter, of the interview at Shepherd's Inn.

"It was not so that she described the meeting," said Laura; and, going

to her desk, produced from it that letter of Blanche's which mentioned

her visit to Shepherd's Inn. 'Another disappointment--only the Chevalier

Strong and a friend of his in the room.' This was all that Blanche had

said. "But she was bound to keep her father's secret, Pen," Laura added.

"And yet, and yet--it is very puzzling."

The puzzle was this, that for three weeks after this eventful discovery

Blanche had been only too eager about her dearest Arthur; was urging,

as strongly as so much modesty could urge, the completion of the happy

arrangements which were to make her Arthur's for ever; and now it seemed

as if something had interfered to mar these happy arrangements--as if

Arthur poor was not quite so agreeable to Blanche as Arthur rich and a

member of Parliament--as if there was some mystery. At last she said:

"Tunbridge Wells is not very far off, is it, Arthur? Hadn't you better

go and see her?"

They had been in town a week, and neither had thought of that simple

plan before!

CHAPTER LXXIV. Shows how Arthur had better have taken a Return-ticket

The train carried Arthur only too quickly to Tunbridge, though he had

time to review all the circumstances of his life as he made the brief

journey; and to acknowledge to what sad conclusions his selfishness and

waywardness had led him. "Here is the end of hopes and aspirations,"

thought he, "of romance and ambitions! Where I yield or where I am

obstinate, I am alike unfortunate; my mother implores me, and I refuse

an angel! Say I had taken her; forced on me as she was, Laura would

never have been an angel to me. I could not have given her my heart at

another's instigation; I never could have known her as she is had I

been obliged to ask another to interpret her qualities and point out

her virtues. I yield to my uncle's solicitations, and accept on his

guarantee Blanche, and a seat in Parliament, and wealth, and ambition,

and a career; and see!--fortune comes and leaves me the wife without the

dowry, which I had taken in compensation of a heart. Why was I not more

honest, or am I not less so? It would have cost my poor old uncle no

pangs to accept Blanche's fortune whencesoever it came; he can't even

understand, he is bitterly indignant, heart-stricken, almost, at the

scruples which actuate me in refusing it. I dissatisfy everybody. A

maimed, weak, imperfect wretch, it seems as if I am unequal to any

fortune. I neither make myself nor any one connected with me happy. What

prospect is there for this poor little frivolous girl, who is to take

my obscure name and share my fortune? I have not even ambition to excite

me, or self-esteem enough to console myself, much more her, for my

failure. If I were to write a book that should go through twenty

editions, why, I should be the very first to sneer at my reputation. Say

I could succeed at the Bar, and achieve a fortune by bullying witnesses

and twisting evidence; is that a fame which would satisfy my longings,

or a calling in which my life would be well spent? How I wish I could be

that priest opposite, who never has lifted his eyes from his breviary,

except when we were in Reigate tunnel, when he could not see; or that

old gentleman next him, who scowls at him with eyes of hatred over his

newspaper. The priest shuts his eyes to the world, but has his thoughts

on the book, which is his directory to the world to come. His neighbour

hates him as a monster, tyrant, persecutor, and fancies burning martyrs,

and that pale countenance looking on, and lighted up by the flame. These

have no doubts; these march on trustfully, bearing their load of logic."

"Would you like to look at the paper, sir?" here interposed the

stout gentleman (it had a flaming article against the order of the

black-coated gentleman who was travelling with them in the carriage),

and Pen thanked him and took it, and pursued his reverie, without

reading two sentences of the journal.

"And yet, would you take either of those men's creeds, with its

consequences?" he thought. "Ah me! you must bear your own burthen,

fashion your own faith, think your own thoughts, and pray your own

prayer. To what mortal ear could I tell all, if I had a mind? or

who could understand all? Who can tell another's shortcomings, lost

opportunities, weigh the passions which overpower, the defects which

incapacitate reason?--what extent of truth and right his neighbour's

mind is organised to perceive and to do?--what invisible and forgotten

accident, terror of youth, chance or mischance of fortune, may have

altered the whole current of life? A grain of sand may alter it, as the

flinging of a pebble may end it. Who can weigh circumstances, passions,

temptations, that go to our good and evil account, save One, before

whose awful wisdom we kneel, and at whose mercy we ask absolution? Here

it ends," thought Pen; "this day or to-morrow will wind up the account

of my youth; a weary retrospect, alas! a sad history, with many a page

I would fain not look back on! But who has not been tired or fallen, and

who has escaped without scars from that struggle?" And his head fell on

his breast, and the young man's heart prostrated itself humbly and sadly

before that Throne where sits wisdom, and love, and pity for all, and

made its confession. "What matters about fame or poverty!" he thought.

"If I marry this woman I have chosen, may I have strength and will to be

true to her, and to make her happy. If I have children, pray God teach

me to speak and to do the truth among them, and to leave them an honest

name. There are no splendours for my marriage. Does my life deserve

any? I begin a new phase of it; a better than the last may it be, I pray

Heaven!"

The train stopped at Tunbridge as Pen was making these reflections; and

he handed over the newspaper to his neighbour, of whom he took leave,

while the foreign clergyman in the opposite corner still sate with his

eyes on his book. Pen jumped out of the carriage then, his carpet-bag in

hand, and briskly determined to face his fortune.

A fly carried him rapidly to Lady Clavering's house from the station;

and, as he was transported thither, Arthur composed a little speech,

which he intended to address to Blanche, and which was really as

virtuous, honest, and well-minded an oration as any man of his turn of

mind, and under his circumstances, could have uttered. The purport of

it was--"Blanche, I cannot understand from your last letter what your

meaning is, or whether my fair and frank proposal to you is acceptable

or no. I think you know the reason which induces me to forgo the worldly

advantages which a union with you offered, and which I could not accept

without, as I fancy, being dishonoured. If you doubt of my affection,

here I am ready to prove it. Let Smirke be called in, and let us be

married out of hand; and with all my heart I purpose to keep my vow, and

to cherish you through life, and to be a true and a loving husband to

you."

From the fly Arthur sprang out then to the hall-door, where he was met

by a domestic whom he did not know. The man seemed to be surprised at

the approach of the gentleman with the carpet-bag, which he made no

attempt to take from Arthur's hands. "Her Ladyship's not at home, sir,"

the man remarked.

"I am Mr. Pendennis," Arthur said. "Where is Lightfoot?"

"Lightfoot is gone," answered the man. "My Lady is out, and my orders

was----"

"I hear Miss Amory's voice in the drawing-room," said Arthur. "Take the

bag to a dressing-room, if you please;" and, passing by the porter, he

walked straight towards that apartment, from which, as the door opened,

a warble of melodious notes issued.

Our little Siren was at her piano singing with all her might and

fascinations. Master Clavering was asleep on the sofa, indifferent to

the music; but near Blanche sat a gentleman who was perfectly enraptured

with her strain, which was of a passionate and melancholy nature.

As the door opened, the gentleman started up with Hullo! the music

stopped, with a little shriek from the singer; Frank Clavering woke up

from the sofa, and Arthur came forward and said, "What, Foker! how do

you do, Foker?" He looked at the piano, and there, by Miss Amory's side,

was just such another purple-leather box as he had seen in Harry's

hand three days before, when the heir of Logwood was coming out of a

jeweller's shop in Waterloo Place. It was opened, and curled round

the white satin cushion within was, oh, such a magnificent serpentine

bracelet, with such a blazing ruby head and diamond tail!

"How de-do, Pendennis?" said Foker. Blanche made many motions of the

shoulders, and gave signs of unrest and agitation. And she put her

handkerchief over the bracelet, and then she advanced, with a hand which

trembled very much, to greet Pen.

"How is dearest Laura?" she said. The face of Foker looking up from his

profound mourning--that face, so piteous and puzzled, was one which the

reader's imagination must depict for himself; also that of Master Frank

Clavering, who, looking at the three interesting individuals with an

expression of the utmost knowingness, had only time to ejaculate the

words, "Here's a jolly go!" and to disappear sniggering.

Pen, too, had restrained himself up to that minute; but looking still at

Foker, whose ears and cheeks tingled with blushes, Arthur burst out into

a fit of laughter, so wild and loud, that it frightened Blanche much

more than any the most serious exhibition.

"And this was the secret, was it? Don't blush and turn away, Foker,

my boy. Why, man, you are a pattern of fidelity. Could I stand between

Blanche and such constancy--could I stand between Miss Amory and fifteen

thousand a year?"

"It is not that, Mr. Pendennis," Blanche said, with great dignity. "It

is not money, it is not rank, it is not gold that moves me; but it is

constancy, it is fidelity, it is a whole trustful loving heart offered

to me, that I treasure--yes, that I treasure!" And she made for her

handkerchief, but, reflecting what was underneath it, she paused. "I do

not disown, I do not disguise--my life is above disguise--to him on whom

it is bestowed, my heart must be for ever bare--that I once thought I

loved you,--yes, thought I was beloved by you, I own! How I clung to

that faith! How I strove, I prayed, I longed to believe it! But your

conduct always--your own words so cold, so heartless, so unkind, have

undeceived me. You trifled with the heart of the poor maiden! You flung

me back with scorn the troth which I had plighted! I have explained

all--all to Mr. Foker."

"That you have," said Foker, with devotion, and conviction in his looks.

"What, all?" said Pen, with a meaning look at Blanche. "It is I am in

fault, is it? Well, well, Blanche, be it so. I won't appeal against

your sentence, and bear it in silence. I came down here looking to very

different things, Heaven knows, and with a heart most truly and kindly

disposed towards you. I hope you may be happy with another, as, on my

word, it was my wish to make you so; and I hope my honest old friend

here will have a wife worthy of his loyalty, his constancy, and

affection. Indeed they deserve the regard of any woman--even Miss

Blanche Amory. Shake hands, Harry; don't look askance at me. Has anybody

told you that I was a false and heartless character?"

"I think you're a----" Foker was beginning, in his wrath, when Blanche

interposed.

"Henry, not a word!--I pray you let there be forgiveness!"

"You're an angel, by Jove, you're an angel!" said Foker, at which

Blanche looked seraphically up to the chandelier.

"In spite of what has passed, for the sake of what has passed, I must

always regard Arthur as a brother," the seraph continued; "we have known

each other years, we have trodden the same fields, and plucked the same

flowers together. Arthur! Henry! I beseech you to take hands and to be

friends! Forgive you!--I forgive you, Arthur, with my heart I do. Should

I not do so for making me so happy?"

"There is only one person of us three whom I pity, Blanche," Arthur

said, gravely, "and I say to you again, that I hope you will make this

good fellow, this honest and loyal creature, happy."

"Happy! O Heavens!" said Harry. He could not speak. His happiness gushed

out at his eyes. "She don't know--she can't know how fond I am of her,

and--and who am I? a poor little beggar, and she takes me up and says

she'll try and I--I--love me. I ain't worthy of so much happiness.

Give us your hand, old boy, since she forgives you after your heartless

conduct, and says she loves you. I'll make you welcome. I tell you I'll

love everybody who loves her. By---, if she tells me to kiss the ground

I'll kiss it. Tell me to kiss the ground! I say, tell me. I love you so.

You see I love you so."

Blanche looked up seraphically again. Her gentle bosom heaved. She held

out one hand as if to bless Harry, and then royally permitted him to

kiss it. She took up the pocket-handkerchief and hid her own eyes, as

the other fair hand was abandoned to poor Harry's tearful embrace.

"I swear that is a villain who deceives such a loving creature as that,"

said Pen.

Blanche laid down the handkerchief, and put hand No. 2 softly on Foker's

head, which was bent down kissing and weeping over hand No. 1. "Foolish

boy?" she said, "it shall be loved as it deserves: who could help loving

such a silly creature!"

And at this moment Frank Clavering broke in upon the sentimental trio.

"I say, Pendennis!" he said.

"Well, Frank!"

"The man wants to be paid, and go back. He's had some beer."

"I'll go back with him," cried Pen. "Good-bye, Blanche. God bless you,

Foker, old friend. You know, neither of you want me here." He longed to

be off that instant.

"Stay--I must say one word to you. One word in private, if you please,"

Blanche said. "You can trust us together, can't you, Henry?" The tone

in which the word Henry was spoken, and the appeal, ravished Foker with

delight. "Trust you!" said he. "Oh, who wouldn't trust you! Come along,

Franky, my boy."

"Let's have a cigar," said Frank, as they went into the hall.

"She don't like it," said Foker, gently.

"Law bless you--she don't mind. Pendennis used to smoke regular," said

the candid youth.

"It was but a short word I had to say," said Blanche to Pen, with great

calm, when they were alone. "You never loved me, Mr. Pendennis."

"I told you how much," said Arthur. "I never deceived you."

"I suppose you will go back and marry Laura," continued Blanche.

"Was that what you had to say?" said Pen.

"You are going to her this very night, I am sure of it. There is no

denying it. You never cared for me."

"Et vous?"

"Et moi, c'est different. I have been spoilt early. I cannot live out of

the world, out of excitement. I could have done so, but it is too late.

If I cannot have emotions, I must have the world. You would offer

me neither one nor the other. You are blase in everything, even in

ambition. You had a career before you, and you would not take it. You

give it up!--for what?--for a betise, for an absurd scruple. Why would

you not have that seat, and be such a puritain? Why should you refuse

what is mine by right, by right, entendez-vous?"

"You know all, then?" said Pen.

"Only within a month. But I have suspected ever since

Baymouth--n'importe since when. It is not too late. He is as if he had

never been; and there is a position in the world before you yet. Why not

sit in Parliament, exert your talent, and give a place in the world to

yourself, to your wife? I take celui-la. Il est bon. Il est riche. Il

est--vous le connaissez autant que moi enfin. Think you that I would not

prefer un homme qui fera parler de moi? If the secret appears I am rich

a millions. How does it affect me? It is not my fault. It will never

appear."

"You will tell Harry everything, won't you?"

"Je comprends. Vous refusez," said Blanche, savagely. "I will tell Harry

at my own time, when we are married. You will not betray me, will you?

You, having a defenceless girl's secret, will not turn upon her and use

it? S'il me plait de le cacher, mon secret; pourquoi le donnerai je? Je

l'aime, mon pauvre pere, voyez-vous? I would rather live with that man

than with you fades intriguers of the world. I must have emotions--it

m'en donne. Il m'ecrit. Il ecrit tres-bien, voyez-vous--comme un

pirate--comme un Bohemien--comme un homme. But for this I would

have said to my mother--Ma mere! quittons ce lache mari, cette lache

societe--retournons a mon pere."

"The pirate would have wearied you like the rest," said Pen.

"Eh! Il me faut des emotions," said Blanche. Pen had never seen her or

known so much about her in all the years of their intimacy as he saw

and knew now: though he saw more than existed in reality. For this young

lady was not able to carry out any emotion to the full; but had a sham

enthusiasm, a sham hatred, a sham love, a sham taste, a sham grief, each

of which flared and shone very vehemently for an instant, but subsided

and gave place to the next sham emotion.

CHAPTER LXXV. A Chapter of Match-making

Upon the platform at Tunbridge, Pen fumed and fretted until the arrival

of the evening train to London, a full half-hour,--six hours it seemed

to him; but even this immense interval was passed, the train arrived,

the train sped on, the London lights came in view--a gentleman who

forgot his carpet-bag in the train rushed at a cab, and said to the man,

"Drive as hard as you can go to Jermyn Street." The cabman, although a

hansom-cabman, said Thank you for the gratuity which was put into his

hand, and Pen ran up the stairs of the hotel to Lady Rockminster's

apartments. Laura was alone in the drawing-room, reading, with a pale

face, by the lamp. The pale face looked up when Pen opened the door.

May we follow him? The great moments of life are but moments like the

others. Your doom is spoken in a word or two. A single look from the

eyes; a mere pressure of the hand may decide it; or of the lips, though

they cannot speak.

When Lady Rockminster, who has had her after-dinner nap, gets up and

goes into her sitting-room, we may enter with her ladyship.

"Upon my word, young people!" are the first words she says, and her

attendant makes wondering eyes over her shoulder. And well may she say

so; and well may the attendant cast wondering eyes; for the young people

are in an attitude; and Pen in such a position as every young lady who

reads this has heard tell of, or has seen, or hopes, or at any rate

deserves to see.

In a word, directly he entered the room, Pen went up to Laura of the

pale face, who had not time even to say, What, back so soon? and seizing

her outstretched and trembling hand just as she was rising from her

chair, fell down on his knees before her, and said quickly, "I have seen

her. She has engaged herself to Harry Foker--and--and Now, Laura?"

The hand gives a pressure--the eyes beam a reply--the quivering lips

answer, though speechless. Pen's head sinks down in the girl's lap, as

he sobs out, "Come and bless us, dear mother," and arms as tender as

Helen's once more enfold him.

In this juncture it is that Lady Rockminster comes in and says, "Upon my

word, young people! Beck! leave the room. What do you want poking your

nose in here?"

Pen starts up with looks of triumph, still holding Laura's hand. "She is

consoling me for my misfortune, ma'am," he says.

"What do you mean by kissing her hand? I don't know what you will be

next doing."

Pen kissed her Ladyship's. "I have been to Tunbridge," he says, "and

seen Miss Amory; and find on my arrival that--that a villain has

transplanted me in her affections," he says with a tragedy air.

"Is that all? Is that what you were whimpering on your knees about?"

says the old lady, growing angry. "You might have kept the news till

to-morrow."

"Yes--another has superseded me," goes on Pen; "but why call him

villain? He is brave, he is constant, he is young, he is wealthy, he is

beautiful."

"What stuff are you talking, sir?" cried the old lady. "What has

happened?"

"Miss Amory has jilted me, and accepted Henry Foker, Esq. I found

her warbling ditties to him as he lay at her feet; presents had been

accepted, vows exchanged, these ten days. Harry was old Mrs. Planter's

rheumatism, which kept dearest Laura out of the house. He is the most

constant and generous of men. He has promised the living of Logwood to

Lady Ann's husband, and given her a splendid present on her marriage;

and he rushed to fling himself at Blanche's feet the instant he found he

was free."

"And so, as you can't get Blanche, you put up with Laura; is that it,

sir?" asked the old lady.

"He acted nobly," Laura said.

"I acted as she bade me," said Pen. "Never mind how, Lady Rockminster;

but to the best of my knowledge and power. And if you mean that I am

not worthy of Laura, I know it, and pray Heaven to better me; and if the

love and company of the best and purest creature in the world can do so,

at least I shall have these to help me."

"Hm, hm," replied the old lady to this, looking with rather an appeased

air at the young people. "It is all very well; but I should have

preferred Bluebeard."

And now Pen, to divert the conversation from a theme which was growing

painful to some parties present, bethought him of his interview with

Huxter in the morning, and of Fanny Bolton's affairs, which he had

forgotten under the immediate pressure and excitement of his own. And he

told the ladies how Huxter had elevated Fanny to the rank of wife,

and what terrors he was in respecting the arrival of his father. He

described the scene with considerable humour, taking care to dwell

especially upon that part of it which concerned Fanny's coquetry and

irrepressible desire of captivating mankind; his meaning being, "You

see, Laura, I was not so guilty in that little affair; it was the girl

who made love to me, and I who resisted. As I am no longer present, the

little siren practises her arts and fascinations upon others. Let that

transaction be forgotten in your mind, if you please; or visit me with a

very gentle punishment for my error."

Laura understood his meaning under the eagerness of his explanations.

"If you did any wrong, you repented, dear Pen," she said; "and you

know," she added, with meaning eyes and blushes, "that I have no right

to reproach you."

"Hm!" grumbled the old lady; "I should have preferred Bluebeard."

"The past is broken away. The morrow is before us. I will do my best to

make your morrow happy, dear Laura," Pen said. His heart was humbled by

the prospect of his happiness: it stood awestricken in the contemplation

of her sweet goodness and purity. He liked his wife better that she had

owned to that passing feeling for Warrington, and laid bare her generous

heart to him. And she--very likely she was thinking, "How strange it is

that I ever should have cared for another! I am vexed almost to think I

care for him so little, am so little sorry that he is gone away. Oh, in

these past two months how I have learned to love Arthur! I care about

nothing but Arthur: my waking and sleeping thoughts are about him; he is

never absent from me. And to think that he is to be mine, mine! and that

I am to marry him, and not to be his servant as I expected to be only

this morning; for I would have gone down on my knees to Blanche to beg

her to let me live with him. And now--Oh, it is too much. Oh, mother!

mother, that you were here!" Indeed, she felt as if Helen were there--by

her actually, though invisibly. A halo of happiness beamed from her.

She moved with a different step, and bloomed with a new beauty. Arthur

saw the change; and the old Lady Rockminster remarked it with her shrewd

eyes.

"What a sly demure little wretch you have been," she whispered to

Laura--while Pen, in great spirits, was laughing, and telling his story

about Huxter--"and how you have kept your secret!"

"How are we to help the young couple?" said Laura. Of course Miss Laura

felt an interest in all young couples, as generous lovers always love

other lovers.

"We must go and see them," said Pen.

"Of course we must go and see them," said Laura. "I intend to be very

fond of Fanny. Let us go this instant. Lady Rockminster, may I have the

carriage?"

"Go now!--why, you stupid creature, it is eleven o'clock at night. Mr.

and Mrs. Huxter have got their nightcaps on, I dare say. And it is time

for you to go now. Good night, Mr. Pendennis."

Arthur and Laura begged for ten minutes more.

"We will go to-morrow morning, then. I will come and fetch you with

Martha."

"An earl's coronet," said Pen, who, no doubt, was pleased himself,

"will have a great effect in Lamb Court and Smithfield. Stay--Lady

Rockminster, will you join us in a little conspiracy?"

"How do you mean conspiracy, young man?"

"Will you please to be a little ill to-morrow; and when old Mr. Huxter

arrives, will you let me call him in? If he is put into a good humour at

the notion of attending a baronet in the country, what influence won't

a countess have on him? When he is softened--when he is quite ripe, we

will break the secret upon him; bring in the young people, extort the

paternal benediction, and finish the comedy."

"A parcel of stuff," said the old lady. "Take your hat, sir. Come away,

miss. There--my head is turned another way. Good night, young people."

And who knows but the old lady thought of her own early days as she went

away on Laura's arm, nodding her head and humming to herself?

With the early morning came Laura and Martha according to appointment;

and the desired sensation was, let us hope, effected in Lamb Court,

whence the three proceeded to wait upon Mr. and Mrs. Samuel Huxter, at

their residence in Charterhouse Lane.

The two ladies looked at each other with great interest, and not a

little emotion on Fanny's part. She had not seen her "guardian," as she

was pleased to call Pen in consequence of his bequest, since the event

had occurred which had united her to Mr. Huxter.

"Samuel told me how kind you had been," she said. "You were always very

kind, Mr. Pendennis. And--and I hope your friend is better, who was took

ill in Shepherd's Inn, ma'am."

"My name is Laura," said the other, with a blush. "I am--that is, I

was--that is, I am Arthur's sister; and we shall always love you for

being so good to him when he was ill. And when we live in the country,

I hope we shall see each other. And I shall be always happy to hear of

your happiness, Fanny."

"We are going to do what you and Huxter have done, Fanny.--Where is

Huxter? What nice, snug lodgings you've got! What a pretty cat!"

While Fanny is answering these questions in reply to Pen, Laura says to

herself--"Well, now really! is this the creature about whom we were all

so frightened? What could he see in her? She's a homely little thing,

but such manners! Well, she was very kind to him,--bless her for that."

Mr. Samuel had gone out to meet his Pa. Mrs. Huxter said that the old

gentleman was to arrive that day at the Somerset Coffee-house, in the

Strand; and Fanny confessed that she was in a sad tremor about the

meeting. "If his parent casts him off, what are we to do?" she said. "I

shall never pardon myself for bringing ruing on my 'usband's 'ead. You

must intercede for us, Mr. Arthur. If mortal man can, you can bend and

influence Mr. Huxter senior." Fanny still regarded Pen in the light of

a superior being, that was evident. No doubt Arthur thought of the past,

as he marked the solemn little tragedy-airs and looks, the little ways,

the little trepidations, vanities, of the little bride. As soon as the

interview was over, entered Messrs. Linton and Blades, who came, of

course, to visit Huxter, and brought with them a fine fragrance of

tobacco. They had watched the carriage at the baker's door, and remarked

the coronet with awe. They asked of Fanny who was that uncommonly heavy

swell who had just driven off? and pronounced the countess was of

the right sort. And when they heard that it was Mr. Pendennis and his

sister, they remarked that Pen's father was only a sawbones; and that he

gave himself confounded airs; they had been in Huxter's company on the

night of his little altercation with Pen in the Back Kitchen.

Returning homewards through Fleet Street, and as Laura was just stating

to Pen's infinite amusement that Fanny was very well, but that really

there was no beauty in her,--there might be, but she could not see

it,--as they were locked near Temple Bar, they saw young Huxter

returning to his bride. "The governor had arrived; was at the Somerset

Coffee-house--was in tolerable good-humour--something about the railway:

but he had been afraid to speak about--about that business. Would Mr.

Pendennis try it on?"

Pen said he would go and call at that moment upon Mr. Huxter, and see

what might be done. Huxter junior would lurk outside whilst that awful

interview took place. The coronet on the carriage inspired his soul also

with wonder; and old Mr. Huxter himself beheld it with delight, as he

looked from the coffee-house window on that Strand which it was always a

treat to him to survey.

"And I can afford to give myself a lark, sir," said Mr. Huxter, shaking

hands with Pen. "Of course you know the news? we have got our bill, sir.

We shall have our branch line--our shares are up, sir--and we buy your

three fields along the Brawl, and put a pretty penny into your pocket,

Mr. Pendennis."

"Indeed!--that was good news." Pen remembered that there was a letter

from Mr. Tatham, at Chambers, these three days; but he had not opened

the communication, being interested with other affairs.

"I hope you don't intend to grow rich, and give up practice," said Pen.

"We can't lose you at Clavering, Mr. Huxter; though I hear very good

accounts of your son. My friend, Dr. Goodenough speaks most highly of

his talents. It is hard that a man of your eminence, though, should be

kept in a country town."

"The metropolis would have been my sphere of action, sir," said Mr.

Huxter, surveying the Strand. "But a man takes his business where he

finds it; and I succeeded to that of my father."

"It was my father's, too," said Pen. "I sometimes wish I had followed

it."

"You, sir, have taken a more lofty career," said the old gentleman. "You

aspire to the senate: and to literary honours. You wield the poet's

pen, sir, and move in the circles of fashion. We keep an eye upon you at

Clavering. We read your name in the lists of the select parties of the

nobility. Why, it was only the other day that my wife was remarking how

odd it was that at a party at the Earl of Kidderminster's your name was

not mentioned. To what member of the aristocracy may I ask does that

equipage belong from which I saw you descend? The Countess Dowager of

Rockminster? How is her Ladyship?"

"Her Ladyship is not very well; and when I heard that you were coming to

town, I strongly urged her to see you, Mr. Huxter," Pen said. Old Huxter

felt, if he had a hundred votes for Clavering, he would give them all to

Pen.

"There is an old friend of yours in the carriage--a Clavering lady,

too--will you come out and speak to her?" asked Pen. The old surgeon

was delighted to speak to a coroneted carriage in the midst of the full

Strand: he ran out bowing and smiling. Huxter junior, dodging about

the district, beheld the meeting between his father and Laura, saw the

latter put out her hand, and presently, after a little colloquy with

Pen, beheld his father actually jump into the carriage, and drive away

with Miss Bell.

There was no room for Arthur, who came back, laughing, to the young

surgeon, and told him whither his parent was bound. During the whole of

the journey, that artful Laura coaxed, and wheedled, and cajoled him so

adroitly, that the old gentleman would have granted her anything; and

Lady Rockminster achieved the victory over him by complimenting him

on his skill, and professing her anxiety to consult him. What were

her Ladyship's symptoms? Should he meet her Ladyship's usual medical

attendant? Mr. Jones was called out of town? He should be delighted to

devote his very best energies and experience to her Ladyship's service.

He was so charmed with his patient, that he wrote home about her to his

wife and family; he talked of nothing but Lady Rockminster to Samuel,

when that youth came to partake of beefsteak and oyster-sauce and

accompany his parent to the play. There was a simple grandeur, a polite

urbanity, a high-bred grace about her Ladyship, which he had never

witnessed in any woman. Her symptoms did not seem alarming; he had

prescribed--Spir: Ammon: Aromat: with a little Spir: Menth: Pip: and

orange-flower, which would be all that was necessary.

"Miss Bell seemed to be on the most confidential and affectionate

footing with her Ladyship. She was about to form a matrimonial

connexion. All young people ought to marry. Such were her Ladyship's

words; and the Countess condescended to ask respecting my own family,

and I mentioned you by name to her Ladyship, Sam, my boy. I shall look

in to-morrow, when, if the remedies which I have prescribed for her

Ladyship have had the effect which I anticipate, I shall probably follow

them up by a little Spir: Lavend: Comp:--and so set my noble patient

up. What is the theatre which is most frequented by the--by the higher

classes in town, hey, Sam! and to what amusement will you take an old

country doctor to-night, hey, sir?"

On the next day, when Mr. Huxter called in Jermyn Street at twelve

o'clock, Lady Rockminster had not yet left her room, but Miss Bell and

Mr. Pendennis were in waiting to receive him. Lady Rockminster had had a

most comfortable night, and was getting on as well as possible. How had

Mr. Huxter amused himself? at the theatre? with his son? What a capital

piece it was, and how charmingly Mrs. O'Leary looked and sang it! and

what a good fellow young Huxter was! liked by everybody, an honour to

his profession. He has not his father's manners, I grant you, or that

old-world tone which is passing away from us, but a more excellent,

sterling fellow never lived. "He ought to practise in the country

whatever you do, sir," said Arthur--"he ought to marry--other people are

going to do so--and settle."

"The very words that her Ladyship used yesterday, Mr. Pendennis. He

ought to marry. Sam should marry, sir."

"The town is full of temptations, sir," continued Pen. The old gentleman

thought of that houri, Mrs. O'Leary.

"There is no better safeguard for a young man than an early marriage

with an honest affectionate creature."

"No better, sir, no better."

"And love is better than money, isn't it?"

"Indeed it is," said Miss Bell.

"I agree with so fair an authority," said the old gentleman, with a bow.

"And--and suppose, sir," Pen said, "that I had a piece of news to

communicate to you."

"God bless my soul, Mr. Pendennis! what do you mean?" asked the old

gentleman.

"Suppose I had to tell you that a young man, carried away by an

irresistible passion for an admirable and most virtuous young

creature--whom everybody falls in love with--had consulted the dictates

of reason and his heart, and had married. Suppose I were to tell you

that that man is my friend; that our excellent, our truly noble friend

the Countess Dowager of Rockminster is truly interested about him

(and you may fancy what a young man can do in life when THAT family is

interested for him); suppose I were to tell you that you know him--that

he is here--that he is----"

"Sam married! God bless my soul, sir, you don't mean that!"

"And to such a nice creature, dear Mr. Huxter."

"Her Ladyship is charmed with her," said Pen, telling almost the first

fib which he has told in the course of this story.

"Married! the rascal, is he?" thought the old gentleman.

"They will do it, sir," said Pen; and went and opened the door. Mr. and

Mrs. Samuel Huxter issued thence, and both came and knelt down before

the old gentleman. The kneeling little Fanny found favour in his sight.

There must have been some thing attractive about her, in spite of

Laura's opinion.

"Will never do so any more, sir," said Sam.

"Get up, sir," said Mr. Huxter. And they got up, and Fanny came a little

nearer and a little nearer still, and looked so pretty and pitiful,

that somehow Mr. Huxter found himself kissing the little crying-laughing

thing, and feeling as if he liked it.

"What's your name, my dear?" he said, after a minute of this sport.

"Fanny, papa," said Mrs. Samuel.

CHAPTER LXXVI. Exeunt Omnes

Our characters are all a month older than they were when the

last-described adventures and conversations occurred, and a great number

of the personages of our story have chanced to reassemble at the little

country town where we were first introduced to them. Frederic Lightfoot,

formerly maitre d'hotel in the service of Sir Francis Clavering, of

Clavering Park, Bart., has begged leave to inform the nobility and

gentry of ------shire that he has taken that well-known and comfortable

hotel, the Clavering Arms, in Clavering, where he hopes for the

continued patronage of the gentlemen and families of the county. "This

ancient and well-established house," Mr. Lightfoot's manifesto states,

"has been repaired and decorated in a style of the greatest comfort.

Gentlemen hunting with the Dumplingbeare hounds will find excellent

stabling and loose-boxes for horses at the Clavering Arms. A commodious

billiard-room has been attached to the hotel, and the cellars have been

furnished with the choicest wines and spirits, selected, without regard

to expense, by C. L. Commercial gentlemen will find the Clavering Arms

a most comfortable place of resort: and the scale of charges has been

regulated for all, so as to meet the economical spirit of the present

times."

Indeed, there is a considerable air of liveliness about the old inn.

The Clavering arms have been splendidly repainted over the gateway. The

coffee-room windows are bright and fresh, and decorated with Christmas

holly; the magistrates have met in petty sessions in the card-room

of the old Assembly. The farmers' ordinary is held as of old, and

frequented by increased numbers, who are pleased with Mrs. Lightfoot's

cuisine. Her Indian curries and Mulligatawny soup are especially

popular: Major Stokes, the respected tenant of Fairoaks Cottage, Captain

Glanders, H.P., and other resident gentry, have pronounced in their

favour, and have partaken of them more than once both in private and at

the dinner of the Clavering Institute, attendant on the incorporation

of the reading-room, and when the chief inhabitants of that flourishing

little town met together and did justice to the hostess's excellent

cheer. The chair was taken by Sir Francis Clavering, Bart., supported

by the esteemed rector, Dr. Portman; the vice chair being ably filled

by Barker, Esq. (supported by the Rev. J. Simcoe and the Rev. S. Jowls),

the enterprising head of the ribbon factory in Clavering, and chief

director of the Clavering and Chatteris Branch of the Great Western

Railway, which will be opened in another year, and upon the works of

which the engineers and workmen are now busily engaged.

"An interesting event, which is likely to take place in the life of our

talented townsman, Arthur Pendennis, Esq., has, we understand, caused

him to relinquish the intentions which he had of offering himself as

a candidate for our borough: and rumour whispers" (says the Chatteris

Champion, Clavering Agriculturist, and Baymouth Fisherman,--that

independent county paper, so distinguished for its unswerving

principles and loyalty to the British oak, and so eligible a medium for

advertisements)--rumour states, says the C. C. C. A. and B. F., "that

should Sir Francis Clavering's failing health oblige him to relinquish

his seat in Parliament, he will vacate it in favour of a young gentleman

of colossal fortune and related to the highest aristocracy of the

empire, who is about to contract a matrimonial alliance with an

accomplished and lovely lady, connected by the nearest ties with the

respected family at Clavering Park. Lady Clavering and Miss Amory have

arrived at the Park for the Christmas holidays; and we understand that a

large number of the aristocracy are expected, and that festivities of a

peculiarly interesting nature will take place there at the commencement

of the new year."

The ingenious reader will be enabled, by the help of the above

announcement, to understand what has taken place during the little break

which has occurred in our narrative. Although Lady Rockminster grumbled

a little at Laura's preference for Pendennis over Bluebeard, those who

are aware of the latter's secret will understand that the young girl

could make no other choice, and the kind old lady who had constituted

herself Miss Bell's guardian was not ill pleased that she was to fulfil

the great purpose in life of young ladies and marry. She informed her

maid of the interesting event that very night, and of course Mrs.

Beck, who was perfectly aware of every single circumstance, and kept by

Martha, of Fairoaks, in the fullest knowledge of what was passing, was

immensely surprised and delighted. "Mr. Pendennis's income is so much;

the railroad will give him so much more, he states; Miss Bell has so

much, and may probably have a little more one day. For persons in their

degree, they will be able to manage very well. And I shall speak to my

nephew Pynsent, who I suspect was once rather attached to her,--but of

course that was out of the question ('Oh! of course, my lady; I should

think so indeed!')--not that you know anything whatever about it, or

have any business to think at all on the subject,--I shall speak to

George Pynsent, who is now chief secretary of the Tape and Sealing Wax

Office, and have Mr. Pendennis made something. And, Beck, in the morning

you will carry down my compliments to Major Pendennis, and say that I

shall pay him a visit at one o'clock."--"Yes," muttered the old lady,

"the Major must be reconciled, and he must leave his fortune to Laura's

children."

Accordingly, at one o'clock, the Dowager Lady Rockminster appeared at

Major Pendennis's, who was delighted, as may be imagined, to receive so

noble a visitor. The Major had been prepared, if not for the news which

her Ladyship was about to give him, at least with the intelligence

that Pen's marriage with Miss Amory was broken off. The young gentleman

bethinking him of his uncle, for the first time that day it must be

owned, and meeting his new servant in the hall of the hotel, asked after

the Major's health from Mr. Frosch; and then went into the coffee-room

of the hotel, where he wrote a half-dozen lines to acquaint his guardian

with what had occurred. "Dear uncle," he said, "if there has been

any question between us, it is over now. I went to Tunbridge Wells

yesterday, and found that somebody else had carried off the prize about

which we were hesitating. Miss A., without any compunction for me, has

bestowed herself upon Harry Foker, with his fifteen thousand a year. I

came in suddenly upon their loves, and found and left him in possession.

"And you'll be glad to hear, Tatham writes me, that he has sold three of

my fields at Fairoaks to the Railroad Company, at a great figure. I

will tell you this, and more when we meet; and am always your

affectionate,--A. P."

"I think I am aware of what you were about to tell me," the Major said,

with a most courtly smile and bow to Pen's ambassadress. "It was a very

great kindness of your Ladyship to think of bringing me the news. How

well you look! How very good you are! How very kind you have always been

to that young man!"

"It was for the sake of his uncle," said Lady Rockminster, most

politely.

"He has informed me of the state of affairs, and written me a nice

note,--yes, a nice note," continued the old gentleman; "and I find he

has had an increase to his fortune,--yes; and, all things considered, I

don't much regret that this affair with Miss Amory is manquee, though

I wished for it once, in fact, all things considered, I am very glad of

it."

"We must console him, Major Pendennis," continued the lady; "we must get

him a wife." The truth then came across the Major's mind, and he saw

for what purpose Lady Rockminster had chosen to assume the office of

ambassadress.

It is not necessary to enter into the conversation which ensued, or to

tell at any length how her Ladyship concluded a negotiation which, in

truth, was tolerably easy. There could be no reason why Pen should

not marry according to his own and his mother's wish; and as for Lady

Rockminster, she supported the marriage by intimations which had very

great weight with the Major, but of which we shall say nothing, as her

ladyship (now, of course, much advanced in years) is still alive, and

the family might be angry; and, in fine, the old gentleman was quite

overcome by the determined graciousness of the lady, and her fondness

for Laura. Nothing, indeed, could be more bland and kind than Lady

Rockminster's whole demeanour, except for one moment when the Major

talked about his boy throwing himself away, at which her ladyship broke

out into a little speech, in which she made the Major understand, what

poor Pen and his friends acknowledge very humbly, that Laura was a

thousand times too good for him. Laura was fit to be the wife of a

king,--Laura was a paragon of virtue and excellence. And it must be

said, that when Major Pendennis found that a lady of the rank of the

Countess of Rockminster seriously admired Miss Bell, he instantly began

to admire her himself.

So that when Herr Frosch was requested to walk upstairs to Lady

Rockminster's apartments, and inform Miss Bell and Mr. Arthur Pendennis

that the Major would receive them, and Laura appeared blushing and happy

as she hung on Pen's arm, the Major gave a shaky hand to one and the

other, with unaffected emotion and cordiality, and then went through

another salutation to Laura, which caused her to blush still more. Happy

blushes! bright eyes beaming with the light of love! The story-teller

turns from this group to his young audience, and hopes that one day

their eyes may all shine so.

Pen having retreated in the most friendly manner, and the lovely Blanche

having bestowed her young affections upon a blushing bridegroom with

fifteen thousand a year, there was such an outbreak of happiness in Lady

Clavering's heart and family as the good Begum had not known for many

a year, and she and Blanche were on the most delightful terms of

cordiality and affection. The ardent Foker pressed onwards the happy

day, and was as anxious as might be expected to abridge the period of

mourning which had put him in possession of so many charms and amiable

qualities, of which he had been only, as it were, the heir-apparent, not

the actual owner, until then. The gentle Blanche, everything that her

affianced lord could desire, was not averse to gratify the wishes of

her fond Henry. Lady Clavering came up from Tunbridge. Milliners

and jewellers were set to work and engaged to prepare the delightful

paraphernalia of Hymen. Lady Clavering was in such a good humour, that

Sir Francis even benefited by it, and such a reconciliation was effected

between this pair, that Sir Francis came to London, sate at the head of

his own table once more, and appeared tolerably flush of money at his

billiard-rooms and gambling-houses again. One day, when Major

Pendennis and Arthur went to dine in Grosvenor Place, they found an old

acquaintance established in the quality of major-domo, and the gentleman

in black, who, with perfect politeness and gravity, offered them their

choice of sweet or dry champagne, was no other than Mr. James Morgan.

The Chevalier Strong was one of the party; he was in high spirits and

condition, and entertained the company with accounts of his amusements

abroad.

"It was my Lady who invited me," said Strong to Arthur, under his

voice--"that fellow Morgan looked as black as thunder when I came in. He

is about no good here. I will go away first, and wait for you and Major

Pendennis at Hyde Park Gate."

Mr. Morgan helped Major Pendennis to his great-coat when he was quitting

the house; and muttered something about having accepted a temporary

engagement with the Clavering family.

"I have got a paper of yours, Mr. Morgan," said the old gentleman.

"Which you can show, if you please, to Sir Francis, sir, and perfectly

welcome," said Mr. Morgan, with downcast eyes. "I'm very much obliged

to you, Major Pendennis, and if I can pay you for all your kindness I

will."

Arthur overheard the sentence, and saw the look of hatred which

accompanied it, suddenly cried out that he had forgotten his

handkerchief, and ran upstairs to the drawing-room again. Foker was

still there; still lingering about his siren. Pen gave the siren a look

full of meaning, and we suppose that the siren understood meaning looks,

for when, after finding the veracious handkerchief of which he came in

quest, he once more went out, the siren, with a laughing voice, said,

"Oh, Arthur--Mr. Pendennis--I want you to tell dear Laura something!"

and she came out to the door.

"What is it?" she asked, shutting the door.

"Have you told Harry? Do you know that villain Morgan knows all?"

"I know it," she said.

"Have you told Harry?"

"No, no," she said. "You won't betray me?"

"Morgan will," said Pen.

"No, he won't," said Blanche. "I have promised him--n'importe. Wait

until after our marriage--Oh, until after our marriage--Oh, how wretched

I am," said the girl, who had been all smiles, and grace, and gaiety

during the evening.

Arthur said, "I beg and implore you to tell Harry. Tell him now. It is

no fault of yours. He will pardon you anything. Tell him to-night."

"And give her this--Il est la--with my love, please; and I beg your

pardon for calling you back; and if she will be at Madame Crinoline's at

half-past three, and if Lady Rockminster can spare her, I should so like

to drive with her in the park;" and she went in, singing and kissing her

little hand, as Morgan the velvet-footed came up the carpeted stair.

Pen heard Blanche's piano breaking out into brilliant music as he went

down to join his uncle; and they walked away together. Arthur briefly

told him what he had done. "What was to be done?" he asked.

"What is to be done, begad?" said the old gentleman. "What is to be done

but to leave it alone? Begad, let us be thankful," said the old fellow,

with a shudder, "that we are out of the business, and leave it to those

it concerns."

"I hope to Heaven she'll tell him," said Pen.

"Begad, she'll take her own course," said the old man. "Miss Amory is

a dev'lish wide-awake girl, sir, and must play her own cards; and I'm

doosid glad you are out of it--doosid glad, begad. Who's this smoking?

Oh, it's Mr. Strong again. He wants to put in his oar, I suppose. I tell

you, don't meddle in the business, Arthur."

Strong began once or twice, as if to converse upon the subject, but

the Major would not hear a word. He remarked on the moonlight on Apsley

House, the weather, the cabstands--anything but that subject. He bowed

stiffly to Strong, and clung to his nephew's arm, as he turned down St.

James's Street, and again cautioned Pen to leave the affair alone. "It

had like to have cost you so much, sir, that you may take my advice," he

said.

When Arthur came out of the hotel, Strong's cloak and cigar were visible

a few doors off. The jolly Chevalier laughed as they met. "I'm an old

soldier, too," he said. "I wanted to talk to you, Pendennis. I have

heard of all that has happened, and all the chops and changes that have

taken place during my absence. I congratulate you on your marriage, and

I congratulate you on your escape, too,--you understand me. It was not

my business to speak, but I know this, that a certain party is as arrant

a little--well--well, never mind what. You acted like a man and a trump,

and are well out of it."

"I have no reason to complain," said Pen. "I went back to beg and

entreat poor Blanche to tell Foker all: I hope, for her sake, she will;

but I fear not. There is but one policy, Strong, there is but one."

"And lucky he that can stick to it," said the Chevalier. "That rascal

Morgan means mischief. He has been lurking about our chambers for the

last two months: he has found out that poor mad devil Amory's secret.

He has been trying to discover where he was: he has been pumping Mr.

Bolton, and making old Costigan drunk several times. He bribed the Inn

porter to tell him when we came back: and he has got into Clavering's

service on the strength of his information. He will get very good pay

for it, mark my words, the villain."

"Where is Amory?" asked Pen.

"At Boulogne, I believe. I left him there, and warned him not to come

back. I have broken with him, after a desperate quarrel, such as one

might have expected with such a madman. And I'm glad to think that he

is in my debt now, and that I have been the means of keeping him out of

more harms than one."

"He has lost all his winnings, I suppose," said Pen.

"No: he is rather better than when he went away, or was a fortnight ago.

He had extraordinary luck at Baden: broke the bank several nights, and

was the fable of the place. He lied himself there with a fellow by the

name of Bloundell, who gathered about him a society of all sorts of

sharpers, male and female, Russians, Germans, French, English. Amory got

so insolent, that I was obliged to thrash him one day within an inch of

his life. I couldn't help myself; the fellow has plenty of pluck, and I

had nothing for it but to hit out."

"And did he call you out?" said Pen.

"You think if I had shot him I should have done nobody any harm? No,

sir; I waited for his challenge, but it never came and the next time I

met him he begged my pardon, and said, 'Strong, I beg your pardon; you

whopped me and you served me right.' I shook hands: but I couldn't live

with him after that. I paid him what I owed him the night before," said

Strong with a blush, "I pawned everything to pay him, and then I went

with my last ten florins, and had a shy at the roulette. If I had lost,

I should have let him shoot me in the morning. I was weary of my life.

By Jove, sir, isn't it a shame that a man like me, who may have had a

few bills out, but who never deserted a friend, or did an unfair action,

shouldn't be able to turn his hand to anything to get bread? I made a

good night, sir, at roulette, and I've done with that. I'm going into

the wine business. My wife's relations live at Cadiz. I intend to bring

over Spanish wine and hams; there's a fortune to be made by it, sir,--a

fortune--here's my card. If you want any sherry or hams, recollect

Ned Strong is your man." And the Chevalier pulled out a handsome card,

stating that Strong and Company, Shepherd's Inn, were sole agents of the

celebrated Diamond Manzanilla of the Duke of Garbanzos, Grandee of Spain

of the First Class; and of the famous Toboso hams, fed on acorns only in

the country of Don Quixote. "Come and taste 'em, sir,--come and try 'em

at my chambers. You see, I've an eye to business, and by Jove this time

I'll succeed."

Pen laughed as he took the card. "I don't know whether I shall be

allowed to go to bachelors' parties," he said. "You know I'm going

to----"

"But you must have sherry, sir. You must have sherry."

"I will have it from you, depend on it," said the other. "And I think

you are very well out of your other partnership. That worthy Altamont

and his daughter correspond, I hear," Pen added after a pause.

"Yes; she wrote him the longest rigmarole letters, that I used to read:

the sly little devil; and he answered under cover to Mrs. Bonner. He was

for carrying her off the first day or two, and nothing would content

him but having back his child. But she didn't want to come, as you may

fancy; and he was not very eager about it." Here the Chevalier burst out

in a laugh. "Why, sir, do you know what was the cause of our quarrel and

boxing match? There was a certain widow at Baden, a Madame la Baronne

de la Cruche-cassee, who was not much better than himself, and whom the

scoundrel wanted to marry; and would, but that I told her he was married

already. I don't think that she was much better than he was. I saw her

on the pier at Boulogne the day I came to England."

And now we have brought up our narrative to the point, whither the

announcement in the Chatteris Champion had already conducted us.

It wanted but very, very few days before that blissful one when Foker

should call Blanche his own; the Clavering folks had all pressed to see

the most splendid new carriage in the whole world, which was standing in

the coach-house at the Clavering Arms; and shown, in grateful return

for drink, commonly, by Mr. Foker's head-coachman. Madame Fribsby was

occupied in making some lovely dresses for the tenants' daughters, who

were to figure as a sort of bridesmaids' chorus at the breakfast and

marriage ceremony. And immense festivities were to take place at the

Park upon this delightful occasion.

"Yes, Mr. Huxter, yes; a happy tenantry, its country's pride, will

assemble in the baronial hall, where the beards will wag all. The ox

shall be slain, and the cup they'll drain; and the bells shall peal

quite genteel; and my father-in-law, with the tear of sensibility

bedewing his eye, shall bless us at his baronial porch. That shall be

the order of proceedings, I think, Mr. Huxter; and I hope we shall

see you and your lovely bride by her husband's side; and what will

you please to drink, sir? Mrs. Lightfoot, madam, you will give to

my excellent friend and body-surgeon, Mr. Huxter, Mr. Samuel Huxter,

M.R.C.S., every refreshment that your hostel affords, and place the

festive amount to my account; and Mr. Lightfoot, sir, what will you

take? though you've had enough already, I think; yes, ha."

So spoke Harry Foker in the bar of the Clavering Arms. He had apartments

at that hotel, and had gathered a circle of friends round him there. He

treated all to drink who came. He was hail-fellow with every man. He was

so happy! He danced round Madame Fribsby, Mrs. Lightfoot's great ally,

as she sate pensive in the bar. He consoled Mrs. Lightfoot, who had

already begun to have causes of matrimonial disquiet; for the truth

must be told, that young Lightfoot, having now the full command of the

cellar, had none over his own unbridled desires, and was tippling and

tipsy from morning till night. And a piteous sight it was for his fond

wife to behold the big youth reeling about the yard and coffee-room, or

drinking with the farmers and tradesmen his own neat wines and carefully

selected stock of spirits.

When he could find time, Mr. Morgan the butler came from the Park, and

took a glass at the expense of the landlord of the Clavering Arms.

He watched poor Lightfoot's tipsy vagaries with savage sneers. Mrs.

Lightfoot felt always doubly uncomfortable when her unhappy spouse was

under his comrade's eye. But a few months married, and to think he had

got to this! Madame Fribsby could feel for her. Madame Fribsby could

tell her stories of men every bit as bad. She had had her own woes

too, and her sad experience of men. So it is that nobody seems happy

altogether; and that there's bitters, as Mr. Foker remarked, in the cup

of every man's life. And yet there did not seem to be any in his,

the honest young fellow! It was brimming over with happiness and

good-humour.

Mr. Morgan was constant in his attentions to Foker. "And yet I don't

like him somehow," said the candid young man to Mrs. Lightfoot.

"He always seems as if he was measuring me for my coffin somehow.

Pa-in-law's afraid of him; pa-in-law's, ahem! never mind, but

ma-in-law's a trump, Mrs. Lightfoot."

"Indeed my Lady was," and Mrs. Lightfoot owned, with a sigh, that

perhaps it had been better for her had she never left her mistress.

"No, I do not like thee, Dr. Fell; the reason why I cannot tell,"

continued Mr. Foker; "and he wants to be taken as my head man. Blanche

wants me to take him. Why does Miss Amory like him so?"

"Did Miss Blanche like him so?" The notion seemed to disturb Mrs.

Lightfoot very much; and there came to this worthy landlady another

cause for disturbance. A letter, bearing the Boulogne postmark, was

brought to her one morning, and she and her husband were quarrelling

over it as Foker passed down the stairs by the bar, on his way to

the Park. His custom was to breakfast there, and bask a while in

the presence of Armida; then, as the company of Clavering tired him

exceedingly, and he did not care for sporting, he would return for an

hour or two to billiards and the society of the Clavering Arms; then it

would be time to ride with Miss Amory, and, after dining with her, he

left her and returned modestly to his inn.

Lightfoot and his wife were quarrelling over the letter. What was that

letter from abroad? Why was she always having letters from abroad? Who

wrote 'em?--he would know. He didn't believe it was her brother. It

was no business of his? It was a business of his; and, with a curse, he

seized hold of his wife, and dashed at her pocket for the letter.

The poor woman gave a scream; and said, "Well, take it." Just as her

husband seized on the letter, and Mr. Foker entered at the door, she

gave another scream at seeing him, and once more tried to seize the

paper. Lightfoot opened it, shaking her away, and an enclosure dropped

down on the breakfast-table.

"Hands off, man alive!" cried little Harry, springing in. "Don't lay

hands on a woman, sir. The man that lays his hand upon a woman, save in

the way of kindness, is a--hallo! it's a letter for Miss Amory. What's

this, Mrs. Lightfoot?"

Mrs. Lightfoot began, in piteous tones of reproach to her husband,--"You

unmanly! to treat a woman so who took you off the street. Oh, you

coward, to lay your hand upon your wife! Why did I marry you? Why did I

leave my Lady for you? Why did I spend eight hundred pound in fitting up

this house that you might drink and guzzle?"

"She gets letters, and she won't tell me who writes letters," said Mr.

Lightfoot, with a muzzy voice; "it's a family affair, sir. Will you take

anything, sir?"

"I will take this letter to Miss Amory, as I am going to the Park," said

Foker, turning very pale; and taking it up from the table, which was

arranged for the poor landlady's breakfast, he went away.

"He's comin'--dammy, who's a-comin'? Who's J. A., Mrs. Lightfoot--curse

me, who's J. A.?" cried the husband.

Mrs. Lightfoot cried out, "Be quiet, you tipsy brute, do," and running

to her bonnet and shawl, threw them on, saw Mr. Foker walking down the

street, took the by-lane which skirts it, and ran as quickly as she

could to the lodge-gate, Clavering Park. Foker saw a running figure

before him, but it was lost when he got to the lodge-gate. He stopped

and asked, "Who was that who had just come in? Mrs. Bonner, was it?" He

reeled almost in his walk: the trees swam before him. He rested once or

twice against the trunks of the naked limes.

Lady Clavering was in the breakfast-room with her son, and her husband

yawning over his paper. "Good morning, Harry," said the Begum. "Here's

letters, lots of letters; Lady Rockminster will be here on Tuesday

instead of Monday, and Arthur and the Major come to-day; and Laura is

to go to Dr. Portman's, and come to church from there: and--what's the

matter, my dear? What makes you so pale, Harry?"

"Where is Blanche!" asked Harry, in a sickening voice--"not down yet?"

"Blanche is always the last," said the boy, eating muffins; "she's

a regular dawdle, she is. When you're not here, she lays in bed till

lunch-time."

"Be quiet, Frank," said the mother.

Blanche came down presently, looking pale, and with rather an eager look

towards Foker; then she advanced and kissed her mother, and had a face

beaming with her very best smiles on when she greeted Harry.

"How do you do, sir?" she said, and put out both her hands.

"I'm ill," answered Harry. "I--I've brought a letter for you, Blanche."

"A letter, and from whom is it, pray? Voyons," she said.

"I don't know--I should like to know," said Foker.

"How can I tell until I see it?" asked Blanche.

"Has Mrs. Bonner not told you?" he said, with a shaking voice;--"there's

some secret. You give her the letter, Lady Clavering."

Lady Clavering, wondering, took the letter from poor Foker's shaking

hand, and looked at the superscription. As she looked at it, she too

began to shake in every limb, and with a scared face she dropped the

letter, and running up to Frank, clutched the boy to her, and burst out

with a sob--"Take that away--it's impossible, it's impossible."

"What is the matter?" cried Blanche, with rather a ghastly smile; "the

letter is only from--from a poor pensioner and relative of ours."

"It's not true, it's not true," screamed Lady Clavering. "No, my

Frank--is it, Clavering?"

Blanche had taken up the letter, and was moving with it towards the

fire, but Foker ran to her and clutched her arm--"I must see that

letter," he said; "give it me. You shan't burn it."

"You--you shall not treat Miss Amory so in my house," cried the Baronet;

"give back the letter, by Jove!"

"Read it--and look at her," Blanche cried, pointing to her mother;

"it--it was for her I kept the secret! Read it, cruel man!"

And Foker opened and read the letter:--

"I have not wrote, my darling Betsy, this three weeks; but this is to

give her a father's blessing, and I shall come down pretty soon as quick

as my note, and intend to see the ceremony, and my son-in-law. I shall

put up at Bonner's. I have had a pleasant autumn, and am staying here at

an hotel where there is good company, and which is kep' in good style. I

don't know whether I quite approve of your throwing over Mr. P. for Mr.

F., and don't think Foker's such a pretty name, and from your account of

him he seems a muff, and not a beauty. But he has got the rowdy, which

is the thing. So no more, my dear little Betsy, till we meet, from your

affectionate father, J. Amory Altamont."

"Read it, Lady Clavering; it is too late to keep it from you now," said

poor Foker; and the distracted woman, having cast her eyes over it,

again broke out into hysterical screams, and convulsively grasped her

son.

"They have made an outcast of you, my boy," she said. "They've

dishonoured your old mother; but I'm innocent, Frank; before God, I'm

innocent. I didn't know this, Mr. Foker; indeed, indeed, I didn't."

"I'm sure you didn't," said Foker, going up and kissing her hand.

"Generous, generous Harry!" cried out Blanche, in an ecstasy. But he

withdrew his hand, which was upon her side, and turned from her with a

quivering lip. "That's different," he says.

"It was for her sake--for her sake, Harry." Again Miss Amory is in an

attitude.

"There was something to be done for mine," said Foker. "I would have

taken you, whatever you were. Everything's talked about in London. I

knew that your father had come to--to grief. You don't think it was--it

was for your connexion I married you? D---- it all! I've loved you with

all my heart and soul for two years, and you've been playing with me,

and cheating me," broke out the young man, with a cry. "Oh, Blanche,

Blanche, it's a hard thing, a hard thing!" and he covered his face with

his hands, and sobbed behind them.

Blanche thought, "Why didn't I tell him that night when Arthur warned

me?"

"Don't refuse her, Harry," cried out Lady Clavering. "Take her, take

everything I have. It's all hers, you know, at my death. This boy's

disinherited."--(Master Frank, who had been looking as scared at the

strange scene, here burst into a loud cry.) "Take every shilling. Give

me just enough to live, and to go and hide my head with this child, and

to fly from both. Oh, they've both been bad, bad men. Perhaps he's here

now. Don't let me see him. Clavering, you coward, defend me from him."

Clavering started up at this proposal. "You ain't serious, Jemima? You

don't mean that?" he said. "You won't throw me and Frank over? I

didn't know it, so help me ----. Foker, I'd no more idea of it than the

dead--until the fellow came and found me out, the d----d escaped convict

scoundrel."

"The what?" said Foker. Blanche gave a scream.

"Yes," screamed out the Baronet in his turn, "yes, a d----d runaway

convict--a fellow that forged his father-in-law's name--a d----d

attorney, and killed a fellow in Botany Bay, hang him--and ran into the

Bush, curse him; I wish he'd died there. And he came to me, a good six

years ago, and robbed me; and I've been ruining myself to keep him, the

infernal scoundrel! And Pendennis knows it, and Strong knows it, and

that d----d Morgan knows it, and she knows it, ever so long; and I never

would tell it, never: and I kept it from my wife."

"And you saw him, and you didn't kill him, Clavering, you coward?"

said the wife of Amory. "Come away, Frank; your father's a coward. I am

dishonoured, but I'm your old mother, and you'll--you'll love me, won't

you?"

Blanche, eploree, went up to her mother; but Lady Clavering shrank from

her with a sort of terror. "Don't touch me," she said; "you've no heart;

you never had. I see all now. I see why that coward was going to give

up his place in Parliament to Arthur; yes, that coward! and why you

threatened that you would make me give you half Frank's fortune. And

when Arthur offered to marry you without a shilling, because he wouldn't

rob my boy, you left him, and you took poor Harry. Have nothing to do

with her, Harry. You're good, you are. Don't marry that--that convict's

daughter. Come away, Frank, my darling; come to your poor old mother.

We'll hide ourselves; but we're honest, yes, we are honest."

All this while a strange feeling of exultation had taken possession of

Blanche's mind. That month with poor Harry had been a weary month to

her. All his fortune and splendour scarcely sufficed to make the idea

of himself supportable. She was wearied of his simple ways, and sick of

coaxing and cajoling him.

"Stay, mamma; stay, madam!" she cried out, with a gesture which was

always appropriate, though rather theatrical; "I have no heart, have

I? I keep the secret of my mother's shame. I give up my rights to my

half-brother and my bastard brother, yes, my rights and my fortune.

I don't betray my father, and for this I have no heart. I'll have my

rights now, and the laws of my country shall give them to me. I appeal

to my country's laws--yes, my country's laws! The persecuted one returns

this day. I desire to go to my father." And the little lady swept round

her hand, and thought that she was a heroine.

"You will, will you?" cried out Clavering, with one of his usual oaths.

"I'm a magistrate, and dammy, I'll commit him. Here's a chaise coming;

perhaps it's him. Let him come."

A chaise was indeed coming up the avenue; and the two women shrieked

each their loudest, expecting at that moment to see Altamont arrive.

The door opened, and Mr. Morgan announced Major Pendennis and Mr.

Pendennis, who entered, and found all parties engaged in this fierce

quarrel. A large screen fenced the breakfast-room from the hall; and

it is probable that, according to his custom, Mr. Morgan had taken

advantage of the screen to make himself acquainted with all that

occurred.

It had been arranged on the previous day that the young people should

ride; and at the appointed hour in the afternoon, Mr. Foker's horses

arrived from the Clavering Arms. But Miss Blanche did not accompany

him on this occasion. Pen came out and shook hands with him on the

door-steps; and Harry Foker rode away, followed by his groom in

mourning. The whole transactions which have occupied the most active

part of our history were debated by the parties concerned during those

two or three hours. Many counsels had been given, stories told, and

compromises suggested; and at the end, Harry Foker rode away, with a sad

"God bless you!" from Pen. There was a dreary dinner at Clavering Park,

at which the lately installed butler did not attend; and the ladies were

both absent. After dinner, Pen said, "I will walk down to Clavering and

see if he is come." And he walked through the dark avenue, across the

bridge and road by his own cottage,--the once quiet and familiar fields

of which were flaming with the kilns and forges of the artificers

employed on the new railroad works; and so he entered the town, and made

for the Clavering Arms.

It was past midnight when he returned to Clavering Park. He was

exceedingly pale and agitated. "Is Lady Clavering up yet?" he asked.

Yes, she was in her own sitting-room. He went up to her, and there found

the poor lady in a piteous state of tears and agitation.

"It is I,--Arthur," he said, looking in; and entering, he took her

hand very affectionately and kissed it. "You were always the kindest of

friends to me, dear Lady Clavering," he said. "I love you very much. I

have got some news for you."

"Don't call me by that name," she said, pressing his hand. "You were

always a good boy, Arthur; and it's kind of you to come now,--very kind.

You sometimes look very like your ma, my dear."

"Dear good Lady Clavering," Arthur repeated, with particular emphasis,

"something very strange has happened."

"Has anything happened to him?" gasped Lady Clavering. "Oh, it's horrid

to think I should be glad of it--horrid!"

"He is well. He has been and is gone, my dear lady. Don't alarm

yourself;--he is gone, and you are Lady Clavering still."

"Is it true? what he sometimes said to me," she screamed out,--"that

he----"

"He was married before he married you," said Pen. "He has confessed it

to-night. He will never come back." There came another shriek from Lady

Clavering, as she flung her arms round Pen, and kissed him, and burst

into tears on his shoulder.

What Pen had to tell, through a multiplicity of sobs and interruptions,

must be compressed briefly, for behold our prescribed limit is reached,

and our tale is coming to its end. With the Branch Coach from the

railroad, which had succeeded the old Alacrity and Perseverance, Amory

arrived, and was set down at the Clavering Arms. He ordered his dinner

at the place under his assumed name of Altamont; and, being of a jovial

turn, he welcomed the landlord, who was nothing loth, to a share of his

wine. Having extracted from Mr. Lightfoot all the news regarding the

family at the Park, and found, from examining his host, that Mrs.

Lightfoot, as she said, had kept his counsel, he called for more wine

of Mr. Lightfoot; and at the end of this symposium, both, being greatly

excited, went into Mrs. Lightfoot's bar.

She was there taking tea with her friend, Madame Fribsby; and Lightfoot

was by this time in such a happy state as not to be surprised at

anything which might occur, so that, when Altamont shook hands with Mrs.

Lightfoot as an old acquaintance, the recognition did not appear to

him to be in the least strange, but only a reasonable cause for further

drinking. The gentlemen partook then of brandy-and-water, which they

offered to the ladies, not heeding the terrified looks of one or the

other.

Whilst they were so engaged, at about six o'clock in the evening, Mr.

Morgan, Sir Francis Clavering's new man, came in, and was requested to

drink. He selected his favourite beverage, and the parties engaged in

general conversation.

After a while Mr. Lightfoot began to doze. Mr. Morgan had repeatedly

given hints to Mrs. Fribsby to quit the premises; but that lady,

strangely fascinated, and terrified it would seem, or persuaded by Mrs.

Lightfoot not to go, kept her place. Her persistence occasioned much

annoyance to Mr. Morgan, who vented his displeasure in such language as

gave pain to Mrs. Lightfoot, and caused Mr. Altamont to say, that he was

a rum customer, and not polite to the sex.

The altercation between the two gentlemen became very painful to the

women, especially to Mrs. Lightfoot, who did everything to soothe Mr.

Morgan; and, under pretence of giving a pipe-light to the stranger, she

handed him a paper on which she had privily written the words, "He knows

you. Go." There may have been something suspicious in her manner of

handing, or in her guest's of reading, the paper; for when he got up

a short time afterwards, and said he would go to bed, Morgan rose too,

with a laugh, and said it was too early to go to bed.

The stranger then said he would go to his bedroom. Morgan said he would

show him the way.

At this the guest said, "Come up. I've got a brace of pistols up there

to blow out the brains of any traitor or skulking spy," and glared so

fiercely upon Morgan, that the latter, seizing hold of Lightfoot by the

collar, and waking him, said, "John Amory, I arrest you in the Queen's

name. Stand by me, Lightfoot. This capture is worth a thousand pounds."

He put forward his hand as if to seize his prisoner, but the other,

doubling his fist, gave Morgan with his left hand so fierce a blow

on the chest, that it knocked him back behind Mr. Lightfoot. That

gentleman, who was athletic and courageous, said he would knock his

guest's head off, and prepared to do so, as the stranger, tearing off

his coat, and cursing both of his opponents, roared to them to come on.

But with a piercing scream Mrs. Lightfoot flung herself before her

husband, whilst with another and louder shriek Madame Fribsby ran to the

stranger, and calling out "Armstrong, Johnny Armstrong!" seized hold

of his naked arm, on which a blue tattooing of a heart and M. F. were

visible.

The ejaculation of Madame Fribsby seemed to astound and sober the

stranger. He looked down upon her, and cried out, "it's Polly, by Jove."

Mrs. Fribsby continued to exclaim, "This is not Amory. This is Johnny

Armstrong, my wicked--wicked husband, married to me in St. Martin's

Church, mate on board an Indiaman, and he left me two months after, the

wicked wretch. This is John Armstrong--here's the mark on his arm which

he made for me."

The stranger said, "I am John Armstrong, sure enough, Polly. I'm John

Armstrong, Amory, Altamont--and let 'em all come on, and try what they

can do against a British sailor. Hurray, who's for it?"

Morgan still called out, "Arrest him!" But Mrs. Lightfoot said, "Arrest

him! arrest you, you mean spy! What! stop the marriage and ruin my lady,

and take away the Clavering Arms from us?"

"Did he say he'd take away the Clavering Arms from us?" asked Mr.

Lightfoot, turning round. "Hang him, I'll throttle him."

"Keep him, darling, till the coach passes to the up train. It'll be here

now directly."

"D---- him, I'll choke him if he stirs," said Lightfoot. And so they

kept Morgan until the coach came, and Mr. Amory or Armstrong went away

back to London.

Morgan had followed him: but of this event Arthur Pendennis did not

inform Lady Clavering, and left her invoking blessings upon him at her

son's door, going to kiss him as he was asleep. It had been a busy day.

We have to chronicle the events of but one day more, and that was a day

when Mr. Arthur, attired in a new hat, a new blue frock-coat and blue

handkerchief, in a new fancy waistcoat, new boots, and new shirt-studs

(presented by the Right Honourable the Countess Dowager of Rockminster),

made his appearance at a solitary breakfast-table, in Clavering Park,

where he could scarce eat a single morsel of food. Two letters were laid

by his worship's plate; and he chose to open the first, which was in

a round clerk-like hand, in preference to the second more familiar

superscription.

Note 1 ran as follows:--

"Garbanzos Wine Company, Shepherd's Inn.--Monday.

"My Dear Pendennis,--In congratulating you heartily upon the event which

is to make you happy for life, I send my very kindest remembrances to

Mrs. Pendennis, whom I hope to know even longer than I have already

known her. And when I call her attention to the fact, that one of the

most necessary articles to her husband's comfort is pure sherry, I know

I shall have her for a customer for your worship's sake.

"But I have to speak to you of other than my own concerns. Yesterday

afternoon, a certain J. A. arrived at my chambers from Clavering, which

he had left under circumstances of which you are doubtless now aware. In

spite of our difference, I could not but give him food and shelter (and

he partook freely both of the Garbanzos Amontillado and the Toboso

ham), and he told me what had happened to him, and many other surprising

adventures. The rascal married at sixteen, and has repeatedly since

performed that ceremony--in Sydney, in New Zealand, in South America, in

Newcastle, he says, first, before he knew our poor friend the milliner.

He is a perfect Don Juan.

"And it seemed as if the commendatore had at last overtaken him, for,

as we were at our meal, there came three heavy knocks at my outer door,

which made our friend start. I have sustained a siege or two here, and

went to my usual place to reconnoitre. Thank my stars I have not a bill

out in the world, and besides, those gentry do not come in that way. I

found that it was your uncle's late valet, Morgan, and a policeman (I

think a sham policeman), and they said they had a warrant to take

the person of John Armstrong, alias Amory, alias Altamont, a runaway

convict, and threatened to break in the oak.

"Now, sir, in my own days of captivity I had discovered a little passage

along the gutter into Bows and Costigan's window, and I sent Jack Alias

along this covered way, not without terror of his life, for it had grown

very cranky; and then, after a parley, let in Mons. Morgan and friend.

"The rascal had been instructed about that covered way, for he made for

the room instantly, telling the policeman to go downstairs and keep

the gate; and he charged up my little staircase as if he had known the

premises. As he was going out of the window we heard a voice that you

know, from Bows's garret, saying, 'Who are ye, and hwhat the divvle

are ye at? You'd betther leave the gutther; bedad there's a man killed

himself already.'

"And as Morgan, crossing over and looking into the darkness, was trying

to see whether this awful news was true, he took a broomstick, and with

a vigorous dash broke down the pipe of communication--and told me this

morning, with great glee, that he was reminded of that 'aisy sthratagem

by remembering his dorling Emilie, when she acted the pawrt of Cora in

the Plee--and by the bridge in Pezawro, bedad.' I wish that scoundrel

Morgan had been on the bridge when the General tried his 'sthratagem.'

"If I hear more of Jack Alias I will tell you. He has got plenty of

money still, and I wanted him to send some to our poor friend the

milliner; but the scoundrel laughed, and said he had no more than he

wanted, but offered to give anybody a lock of his hair. Farewell--be

happy! and believe me always truly yours, E. Strong."

"And now for the other letter," said Pen. "Dear old fellow!" and he

kissed the seal before he broke it.

"Warrington, Tuesday.

"I must not let the day pass over without saying a God bless you, to

both of you. May Heaven make you happy, dear Arthur, and dear Laura. I

think, Pen, that you have the best wife in the world; and pray that,

as such, you will cherish her and tend her. The chambers will be lonely

without you, dear Pen; but if I am tired, I shall have a new home to go

to in the house of my brother and sister. I am practising in the nursery

here, in order to prepare for the part of Uncle George. Farewell! make

your wedding tour, and come back to your affectionate G. W."

Pendennis and his wife read this letter together after Doctor Portman's

breakfast was over, and the guests were gone; and when the carriage was

waiting amidst the crowd at the Doctor's outer gate. But the wicket led

into the churchyard of St. Mary's, where the bells were pealing with

all their might, and it was here, over Helen's green grass, that Arthur

showed his wife George's letter. For which of those two--for grief was

it or for happiness, that Laura's tears abundantly fell on the paper?

And once more, in the presence of the sacred dust, she kissed and

blessed her Arthur.

There was only one marriage on that day at Clavering Church; for in

spite of Blanche's sacrifices for her dearest mother, honest Harry Foker

could not pardon the woman who had deceived her husband, and justly

argued that she would deceive him again. He went to the Pyramids and

Syria, and there left his malady behind him, and returned with a fine

beard, and a supply of tarbooshes and nargillies, with which he regales

all his friends. He lives splendidly, and, through Pen's mediation, gets

his wine from the celebrated vintages of the Duke of Garbanzos.

As for poor Cos, his fate has been mentioned in an early part of this

story. No very glorious end could be expected to such a career. Morgan

is one of the most respectable men in the parish of St. James's, and in

the present political movement has pronounced himself like a man and a

Briton. And Bows,--on the demise of Mr. Piper, who played the organ at

Clavering, little Mrs. Sam Hunter, who has the entire command of Doctor

Portman, brought Bows down from London to contest the organ-loft, and

her candidate carried the chair. When Sir Francis Clavering quitted this

worthless life, the same little indefatigable canvasser took the borough

by storm, and it is now represented by Arthur Pendennis, Esq. Blanche

Amory, it is well known, married at Paris, and the saloons of Madame la

Comtesse de Montmorenci de Valentinois were amongst the most suivis

of that capital. The duel between the Count and the young and fiery

Representative of the Mountain, Alcide de Mirobo, arose solely from the

latter questioning at the Club the titles borne by the former nobleman.

Madame de Montmorenci de Valentinois travelled after the adventure: and

Bungay bought her poems, and published them, with the Countess's coronet

emblazoned on the Countess's work.

Major Pendennis became very serious in his last days, and was never

so happy as when Laura was reading to him with her sweet voice, or

listening to his stories. For this sweet lady is the friend of the young

and the old: and her life is always passed in making other lives happy.

"And what sort of a husband would this Pendennis be?" many a reader will

ask, doubting the happiness of such a marriage and the fortune of Laura.

The querists, if they meet her, are referred to that lady herself, who,

seeing his faults and wayward moods--seeing and owning that there are

men better than he--loves him always with the most constant affection.

His children or their mother have never heard a harsh word from him; and

when his fits of moodiness and solitude are over, welcome him back

with a never-failing regard and confidence. His friend is his friend

still,--entirely heart-whole. That malady is never fatal to a sound

organ. And George goes through his part of godpapa perfectly, and lives

alone. If Mr. Pen's works have procured him more reputation than has

been acquired by his abler friend, whom no one knows, George lives

contented without the fame. If the best men do not draw the great prizes

in life, we know it has been so settled by the Ordainer of the lottery.

We own, and see daily, how the false and worthless live and prosper,

while the good are called away, and the dear and young perish

untimely,--we perceive in every man's life the maimed happiness, the

frequent falling, the bootless endeavour, the struggle of Right and

Wrong, in which the strong often succumb and the swift fail: we see

flowers of good blooming in foul places, as, in the most lofty and

splendid fortunes, flaws of vice and meanness, and stains of evil; and,

knowing how mean the best of us is, let us give a hand of charity to

Arthur Pendennis, with all his faults and shortcomings, who does not

claim to be a hero, but only a man and a brother.

THE END